

**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**ONE**  
**FALSE SALVATION – IS IT POSSIBLE?**

*“Enter ye in at the STRAIT GATE: for WIDE IS THE GATE,  
AND BROAD IS THE WAY, that leadeth to DESTRUCTION,  
and MANY THERE BE which go in threath:*

*BECAUSE STRAIT IS THE GATE, AND NARROW  
IS THE WAY,  
WHICH LEADETH UNTO LIFE,  
and FEW there be that find it.”  
(Matthew 7:13-14)*

*MANY will say to me in that day, LORD, LORD, have we not  
PROPHESED IN THY NAME?  
AND IN THY NAME HAVE CAST OUT DEVILS?  
AND IN THY NAME DONE MANY WONDERFUL WORKS?*

*and THEN will I profess unto them,  
I NEVER KNEW YOU:  
DEPART FROM ME, YE THAT WORK INIQUITY.”  
(Matthew 7:21-23)*

We must find out WHY these souls were rejected, WHO they really were, and WHAT THEY SHOULD HAVE DONE to prevent it. MAKE NO MISTAKE ABOUT THE SEVERITY OF THESE COMMENTS FROM THE LIPS OF CHRIST. These souls face eternal ruin, TO BE CAST OUT FOREVER WITH NO RECOURSE, NO MERCY, NO CLEMENCY.

THE CONTEXT in which we find these comments appears in Matthew Chapters five, six, and seven, which comprise the Sermon on the Mount. The Sermon on the Mount is addressed first of all to believers ONLY, DISCIPLES ONLY.

*“And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set,  
HIS DISCIPLES CAME UNTO HIM:*

*And he opened his mouth, and TAUGHT THEM, saying...”  
(Matthew 5:1-2)*

The word “disciple” is ‘mathetes’ and it simply means **LEARNER, PUPIL, FOLLOWER**. It was to the disciples, the followers, to those that **BELIEVED** upon Him that He taught. The ‘them’ refers back to the DISCIPLES, which by then had grown to a great number of people.

Matthew Chapter four shows that Jesus had called His chosen ones and was also teaching in the synagogues, preaching the gospel of the Kingdom of Heaven, and healing all manner of sickness (Matthew 4:23). His fame grew, and so more and more people came to hear Him, to be healed, to find out what His message for them was. Many BELIEVED in Him, for they saw His healings, His ability to cast out devils and the displays of great power.

There are many within the Church that contend that the four Gospels and especially the Sermon on the Mount was given to Israel, and have nothing to do with the Church. It belongs totally to the dispensation of Law. They argue that Pentecost had not come, and this sermon then cannot be applied to the Church in any way, shape or manner. Upon the correctness of this argument lay the destiny of millions of souls, for **IF THIS THEOLOGICAL POSITION IS WRONG, AND YOU EMBRACED IT, YOU HAVE DAMNED YOURSELF FOR ALL ETERNITY.**

The Sermon on the Mount is a discourse of the PARAMETERS ON HOW YOU ENTER INTO THE 'NEW HEART' aspects of the 'NEW COVENANT' (Ezekiel 11:19; 36:26-27; Hebrews 8:8; 8:13 and 12:24). The word "covenant" is 'beriyth', which means **COMPACT, LEAGUE, AGREEMENT OR CONTRACT**. In the New Testament, the word is 'diatheke', which means **CONTRACT, TESTAMENT, A LEGALLY BINDING AGREEMENT**. This aspect of the New Covenant is the **PRIMARY CONCERN IN THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT**. As there is no other way to enter in, and the subject of the Sermon is **ENTERING THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN** (Jesus mentions the Kingdom of Heaven 27 times in Matthew alone, and 5 times in the Sermon on the Mount), then **THIS MUST BE A DISCOURSE ON HOW WE ENTER IN TO THE NEW COVENANT!**

*"Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I WILL MAKE*

*A NEW COVENANT WITH THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL,*

*AND WITH THE HOUSE OF JUDAH:*

*But this shall be THE COVENANT  
THAT I WILL MAKE WITH THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL;*

*AFTER THOSE DAYS, SAITH THE LORD,*

*I WILL PUT MY LAW IN THEIR INWARD PARTS,*

*AND WRITE IT IN THEIR HEARTS;*

*and will be their God, and they shall be my people."*

*(Jeremiah 31:31, 33)*

Here we find a reference to the NEW COVENANT and it is tied DIRECTLY TO A NEW HEART. God says He will TAKE THE LAW AND WRITE IT IN THEIR INWARD PARTS. Scripture proves the Law in reality is nothing more than a reflection of AGAPE LOVE. The Law

was given to prove to man HE DID NOT HAVE TRUE AGAPE LOVE. God will take this OUTER FORM OF THE LAW, AND PUT IT INTO THE HUMAN HEART. Thus what we have is a COVENANT OF A NEW HEART, OF A NEW BIRTH, OF REGENERATION PERFORMED BY AGAPE LOVE PLACED WITHIN. The word “covenant” is ‘beriyth’ and it means **COMPACT, LEAGUE OR AGREEMENT**. It is a binding CONTRACT. When Christ says, “enter ye in”, He is referring to this NEW COVENANT.

***“CAST AWAY FROM YOU ALL YOUR TRANSGRESSIONS, WHEREBY YE HAVE TRANSGRESSED;***

***AND MAKE YOU A NEW HEART***

***AND A NEW SPIRIT:***

***for why will ye die, O house of ISRAEL?***

***For I have NO PLEASURE IN THE DEATH OF HIM THAT DIETH,***

***SAITH THE LORD GOD: WHEREFORE TURN YOURSELVES,***

***AND LIVE YE.”***  
***(Ezekiel 18:31-32)***

God is pleading to the house of Israel to CAST AWAY THEIR SINS AND THEIR TRANSGRESSIONS. How are they to do it? VIA A **GODLY REPENTANCE** THAT LEADS ONE TO A **NEW HEART, A NEW SPIRIT**. GOD SAYS “TURN YOURSELVES”. IT IS SOMETHING THE INDIVIDUAL MUST DO; IT IS **NOT** SOMETHING GOD DOES. God asks “WHY WILL YE DIE, O HOUSE OF ISRAEL?” Just because they are the house of Israel does not exempt them in any way from the requirements of **RIGHTEOUSNESS**. They will die in their sins if they do not obtain this **NEW HEART, THIS NEW SPIRIT**.

***“A NEW HEART also WILL I GIVE YOU, and a NEW SPIRIT WILL I PUT WITHIN YOU:***

***and I will TAKE AWAY THE STONY HEART***  
***OUT OF YOUR FLESH, AND I WILL GIVE YOU AN HEART OF FLESH.***

***AND I WILL PUT MY SPIRIT WITHIN YOU,***

***and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments,***  
***AND DO THEM.***  
***(Ezekiel 36:26-27)***

Hebrews Chapter Eight is attempting to show to the Jews that a NEW COVENANT HAS BEEN CREATED VIA THE WORK OF JESUS CHRIST. This New Covenant is **not** entered into via WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS OR LAW KEEPING, but via A NEW HEART! We will explore this new heart in complete detail later. One cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven unless he is **BORN AGAIN** (John 3:3-5). The subject of the Sermon on the Mount is how we enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, and Jesus said in John we must be born again, TO ENTER THE KINGDOM! Jesus is obviously telling us HOW TO BE BORN AGAIN IN THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT! In other words, the **PARAMETERS OF HOW ONE OBTAINS THIS NEW HEART WILL BE FOUND IN MATTHEW FIVE, SIX AND SEVEN!**

God says that HE HIMSELF is going to give His people a new heart, and a new spirit. It is supernatural, not of man whatsoever. It also says that PRIOR TO THE GRANTING OF THIS NEW HEART AND SPIRIT, MAN IS WITHOUT IT. **You need not be given something if you already possess it.** Therefore the New Covenant concerns itself with the supernatural bestowment of God's spirit (My Spirit within you). It is this NEW SPIRIT and NEW HEART that allows us entrance into the Kingdom. What is this New Spirit and New Heart? IT IS THE BESTOWMENT OF A NEW TYPE OF LOVE IN THE HUMAN HEART: A RADICAL ALTERATION OF THE HEART, A LOVE CHANGE, FROM NATURAL HUMAN LOVE TO A WHOLE NEW LOVE, A DIVINE LOVE, CALLED IN THE GREEK, "**AGAPE/AGAPAO**".

***"Behold, WHAT MANNER OF (AGAPE) LOVE***

***the FATHER HATH BESTOWED UPON US  
THAT WE SHOULD BE CALLED THE SONS OF GOD..."***  
**(1 John 3:1)**

Here we find total confirmation that God the Father puts His **AGAPE** love into the AUTHENTIC BELIEVER. Notice who grants the gift of AGAPE love that makes one a TRUE SON OF GOD: GOD HIMSELF! Is that not what Ezekiel said? Did not Jesus Himself say:

***"...VERILY, VERILY, I SAY UNTO THEE, EXCEPT A MAN  
BE BORN AGAIN, HE CANNOT SEE THE KINGDOM OF GOD."***

***Jesus answered, VERILY, VERILY, I SAY UNTO THEE,  
EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN OF WATER AND OF THE SPIRIT,  
HE CANNOT ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD.***

***Marvel not that I said unto thee,  
YE MUST BE BORN AGAIN."***  
**(John 3:3, 5, 7)**

The word "again" comes from the word 'anohen' which comes from 'ano' and it means **FROM ABOVE, FROM THE TOP, FROM THE BEGINNING, OR FROM THE SPIRIT**. It means in effect **BORN FROM AN ACT OF GOD, BORN OF GOD, BORN FROM GOD**

**HIMSELF.** In the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus is speaking about HOW WE ENTER THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN. What Jesus is doing is laying down the PARAMETERS, THE GUIDELINES ON WHAT WE MUST DO TO ENTER HIS KINGDOM. **He is telling us how we obtain a new heart of agape love, which is also called “LIFE”:**

*“We KNOW that we have passed from death UNTO LIFE,  
BECAUSE  
WE (AGAPE) LOVE THE BRETHREN.  
HE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH NOT HIS BROTHER  
ABIDETH IN DEATH.”  
(1 John 3:14)*

Agape love bestowment IS what passes us from **DEATH UNTO LIFE**. To say otherwise would be to stand in opposition to a host of Scripture. Agape love bestowment IS THE REBIRTH **EXPERIENCE** OF THE REAL BORN AGAIN CHRISTIAN. Agape love brings life, for agape love IS LIFE. It will be proven that the very essence of God IS AGAPE LOVE. Without it, all human souls remain in what God calls DEATH. The subject of this **DARK LIGHT** series is AGAPE LOVE. With it, you have ‘life’ and you will enter heaven’s gate. Without it, you abide in death, and you will never see heaven at all.

Jesus is explaining by what method man MUST ENTER IN, and if a soul refuses for whatever reason, HE WILL NOT ENTER IN, BUT FACE ETERNAL RUIN. The New Covenant is a New Heart Covenant. A new heart brings with it a NEW LIFE. The New Covenant requires a new heart and a new divine spirit because THE BELIEVER MUST BE ADJUSTED BACK TO THE STANDARD OF GOD. GOD’S STANDARD IS **PURE AGAPE**. The love within man from natural birth is opposed in principle to the agape love of God. Therefore man **MUST** undergo a radical **LOVE CHANGE** FROM NATURAL TO DIVINE, or he **cannot enter the NEW COVENANT**.

*“ENTER YE IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:  
for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to DESTRUCTION,  
and MANY there be that go in thereat:*

*BECAUSE  
STRAIT IS THE GATE, AND NARROW IS THE WAY,  
THAT LEADETH UNTO LIFE  
(THE NEW COVENANT OF AGAPE LOVE),  
and FEW THERE BE that FIND IT.”  
(Matthew 7:13, 14)*

Notice the word life. Life sits at the END of the narrow way. It **does not** sit at the beginning or the middle. The destination of the narrow way is LIFE, **FOR THE NARROW WAY LEADS TO**

IT. We will come back to this aspect later in this series. For now CROSS COMPARE these verses and you will see Matthew Five, Six and Seven concern themselves with THE NEW BIRTH.

Jesus is making a valid presentation to Israel of the New Covenant, which contains other aspects as well, including the Millennial Reign, the rule of the nation Israel with great prosperity, etc. Because Israel REFUSED JESUS CHRIST, THE ONLY MEDIATOR OF THE NEW COVENANT, **THEY REJECTED THE NEW HEART ASPECT**. They refused to enter in via the method Jesus gave to them, and THEY WERE EXCLUDED. Likewise will any believer in Jesus Christ be EXCLUDED IF THEY REFUSE TO ADHERE TO THE PARAMETERS GIVEN BY JESUS CHRIST TO ENTER IN.

**The Lord is not a respecter of people. If Israel, the real olive tree, God's own chosen people, are utterly excluded for refusing THE METHOD GOD ORDAINED, then why would any Christian, who is a wild olive branch, think he would not be excluded as well IF HE REFUSES THE METHOD GOD HAS ORDAINED?**

EITHER ONE ENTERS THE STRAIT GATE AND WALKS THE NARROW WAY OR HE/SHE WILL PERISH FOREVER. Jesus only gave us this **ONE WAY**. Because Israel rejected the new heart aspects of the New Covenant, THEIR ENTIRE PORTION OF THE NEW COVENANT WAS DELAYED (Romans 11:25-27; until the times of the gentiles be fulfilled), and the NEW HEART ASPECTS WERE GIVEN TO THE CHURCH (another nation) to provoke Israel to jealousy (Romans 10:19).

The presentation to Israel was valid. Israel had the right and the duty to enter in. That is why Jesus said that John the Baptist WAS 'Elias' **IF** Israel would receive it. Had Israel received Christ, the New Covenant would have been brought in, and the Millennial Reign of Christ would have begun! God foreknew they would reject Christ, but that does not negate the authenticity of the offer made.

Israel was looking for a political Messiah, one that would lead them into a worldwide dominion. They did not understand nor desire to know the spiritual side of the Kingdom. Their Kingdom of God was upon earth, a physical kingdom, and their promises were for this life upon earth. They wanted to bring heaven down to earth, which is exactly what antichrist attempts to do. Jesus brought a message Israel did not want to hear. He also gave them all of the signs written in the Old Testament to PROVE WHO HE WAS. They were without any excuse, and likewise the believer in Christ is without any excuse if he refuses to comply with the parameters Jesus laid down to enter in. The dispensation of Law Keeping was over, and Christ ushered in a whole new concept, a whole New Covenant, a brand new program. The law, which had been EXTERNAL, was now going to be made INTERNAL, and written on the 'inward parts' or their innermost center of being, **their HIDDEN INNER "HEART"**.

The law itself remains unchanged (Matthew 5:17-19). Jesus is the END OF THE LAW FOR THEM WHICH BELIEVE ONLY, **AND THAT WORD BELIEVE IS WELL QUALIFIED**. For all others it is still in full force and effect, in spite of theology to the contrary. Jesus insisted the LAW WOULD REMAIN RIGHT THROUGH TO THE END. It is via the Law that all

unbelievers and many believers who thought they were saved will be condemned to eternal ruin. What saves the human soul is that via the NEW HEART AND NEW SPIRIT, the EXTERNAL LAW, which is nothing but a reflection of AGAPE LOVE, is WRITTEN INTO THE CENTER OF MAN; THE HEART! The Law goes from EXTERNAL RULES TO AGAPE LOVE WITHIN! If a person AGAPE LOVES, which cannot be done EXCEPT AND UNLESS AUTHENTIC REGENERATION HAS OCCURRED, he fulfills all the LAW (Romans 13:8-10). The word love in those verses is A REFERENCE TO DIVINE AGAPE. Paul is blunt: **AGAPE LOVE FULFILLS ALL THE LAW.**

Jesus is attempting to explain to Israel how to find and appropriate this new law: the law of AGAPE LOVE WITHIN, the covenant of a new heart within, a supernaturally changed human heart, a heart that allows us to fulfill all the law via AGAPE LOVE WITHIN. It is this **LOVE CHANGE** that brings LIFE, and this LOVE CHANGE that allows us to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Christ is the ONLY MEDIATOR of the New Covenant (1 Timothy 2:5; Hebrews 8:6; 9:15; 12:24). There is NO OTHER NAME UNDER HEAVEN BY WHICH WE MUST BE SAVED.

The world hates that message for it EXCLUDES all other religions, all other names, and all other concepts of mankind. God the Father *anointed* Jesus Christ as the ONLY ONE who has the KEYS TO DEATH, HELL AND HEAVEN. Jesus is the MEDIATOR. If Jesus is the mediator, then ought we not pay attention to what He said to us? Israel REJECTED CHRIST (Matthew 12:24-50). They killed Him (Acts 4:10). Because Israel refused, Christ began to build the foundation of the Church. Israel insisted upon keeping the Law (Roman 9:31-32; 10:1-4), and the Church comes into the New Covenant (Romans 11), as the **WILD OLIVE BRANCH** grafted into the house of Israel. The Church then has the right to enter the kingdom of Heaven via the new birth, which is part of the new covenant. When we undergo **AUTHENTIC REGENERATION** we become true heirs to the promise (Romans 4; Galatians 4:1-7), by the dynamics of **TRUE** faith. The Sermon on the Mount outlines the conditions by which we are to enter in to find LIFE. It deals wholly with how to enter the Kingdom of Heaven, and the entire mission of the Church IS TO ENTER INTO HEAVEN, THEN HOW COULD ANYONE SUGGEST THAT THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT DOES NOT APPLY TO US NOW? Only apostasy could bring about such terrible and damnable heresies.

Did not Jesus say “**ENTER YE IN?**” Into what? The New Covenant, the New Birth! Jesus is telling you there are two ways, two gates, two methods by which HIS BELIEVERS, HIS DISCIPLES, HIS PEOPLE, THE “CHRISTIANS” are going to ATTEMPT to enter this NEW COVENANT. One way is via a very wide gate and a broad way which has a sign over it that says ‘HEAVEN THIS WAY, ALL BELIEVERS IN JESUS, ENTER HERE.’ Satan and his FALSE CHRISTIAN PROPHETS painted that sign to deceive believers. It is a FABRICATION, A DECEPTION that appears right, sounds right, feel right, and even checks out correctly in Scripture, UNLESS ONE DIGS DEEP ENOUGH TO UNCOVER THE DECEPTION.

**There is ANOTHER GATE, and another WAY, which Jesus termed STRAIT AND NARROW. Jesus said that only a few of HIS PEOPLE, HIS BELIEVERS, WOULD ENTER INTO THIS STRAIT GATE AND WALK THIS NARROW WAY. The vast majority of Christians would REJECT IT; they would build up a theology that would offer an alternative, but attractive method of obtaining a new heart. This new alternative way would fabricate a NEW JESUS, A NEW GOSPEL. But this new**

**Jesus would be a master counterfeit, a look alike, with a gospel so close to the original that the MANY WOULD NOT DETECT THE FATAL FLAW IN THEIR THEOLOGY. It would be embraced by the VAST MAJORITY of the Body of Christ as authentic, as correct. That is why the MANY CHRISTIAN LEADERS STAND BEFORE CHRIST CONDEMNED. Peter, through the Holy Spirit said their multitude of followers LIKEWISE IS CONDEMNED. Their theology was incorrect and they suffer eternal loss.**

Therefore in reality there is only **ONE GATE** and **ONE WAY** by which we may enter into the Kingdom of God, into the New Covenant. That **ONE WAY** leads to **LIFE, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**. The other leads to eternal loss and ruin, but it **APPEARS** as **BEING THE CORRECT WAY!** IT WILL CLAIM A NEW HEART AND IT WILL CLAIM WITH TOTAL AUTHORITY THAT HEAVEN IS THE DESTINATION. IT WILL CLAIM A TRUE AND AUTHENTIC UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST. IT WILL SEIZE THE EARTHLY AND PRESENT PART OF THE PROMISE. THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WILL CLAIM TO BE SONS OF GOD, BUT THEY WILL BE IN TRUTH BASTARDS SONS, LAWLESS, FOR THEY REFUSED TO OBEY THE PARAMETERS CHRIST GAVE THEM. As a result of their false theology, they are sent away.

## **LET HIM WHO HAS EARS TO HEAR, LET HIM HEAR.**

The Sermon on the Mount is a sermon on **HOW TO GET SAVED**. It applies totally to the Church and the entire church age. The people Jesus addresses are **HIS FOLLOWERS, HIS BELIEVERS**. In spite of what you may have been taught, the Scriptures are not written to unbelievers. Rarely are unbelievers even mentioned. The Scripture is **OPEN TO THEM AND THEY MAY RESPOND CORRECTLY TO THEM FOR IT IS NOT THE WILL OF GOD THAT ANY SHOULD PERISH, BUT THAT ALL COME TO REPENTANCE (2 Peter 3:9)**. If a person rejects the Scripture, they condemn themselves. If they respond **PROPERLY, AND UNDERGO TRUE CONVERSIONS** they become believers, and if they **ARE OBEDIENT** to the commands of Christ, they will **LATER** (after they have entered the **STRAIT GATE AND WALKED THE NARROW WAY**), obtain **REGENERATION, WHICH IS LIFE AND SALVATION**. Jesus did not even **PRAY FOR UNBELIEVERS. HE DID NOT PRAY FOR THE WORLD** AT ALL:

***“I pray for THEM (the apostles, the real believers):  
I pray NOT FOR THE WORLD,  
BUT FOR THEM WHICH THOU HAST GIVEN ME;  
FOR THEY ARE THINE.”  
(John 17:9)***

The importance of this prayer is found in **WHO JESUS IS PRAYING FOR**. It was **NOT** the Christ rejecting world. He is very specific: He prays only **FOR HIS OWN. ALL OTHERS ARE REJECTED, ALL OTHERS ARE ENEMIES AND THEREFORE CONDEMNED.**



*“Neither pray I for these alone, but*

**FOR THEM ALSO WHICH SHALL BELIEVE ON ME**

**THROUGH THEIR WORD;**

**THAT THEY**

**ALL MAY BE ONE; AS THOU, FATHER,**

**ART IN ME, AND I IN THEE,**

**THAT THEY ALSO**

**MAY BE**

**ONE IN US:**

**THAT THE WORLD MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAST SENT ME.”**

**(John 17:20-21)**

Jesus extends His prayers here to include ALL BELIEVERS THAT CLAIM THEY ARE CHRISTIANS. He is not excluding mere professors; He includes ALL THOSE WHO NAME THE NAME OF JESUS. But notice how He words it, and pay close attention to it: He first prays for all those that “believe on me”. It means all professors of Christ throughout the entire church age, which means all those who have put faith and trust in the name of Jesus as Messiah. Now comes something very important: **OF THIS WHOLE GROUP, HE PRAYS THAT THESE PEOPLE MAY COME INTO AUTHENTIC UNION WITH HIM, IF THEY ARE OBEDIENT AND DO AS HE COMMANDED.** He wants them all to become one! He wants them to come to something:

*“And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it:*

*that the (AGAPE) love wherewith thou hast (AGAPE) loved me*

**MAY BE IN THEM, AND I IN THEM.”**

**(John 17:26)**

Scripture proves that simply becoming a Christian, and claiming the name of Jesus does not mean that one has **AGAPE** love within! The prayer of Jesus is that ALL BELIEVERS **WOULD COME INTO UNION WITH HIM.** That they **might come** to the **BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE** AND THEREBY ENTER INTO TRUE UNION. The prayer then has an ultimate goal: THE UNION WITH CHRIST OF ALL PROFESSING CHRISTIANS, VIA AUTHENTIC REGENERATION. It will be proven that the vast majority of believers **NEVER** enter into TRUE UNION with Christ. They embrace a false theology that actually PREVENTS IT!

**WHEAT & CHAFF**

Jesus divides the world into TWO CAMPS, believers and unbelievers. He then makes another division that is far more important: believers and followers who are OBEDIENT, and who will come into GENUINE UNION with Christ and actually enter in to the New Covenant via AUTHENTIC REGENERATION/REBIRTH. The next groups are believers and followers that are DISOBEDIENT, who will not enter into GENUINE UNION with Christ, in spite of all their belief, faith and profession of faith. They somehow miss the KEY TO HEAVEN.

*“Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven;  
**BUT HE THAT DOETH THE WILL OF MY FATHER**  
which is in heaven.”  
(Matthew 7:21)*

The word “will” is ‘thelema’ and it means a **DETERMINATION, A PURPOSE, A DECREE**. The word “doeth” is ‘poieo’ and it means to **PERFORM OR CARRY OUT, TO DO SOMETHING**. Closely associated with it is the word ‘prasso’ which means to **PERFORM REPEATEDLY, TO EXECUTE, TO ACCOMPLISH**. In short, it means to be **OBEDIENT TO GOD, THAT IS, TO PERFORM OR EXECUTE, TO CARRY OUT THAT WHICH GOD DEMANDS**. If you are obedient, you will do it. If you are disobedient, you will not do it.

*“Therefore whosoever **HEARETH** these sayings of mine,  
**AND DOETH THEM**,  
I will liken him unto a **WISE MAN**, which built his house upon a **ROCK**:  
And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it **FELL NOT: FOR IT WAS FOUNDED UPON A ROCK**.  
And every one that heareth these sayings of mine,  
**AND DOETH THEM NOT**,  
shall be likened unto a **FOOLISH MAN**, which built his house upon the sand:  
And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house;  
**AND IT FELL:**  
**AND GREAT WAS THE FALL OF IT.”**  
(Matthew 7:24-27)*

Either you are obedient or you perish. Either you do as you are told, or you perish. It is NOT OPTIONAL. It is a command from God. You do not pick and choose that which you may comply with. Theological arguments that bypass obvious commands from God lead you to certain ruin.

*“And being made perfect, he (Jesus) became  
**THE AUTHOR OF ETERNAL SALVATION UNTO ALL  
THEM THAT OBEY HIM.”***

(Hebrews 5:9)

Notice that HUGE *CONDITIONAL* WORD **‘OBEY’**. The word “obey” here is ‘hupakouo’, which simply means to **CARRY OUT THE COMMANDS OF AUTHORITY, TO HEED, TO CONFORM**. As we are dealing with HOW TO ENTER THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN, WE MUST BE OBEDIENT TO THE PARAMETERS GIVEN IN THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT! In other words, SALVATION IS CONDITIONAL UPON YOUR OBEDIENCE! IF YOU REFUSE, FOR WHATEVER FOOLISH REASON YOU HAVE, YOU BURN:

*“In FLAMING FIRE taking vengeance on them*

*that **KNOW NOT** GOD,*

*AND THAT **OBEY NOT** THE GOSPEL OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST...”*

*(2 Thessalonians 1:8)*

These people are not just unbelievers; they are also BELIEVERS WHO REFUSED TO COMPLY WITH THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST. **The concept that grace now replaces the commands of obedience is a doctrine right out of hell itself**, a fabrication of the false prophets, which Christ, Paul, Peter and Jude warned us about. It is a perversion of grace. The commands to obedience are not new to the Lord’s Word (Exodus 19:5; Deut. 11:27,28; 13:4; 28:62; 30:20; 1 Sam. 12:15; 5:22; Job 36:11-12; Jer. 7:23; 11:4; 11:7; 12:17; Dan. 9:11). These are but a few examples. The New Testament is filled with references by all the writers that **ONLY THOSE WHO OBEY THE LORD WILL BE SAVED**. If you refuse to enter the strait gate, and walk the narrow way, because you think it is some form of ‘works’ or ‘legalism’ you will perish in your sins for you **NEITHER KNOW GOD, AGAPE LOVE, NOR CHRIST**. One can claim all they want that they do, but the truth is what determines your destiny, not your opinions! **DOES JESUS KNOW YOU?**

The word “obey” in the above Scripture is also ‘hupakouo’, which means **TO HEED THE COMMANDS OF ONE IN AUTHORITY, TO HEarken UNTO THEM, TO PERFORM AS REQUIRED**. What are we to obey? THE GOSPEL. What is the Gospel? The word “gospel” is ‘euaggelion’ and it means **MESSAGE, DECLARATION OF GOOD NEWS**. What is the message? CHRIST HAS REDEEMED MANKIND. How will Christ redeem? Via the NEW COVENANT. How do we enter into the New Covenant? CHRIST TOLD US HOW IN THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT! Who has Christ redeemed? **THOSE THAT KEEP HIS SAYINGS, THOSE THAT “DO THE WILL OF THE FATHER”, THOSE THAT OBEY THE COMMANDS:**

**“ENTER YE IN AT THE STRAIT GATE...”**

**“NARROW IS THE WAY, WHICH LEADED UNTO LIFE...”**

**“STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE...”**

Read the parameters, read the written declaration. Read every word, and then obey the sayings of Jesus and do the will of the Father. Obedience is the key to the entire Gospel and salvation itself. Faith at its root essence is **OBEDIENCE OVER THE LONG HAUL**, or we could say a **FAITH THAT IS TRIED IN THE FIRES OF TRIAL AND TESTING. OUR FAITH WILL BE TRIED TO SEE IF IT IS AS THE FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST.** Jesus exclaimed:

***“And WHY CALL YE ME, Lord, Lord,  
AND DO NOT THE THINGS WHICH I SAY?”  
(Luke 6:46)***

The Bible is very blunt: it calls all those that refuse to obey the counsel of the Lord **FOOLISH AND SIMPLE.** It does not matter how many theological degrees you hang after your name, nor how many millions of followers you may claim. All of that is vanity, all of that is carnal. What matters is simple obedience.

***“He that REJECTETH ME, and RECEIVETH NOT  
MY WORDS (ALL SCRIPTURE),  
hath one that judgeth him:  
THE WORD THAT I HAVE SPOKEN (SCRIPTURE),  
the same shall judge him in the last day.”  
(John 12:48)***

Jesus makes it clear that there are two types of **BELIEVERS:** Those that hear the word and do it, and those that hear the word, but refuse to comply. We are back to obedience and disobedience. It then becomes clear that Jesus is **CONTRASTING THE TWO TYPES OF BELIEVERS, FOLLOWERS AND DISCIPLES,** in the Sermon on the Mount. **THE REAL AUTHENTIC ONES WHO DO AS COMMANDED, AND THE FALSE ONES THAT DO NOT!**

***“ENTER YE IN (TO THE NARROW WAY) at the STRAIT GATE:  
for WIDE IS THE GATE, and BROAD  
IS THE WAY,  
THAT LEADETH TO DESTRUCTION, AND MANY  
there be which go in thereat:  
BECAUSE  
STRAIT IS THE GATE,  
AND NARROW IS THE WAY,***

*which **LEADETH UNTO LIFE,**  
and **FEW** there be that find it.”  
(Matthew 7:13-14)*

It is a tragic error of modern Christian theology to attempt to claim that the wide gate and broad way are comprised of all unbelievers, and that every Christian has entered the strait gate and walked the narrow way, or is walking it. According to Scripture, **THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS ARE ON THE BROAD WAY.** We will prove this out in this series. What Jesus is telling us is this: there are two types of believers, followers and disciples. The obedient ones enter the STRAIT GATE, TAKE THE NARROW WAY, MEET CHRIST, HAVE AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED AND ENTER INTO AUTHENTIC REGENERATION AND UNION. They are the WHEAT. The disobedient refuse the strait gate, refuse the narrow way, by claiming it is a “work”, a form of “legalism”, a perversion of grace, BUT CLAIM THEY ARE CHRISTIANS. They never meet Christ; they do not know or have AGAPE LOVE, in spite of their claims to the contrary, they are never REGENERATED, and they are called BASTARD SONS, and THEY ARE CHAFF. The wheat is taken into the barn, while the chaff is burned in the fire.

Were the “many” rejected by Jesus Christ under GRACE? If so, why are they not saved? Why doesn't Jesus merely “wink” at their sins? They WERE under grace, but they DID NOT AVAIL THEMSELVES OF IT, BECAUSE THEY REFUSED TO DO WHAT GOD AND CHRIST COMMANDED THEM TO DO! THEY FRUSTRATED THE GRACE OF GOD, THEY DID NOT UNDERSTAND WHAT GRACE WAS, AND THEY PERVERTED ITS REAL MEANING.

To prove that there is a broad way for Christians, let's turn to John 10:1 and read it carefully:

*“Verily, verily, I say unto you,  
he that **ENTERETH NOT BY THE DOOR***

***INTO THE SHEEPFOLD, BUT CLIMBETH UP  
SOME OTHER WAY,  
THE SAME IS A THIEF AND A ROBBER.”**  
(John 10:1)*

## **“BROAD IS THE WAY” = SOME OTHER WAY**

Jesus says there are **TWO WAYS** into the sheepfold. The **SHEEPFOLD** is **THE BODY OF CHRIST.** You can come into the sheepfold (Body of Christ) by **THE DOOR** (1), or **SOME OTHER WAY** (2). The important thing to notice is that Jesus **INCLUDES THEM BOTH AS ENTERING THE SHEEPFOLD.** All Christians no matter their true status before Christ are considered to be in the Body of Christ, or **part of HIS CHURCH.** It will be shown later that

SOME OTHER WAY IS **CONVERSION**, and via the **DOOR IS REGENERATION**. In spite of modern theology, conversion **IS NOT** regeneration.

Jesus says He is THE DOOR (John 10:8). The door to what? A door is an entry point to something. What are we **COMMANDED TO DO? TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT AND JESUS IS THE ONLY MEDIATOR OF THAT COVENANT. WE THEREFORE MUST ENTER IN THROUGH JESUS CHRIST.** If Jesus is the DOOR, then THE DOOR IS OUR ENTRY POINT INTO THE NEW COVENANT! Where is Jesus in relation to the NARROW WAY? AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY! NOT AT THE BEGINNING, NOT AT THE MIDDLE, BUT AT THE END! Scripture proves that *the destination* of the narrow way is ALSO JESUS. This is true because **LIFE IS AT THE END** OF THE NARROW WAY:

*“He that **HATH THE SON***

***HATH LIFE;***

*AND HE THAT HATH NOT THE SON OF GOD*

***HATH NOT LIFE.”***

*(1 John 5:12)*

If Jesus is the only one who has LIFE, and the NARROW WAY LEADETH UNTO LIFE, THEN IT SHOULD BE OBVIOUS TO YOU THAT JESUS IS **STANDING AND WAITING FOR US AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY!** Do you understand this? It means WE DO NOT FIND THE LIVING CHRIST AT THE STRAIT GATE, OR ANYWHERE ALONG THE NARROW WAY, BUT ONLY AT THE **END** OF THE NARROW WAY. If you refuse the strait gate, and the narrow way that leads to THE DOOR, then you have come into the sheepfold SOME OTHER WAY. There is only one other way listed: **THE WIDE GATE AND BROAD WAY.** These people claim to be Christians. They are in deception. They have come into the body of Christ in a way Christ **REJECTS.**

Jesus said that MANY believers travel the broad way. The word “many” is ‘polus’ and it means **MUCH, LARGELY, ABUNDANT, MOSTLY, PLENTEOUS, MAJORITY OR VAST MAJORITY.** Notice that Jesus said the vast majority of His followers travel the BROAD WAY to DESTRUCTION. The word used for destruction is ‘apoleia’, and it means **ETERNAL RUIN OR LOSS.** The many make a very serious mistake in their theology and beliefs. It is this group, who comprise the many, who stand before Jesus REJECTED.

**‘MANY there be which go in thereat’**

**‘MANY will say to me in that day’**

**=**

**SOME OTHER WAY into the sheepfold**

Throughout the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus contrasts these two types of believers, and how they will respond to Him and His commands. There are **TWO GATES, TWO WAYS, TWO DESTINATIONS**. There are **TWO TYPES OF TREES, TWO TYPES OF FRUITS, AND TWO TYPES OF HOUSES**. There are **TWO WAYS TO ENTER THE SHEEPFOLD, THE DOOR OR SOME OTHER WAY**. Could it be that **ALL CHRISTIANS** enter the **WIDE GATE** and begin their journey on the broad way? That within this sheepfold of Christianity there are but a few who discover there is a strait gate and who enter in and travel the narrow way to find the **LIVING CHRIST**? Could this be the answer to ‘**MANY** are called, but **FEW** are chosen’? That Jesus Christ considers all who profess Him as followers, as disciples, but only **THE FEW** as ‘disciples indeed’ (John 8:31)?

The Sermon on the Mount was designed to show those who were followers **HOW TO APPROACH THE KING**. There is a proper protocol that must be observed, and if it is not, you **WILL** go into eternal ruin. Jesus told us the correct way to lay down our petitions for mercy before the Lord of the Universe. He showed us how to enter in to the New Covenant of Agape love bestowment, which is the new heart.

Would you walk into the President of the United State’s Oval office without an appointment? Do you simply rush in without proper protocol being observed? If you attempt to ‘enter in’ in such a manner, you would be instantly stopped, and if you refused, you would be killed. **THERE IS A RIGHT WAY AND A WRONG WAY TO APPROACH THE PRESIDENT**. One way gets you in; the other way gets you killed. The nations of the world, and their presidents, are but dust in the hands of the Lord. They are counted as **NOTHING**. If this be true, then how much more should we observe the commands of Christ to approach **GOD**? Jesus is telling us: “Look, you are approaching the God of this Universe, the **LORD GOD ALMIGHTY**. These are the ground rules to approach my Father. These **ARE THE CONDITIONS** for entering into the New Covenant. These parameters must be adhered to. If you will do it, **YOU SHALL LIVE**. If you refuse, **YOU SHALL PERISH FOREVER**.”

*“Because I have called, and YE REFUSED; I have stretched out my hand, and NO MAN REGARDED;*

*But ye have SET AT NOUGHT ALL MY COUNSEL,  
AND WOULD NONE OF MY REPROOF:*

*I also will laugh at your CALAMITY; I will mock when your FEAR COMETH; when your  
fear cometh as desolation,  
and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind; when  
distress and anguish cometh upon you.*

*THEN SHALL THEY CALL UPON ME,  
BUT I WILL NOT ANSWER;  
THEY SHALL SEEK ME EARLY,  
BUT THEY SHALL NOT FIND ME:*

*FOR THAT THEY HATED KNOWLEDGE,  
AND DID NOT CHOOSE THE FEAR OF THE LORD.”*

There are three things here: they refused **KNOWLEDGE**, they refused **HIS COUNSEL**, and they refused the **FEAR OF THE LORD**. They perish and go into eternal ruin. The same thing happens to the 'MANY'.

## WHO ARE THE MANY?

We have now shown you the context of the Sermon on the Mount, and that the many who enter into the wide gate and remain on the broad way are in fact BELIEVERS. We know that the word 'many' means **VAST MAJORITY**. We must therefore find out why **THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WHO LIVED DURING THE ENTIRE CHURCH AGE ARE REJECTED BY CHRIST**. To accomplish that we must examine this and other Scripture carefully. When we do that, we will unlock the mystery of why it happened, and thus we ourselves can hope to avoid it.

*“MANY WILL SAY to me in that day, LORD, LORD,  
HAVE WE NOT*

*PROPHESED IN THY NAME?*

*AND IN THY NAME HAVE CAST OUT DEVILS?*

*AND IN THY NAME DONE MANY WONDERFUL WORKS?”*

*(Matthew 7:22)*

We know the word 'many' means the **VAST MAJORITY** of **CHRISTIANS**. Could we prove they were **SINCERE CHRISTIANS**? Is sincerity the issue here, or is **deception** the issue? Can we find out who these people really are?

**1. THEY CALL JESUS LORD.** Only a believer, a disciple, a follower calls Jesus Christ Lord. Obviously they knew who Jesus was and knew His position of authority and power, for they used His name and His power upon earth to perform their works. The word for "Lord" is 'kurios' and it means **SUPREME AUTHORITY, SUPREME RULER**.

**2. THEY PROPHESED IN THE NAME OF JESUS.** Only Christians take the name of Jesus: only Christians profess Christ and become **MESSENGERS FOR CHRIST**. **THEY ARE HIS AGENTS AND AMBASSADORS**. They are working under **HIS AUTHORITY**. Clearly they are **MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH, AND ACCEPTED MEMBERS BY THE BRETHREN**.

Christ does not argue with them about their works in **HIS NAME**. He does not refute it, which substantiates it. He does not answer them on that basis, for it is a **TRUTH**. This is why they argue



with Christ, and are in **ABSOLUTE SHOCK AND DISBELIEF AT WHAT IS HAPPENING TO THEM**. They now present their side: DID WE NOT DO ALL OF THESE WORKS IN YOUR NAME UNDER YOUR AUTHORITY? Were we not operating under your Lordship and power? Were we not your agents, your ambassadors? Everything we did, we did in your name! LORD, LORD HAVE MERCY!

There is no question that all of these poor souls THOUGHT they were FULFILLING THE GREAT COMMISSION OF MATTHEW 28:19-20. The word “prophesied” is ‘propheteuo’; and it means **TO PREACH, TO TEACH, TO EVANGELIZE, TO GIVE REAL PROPHECY ALL UNDER THE ANOINTING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT**. That word has roots that cover the broad spectrum of offices in the Church: some apostles, some pastors, some teachers, some evangelists. We can then deduce something from this remark: **THEY THOUGHT THEY WERE OBEDIENT CHRISTIANS, DOING THE WORK OF CHRIST AS HE COMMANDED**.

## **THEY WERE WRONG; DEAD WRONG.**

Christ does not DENY THEIR WORK ANYWHERE. HE DOES NOT DENY THEY HAD THE HOLY SPIRIT. By the absence of such a denial, He implies that they did it all in His name, and by all implications under His authority and by the Holy Spirit.

These people ARE CHRISTIAN LEADERS. They took the Gospel to the four corners of the world, fulfilling the great commission. They thought they were obedient; they never once questioned it. Now they stand before their Lord and find themselves **UTTERLY CAST OUT**. THEY STAND BEFORE CHRIST STUNNED TO THE VERY CORE OF THEIR BEING. They only NOW RECOGNIZE they are LOST SOULS, DESTINED FOR THE HELL THEY PREACHED AGAINST.

Christ did not deny their positions as leaders either. The very word they used PROVES THEY WERE LEADERS. Christ did not base His answer to them on this basis; THEY WERE IN THE SHEEPFOLD. THEY WERE IN THE BODY OF CHRIST AS EVANGELISTS, TEACHERS, PREACHERS WITHIN THE MAINSTREAM CHURCH.

**3. THEY CAST OUT DEMONS IN THE NAME OF JESUS.** This is a very important key to proving that these people were not just nominal believers, but were on the front lines of the battle between God and Satan. The word “devils” is ‘daimonion’ and it means a **DEMONIC BEING, A SUPERNATURAL SPIRIT OF EVIL**.

*“And THESE SIGNS shall follow  
THEM THAT BELIEVE;  
IN MY NAME shall they CAST OUT DEVILS;  
they shall speak with NEW TONGUES;  
They shall take up serpents;  
and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them;  
they shall LAY HANDS ON THE SICK, and they shall recover.”*  
(Mark 16:17-18)

Jesus says that **THEY WHO BELIEVE** in Him shall be able to do all of these things in **HIS NAME**. That is exactly what the **MANY DYNAMIC CHRISTIANS SAID**. Obviously they **BELIEVED**. They also must have known about Satan and demons, for they were involved in the casting out of demons. This being true, then they knew about heaven and hell. They must have known about the great battle between Christ and Satan. They must have preached the Gospel of salvation from hell and hellfire around the world! They knew about the Holy Spirit, for they had Holy Spirit power! They used it in the mighty name of Jesus!

Let me ask you a very serious question: if these people **KNEW ABOUT HEAVEN AND HELL, ABOUT CHRIST AND SATAN, ABOUT ETERNAL TORMENT AND SUFFERING, AND ABOUT DEMONS**:

### **WOULD THEY KNOWINGLY PICK HELL AS THEIR DESTINATION?**

If you answer yes, **WHY WOULD THEY?** There is a not a soul on earth that would pick hell as their eternal destination. **NO ONE**. Given all of their knowledge (they were teachers, preachers, evangelists) would they **DELIBERATELY MOCK CHRIST AND CHOOSE ETERNAL RUIN?** The question itself is absurd! **OF COURSE NOT!**

If they would not pick this destination by choice, then how did they end up there? The answer is simple: **DECEPTION ON A MASSIVE SCALE**. They were under rank deception, **FOR LACK OF SEARCHING FOR THE REAL TRUTH**. The only way you can go under a deception as this is via **BUILDING A THEOLOGY THAT IS INCORRECT, AND THEN EMBRACING THAT THEOLOGY AS TRUTH**. In short, it means **REFUSING TO COMPLY WITH THE COMMANDS OF JESUS CHRIST AND BUILDING A THEOLOGY THAT GETS AROUND IT!** **It was their own theology that took them to hell**. Peter warned that Satan would infiltrate the Church and build a complete **NEW THEOLOGY** that looked 100% correct, but it would lead to the **VAST MAJORITY GOING INTO ETERNAL RUIN** (2 Peter 2:1-3).

**4. THEY DID MANY WONDERFUL WORKS.** The word “wonderful” is ‘dunamis’ and it means **TO HAVE MIRACULOUS POWER, MIGHTY WORKS, MIRACLE WORKING ABILITY**. These folks were into healing, tongues, and a whole host of supernatural signs and wonders. **THEY HAD IT ALL**. They did it all in the name of Jesus. Now from all of this we can deduce many things, and will prove it out totally by Scripture, which is the final judge in such matters. Think about each item listed, and you will see that the deductions that we can make are valid, and when cross referenced to other Scripture, prove to be totally true and accurate.

- A) Christ does not CONTRADICT THEM.**
- B) Christ does not say they did not BELIEVE.**
- C) Christ does not say they had no FAITH.**
- D) Christ does not deny it was done in His NAME.**
- E) Christ does not deny the WORKS DONE.**
- F) Christ does not deny they UPHELD HIS NAME.**
- G) Christ does not deny THAT THEY WERE FULFILLING THE GREAT COMMISSION.**
- H) Christ does not deny they were CHRISTIANS.**
- I) Christ does not deny they were PART OF THE BODY OF CHRIST.**

In point of fact, Christ does not even claim they spoke evil of His name. You will not find one word of denial in the answer of Christ. He does not deny it, for their claims are totally true. Christ is not going to deny TRUTH. But His answer is devastating in its simplicity and beauty. His answer proves they missed

## **THE ENTIRE POINT OF THE SCRIPTURE.**

They missed the key central issue between man and God. Because they missed the key to salvation in Christ, their works were branded as INIQUITY.

Albert Barnes was a Christian scholar who wrote a commentary now called Barnes' Notes. What he says about these people helps us to understand in part what happened to these people:

“Many would plead that they had done miracles, and preached and prophesied much, and on the ground of THAT they would demand entrance into heaven. The power of working miracles **HAS NO NECESSARY CONNECTION TO PIETY**. God may as well, if He chooses, give THE POWER of raising the dead to a wicked man, as the skill of healing to a wicked physician. A MIRACLE IS A DISPLAY OF HIS (GOD'S) POWER THROUGH THE MEDIUM OF ANOTHER. The act of healing the sick is also a DISPLAY OF HIS (GOD'S) POWER THROUGH THE AGENCY OF ANOTHER. In neither of these cases is there any necessary connection to moral character. So of preaching and prophesying. God may use the agency of a man of talents, though not pious, to carry forward his purposes...” Volume 9, page 79.

This goes far deeper than that. These men **KNEW THEY HAD TO BE BORN AGAIN**. There is no way they could NOT HAVE KNOWN IT. This is a deception in theology. However, I want you to notice how Barnes contrasts POWER WITH PIETY. In this case he is using REGENERATIVE PIETY, OR THE PIETY THAT COMES FROM BEING BORN AGAIN. Power does not prove anything. **We dare not confuse power with inner essence of the soul**. Power is power, and you could heal someone and not have any love in your soul. It could be done for aggrandizement, pride, greed or to gain a position of power.

It is vital to realize that working power has nothing whatever to do with the state of the heart in the regenerative sense of the world. We can prove that because **Satan can and does duplicate every single gift of the Holy Spirit!** That is one of his methods of deception. Power is manifested by OUTWARD AND VISIBLE SIGNS AND WONDERS, SUCH AS TONGUES, HEALINGS, SLAYINGS OF THE SPIRIT, ETC.

The occult has long known and recognized that Satan can and does heal, answer prayer, causes people to speak in tongues, and slayings in the spirit, can prophecy, etc. **Is the essence of Satan the same as the Holy Spirit? IS THE COMMAND OF SCRIPTURE TO 'TEST THE SPIRITS' THERE FOR A REASON?** That is why the Scripture does not base salvation upon any of these things whatsoever, for anyone, including believers could be deceived by the enemy. Salvation is based upon something that **Satan cannot duplicate**.

It might be argued that these people were into WORKS, OR A FORM OF LEGALISM. The implication of Scripture is that they were utterly **UNAWARE** that they were legalists. Scripture proves that you can **THINK YOU ARE DOING EVERYTHING BY FAITH AND GRACE AND STILL BE UNDER THE LAW**. This will be explored fully. These people displayed all the power and might of the Pentecostal and Charismatic movements, and they fully believed in salvation by grace through faith. The issue goes far deeper than WORKS vs. FAITH AND GRACE. What we are dealing with here is a **DECEPTION IN THEOLOGY** so subtle and so clever that they never realized their danger. The other argument presented is that they did not have Holy Spirit power, but instead had satanic power. This is even worse, for they were **UNABLE TO TELL THE DIFFERENCE**. They asked God for bread, and He gave them a **STONE**. **That is not the character of God or Christ**. It goes much deeper than any of this, and it rests upon one thing: **THEIR THEOLOGY WAS IN DIRECT CONFLICT WITH JESUS CHRIST, ALTHOUGH IT LOOKED LIKE IT AGREED TOTALLY WITH IT!!!**

These people were sincere, dedicated Christian workers. They had been duped by a **CLEVER DECEPTION**. It is the purpose of this series to **UNMASK THAT DECEPTION**. Christ did not question whatever their **FAITH, BELIEF OR SINCERITY**. That was not the issue. We can, however, prove the following to be true:

1. They underwent a **CONVERSION** to Christ.

These people were at one time **UNBELIEVERS**. They at one time or another heard the gospel and underwent a **conversion** to Christ. He does not deny that they were Christians. The word conversion means to change directions, to have a **MIND CHANGE, TO CHANGE YOUR MIND, TO THINK DIFFERENTLY, TO TURN AROUND**. These people walked in the world, heard the gospel call and responded to it in a **positive way**. They turned from the ways of the world, and began to follow Christ.

2. They **BELIEVED** in the name of Jesus.

All of these people were believers. Without belief it is impossible to obtain the power of the Holy Spirit, for it is predicated upon belief and faith. **They had great belief, enough to perform miracles**.

3. They had **FAITH** in Jesus.

All of these people had faith in Christ. You do not undergo **CONVERSION**, become a follower, and rise to positions of leadership in the body of Christ without having **FAITH**. These people **TRUSTED CHRIST IN EVERY WAY**. There is no indication that they were insincere or did not have faith and belief.

4. They believed they were **REGENERATED, BORN AGAIN CHRISTIANS AND HAD ETERNAL LIFE**.

If they knew about Satan and his demons, they also knew about Christ and the gospel message of salvation. They would have known that Jesus demanded **REGENERATION** for entrance to heaven. These people were leaders, teachers of the faith. There is no question or hint that they did not **KNOW** their scriptures. They were obviously convinced that their theological doctrines were correct. They believed totally that their interpretations of Scripture were correct and they were certain they were saved and going to heaven.

They stand before Christ in **UTTER SHOCK AND DISBELIEF** at what is going to happen. To their horror they find out they made a tragic miscalculation. Had they known ahead of time that they were not in **TRUE UNION** with Christ, they would have done something to correct it. They were in utter deception! They were totally blind to their true state. For this to happen they must have held a theology that **TOLD THEM THEY WERE REGENERATED WHEN IN FACT THEY WERE NOT**. That means a new definition of what “being born again” really means was brought into being and accepted hook, line and sinker **BY THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS, IN EVERY DENOMINATION. IT COST THEM ETERNITY.**

Jesus flatly tells them they **WERE NOT** regenerated. We will explore the answer of Christ deeply, but the essence of His answer is that they were never **BORN AGAIN, NEVER HAD COME INTO UNION WITH HIM**. Scripture proves that **AUTHENTIC REGENERATION INCLUDES UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST**. It is on this basis alone that Christ rejects them. These people neglected the most important point of all Scripture: **TRUE UNION WITH THE LIVING CHRIST**.

5. They had all made **A DECISION FOR CHRIST**.

All of these people were Christians. Therefore in one manner or other they had made a decision for Christ and dedicated themselves to Him. Denominations may differ in their approach and ritual, but they all require in one form or another, a declaration for Christ. Without it they would not have been accepted into the church. Different denominations teach differently on how **ONE GETS SAVED**, but they all teach it one way or another. Therefore each and every one not only was accepted by their respective denominations, they rose to positions of leadership and power within those denominations, and continued to propagate their respective church doctrines on salvation! **THEY WERE POSITIVE THEY WERE GOING TO HEAVEN BUT ENDED UP IN ETERNAL RUIN!**

6. They had all been **BAPTIZED**.

To be accepted into a church one must undergo the ritual of baptism. It matters not the form of baptism that denomination requires, the point is they **UNDERWENT BAPTISM**.

7. They had been **BAPTIZED WITH HOLY SPIRIT POWER**.

There is no question whatever that these people **WERE UNDER THE IMPRESSION AND POSITIVE THAT THEY HAD TRUE HOLY SPIRIT POWER**. The answer of Christ would indicate that their belief was totally correct. Remember that they did everything in the name of Jesus and under His authority. At no time could they have questioned that this power was **NOT** of God. The proof text points strongly that indeed they did have a **POWER BAPTISM OF THE SPIRIT. YET THEY ARE REJECTED BY JESUS CHRIST**.

Many denominations reject the concept that the Holy Spirit works in this day and age, and therefore claim that this is a reference to early Christians. Nothing could be further from the truth. Scripture proves categorically that the Holy Spirit is working in the same manner as He did at Pentecost.

9. They were considered by their church as being **AUTHENTIC CHRISTIANS**.

This is important: the Body of Christ accepted these leaders as real sincere Christians, whose message was **TRUTH**. They would have been rejected out of hand if this were not the case. These

people UPHELD JESUS CHRIST, THEY PROMOTED JESUS CHRIST WITH POWER AND CONVICTION. THEY TAUGHT AND PREACHED CHRIST TO THE MULTITUDES, AS EVANGELISTS, PREACHERS AND TEACHERS. They had all the form, the gifts and the power of disciples of Christ.

These people were under a powerful delusion. It cost them heaven, it cost them EVERYTHING THEY HAD; THEIR ETERNAL SOULS AND SPIRITS WOULD NOW RESIDE IN HELLFIRE FOREVER. What could be more tragic than this? How can a person be deluded into being positive he is an authentic Christian, born again and spirit filled, a sincere and dedicated worker for Christ only to be rejected out of hand? **If these powerhouse Christians are rejected, what of the nominal Christian? What fate does he/she face?**

Let's consolidate this and see where we stand with provable facts:

1. They underwent **CONVERSIONS**.
2. They **MUST HAVE** said the sinner's prayer or made an equivalent form of **dedication**.
3. They **BELIEVED** in Jesus.
4. They had **FAITH** in Jesus.
5. They **TRUSTED** in the name of Jesus.
6. They **THOUGHT** they gave their hearts to Jesus.
7. They were **POSITIVE THEY WERE SAVED**.
8. They were positive they were **REGENERATED**.
9. They were positive they were in **TRUE UNION** with Christ.
10. They had undergone **BAPTISM** by water.
11. They had been **BAPTIZED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT OR THOUGHT THEY WERE**.
12. They were able to **WORK MIRACLES**.
13. They were able to **CAST OUT DEMONS**.
14. They were **ACCEPTED** by their church.
15. They were **LEADERS, evangelists, teachers and mighty preachers of the Word**.
16. They **THOUGHT** they were **obedient in fulfilling the GREAT COMMISSION**.

Astoundingly Jesus never **HINTED THAT ANY OF THE ABOVE WAS NOT TRUE**. He did not say to them that they were liars, or that they had no faith, no belief, and no trust. His answer is not based upon **ANY** of the **ABOVE POINTS**. They are of no consequence to Christ because the issue between man and God had **not** been settled: **THE LIVING CHRIST WAS THE ONLY MEDIATOR OF THE NEW COVENANT, AND THESE PEOPLE NEVER ENTERED INTO IT. The issue between man and God is a LOVE ISSUE, and THIS ISSUE ALONE determines one's entrance into the Kingdom of God.**

**As Christ said there was only one way to enter the New Covenant, and that was via the STRAIT gate and NARROW way, then we must conclude that these people NEVER ENTERED THE STRAIT GATE, NEVER WALKED THE NARROW WAY, BUT FOUND 'SOME OTHER WAY' INTO THE SHEEPFOLD. As a result, they never met the living Christ, they never found out what AGAPE love was, and they never entered into TRUE UNION.**

## THE ANSWER OF JESUS CHRIST

How Jesus answers these poor souls gives us the real keys we need to know to unlock the mystery of what happened, and why their theology was incorrect. The answer given is a chilling answer, and should cause every single soul to ponder within themselves **IF INDEED THEY BE IN THE FAITH**. The answer will show us the NATURE OF THE DECEPTION.

It is possible to be a totally sincere and dedicated Christian and still be under a grand delusion. You can think you know Jesus Christ in a very personal and intimate way, to pray and draw close to this Jesus you think you know, and appropriate all the powers of the Holy Spirit by faith and baptism. You can lay your life on the line for missionary service, be a powerful evangelist, teacher or preacher and still **NEVER COME INTO UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST**. This is more tragic than your worst nightmare, for you will never wake up from it. **YOU WILL LOSE ETERNAL LIFE AND THERE WILL BE NO HOPE OF RECOVERY FOR ALL TIME.**

*“And THEN*

*will I profess unto them,*

**I NEVER KNEW YOU:**

**DEPART FROM ME, YE THAT WORK INIQUITY.”**

(Matthew 7:23)

We will inspect this answer very closely for the rest of this book. It shows us WHAT HAPPENED. We will first explore the following words:

1. And THEN
2. I
3. NEVER
4. KNEW
5. YOU
6. INIQUITY

With these words we will begin to unlock the mystery of what happened and why. We can only scratch the surface here, for our point in this chapter is to prove that THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS CAN AND WILL BE SENT TO ETERNAL RUIN.

1. And “THEN”

The key word here is THEN. It proves that union had never taken place at all during their earthly lives. The word for “then” is ‘tote’ and it means **AT THAT TIME**. It means at the time of their judgment. He waits until the judgment itself to tell these souls that **UNION HAD NEVER TAKEN PLACE**.

2. The next word is the personal pronoun “**I**”. It is used by a living being with central awareness. It is used by the very much alive and resurrected Jesus Christ. He is referring to **HIMSELF, HIS CENTRAL ESSENCE**. He is saying that **HE HIMSELF NEVER KNEW THEM**. He does not say that God the Father did not know them, or that the Holy Spirit did not know them. He is referring to Himself only. That concept might shock you, because are not the persons of the Trinity ONE? Mainline denominational Christian theology preaches a TRINITY, that there are THREE PERSONS IN THE GODHEAD.

The Bible does **NOT** teach you that union with the HOLY SPIRIT is salvation. Nor does it teach you that UNION WITH GOD THE FATHER IS SALVATION. The Bible teaches you under no uncertain terms that **UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST** is what saves the individual. The reason for this is because **IT IS JESUS CHRIST WHO REDEEMED MANKIND**, and NOT the Holy Spirit or God the Father. We will explore this fully, but it is a truth, and a truth ignored by modern Christian theology. Modern theology tells you if you HAVE THE HOLY SPIRIT YOU HAVE IT ALL. On one side of their mouth they teach a TRINITY, on the other side, they IGNORE IT. Do not ignore it on the issue of salvation, for if you do, you will end up one of the many who THOUGHT THEY KNEW JESUS, when in fact they DID NOT.

### 3. “NEVER”

The word never is very important. It comes from the Greek word “oudepote” and it means, **NOT EVEN AT ANY TIME, NOT EVER, NEVER AT ALL, AT NO TIME WHATSOEVER**. The root of the word is ‘oude’ and it means **NOT EVEN EVER, NEVER AT ALL**. This is vital, for it tells us what we need to know: **THERE WAS NEVER TRUE UNION WITH THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST**. Christ is saying that at no time in their lives, not ever was there a moment of UNION with Him. Not since the day they were born to the day they died! He never made contact with them, and they never made contact with Him. There was never any ‘meeting of the hearts’. It is important to understand the impact of what Jesus is saying. He did not say:

1. **I knew you once but I have rejected you.**
2. **I knew you once but you fell away and backslid.**
3. **I knew you once, but I am counting it as though I never knew you at all.**
4. **I knew you, but you later rejected me.**

Jesus said none of those things. He said only that **NEVER IN ALL OF THEIR LIVES** was there contact made with them. Union never occurred. **Regeneration never occurred**. They were not born again, they only **THOUGHT** they were born again. How is this possible? How could a believer think he was in union with Christ, a most intimate union at that, and in fact no union was ever made? We had better dig until we find the answer.

### 4. “KNEW”

The word “knew” is ‘ginosko’ and it means to come to know in the absolute sense, to understand totally, to know **EXPERIENTIALLY**. It is often used in a relationship sense between the person known and the person knowing. It is used to express **UNION IN AN EXPERIENTIAL SENSE**.

*“And then I will declare in a public announcement to them*

***I NEVER CAME TO KNOW YOU***



**EXPERIENTIALLY...**  
(Wuest New Testament Translation)

The Random House Dictionary of the English Language gives the definition of experience as 1. A particular instance of **PERSONALLY ENCOUNTERING or UNDERGOING SOMETHING**. 2. The process or fact of **PERSONALLY OBSERVING, ENCOUNTERING OR UNDERSTANDING SOMETHING. THE SYNONYMS ARE ENCOUNTER, KNOW**. Could it mean a real literal and experiential revelation and manifestation of Christ to the believer? This is not only denied by modern Christianity, it would be branded as satanic!

6. **“YOU”**

This word is important in that it reveals that Christ feels there must be a real union between TWO LIVING ENTITIES. This union is considered by Christ to be essential for salvation, for without it you are rejected out of hand. **He is saying that “I” Jesus, never came into union with “you”**. Christ was never admitted into the heart of hearts.

7. **“INIQUITY”**

The word “iniquity” is ‘anamia’, and it means **ILLEGALITY OR VIOLATION OF LAW, TRANSGRESSION OF LAW, OR LAWLESSNESS**. He is NOT using this in the terms of human law, but of God’s law. The New Covenant is a legally binding contract between God and the human race. It is a legal document; which God and those who He seeks must abide by. The commands of Jesus Christ on the Mount establish the requirements of entering into this covenant for a new heart. If you refuse to comply with the requirements because of theology or any other reason, you are in violation of the covenant itself, and thus you are a transgressor of God’s law. **THE NEW LAW IS AGAPE LOVE**. If you do not have agape love, because you refuse to walk the narrow way, then you are in violation OF THE NEW LAW OF AGAPE LOVE, **THE NEW COVENANT**. This is true because you are claiming you have entered in legally when in fact you have not. You are a thief and a robber, plundering the promises of God, taking what belongs to the rightful heirs and claiming them for yourself when you have no right whatever to do so. This makes you lawless, which is why the Scripture brands such a one as a “bastard”. The word for bastard is ‘nothos’ in the Greek, and it means **A SPURIOUS OR ILLEGITIMATE SON**; and this in turn makes your works, no matter how sincere, works of ‘iniquity’.

*“But if ye be **WITHOUT CHASTISEMENT,**  
**WHEREOF ALL ARE PARTAKERS, THEN ARE YE**  
**BASTARDS, AND NOT SONS.”**  
(Hebrews 12:8)*

*“A **BASTARD SHALL NOT ENTER**  
**INTO THE CONGREGATION OF THE LORD...”**  
(Deuteronomy 23:2)*

God does not change, and He so states THAT FACT in the Bible. Only His methods change, but His concepts and His laws never change. **A BASTARD WILL NEVER ENTER INTO HEAVEN.** HE IS EXCLUDED. **THE ‘MANY’ dynamic powerhouse Christians were in fact BASTARDS.** That is why Christ HAD TO SEND THEM AWAY. They were bastards because they were without the chastisement of the Lord. They had never entered into the STRAIT GATE, and **they never walked the chastisement road called the NARROW WAY.** Thus Jesus calls all of their works, no matter how sincere, as “iniquity”. **They were not done under the law, THEY WERE NOT DONE IN AGAPE LOVE, BUT INSTEAD IN THEIR OWN NATURAL LOVE, PHILEO.**

An example of this would be for you to put on a police uniform and go out and operate under the authority of the city you reside in. You have not entered into a contract with your local government. You have not been hired, sent to school and have no OFFICIAL BACKING. You are an impostor, a transgressor of the law, a BASTARD POLICEMAN.

What Christ is saying to these people is that they are **NOT GENUINE.** They are not authentic Christians, but are imitators, look alike! The point we must remember is this: **THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS ARE NOT AWARE THAT THEY ARE IMPOSTORS.** They honestly and sincerely think they are IN UNION WITH CHRIST! They are positive they are under grace and faith, yet they are rank **LEGALISTS, WORKING UNDER THE LAW, BECAUSE THEY DID NOT AVAIL THEMSELVES OF GOD’S GRACE. THEY FRUSTRATED IT.**

**BECAUSE THEY WERE NOT REGENERATED, THEY DID NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE. BECAUSE THEY DID NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE, THEY WERE NOT SONS OF GOD. BECAUSE THEY WERE NOT SONS OF GOD, THEY WERE BASTARD SONS. BECAUSE THEY WERE BASTARD SONS, THEY WERE NOT UNDER GRACE, AND THEREFORE, THEY WERE UNDER WORKS. THEY DID NOT REALIZE IT. IT IS A MOST TRAGIC DECEPTION.**

## **PAUL’S WARNING TO CHRISTIANS**

Now we will turn to the apostle Paul, who will help us to further understand this mystery as to why Christ rejected the vast majority of Christians. These verses of Scripture are quoted from by every church, but little do they know the REAL MEANING THAT LIES WITHIN THIS MESSAGE, for it is a MESSAGE OF WARNING TO THE CHURCH. If heeded, salvation will RESULT, if rejected, eternal ruin.

*“Though I speak WITH THE TONGUES OF MEN AND OF ANGELS,*

*AND HAVE NOT **CHARITY (AGAPE LOVE),**  
I am become as a sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.*

*And though I HAVE THE GIFT OF PROPHECY, and UNDERSTAND ALL*

***MYSTERIES, AND ALL KNOWLEDGE;***

***AND THOUGH I HAVE ALL FAITH,***

***SO THAT I COULD REMOVE MOUNTAINS,***

***and***

***HAVE NOT CHARITY (AGAPE LOVE),***  
***I AM NOTHING.***

***And though I BESTOW ALL MY GOODS***

***TO FEED THE POOR, and though I***

***GIVE MY BODY TO BE BURNED,***

***AND HAVE NOT CHARITY (AGAPE LOVE),***

***IT PROFITETH ME NOTHING.”***

***(1 Corinthians 13:1-3)***

The following gifts are mentioned by Paul:

- 1. The gift of tongues of all types.**
- 2. The gift of prophecy.**
- 3. The gift of knowledge.**
- 4. The gift of wisdom.**
- 5. The gift of faith that moves mountains.**

There is no question that Paul is referring to specific GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT. The gifts of the Spirit are GIFTS OF POWER. To obtain them, you must be BAPTIZED BY A POWER BAPTISM OF THE HOLY SPIRIT. In Acts, you will find that the BAPTISM ALWAYS GAVE THE BELIEVER GREAT POWER. Many Christians believe that baptism in the Holy Spirit PROVES ONE IS SAVED. A baptism of power does not prove anything except that you have A SUPERNATURAL POWER. Salvation is not based upon A POWER BAPTISM. The Holy Spirit DID NOT REDEEM MANKIND. Jesus Christ is the ONLY REDEEMER OF MAN. Salvation is based upon UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST. The union with CHRIST IS A UNION WITH THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT OF CHRIST. Scripture WILL PROVE THAT POWER IS NOT SPIRIT, AND SPIRIT IS NOT POWER. THEY ARE TWO DIFFERENT ITEMS, GIVEN AT DIFFERENT TIMES.

***“But ye SHALL RECEIVE POWER, after that the HOLY GHOST IS COME UPON YOU:***

***and ye shall be WITNESSES UNTO ME both in Jerusalem, and in all Judae-a, and in Samaria,***

***and unto the UTTERMOST PART OF THE EARTH.”***

***(Acts 1:8)***

Zechariah speaks to this issue directly, and as we look at what he says, we should ponder the correctness of present day theology reference of the baptism of the Holy Ghost IN POWER. Remember to keep in your mind the DIFFERENCE BETWEEN ESSENCE AND POWER. Essence is the CHARACTER BEHIND THE POWER. Power of itself does not prove essence, which is why Satan can duplicate the gifts of power and bring many under deception.

*“And said unto me, What seest thou? And I said, I have looked, and behold a CANDLESTICK ALL OF GOLD, WITH A BOWL UPON THE TOP OF IT, AND HIS SEVEN LAMPS THEREON, AND SEVEN PIPES TO THE SEVEN LAMPS, WHICH ARE UPON THE TOP THEREOF.”*  
(Zechariah 4:2)

The candlestick represents THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD. It is via THE SPIRIT that a soul becomes regenerated. God did not say, I WILL PUT MY POWER INTO YOUR HEART, A NEW POWER WILL I GIVE YOU, HE SAID BY MY SPIRIT, A NEW SPIRIT WILL I GIVE UNTO YOU:

*“Then the angel that talked with me answered and said unto me, Knowest thou not what these be? And I said, No, my lord.*

*Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, this is the word of the Lord unto Zerubbabel, saying,*

***NOT BY MIGHT,***

***NOR BY POWER,***

***BUT BY MY SPIRIT,***

***SAITH THE LORD OF HOSTS.”***

(Zechariah 4:5-6)

IT IS UNION WITH THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THAT SAVES YOU. We will prove later that POWER BAPTISM has nothing whatever to do with UNION WITH CHRIST. Paul lists these GIFTS of the Spirit, and yet says there is something more. He calls it AGAPE LOVE (CHARITY). One can even have FAITH TO REMOVE MOUNTAINS. So much for the doctrine of FAITH IS EVERYTHING! One can even give away all they own, and give their lives at the stake and be burned to death, BUT IT DOES NOT MEAN ANYTHING WHATSOEVER. This is a hard saying. Paul is saying none of these matter whatever, IN THE ISSUE OF WHAT CONSTITUTES TRUE SALVATION. It is interesting that the ‘many’ who stood before Christ had **GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT!** Did they not have faith that could move mountains? Did they not do wonderful works? Did they not cast out demons and heal the sick in the name of Jesus?

There is a common element missing in both of these warnings to Christians. For the many, Christ said: **“I never knew you”**. Paul said, **“If I have not charity (agape love)”**. Christ is agape love. They did not have Christ; they did not have agape love. The common element missing: AGAPE LOVE. **THE COMMON ELEMENT PRESENT IS A POWER BAPTISM OF THE HOLY SPIRIT. POWER BAPTISM DOES NOT SETTLE THE ISSUE BETWEEN YOU AND YOUR GOD.** THE MANY did not settle the issue between themselves and the living God, **WHICH IS A LOVE ISSUE, A SPIRIT ISSUE, A NEW HEART WITH THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST WITHIN IT, THAT IS TO SAY, AGAPE LOVE.** They are thus rejected, and their religion; their works were in vain, it did not profit them anything.

<b>BAPTISM OF POWER</b>	<b>vs.</b>	<b>THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST WITHIN</b>
<b>POWER (SIGNS &amp; WONDERS)</b>	<b>vs.</b>	<b>AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT</b>

*“...Now if any man have not the SPIRIT OF CHRIST,  
HE IS NONE OF HIS.”  
(Romans 8:9)*

The Spirit of Christ is wholly different than a power baptism. This will be proved later by much Scripture. Why did not these vast numbers of Christians lay hold of agape love? They claimed they had the agape love of God within them, they were positive they were working in and under this AGAPE love. Part of the reason they believed this was because they had received the baptism of POWER. They were under deception, for power baptism does not save anyone. Their theology, while telling them they had AGAPE LOVE, in reality **prevented** them from having it. They must have embraced a theology that circumvented the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY, **THUS THEY NEVER CAME TO LIFE, AND NEVER CAME TO TRUE AGAPE LOVE WHICH IS THE ESSENCE OF ALL SPIRITUAL LIFE.**

This issue of AGAPE love is where the multitude of Christians go astray. Scripture proves that unless your works are done IN AGAPE LOVE, they are done in VAIN. That is what Paul is saying: UNLESS I HAVE AGAPE LOVE (CHARITY), I profit NOTHING. In other words, all my works were done in vain! If you are **DECEIVED INTO THINKING YOU HAVE AGAPE LOVE WHEN YOU DO NOT**, then all of your religious works are of no effect. Therefore:

**“I NEVER KNEW YOU” = “IF I HAVE NOT CHARITY”**

*“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that YE PRESENT YOUR BODIES  
A LIVING SACRIFICE,  
HOLY, ACCEPTABLE UNTO GOD,  
WHICH IS YOUR REASONABLE SERVICE.”  
(Romans 12:1)*

The COMMAND of the Lord is that we present ourselves as a LIVING SACRIFICE. God wants US AS A **SACRIFICE**. A sacrifice is something that is **KILLED** and then offered up on the altar of the Lord. It is this SACRIFICE that makes us HOLY AND ACCEPTABLE. Without it, we are NOT COUNTED HOLY, NOR ARE WE ACCEPTABLE. The many were neither holy nor acceptable; Christ sent them away. By deduction we conclude they did not in truth **OFFER THEMSELVES AS A LIVING SACRIFICE IN SPITE OF ALL OF THEIR WORKS, WHICH THEY COUNTED AS THEIR SACRIFICE. THIS PROVES THAT THE ‘WORKS’ OF A CHRISTIAN ARE NOT THE SACRIFICE THAT GOD IS SPEAKING OF HERE. THE SACRIFICE THAT GOD WANTS IS THEIR DEATH VIA THE NARROW WAY.** They never died on the altar of God, and therefore ALL OF THEIR WORKS WERE VANITY. WHY?

**The command to offer yourself as a living sacrifice is connected to the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.** In other words, by entering the strait gate, and walking the narrow way, you are offering yourself to God as a LIVING SACRIFICE. One of the elements of the narrow way IS A LIVING **DEATH**. Just after death lies **LIFE. LIFE IS AGAPE LOVE. AGAPE LOVE IS HOLY, AND IS ACCEPTABLE UNTO THE LORD.** Scripture proves that one must die A **LIVING DEATH** to find life. That dying is the OFFERING UP OF YOUR BODY AS A LIVING SACRIFICE. The key word is **SACRIFICE** or **DYING**.

Scripture will be presented to prove beyond all question that AGAPE LOVE is the issue between you and your God. It will prove that REGENERATION OR BEING BORN AGAIN involves agape love. True union with Christ involves agape love. Being a true Son of God involves agape love. The self **MUST DIE** before agape love is granted. You cannot die a living death until and unless you **enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way, for it is God’s method of killing you while you are still walking around very much alone.** Jesus gave us NO OTHER WAY. The whole Bible is a book about agape love. Agape love is the **ONLY** issue between God and man, and until and unless this issue is settled you remain lost in trespasses and sins.

**Agape love MUST BE THE ISSUE** the vast majority of Christians refused to settle. That means a person can be converted and still not have agape love. A person can be baptized in water and by the Holy Spirit and still not have agape love. You can have faith enough to move mountains and still not have agape love. You can have great belief and still not have agape love. You can do mighty works of supernatural power and still not have agape love. You can memorize the Bible backwards and forwards and still not have agape love. You can leave everything and follow Jesus and still not have agape love. You can die a martyr and still not have agape love. How is it possible that you can have **FAITH, BELIEF, HOLY SPIRIT POWER AND STILL NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE?**

Modern Christian theology would claim that is not possible! **JESUS SAYS IT IS NOT ONLY POSSIBLE, BUT THAT THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS ARE GOING TO ETERNAL RUIN BECAUSE THEY DO NOT LAY HOLD OF THIS MYSTERIOUS AGAPE LOVE.** Paul and the other New Testament writers agree and they wrote under the power of the Holy Spirit. Agape love IS salvation! The strait gate and narrow way is the method you must employ to **OBTAIN IT! You can either believe Christ and do what He commands, and find out the MYSTERY OF UNION WITH CHRIST, or you can remain lost in your sins.**

## FURTHER EVIDENCE OF CHRISTIANS REJECTED

There is a vast amount of Scripture dedicated to the fact Christians can and will be sent away into eternal ruin and loss. In Revelation we find seven letters that Christ wrote to seven literal churches in Asia Minor at the time of John. These letters form the entire church age story as to types of believers, types of churches and specific church ages. Although many reject the concept, these letters are of extreme importance in the prophetic and doctrinal sense. This is easily proved by the names given the churches, and by tracing actual church history, as well as comparing the message with doctrines on salvation. The last day church is a totally lost Church. It is called the Church of Laodicea, a lukewarm apostate church, **with a theology that damns them to eternal ruin.**

This church system is highly visible to the world, with vast social programs, works of social giving and all the trappings of what is considered modern Christianity. What is important here is that Jesus considers them **A CHURCH, PART OF HIS BODY.**

*“And unto the angel **OF THE CHURCH** of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and TRUE WITNESS, the beginning of the creation of God;*

*I KNOW THY WORKS, THAT THOU ART NEITHER COLD NOR HOT: I would thou wert COLD OR HOT.*

*So then BECAUSE thou art LUKEWARM, and neither cold nor hot,  
**I WILL SPUE THEE OUT OF MY MOUTH.***

*Because thou sayest,  
**I AM RICH, AND INCREASED WITH GOODS, AND HAVE  
NEED OF NOTHING:***

***AND KNOWEST NOT***

*THAT THOU ART **WRETCHED, AND MISERABLE,***

*AND **POOR, AND BLIND, AND NAKED...**”*

*(Revelation 3:14-17)*

This Church of Jesus Christ ASSUMES THEY HAVE NEED OF NOTHING WHATEVER, EITHER PHYSICAL OR SPIRITUAL. They obviously consider themselves saved and heaven bound. They think their works before the Lord are approved and that they are in good standing. YET JESUS SAYS TO THEM THAT THEY “**KNOWEST NOT**”. Thus we can rightfully conclude the following:

1. They have undergone **CONVERSIONS** to Jesus Christ.
2. They have **ACCEPTED CHRIST** insofar as they know.

3. They have said the sinner's prayer or made an **EQUIVALENT DEDICATION** of their lives to Christ.
4. They have been **BAPTIZED** in one form or another.
5. They are sure they are **REGENERATED OR BORN AGAIN**.
6. They are positive they are **SAVED** and going to heaven.
7. They are positive their **FAITH AND BELIEF IN CHRIST IS A SAVING FAITH AND A SAVING BELIEF**, and that their theologies are correct.
8. They are sure their works **WILL BE ACCEPTED**.
9. They are sure they have 'right standing' before the Lord.
10. They are under a deception, **THEY KNOWEST NOT**.

Jesus is most blunt: **"I will spew thee out of my mouth."** Christ rejects them as utter poison. The word "spue" is 'emeo' in the Greek, which is where we get our word 'emetic', an agent used to make one vomit poison out of their system. **THESE PEOPLE ARE NOT GOING TO ENTER HEAVEN. THEY ARE REJECTED.** This is just as serious as the 'many' who stood before Christ rejected. Are they the same crowd? It does not sound like they are, because the 'many' in Matthew were **FRONT LINERS IN THE BATTLE BETWEEN CHRIST AND SATAN**. These do not appear to be engaged in anything except a lukewarm **NOMINAL CHRISTIAN FAITH EXERCISE**. They are **lukewarm apostates, PEW WARMERS**. They are not on the front lines, but they have the same delusion, and they are under rank deception: Jesus says to them:

### **"THOU KNOWEST NOT"**

This is deception. They are totally unaware of their true standing before Christ. They are totally unaware of the fact that they are going to hellfire, and not heaven. They are however considered to be **PART** of the **BODY OF CHRIST**.

Notice that Christ does not say I might or that I could spew them out, but that **HE IS GOING TO DO SO**. Their fate is sealed, **SHORT OF A FULL BIBLICAL REPENTANCE**. This is important because they are **CONSIDERED BY CHRIST HIMSELF AS IN HIS BODY**. You cannot spew out that which you have not accepted. They are in the **SHEEPFOLD**. They are Christians, a part of the Body of Christ. They are obviously believers. The word "church" is 'ekklesia' and it means **A CALLING OUT, A RELIGIOUS CONGREGATION, A CHRISTIAN COMMUNITY, ASSEMBLY OF BELIEVERS, THE CALLED OUT ONES**. One could hardly say these were not Christians! Jesus says they are, but they are under a rank deception, a delusion. Their theology is faulty, their faith is defective, and their belief system is in grave error.

How is it possible to bend your knee to Christ, be accepted into the Body of Christ by Christ Himself and yet end up rejected? Again we will find only one reason: **THEY HAVE NOT COME INTO UNION WITH HIM AND THEY ARE NOT REGENERATED**. Their theology of what constituted regeneration was **NOT** what Christ presented. These people **DO NOT** have agape love, they do not have union, they are lost in their trespasses and sins.

*"I counsel thee to buy **OF ME GOLD TRIED IN THE FIRE,**  
THAT THOU MAYEST BE RICH;  
**AND WHITE RAIMENT,** that thou mayest be **CLOTHED,** and that the shame of **THY**  
NAKEDNESS DO NOT APPEAR;*



**AND ANOINT THINE EYES WITH EYESALVE,  
THAT THOU MAYEST SEE.”**

**(Revelation 3:18)**

The list that Christ gave them is a list of the things that attend to the salvation of the soul! They are part of TRUE UNION WITH CHRIST, OR REGENERATION.

**1. GOLD TRIED IN THE FIRE.**

The gold here is REAL FAITH. Faith is the **OPERATIVE DYNAMIC** in salvation, the fuel used to bring you into the New Covenant. It is what propels the believer through the strait gate and down the narrow way. However, you can have faith to move mountains and still refuse the narrow way! There is a FAITH IN FAITH, A FAITH THAT IS STATIC, A DEAD FAITH. Paul, in 1 Corinthians 13 was referring to a **FAITH IN FAITH ITSELF, WHICH IS IDOL WORSHIP. IT IS THE FAITH OF MODERN CHRISTIANITY, A FAITH THAT TAKES THE PLACE OF CHRIST HIMSELF, THAT BECOMES CHRIST HIMSELF.**

***“...that the TRIAL OF YOUR FAITH, being more PRECIOUS THAN OF GOLD THAT PERISHETH, THOUGH IT BE***

***TRIED WITH FIRE,***

***might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the APPEARING OF JESUS CHRIST.”***

**(1 Peter 1:7)**

**2. WHITE RAIMENT** – The white robes of righteousness are FOUND ONLY IN JESUS CHRIST, the robe of AGAPE LOVE, bestowed upon every true believer at regeneration. This robe of agape love covers our sins forever. Without this robe you are naked, and the shame of your nakedness appears. That is why Christ demands you buy it from Him, even though it is free:

***“I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath CLOTHED ME WITH THE GARMENTS OF SALVATION,***

***HE HATH COVERED ME WITH THE ROBE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS,***

***as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.”***

**(Isaiah 61:10)**

***“Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: FOR THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB IS***

***COME, AND HIS WIFE HATH MADE HERSELF READY.***

***AND TO HER WAS GRANTED THAT SHE SHOULD BE  
ARRAYED IN FINE LINEN, CLEAN AND WHITE:  
FOR THE LINEN IS THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF SAINTS.”***

***(Revelation 19:7-8)***

The white robes are RIGHTEOUSNESS. The robe of righteousness is agape love. Righteousness is often a code word for agape love, FOR BEHIND ALL RIGHTEOUSNESS IS AGAPE LOVE. In other words, THE ESSENCE OF ALL RIGHTEOUSNESS IS AGAPE LOVE. The white raiment represents the gift of regeneration and covering of the RIGHTEOUSNESS of Christ, it represents AUTHENTIC UNION. Without it you are naked and not covered by the AGAPE LOVE of Christ.

It is important to realize also that Revelation 19:7 says THE WIFE MADE HERSELF READY. It does not say that CHRIST MADE HIS WIFE READY, but that **SHE MADE HERSELF READY**. It was something the BRIDE DID HERSELF. This relates back to the commands of Christ TO PICK UP THY CROSS, ENTER YE IN, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY. It is something EACH CHRISTIAN **MUST DO BY THEMSELVES**, IT IS AN ACTIVE COMMAND. Christ did not EVER say He would pick up our cross, enter the strait gate or walk the narrow way for us. IT IS A COMMAND THAT WE MUST DO. IT IS THE COMMAND THE ‘MANY’ REFUSED.

**3. EYESALVE** – Spiritual eyesight, that ability to read and understand the Scriptures from the agape love viewpoint. It is revealed only to those who have come into union with Christ. They have a whole new perspective, for when agape love is bestowed, the eyesight goes from blind to 20/20!

***“But the natural man receiveth NOT THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD: for they are foolishness unto him: NEITHER CAN HE KNOW THEM,***

***because they are SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED.***

***But he that IS SPIRITUAL JUDGETH ALL THINGS,***

***Yet he himself is judged of no man.”***

***(1 Corinthians 2:14-15)***

True spiritual seeing is seeing through the eyes of **AGAPE LOVE**. The many who were rejected **THOUGHT THEY WERE SPIRITUAL**, but they were blind leaders leading the blind, and they all fell into the pit. They do not have the eyesalve of agape love that would allow them to see spiritual truths. Remember they are under a deception, they only **THINK** they are spiritual. This can only happen if you embrace a false theology, and if you redefine what faith, grace, repentance, conversion, regeneration, works and legalism mean. If you could redefine them, and get people to buy into those definitions, you could lead the vast majority of people into eternal ruin.

## **THAT IS EXACTLY WHAT SATAN HAS DONE.**

These people are **NOT SAVED AT ALL**. Their eternal destiny is ruin. They are going to be rejected out of hand by Christ as a vile poison. To make sure there is no mistake in their lost condition, Christ says:

*“Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man  
**HEAR MY VOICE, and**  
**OPEN THE DOOR,**  
**I WILL COME IN TO HIM,**  
**AND WILL SUP WITH HIM,**  
**AND HE WITH ME.***

***TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH***  
***WILL I GRANT TO SIT WITH ME IN MY THRONE,***  
***EVEN AS I ALSO OVERCAME,***  
***AND AM SET DOWN WITH MY FATHER IN HIS THRONE.”***  
**(Revelation 3:20-21)**

Please understand that Jesus ties together the New Heart covenant with OVERCOMING just as John does. The last day church is an **UNSAVED, HELL BOUND CHURCH WITH MILLIONS OF FOLLOWERS**. These people are sincere, nice people, dedicated in their work for the Lord, but they will never see heaven. **THEY ARE UNDER A DELUSION, A DECEPTION.**

### **REAL AND FALSE BELIEVERS**

Hidden deep within the letters that Christ wrote the churches is the total verification we need to prove that there are a multitude of sincere Christians going to eternal ruin. They possess a head faith, an intellectual faith, a sense faith, a flesh and carnal faith that is posing as **REAL BIBLICAL FAITH**. They sincerely believe they are saved, and take affront at someone suggesting to them it is not so. If you embrace false salvation as true salvation, **YOU WILL AUTOMATICALLY REJECT WHAT CONSTITUTES TRUE SALVATION.**

Every letter that Christ wrote to the churches has a key phrase that we must look at very carefully. In every Church, which means **CALLED OUT ONES**, we find Christ subdividing the believers into two groups: **OVERCOMERS AND NON-OVERCOMERS**. We know from previous study that the many perish; that means **ONLY THE FEW ARE OVERCOMERS**. It is vital that Christ warns each Church that they must **OVERCOME SOMETHING** in order to obtain salvation.

1. Ephesus – **TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH** (Rev. 2:7):

*“...To him that OVERCOMETH  
will I give to eat of the TREE OF LIFE,  
which is in the midst of the paradise of God.”*

To the overcomer ONLY is the promise made of ETERNAL LIFE. That is the AUTOMATIC GIFT OF AUTHENTIC REGENERATION (John 10:28).

2. Smyrna – **TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH** (Rev. 2:11):

*“...he that OVERCOMETH shall NOT BE HURT OF THE SECOND DEATH.”*

*“He that OVERCOMETH shall INHERIT ALL THINGS; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.”  
(Revelation 21:7)*

When one becomes an **OVERCOMER** one escapes the condemnation of the SECOND DEATH. The second death is the final separation from God for all time. If you are NOT an overcomer, then you DO FACE THE SECOND DEATH.

3. Pergamos – **TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH** (Rev. 2:17)

*“...to him that OVERCOMETH  
will I give to eat of the HIDDEN MANNA,  
and will give him a white stone, and in the stone  
a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.”*

To the OVERCOMER ONLY is a white stone granted. This white stone is the stone of acquittal, given to those who have been found **NOT GUILTY**. There is a hidden manna also given. The manna and the stone go hand in hand. Manna is a code word for AGAPE LOVE, the hidden mystery of God, revealed only to those who have entered the strait gate and walked the narrow way to find life!

4. Thyatira – **TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH** (Rev. 2:26-28):

*“And he that OVERCOMETH, and keepeth my works unto the end,  
to him will I give power over the nations: And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as  
the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father.*

*And I will GIVE HIM THE MORNING STAR.”*

These are the automatic gifts of salvation, for the overcomer sits on the throne with Christ! The morning star is Christ Himself, coming into that person's heart of hearts, ascending to the throne room of the great “I AM” of each true believer (John 17:21, 26; Revelation 20:4).

5. Sardis – **TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH** (Rev. 3:5)

*“He that **OVERCOMETH**, the same shall be clothed in **WHITE RAIMENT**; and **I WILL NOT** blot his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before His angels.”*

We have already discovered that the gift of white raiment is the gift of agape love, or Christ within, WHO IS AGAPE LOVE. If you have walked the narrow way to find life, which is IN CHRIST, THEN YOU HAVE BEEN GRANTED ETERNAL LIFE, AND YOU CANNOT BE AND WILL NOT BE BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE! The reason this is so is because the issue between you and God is forever settled in the heavens. To try you again for the same crime would be double jeopardy!

6. Philadelphia – **TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH** (Rev. 3:12)

*“Him that **OVERCOMETH** will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is **NEW JERUSALEM**, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him **MY NEW NAME**.”*

Again we find all of the gifts God has made to His true sons. His eternal home is New Jerusalem, and he shall be an eternal pillar in the temple of the Lord.

7. Laodicea – **TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH** (Rev. 3:21)

*“To him that **OVERCOMETH** will I grant to sit with me on my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.”*

This is one of the gifts of authentic regeneration. The overcomer sits with Christ in the heavenly places because of the gift of agape love. It is the essence of agape love that is the mystery of God. Scripture proves it to be so:

*“**AND HATH RAISED US UP TOGETHER,**  
**AND MADE US SIT TOGETHER IN HEAVENLY PLACES**  
**IN CHRIST JESUS.”**  
(Ephesians 2:6)*

It becomes evident that within the Body of Christ there are the **many** and the **few**. The many are mere professors of Christ. The few are the actual possessors of NEW LIFE, and they alone are called OVERCOMERS. All of the promises are directed to the OVERCOMERS. Thus we must and can deduce that the many who stand before Jesus Christ rejected **WERE NOT OVERCOMERS**. This must be true because Christ Himself said ALL OVERCOMERS WILL ENTER HEAVEN. The many do not enter heaven at all, therefore **THE ONE THING THEY DID NOT DO WAS TO ‘OVERCOME’**.

Can we prove that the use of the word ‘overcome’ is in fact a direct term used for regeneration? If we could, then we could prove the comments of Christ, that He NEVER KNEW THEM. Paul’s comment that “if you have not charity” and being an OVERCOMER ALL RELATE TO ONE THING: **REGENERATION**.

*“...verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man  
BE BORN AGAIN, HE CANNOT SEE THE  
KINGDOM OF GOD.”  
(John 3:3)*

*“FOR WHATSOEVER  
**IS BORN OF GOD OVERCOMETH** THE WORLD.”  
(1 John 5:4)*

What could be more blunt? What could be plainer? What could be more obvious? **WHOSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD IS AN OVERCOMER**. Whosoever is born of God has been REGENERATED. Whosoever is born of God has entered the STRAIT GATE and walked the NARROW WAY and found **LIFE**. This life is in Christ, and if you have the Son, you have LIFE (1 John 5:11-12). The very words regeneration or born again mean the **GIFT OF NEW LIFE**.

The next question we have is this: Can we connect AGAPE LOVE directly to regeneration? The answer is yes!

*“Beloved, let us (agape) love one another: for (agape) love IS OF GOD; AND*

***EVERY ONE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH  
IS BORN OF GOD,  
AND KNOWETH GOD.”**  
(1 John 4:7)*

***“He that (AGAPE) LOVETH NOT, KNOWETH NOT GOD;  
FOR GOD IS (AGAPE) LOVE.”**  
(1 John 4:8)*

*“Behold, what manner of (AGAPE) LOVE the Father hath bestowed upon us,  
that we should be called the SONS OF GOD...”  
(1 John 3:1)*

Being born of God is coming to a knowledge of the hidden mystery of God, a mystery so well hidden that only **A FEW** will ever find it. It is not that the many could not find it, but that they build a theology that claims they **have** found it. They appropriated a love they do not have! They were under a delusion! They redefined totally what REGENERATION ACTUALLY MEANS.

In summary then, we have the following for the OVERCOMERS:

- 1. THE OVERCOMER EATS FROM THE TREE OF LIFE, AND LIFE IS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY.**
- 2. THE OVERCOMER WILL NOT TASTE OF THE SECOND DEATH, AND IS EXEMPT FROM CONDEMNATION.**
- 3. THE OVERCOMER ONLY WILL EAT OF THE HIDDEN MANNA OF AGAPE LOVE.**
- 4. THE OVERCOMER ONLY IS GRANTED THE WHITE STONE OF ACQUITTAL.**
- 5. THE OVERCOMER ONLY IS GRANTED A NEW NAME (AUTHORITY) BECAUSE OF AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT.**
- 6. THE OVERCOMER ONLY IS GIVEN THE MORNING STAR, WHICH IS CHRIST WITHIN.**
- 7. THE OVERCOMER ONLY WILL RULE THE NATIONS.**
- 8. THE OVERCOMER ONLY IS GRANTED THE WHITE ROBE OF AGAPE LOVE COVERING.**
- 9. THE OVERCOMER ONLY WILL NOT HAVE HIS NAME BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE.**
- 10. THE OVERCOMER ONLY IS GRANTED ENTRANCE TO NEW JERUSALEM.**
- 11. THE OVERCOMER ONLY IS GRANTED THE RIGHT TO SIT IN THE THRONE OF CHRIST.**
- 12. THE OVERCOMER ONLY INHERITS ALL THINGS.**

It then becomes apparent that ONLY THE OVERCOMERS HAVE FOUND THE SECRET OF LIFE, AND THEY HAVE WALKED THE NARROW WAY TO FIND IT.

## **WORSHIP THAT IS IN VAIN**

Is it possible to worship the Lord Jesus Christ and have it all be in VAIN AND FOR IT TO BE OF TOTAL NON-EFFECT?

*“THIS PEOPLE DRAWETH NIGH UNTO ME WITH THEIR MOUTH, AND  
HONURETH ME WITH THEIR LIPS;  
BUT THEIR HEART IS FAR FROM ME.”*

*BUT IN VAIN THEY DO WORSHIP ME, TEACHING FOR DOCTRINES THE  
COMMANDMENTS OF MEN.”*

The word “vain” is ‘maten’ and it means **UNSUCCESSFUL SEARCH, FOLLY, AND OF NO PURPOSE WHATSOEVER**. Thus the many stand before Christ and their faith, belief, mighty works of Holy Ghost power totally **IN VAIN, IT PROFITS THEM NOTHING!** There is a key here we need to look at. The word “worship” is ‘sebomai’ and it means **TO REVERE, TO ADORE, TO BE DEVOUT, TO BE RELIGIOUS**. We must understand what Jesus is saying here: You can be a **DEVOUT, SINCERE AND RELIGIOUS SOUL, WHOLLY DEDICATED TO THE LORD**, and still have your worship be **OF NO USE**. **HUMAN SINCERITY IS NOT** the issue here. This is because the human heart is wicked beyond imagination (Jeremiah 17:9). The natural human heart is hostile to God (Romans 8:7). Therefore a person’s sincerity is a deception itself. People of other religions are sincere, and they are sincerely wrong. The issue here is not sincerity of the human heart, but is instead **DECEPTION WITHIN THEIR OWN HEARTS THAT THEY ARE NOT AWARE OF.**

They are not aware of it because you must **ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO BE MADE AWARE OF YOUR TRUE NATURE.** That is what the strait gate and narrow way accomplish. That journey makes you **AWARE** and also **BRINGS YOU INTO AGREEMENT WITH GOD FROM YOUR INNER HEART**. The many worshipped Jesus Christ. They were devout and sincere Christians **FROM THEIR OUTER HEART, THEIR CONSCIOUS HEART**, and yet they were rejected, **BECAUSE THE ROOT OF THE HUMAN PROBLEM IS THE INNER HEART, THE SECRET HEART, THE UNKNOWN HEART THAT RESIDES DEEP WITHIN. IT IS THIS HEART, THE HIDDEN MAN THAT MUST BE CHANGED**. The ‘many’ were never aware they even **HAD AN INNER EVIL HEART. THEY WERE NOT AWARE OF IT BECAUSE THEY REFUSED TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO BE MADE AWARE**. This verse of Scripture only verifies the warnings of Christ: **BEWARE, LEST YOU BE IN A DECEPTION**. The human heart is wicked beyond imagination according to Scripture, and thus in spite of what we may think, we cannot know the depravity of it. That is what Christ outlines for us, what we must do to be saved. **The process of the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY IS A PROCESS OF UNMASKING THE INNER HEART’S DEPRAVITY. WE ARE MADE TO FACE OUR INNER DESTITUTION, OUR INNER DEATH AND RUIN, OUR ETERNALLY LOST STATE**. When a soul is faced with its own utter darkness, with its own depravity, God can then begin to deal with that soul on the basis of truth, **NOT DECEPTION**.

Within the inner heart of man, the hidden heart that sits upon the throne of the Holy of Holies lies the **ANTICHRIST**. Just as there will be a literal antichrist upon the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, who defiles the Holy of Holies in Jerusalem, you also have an antichrist sitting upon the throne on your temple mount. He resides there in **GLORIOUS SPLENDOR**, directing the affairs of your life **IN TOTAL SECRECY**. Jesus said if you were not for Him, you were against Him. If you are not regenerated, you are **AGAINST HIM**. Your surface professions of conscious faith are to no avail, for it is the **HIDDEN INNER MAN THAT IS ANTICHRIST TO THE CORE**. The ‘PEACE AGREEMENT (CONVERSION), to the **REVELATION OF ANTICHRIST** WITHIN THE HOLY OF HOLIES, IS A PERIOD OF 1260 DAYS OF TRIBULATION (THE NARROW WAY). It is **CHRIST THAT DESTROYS ANTICHRIST AT HIS COMING (REGENERATION)**. You must walk the path of the narrow way in order to **HAVE YOUR ANTICHRIST SPIRIT REVEALED UNTO YOU**. It is Christ that destroys **YOUR ANTICHRIST AT HIS COMING**. Christ will **NOT** share His throne **WITH ANOTHER GOD**. There is much more than **MEETS THE EYE**.



## THE RELIGION OF CAIN

You need to fully understand that you can be VERY religious, VERY devout, VERY sincere and VERY dedicated to Jesus Christ and fully miss the mark. These are all forms of WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. **IT IS IMPERATIVE YOU UNDERSTAND THIS.** The strait gate and narrow way ARE THE OPPOSITE OF WORKS, FOR THE NARROW WAY HAS BUT ONE PURPOSE: **TO BRING THE BELIEVER INTO AGREEMENT WITH GOD FROM HIS INNER AND SECRET HEART OF HEARTS.** Scripture is adamant: WE MUST BELIEVE FROM **OUR HEART** (Romans 10:9).

God is not interested in your SINCERITY. GOD DOES NOT CARE ABOUT YOUR SO CALLED DEDICATION. HE IS INTERESTED IN ONLY ONE THING; **THAT YOU BE OBEDIENT AND DO WHAT HE COMMANDED, SO THAT YOUR INNER NATURE, YOUR SECRET HEART OF HEARTS CAN BE EXPOSED TO YOU, MADE KNOWN TO YOU. THE INNER HEART LIES BEHIND THE VEIL OF THE SUBCONSCIOUS, AND IS SECRET. THE NARROW WAY IS A WAY OF UNMASKING IT. HEREIN IS THE KEY TO SALVATION AND REGENERATION. IGNORE IT, AND YOU SHALL PERISH IN YOUR SINS.**

The vast majority of Christians who stood before Christ rejected had the religion of Cain; though they professed they were of Abel! Both Cain and Abel were religious. Both Cain and Abel came to the altar of God to present their offerings. Both Cain and Abel thought they were doing what God commanded.

*“And in the process of time it came to pass, that CAIN BROUGHT OF THE FRUIT OF THE GROUND AN OFFERING UNTO THE LORD.*

*And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the Lord had respect unto Abel and to his offering:*

*But unto Cain and his offering he had NOT RESPECT.”*

*(Genesis 4:3-5)*

Cain was considered a religious person. He came with what he thought was a sincere offering. IT WAS UTTERLY REJECTED BY GOD. Both of them came to the house of the Lord, both of them presented offerings, **BOTH WERE VERY SINCERE.** Both of them are TYPES of believers! Abel was accepted, Cain was rejected: WHY? The many who stood before Christ were also rejected, along with their offerings and all of their dedicated service. **Both Cain and the many were sincere.** What happened?

There is a book written by G.H. Pember in 1876 which is called “EARTH EARLIEST AGES”, and it is so much to the point that I quote from it here:

“As they grew to manhood the brothers adopted differing pursuits. Cain became a tiller of the ground, and therefore had reason to feel the curse in all of its bitterness: but Abel was a keeper of sheep. And, since men were not, at that time, allowed to touch animal food, these sheep must have been kept for sacrificial purposes and for the manufacture of garments. Hence Cain assisted in the production of food for the primeval family, while Abel’s duties were concerned with their religious services and clothing.

In the process of time the brothers brought each an offering unto the Lord, presented it, probably at the gate of paradise. And God has respect unto Abel and his offering; but unto Cain and to his offering He had no respect.

The reason of this difference is fraught with the deepest interest to us: for there are many in the latter days who according to the prophecy of Jude (Jude 11) have gone the way of Cain: the theology of the first murderer is that of a larger and perpetually increasing school of our times. He neither denied the existence of God nor refused to worship Him. Nay, he recognized Him as the Giver of all good things, and brought his offering of fruits of the ground as an acknowledgment of his bounty. But he went no further than this; and therefore, though he may have passed among those with whom he dwelt as a good and religious man, he failed to satisfy God. For being YET IN HIS SINS he presumed to approach God the Holy One without the shedding of blood: he was willing to take the place of a dependent creature, but would not confess himself a sinner guilty of death who could be saved only by a sacrifice of a substitute.” (Page 118)

**The religion of Cain is the religion of the many.** They brought their offerings before the Lord. They served the Lord with utter dedication and sincerity, yet they refused to ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY. They tithe a great tithe; they worship with song and adore the Lord. They say how they love Jesus and cannot live even a moment without Him by their side. They pray to their Jesus and offer Him total devotion. They are obedient unto the Lord, and visit the sick, those in prison, those that are shut in, and the elderly. They hand out tracts, pray diligently, read their scriptures and attend to their church duties. They support local charity, do good works, support radio and television ministries, but for all that **THEY MISS THE ENTIRE POINT OF SCRIPTURE. THEY WILL NOT OFFER UP THEIR OWN SOULS TO SOUL DEATH. THEY WILL NOT WALK THE NARROW WAY TO DEATH THAT THEY MIGHT FIND LIFE, WHICH IS THE LIFE OF CHRIST, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE.**

Because they refuse to offer up their own souls to the Lord, by walking the narrow way, Christ never does come in contact with them. His statement to them that they pick up their own cross and follow Him **in death** fell upon deaf ears. They replied they were under faith and grace, and therefore did not have to do as Christ commanded. That would be a ‘work’ and they excluded it. Their definition of faith and grace was in grave error, and they perish for eternity. **THEY REFUSED TO BE OBEDIENT IN THE ONE AREA THEY HAD TO BE!** They invented a theology that told them they did not have to do anything like that, and as a result, they go into internal ruin, utterly rejected.

## BELIEVERS WHO WOULD KILL CHRIST

The Gospel of John contains a most interesting narrative concerning BELIEVERS AND FOLLOWERS OF JESUS CHRIST WHO PROFESSED TOTAL BELIEF IN HIM BUT WHO IN TRUTH HATED HIM! Their religion was also the religion of Cain. We find this group of believers in the Gospel of John, Chapter Eight:

*“As he spake these words, many believed on him.*

*Then said Jesus to those Jews which BELIEVED on him...”*  
(John 8:30-31)

It is important to realize that these Jews BELIEVED UPON JESUS. They had accepted His claims. The word “believed” is ‘pisteuo’ and it means **TO HAVE PUT FAITH IN, TO ENTRUST, TO COMMIT TO, OR TO PUT YOUR TRUST IN. ASSURANCE, BELIEF, FAITH, FIDELITY.** It is interesting to note that the same word is used for those who believe unto salvation. This being true, then are these Jews saved? If it is not faith and belief that save us, then what does?

*“IF ye CONTINUE in my word,  
**THEN ARE YE MY DISCIPLES INDEED;**  
*and ye shall KNOW THE TRUTH,*  
*and THE TRUTH shall make you free.”**

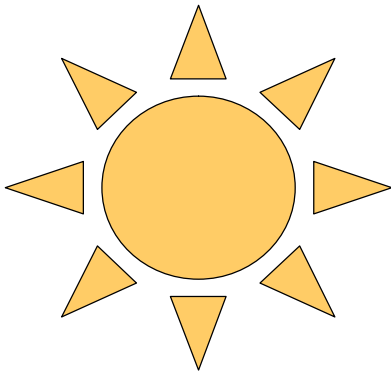
(John 8:31-32)

Jesus is qualifying something very important. Notice they first believed. Now He says to those that believed that there is a **CONDITIONAL, VERY CONDITIONAL ASPECT OF THEIR FAITH IN HIM THEY MUST KNOW:** Although they are disciples, they **ARE NOT disciples INDEED;** nor are they IN TRUTH, nor do they know THE TRUTH. Jesus says they must CONTINUE for an unstated amount of time before they will FIND ‘the truth’ that will set them free. The conclusion is simple: they are not yet truly ‘in the faith’. They must **CONTINUE WITH HIM, AND BE OBEDIENT TO HIS DEMANDS OR THEY WILL NOT COME TO A KNOWLEDGE OF ‘THE TRUTH’.**

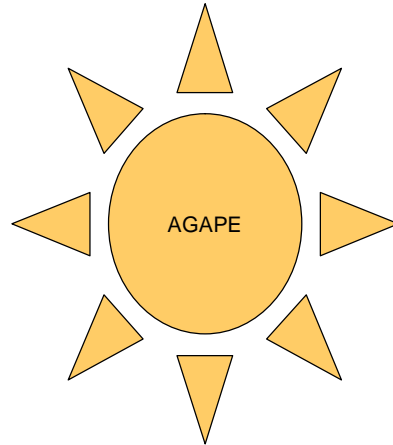
The word “continue” is ‘meno’ and it means **TO ENDURE, TO ABIDE IN, TO REMAIN IN, TO BE STEADFAST IN OVER A LONG PERIOD OF TIME.** These Jews were face to face with Jesus who claimed He was ‘the truth’. What other truth is He speaking of? If Jesus Christ is ‘the truth’ and they already ‘believed’ on Him, then why are they not His true disciples and saved already? Modern Christianity would declare them saved on their testimony. Jesus would not, and did not. The answer is vital to understand:

**JESUS IS SAYING SOMETHING OF CRUCIAL IMPORTANCE HERE; THERE IS ANOTHER TRUTH, AN UNSEEN TRUTH, A HIDDEN TRUTH, A MYSTERY**

**OF GOD, THAT IS DIFFERENT THAN JESUS HIMSELF AS MESSIAH. IT GOES BEYOND HIM. IT IS THIS TRUTH THAT SETS US FREE.**

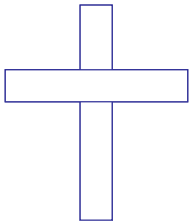


Christ



---

The Historic Christ  
Essence Hidden



"The Truth"  
Essence Revealed

The Truth that sets FREE

It is this other 'truth' that Jesus says will set them 'free'. They CANNOT KNOW this 'other truth' unless they ABIDE STEADFASTLY IN HIS DOCTRINE. They must continue with Him; they must search it out with all diligence. Notice that it is the OTHER TRUTH THAT SETS THEM FREE. Without it they are not free, but remain in bondage.

What is the other "truth" that Jesus says we CAN KNOW? The word "know" is 'ginosko' and it means **TO KNOW IN THE ABSOLUTE SENSE, OR EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING. IT IS THE SAME WORD USED BY JESUS WHEN HE SENT THE MANY AWAY REJECTED, FOR HE CLAIMED HE DID NOT KNOW THEM, AND IT IS THE SAME WORD USED BY JESUS TO DESCRIBE HOW HE KNEW HIS FATHER. THEY OBVIOUSLY THEN, DID NOT KNOW THIS OTHER TRUTH, AND THEY WERE NOT SET FREE, THEY WERE NOT AT LIBERTY.** This truth that sets us all free is an 'experiential truth' one that we can KNOW FOR A FACT. So now we see a division here that we must not forget: there is Jesus Christ the Messiah, THE HISTORICAL CHRIST, and then there is this other 'truth', that sets you and I free. The word "free" is 'eleutheroo' and it means **TO LIBERATE, TO DELIVER, TO MAKE FREE, TO BE AT LIBERTY.**

We have a group of believers who have FAITH and TRUST in the Lord, but they are not yet 'made free', for they have not yet 'continued' in His doctrine long enough to understand what He is speaking of.

*“They answered him, we be Abraham’s seed,  
and were never in bondage to any man:  
how sayest thou,  
ye shall be MADE FREE?”  
(John 8:33)*

This was a foolish response, for the Jews were under the yoke of Rome, but Jesus is not referring to earthly rulers. They were under a spiritual yoke, a spiritual bondage because they were dead in their trespasses and sins.

*“Jesus answered them, verily, verily, I say unto you, whosoever committeth sin is the  
SERVANT OF SIN.*

*And the servant abideth not in the house forever: but the Son abideth ever.*

*If the Son therefore SHALL MAKE YOU FREE,  
YE SHALL BE FREE INDEED.”  
(John 8:34-36)*

Herein are great essential spiritual truths. Jesus tells His believers that they are still sinners, not yet free. They are still the servants of sin. What does He mean by that? They are bound by their fallen human nature. They are bound by their own evil because of the FALL OF MAN. Jesus is telling them that because of the fall of Adam and Eve, the servant does not abide in His house (body) forever, but dies and is taken away. Jesus, the Son does abide forever, and is offering to them eternal life. So Jesus is adding details about how to BE SET FREE, AND BE FREE INDEED. HE IS SPEAKING ABOUT REGENERATION.

*“I know that ye are Abraham’s SEED;  
BUT YE SEEK TO KILL ME,  
BECAUSE MY WORD HATH NO PLACE IN YOU.*

*I speak that which I have seen with my Father:  
And ye do that which ye have seen with YOUR FATHER.”  
(John 8:37-38)*

Notice that HIS BELIEVERS, HIS FOLLOWERS, HIS DISCIPLES, those that had FAITH in Him actually have murder in their heart. They were in truth trying to kill Him. How is that possible? Why would one make a profession of faith only to have the thought of murder deep within? Jesus gives us the answer: He belongs to His Father’s Kingdom, the Kingdom of Heaven. They belong to their father, Satan, and the kingdom of hell.

They do not understand what Jesus is saying because their father **BLINDS THEM TO IT**. Their father is Satan, and they are Satan's children, just all men everywhere are Satan's children **UNLESS THEY ARE OVERCOMERS, UNLESS THEY ARE REGENERATED**.

*“They answered and said unto to him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, IF  
YE WERE ABRAHAM’S  
CHILDREN, YE WOULD DO THE WORKS OF ABRAHAM.*

**BUT NOW YE SEEK TO KILL ME,**  
**A MAN THAT HATH TOLD YOU THE TRUTH, WHICH**  
**I HAVE HEARD OF GOD: THIS DID NOT ABRAHAM.”**  
(John 8:39-40)

Jesus drives yet another division: SEED vs. CHILDREN. Christ acknowledges these people are of the SEED of Abraham, but they are not THE CHILDREN of Abraham. All mankind is the SEED OF GOD, but very few are the CHILDREN OF GOD / SON'S OF GOD. Jesus is very blunt that they seek to kill Him, because He is telling them the truth. The TRUTH, the REAL TRUTH causes mankind to be stirred in great anger and wrath. **The REAL TRUTH CONDEMNS MANKIND TO ETERNAL DAMNATION.** Man will simply NOT HEAR that message. They invent all forms of theological concepts TO AVOID THE TRUTH. They also KILL THE TRUTH BRINGERS. The many who stood before Christ rejected the truth, and **HATED CHRIST IN THEIR INNER HEARTS**. They only loved Him with their conscious minds and hearts. Their INNER hearts were of stone!

You must also remember that these people **KNEW THEIR BIBLES**, just as the many knew their Scripture. The problem is they **REFUSED TO APPLY IT TO THEMSELVES IN OBEDIENCE**. Because of this refusal to face who and what they really are, the murdering heart of Cain lurks HIDDEN just below the surface. They must walk the narrow way to have their INNER HEARTS REVEALED TO THEM.

*“Ye do the DEEDS OF YOUR FATHER. Then said they to him, We be not born of  
fornication;  
WE HAVE ONE FATHER, EVEN GOD.*

*Jesus said unto them,  
IF GOD WERE YOUR FATHER,  
YE WOULD (AGAPAO) LOVE ME:  
FOR I PROCEEDED FORTH AND CAME FROM GOD;  
NEITHER CAME I OF MYSELF,  
BUT HE SENT ME.*

**WHY DO YE NOT UNDERSTAND MY SPEECH?**  
**EVEN BECAUSE YE CANNOT HEAR MY WORD?”**  
(John 8:41-43)

Now the exchange heats up a bit. Jesus answers HIS FOLLOWERS, THOSE THAT BELIEVED UPON HIM, THAT THEIR FATHER IS NOT GOD, NOR IS IT ABRAHAM. They have another father, another God. **If they KNEW GOD, they would AGAPAO LOVE HIM.** Here we come back to this mysterious love issue again, another confirmation of why the many were lost. The many claimed GOD WAS THEIR FATHER. They claimed they were the Sons of God, but THEY HAD NOT LAID HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE TO PROVE IT. Once again we find this division line: **AGAPE LOVE MAKES ONE A SON OF GOD, A SON OF ABRAHAM**, and if you do not have AGAPE love, your father IS THE DEVIL HIMSELF.

Then Jesus asks them a question: ‘Why don’t you understand my speech?’, and then answers His own question: ‘BECAUSE YE CANNOT HEAR MY WORD.’ His answer fits the many. They refused **to hear** what He said to them. They refused **to obey**. They refused **to comply**. They were not going to ABIDE, OR CONTINUE, OR SEEK ANY OTHER TRUTH. THEY BELIEVED THEY WERE SAVED, AND THEY WERE THE CHILDREN OF GOD. They were in utter rebellion, with murder in their hearts, yet they claimed they had the AGAPE love of God.

We have millions sitting in churches today **CLAIMING** they have the **agape love of God**, but they refuse to comply with the simple demands of Christ TO OBTAIN IT. The word “hear” is ‘akouo’ and it means **TO HEAR, TO GIVE AUDIENCE TO, TO COME TO. This is what the many do; they REFUSE CHRIST ALL THE WHILE UPHOLDING HIS NAME!**

You can put all your faith and belief in Christ and STILL REFUSE TO COMPLY WITH HIS DEMANDS. If you refuse to do His sayings, and you refuse to do the will of the Father, you remain a child of Satan, you have the heart of Cain, and you will most assuredly die in your sins. Your theology will not save you, your protests will not save you, your Divinity degrees will not save you, NOR WILL YOUR OPINIONS.

***“YE ARE OF YOUR FATHER THE DEVIL,  
AND THE LUSTS OF YOUR FATHER YE WILL DO.***

***He was a murderer from the beginning,  
and ABODE NOT IN THE TRUTH,  
BECAUSE THERE IS NO TRUTH IN HIM.***

***When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.***

***AND BECAUSE I TELL YOU THE TRUTH,  
YE BELIEVE ME NOT.***

***Which of you convinceth me of sin?  
And if I say the truth, why do ye NOT BELIEVE ME?***

***(John 8:44-46)***

Jesus now is blunt: They are dead in their trespasses and sins and Satan is their father. **NO AGAPE LOVE, SATAN IS YOUR FATHER. IF YOU HAVE AGAPE LOVE, GOD IS YOUR FATHER.** We find complete agreement, total harmony with the concept laid in Matthew 7. The concept of the universal Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man is a lie out of hell itself. God is only the Father of those who have been regenerated, and the only ones who have been regenerated have walked the narrow way to find life.

Jesus is saying to these BELIEVERS, that they DO NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THEM. Because of that, their father is Satan himself. Jesus said IF THEY HAD AGAPE LOVE, then indeed they would be from Abraham! The division is verified:

**NO AGAPE LOVE = FATHER IS SATAN  
HAVE AGAPE LOVE = FATHER IS GOD**

It is getting clearer now what the problem of the rejected Christians really is: **THEY HAVE NOT LAID HOLD OF THE MYSTERY OF GOD – THEY HAVE NO AGAPE LOVE.**

Who was the first murderer of the human race? Was it not Cain? Whose spirit was in Cain? Satan's (1 John 3:12)! Satan won dominion over all mankind at the fall. Adam and Eve were **BORN AGAIN INTO SATAN'S KINGDOM!** You may not like it, but Satan's kingdom is right here on earth! Adam and Eve became a NEW CREATION at the fall, a satanic creation. Every person born into the human race is born into Satan's kingdom, with a fallen nature, and under the dominion and control of Satan.

When Christ came and finished His work, He paved the way for us to **FOLLOW HIM** and **EXTRICATE OURSELVES** from Satan's dominion. That is exactly why He said we **MUST** pick up our cross and follow Him. **It is via the strait gate and narrow way that we EXTRICATE OURSELVES, AND ENTER INTO THE NEW COVENANT.** If we refuse to do what Christ commanded, we remain under the dominion of Satan and Christ's work upon the cross is of non-effect. We remain under the wrath of God.

Scripture proves that although the world is now under the grace of God, and Christians even more so, that disobedience to the commands of Christ does not avail us of **THE PROTECTION OF GRACE.** In other words, the grace God provided was **MOCKED,** and it was offered in vain to the vast majority of mankind, including believers. If the many were under grace **IN TRUTH,** they could never have been sent away into eternal ruin. To make God's grace and mercy cover you, you **MUST** enter in via **THE STRAIT GATE.** There **IS NO OTHER WAY, FOR GRACE ONLY EXTENDS ITSELF TO THOSE WHO HAVE ENTERED THE NEW COVENANT OF A REGENERATED HEART.**

Notice that Jesus says to these Jews who **BELIEVED UPON HIM,** that in **TRUTH THEY DO NOT BELIEVE.** That seems like a contradiction, but it is not. You can be a believer in Christ and still not **BELIEVE WHAT HE TELLS YOU!** In other words you believe **UPON HIM,** but you do not believe enough **UPON WHAT HE COMMANDS** of you to do it. **UNBELIEF IS DEADLY TO THE CHRISTIAN.**

*“Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well THAT THOU ART A SAMARITAN, AND HAST A DEVIL?  
(John 8:48)*



Jesus, the CREATOR GOD OF THE UNIVERSE, says to the Jews and the human race, YOUR FATHER IS SATAN HIMSELF. The human race, and the **vast majority of Christians** UTTERLY DENY IT, AND TURN AROUND AND ACCUSE CHRIST OF BEING A DEMONIC, OF BEING INSANE! Rather than face the **REPROOF AND REBUKE OF GOD**, the human race will REBUKE GOD AND GOES INTO ETERNAL RUIN.

*“Jesus answered, I HAVE NOT A DEVIL; BUT I HONOUR MY FATHER, AND YE DO DISHONOUR ME.*

*And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. Verily, verily I say unto you,*

***IF A MAN KEEP MY SAYING,  
HE SHALL NEVER SEE DEATH.”***

***(John 8:49-51)***

Jesus again confirms His first statement to these believers: THEY MUST KEEP HIS SAYINGS, THEY MUST BE OBEDIENT UNTO HIS COMMANDS, AND IF THEY REFUSE THEY WILL PERISH IN THEIR SINS. Their only hope is in keeping HIS SAYINGS. That is exactly what Jesus said about the ‘many’ in Matthew Seven. If a man **KEPT HIS SAYINGS, AND DID THEM, HE WAS A WISE MAN**. If he would NOT do them, he was a foolish man and fell at the judgment. The work “keep” is ‘tereo’ and it means **TO GUARD FROM LOSS, TO HOLD FAST, TO PREVENT FROM ESCAPING, TO HOLD ON TO FOR THE DURATION**. Here we find another reference to OBEDIENCE. If you obey His commands to hold fast to His sayings, you shall find eternal life. If you refuse for **WHATEVER** reason, you will perish in your sins. Is it possible that **FAITH IS PROVEN BY OBEDIENCE?** That obedience is God’s **VERY DEFINITION** of faith?

What we have proof of here is that **INDEED** you can be a **BELIEVER, A FOLLOWER**, and still refuse to accept the commands of Christ and **DO THEM**. These believers moved from being disciples to attempted murderers, and that because **THEY WOULD NOT FACE THE TRUTH OF WHO AND WHAT THEY WERE**. They did not have agape love within them; they only made a profession of religion. Religion will damn your soul for eternity. **TRUTH WILL SAVE IT FOREVER**.

The ‘many’ Christians who stand before Christ are utterly rejected without mercy. They were sincere in their own eyes, and they believed in and **LOVED** Christ with all of their **HUMAN LOVE**. But inwardly their hearts were **FAR FROM HIM**, for your human love is not what Christ demands of you. **He demands that your human love BE EXCHANGED FOR THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST**. The many refused to allow Christ entrance to their heart of hearts, their great **THRONE ROOM, WHERE THEIR GREAT ‘I AM’ SAT IN REGAL SPLENDOR**. **THERE WAS NO ROOM IN THEIR INN FOR CHRIST. THEY MADE HIM SLEEP OUTSIDE**. For all of their profession, they took the broad road to eternal hellfire.

**SERVANTS – WISE AND FOOLISH**

In the parables of Christ are multitudes of gems of truth waiting to be discovered by the diligent seeker. As you turn a diamond, you begin to see the many facets of the cut, and how each catches LIGHT. Only by close examination do we find all the catches of light. So it is with the parables of Christ. One of many facets in those parables is the **CONSTANT DIVISION CHRIST MAKES BETWEEN TYPES OF BELIEVERS.**

The point to understand is that Christ **ALWAYS divides** believers into **TWO TYPES**, and **ONLY TWO TYPES**. These types are **FAITHFUL AND OBEDIENT**, AND **UNFAITHFUL AND DISOBEDIENT**. The obedient are the wise servants, and the disobedient are evil servants. It does not matter what parable you look at in which servants are involved. The distinctions and divisions are clear for all to see. **It is important to recognize that Christ calls both of them SERVANTS.**

The use of the term **SERVANTS** is vital to prove that Christ will send **MANY CHRISTIANS INTO ETERNAL RUIN**. In all of the parables about servants, the **UNWISE AND EVIL SERVANTS ARE SENT AWAY INTO ETERNAL RUIN**. By contrast the **WISE AND FAITHFUL** are always granted entrance into the Father's Kingdom. **ALL OF THEM ARE BELIEVERS, ALL OF THEM ARE CONSIDERED PART OF GOD'S FAMILY.**

The word "servant" is 'doulos' and it means **SLAVE, ONE OWNED BY ANOTHER**. A servant has a Lord and master, one who rules over him, if not in deed, **IN TRUTH**. All servants are **WITHIN THE BODY OF CHRIST**. They have been accepted into **THE CHURCH**, as we found in the Book of Revelation. But not all Christians are obedient servants, in fact the **VAST MAJORITY ARE NOT**. They are unwise, foolish and evil in the sight of Christ. They are not **OVERCOMERS**. **BOTH TYPES ARE UNDER THE LORDSHIP OF JESUS CHRIST.**

One of the better parables to clearly show this distinction between wise and faithful and unwise and foolish servants is the parable of the good man of the house. We will pick up at the very end of this parable (Matthew 24:43-51).

***"And shall CUT HIM (the evil servant) ASUNDER,*  
***AND APPOINT HIM HIS PORTION WITH THE HYPOCRITES:*****

***THERE SHALL BE WEeping AND GNASHING OF TEETH."***

***(Matthew 24:51)***

Jesus appoints the evil **SERVANTS** to eternal ruin. They are identical to hypocrites, in fact they **ARE HYPOCRITES**. They have a form of Godliness but deny the power of God. The word for "hypocrite" is 'hupokrites' and it means **ACTING UNDER A FEIGNED PART, AN ACTOR UNDER AN ASSUMED CHARACTER**. They are frauds, workers of iniquity. Why? Because they are not in truth **REGENERATED**, **THEY HAVE NOT LAID HOLD OF THE MYSTERY OF GOD; THEY HAVE NOT LAID HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE, THEY ONLY CLAIMED THEY HAD BY THEOLOGY. BECAUSE THEY DID NOT HAVE IT, THEY WERE LIARS, FRAUDS, HYPOCRITES.**

They built a theology that told them they did not have to enter the strait gate, or walk the narrow way. They **BYPASSED IT**, laid hold of the promises of God, **CLAIMED THEY HAD AGAPE LOVE IN THEIR HEARTS, FEIGNED AGAPE LOVE, CALLED THEMSELVES THE SONS OF GOD, BUT KNEW NOT JESUS CHRIST OR GOD**. Their eternal punishment is horrible beyond imagination. **REPENT YOU, AND COME BY THE DOOR INTO THE SHEEPFOLD BEFORE IT IS TOO LATE!**

Being a hypocrite was one thing that Jesus could not stand more than any other. He wanted confessions of truth from people. If you were His enemy, He wanted you to so state. You can deal with a person that is your sworn enemy. It is difficult indeed to deal with one who calls you 'friend', but in reality is a deadly foe. Christ has a special place for these hypocrites, who claim Him as their Lord, but refuse His commandments, who claim they **KNOW HIM AND GOD**, but only **know Satan and their own conceits**.

It is vital to understand, however, that **THE UNWISE AND FOOLISH SERVANTS DO NOT RECOGNIZE THE FACT THAT THEY ARE HYPOCRITES**. They are under a delusion, a deception of Satan. **They do not understand they are stage players, they 'knowest not'**. This deception comes from their theology. They have embraced a false theology, which damns them.

If you do not think your destination is hell, then obviously you believe you are going to heaven. **YOUR BELIEFS DO NOT MATTER TO CHRIST. WHAT MATTERS TO CHRIST IS THAT YOU COME TO A FULL RECOGNITION OF WHERE YOU ARE IN RELATIONSHIP TO GOD, AND THAT YOU CONFESS IT, AND THAT YOU BECOME OBEDIENT AND DO WHAT CHRIST COMMANDS TO RECTIFY IT**. Jesus will **NEVER CONDEMN** a human soul that **ADMITS** to his condition and who comes to Him **IN TRUTH** for salvation.

Scripture will prove that Jesus Himself stands close to the end of the narrow way, and therefore we must enter the strait gate and walk the distance of the narrow way first to **FIND LIFE (AGAPE LOVE IN CHRIST)!** There is no other entrance whatever.

In the parable of the talents, **THE SERVANTS OF THE LORD** are given talents to invest for their Lord Jesus Christ. Many assume this is a parable on money, but it is much more than that. It is also a parable of the use of your several **ABILITIES**, or spirit given gifts to help the Body of Christ. Look what Christ does to the **WICKED SERVANT**:

*"And I was **AFRAID**, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.*

*His Lord answered and said unto him, **THOU WICKED AND SLOTHFUL SERVANT, THOU KNEWEST THAT I REAP WHERE I SOWED NOT, AND GATHER WHERE I HAVE NOT STRAWED...***

***AND CAST YE THE UNPROFITABLE SERVANT INTO OUTER DARKNESS: THERE SHALL BE WEEPING AND GNASHING OF TEETH."***

*(Matthew 25:25, 26, 30)*

The wicked servant was afraid. In Revelation 21:8 Jesus says '**BUT THE FEARFUL**' shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the '**SECOND DEATH**'.

The wicked servant was given THE POWER TO BECOME A SON OF GOD. He was given gifts of the Spirit when he/she became a Christian. The unwise servant did not enter the strait gate, did not walk the narrow way to life, and therefore could not IN TRUTH LEAD OTHERS TO LIFE. Their talents were hid in the ground, NOT UTILIZED FOR THE KINGDOM; BUT INSTEAD THEY BECAME FALSE TEACHERS AND FALSE PROPHETS, WHO TOOK MILLIONS INTO ETERNAL RUIN WITH THEM!

If we examine the parable of the TEN VIRGINS, we will find a total confirmation of believers being sent away into eternal ruin and loss. Christ clearly shows us the danger to Christians who do not enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way. It proves there are two types of believers: THE TRUE BELIEVERS WHO OBEY AND DO, AND THE FALSE BELIEVERS WHO DO NOT OBEY AND WHO ARE SHUT OUT OF HEAVEN ALTOGETHER. This parable is what is called a double reference parable. That is, it has two meanings, one referring to salvation itself, the other in a prophetic sense. We will examine this parable in relationship to the ‘many’ rejected, who are in fact FOOLISH VIRGINS, WHO NEVER CONSUMMATED THE ACT OF UNION WITH CHRIST.

*“Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto TEN VIRGINS, which took THEIR LAMPS, and went forth to MEET THE BRIDEGROOM.*

*AND FIVE OF THEM WERE WISE, AND FIVE WERE FOOLISH.”*  
(Matthew 25:1-2)

All ten of these VIRGINS go forth to meet the bridegroom. Is Christ not the Bridegroom? Now remember there were TWO WAYS that Christ told us HIS PEOPLE would follow, but all go forth to meet Him. Although all had lamps, five of them were wise, and five of them were foolish. The word “meet” is ‘apantesis’ and it means **TO ENCOUNTER, TO MEET SOMEONE FACE TO FACE**. This is of VITAL importance.

Remember that Jesus said, “I never **KNEW** you” to the many. In other words, HE NEVER HAD AN EXPERIENTIAL ENCOUNTER WITH THEM. There was never any UNION. All Christians are supposed to enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way to ENCOUNTER JESUS CHRIST who IS THE HOLDER OF AGAPE LOVE ‘LIFE’. The wise virgins will; the foolish virgins will not. All virgins have set out on their journey. Five will take the broad way; five will take the narrow way.

*“They that were FOOLISH took their lamps, and took NO OIL WITH THEM:  
But the WISE TOOK OIL in their vessels with their lamps.”*  
(Matthew 25:3-4)

The only division Christ gave to us to divide the wise from the foolish is THE OIL SUPPLY. The foolish only had the oil that was in THEIR LAMPS. The wise had an additional supply of oil, so that when their lamps began to burn out, they could fill it again and CONTINUE ON THEIR JOURNEY. There is NO OTHER DIVISION MADE HERE. It becomes obvious that the additional oil allows the lamps TO BURN FOR A LONGER PERIOD OF TIME. Their lamps

can 'continue' and 'abide' and 'remain' in a lighted condition. What then does the oil represent? Does it have to do with the strait gate and narrow way?

The lamps shed light. The light comes from the oil itself. It is the oil that brings light. What is the job of the Holy Spirit? It is to bring light. The oil therefore must be the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit was sent to CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT, which is LEADING ONE TO THE TRUTH. THE LIGHT MUST BE THE TRUTHS OF THE WORD. The five foolish took only a LIMITED SUPPLY OF OIL. Their supply of oil brought them to the truth of Jesus Christ as Messiah, WHICH IS THE HISTORICAL CHRIST. They entered the broad gate of general Christianity, the sheepfold. That was as far as they would allow the Holy Spirit to bring them. They had the religion of Cain. The five WISE virgins had an additional supply. That additional supply allowed the HOLY SPIRIT TO CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT IN TRUTH, for they entered the strait gate and walked the narrow way and ENCOUNTERED CHRIST. The foolish took the broad way ONLY, had limited interest, and limited dedication. They accepted Christ, but went no further. Their theology told them they did not need to go further.

A truth begins to emerge here. ALL PEOPLE WHO UNDERGO CONVERSIONS ARE GIVEN A SUPPLY OF OIL. The Holy Spirit is allowed in their lives only enough to CONVERT THEM TO THE HISTORICAL CHRIST, THE CHRIST OF THE CROSS. The division is in THE EXTRA SUPPLY OF OIL. The wise ALLOW THE SPIRIT OF REAL CONVICTION TO WORK ITS WORK TO SOUL DEATH. Jesus said you must die. He meant what He said, as will be proven. Without supernatural soul death there can be no new life granted. We do not move from life to life, but from death unto life.

**The wise had enough diligence and dedication to make it through. The others merely professed it, but refused to enter in. Their theology claimed that dedication and diligence were WORKS, A FORM OF HUMAN EFFORT. They claimed they were under faith and grace, but they did not realize the TRUE DEFINITIONS OF FAITH AND GRACE. They redefined them, and embraced as true their own definitions. Thus their commitment to Christ was a mere decision, a mental acceptance to the CLAIMS OF CHRIST. Scripture proves that authentic salvation has to do with THE TYPES OF COMMITMENT MADE TO FIND 'THE TRUTH'. Scripture proves that 'the truth' is well hidden by God, done so for a very important reason: it eliminates those who are false seekers.**

Why do we need a more abundant supply of oil? Why is not the oil granted at the beginning enough to get us through? Could it be that the original journey to find Christ takes much more time than we think? Could it be that a simple decision for Christ as now taught by modern Christianity, only places us on the broad way? That at that point we are in the Body of Christ but Christ is not **IN US**? That while we profess Christ, we do not possess Christ? That we have not laid hold of agape love? Could it be THAT CONVERSION AND REGENERATION ARE A STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY APART?

***"While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at MIDNIGHT THERE WAS A CRY MADE, BEHOLD, THE BRIDEGROOM COMETH; GO YE OUT TO MEET HIM."***  
**(Matthew 25:5-6)**

All of the virgins slumbered and slept. Do all Christians enter in via the WIDE GATE OF CONVERSION INTO THE SHEEPFOLD AND TRAVEL THE BROAD WAY IN SPIRITUAL SLUMBER? Christ tarried; He did not come as expected. There was a DELAY. Does the midnight cry represent the Holy Spirit attempting to CONVICT THE SOUL OF ITS LOST STATE? That all Christians first come into the sheepfold 'some other way' but that a few find the door? Is there a gap between CONVERSION to Jesus Christ the Messiah to knowing WHO Jesus Christ really is, AT REGENERATION? Is it possible that the hidden meaning here is the difference between WHO WILL and WHO WILL NOT WALK THE NARROW WAY TO MEET THE BRIDEGROOM? There are warnings not to quench the Holy Spirit; it can be put out altogether!

*“Then all those virgins arose, and TRIMMED THEIR LAMPS.*

*AND THE FOOLISH SAID UNTO THE WISE, GIVE US OF YOUR OIL;  
FOR OUR LAMPS ARE GONE OUT.”*

*(Matthew 25:7-8)*

ALL the virgins are CALLED. Only a few are CHOSEN. What is the difference? What makes ONE WORTHY OF ETERNAL LIFE AND THE OTHER UNWORTHY? Notice that the five foolish virgins HAD QUENCHED THE SPIRIT. THEIR LAMPS HAVE LITERALLY GONE OUT! There is no more light, there is no more oil. **They had in fact blasphemed the Holy Spirit, resisted the Holy Spirit, called the waves of conviction by the Holy Spirit satanic attacks and rebuked it! They awake only long enough to find out they are eternally lost, without hope.**

The Spirit had called them, but they were too busy in this life. They had a business to run, they had sports to attend to, they had idols to worship, and they allowed the precious gift of the Holy Spirit to wax and wane until it was gone. **THEY QUENCHED THE SPIRIT TO DAMNATION; IT WAS BEYOND MERE PROFESSION.** They diligently sought out 'the truth'. They continued in His doctrine, even though spiritually asleep, for they were not at that point regenerated. In the last hour when the cry was made, **they were not far from home.**

They had been obedient, and their lamps **WERE STILL LIT WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT.** They trimmed their lamps, and made them BRIGHT AGAIN. The trimming of the lamps is a method of removal of soot, of impurities that **IMPEDE THE LIGHT AND FLOW OF OIL.** They came forth with **THE REQUIRED DEDICATION AND DILIGENCE TO FIND THE KEY TO SALVATION, THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE.** With their lamps burning brightly they sought the Lord with all of their strength.

The foolish virgins realize they have made a serious mistake in their theology, but because of their refusals to heed the call of the Holy Spirit, they are unable to continue, **FOR THEIR LAMPS HAVE GONE OUT. THE OIL SUPPLY HAS RUN OUT, AND THERE IS NO MORE OIL** (Proverbs 1:22-31). They did not heed the counsel of the Lord. They seek the Lord but it is too late, there is not enough time. God mocks them. He flatly says in Proverbs that **THEY WILL SEEK BUT THEY WILL NOT FIND HIM.** It is too late. They quenched the gift of the Spirit and they are eternally lost. No matter what they attempt, no matter how frantic they become, it will avail them nothing. They have passed the point of no return. They face eternal ruin. They never underwent Biblical repentance; they underwent a worldly repentance, if any at all.

In total anguish of soul they turn to their brothers and sisters in the Lord and ask them for their oil. After all, are not Christians TO SHARE? Their answer is beautiful to the apostate Christian who seeks only to live off the efforts of others. To the man who will NOT WORK, he and his family will starve. No Christian is under any obligation to support or come to the aid of a brother in Christ WHO WILL NOT WORK. The Bible says let him starve to death. The reason for the harshness is that sooner or later the pangs of hunger will drive him to work. Indeed Christ is austere. The love of the Lord is indeed a 'tough' love. THIS HAS A SPIRITUAL APPLICATION AS WELL.

***“But the wise answered, saying, NOT SO; LEST THERE BE NOT ENOUGH FOR US AND YOU: BUT GO YE RATHER TO THEM THAT SELL, AND BUY FOR YOURSELVES.”***  
**(Matthew 25:9)**

What a beautiful and holy response to all arrogant and presumptuous Christians, who freeloader off their brethren in the name of Jesus (who demand to be fed, clothed and housed in the style THEY DEMAND at the expense of others). Their fate is a nightmare from which they will never escape. They end up destitute, naked and alone in the fires of hell, shut out forever from the gates of heaven. The professors of Christ are rejected into outer darkness. You cannot sell COMMITMENT TO A CAUSE. You cannot sell DILIGENCE OF PURPOSE. You cannot sell DEDICATION TO CHRIST. If you do not have it, you must ask God to give it to you! Ask now while there is yet time.

***“And while they went to buy, THE BRIDEGROOM CAME; AND THEY THAT WERE***  
***READY***  
***WENT IN WITH HIM TO THE MARRIAGE:***  
***AND THE DOOR WAS SHUT.”***  
**(Matthew 25:10)**

The foolish virgins ARE SHUT OUT FOREVER. They never see heaven at all. They see only the judgment of Christ, who sends them away. THOSE THAT WERE READY WENT INTO THE MARRIAGE. The wise were ready. What made them ready? It will be shown that what made them ready was the **LAYING HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE, OF LAYING HOLD OF CHRIST!** The doors of heaven are SHUT TO ALL OTHER SOULS. The word “ready” is ‘hetoimos’ and it means **TO BE PREPARED, TO HAVE PREPARED, TO HAVE BEEN MADE READY.** If this is true, then there IS A PREPARATION TO BE MADE. What is it? There is only one listed in Scripture: **Entering the strait gate and walking the narrow way, which leads unto life, which is AGAPE LOVE.** It is the walking of the narrow way that makes us READY. If we do this while we are yet alive, Christ, who is the bridegroom, will come and grant us the GIFT OF LOVE.

If we are negligent to the call, and DO NOT PREPARE, then in our final hours, when death is near, we become FRANTIC and search for the answer. God says He will MOCK US, for we refused prior to this time. The BRIDEGROOM COMETH, but only those PREPARED WILL GO INTO THE MARRIAGE. THE OTHERS GO INTO ETERNAL RUIN; THEY ARE SHUT OUT.

Notice they went THROUGH a door, and that door was SHUT TO THE FOOLISH. What door? **The LIVING CHRIST is the door** (John 10:9). Christ is the ONLY mediator of the New Covenant. You either enter in VIA THE DOOR, or you do not enter in, and the door is shut to you. Remember that Christ said there were TWO WAYS INTO THE SHEEPFOLD, BUT ONLY THE DOOR LEADS YOU INTO HEAVEN. THE ‘SOME OTHER WAY’ LEADS YOU INTO ETERNAL RUIN. If you enter into the sheepfold by ‘some other way’ you will not enter heaven. To enter heaven you must enter in by the LIVING CHRIST. The many came to the HISTORICAL CHRIST, who hung upon the cross. They accept the historical Christ as their messiah.

They do not, however, come into contact with the LIVING CHRIST, who is NOT on the cross, but alive and well in heaven. They refuse Him, because they refuse the narrow way. It is the strait gate and narrow way that leads to the LIVING CHRIST. We will explore the differences in another chapter. The difference is essential to salvation.

*“Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.*

*But He answered, and said, VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU,*

**I KNOW YOU NOT.**

**(Matthew 25:11-12)**

Here we find the identical answer that Christ gave to the ‘many’. **I NEVER KNEW YOU IS THE SAME AS I KNOW YOU NOT.** We have proof positive that Christ NEVER came into union with the FIVE FOOLISH VIRGINS. He never made contact with them, yet they were all believers, all followers, all disciples, all IN THE BODY OF CHRIST. What is the difference between a VIRGIN and a married woman? The married woman has undergone CONSUMMATION OF THE MARRIAGE ACT OR SEXUAL INTERCOURSE. Paul said that the mystery of Christ was like that of the union between a man and a wife (Ephesians 5:24-32; and Revelation 19:7-9). He likened the SPIRITUAL UNION BETWEEN CHRIST AND THE BELIEVER AS IDENTICAL TO SEXUAL UNION WHERE THE “TWO BECOME ONE FLESH”. It is vital to understand why, so the full impact of this parable becomes clear in the sense of REGENERATION.

When Christ comes into **LITERAL** and actual **UNION** with the true believer, He actually **penetrates the literal body of the believer**. “I will come in to him” (John 14:23; 17:3, 21, 23, 26; Revelation 3:20); into the physical body, into the very depths of the heart of hearts. That is the act of **MARRIAGE CONSUMMATION**. If you think it not so, I suggest you read on, for a large portion of Scripture is devoted to this CONSUMMATION ACT THAT BRINGS UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST.

John says that Christ leaves **HIS SEED** in the believer (1 John 3:9). A husband leaves his seed in his wife. It is the combination of HIS SEED AND HER SEED THAT FORM A NEW CHILD. The two become one. In the act of REGENERATION, CHRIST COMES IN TO THE HEART (Revelation 3:20). He comes and speaks to the believer and they ‘sup’ together. Christ and the believer enter into **UNION, AND THE TWO BECOME ONE.** The seed of Christ is **AGAPE LOVE**, and that seed merges with the believer’s seed and **BEHOLD, A NEW CREATURE IS**



**MADE.** The wise virgins went on to MEET the bridegroom, and THEY CONSUMMATED THEIR BETROTHAL BY BEING REGENERATED, WHICH MADE THEM 'BRIDES'.

As sexual love is supposed to represent the ultimate in intimacy between a man and woman, so too is REGENERATION the ultimate intimacy between Christ and the believer. In both cases LOVE is involved. In Oriental weddings the MARRIAGE WAS CONSUMMATED ON THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEDDING FEAST/SUPPER, which was to last for seven days. When Christ comes to the believer the believer and Christ enter into **TRUE UNION**, and the **FIRST DAY** of the marriage supper takes place. Christ has many brides, and thus each undergo a **FIRST DAY** wedding supper AT REGENERATION. THESE ARE THEY THAT ARE READY, AND GO INTO THE MARRIAGE. That is exactly what Christ says in Revelation 3:20. He comes in to 'sup' with the believer. The word "sup" means **DINNER FEAST OR SUPPER**.

Every believer is called to the wedding supper of Revelation 3:20. As Christ claims He stands at the END OF THE NARROW WAY, then obviously one must travel it in order to reach the point where Christ is. That requires TIME, and time requires patience. Both require OIL FROM THE HOLY SPIRIT. When the obedient believer MEETS CHRIST, then phase one of the marriage supper takes place.

In the oriental wedding, the Bridegroom comes to the bride, and picks her up and carries her away to his father's home for great festivities. When Christ comes to the believer in the act of regeneration, IT is something HE DOES TO THE BELIEVER. Likewise, then, when a husband has intercourse with his wife, it is something HE DOES TO HER. The regenerated soul, NOW A BRIDE, causes GREAT JOY AND A CELEBRATION IN HEAVEN. Does not Christ say that at the BIBLICAL REPENTANCE OF ONE SINNER, AND THE FINDING OF ONE LOST SHEEP THERE IS GREAT JOY? And does not the regenerated believer NOW TAKE A PLACE IN THE THRONE OF CHRIST? ARE WE NOT TO SIT WITH CHRIST IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES? There is a spiritual application here for the story of literal and actual REGENERATION.

When a true believer walks the NARROW WAY, they come to the point of what I call SOUL DEATH, for lack of a better term. The point is THEY DIE, and that death is experiential, albeit totally supernatural. The foolish virgin, the foolish Christian will likewise come to a point of DYING. The difference is that THE DOOR TO HEAVEN IS SHUT, BECAUSE CHRIST CAN ONLY SAVE THOSE THAT DIE A SUPERNATURAL SOUL DEATH WHILE THEY ARE YET ALIVE. If you die in the physical sense while here on earth WITHOUT regeneration, **THE DOOR IS SHUT**, BECAUSE YOU CAN ONLY AVAIL YOURSELF OF IT WHILE YOU HAVE PHYSICAL LIFE. THE UNWISE VIRGINS DID NOT AVAIL THEMSELVES OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST; THEREFORE THEY ARE SHUT OUT.

True believers are actually married to Christ, and are at that time called **THE BRIDE**. The use of the term bride is in fact applied only to a woman on her wedding day or just after the wedding. Before that she is called a **bride to be**, or more to the point, a **fiancée** in our times. **She becomes a bride only on her wedding day and wedding night**. Christ is returning for HIS BRIDE. In point of fact CHRIST IS MARRIED TO THEM, AND THEY ARE HIS BRIDE, WITNESSED BY THE **ACT OF CONSUMMATION AT REGENERATION**. Only the bride of Christ will enter heaven, where they will go through all of the festivities of a formal wedding ceremony THAT IS THEN BOTH PHYSICAL AND SPIRITUAL, FOR THE SPIRITUAL ASPECT WAS ALREADY ACCOMPLISHED, WHICH ALLOWS THEM TO GO INTO THE FINAL FESTIVITIES!

***“LET US BE GLAD AND REJOICE,  
AND GIVE HONOUR TO HIM:***

***FOR THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB IS COME,  
AND HIS WIFE HATH MADE HERSELF READY.”***  
**(Revelation 19:7)**

Notice it says HIS WIFE has made herself ready. This is not a play on words, for the consummation took place AT REGENERATION. Just as the bride of Adam came from only the RIB of Adam (a very small part of his body, and very close to HIS HEART), so too the bride of Christ is **ONLY A SMALL PART OF HIS BODY, AND VERY CLOSE TO HIS HEART OF AGAPE LOVE, FOR THEY ALSO HAVE A NEW HEART OF AGAPE LOVE.** To make this more understandable view it in this manner: We could say that CONVERSION is espousal or engagement, and they are fiancées. **AT REGENERATION the fiancée becomes a BRIDE** and enters into the act of marriage. Christ coming into the human heart is **HIS ACT OF MARRIAGE. IT COMPLETES THE WEDDING CONTRACT.**

Israel is always considered the WIFE OF JEHOVAH GOD. GOD THE FATHER IS THEIR HUSBAND. Christ, on the other hand, came to earth to select out a bride, and thus MANY ARE CALLED, FEW ARE CHOSEN. There are many fiancées, but only a few become BRIDES. Many of the fiancées of Christ are UNFAITHFUL. **THEY WILL NOT DO AS COMMANDED.** It will be proven so from Scripture in another Chapter. The faithful undergo full transition into FULLNESS. **IT DOES NOT OCCUR UNTL THE WEDDING FEAST ITSELF.** Therefore:

## **BRIDE = WIFE**

All the wives now wait for the final call, that is, the rapture/resurrection for the remainder of their wedding supper. Those espoused to Christ who never came to regeneration are foolish virgins. Those who did go in unto regeneration are wise. **All the BRIDES have on their WEDDING ROBES, WHICH ARE THE ROBES OF AGAPE LOVE.** They alone enter into the final festivities and attend the wedding feast. All the rest are shut out.

In the parable of the marriage for the Son (Matthew 22:2-14) we find a confirmation of the five wise and five foolish virgins. It shows us the difference between saved and unsaved believers.

***“The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king (God), which made a marriage for his son (Christ),***

***And sent forth HIS SERVANTS (THE PROPHETS) to call them which WERE BIDDEN (ISRAEL) to the WEDDING (REGENERATION): and THEY WOULD NOT COME.***

***Again, he sent forth OTHER SERVANTS (THE DISCIPLES), saying, Tell them which are bidden (ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH), Behold, I have prepared my dinner:***

*my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and ALL THINGS ARE READY: come  
UNTO THE MARRIAGE (REGENERATION).*

*But THEY MADE LIGHT OF IT, and went THEIR WAYS (THERE IS A WAY THAT  
SEEMETH RIGHT UNTO A MAN, THE BROAD WAY, THE PARABLE OF THE SOWER), one  
to his farm, another to his merchandise:*

*And the remnant (The Sadducees and Pharisees) took his servants (the apostles and disciples  
of the true church), and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.*

*But when the King heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed  
those murderers, and burned up their city (the taking of Jerusalem A.D. 70).*

*Then saith he to his servants (the true church), The wedding is ready, but they which  
were bidden WERE NOT WORTHY (ISRAEL IS BLINDED).*

*Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.  
(The church goes worldwide; the Gospel goes to the Gentiles).*

*So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together ALL AS MANY AS  
THEY FOUND, BOTH BAD AND GOOD: (WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS goes TO  
GRACE) and the wedding was furnished with guests.*

*And when the King came in to see the guests, he saw there a man (who represents the many)  
which had not on a wedding garment:*

*And he saith unto him, Friend (God is the friend of man because of the reconciliation work of  
Christ on the cross), how camest thou IN HITHER NOT HAVING A WEDDING  
GARMENT? (AGAPE LOVE ROBE OF REGENERATION)  
And he was speechless.*

*Then said the king unto the servants, Bind him HAND AND FOOT, AND TAKE HIM AWAY.  
AND CAST HIM INTO OUTER DARKNESS; THERE SHALL BE WEEPING AND  
GNASHING OF TEETH.*

**FOR MANY ARE CALLED, BUT FEW ARE CHOSEN.”**

**(Matthew 22:12-14)**

Who was the mystery man at the wedding feast? None other than the MANY, FOR CHRIST LINKS THE MAN WITH MANY ARE CALLED BUT FEW ARE CHOSEN. The many had on robes, but not **AGAPE LOVE WEDDING ROBES**. They had on the **ROBE OF FAITH**, and had responded to the call to come to the dinner. They had FAITH IN CHRIST, IN FACT **THEY MADE THEIR FAITH INTO CHRIST HIMSELF**. Faith became their God. They were cast out of the Feast. The only wedding garment allowed is the **ROBE OF AGAPE LOVE, THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE SAINTS.**

**Faith is not Jesus Christ. Faith is only a dynamic that propels you through the narrow way to FIND THE LIVING CHRIST,** as we will explore later. Many are called to the wedding, but only a few with agape love robes will be allowed to remain. All others will be forcefully ejected.

It is only the **BRIDE OF CHRIST** that remains. They were faithful unto soul death; they were faithful unto marriage. The rest were unfaithful, and went after other Gods (idols).

## THE PARABLE OF THE SOWER

The parable of the sower sheds much light on why the vast majority of Christians never become the TRUE BRIDE OF CHRIST. It helps explain what is meant by wide gate, and strait gate, narrow way and broad way. It is found in Matthew 13:18-23. Read it very carefully.

*“...Behold, a sower went forth to sow;*  
*and when he had sowed, SOME SEEDS FELL BY THE WAY SIDE, and the fowls*  
*came and devoured them up:*  
  
*SOME FELL UPON STONY PLACES, where they had not much earth: and*  
*forthwith they sprung up, because they*  
*HAD NO DEEPNESS OF EARTH:*  
  
*And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and BECAUSE THEY HAD NO*  
*ROOT,*  
*they WITHERED AWAY.*  
  
*And some FELL UPON THORNS; and the THORNS SPRUNG UP, AND CHOKED*  
*THEM:*  
*But other FELL INTO GOOD GROUND, and brought forth FRUIT, some an*  
*hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.*  
  
*WHO HATH EARS TO HEAR, LET HIM HEAR.”*  
*(Matthew 13:3-9)*

This parable contains all the keys to **PSEUDO-SALVATION** and why the many are rejected. Notice that there are four types of ground. The ground is the human mind. The parable is how various people **RESPOND TO THE GOSPEL CALL**. Please understand that **ALL PEOPLE IN THE PARABLE DO RESPOND**. They do heed the call, and they are all believers, disciples and followers of Christ. The seed is the **WORD OF GOD**, so stated by Christ Himself. Many attempt to claim that the seed is authentic salvation, and that all are saved, something totally contradicted by Christ. It is a fabrication of the false prophets, to lull the seekers into sleep.

All of the people in the parable are **BELIEVERS**, AND THEY ARE **ALL UNSAVED**. Only one group will respond properly and **GO ON TO PRODUCE THE FRUIT OF REGENERATION**. You must read the parable carefully. We have four types of ground:

### WAYSIDE

## **STONY PLACES THORNS GOOD GROUND**

As we go through the parable, take note of the key words of Christ and how they are spoken.

### **1. THE WAYSIDE**

The wicked one (Satan) comes and devours them up. In Luke 8:5 it reads: ‘and the fowls of the air devoured it.’ In Luke 8:12 the fowls are identified as the devil. In Revelation 18:2 we find a reference to ‘hateful birds’ or DEMONS. Notice that the demons come quickly; ready to pounce, ready to grab the Word out of the mind so it is not understood.

### **2. STONY PLACES – NO EARTH, NO ROOT.**

No depth of mind, no depth of heart. The Bible often refers to such people as simple, or fools. There is apparently no real commitment or ability to search the Word of God out for real truth, to introspect, to question, to compare. They simply refuse to make the commitment Christ demands of them. When the sun comes up (fire) it scorches them, and they wither away. The sun is fire, and the fire represents THEIR FAITH TRIED BY FIRE. Their faith does not stand; they cannot take the heat.

### **3. THE THORNS – THE CARES OF THIS WORLD.**

The thorns represent the cares and pleasure of this life here on earth. Satan conquers by deception, and the heart of deception is DIVERSION. Satan diverts people from the strait gate and narrow way by the cares and pleasures of life. The Christian is diverted by the many forms of Christian entertainment, etc. These people cannot leave the world to find Christ. They want both Christ and the world. You cannot serve both God and mammon. A choice must be made. These believers cannot make the choice, so they are choked off.

### **4. THE GOOD GROUND – THE FRUIT OF REBIRTH.**

Good ground has depth of soul, for roots to grow and get nutrients. Water remains at great depth, allowing the plants to flourish even in draught. As the root goes down in search of TRUTH, it becomes established. These plants go on to produce fruits, for they abide in the water of truth, and they obtain the fruit of LIFE.

## **JESUS INTERPRETS THE PARABLE**

*“Now the parable is this: **THE SEED IS THE WORD OF GOD.**”  
(Luke 8:11)*

We must believe Jesus and reject the false prophets, no matter how many divinity degrees they claim to hold. Jesus claims the seed is **ONLY THE WORD OF GOD.**

## 1. THE WAYSIDE – A FAILURE TO HEED

*“Those by the way side ARE THEY THAT HEAR; then cometh the devil, and TAKETH AWAY THE WORD OUT OF THEIR HEARTS, LEST THEY SHOULD BELIEVE AND BE SAVED.”*  
(Luke 8:12)

These people are believers, and they hear the word. The problem is they do not UNDERSTAND IT, OR TAKE IT TO HEART. They tend to forget it right after hearing it, or they simply cannot make head nor tail out of what Scripture says. They respond to the word, but they do not retain the word. Our churches are full of such people. They are nice, very sincere folks, but their understanding of the word is almost nil. They know and recognize Jesus as messiah, but it stops right there. Jesus is blunt: **THEY ARE NOT SAVED.**

## 2. THE STONY GROUND – THE COLD HEART

*“But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that HEARETH THE WORD, AND ANON WITH JOY RECEIVETH IT;*  
*YET HATH HE NOT ROOT IN HIMSELF, BUT DURETH FOR A WHILE: FOR WHEN TRIBULATION OR PERSECUTION ARISETH BECAUSE OF THE WORD, BY AND BY HE IS OFFENDED.”*  
(Matthew 13:20-21)  
(COMPARE ALSO LUKE 8:13 FOR DIFFERENCES)

Here we have believers and followers of Jesus who hear the word and WITH GREAT JOY THEY RECEIVE IT. The word for “anon” is ‘euthus’ and it means **AT ONCE, INSTANTLY, IMMEDIATELY OR FORTHWITH.** In other words, as soon as they hear the word they MAKE AN INSTANT DECISION FOR CHRIST AND THEY LAY HOLD OF ALL OF THE POSITIVE PROMISES OF THE GOSPEL. **You only respond with joy at POSITIVE NEWS.** The only way you can lay hold of the Word instantly is by an **INSTANT ACT OF FAITH. YOU MAKE A DECISION IN YOUR MIND.** These people have immediate faith and belief in the Gospel; they claim all of the positive aspects of redemption and salvation with great joy. They claim them as theirs, thus they believe and affirm they are **THE SONS OF GOD BY AN IMMEDIATE DECISION FOR CHRIST.**

The word “joy” is ‘chara’ and it means **WITH GREAT JOY, DELIGHT, GREAT GLADNESS, WITH EXCEEDING JOY AND HAPPINESS.** Their response is an emotional response to the Gospel call, and they **CLAIM INSTANT SALVATION ON THE BASIS OF THE WORD OF GOD.** THEY TAKE CERTAIN PROMISES OF SCRIPTURE AND EMBRACE THEM AND APPROPRIATE THEM FOR THEMSELVES. THEY READ

WORDS LIKE 'FAITH' AND 'BELIEF' AND REDEFINE WHAT THOSE WORDS MEAN, AND CONVERT THEM OVER TO A DECISION, AN **INSTANT MOMENT OF FAITH**. They embrace AS TRUE all the positive aspects of Scripture.

**These believers grasp all the essential points of salvation and claim them as their own. They accept all the promises of the Bible by an instant faith and belief system that gives them great joy. Everything is positive, everything is instant, and nothing is allowed that is negative. All negative thought, all negative belief, all doubts are branded as satanic attacks.**

They must have recognized from their mind their **need** for a savior, because otherwise they would not have embraced the Gospel. The implication here is severe indeed: their repentance is also instant and only skin deep. It is an emotional repentance, of the soul man, of the flesh. It is mental and not of the **INNER** heart. These people go forward with deep emotion, and cry tears of joy at their 'DECISION FOR CHRIST' in which they are told that **CHRIST IS IN THEM AND UNION HAS OCCURRED**. They embrace their so-called 'salvation' and 'born again' experience as being valid and true. **WHAT ELSE COULD BRING SUCH IMMEDIATE JOY?**

Jesus, however, **condemns them**. This is why: You embrace with great joy only positive news. Bad news or harsh news does not bring joy, but sorrow. Does Jesus have a negative aspect to His salvation message? Is there a very negative aspect to the Gospel? Is there something within the message of Christ that these people are refusing to hear, **SUCH AS ENTER YE IN AT THE STRAIT GATE, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY?** Is that why Christ accuses them of having no root? Do the negative aspects of the strait gate and narrow way actually give the Christian HIS ROOTS? Is entering the gate and walking the way that which makes us ESTABLISHED? Is it this root that actually brings the fruit of UNION WITH CHRIST? What if we IGNORE or DENY the negative aspects of the Gospel? What if we removed them by FALSE THEOLOGY? Does it bring eternal ruin? Jesus affirms that looking only at the positive aspects of the salvation message will damn you in the end, for you have no root, no established INNER heart! You cannot stand the heat of the fiery trial of faith! If Christ claims the positive DOES NOT GIVE US ROOTS, THEN IT CAN ONLY BE THE NEGATIVE THAT GIVES US THE ROOTS WE NEED. **THUS:**

**IMMEDIATE ACCEPTANCE = NO ROOT  
ALL POSITIVE, ALL JOY = NO ROOT.**

We can and must by these comments of Christ ELIMINATE THE POSITIVE AFFIRMATIONS OF SCRIPTURE FOR ESTABLISHING THE ROOT OF THE REAL CHRISTIAN. There are only two aspects of the commands of Christ, positive and negative. As Christ removes the positive for root building, then the negative MUST BE what brings the real believer into union. We have no options whatever. Therefore:

**Patience and diligence vs. immediate / instant  
Long-term trial vs. instant decision  
Negative brings root vs. positive no root  
THEREFORE:  
SERIOUS PATIENCE / EARNEST DILIGENCE**

**VS.  
IMMEDIATE AND INSTANT JOY**

Jesus claims they accept all the positive by instant faith and instant belief. There is no other way to accept anything in your mind. You either accept it by faith and believe it true, or you reject it. These people embrace the Gospel promises **IMMEDIATELY FOR THEMSELVES, AND PROCLAIM THEMSELVES SAVED AND HEAVEN BOUND BY AN ACT OF THEIR OWN MIND! IT BRINGS IMMEDIATE JOY AND RELIEF. IT IS ALL POSITIVE. THE WORDS 'FAITH' AND 'BELIEF' ARE TWISTED TO THE VERY REVERSE OF WHAT THEY ACTUALLY MEAN.**

*“Yet hath he not **ROOT IN HIMSELF,**  
but dureth for A WHILE: for when **TRIBULATION or PERSECUTION ARISETH**  
  
**BECAUSE OF THE WORD,**  
by and by he is **OFFENDED.**”  
(Matthew 13:21)*

Notice they have NO ROOT. The word “root” is ‘rhiza’ and it means **STABILITY, ESTABLISHED, TRUSTWORTHY.** In Psalm 145:18 it says:

*“The Lord is nigh unto all men that **CALL UPON HIM,**  
  
**TO ALL THAT CALL UPON HIM**  
  
**IN TRUTH.”***

The word “truth” is ‘emeth’ and it means **ESTABLISHED, STABILITY, TRUSTWORTHY.** The root of the word is ‘aman’ and it means **TO BUILD UP, TO ESTABLISH, FIRM, STEADFAST, PERMANENT, OF LONG CONTINENCE, SURE.** It means to continue, to abide in, to remain in, to be steadfast in the search for ‘the truth’. The very word truth does not imply something instant or immediate, which is why Christ condemns these people with the stony heart.

It is NOT true that “all who call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved”. We can prove it because we see many Christians sent away into eternal ruin, and **ALL OF THEM CALLED UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD. There is a huge conditional qualifier to what calling on the name of the Lord means: you must call IN TRUTH.** Inasmuch as Jesus said the only entrance to heaven was via the strait gate and narrow way, then obviously the qualifier **IN TRUTH MEANS ONLY THOSE THAT ENTER IN VIA THE STRAIT GATE!**

If you refuse, you have not called upon the name of the Lord **IN TRUTH.** You have called, but not in the way Jesus demands. These folks design a theology that allows them an immediate



entrance into heaven's gates, but is this theology a correct one? Christ says they fall away. Obedience to Christ means doing ALL commands of Christ, NEGATIVE AND POSITIVE.

These people become offended by the word of God when tribulation comes. This tribulation is not outward but inward, a tribulation of the soul. **It is the ministry of the Holy Spirit to convict of sin, righteousness and judgment, hardly a positive move by God.** It should be said that to be reproved 'IN TRUTH' is not pleasant at all, but very nasty and very negative. **The reproof of God is so negative that Jesus said very few would actually undergo it!** They fall away as soon as the process begins. They claim Satan is attacking them, and all negatives are thrown out as satanic attacks! They reject the Holy Spirit and say it is a devil!

**1. When real honest conviction of the Holy Spirit comes upon them, and the real process of judgment begins, they refuse it. They believe they are ALREADY SAVED, THEY ALREADY HAVE UNION, THEY ALREADY HAVE AGAPE LOVE, SO THEREFORE ANY DOUBTS, ANY CONVICTIONS MUST BE FROM SATAN. They have found LIFE at the VERY BEGINNING OF THEIR JOURNEY, AND THEY WORK HARD TO PERFECT THAT LOVE AND LIFE THEY CLAIM THEY HAVE. Their theology tells them they are already saved, and their decision for Christ was all there was to it. Their entire theology is based upon the fact that they are already saved and going to heaven, therefore any negative feelings, doubts or convictions are instantly branded SATANIC. The Holy Spirit is thus rejected, and they go into eternal ruin all because of a theology of the false prophets! THEY WERE NEVER SAVED AT ALL. THEY NEVER HAD LIFE AT ALL.**

**2. Any doubts whatever as to their true standing before Christ are branded satanic in origin. They are told by their false teachers that doubt is the opposite of faith, and doubt is classified as unbelief by their theology. Unbelief is a sin against God. The Holy Spirit's attempt to bring them into true judgment and His rebuke is ignored. By the millions they go into eternal ruin. These poor souls are so deceived by their theology that they believe they are being obedient to God while the whole time they are in RANK DISOBEDIENCE.**

**3. The next thing Jesus is telling us here is that their instant faith and belief system is so surface that it opens them up to a wide range of satanic deception. Their theology is in such grave error they are now going to entrap themselves deeper and deeper into disobedience. They are going to lay hold of all positive promises of the Scripture. They are going to lay hold of the 'inheritance'. They will claim 'gifts of the Spirit', and victory over sin. They claim the 'promised land'. They are the bastard sons who refuse the reproof of the Lord.**

### **WHO ENTER THE SHEEPFOLD 'SOME OTHER WAY'.**

They worship Jesus Christ, but their hearts are stone cold, far removed from being touched by the conviction and reproof of God. They will not come to the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. THEY WILL NOT HAVE THEIR DEEDS REPROVED BY THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. They die in their trespasses and sins.

**Is it possible that the POSITIVE ASPECTS OF SCRIPTURE ONLY COME INTO EFFECT AFTER ONE HAS UNDERGONE THE NEGATIVE? That spiritual attainment is no different from attainment of the good things in this life? THAT ANYTHING WORTH HAVING IS NOT EASILY ATTAINED?**

What would happen if you went to a major university for the medical profession and told the board that you wanted your degree RIGHT NOW? That you did not want to go through any of that NEGATIVE STUFF, like study, burning the midnight oil, internship and hard work that a

degree entails? Would they give you a degree or throw you out on your ear? Does not the negative TRIAL OF YOUR FAITH come **PRIOR** to the gift of the degree? **Is it possible that the AWARD OR SHEEPSKIN of AGAPE LOVE AND TRUE UNION WITH CHRIST must be preceded by the negative commands of the Bible? Your answer determines your eternal destiny.**

Do we get wisdom at the snap of the fingers? Could it be that true wisdom only comes by a severe testing of our faith? That unless we submit to the commands of Christ, God will not allow us to graduate? That instead of a degree in eternal life, we end up a failure forever in eternal ruin? What makes you think that when we are dealing with God we can demand instant access to heaven? **THE BIBLE PROVES THAT TRUE FAITH, TRUE BELIEF ARE NOT INSTANT AT ALL, AND THAT THIS CONCEPT OF INSTANT FAITH AND BELIEF IS A FABRICATION OF THE FALSE PROPHETS THAT CHRIST WARNED US ABOUT.** Do you think God might consider you an arrogant FOOL whose only fate short of full repentance is eternal fire? Do you think God might consider you **ONE OF THE MANY?** The INSTANT FAITH, IMMEDIATE JOY movement is a **POSITIVE AFFIRMATION OF THE UTTER ARROGANCY AND SPIRITUAL DESTITUTION OF MAN. IT UPHOLDS CHRIST ON ONE HAND, AND UTTERLY DENIES HIM ON THE OTHER, AND IS A PRECISE FULFILLMENT OF THE PROPHECY OF PETER AND CHRIST.**

Our very salvation depends upon how we answer those questions. They can only be answered by the harsh words of Scripture. In any event, we can prove these people have no root whatever, and they fall away into eternal ruin. They are swept away by their instant theology.

### **3. THE THORNS – DOUBLE MINDED**

*“He also that received seed among the thorns is he THAT HEARETH THE WORD; AND*

*the care of this world,*

*AND THE DECEITFULNESS OF RICHES, CHOKE THE WORD,*

*AND HE BECOMETH UNFRUITFUL.”*

*(Matthew 13:22)*

*“And that which fell among the thorns are they,*

*WHICH, WHEN THEY HAVE HEARD, GO FORTH,*

*AND ARE CHOKED*

*WITH THE CARES AND RICHES AND PLEASURES*

*OF THIS LIFE,*

*AND BRING NO FRUIT TO PERFECTION.”*

*(Luke 8:14)*

These people hear the word, and begin to grow in the word. But the cares of this life and the concerns of this life choke out the word, so that it dies and never comes to the fruit of perfection, which is AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. They are in effect double minded. They want Christ and heaven, but they are not willing to pay the price to obtain it. **Although salvation is a free gift, Jesus said it would cost you everything to obtain it.**

Satan moves in on these people and DIVERTS their attention to the routines of life, and they do NOT CONTINUE, THEY DO NOT ABIDE IN HIS DOCTRINES. No fruit is brought to perfection, and our perfecting is in Christ. **THEY NEVER MEET CHRIST; THERE IS NO ACTUAL UNION WITH CHRIST.** Their religion is in vain, of non-effect.

These folks are Christians, but they are double-minded Christians. They have one foot in the world, another in Christ. They will not leave the world long enough to find THE LIVING Christ, nor will they abide in the doctrines of Christ long enough to come to regeneration. They are lost and go into eternal ruin.

This was the primary reason for the Church of Laodicea going into eternal ruin. They had become worldly, diverting their attention from obtaining AUTHENTIC salvation. This church is the last days church, a church full of false theology and false prophets, of instant salvation, instant union. They are a joyful church, and they are deceived by turning to the diversions the world has to offer. The early church warned Christians not to get involved in the affairs of this world, for they knew that the fight to extricate oneself from it was all that a soul could do! The true Church has never been a comfort to the world, nor could it be, for their message condemns the world! They are one of the primary obstacles that one must overcome to inherit eternal life:

*“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world.*

*If any man love the world, the (AGAPE) LOVE of the Father is not in him.”*  
(1 John 2:15)

*“For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?”*  
(Mark 8:36)

#### **4. THE GOOD GROUND – SALVATION**

***“BUT THAT ON THE GOOD GROUND ARE THEY,  
WHICH IN AN HONEST AND GOOD HEART,  
HAVING HEARD THE WORD,***

***KEEP IT,***

***AND BRING FORTH FRUIT WITH PATIENCE.”***  
(Luke 8:15)

Those on the good ground keep the word. The word “keep” is ‘katecho’ and it means **TO HOLD FAST, INTENSITY OF PURPOSE**. Christ also says that the fruit is produced **ONLY BY PATIENCE**. The word “patience” is ‘hupomone’ and it means **ENDURANCE, CONSISTENCY, CONTINUING, TO REMAIN IN, TO UNDERGO, TO BEAR TRIALS, TO HAVE FORTITUDE, TO SUFFER, TO HOLD UP IN LONG PATIENCE**. It carries with it the identical meaning to become established, to seek the Lord in TRUTH.

Those that are diligent will be those who find the Lord. Those that are not will go into ruin. Only those with this patience bear the fruit of regeneration, the fruit of agape love. The fruit does not come until after the enduring. The fruit does not come until after one has shown he/she is steadfast. We then have a valid contrast we must make:

*“But he that RECEIVED seed into the good ground  
is he that HEARETH THE WORD, AND  
UNDERSTANDETH IT; which also  
BEARETH FRUIT...”  
(Matthew 13:23)*

Here a little and there a little. Notice the word “received”, which in the Greek is ‘paradechomai’ and it means to **ACCEPT, TO ADMIT TO, TO APPROVE OF, TO TAKE TO HEART, TO ADMIT THE TRUTH OF**. Is this not what the confession of our real sin is? That we are to **AGREE WITH GOD AND HIS REPROOF OF US, WHICH CAN ONLY BE DONE VIA THE NARROW WAY:**

## **BEFORE** **WE ARE SAVED?**

The word “understand” is ‘suneimi’ and it means **TO PUT TOGETHER, TO UNDERSTAND, TO COMPREHEND**. In other words, the people of the good ground **READ THE WORD, MEDITATE UPON THE WORD, PUT IT TOGETHER AND BEGIN TO UNDERSTAND WHAT CHRIST DEMANDS**. Over the course of time, they become established, and the Holy Spirit begins to do His work of conviction of the real problem of the human heart, the utter lack of AGAPE LOVE. If they allow this to continue, they will **FIND THE TRUTH**,

## **THE MYSTERY OF GOD.**

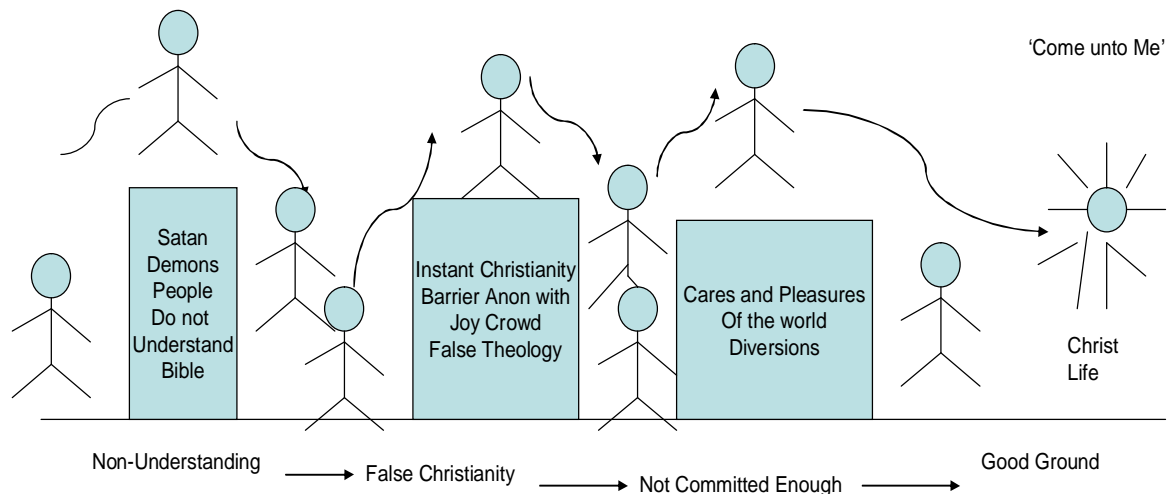
Only the fourth group on the good ground has the diligence and patience required, and Jesus says they go on to bear the fruit of **REGENERATION**, and then only with difficulty:

*“And if the righteous SCARCELY BE SAVED, where shall the **UNGODLY** and the sinner appear?”*

(1 Peter 4:18)

The word “scarcely” is ‘molis’ and it means **WITH MUCH WORK, WITH GREAT DIFFICULTY, HARDLY ABLE**. This sounds very much like Psalm 145:18 and the word **TRUTH**. It sounds very much like the strait gate and narrow way of Jesus Christ. Is this why Christ ordered us to **STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE?**

This sounds like a **NEGATIVE GOSPEL** that brings **over time** a very positive event – **regeneration**, and Scripture proves it to be true. It sounds very much like the direct opposite of the **INSTANT AND JOY SALVATION CROWD THAT CHRIST CONDEMNS**. Please note that they all had faith, they all had belief, and they all responded to the Gospel call. Only the good ground people respond **IN THE PROPER MANNER**, and only the good ground ones are saved in the end.



The parable of the sower shows us the **OBSTACLES OF THE STRAIT GATE**, and the **NARROW WAY**. The obstacles of Satan and his demons, of false instant salvation, and the cares and pleasures of this world must be overcome in order to find the real truth behind life, which is Jesus Christ and His **agape love essence**. This parable confirms the concept of a ‘way’, which means a pathway, highway or journey that one must pass through. It confirms the word ‘strait’, which means **NARROW FROM OBSTACLES IN THE WAY**. It confirms the word ‘narrow’, which means full of agony and anguish, full of trouble and pain of the inward soul as the Spirit works to **SHOW THE DESTITUTION OF THE INNER HEART**.

This parable begins to show us what Jesus meant when He said **BELIEVE** and have **FAITH**. The faith **OF** Jesus was a long term steadfastness, far removed from the instant faith gospel of modern Christianity. Christ follows this parable with another to prove that He meant what He said. He sharply divides up believers into two main camps: **THE WHEAT AND THE TARES**. We will find that the wheat represents the real, authentic born again believer, and the tares are bastard sons, who claim a regeneration they do not possess. They neither know the Son or God the Father. Their father is Satan, and Satan sows them among the true Church to deceive the unwary seeker after Christ. **THE TARES ARE THE FALSE CHURCH, THE FALSE TEACHERS AND FALSE PROPHETS, THE ONES THAT PETER AND CHRIST WARNED WOULD COME, AND THEY WOULD UPHOLD CHRIST AND APPEAR AS CHRISTIANS, BUT THEY**

WOULD NOT BE CHRISTIANS. THEY WOULD BE IMPOSTORS, LIARS, AND DECEIVERS.

*“Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man WHICH SOWED GOOD SEED IN HIS FIELD...”*

(Matthew 13:24)

We know from the previous parable that the seed is the Word of God, and in this case the seed represents THOSE OF THE GOOD GROUND, THE SOULS OF THOSE TO BE SAVED WITH PATIENCE. The field is the world. This is another parable about response to the word. Only a certain portion of the world WILL RESPOND AT ALL TO THE WORD. Of those that DO RESPOND, only a small portion (the few, the WHEAT), respond correctly. Christ is now going to outline what He meant by His statement about the FALSE PROPHETS who will mislead millions of Christians and sweep them into eternal ruin.

The false prophets are not sheep; they only dress like sheep. They are ‘look alikes’, satanic plants who are dupes, but who nevertheless come in with false doctrines designed to mislead the seekers of heaven and keep them AWAY FROM TRUE REGENERATION. False Christians are referred to as **tares**, the real true born again or soon to be born again believers are the **wheat**. In relationship to the parable of the sower, those of the wayside, stony ground and thorns are tares; for they never do leave Satan’s dominion. They are ALL IN THE BODY OF CHRIST, THEY ARE ALL CONSIDERED BY CHRIST AS PART OF HIM. The wheat are of the good ground.

*“But while men slept, the enemy came and SOWED TARES AMONG THE WHEAT, and went his way.”*

(Matthew 13:25)

Notice that Satan sows the tares **AMONG THE WHEAT**, or that is, **WITHIN THE REAL CHURCH**. As the true Church is the wheat, then Christ is telling us that the look alike tares are dropped **RIGHT IN THE MIDST OF THE CHURCH**. Tares look just like wheat. Only close examination will reveal the difference. The tares are the ‘many’ and the wheat is the few. The tares are on the broad road of false Christian theology and doctrine, while the few have entered in at the strait gate; combined together, the wheat and tares form the **BODY OF CHRIST ON EARTH**.

Satan and his angels of light come in with their false doctrines, but because these doctrines are VERY CLOSE to true doctrine the unwary **NEVER SEE THE DIFFERENCE**. So we have a host of people that look like Christians, act like Christians, and who present what seems to be pure Christian doctrine. They have huge churches and large followings according to Peter and Paul.

Satan is their real father, but they claim that God is their Father. Satan still has dominion over them, and they will never escape that dominion. They are the ‘many’ on the broad road, and Satan has dominion over the broad road because these people never do come into UNION with Christ. In other words, although they are in the Body of Christ, they NEVER COME TO UNION, and

because they never come to union, they cannot enter heaven, and are swept away. **THE TARES ARE THE BASTARD SONS WHO CLAIM THE KINGDOM UNLAWFULLY.**

Broad road people are in reality the enemy of Christ, because they refuse to do His commands. Not only do they refuse, they prevent others from coming in as well, by their broad road doctrines and rituals. Satan is the enemy of Christ, and these people, even though in the Body of Christ (among the wheat); they are placed there by Satan for the sole purpose of deceiving others into eternal ruin. Satan knows that mankind has a herd instinct, and follow after their leaders, and never check things out for themselves.

*“But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.*

*So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? From whence then hath it tares?*

*He said unto them, AN ENEMY HATH DONE THIS. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?*

*But he said, Nay; lest while you gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.*

**LET BOTH GROW TOGETHER UNTIL THE HARVEST:  
AND IN THE TIME OF HARVEST**

*I will say to the reapers, GATHER YE UP TOGETHER FIRST THE TARES, and bind them in bundles to burn them: BUT GATHER THE WHEAT INTO MY BARN.”*

**(Matthew 13:26-30)**

Christ is saying that He will wait until the TIME OF THE HARVEST, and at that time He will judge those who call themselves ‘**in Christ**’. This tells us when the ‘many’ will be judged, and it is the TARES who are **JUDGED FIRST**, and bound up and taken to the fires of the place of torments. **THEY ARE THE BRANCHES THAT ARE BURNED IN JOHN 15:2.** Will all believers, both good and evil be resurrected at the same time, and the evil ones separated immediately and cast away? In spite of modern prophetic interpretation, **YES.**

Many attempt to claim that the tares are unbelievers, or the whole world. That could not be the case because tares look like wheat. These are imitations of the real thing. The Church is in the **WHOLE WORLD.** The Body of Christ is around the world. Within that body (**AMONG THE BODY OF CHRISTIANS**) are both wheat and tares. There are a multitude of rapture/resurrection concepts on the shelves of modern Christian theology, but Scripture says there is only **ONE** correct one.

Unbelievers are not in view here at all, only those who profess Jesus Christ as their Lord. The earth is filled with unbelievers who will undergo their own judgment **AFTER** Christ has removed the Body of Christ from earth. **YET HERE IT SAYS CLEARLY THE TARES ARE JUDGED FIRST.**

Scripture will prove out that immediately after the resurrection/rapture of the **ENTIRE CHURCH,** an immediate judgment is made concerning the **TRUE AND FALSE CHURCH.** Those that are false **NEVER ENTER HEAVEN AT ALL. THIS IS PHASE ONE OF THE JUDGMENT**

**SEAT OF CHRIST.** THIS IS WHERE THE MANY ARE SENT AWAY INTO ETERNAL RUIN. THIS IS WHERE CHRIST SAYS TO THEM ‘**I NEVER KNEW YOU**’. The door of heaven is shut to them. The basis of entrance was **REGENERATION**, and they never obtained it. They were never born again, and thus are discarded and sent to the fires for burning. It is going to be a very sad day for the **VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS.** JUST AS JESUS CLASSIFIED BELIEVERS AS OBEDIENT AND DISOBEDIENT, AT THE JUDGMENT THEY ARE CALLED WHEAT OR TARES.

Remember that judgment **BEGINS** at the house of the Lord. There is the preliminary judgment of the narrow way, which separates the **TRUE FROM THE FALSE.** Both the wheat and the tares claimed to be in the house of the Lord. Thus the initial judgment is a judgment as to **WHO LAID HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE AND WHO DID NOT; MUST BEGIN HERE.** Why else would Christ send them away? **THE MANY ARE ALL CHRISTIANS, THEY ARE IN THE BODY OF CHRIST, AND THEY WILL ALL BE RESURRECTED ALONG WITH THE BRIDE.** THE ‘MANY’ ARE THE VERY FIRST ONES TO UNDERGO **SEVERE JUDGMENT,** AND THEY ARE SENT AWAY TO THE FIRES OF HADES TO AWAIT THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT, WHICH IS YET A THOUSAND YEARS AWAY. This would be phase one of the judgment of God’s people.

After this initial separation of the wheat and tares, and wheat is taken into the barn, and there the remainder of Christians enter the BEMA seat judgment of Christ for their rewards, and enjoy the **MARRIAGE SUPPER, FOR THEY ARE THE BRIDE OF CHRIST.** Phase two would then be for rewards only, because the **remainder had agape love bestowment,** they had in truth been born again, and they in truth had **UNION** with the Son. After this initial separation judgment is over, the judgment of the earth will begin, which is a **JUDGMENT OF ALL CHRIST REJECTERS, THE UNBELIEVERS, THE HEATHEN.**

Notice also that the wheat and tares **GROW TOGETHER THROUGHOUT THE CHURCH AGE.** Christ does not come and stop the process, for avoiding deception is part of the screening out process. Christ is in the process of weeding out the real diligent seekers from the nominal seeker. That is why He said we must **STRIVE** to enter in at the strait gate. That is why Jesus warned us to **BEWARE OF THE FALSE PROPHETS,** who would bring in ‘look alike’ doctrines and theology that would be 99% accurate, but would still lead you into eternal ruin.

It is only the ‘very elect’ that will know the difference, and **then only with careful diligence.** The **BRIDE** is made up only of those who have come to agape love bestowment and those who will obtain it. These are written in the Lamb’s Book of Life. All others are not written there, and they will not ever see heaven, for they are judged prior to getting there. The false church, who were considered in the Body of Christ never did come to agape love bestowment, and thus are sent away.

## **CHRIST GIVES HIS INTERPRETATION**

*“He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;  
The field is the world; the good seed are the CHILDREN OF THE KINGDOM; but the  
TARES  
ARE THE CHILDREN OF THE WICKED ONE.”*



(Matthew 13:37-38)

Now we have confirmation of our answer. Christ spreads the Word to the four corners of the globe, or the world. That is the field. There is a response to the word of God (the seed). Those who respond form the Body of Christ. Within the Body of Christ are two types of people: THE TRUE SEEKERS AND THE FALSE SEEKERS. The tares are the FALSE LOOK ALIKES, WHOSE FATHER IS SATAN, BUT **WHO ARE 'RELIGIOUS ONES'. THEY HAVE THE RELIGION OF CAIN.** The wheat, however, keep the 'sayings of Jesus' and DO THEM (OBEDIENCE) and the tares do NOT keep His sayings, and DO NOT DO THEM (DISOBEDIENCE). The true seed is called wheat, because the WORD OF GOD WILL NOT RETURN UNTO GOD VOID, BUT WILL ACCOMPLISH THE PURPOSE THAT GOD HAS IN MIND.

The tares, on the other hand, respond to the word, but they are on the wayside, stony ground or thorns, and never keep the sayings of Jesus and never obey His commands to enter in via the strait gate. They claim to be Christians; they look, act and sound like Christians; but they ARE NOT. **IT IS THE FALSE CHURCH, THE SYNAGOGUE OF SATAN.** They are AMONG the real regenerated Christians.

***"The enemy that sowed them IS THE DEVIL; the harvest is the END OF THE WORLD; and the reapers are the angels.***

***As therefore the TARES ARE GATHERED AND BURNED IN THE FIRE; so shall it be in the end of this world.***

***The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather OUT OF HIS KINGDOM all things THAT OFFEND, and them which do INIQUITY."***

(Matthew 13:39-41)

Notice that Christ says 'out of his kingdom'. Now the Kingdom of Christ is the kingdom of heaven. HIS RETURN TO EARTH TO RECLAIM IT HAS NOT YET OCCURRED. We know the judgment begins at the house of the Lord. At the resurrection/rapture of all of His believers/followers and disciples, Christ will FIRST separate out all those that offend and them that do iniquity. Is that not what Christ said to the MANY? Did He not say that their works were INIQUITY? This is the separation process in the House of the Lord. The many are severed out of the Body of Christ immediately. This is where Christ vomits them out of His mouth. They are cancer, they are poison, and they caused millions of Christians throughout the entire Church age to go astray. Thus Christ gathers them up first, casts them out, and the remaining Christians go into heaven with Christ for their rewards.

Those that do 'iniquity' are those **that did all of their works without agape love**, which fulfills the law of God. They did not understand that they had to walk the narrow way to obtain agape love. They merely claimed it by an act of faith, and then went about 'doing good'. The problem is that **YOU DO NOT OBTAIN AGAPE LOVE BY AN ACT OF FAITH OR BELIEF. IT IS SIMPLY NOT DONE THAT WAY. IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH FAITH OR BELIEF.** Because they did not realize that, **ALL OF THEIR WORKS WERE DONE IN NATURAL**

PHILEO LOVE, WHICH CHRIST BRANDED AS 'EVIL' AND THUS, THEY WERE WORKERS OF INIQUITY.

By laying hold of agape love, the authentic born again Christian works under the cloak and covering of Christ, because agape love **IS THE BASIS OF ALL RIGHTEOUSNESS, INCLUDING GOD**. He has entered into THE REST OF GOD, AND IS COVERED BY THE LOVE OF GOD. The tares did not understand that the commands of Christ to enter at the strait gate and to walk the narrow way **WERE THE ONLY WAY TO FIND AGAPE LOVE**. They built a theology that told them they **HAD AGAPE LOVE** when in fact they did not. Thus their works were never done under the covering of Christ, and their works are works of INIQUITY. All of this is confirmed by John 15:

*"I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.*

**EVERY BRANCH IN ME**

**THAT BEARETH NOT FRUIT HE TAKETH AWAY...**

*If a man ABIDE NOT IN ME, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them IN TO THE FIRE,*

**AND THEY ARE BURNED."**

**(John 15:1, 6)**

These branches **ARE ALL IN CHRIST**. "Every branch **IN ME**". All branches are in the **BODY OF CHRIST**. The branches represent every believer, follower and disciple of Jesus Christ, be they wheat or tares, real or phony, professors or possessors of the agape love of Christ.

Jesus then says that **THOSE BRANCHES** (individual Christians) who do not **BEAR FRUIT**, are **TAKEN AWAY**. The fruit Jesus is speaking of here is **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT OR REGENERATION**. Those who do not bear this fruit are **BURNED IN THE FIRES**. That was the whole object of His prayer, that **ALL BELIEVERS, ALL FOLLOWERS WOULD COME INTO UNION WITH HIM**. The union is **THE 'FIRST FRUIT'**, AND FROM THERE, THE BELIEVER WILL BE PURGED TO **BEAR MORE FRUIT**.

Those of the wayside, the stony ground and the thorns, **NEVER BEAR FRUIT TO PERFECTION**. They never come to the **perfection of Christ**, which is **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**, for **AGAPE LOVE IS THE PERFECTION OF CHRIST**. This was the one thing missing from the 'many' (I never knew you), it was missing from those who had gifts of the Holy Spirit but not charity (agape love) and it was missing from the non-overcomers and all others in the parables. **THE DIVISION LINE IS THE OBTAINING OF AGAPE LOVE**.

The tares never leave the dominion of Satan in spite of their professions of knowing Christ. They are under the deception of Satan and God allows it to be so because they were disobedient to His Son, and they did not keep His sayings, nor did they do the will of the Father. They did NOT study the Word; they did not ALLOW the Word to show them truth. Thus God allows them to

fall under a delusion. Their worship is in vain; it will profit them nothing. They draw near to Christ with their mouth and their head faith, but their hearts are far from Christ. Their entire life was vanity. They stand condemned by the very Lord they claimed they loved.

When you bring what we have together, we find a total harmony that is unmistakable. You could not misread what Christ is saying, and His 'saying' here is deadly to all Christians: **THE VAST MAJORITY ARE GOING TO ETERNAL RUIN**. To prove totally that the dividing line is indeed agape love, Christ says:

*“...and EVERY BRANCH THAT BEARETH FRUIT, HE (GOD)  
PURGETH IT,  
  
THAT IT MAY BRING FORTH  
MORE FRUIT.”  
(John 15:2)*

If a person comes to **TRUE UNION, TRUE REGENERATION, TRUE AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**, then God is going to **PURGE THAT SOUL** to make it produce **MORE FRUIT FOR THE KINGDOM**. In other words, ONCE AGAPE LOVE FRUIT IS PRODUCED, that soul is never cast into the fire to be burned, but is instead PURGED LIKE GOLD AND SILVER, SO THAT ALL THE IMPURITIES RISE TO THE SURFACE AND CAN BE SCOOPED OFF. That process is AFTER the bestowment of agape love, and is not part of the initial quest to find the mystery of God. Jesus said this is true of EVERY BRANCH that comes to the fruit of agape love.

Jesus said that a little leaven in the loaf (the Body of Christ) leavens the whole loaf. Over time the leaven spreads and infects the entire loaf of bread. The leaven represents false doctrine, false theology which leads to apostasy away from the TRUTH OF SCRIPTURE. This apostasy leads to the **REDEFINITION** of key words used in Scripture. Faith, grace, conversion, regeneration, works and legalism are all REDEFINED so that the unwary do not find the truth. That faith would be redefined is all too apparent:

*“...nevertheless when the SON OF MAN COMETH,  
shall He FIND  
FAITH ON THE EARTH?”  
(Luke 18:8)*

The answer to this question of Christ's is NO. True biblical faith will have been REDEFINED by the false prophets, so that only the FEW will have true biblical faith, the others will have a FALSE FAITH, WHICH IS NOT FAITH AT ALL. Their belief will not be a heart belief, even though it will be claimed it is. They will redefine conversion, and call it regeneration and vice versa. Works will have been expanded in definition and grace will become utterly perverted by redefinition. THE WHOLE GROUP is then SWEEPED AWAY INTO ETERNAL RUIN. Peter said that the VAST MAJORITY of Christians would be swept away with all of these perversions of

doctrine and theology. The false teachers, preacher and evangelists would be very popular, embraced by the entire Body of Christ in spite of the warnings of the FEW who knew the truth.

## **A GROUP OF APOSTATE DISCIPLES THAT CANNOT CUT THE PROGRAM**

There is yet another proof that the vast majority of Christians are swept away into eternal ruin. Paul tells us why the ‘many’ are swept away in the ‘latter days’ of the Church. **THIS WARNING IS DIRECTED RIGHT AT YOU AND ME, HEED IT WELL”**

***“PREACH THE WORD; be instant in season, out of season;  
REPROVE, REBUKE, EXHORT  
with all LONG-SUFFERING AND DOCTRINE.”***  
**(2 Timothy 4:2)**

This verse sets the stage for what Paul is about to say next. Who do you preach to? BELIEVERS, FOLLOWERS, DISCIPLES. Notice that it says, REPROVE, REBUKE. That does not sound like ‘positive confessions’ or ‘with joy’. The word “long-suffering” is ‘makrothumeo’ and it means **WITH LONG ENDURANCE, TO FOREBEAR OVER A LONG PERIOD OF TIME, FORTITUDE AND TO HAVE GREAT PATIENCE**. Notice that the reproof and rebuke are to come FROM DOCTRINE, i.e. from the Bible itself.

If one has to be constantly rebuked and reprovved from the Bible, the implication is that the people have LEFT THE BIBLE AND ARE WANDERING INTO FALSE DOCTRINE, FALSE THEOLOGY. False theology is built from a misinterpretation of Scripture. It comes from a lack of research into the truth of God’s Word. The implication is also that this false doctrine WILL BE POSITIVE IN NATURE. It will leave out all the negative aspects of the ‘sayings of Jesus’, but will instead focus only on the positive. Regardless, it is the SCRIPTURE THAT DOES THE REPROVING. If they will not accept it, they go into eternal ruin:

***“For the time WILL COME when they WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE; but  
AFTER THEIR OWN LUSTS shall they heap to themselves  
TEACHERS, HAVING ITCHING EARS;  
AND THEY SHALL TURN AWAY THEIR EARS  
FROM THE TRUTH,  
AND SHALL BE TURNED UNTO FABLES.”***

**(2 Timothy 4:3-4)**

Here we have yet another key as to why the ‘many’ are rejected of Christ: **THEY WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE.** The word “endure” is ‘anechomai’ and it means **NOT PUT UP WITH, NOT ABLE TO STAND, NOT ABLE TO HEAR OR TO ACCEPT, NOT ABLE TO TOLERATE.** In other words, they **REFUSE THE JUDGMENT OF GOD;** they cannot accept or tolerate what the Bible says. Their minds become spiritually disqualified, spiritually reprobate. They will not, and cannot stand to hear the **WHOLE TRUTH.** They will instead pick and choose what they will and will not accept. They pick that which is pleasant and positive, and which satisfies their carnality. All of the negative aspects of Christ’s commands are **REJECTED OUT OF HAND. THEY ARE THE STONY GROUND PEOPLE, WHO EMBRACE ALL OF THE POSITIVE ASPECTS OF SCRIPTURE BY AN ACT OF FAITH.**

Their ears are turned **AWAY FROM THE TRUTH.** They will not **ACCEPT, NOR CAN THEY ENDURE ANYONE WHO TELLS THEM ABOUT THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY THAT LEADS UNTO LIFE.** Their theology **TELLS THEM** they **HAVE LIFE, TRUTH, and AGAPE LOVE.** They will **REJECT** in a violent and angry way **ANYONE WHO BRINGS THE WHOLE TRUTH OF THE GOSPEL.** They will brand such a one a heretic, a false teacher, a liar, and brand him accursed because he brings **ANOTHER CHRIST, ANOTHER GOSPEL.** Their Christ is pleasant and positive; He tolerates all forms of disobedience, for He is full of mercy and grace. **THEIR GOSPEL REJECTS THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY OUT OF HAND,** and brands it a form of **WORKS OR LEGALISM.**

Their gospel is a positive instant gospel, with instant salvation and eternal security thrown in to boot as a bonus program to entice them. **IF YOU POINT OUT TO THEM ANYTHING WHATEVER ABOUT THIS NARROW ‘WAY’, OR MENTION ANYTHING WHATEVER OF A STRAIT GATE, THEY REFUTE IT, DISPUTE IT, AND WILL NOT HEAR IT. IT IS OFFENSIVE TO THEM, IT IS UTTERLY FALSE DOCTRINE TO THEM. IT IS A DENIAL OF THEIR DEFINITIONS OF FAITH AND GRACE. THEY CANNOT ‘ENDURE’ THE SOUND DOCTRINE THAT SAVES THEM.** They have turned away from the **ONLY METHOD OF TRUE SALVATION, AND HAVE EMBRACED A LIE OUT OF THE PITS OF HELL.**

What is it they cannot tolerate? **SOUND DOCTRINE.** The word “sound” is ‘hugiano’ and it means **WHOLE, TOTAL, UNCORRUPTED DOCTRINE.** In other words, **ALL DOCTRINE,** not just the pleasant sounding **POSITIVE** doctrines, but also **ALL THE NEGATIVE, HARD AND UNPLEASANT.** If they are Christians, they have laid hold of the **POSITIVE** aspects and affirmations of Christianity. They claim by positive affirmation all the positive doctrine, but refuse and violently oppose any suggestion there is a negative application as well, and either brand it of Satan or of legalism and works.

The negative aspect of the salvation message of Christ is the strait gate and narrow way. Both of those words mean difficult and full of anguish and trouble of the soul. **THESE ARE UTTERLY REJECTED,** and not only rejected; they cannot stand that form of doctrine. Their theology **REFUTES IT,** and because they are positive their theology is correct, **THEY REFUSE TRUTH AND ARE SWEEPED INTO ETERNAL RUIN.** Christ does not forewarn them because they are **IN RANK DISOBEDIENCE TO HIS COMMANDS.** Their claims to being ‘Christians’ are empty, and they are destitute of **REAL TRUTH.**

The narrow way is full of the real reproof of God. It is full of rebuke, scourging and chastening, and it is very unpleasant. Jesus says plainly that it is this **NEGATIVE ASPECT OF THE SALVATION MESSAGE THAT SAVES THE SOUL**. This aspect is rejected with an arrogant and violent sweep of the hand, “not so”, **THEY EXCLAIM, AND THEN ADVANCE THEIR FALSE THEOLOGY TO PROVE IT. THE FALSE TEACHERS AND PROPHETS OF SATAN WALK IN THEIR WHITE UNIFORM ROBES OF CHRIST, HAVE THEIR IMAGE BEAMED ACROSS THE WORLD BY TELEVISION AND RADIO PROCLAIMING A GOSPEL THAT DAMNS ANYONE WHO EMBRACES IT.** Unless there is repentance, they are lost forever. At the heart of it all: **PRIDE AND ARROGANCE**, which God cannot tolerate, and will not allow. These people are in reality the stony ground people. Their hearts are far from the Lord.

Psalm 145:18 say we must call upon the name of the Lord **IN TRUTH**. These people are refusing the **‘IN TRUTH’** part of the call, which is the strait gate and narrow way. The **‘IN TRUTH’** is **SOUND DOCTRINE**, and sound doctrine is **ALL DOCTRINE** including the negative!

All of the negative aspects of the **TRUE WALK TO AUTHENTIC SALVATION** will be eliminated by a whole new theology, which will sweep the entire Church in the latter days. This new theology will be a quick and easy salvation, all done by an instant decision for Christ, the very concept of the stony ground people who embrace **ALL THE POSITIVE ASPECTS OF SALVATION IMMEDIATELY AND INSTANTLY**. It is the **INSTANT FAITH GOSPEL IN VIEW HERE AND IT IS THE STONY GROUND PEOPLE**. It is a phony ‘head faith’ gospel that does nothing to change the **INNER heart of HEARTS**.

It is a worldly gospel that allows those who embrace it to continue in their various lusts without any supernatural inward change of the heart **TO AGAPE LOVE**. These folks are Christians and they have faith and belief in Jesus. Their faith and their belief are not **BIBLICAL FAITH AND BELIEF, BUT A SATANIC COUNTERFEIT THAT APPEARS REAL**. Their gospel message will appear to be 100% correct, but will have deadly error within it.

Paul says that they heap to themselves **TEACHERS**. These teachers must be the **FALSE PROPHETS CHRIST WARNED US ABOUT, WHO WOULD TRANSFORM THE GOSPEL TRUTHS INTO A LIE, WHO WOULD DENY THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY**. They are the very same false teachers of 2 Peter 2:1-3 who bring in damnable heresies that sweep the vast majority of Christians into eternal ruin. At the heart of all of it is a **DENIAL OF THE NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF THE SALVATION MESSAGE BROUGHT BY CHRIST**. They are the tares, the wolves in sheep’s clothing, and Satan’s angels of light.

Next Paul says the vast majority of the Church will turn their ears away from the truth and be turned unto fables. They will **NOT** hear the truth, but will brand the truth a lie. In place of truth, they embrace the lie, and **UPHOLD IT AS TRUTH**. It is a delusion allowed by God for disobedience. They **WILLINGLY TURN AGAINST TRUE DOCTRINE; THEY REJECT IT AND BECOME THE ENEMIES OF CHRIST**. So now we begin to see a portrait emerge:

**ENDURE vs. WILL NOT ENDURE**  
**LISTEN vs. WILL NOT LISTEN**  
**HEAR TRUTH vs. WILL NOT HEAR**  
**HAVE TRUTH vs. ARE TURNED TO FABLES**  
**OBEDIENT vs. DISOBEDIENT**

**THE FEW vs. THE MANY  
THE WHEAT vs. THE TARES  
ENTER VIA DOOR vs. ENTER SOME OTHER WAY**

Because they WILL NOT RECEIVE the WHOLE TRUTH, they willfully embrace utterly false doctrine. The word “truth” is ‘alethes’ and it means **VERITY, THAT WHICH IS TRUTH, NOT CONCEALING ANYTHING, THAT WHICH IS TRUTH AND ONLY TRUTH, NOTHING WITHHELD.** If something is withheld from the salvation message, and it is important to know, then it is no longer truth but a lie. Scripture proves that the vast majority within the Church will embrace a lie, and will not be able to hear the truth. **They will turn upon the real truth in anger and in violence.**

If you refuse the whole truth, and only embrace the positive aspects, then you are turned unto fables. The lie may be a good counterfeit of the truth, but it is STILL a counterfeit. If you embrace it, you are lost forever. The word “fables” is ‘muthos’ and it means **FICTION, A TALE, A FALSE STORY, NOT TRUE, FALSE DOCTRINE.** A false gospel message is brought in, and the vast majority of people embrace it. Because the vast majority of people embrace it, **IT IS VERY POPULAR DOCTRINE. IF IT IS VERY POPULAR DOCTRINE, THEN VAST NUMBERS OF PEOPLE WITHIN THE CHURCH EMBRACE IT AS TRUTH. IF THEY EMBRACE IT AS TRUTH, THEN THEY MUST ALSO REJECT THE REAL TRUTH.** It then becomes a generally accepted doctrine, and it SWEEPS THROUGHOUT THE BODY OF CHRIST.

Therefore THE FALSE TEACHERS HERE ARE THE SAME FALSE TEACHERS THAT PETER WARNED WOULD COME. They would be SO POPULAR THAT MILLIONS OF SINCERE CHRISTIANS WOULD FOLLOW THEM INTO THE FIRES OF HELL. These teachers, according to Peter, WOULD MARKET JESUS CHRIST TO THE MASSES OF FOLLOWERS AND MAKE A HUGE PROFIT DOING SO. The fires of hell eagerly await them; the flames are thirsty for their souls.

The people and their leaders are then turned unto a fable, a gospel that ends them up in utter ruin. These are apostates, posing as the leaders of Christendom, and the lay people follow after them. They strut around in their WHITE ROBES upon luxurious stages with the television cameras rolling, and they make HUGE PRODUCTIONS to satisfy the lusts of their followers. **IT IS A GOSPEL OF CARNAL MAN, A GOSPEL OF HELL POSING AS A GOSPEL OF HEAVEN.**

## **DISCIPLES AND BELIEVERS WHO FALL AWAY**

There is more Scripture concerning apostasy and falling away from the truth that pertains to believers and followers that were ONCE FAITHFUL SERVANTS, WHO DO NOT KEEP THE COURSE SET BEFORE THEM:

*“But there are some of you THAT BELIEVE NOT. For Jesus knew from the*

*beginning who they were that BELIEVED NOT, and who should betray him.*

*And he said, therefore said I unto you,  
**THAT NO MAN CAN COME UNTO ME,**  
*except it were given unto him **OF MY FATHER.****

*From that time **MANY OF HIS DISCIPLES WENT BACK,**  
**AND WALKED NO MORE WITH HIM.**”  
(John 6:64-66)*

Here are followers who **THOUGHT THEY BELIEVED, THOUGHT THEY HAD FAITH, THOUGHT THAT ALL WAS RIGHT WITH THEM,** but Jesus turns on them and says **THEY BELIEVED NOT.** They were not TRUE BELIEVERS. They were professors of faith and belief, BUT FELL SHORT. THEY COULD NOT TOLERATE HIS SAYINGS; THEY COULD NOT ACCEPT HIS TEACHINGS. He added that NO MAN COULD EVER COME TO THE LIVING CHRIST EXCEPT THE FATHER BRING HIM IN, or we could say, GIVE HIM THE POWER TO COME.

It is important to understand these people were walking WITH JESUS. They thought He was the truth, way, and life. THEY HAD FOLLOWED HIM FOR SOME TIME. Again, Jesus says there is MORE TO THIS THAN MEETS THE EYE. The Father must grant the real the power given to come, or he cannot do so. Here we find a division between those who simply call upon the name of the Lord and those who call upon the name of the Lord **IN TRUTH!** Scripture will prove that they simply did not have the COMMITMENT REQUIRED, THE DILIGENCE REQUIRED, AND THE PATIENCE REQUIRED TO UNDERTAKE THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. They would not dig deep enough to come as demanded.

The remarks of John the Baptist also illustrate the concept of THE RADICAL DIFFERENCES BETWEEN BELIEVERS AND THE REGENERATED. We will draw upon what we know as we explore these remarks. John is faced with the Pharisees and the Sadducees, who have come for baptism. They are the religious leaders of their day. We have today in the Christian faith, New Testament Pharisees and Sadducees who have the identical same traits, who have within them the identical same violence and hatred towards the truth that those of Jesus' day had. THEY WILL NOT ESCAPE THE FIRES OF ETERNAL RUIN, UNLESS THEY REPENT A FULL AND COMPLETE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE.

*“And **THINK NOT** to say within yourselves, **WE HAVE ABRAHAM TO OUR FATHER: for I say unto you, that God is able OF THESE STONES TO RAISE UP CHILDREN UNTO ABRAHAM.**”  
(Matthew 3:9)*

These people are relying upon the fact that they THINK ABRAHAM IS THEIR FATHER, AND THAT IS ENOUGH. The equivalent in our day would be to think THAT GOD IS YOUR FATHER, AND BECAUSE YOU HAVE ACCEPTED CHRIST THAT IS ENOUGH. Anything added to faith or belief is a HERESY, A FALSE NOTION, AND LET HIM THAT BRINGS IT BE ACCURSED. Notice what is said: THESE STONES, WHICH ARE THE HEARTS OF THE



PEOPLE, can be (if they will allow it) raised up into SONS OF GOD. The hidden aspect of what John is saying is that THE STONY HEARTS OF THE PEOPLE WILL HAVE TO UNDERGO A PROCESS THAT ALLOWS THEM TO BE CALLED SONS OF GOD. Jesus called it THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY WHICH LEADETH UNTO BEING 'BORN AGAIN' INTO 'LIFE'.

Remember in Ezekiel 36:26 that God said THAT ALL HIS PEOPLE HAVE HEARTS OF STONE. Your profession of faith and belief do not alter this HEART OF STONE. It is out of these stones that God will call the VERY ELECT. THESE ARE THEY WHICH WILL WALK THE NARROW WAY TO THE END, WHERE THE CHIEF SURGEON PERFORMS A HEART TRANSPLANT. We are seeing again the concept of '**FROM THE MANY COME THE FEW**'. The many refuse to allow God to deal with their heart of hearts. It is off limits to Christ. They will allow only room in the outer court of their minds, but CHRIST HAD DARE NOT COME TO THEIR HOLY OF HOLIES, their INNER HEART. As a result, they refuse the narrow way and the reproof of God. They will not come to the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE for their true confession of what sin really is.

***"And NOW ALSO the axe is LAID UNTO THE ROOT OF THE TREES:**  
**therefore EVERY TREE WHICH BRINGETH***

***NOT FORTH GOOD FRUIT IS HEWN DOWN,***

***AND CAST INTO THE FIRE."***

***(Matthew 3:10)***

The tree is the believer in Christ. The concept of the strait gate and narrow way is the 'LAYING THE AXE TO THE ROOT'. The root of the soul is the inner heart of hearts. The ax is going to be laid to this heart of hearts, THE AX IS GOING RIGHT INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES, AND CUT OUT THE HEART OF STONE. The heart IS GOING TO BE CHANGED. IT MUST BE CHANGED BY REGENERATION. The fruit is of course the fruit of regeneration, which is **AGAPE LOVE**.

The heart must bring forth the **FRUIT OF AGAPE LOVE**, OR IT IS TO BE CUT DOWN, AND BURNED IN THE FIRES OF ETERNAL RUIN. The heart cannot bring forth the fruit of agape love unless and until it walks the **NARROW WAY TO FIND CHRIST, WHO STANDS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY**.

If this process is not allowed by the soul, for whatever reason, that soul will bear **WORKS OF INIQUITY, WORKS OF EVIL**, as in the case of the many. Either one walks the narrow way and allows Christ to put the ax to the core of your problem, or you will simply be cut down and cast into the fire.

God is going to go right to the heart of the human condition. God is not going to fool around any more in ritual and **SURFACE RELIGION**. **GOD HATES RELIGION, HE HATES THE SOLEMN ASSEMBLY** (Isaiah 1:10-15). God is all done with religion and religious pretense. That is all over with. Something new is in the offering with the arrival of Jesus Christ: **IT IS A NEW HEART, A NEW BIRTH, A SUPERNATURAL CHANGE WITHIN**. God pleads with us **TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO BE MADE CLEAN, AND QUIT ALL OF THIS**

PRETENSE (Isaiah 1:16-19). The ax is going to cut the stony human heart to shreds, and is going to utterly destroy it. If the heart is not changed, if the ax is refused, and only a profession is made, then no fruit can come forth to the perfection of regeneration. All professors are simply burned in the fire. Jesus confirms this in John 15:6. John the Baptist then says:

*“Whose fan is in his (Jesus Christ) hand, and he will*  
***THOROUGHLY PURGE HIS FLOOR,***  
***and GATHER HIS WHEAT INTO THE GARNER;***  
***but he will BURN UP THE CHAFF with UNQUENCHABLE FIRE.***  
***(Matthew 3:12)***

Notice that Jesus will **PURGE HIS OWN FLOOR.** That is, He will purge **His own people, all the believers, disciples, and followers.** His own body will be purged of everything not authentic. The WHEAT He gathers up to take to His barn, and the chaff (the tares) will He burn up. This is a double reference parable for it also applies to all real believers, all authentic believers will go before the judgment seat of Christ and all evil works are burnt in the fires of searching judgment.

The word for “purge” is ‘diakatharizo’ and it means **TO CLEANSE PERFECTLY.** The cleansing comes from the bestowment of agape love **at regeneration.** Then comes another form of purging. Laying the ax to the root of our hearts means to **CUT OUT OUR HUMAN NATURAL HEART, AND GOD GIVES US A NEW ONE!**

Jesus said in the Sermon on the Mount that a corrupt tree could only bring forth EVIL FRUIT. Matthew 3:10 cross compares with Matthew 7:19. They are all God’s people, but only a few of them are regenerated.

## **VAST MAJORITY OF END TIME CHRISTIANS GO INTO ETERNAL RUIN**

We have now gone over an abundant amount of Scripture to prove totally that the vast majority of Christians will end up in eternal ruin. We will now offer one more New Testament proof that is **UTTERLY SHOCKING IN ITS IMPLICATION:**

***“But there were FALSE PROPHETS also among the people (Israel),***  
***even as there SHALL BE FALSE TEACHERS AMONG YOU...***  
***(2 Peter 2:1)***

Peter is warning that just as Israel had false prophets, so too will the Church have FALSE TEACHERS. They shall come. It is an imperative condition. It will happen. They will rise up among the Christian Church, they will look like, sound like and act like real authentic born again Christians, but they will be liars. We are going to examine these false teachers IN DEPTH later. We only need to be aware that THEY ARE CHRISTIANS, IN THE BODY OF CHRIST, IN THE CHURCH, POSING AS AUTHENTIC BORN AGAIN CHRISTIANS.

There is something about them however, that Peter says will IDENTIFY THEM TO THE TRUE SEEKER: they will 'deny' the Lord that bought them. Now the word "deny" does not mean they **DISAVOW JESUS CHRIST AS MESSIAH**. The word means that **THEY CONTRADICT WHAT HE SAYS**. In other words, they will openly UPHOLD CHRIST, but will CONTRADICT HIS TEACHINGS ABOUT SALVATION. THIS IS NOT TO SAY THERE ARE FALSE CHRISTIAN TEACHERS WHO DENY CHRIST, BUT THIS IS DIRECTED TO SOMETHING FAR MORE DEADLY, FOR THESE ARE CHRISTIAN LEADERS WHO ARE SINCERE AND DEDICATED MEN OF GOD, BUT WHO ARE 'DUPES' OF SATAN:

*“...who **PRIVILY** shall bring in **damnable heresies**,  
even **DENYING THE LORD THAT BOUGHT THEM**,  
and bring upon themselves swift destruction.”*

(2 Peter 2:1)

Notice it says that they 'privily bring in' damnable doctrine. It simply means **THAT THESE FALSE DOCTRINES ARE BROUGHT IN TOTALLY UNAWARE**. The Body of Christ does not SPOT THE ERROR. This is not cult activity, but is instead MAINSTREAM CHRISTIANITY ITSELF. These doctrines are so clever, so close to the real thing that the VAST MAJORITY WITHIN THE CHURCH DO NOT DETECT THE ERROR. Not only do they not detect it, **THEY EMBRACE THE ERROR AS TRUTH!** The error they embrace damns them to eternal ruin. The error they embrace is a lie, a falsehood, a tragic mistake in doctrine. It is an error in THEOLOGY, IN DEFINITIONS, IN THE PRIMARY DOCTRINE OF SALVATION. IT SWEEPS THE ENTIRE CHURCH, IS VERY POPULAR, AND **ALL PRIMARY DENOMINATIONS BUY INTO IT**, FROM THE FUNDAMENTALISTS TO THE LIBERALS. Remember IT IS UNDETECTED, BROUGHT IN TOTALLY IN SECRET, AND IT IS

**NEVER DETECTED BY THE**  
**MANY.**  
**THEY DIE EMBRACING THIS**  
**FALSE DOCTRINE.**

***“And MANY (THE VAST MAJORITY)  
shall follow their pernicious (damnable) ways...”***  
**(2 Peter 2:2)**

The word for “many” is again ‘polus’ and it means **ABUNDANT NUMBER**, or in our language, the **VAST MAJORITY**. When Jesus spoke of many, He always contrasted it to the “FEW”. If the vast majority of Christians flock to these false teachers, then we must say that **WHATEVER THE MAJORITY IN THE CHURCH ARE SAYING IS TRUE DOCTRINE ON HOW TO GET SAVED IS IN FACT FALSE**. That must be true because the popular doctrines on salvation are embraced as true, when in fact they are false! Those that embrace these doctrines go into eternal ruin, along with the false teachers who teach them.

***“...by reason of whom THE WAY of truth SHALL BE  
EVIL SPOKEN OF.”***  
**(2 Peter 2:2)**

Peter gets right to the point: These false teachers **DO NOT SPEAK EVIL OF JESUS CHRIST, THEY UPHOLD CHRIST**. What they speak evil of is **THE WAY THAT LEADS TO THE TRUTH**. Christ gave us only **ONE WAY**. **HE CALLED IT STRAIT AND NARROW**. We are being told that another doctrine, that is **SO CLOSE** to the original that it appears 100% correct as to how one gets saved, **IS a lie out of hell itself**.

**Their doctrines, a whole host of them, will in fact CONTRADICT AND OPPOSE THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. They will manufacture a doctrine that does NOT REQUIRE YOU TO ENTER IN AS CHRIST COMMANDED. THEY WILL REDEFINE WHAT FAITH IS; THEY WILL REDEFINE GRACE. THEY WILL REDEFINE WORKS. Conversion will become regeneration, and they will insist the two are the same. Their whole doctrine will utterly oppose ALL THE NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF SALVATION. Once again we find a reference to the many, and once again we find the one essential element missing: **THEIR DOCTRINES PROHIBIT AUTHENTIC REGENERATION.****

They will claim a regeneration they do not possess. **They will redefine regeneration** in such a way as to **ENABLE THEM TO CLAIM IT**. It will be a lie, **and the real truth they will oppose with violence**. The elect will find their error and bypass it, and go on to find the **LIVING CHRIST, AND GO IN TO UNION WITH HIM**. The remainder will go into eternal ruin. God says He changes not. If Christians can be lost to eternal ruin via disobedience, then we should find proof in the Old Testament that God’s people Israel could end up in ruin.

***“MY PEOPLE ARE DESTROYED FOR LACK OF KNOWLEDGE: because  
thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that THOU SHALT BE NO PRIEST TO  
ME: seeing thou hast forgotten the LAW OF THY GOD, I will also forget thy  
children.”***

Notice it says MY PEOPLE are destroyed because of a lack of knowledge. Could this have something to do with the New Testament saying that ‘faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word’? **Is true Biblical faith based upon an established knowledge of what the Scriptures really say, both positive and negative, and then being obedient to the commands therein?**

God is not a respecter of persons, and thus in many ways treats unbelievers and believers alike for disobedience, i.e., they go into eternal ruin. It appears there is a **GENERAL LACK OF REAL FAITH IN ALL THOSE THAT ARE TURNED AWAY**. Is faith established by entering the strait gate and walking the narrow way? Is that what Christ means when He says ‘BELIEVE’? Is that what Paul means when he says “BELIEVE FROM THE HEART”? Is the strait gate and narrow way the way of KNOWLEDGE?

Is the knowledge that God demands the knowledge of the **MYSTERY OF GOD**? Is the knowledge the knowledge of **AGAPE LOVE**? Faith and belief are essentially the same in the Bible. If you simply went to the word definitions and looked them up, you could walk away with a false impression of what God and Christ intended. This is so because **CHRIST WAS VERY CAREFUL WITH HIS CONDITIONAL PHRASES THAT EXPLAINED THOSE WORDS**. It is the conditions attached that define the real meaning. If we drop off conditional words like **IF**, then we have deadly misunderstanding of the commands of Christ. All of the comments of Christ referring to authentic salvation are

## **CONDITIONALLY QUALIFIED.**

**IF** you follow the conditions, then salvation is the result. **IF** you refuse the conditions, or ignore them, you will not obtain salvation. Thus the word ‘believe’ does not mean what you think it means. The word for faith does not mean what you think it means. That is especially true today because we live in an ‘instant’ gratification world.

## **NEVER FORGET TO LIST ALL OF THE QUALIFIERS.**

If true Biblical faith comes from an ever expanding knowledge of Scripture that is allowed to become **OPERATIVE** in the life of the believer, then God can do His work of convicting unto salvation. Is that why Christ demanded that we **CONTINUE** in His doctrine? Is that why we find numerous warnings that we must abide in and study to show ourselves **APPROVED UNTO GOD**?

Something tragic happened to the many Christians; so tragic it brought them to eternal ruin. For one reason or another, they could not lay hold of the **MYSTERY OF GOD**. We have proven they were believers. We have shown you they had faith and belief by modern theological

standards, yet they go into eternal damnation. This is impossible under modern Christian theology, which claims loudly that **FAITH AND BELIEF ARE WHAT SAVE THE SOUL.**

What if faith and belief ARE ONLY A **DYNAMIC FORCE** TO PROPEL YOU THROUGH THE NARROW WAY UNTO SALVATION? WHAT IF THE DEFINITIONS GIVEN TO FAITH AND BELIEF ARE NOT CORRECT? What if salvation ITSELF is NOT faith and belief? What would happen if we made FAITH ITSELF JESUS CHRIST? Would that not be FAITH IN FAITH? Could we be fooled by a satanic doctrine that substitutes **FAITH ITSELF FOR JESUS CHRIST, AND NOT BE AWARE THAT WE HAD DONE SO?** The answer will shock you, for the answer is **YES.** If we make FAITH THE SAME AS JESUS CHRIST, then we become involved in idol worship, and our idol is FAITH. Faith becomes Christ Himself; faith becomes GOD. Faith becomes everything there is!

What must I do to be saved? What does regeneration mean? Can I know for sure I am going to heaven? What is my proof? THE ANSWERS ARE FAR DIFFERENT THAN ANYTHING YOU IMAGINE THEM TO BE. **THE SCRIPTURAL ANSWERS CONDEMN MODERN CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY NO MATTER WHAT DENOMINATION.**

*“But we are not of them WHO DRAW BACK UNTO PERDITION; but of them that BELIEVE TO THE SAVING OF THE SOUL.”*  
(Hebrews 10:39)

An interesting question would be this: why would anyone draw back from **joy and laughter and good time if salvation is as pleasant as modern Christian theology makes it out to be?** This verse of Scripture makes it sound like a real battle has to be fought, and that it becomes so intense that some people draw back and will NOT CONTINUE TO THE END. You only draw back from the NEGATIVE; not from things positive, (another clue as to why the ‘many’ were lost).

## **FINAL SUMMARY & CONCLUSIONS**

We have proved beyond any doubt whatever that a large portion of the Christian Church is unsaved and destined for eternal ruin. From the many to the non-overcomers, from the evil servants to the foolish virgins, from the fearful servant to the many that follow the false teachers, the evidence is massive and sweeping that

**THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS  
NEVER MAKE IT TO HEAVEN.**

This must give all of us all reason to pause. These warnings are everywhere, we are to read them; learn from them. We are to avoid the mistakes made by the ‘many’. We are to count our own

souls worthy of salvation, and we are to become OBEDEIENT to the 'SAYINGS OF JESUS', and we are to do THE WILL OF THE FATHER. In conclusion, we have learned the following:

- 1. You can undergo what you think is a full CONVERSION to Christ.**
- 2. You can be baptized in water by submersion or sprinkling.**
- 3. You can be baptized in Holy Ghost power and speak in tongues.**
- 4. You can have faith to move mountains.**
- 5. You can believe with a firm belief.**
- 6. You can have all knowledge.**
- 7. You can have all wisdom.**
- 8. You can know the Scripture backwards and forwards, inside out, in reverse and have it all totally memorized.**
- 9. You can cast out demons, be on the front lines of battle in the war between Christ and Satan for the human race.**
- 10. You can heal the sick and perform miracles in the name of the Jesus Christ.**
- 11. You can claim all the promises of Scripture and be sure you are born again and heaven bound, and be positive of it.**
- 12. You can give away all that you own in the name of Jesus.**
- 13. You can give your body to be burned at the stake for Christ, and become a martyr for the cause.**
- 14. You can attend every church service, pray sincere and dedicated prayers, go to the jails, prisons, and the hospitals, hand out tracts and be a super 'Christian'.**
- 15. You can be a teacher, pastor or evangelist of world renown, pack the crowds in by the millions, ring your sermons off the high rafters of holiness and yet:**

# **YOU CAN END UP IN ETERNAL LOSS AND RUIN, REJECTED BY THE LORD JESUS CHRIST; “I NEVER KNEW YOU”.**

It happens because of deception, because of false theology that redefines key words, that bypasses one way or another the flat commands of our Lord Jesus Christ. You can speak of the strait gate and narrow way, you can speak of the holiness walk, you can uplift all of these things, but your definitions of what they are, and what they mean can vary radically from what Jesus Christ said they mean.

## **1. THE DEFINITION OF FAITH HELD BY THE MANY WAS NOT ACCURATE.**

Their interpretation of what FAITH REALLY IS was in total error. They had read all of the Scripture verses about being saved by faith, and they obviously appropriated them. BUT THEY WERE NOT SAVED; THEY WERE REJECTED. That means THEIR DEFINITIONS OF FAITH WERE IN TOTAL ERROR. AND WE HAVE ALSO PROVED THEY HAD A FORM OF FAITH, BUT IT WAS NOT A SAVING FAITH.

## **2. THE DEFINITION OF BELIEVE HELD BY THE MANY WAS NOT ACCURATE.**

Their interpretation of the word BELIEVE was also in total error, for they obviously BELIEVED IN Jesus Christ, and Jesus says that anyone who BELIEVES IN HIM WOULD BE SAVED. They were not saved, so then their interpretation of the word believe was wrong. It cost them eternity.

## **3. THE DEFINITION OF REGENERATION HELD BY THE MANY WAS NOT ACCURATE.**

Their interpretation of the word REGENERATION was in total error. They had read words like BORN AGAIN, REGENERATED, LIFE, SAVED, SALVATION AND OTHERS LIKE IT, but they did not define them properly, for **THEY WERE NEVER REGENERATED**. The only way that can happen is to have a faulty definition of what it is!

There is one issue between man and God, and ONLY ONE: this issue must be faced and settled. It was the issue that Peter had to face and settle. No one could deny that Peter loved the Lord with all of his heart, soul and mind, yet for all that it was not enough. We must find out why it was not enough, and then we must comply or we will not lay hold of this mysterious, hidden and secret love of God: AGAPE.

***“HOW SHALL WE ESCAPE,  
if we NEGLECT SO GREAT SALVATION;  
which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord,  
and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him;***

***God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders,***



*and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will?"*  
(Hebrews 2:3-4)

How can we neglect such a great salvation? If it is pride that keeps you, get rid of it. If it is arrogance, destroy it. If it is bias, rid yourself of it. If it is tradition, walk away from it. If it is your religious bias, your denominational bias, rise above it. If you are too busy, GET UN-BUSY. If you have too much business, OFF LOAD. You MUST come to the Scripture as a child, read it as a child; for Scripture will open itself up **ONLY** to the honest seeker. If you attempt to prove your denominational beliefs are correct, and truth is not what you are seeking, God will verify your delusions. **Never in the history of the world has a book been written that will verify delusions as Scripture.** God said ALL THOSE, EVERYONE, that does NOT LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE, will fall under a delusion. The 'many' were under a delusion. God allows it because THESE PEOPLE WERE NOT SEEKING THE REAL TRUTH. **They only wanted a verification of WHAT THEY THOUGHT WAS TRUE.**

Whatever holds you back you must get rid of it, or you will never see heaven, and you will be but one of the many who are destroyed for lack of knowledge. Proverbs 18:13: **"He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly and shame unto him."** Hear this matter out. **Check the Scripture to verify if it is true.**

We are now going to dig into the false prophets, and verify everything we have learned thus far. **EXTRICATE YOURSELVES FROM THE FALSE PROPHETS AND THEIR FALSE CHURCHES AND THEIR FALSE THEOLOGY"**

**"COME OUT OF HER MY PEOPLE..."**

# ***DARK LIGHT SERIES***

## **TWO**

### **THE FALSE PROPHETS -- PATHWAYS TO HELL**

In our study of false salvation, we have seen that Christ bluntly says the vast majority of Christians are not going to enter heaven, but will end up rejected. We have also seen a common denominator as to why this is so: they fail to lay hold of **AGAPE LOVE**, **THEY FAIL TO BECOME REGENERATED**. We have proven that sincerity is not the issue, but rather deception, a deception laid down by Satan himself, a deception so subtle that only the FEW find it and go on to find eternal life. It must be understood that those under deception **ARE NOT AWARE OF IT**. Coming out from under religious deception requires time and requires that a soul **DESIRE TRUTH MORE THAN ANYTHING ELSE IN LIFE**. If this desire is not present, deception lies at the door, and this will be verified from the remarks of Jesus, who had much to say about it.

Disobedience to the commands of God to **SEEK THE ULTIMATE TRUTH (CHRIST), WITH ALL OF OUR HEART, MIND, SOUL AND STRENGTH** leads to the acceptance of false doctrines that appear totally correct to the unwary believer, who embraces them as true. Due to human nature (of which pride is a major part), once a false gospel is embraced as truth, it is very difficult to dislodge, and in many cases cannot be. It requires one to admit one is wrong. **Pride goeth before the fall.**

It should be stated right now that when the term FALSE PROPHETS or FALSE TEACHERS is used, no attempt is being made to differentiate between one who deliberately intends to mislead because of hatred towards Christ, or the one who is sincere but under a deception. The net result is the same: eternal ruin to the one who embraces incorrect salvation doctrine.

**“ENTER YE IN at the *STRAIT GATE*:  
for WIDE IS THE GATE, and BROAD IS THE WAY,  
that LEADETH TO DESTRUCTION,  
AND  
MANY THERE BE  
WHICH GO IN THEREAT:  
BECAUSE  
  
STRAIT IS THE GATE,  
AND NARROW IS  
THE WAY,  
  
WHICH LEADETH UNTO LIFE,  
  
AND FEW THERE BE THAT FIND IT.  
(Matthew 7:13-14)**

We are going to break this down more as we explore the method that Jesus gave us to enter the New Covenant. Remember there are two gates, two ways, and that they diametrically oppose each other:

**WIDE VS. STRAIT  
BROAD VS. NARROW  
RUIN VS. LIFE**

The word “wide” is ‘platus’, and it means **SPREAD OUT, FLAT, BROAD**; by implication it means **NO OBSTACLES, EASY, NO TROUBLES, BECAUSE WE CAN EASILY TRAVEL OVER BROAD, FLAT AND OPEN HIGHWAYS**. The root of the word is ‘plasso’, and it means **TO MOLD, TO SHAPE OR TO FABRICATE**. It implies something that is a fabrication, something shaped or molded to look like the real thing, but it is a counterfeit, a ‘look alike’. The meaning of Jesus then is clear: the wide gate and the broad way is a fabrication of Satan, molded and shaped to look authentic to the unwary. It is a **masterpiece of theology**, a clone **with a genetic flaw** embedded deep within, not detected by surface appearance. Satan knows that if a human soul discovers there is a strait gate and narrow way, and elects to travel upon it, that **CHRIST WILL GAIN ANOTHER VICTORY**. Thus all of Satan’s efforts will be to keep a soul from coming to this knowledge. Obstacle one of the parable of the sower **WAS DEMONIC DECEPTION** and it is a major obstacle one must overcome.

The word “broad” is ‘euruchorus’, and it means **WIDE, SPACIOUS, LOTS OF ROOM, LARGE AREA**. By implication therefore, it means that **THERE IS ROOM FOR THE VAST MAJORITY TO TRAVEL UPON IT, AND A MULTITUDE OF FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINES TO EMBRACE**. The root of the word is ‘eurus’ and ‘chora’, which means **EMPTY EXPANSE, SPACE, TERRITORY**. The broad way is a vast empty expanse, with a multitude of Christians traveling upon it, with a vast number of denominational theologies all proclaiming “**HEAVEN THIS WAY!**” They each manufacture their own theological methods for entering into the New Heart Covenant. Their theologies, although radically different, have one thing in common: **THEY ARE EASY TO ACCEPT, EASY TO EMBRACE, APPEALING TO MAN AND HIS CARNAL NATURE, TO HIS PLEASURES, HIS COMFORTS, AND PLACE IN SOCIETY**. This ‘way’ leads to great comfort of the soul, for it convinces the soul that all is well. He grabs hold of the New Covenant with great ease, proclaiming a new heart and union with Christ that is non-existent. The whole thing is a fabrication of Satan from start to finish.

Opposed to this wide gate and broad way is what Christ termed the **STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY**. Just as they are opposed in description, they are opposed in destination. The word for “strait” is ‘stenos’, which means **FULL OF OBSTACLES, NARROW, COMPRESSED, VERY NARROW, AND SO NARROW ONE MUST STRIVE TO ENTER IN BY IT**. Have you ever tried to get into a door that you could only open a small amount? It conveys that meaning:

**“STRIVE  
TO ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:  
FOR MANY, I SAY UNTO YOU,  
  
WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, AND SHALL NOT BE ABLE.”  
(Luke 13:24)**

The word “strive” is ‘agonizomai’ and it means **TO STRUGGLE, TO CONTEND WITH AN ADVERSARY, TO FIGHT, TO LABOR FERVENTLY**. Jesus also used the term “overcomer” to describe those that had entered into union with Him. The word “overcometh” is ‘nikao’ and it means to **HAVE PREVAILED IN BATTLE, TO HAVE FOUGHT AND WON, TO CONQUER, TO GET THE VICTORY**. By using this term, Jesus confirms the word “strive”. We also run into the word ‘many’ again. We now have the following references to the ‘many’:

**MANY ON THE BROAD ROAD  
MANY WHO STAND BEFORE CHRIST REJECTED  
MANY WHO FOLLOW AFTER THE FALSE TEACHERS  
MANY WHO SEEK TO ENTER IN BUT ARE NOT ABLE.**

In contrast we find Jesus using the word FEW.

**FEW THAT FIND LIFE  
FEW THAT FIND THE STRAIT GATE**

The connotation to all of this is that the STRAIT GATE IS IN FACT HIDDEN FROM VIEW. It will not ever be detected by the many, which answers why they are in such shock at being rejected. They “KNOWEST NOT”, which is of course DECEPTION. When you bring it together, when Jesus uses the word “strive”, He is giving you a direct opposite from EASY: **THUS:**

## **STRIVE/HARD vs. EASY FLAT/BROAD**

The word “narrow” is ‘thlibo’, and it means **TO CROWD, TO PRESS, TO APPLY GREAT PRESSURE, TO AFFLICT, TO SUFFER TRIBULATION, TROUBLE, GREAT AGONY OF SOUL**. Put together, the strait and narrow means exactly what Jesus said it means: **A TERRIBLE JOURNEY OF SOME SORT IN WHICH THE SOUL IS GOING TO UNDERGO TREMENDOUS PRESSURE, AGONY AND ULTIMATE DEFEAT AS GOD BRINGS THE SOUL DOWN IN UTTER HUMILIATION**. If it is refused, **NO LIFE IS GRANTED, HEAVEN’S GATE IS SHUT**.

Jesus is therefore contrasting two diametrically opposed concepts. The wide gate and broad way will be traveled by the **VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS**, and only **THE FEW AUTHENTIC CHRISTIANS** will undergo the mental pain and suffering that God inflicts upon the human soul as the Holy Spirit convicts of **SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT**. The “many” seek to enter the New Covenant via the wide gate and broad way, but only the few find the strait gate, and **STRIVE** to enter it once they have found it.

The many claim they are regenerated Christians, authentic Sons of God, born from above, in union with Christ. Their claim to fame is via theology and doctrine, which they embrace with great faith, and they are saved because **THEY THINK** the Bible TELLS THEM they are saved. Their salvation is **FAITH ALONE**, and they **IGNORE THE LIVING CHRIST, WHO PATIENTLY WAITS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY**. His waiting was in vain; they never showed up. They chose another way into the Kingdom, a “way” that allowed them to claim the inheritance, the promises, union and eternal life. Only at the end do they find out they were in fact **BASTARD SONS AND DAUGHTERS, DESTINED FOR ETERNAL RUIN**.

After contrasting the two ways His followers and disciples will seek to enter heaven, and warning openly that one of them is patently false, Jesus gives a stern warning:

**“BEWARE**

**OF FALSE PROPHETS,**

***which come to you in SHEEP’S CLOTHING,  
but INWARDLY they are ravening wolves.”***

**(Matthew 7:15)**

Within this short verse lies many a souls eternal destiny. Why would Christ forewarn you about FALSE PROPHETS RIGHT AFTER He told you there is **ONLY ONE WAY THAT LEADS TO LIFE?**

**OBVIOUSLY TO WARN YOU ABOUT FALSE CHRISTIAN LEADERS WHO WOULD INVENT A THEOLOGY AND DOCTRINE THAT WOULD CIRCUMVENT IN ANY WAY POSSIBLE HIS CLEAR COMMANDS!**

To accomplish this, they **MUST REDEFINE FAITH, GRACE, WORKS, CONVERSION, REGENERATION AND REPENTANCE.** They must manufacture a theology that is a **MIRROR IMAGE OF WHAT CHRIST SAID, BUT IT WILL BE A DECEPTION.** It will look right, sound right, feel right, and be supported by Scripture, for Satan knows his Bible better than anyone on earth. HIS DOCTRINES, AND HIS THEOLOGY WILL BE **A MASTER COUNTERFEIT,** SO CLOSE TO THE REAL THING THAT ONLY BY **VERY CLOSE EXAMINATION WILL IT BE REVEALED FOR WHAT IT IS: A TOTAL SHAM!**

This is exactly why the “many” end up before Christ rejected! They bought hook, line and sinker the theology of the false prophets, who were themselves deceived and deceiving others. Notice that Christ says these false prophets come in **SHEEP’S CLOTHING.** They look like sheep, they walk like sheep, they bleat like sheep, they smell like sheep, and they do what sheep are supposed to do, BUT SURPRISE, SURPRISE! **THEY ARE NOT SHEEP.** They are part of the SHEEPFOLD, WHO CAME IN “SOME OTHER WAY”. Remember what Christ said:

***“But he that***

**ENTERETH IN BY THE DOOR**

**IS THE SHEPHERD**

***OF THE SHEEP.”***

**(John 10:2)**

Obviously then, those that enter in ‘some other way’ and not by the door, are **FALSE SHEPHERDS OF THE SHEEP, OR WOLVES IN SHEEP’S CLOTHING, WHO COME**

**TO STEAL AND DESTROY.** Christ commands us to BEWARE. That word comes from ‘prosecho’ and it means **TO BE CAUTIOUS OF, TO PASS JUDGMENT UPON, TO LOOK AT AND INSPECT CLOSELY.** If you are disobedient to these commands to check out ANYONE AND EVERY ONE’S DOCTRINE AGAINST THE SCRIPTURES, AND THROW OUT ANYTHING THAT CONTRADICTS IT, then with **100% assurance** you will go under DECEPTION. The Bible is full of warnings to STUDY THE WORD. YOU CANNOT GAIN KNOWLEDGE EXCEPT YOU PICK UP THE BIBLE AND **BEGIN TO STUDY VERY INTENTLY WHAT IT SAYS,** SO THAT YOU ARE ABLE TO JUDGE CORRECTLY, AND NOT BE BLOWN ABOUT BY EVERY WIND OF DOCTRINE.

All false doctrine comes from the father of life, Satan himself:

*“Put on the **WHOLE ARMOUR OF GOD,**  
that ye may be able to stand against  
**THE WILES OF THE DEVIL.**”  
(Ephesians 6:11)*

We are commanded to put on the WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD. It has but one reason: TO WITHSTAND THE WILES OF SATAN. The word “wiles” is ‘methodeia’, which means **TRICKERY, DECEPTION, TRAVESTIES.** In other words, **FALSE DOCTRINES and FALSE THEOLOGIES** are a part of the “wiles” of Satan that swept the vast majority of Christians into eternal ruin. The false prophets are Satan’s finest con men in deception. They appear in every instance the perfect Christian. Peter tells us they run very popular Christian ministries that the vast majority flock after and support. Here is one part of the ARMOR OF God:

*“AND take the helmet of salvation, and the **SWORD OF THE SPIRIT,**  
**WHICH IS**  
**THE WORD OF GOD:”**  
(Ephesians 6:17)*

Apostasy comes from leaving the WORD OF GOD, and RELYING UPON OTHERS TO TELL YOU WHAT IT SAYS. WHY WOULD YOU WANT THE PURE WORD OF GOD FILTERED THROUGH SOMEONE ELSE’S UNREGENERATE MIND TO TELL YOU WHAT IT MEANS? Why not go to the Holy Spirit for your information? The Holy Spirit is NOT CONFUSED, and He knows whereof He speaks! The refusal to take to oneself these commands to read, study, meditate and pray over the Word lead to religious confusion and apostasy away from the true faith.

Many of the false prophets today who are very popular claim it is wrong to judge others. It must be pointed out there are two types of judgment, and one is wrong, the other you are commanded to do. You are not to judge another’s PERSON. That is, you do not pass judgment upon that SOUL. We do not know the heart of a person, we do not know their trials, and we have not walked in their shoes. Because we do not know or understand the real truth of any situation, WE ARE COMMANDED NOT TO JUDGE OR TO PASS JUDGMENTS. It is not an option with

the Lord; it is a COMMAND. This type of judgment is connected to forgiveness, and no one can truly forgive another until AGAPE LOVE comes into the human soul. One of the attributes of agape love is its complete ability to forgive and utterly forget. No human soul with natural love can truly forgive or forget, in spite of protests to the contrary.

The type of judgment that Christ **DOES COMMAND** IS A **JUDGMENT MADE ON DOCTRINAL STATEMENTS FROM ANY PASTOR, TEACHER, OR EVANGELIST OR ANYONE ELSE FOR THAT MATTER.** You are to take what they say, and apply it to THE WORD OF GOD. If it matches what God has to say, they are speaking truth. If it does not match, they are speaking error. Many false prophets will, in their attempts NOT TO BE DISCOVERED, SCREAM YOU HAVE NO RIGHT TO JUDGE THEM. Anyone who tells you that you have no right to judge their biblical teachings, or who claims they got a “direct revelation” from GOD and therefore CANNOT BE JUDGED, IS A **LIAR, A FRAUD, AND A FALSE PROPHET.** I am not suggesting that GOD does not give direct revelation, I am saying that **ANY REVELATION THAT IS FROM GOD WILL AGREE 100% WITH SCRIPTURE, FOR GOD DOES NOT CHANGE OR ALTER HIS OPINIONS OF HIS PLAN.** The ONLY method God has to keep you safe from harm and deception IS HIS WORD. You must get into it, and study it, and remain in it, and judge everything you hear or read or see **BY THE WORD.**

The type of judgment that Christ CONDEMNS IS ‘krino’ and it means **TO BRING TO TRIAL, TO ADJUDGE GUILTY, TO CONDEMN.** We cannot do this for only God can read the heart, and only GOD knows the real truth behind each one of us. The type of judgment that CHRIS COMMANDS is ‘anakrino’, and it means **TO INVESTIGATE, TO INTERROGATE, TO CHECK OUT BY CLOSE INSPECTION, TO SCRUTINIZE, TO QUESTION, TO SEARCH OUT, TO EXAMINE.** You were commanded by Jesus Christ to **USE THIS TYPE OF JUDGMENT.** If what a popular evangelist says DOES NOT CHECK OUT WITH THE BIBLE, WE HAVE EVERY RIGHT TO LABEL THEIR DOCTRINE AS FALSE DOCTRINE, WHICH MAKES THEM FALSE PROPHETS.

A real man of God will invite you to CHECK OUT WHAT HE SAYS AGAINST THE BIBLE. He will more than invite it; he will **DEMAND YOU DO SO. IT IS NOT ONLY FOR YOUR PROTECTION, BUT FOR HIS OWN!** There is no room for pride here, and as Paul said, who is sufficient to TEACH THESE THINGS? The answer is NO ONE. When Jesus was confronted by Satan in the wilderness, did He rely upon Himself? NO! He went directly to the WORD OF GOD. He judged Satan with an ‘anakrino’ judgment, and He passed a stinging rebuke upon Satan with this type of judgment. He said “IT IS WRITTEN”. He passed a complete judgment upon Satan’s Scriptural discourse with Scripture itself. As all false prophets, be they teachers, preachers or evangelists, are dupes of Satan, then we MUST pass this type of judgment upon them. A false prophet will scream loud and long when this is done and he is proven a false prophet. He will scream condemnation and hellfire down upon those that point out grave Scriptural contradiction. He will say that the true love of GOD does not allow for judgment. He will FAIL TO TELL YOU OF THE TWO TYPES OF JUDGMENT AS AN ALL ENCOMPASSING TERM. He must, because otherwise he will be found out for what he is!!!

The word for “false prophets” is ‘pseudoprophetes’ and it means **RELIGIOUS IMPOSTOR, A PROPAGATOR OF FALSE DOCTRINE, OR FALSE TEACHERS, PREACHERS AND EVANGELISTS.** It is surprising, but no mention of MOTIVE is given. It simply means anyone who teaches the word of GOD in error. You will recall Paul fought it out with Peter in open assembly. At that point, Peter himself was a false teacher. Peter was totally sincere, and Paul did

not JUDGE PETER IN THAT MANNER. HE JUDGED HIM BY SCRIPTURE. As soon as the error was detected, Peter bowed his knee to the TRUTH. That is also the mark of a true Son of God, for that soul, when the error is proven out by Scripture, will acknowledge the mistake and ask God for forgiveness.

The root word of false prophets covers the main officers of the church: apostles, pastors, teachers and evangelists. Jesus says they come in **SHEEP'S CLOTHING**. Who are the sheep? Are not all Christians called sheep? Are they not part of the sheepfold? Is not Christ the TRUE SHEPHERD? John 10:1-28 makes it very clear that the **SHEEPFOLD IS THE ENTIRE BODY OF CHRIST UPON EARTH**. The false prophets are PSEUDO CHRISTIANS, posing as the real thing, posing as authentic, born again Christians who are UPHOLDING Jesus Christ. They look like, speak like and act like AUTHENTIC CHRISTIANS. You cannot detect they are false except by very close examination of what they teach compared to Scripture. It should also be pointed out that the **VAST MAJORITY OF FALSE TEACHERS ARE NOT AWARE THEY ARE FALSE TEACHERS**. The many who stood before Christ rejected WERE NOT AWARE THEY WERE IN FACT FALSE TEACHERS. To themselves and others they were sincere, dedicated men of God. They were in fact DUPES OF SATAN, BUT NEVER REALIZED IT. That is the nature of deception. They had a doctrine that was 99% accurate, but the 1% they left out damned them forever. This is not to say that there are not deliberate false teachers, such as Luciferian plants who have come into the Church to destroy it.

Do not make the mistake of thinking that false prophets are easily identified, for they are not. False doctrine blends right into correct doctrine. These false doctrines ARE EMBRACED BY THE ENTIRE CHURCH as correct doctrine. In other words, the vast majority of Christendom will embrace and accept the lies of Satan and will **REFUTE THE TRUTH ITSELF AS BEING FALSE**. That is why Christ said that a little leaven leavens the entire Body of Christ.

Christ said the vast majority of Christians will be rejected. They claimed they entered the New Covenant, but never did, for they come into the "sheepfold" via "some other way", which is the WIDE GATE AND BROAD WAY, A SATANIC CREATION, A FABRICATION, A DELUSION. Only the few will find the real truth. Christ said the many would travel the broad way because the true way was hard, difficult and not easy at all. There would be anguish of soul, great pressure, and it would be anything but pleasant. The false prophets would label THE TRUE WAY a form of "works" or "legalism" of some type, the opposite of GRACE and FAITH. The broad way by contrast is easy, and it appeals to the carnal nature of man. It would be fabricated in such a way as to appear totally correct scripturally. It would use all the right words, but the words would mean something different than what Christ intended.

That is exactly what Christ is telling us with the word "BECAUSE". The word "because" is 'hoti' and it means **BECAUSE OF THAT, FOR THAT REASON OR WHY**. The vast majority will reject the true way that leads to "life" because it is a route of hardship, **WHICH HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH WORKS OR ANY FORM OF LEGALISM WHATSOEVER**. One of the primary methods Satan uses to keep people from walking the narrow way is by branding it A FORM OF WORKS, which of course it is not. By redefining faith and grace, along with repentance and works, Satan keeps the many from entering in, BECAUSE THE DEFINITIONS OF THOSE WORDS ARE CHANGED BY FALSE THEOLOGY TO MAKE SURE THE NARROW WAY IS EXCLUDED AS A PROPER WAY TO SALVATION. IT IS THE PERFECT DECEPTION, THE WORK OF A SUPERNATURAL MIND. We have then a clear-cut division set before us by the Lord Jesus Christ:



**WIDE GATE  
BROAD WAY  
EASY, FLAT, NO OBSTACLE  
NO TROUBLE, NO PROBLEMS  
THE MANY  
SOME OTHER WAY**

**VS.**

**STRAIT GATE  
NARROW WAY  
HARD, STEEP, DIFFICULT  
FULL OF ANGUISH, PRESSURE  
THE FEW  
THE DOOR**

These ways are then clearly delineated by Christ and **NO ONE** could mistake what Christ said. We could *ignore* what He said, we can claim He did not mean what He said, we can claim by theology that it was all meant for Israel and does not apply to us, but **WE CANNOT SAY THAT HE DID NOT SAY IT. The final judge is not our theology or denominational bias, but is instead going to be the WORD OF GOD, AS INTERPRETED BY GOD, NOT THE CHURCH, NOT ANY DENOMINATION, NOR YOU OR I.**

You already know that the word “many” means **vast majority**, but what does the word “few” mean? The word “few” comes from ‘oligos’ and it means **PUNY, TINY, SMALL**. It is the perfect contrast to the word “many” and verifies that the vast majority of Christians end up in ruin.

***“for MANY ARE CALLED, but FEW ARE CHOSEN.”***

**(Matthew 22:14)**

***“Fear not LITTLE FLOCK, for it is your Father’s good pleasure to give you the kingdom.”***

**(Luke 12:32)**

The word “little” is ‘mikros’ and it means **LEAST, SMALL, TINY OR EXTREMELY TINY**. That is where we get our word MICRON, which means **ONE THOUSANDTH OF A MILLIMETER**. We could say **ONE IN A THOUSAND**. That is a very small number indeed! We should find a verification in the OLD TESTAMENT that indeed there are only a very small number of people who actually become part of the **TRUE FLOCK OF GOD**, and who **KNOW AND UNDERSTAND THE MYSTERY OF GOD**:

***“I know it is so of a truth:***

***but how should man be JUST with God?***

***If he (God) will contend with him,***

***HE CANNOT ANSWER HIM ONE OF A THOUSAND.”***

**(Job 9:2-3)**

This is a very telling verse of Scripture and it goes right to the heart of the matter: **HOW IS A MAN MADE JUST OR JUSTIFIED BEFORE THE LORD? WHAT IS THE REAL MYSTERY OF BEING JUSTIFIED BEFORE GOD? HOW IS IT DONE?** If God were to come down upon earth and **CONTEND WITH THOSE PROFESSING TO KNOW, ONLY ONE IN A THOUSAND COULD ANSWER GOD CORRECTLY**. One in a thousand is a very small

number: .001. The vast majority of Christians do not know the answer; they only think they know the answer. Speaking of man going to the grave, it says:

**“IF THERE BE A MESSENGER WITH HIM,  
AN INTERPRETER,  
ONE AMONG A THOUSAND,  
TO SHEW UNTO MAN HIS UPRIGHTNESS;**

***Then he (God) is GRACIOUS TO HIM, AND SAITH,  
DELIVER HIM FROM GOING DOWN TO THE PIT:  
I HAVE FOUND A RANSOM.***  
(Job 33:23-24)

This verse is equally telling and verifies that when Jesus used the term LITTLE, that He was borrowing from the Old Testament, ONE IN A THOUSAND. The messenger, the interpreter, is AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT OF GOD, AND IS THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THAT SAINT. If that soul is clothed in the AGAPE LOVE ROBES OF JESUS CHRIST, then God is merciful, and will deliver him from the pits of hell. That soul **FOUND A RANSOM. JESUS SAID SEEK UNTIL YOU FIND, KNOCK UNTIL THE DOOR IS OPENED. THE RANSOM WAS JESUS CHRIST.** That SOUL IS THEN **COVERED BY THE BLOOD;** WHICH WAS THE RANSOM PRICE PAID. That soul ALSO FOUND THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST, THE MYSTERY OF GOD, THE MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE. All others go to the pit.

***“BEHOLD, THIS HAVE I FOUND,  
SAITH THE PREACHER,  
COUNTING ONE BY ONE,  
TO FIND OUT THE ACCOUNT:***

***Which yet my soul seeketh, BUT I FIND NOT:***

**ONE MAN AMONG A THOUSAND  
HAVE I FOUND;**  
(Ecclesiastes 7:27-28)

Here we find yet another verification of this difficult saying. ONE MAN IN A THOUSAND CAN ANSWER CORRECTLY. That which the soul seeketh after, that which is so desperately wanted within the human soul is AGAPE LOVE. Without it the soul dies, is eternally separated from its Creator and goes to the pit. With AGAPE LOVE AS THE INTERPRETER, one finds the mercy of God. If this be the case, then HOW MUCH MORE SHOULD WE BE CONCERNED THAT WE FIND THE TRUTH AND UNLOCK THE MYSTERY OF GOD?

It is a hard thing to understand, but God calls many out of the world into the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Many are called INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST, THE SHEEPFOLD. Out of the many, God chooses THE FEW, CALLED OVERCOMERS. IT IS A SELECTION PROCESS, AND THIS PROCESS IS BASED UPON ONE THING: OBEDIENCE TO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST. It is not God's will that ANY perish; yet He knows ALL UNBELIEVERS WILL, AS WELL AS THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS. What is the dividing line? What causes God to select one and not another? We must at all cost find the Scriptural answer.

*“For ye see **YOUR CALLING, BRETHREN,**  
how that **NOT MANY** wise men after the flesh,  
**NOT MANY MIGHTY, NOT MANY NOBLE,**  
**ARE CALLED.**”  
(1 Corinthians 1:26)*

If not many are called, then how many? ONLY A FEW, ONE IN A THOUSAND. The call of the Gospel is no joke; it is the most serious of all callings. If you neglect the call, then you are in serious trouble for eternity. **DO NOT NEGLECT THE CALL OF GOD, GIVE ALL DILIGENCE TO IT**. The vast majority of Christians are going to eternal ruin. It is interesting to note that even the apocrypha says the same thing:

*“Because **ONLY A FEW WILL BE SAVED,**  
God created **TWO WORLDS,** instead of only one.  
As you say, **ONLY A FEW PEOPLE ARE RIGHTEOUS,**  
But there are **LARGE NUMBERS** of wicked people...” (2 Esdras 7:50-51)*

*It's the same with the judgment I have promised:  
**I WILL BE PLEASED WITH THE FEW WHO WILL BE**  
**SAVED,**  
because they are the ones who now praise and honour me and make my name known.  
**I WILL NOT BE SAD ABOUT THE LARGE NUMBER OF PEOPLE**  
**WHO WILL BE LOST...**” (2 Esdras 7:60-61)*

PLEASE READ THAT AND LET THE IMPACT OF THAT STATEMENT SEEP INTO YOUR BRAIN. ONLY A FEW PEOPLE WILL BE SAVED, ONLY A FEW PEOPLE EVER FIND THE AGAPE LOVE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD. AMONG HIS OWN PEOPLE, ONLY A FEW WILL ESCAPE. THE OTHERS, WHO WERE DISOBEDIENT, DID NOT MAKE IT. That is strange indeed, for I never met a Christian that was not going to heaven, and I never went into a church that was not preaching the truth. SOMEONE IS IN RANK DECEPTION. Mankind does not respond to such negative news. In order to package Jesus Christ and sell Him to the masses, the false prophets must make Him palatable to the vast majority, so the NEGATIVE COMMANDS, AND THE NEGATIVE CONFIRMATIONS GIVEN IN SCRIPTURE WILL BE ELIMINATED OR CONCEALED. The ESSENTIAL ELEMENTS (ALL NEGATIVE) that lead

to authentic regeneration and union with Christ are done away with VIA THEOLOGY AND DOCTRINE.

In order for the false prophets to claim that one does NOT NEED TO DO ANYTHING HARD, OR THAT IT IS FULL OF OBSTACLES AND FULL OF MENTAL AGONY AND PRESSURE UPON THE SOUL, they must come up with a THEOLOGY with underlying doctrines that TOTALLY CONTRADICT THE SAYINGS OF JESUS. If Jesus says something is hard, they will explain it away and it becomes easy. If Jesus says salvation is a long process, they will claim it is done INSTANTLY. **What ever** Jesus says, THEY WILL CONTRADICT IT, BUT THAT CONTRADICTION WILL NOT BE EASY TO FIND. It is embedded deep within their doctrine and theology, a master counterfeit from Satan.

If you think this concerns only Christian cults, think again. These false doctrines will embed themselves into every denomination of the Body of Christ, from the fundamentalists all the way to the rankest of rank liberals. With one accord, a **FALSE GOSPEL OF WHAT CONSTITUTES SALVATION WILL BE BROUGHT INTO BEING AND GO UNDETECTED BY THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS**. The warnings in Scripture do include obvious cult groups, but their doctrinal errors are EASILY DETECTED, AND HAVE BEEN DETECTED BY THE CHURCH AT LARGE. Thus we have many books on the market EXPOSING CULT GROUPS. But Christ, Paul and Peter warned of ANOTHER DOCTRINE, A DOCTRINE THAT HAS TO DO WITH SALVATION ITSELF, WOULD INFILTRATE THE MAINSTREAM CHURCH, AND BE ACCEPTED BY THE CHURCH AS TRUTH, AND SEEP MANY MILLIONS INTO ETERNAL RUIN.

This false Gospel of how one gets saved would look, sound, and feel totally correct, and would be backed up by masses of Scripture. It would rest upon REINTERPRETATION OF WHAT THE WORDS MEAN. Incredible though it may sound, the false prophets, to prove their theology, WILL USE THE VERY DEFINITIONS OF THE WORDS THEMSELVES TO PROVE THEY WERE RIGHT! In other words, if you went to a lexicon, or expository dictionary, WHAT THEY CLAIMED IT MEANT WOULD BE CORRECT! Yet it would be rank error. How is this possible? It becomes possible by OMISSION OF ALL QUALIFIERS Jesus Christ GAVE US. What they do is **DISREGARD ANY AND ALL QUALIFICATIONS CHRIST GAVE US TO PROVE WHAT HE MEANT BY A GIVEN WORD**. They would throw out all of the “IFS, ANDS OR BUTS”, OR ANY CONDITIONAL PHRASES CHRIST GAVE US TO SHOW US THE TRUE MEANINGS.

An example of this would be if you told a friend the following: “I am coming over to your house today, **IF** I get all of my work done.” Your friend ONLY HEARS WHAT he/she wants to hear: “I AM COMING OVER TO YOUR HOUSE TODAY.” The qualifier, the **IF** is disregarded. It is not EVEN HEARD AT ALL. THE MIND FILTERS IT OUT. You do not get your work done, and so you do not go over to your friend’s house. About 8 pm your friend calls you very irate and upset at you for not showing up. “I waited around all day for you to come and you never showed up! How dare you!” You can explain until you are blue in the face that you QUALIFIED THAT STATEMENT BY THE WORD ‘**IF**’. The **QUALIFIER DETERMINES THE MEANING OF YOUR STATEMENT!!**

## **JESUS QUALIFIED ALL STATEMENTS**

## CONCERNING SALVATION.

He qualified what He meant by the words **FAITH, GRACE, WORKS, CONVERSION, REGENERATION, BELIEVE, etc.** If you **OMIT THE QUALIFIER** you **MISS THE MEANINGS**. The false prophets will **OMIT THE QUALIFIERS TOTALLY**. They will use the same words, they will speak of grace, faith, belief, works, legalism, conversion, regeneration, and all the others, **BUT WILL OMIT ALL KEY QUALIFIERS** from their definitions, and by doing so, **WILL DEVELOP AN ENTIRE NEW GOSPEL OF SALVATION**. That Gospel will look totally authentic in all respects. It will sound right, look right, feel right, and even check out in Scripture! **ONLY WHEN YOU FIND OUT HOW CHRIST QUALIFIED HIS MEANINGS DO YOU DETECT THEIR ERROR, AND WHEN YOU DETECT IT, IT WILL BECOME OBVIOUS TO YOU. It is a method Satan uses to KEEP PEOPLE FROM COMING TO CHRIST**

## IN TRUTH.

Peter gave us a warning we need to look at very closely concerning these false prophets that look like, sound like and act like real authentic Christian preachers, teachers and evangelists. Their theology and doctrines will be a master counterfeit!

*“But there were false prophets also among the people (of Israel),  
**EVEN AS THERE SHALL BE**  
**FALSE TEACHERS AMONG YOU (THE CHURCH),**  
who **PRIVILY**  
shall bring in **DAMNABLE HERESIES**  
**EVEN DENYING THE LORD THAT BOUGHT THEM,**  
and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And  
**MANY (THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS)**  
**SHALL FOLLOW THEIR PERNICIOUS WAYS;***

*by reason of whom*

**THE WAY**  
**OF TRUTH**

**shall be EVIL SPOKEN OF.”**  
(2 Peter 2:1-2)

We are going to break this down to a phrase by phrase study because of the importance of what Peter is warning us about. This short verse is an elaboration of what Jesus referred to when He

spoke of the wolves in sheep's clothing, the pseudo-Christians, and **THE WAY OF THE TRUTH**.

## **1. "EVEN AS THERE SHALL BE FALSE TEACHERS AMONG YOU".**

This is precisely what Christ told us all to be aware of. These are the wolves that come into the sheepfold. Notice it does not say THEY MIGHT COME OR COULD COME. **THEY SHALL COME**. It is an imperative prophecy. The Church will be infiltrated by **FALSE CHRISTIAN LEADERS WITH A FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINE. THEY WILL BE WITHIN THE CHURCH. BECAUSE THE VAST MAJORITY WILL FOLLOW AFTER THESE FALSE SALVATION DOCTRINES, THEY WILL BE POPULAR LEADERS, WELL ACCEPTED AND WELL ENTRENCHED IN THE CHRISTIAN COMMUNITY.** They will be wolves, but they will look for all the world to be authentic and powerhouse Christian leaders.

They are in the Church, among the Christians, Satan's agents of destruction. **The majority of them will not be aware they are Satan's agents, but will be sincere and dedicated Christians who have embraced a false theology themselves as truth, and who will then propagate it to others.** If you went up to any of them and accused them of being false Christians, they would be deeply offended and hurt by that accusation. **A person in deception is not aware of it.** These "Christians" that Peter mentions are **LEADERS WITHIN THEIR DENOMINATIONS, BECAUSE THEY ARE THE TEACHERS.** That word means teacher, preacher, evangelist. The word for "false teachers" is 'pseudodidaskalos' and it means **ANYONE WHO PROPAGATES FALSE DOCTRINE, DOCTRINE WITH ERROR IN IT, OR ERRONEOUS DOCTRINE, A FALSE TEACHER.** Their motives are not of concern, only that they teach error.

The word "among" is 'en' and it means **WITHIN THE GROUP, WITHIN THE BODY OF CHRIST.** This is not an outside attack upon the Church; this is an insidious attack by Satan from **WITHIN THE CHURCH ITSELF.** Because we are speaking of the Church, then these false teachers will **RISE UP WITHIN THEIR DENOMINATIONS TO LEVELS OF LEADERSHIP AND THEIR TEACHINGS WILL BE ACCEPTED BY THE VAST MAJORITY OF PEOPLE.** Their teachings will be a counterfeit, but not easily detected.

Ask an FBI OR TREASURY agent about the detection of COUNTERFEIT MONEY. In one recent case overseas, counterfeit American money was found that was almost impossible TO DETECT. It took Treasury agents in labs to detect the difference. In most cases the difference can only be detected **BY VERY CAREFUL EXAMINATION AGAINST A STANDARD KNOWN TO BE TRUE.** In currency, the counterfeit is held up against **THE KNOWN TRUE BILL, AND THE DIFFERENCES CAN THEN BE DETECTED.** You compare **WITH A KNOWN AUTHENTIC ITEM TO DETECT THE FALSE.** A gemologist studies a perfect diamond in order to compare other stones to it for grading purposes. **THERE HAS TO BE A PERFECT STANDARD FROM WHICH TO JUDGE FROM.**

As the Church age progressed, **LESS AND LESS PEOPLE WOULD IN REALITY BE REGENERATED,** and therefore less and less people **WOULD HAVE THE STANDARD OF TRUE AGAPE LOVE BY WHICH TO MEASURE THE TRUTH BY.** **THE TRUTH THEN BEGINS TO BE CROWDED OUT BY LIES AND DECEPTION, WHICH IS EMBRACED BY THE VAST MAJORITY FOR THEY DO NOT UNDERSTAND OR KNOW WHAT THE REAL TRUTH IS.** The real truth is then branded as a lie. Apostasy works in that manner.

THERE IS A STANDARD, AND THAT STANDARD IS AGAPE LOVE. Nor are we speaking of money here, but of human souls. We are not speaking of expert criminals but of the most diabolical intelligence ever created from the hands of God. This creature that fell from the grace of heaven now walks to and fro over the whole earth. He hates every single human soul with a passion we cannot begin to comprehend; yet he poses as an angel of light, as though he loves man and only wants the best for him. We are going to take this vastly intelligent creature called Satan and pit him AGAINST each one of us. Keep in mind he is eternal, and has had thousands of years to figure out and then fool the human mind and soul. He understands all of our weaknesses, all of our nature. He knows how to bait and switch. He knows how to snare us in a multitude of traps. We now pit this super intelligent Christ hater, this human hater, who has supernatural powers, against us. Question:

**DO YOU THINK HE IS CAPABLE OF COMING UP WITH A COUNTERFEIT GOSPEL OF SALVATION THAT IS SO CLOSE TO THE ORIGINAL IT WOULD NOT BE DETECTED BY THE VAST MAJORITY OF SOULS SEEKING HEAVEN?**

Your answer had best be YES. Satan can and has produced a multitude of false religions, and within the Church of Jesus Christ a multitude of false theologies, which can be called BROAD ROAD THEOLOGIES. These theologies all use the correct terminology, the correct phrases and words, even the correct meanings many times to those words. The name of Christ is freely used and upheld, and even the words of Christ are used freely and with great vigor. There are ONLY TWO WAYS TO SPOT THE ERROR:

- 1. Either all or some of the QUALIFIERS ARE OMITTED, or***
- 2. The teachings will CONTRADICT what Jesus clearly said or BOTH WILL BE TRUE.***

Satan is the master deceiver of the whole world. He loves religion for he invented it, for he knows that man has a “spiritual” nature. True Christianity is not a religion; it is a changed heart. Religion is a vast system created by Satan to dupe the world into many different roads or pathways THAT APPEAR TO BE leading to heaven, therefore **EXCLUDING the ONLY NAME UNDER HEAVEN BY WHICH WE MUST BE SAVED**. For those who know Jesus Christ is the ONLY way to heaven, Satan must come up with theologies and doctrines that **SOMEHOW BYPASS THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY**, because that is the **ONLY** way into the New Covenant. Satan will then muster up all the cunning he has within to fabricate a Gospel that looks 100% correct to trap all Christians. God evidently allows such a thing as a screening process to obtain the **FEW OR LITTLE FLOCK**.

In order to bypass the strait gate and narrow way, Satan will have to develop a theology that would either tell people they were on the correct way when they were not, or as an alternative, he could develop a theology that would totally bypass it altogether. The various remarks of Christ, Paul and Peter imply that the biggest thrust of Satan will be to **BYPASS THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY TOTALLY, IF POSSIBLE, AND IF HE CANNOT, TO REDEFINE WHAT IT MEANS SO THAT A SEEKING SOUL WOULD THINK HE/SHE WAS ON THE NARROW WAY WHEN THEY WERE NOT**. He will do so by altering the definition of FAITH, and with this new definition he will be able to declare the strait gate and narrow way as a form of WORKS OR LEGALISM, AND THAT IT IS IN OPPOSITION TO GRACE AND FAITH. He will redefine the definition of works and EXPAND IT TO COVER THAT WHICH

IT DOES NOT COVER, and at the same time redefine faith to make it EXPAND TO AREAS IT DOES NOT COVER.

He will do it via the false teachers, who will infiltrate the Church. Over a long period of time, they will work their leaven and leaven the entire Body of Christ. Both Jesus and Peter were most blunt: **THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS GO FOR THE NEW THEOLOGY.** These people infiltrate into the Body of Christ, into each denomination, and work their way into positions of power and trust. Peter is blunt: **THEY ARE TEACHERS (LEADERS) and THEY ARE AMONG THE BELIEVERS.** These leaders have come into the sheepfold **SOME OTHER WAY**, and they are the false shepherds, that have come to steal and destroy, for Christ was very blunt: **THE TRUE SHEPHERDS HAVE COME IN VIA THE DOOR.** They have come in by obedience to the commands of Christ, they have entered the strait gate, and walked the narrow way to find the living Jesus Christ.

## **2. “WHO PRIVILY SHALL BRING IN DAMNABLE HERESIES”**

Notice that it says they PRIVILY bring in damnable heresies. A heresy that is damnable is any heresy that if EMBRACED AND BELIEVED TRUE, IT WILL LEAD TO YOUR UTTER RUIN. The word for “damnable” is ‘apolenia’ and it means **UTTER RUIN OR LOSS, OR ETERNAL DAMNATION, PERDITION.** The root of the word is ‘appollumi’ and it means **TO DESTROY FULLY, TO PERISH.** Peter is also very direct about where in church doctrine the false teachers will strike: **SALVATION DOCTRINE.** That is why these heresies are damnable if embraced! They are **ERROR FILLED DOCTRINES ON SALVATION, THAT IF BELIEVED, LEAD YOU INTO ETERNAL RUIN.** We are talking of the eternal destiny of millions of human souls! It stands to reason that Satan is going to oppose Christ on the **ONE WAY** CHRIST GAVE US TO ENTER IN TO UNION WITH HIM.

# **THE ENTIRE ATTACK WILL COME AGAINST THE NARROW WAY!**

These teachers who **APPEAR** to be **AUTHENTIC CHRISTIAN LEADERS IN ALL RESPECTS**, will bring in A GROUP OF HERESIES THAT SWEEP THEMSELVES AND MILLIONS OF THEIR FOLLOWERS INTO ETERNAL LOSS FROM WHICH THEY CAN NEVER EXTRICATE THEMSELVES. These teachers will slowly introduce a whole new doctrinal concept of salvation and how one obtains it. To alter these doctrines will take time and the use of slow but sure **REDEFINITION OF TERMS.** The definitions of faith, grace, works, legalism, repentance, conversion and regeneration will one by one be changed over a period of time. The changes will be small, argued over, debated and finally become the **ACCEPTED TRUE DEFINITION.** These are the issues of salvation. If these issues are not properly understood, you are in serious trouble, for Christ demanded **ALL ENTER IN THE SAME WAY, WITH NO EXCEPTIONS LISTED WHATEVER.**

It cannot be over stressed that Satan needs only a comparatively small number of false teachers to turn the majority of Christian leadership into propagators of false doctrine. All he needs to accomplish is to manufacture a gospel so close to the original that the pastors, teachers and evangelists who attend seminary embrace what is being taught there! This is why **SINCERITY** has nothing to do with whether a person comes to salvation or not. It is not that the vast majority



of false teachers are not sincere; it is that they are under DECEPTION. Thus their ethics, their morality, their standings in the community may be impeccable; yet are they still blind leaders leading the blind, and they all fall into the ditch.

The word for “privily bring in” is vital to understand in our search for the real truth. The word is ‘pareisago’ and it means to **INTRODUCE SECRETLY, WITHOUT DETECTION. TO INTRODUCE SURREPTITIOUSLY, TO BRING IN ALONG SIDE.** Do you understand the ramifications of this? IT MEANS THAT THESE DAMNABLE HERESIES ARE BROUGHT IN TO THE SHEEPFOLD, THE BODY OF CHRIST, THE WHOLE CHURCH, **ALL DENOMINATIONS** WITHOUT ANY OF THEM DETECTING IT! It is **NOT DETECTED WHATSOEVER** by the Church at large.

Peter said these false teachers would come in via great STEALTH AND CUNNING. Because they are under a deception, these teachers sincerely believe in their own minds that what they are teaching is the TRUTH, and they will use Scripture to back it up! As Christ said there was only one way to heaven, then we know for a fact that all of these false doctrines MUST AND WILL ZERO IN ON THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. Over the years, the entire Church will redefine all the central key doctrines of salvation BUT THEY WILL NOT EVEN BE AWARE THEY HAVE DONE IT! Whole new definitions, whole new concepts will be developed to tell us what it means to be a Christian, how one obtains salvation, what regeneration means, etc. This activity paves the way for the final grand delusion, which sweeps the Church into the arms of the antichrist system. The Church will embrace the antichrist, just as the Church embraced Hitler when he came to power in Germany.

We know that the many stand before Christ rejected because they never had a true union with Him, even though they were positive in their own minds they did have a union. At that time, and not before, do they realize they were fooled, dupes of a satanic deception so clever that only a supernatural mind of vast intelligence could mastermind it.

The word “heresies” comes from the word ‘hairesis’ and it means **CHOICE, TO CHOOSE, TO MAKE A CHOICE (FROM SELF).** That is a SELF WILLED OPINION. The false teachers read the Word of God, and in their CARNALITY, THEIR FLESH, THEIR OWN EARTHLY WISDOM AND EARTHLY KNOWLEDGE DECIDE WHAT THIS OR THAT VERSE OF SCRIPTURE MEANS. They interpret the Word of God totally apart from the Holy Spirit, but they claim their interpretations ARE SPIRIT LED. Their theology is an **INTELLECTUAL THEOLOGY, A CARNAL THEOLOGY, A RATIONALIZED THEOLOGY, A THEOLOGY OF THE SENSE MAN, THE SOUL MAN, OF THE LOWER MAN.** Their theology will appear correct to the carnal mind, to the sense mind. It will have a form of godliness, but it will not have the power of the Holy Spirit behind it. It will be an **EARTHLY GOSPEL.**

It is also important to realize that this theology will be developed over a long period of time. These self-willed opinions would then be promulgated via biblical commentaries, research papers, tapes, videos and books that would spread throughout the entire Body of Christ. Introduced first in the seminaries, they rapidly become accepted by the vast majority of people. Because these false teachers are leaders and “learned men” of the cloth, which are upheld as ‘great theologians’, everyone rushes to embrace these ‘new illuminations’. Soon they become established traditions, and traditions become TRUTH. Many people thought the world was flat, and embraced it as a TRUTH, even though the evidence was contrary to that position. All of these theologies would be a product of the human mind, very rational, factually very accurate, but wholly devoid of **SPIRITUAL TRUTH**. At its very foundation it would be a work of Satan and

his demons, a work that is a hideous plot against all those souls who are attempting to find out the truth behind life itself.

***“For ye are yet CARNAL: for whereas there is among you ENVYING, AND STRIFE, AND DIVISIONS, ARE YE NOT CARNAL, AND WALK AS MEN?”***

**(1 Corinthians 3:3)**

***“But if ye have BITTER ENVYING AND STRIFE IN YOUR HEARTS, GLORY NOT, AND LIE NOT AGAINST THE TRUTH.***

***THIS WISDOM DESCENDETH***

***NOT FROM ABOVE,***

***BUT IS EARTHLY, SENSUAL, DEVILISH.***

**(James 3:14-15)**

Is this not now the position of denominational Christianity? They openly war upon each other, even in their own denominations. They war upon each other within each church. They have splits, divisions and factions. Each denomination claims that it is holding forth THE TRUTH, THE WAY, THE LIGHT. The vast majority of these so-called “truths” totally opposes and contradicts each other. Has the Holy Spirit gone insane? Is the Holy Spirit divided against Himself? Is God a schizophrenic? Has the Godhead left the Church or has the Church left the Godhead? Do these multitudes of opposing truths come from the God of harmony or from the GOD OF CONFUSION?

The Scripture is very blunt, very plain. A ten year old can interpret Scripture correctly by just reading what it says and accepting it for what it says. THIS WISDOM IS NOT FROM GOD ABOVE, BUT IS EARTHLY, SENSUAL, DEVILISH. It is carnal, of the flesh, of the sense and soul man. It is DEVOID OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, FOR IT IS A MAZE OF CONFUSION, CONTRADICTION, WARFARE, AND FACTIONS ALL OF WHICH PORTRAY UTTER REBELLION AGAINST GOD. Each human mind interprets as “it will”, and so each Church body becomes filled with heresies and strifes. These men then draw off others after them and form denominations within denominations, factions within factions, and it starts all over again.

The word “earthly” is ‘epigios’ and it means **OF THE EARTH, OF THE WORLD, WORLDLY, OF THE FLESH, CARNAL, OF THE MIND, OF THE INTELLECT**. The word for “sensual” is ‘psuchikos’ and it means **THE FIVE SENSES**. It is wisdom of man, of the intelligence of mankind. It refers to the soul man, the lower man, the unregenerate man, a soul destitute of agape love. It does not have the illumination of the Holy Spirit, it does not know or recognize the spirit of agape love, the spirit of Christ. The word for “devilish” is ‘daimoniodes’, and it means **DEVIL LIKE, FROM DEMONS**. The human mind is under the dominion of Satan, and that is what Peter is referring to when he speaks of these heresies. **They are from the self, which is dominated by Satan. James put the finger right on the source.**

The Holy Spirit cannot oppose Himself, and thus there cannot be opposing doctrine IN TRUTH. God the Father, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit have unity, and their unity springs from their

essence of agape love, and from this inner light flows their unity in truth and in doctrine. We will examine this issue much later in this series.

### 3. “EVEN DENYING THE LORD THAT BOUGHT THEM”

The word “denying” is ‘arneomai’ and it means **TO CONTRADICT, TO REFUSE OR TO DISAVOW**. It is important to understand that one can UPHOLD JESUS CHRIST AND AT THE SAME TIME CONTRADICT WHAT HE SAYS. One can uphold Jesus Christ and still refuse His commands or sayings. One can uphold Jesus Christ and still disavow His clear cut commands. These false teachers are WITHIN THE MAINSTREAM DENOMINATIONS. In order to remain there, they cannot OPENLY DISAVOW JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF. To do so would bring immediate expulsion from the Church, because even with today’s rank apostasy the main beliefs in Christ as Messiah still remain. If one of these false teachers were to stand in front of a large audience and UTTERLY DISAVOW JESUS CHRIST AS MESSIAH, AS CHRIST, HE WOULD BE TOSSED OUT AT ONCE. This is not the only type of disavowing Peter is speaking of here, although it does include it. He is speaking of leaders who UPHOLD JESUS CHRIST TO THE MAXIMUM, but who **CONTRADICT, REFUSE, OR DISAVOW WHAT HE CLEARLY SAYS ONE MUST DO TO BE SAVED! REMEMBER, THIS IS SPEAKING OF “DAMNABLE HERESIES.”**

We have absolute confirmation that this is true, because Peter says the VAST MAJORITY WITHIN THE ENTIRE CHURCH OF CHRIST ARE SWEEPED INTO THIS NEW SALVATION DOCTRINE. They will not detect this heresy, to the contrary, they **WILL EMBRACE IT, AND PROCLAIM THAT THIS FALSE SALVATION MESSAGE IS THE TRUTH, AND THAT ANYONE WHO SAYS OTHERWISE IS A LIAR!** The delusion here is powerful, and God allows it to fall upon every human heart that is not obedient to the commands of Jesus Christ. This is what “privily” means. **IT IS TOTALLY UNDETECTED.** This is not a warning about cult groups, or other ‘fringe’ groups in Christianity. This is a direct warning that the CENTRAL CORE DOCTRINES OF SALVATION WILL BE PERVERTED AND TWISTED, AND THE CHURCH WILL EMBRACE THOSE PERVERSIONS AND TWISTINGS AS TRUTH.

Christian cult groups are easily detected by anyone with a passing understanding of true doctrine, proven by the fact that there are a large number of books on the market warning of Christian and also non-Christian cult groups. Peter is warning of something **FAR MORE SERIOUS, FAR MORE SUBTLE**. It will be devastating to the entire Church, which is **WHY THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS STAND BEFORE CHRIST REJECTED.**

The root for the word “privily bring in” is ‘para’ and it means **FROM BESIDE, IN THE VICINITY OF, CLOSE TO, ALONG SIDE**. It means that they **LOOK ALIKE AND SOUND ALIKE, BUT THEY ARE NOT ALIKE. THEY WILL BE CLOSE, SO CLOSE AS TO BE ‘ALONG SIDE’**. They are in fact master counterfeits, a fabrication, fables dressed up to look for all the world LIKE THE TRUTH. Their theologies and their doctrines all contain a deadly error, an error that only the FEW who do as Christ commanded will detect. One of the English words to describe “privily” was “surreptitiously”. It is defined by Random House as “obtained; done or made, etc. **BY STEALTH, SECRET OR UNAUTHORIZED; CLANDESTINE**. 3. obtained by **SUBREPTION**.”

The word “subreption” is most interesting: “...common law. **A CONCEALMENT OF THE PERTINENT FACTS IN A PETITION, AS FOR THE DISPENSATION OF FAVOR, THAT IN CERTAIN CASES**

# **NULLIFIES THE GRANT.”**

This is exactly what Peter is saying the false teachers do. **THEY BRING IN A TOTAL “LOOK ALIKE” SALVATION MESSAGE THAT CONCEALS CERTAIN FACTS THE BELIEVERS MUST KNOW FOR THEM TO BE GRANTED THE FAVOR OF SALVATION.** The concealment of these facts **NULLIFIES the NEW COVENANT UNDER THESE CONDITIONS.** God cannot grant the favor of REGENERATION. He cannot grant MERCY. He cannot grant CLEMENCY. He cannot grant HEAVEN. The reason He cannot is that the **FALSE PROPHETS CONCEAL THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.** Their theology and their doctrine **CONCEAL THE ONLY WAY TO HEAVEN THERE IS, WHICH NULLIFIES THE GRANTING OF ETERNAL LIFE.**

The soul that is seeking God must find the strait gate, and then **MUST ENTER IT AND WALK THE NARROW WAY.** Satan is well aware of this **ONLY** entrance to heaven. He is also aware that the vast majority of people are **FOLLOWERS AND NOT LEADERS.** He is all too aware that the majority of people **DO NOT, AND WILL NOT THINK FOR THEMSELVES.** They will allow **OTHERS** to think for them. Who then is Satan going to go after? **THE LEADERS!** If he can get the leaders duped into believing this false theology, and they are the leaders of their respective denominations, then Satan knows the general lay people will simply “go along” with whatever **THEIR WELL RESPECTED LEADERS HAND OUT AS TRUTH.** It is part of human nature.

What good is it going to do you when you stand before Jesus Christ **REJECTED?** You can say, “I was obedient to my pastor (teacher, preacher, evangelist), I **BELIEVED WHAT HE TOLD ME WAS THE TRUTH!**” Do you realize what you are telling Jesus Christ by that remark? You are telling Him that you did not care enough about your own soul to seek the truth out **FOR YOURSELF, AND YOU COULD NOT BE BOTHERED TO FIND IT ON YOUR OWN.** The Bible is very blunt about leaning upon man for your understanding. The Holy Spirit is to guide you into the **WHOLE TRUTH.** A teacher is only a **GUIDE,** to help you along **YOUR OWN PERSONAL WALK. HE IS NOT YOUR TRUTH.** The truth that “sets you free” is a truth only **YOU** can discover for yourself! If you simply accept and embrace what others hand you, you are destined for eternal loss!

The “many” stand before Christ in utter shock and disbelief that they are going to be sent away for ever, with no hope, no mercy and no recourse. The false teachers concealed the **FACTS OF THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY FROM THEM,** facts that they **HAD TO KNOW AND COMPLY WITH.** There is a saying that goes “ignorance of the law is no excuse.” Likewise **IGNORANCE OF THE FACTS IS NO EXCUSE FOR ANY HUMAN SOUL.** God gave you a Bible, He told you to read it, to study it and to understand enough to comply with the requirements for salvation. If you do not think your own soul worthy of salvation, **THEN DISOBEY THOSE COMMANDS AND GOD WILL GRANT YOU YOUR WISH FOR ETERNAL RUIN.** This is not funny, this is not a joke, this business is more serious than **ANYTHING YOU HAVE EVER UNDERGONE IN YOUR ENTIRE LIFE.**

As the new covenant is a legally binding contract that God gave to man through the work of Christ, it has legal standing. All those who wish to enter in must do so via the requirements (parameters) laid down by Jesus Christ. The false prophets will then seek to conceal certain facts from the soul that is seeking entrance to heaven through Christ. Satan and his false teachers

MUST COME UP WITH A THEOLOGY AND DOCTRINE THAT IN REALITY DENIES ENTRANCE INTO THE NEW COVENANT, BUT WHICH TELLS EVERYONE THEY HAVE ENTERED IN. Read that again if you do not understand it. A look alike gospel has but one purpose: **TO FOOL YOU INTO THINKING YOU HAVE ENTERED IN WHEN IN FACT YOU HAVE NOT. IT BECOMES A SUBSTITUTE FOR THE REAL THING.**

Peter is very blunt: these false teachers have a gospel of salvation that is so close to the truth that it **IS NOT DETECTED** by the vast numbers of denominational Christians as being false. This false salvation message will SWEEP THE ENTIRE CHURCH, FROM THE FUNDAMENTALISTS TO THE LIBERALS. Their doctrines WILL BLATANTLY CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST AND HIS COMMANDS, BUT IT WILL APPEAR AS THOUGH THEY UPHOLD HIM AND HIS COMMANDS TOTALLY! Their fabrication is a SURFACE THEOLOGY, A MIRROR IMAGE, BUT WHEN INSPECTED THE LIE WILL BE UNCOVERED. Their theology will “explain away” the necessity for any strait gate or narrow way. It will be done through GRACE AND FAITH.

*“But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse,  
deceiving,  
and being deceived.”  
(2 Timothy 3:13)*

Notice that these evil men ARE THEMSELVES UNDER A DECEPTION. Grasp it please: THEY ARE NOT AWARE THAT THEY ARE IN DECEPTION. They do not consider themselves “evil” men. The word for evil here is ‘ponerous’ and it means **HURTFUL IN EFFECT**. In other words, hurtful in influence. It is not a reference to their character or their ethics or moral behavior. It is a reference to THEOLOGY AND DOCTRINE, WHICH INFLUENCES MILLIONS OF SOULS AND SWEEPS THEM AWAY INTO RUIN. These people appear to be in all instances wonderful spirit filled Christian men, in positions of great leadership and influence. They are totally sincere, and totally dedicated. Their motives are not being questioned here, because only God can read their INNER HEART. They are under a deception, and **they labor for the Lord UNDER DECEPTION.**

To them and the church, their motives are pure and sincere. They are in love with the Lord and they think they are operating under the Lord’s authority and are being obedient. Jesus used the same word for evil in this verse:

*“If ye then, **BEING EVIL,**  
know how to give good gifts unto your children...”  
(Matthew 7:11)*

It is imperative to understand that Jesus is not referring to their ethical or moral character. He is not calling them thieves, robbers, murderers, etc. They are not criminals in the common sense of the word. They are moral, upright, decent people with families that love their children. Jesus calls them EVIL. What He is referring to here is about **HUMAN LOVE**. We will explore this in great depth in this series, but human love IS HURTFUL. It is branded EVIL by God. Mankind is “evil”

because their love does not match the divine love. The standard God uses to judge the human race is AGAPE LOVE.

The false teachers then embrace a false doctrine as truth, and they in turn propagate this doctrine via seminary training and then through the pulpits across the spectrum of Christianity. To us, as lay people, we would not view these men as “evil” at all, but instead as sincere and dedicated leaders. They are HONEST, SINCERE MEN WHO HAVE OBTAINED POSITIONS OF GREAT INFLUENCE AND POWER. On a human scale of human decency from 1-10 we would rate them 8-10! They are dedicated servants of the Lord, fulfilling the GREAT COMMISSION. They are positive their theologies and doctrines on salvation are 100% correct, or they could never do what they do. These people are not stupid souls; they are intelligent men, some of them brilliant, but **THEY ARE UNDER A DECEPTION.**

They refute Christ, they contradict Christ, they disavow WHAT HE COMMANDED, WHAT HE SAID. They develop a theology that “gets around” what Christ said. Their theology, and doctrinal statements, when carefully examined, **WILL ALWAYS REFUTE THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.** They do so via REINTERPRETATION OF WHAT CHRIST SAID. This interpretation will at the root level **ALWAYS STAND IN EXACT OPPOSITION TO WHAT JESUS CHRIST SAID.** For example, if Jesus said that the process of being saved is a journey, a process, a progression one makes that **leads to regeneration**; the false teachers will tell you that you obtain regeneration right away, and you make the journey, if any, IN UNION WITH CHRIST FROM THAT POINT ONWARD. If Jesus says the way to true regeneration is hard, full of pressure and agony of the soul; the false teachers will say that does not mean what it says, that the way is easy, simple, and has none of these things, all we need to do is make a sincere decision for Jesus, invite Him into our hearts, and we are saved, which is easy. If Jesus said that only a small group of people will be saved; they will say that the vast majority, if not everyone will be saved. If Jesus said you must die to obtain life; they will say that was just a symbolism, and Jesus did not really mean what He said, for He died for us, and we need not do so. If Jesus said pick up your cross and follow Him, they will say we need not do that, because Christ did it all for us. If Jesus said you must walk the narrow way, they will say that Jesus did it for us; we need not do it. If they admit to the fact of picking up the cross, or to the narrow way, they will claim we APPROPRIATE IT BY AN ACT OF FAITH, BY A SIMPLE ACT OF BELIEF, OR THEY WILL REDEFINE WHAT IT REALLY MEANS.

In other words, THEY CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST IN ALL THE KEY AREAS OF SALVATION. Whatever Christ stated as a truth, they will have a counter theology to prove Christ did not mean it. They will tell you that Christ did not mean that, and then espouse their demonic doctrines to prove it. If Christ said the true definition of FAITH is that faith which is a deep, abiding faith that allows you to walk the narrow way and have it tested by fire, they will say faith is a simple decision, a belief. Their entire theology is a counterfeit look alike that IN THE ROOT always opposes the PLAIN, SIMPLE, BLUNT, AND MULTIPLE STATEMENTS OF JESUS CHRIST. What Jesus Christ said, Jesus Christ meant. He also said YOU WOULD BE JUDGED BY THE VERY WORDS HE SPOKE IF YOU DID NOT OBEY WHAT HE SAID. The many bought into a theology of the false prophets that DENIED THE LORD THAT BOUGHT THEM.

Christ paid a terrible price to redeem the human race. He must have therefore felt the eternal destiny of your soul was very important. If the human soul is of such value to Jesus Christ, then do you not think HE WOULD MAKE THE WAY OF SALVATION ABSOLUTELY CLEAR, SO CLEAR IT COULD NOT BE A MATTER OF INTERPRETATION, BUT WOULD BE SO

OBVIOUS ANYONE COULD INTERPRET IT? So then the false prophets must find a way to REINTERPRET THAT SO IT LOOKS TOTALLY AUTHENTIC TO THE UNWARY BELIEVER. Their theology on the surface DOES NOT APPEAR AS A CONTRADICTION. It appears as absolutely correct UNTIL ONE STUDIES THEIR DOCTRINES. It ‘mirrors’ and ‘mimics’ what Christ commanded, yet it IS **DIAMETRICALLY OPPOSED TO WHAT HE COMMANDED**. That takes a supernatural and very diabolical mind to come up with such a master counterfeit.

A contradiction is a contradiction. Here a little and there a little. The leaven gets mixed into the truth, and finally the whole loaf is fully leavened, ripe for the fiery harvest of Christ. The false teachers advance with total secrecy a doctrine so subtle, so insidious that it sweeps millions into eternal ruin. These sincere and dedicated men of the cloth become the unwitting dupes of Satan and then proceed to fabricate one error after another. What starts as a small error grows into a major heresy. It is important to remember that these false teachers uphold Jesus Christ. They acknowledge He is the Messiah. They uphold many cardinal doctrines of the faith. Satan uses this to throw the unwary off guard. The one area that Satan must destroy with false teachings is the strait gate and the narrow way. It is in this area that He sweeps in for a full frontal attack.

It is the upholding of Christ and many key doctrines that **ALLOWS** these false teachers to appear as **ANGELS OF LIGHT, SINCERE CHRISTIANS, A PART OF THE SHEEPFOLD!** When they then come out with their own interpretations as to “what the Scripture means” the vast majority of the Church accept it without question. This is exactly as Satan intends.

#### **4. “AND MANY SHALL FOLLOW THEIR PERNICIOUS WAYS”**

The word “many” here is ‘polus’ and it means **MUCH, LARGELY, ABUNDANT, GREAT MANY, PLENTEOUS, MOSTLY ALL, VAST NUMBERS OR VAST MAJORITY**. I repeat that for **EMPHASIS**. It means exactly what it says! The vast majority of the Body of Christ, the sheepfold, is going to follow after these damnable heresies of the false prophets. Allow that to sink in for full impact. These false doctrines are going to be embraced **BY ALMOST THE ENTIRE BODY OF CHRIST AS TRUE SALVATION DOCTRINES**. It also means far more.

Since the vast majority embrace these false salvation doctrines, that means **THE FALSE TEACHERS ARE VERY POPULAR, AND HAVE VAST MINISTRIES. THESE PSEUDO-CHRISTIANS AND THEIR FALSE DOCTRINES BECOME THE “IN THING”**. These false leaders, by their very popularity and huge followings would then sweep millions into eternal ruin. They would be popular and well accepted, even demanded as speakers and lecturers on the Christian circuits. Because we now know that Christianity uses movies, videos, tapes, books, newspapers, crusades and entertainment to get the message out, then these “popular” teachers, preachers and evangelists would be supported and upheld by the Body of Christ! They will have huge radio and television ministries, and a huge outreach. We know this is true because Peter is blunt: **THE VAST MAJORITY FOLLOW THEM, AND THESE MINISTRIES MUST THEN HAVE HUGE FOLLOWINGS, FOR WE HAVE NO OTHER OPTIONS**. If the largest number of Christians follow them, then we must say they are “popular”, in fact, **THEN THEY MUST BE THE PRIME MOVERS AND SHAKERS OF ALL MODERN CHRISTIAN OUTREACH. THIS IS A LATTER DAY PROPHECY, FOR THE CLOSING ERA OF THE CHURCH**.

**THE VERY POPULARITY OF THESE FALSE PROPHETS PUTS THEM INTO POSITION OF GREAT POWER AND INFLUENCE OVER THE BODY OF CHRIST**. This is why they are

referred to as “evil”. Their influence is so vast and their Gospel is “hurtful” to the flock. These are the false shepherds, who came into the sheepfold “some other way” but nevertheless are IN THE SHEEPFOLD. Their interpretations of the Scripture would be accepted as the “Gospel truth”. Anyone who suggested they were wrong would be immediately branded a troublemaker and a heretic, for after all, WE CAN’T ALL BE WRONG, AND THERE IS SAFETY IN NUMBERS. The popularity of these false men of God is the primary tip off that something is radically wrong with their message of salvation. These false prophets are not only popular in the Church, they are popular and well respected IN THE WORLD AT LARGE, which is where they grab more “sheep” to bring in to the fold. They will be well respected men in the secular world, and even sought after by world leaders for their spiritual advice. Jesus had this blunt remark about BEING POPULAR:

***“If the WORLD HATE YOU, ye KNOW THAT IT HATED ME BEFORE IT HATED YOU.***

***If ye were OF THE WORLD,***

***THE WORLD WOULD LOVE HIS OWN:***

***but because YE ARE NOT OF THIS WORLD, but I have chosen you out the world, therefore the world hateth you.***

***Remember the word that I said unto you,***

***THE SERVANT IS NOT GREATER THAN HIS LORD.***

***If they have PERSECUTED ME, THEY WILL ALSO PERSECUTE YOU;***

***IF THEY HAVE KEPT MY SAYING, THEY WILL KEEP YOUR’S ALSO.***

***BUT ALL THESE THINGS WILL THEY DO UNTO YOU***

***FOR MY NAME’S SAKE, BECAUSE***

***THEY KNOW NOT HIM THAT SENT ME.***

***(John 15:18-21)***

Jesus Christ says here quite bluntly that THE WORLD AT LARGE, AND THAT INCLUDES APOSTATE CHRISTIANITY WILL HATE THE PREACHER WHO PREACHES THE TRUTH, THEY WILL HATE HIM AND WILL PERSECUTE HIM, REVILE HIM, AND THEY WILL THROW HIM OUT OF THEIR CHURCHES, THEY WILL SHUN HIM AND ATTEMPT BY ANY MEANS TO SILENCE HIM. This is the nature of the UNREGENERATE MIND, WHICH IS HOSTILE TOWARDS GOD. To be hated and to be persecuted is the very OPPOSITE of being POPULAR. Thus we find a direct contradiction:

**POPULAR AND LOVED  
BY THE WORLD**

**VS**

**HATED AND PERSECUTED  
BY THE WORLD**

Jesus was most blunt that the WORLD LOVES ITS OWN. It is then obvious that the false prophets MUST AND DO BRING IN A WORDLY GOSPEL, A GOSPEL THE WORLD LOVES TO HEAR. They thus ensure their popularity before men and ARE NOT PREACHING OR TEACHING THE TRUTH WHATEVER. If they were telling the truth, their popularity



would fade rapidly, their coffers would dry up, and they would find themselves OUT OF A BUSINESS PROFESSION, WHICH IS WHAT IT IS. These false prophets are BUSINESS MEN, WHO MAKE MERCHANDISE OF CHRIST AND HIS FOLLOWERS.

*“Blessed are they*

**WHICH ARE PERSECUTED FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS’ SAKE:**

*For their’s is the Kingdom of heaven.  
Blessed are ye, when men*

**SHALL REVILE YOU, AND PERSECUTE YOU,**

***AND SHALL SAY ALL MANNER OF EVIL AGAINST YOU FALSELY,***

**FOR MY SAKE.**

*Rejoice, and be EXCEEDING GLAD:*

*For GREAT IS YOUR REWARD IN HEAVEN:  
FOR SO PERSECUTED THEY THE PROPHETS WHICH WERE BEFORE YOU.”  
(Matthew 5:10-12)*

Do you think Jesus Christ was KIDDING? Do you think He does not know of what He speaks? THE TRUE PROPHET OF GOD IS A HATED, REVILED MAN, HE IS PERSECUTED BY HIS OWN CHURCH, FOR THEY WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE, THEY WILL NOT ALLOW TRUTH TO BE PRESENTED, AND THEY MUST THEN THROW OUT ALL TRUTH TELLERS. They will manufacture VICIOUS LIES against the true prophet of God, they will ATTACK THE PERSON, BECAUSE THEY CANNOT ATTACK THE TRUTH. He will be accused of all manner of falsehoods, such as BEING A DEMONIC, BEING A FALSE PROPHET, BEING A LIAR AND WORSE. Whatever the filthy minds can dredge up to hurl upon the true minister of God, IT WILL BE DREDGED UP AND LAID UPON HIM. Glory be to God!

This hardly sounds LIKE A POPULAR PREACHER! This does not sound like someone the leaders of the world WOULD SEEK AFTER, or someone who would be the MOST ADMIRER MAN OF THE WORLD. It sounds like the very opposite. **If your ministry is POPULAR WITH MOST PEOPLE, YOU BETTER EXAMINE YOUR MESSAGE!**

The word “follow” is ‘exakoloutheo’, which means **TO FOLLOW OUT, TO IMITATE, OBEY, YIELD TO**. The vast majority of Christians yield to these heresies, and they follow after them and the false teachers who espouse them. The word “pernicious” is ‘apoleia’, the same word used for damnable, which means **ETERNAL RUIN OR LOSS**. Notice that Peter is not speaking of following after the behavior patterns, morals or ethics of these men, which by implication are above reproach. What the many do is follow after the heresies, which bring in a multitude of “ways” to salvation. If the followers of these false teachers end up in eternal ruin, what do you

suppose God will do with the teachers themselves? There is little excuse for a lack of knowledge, and there is no excuse for apostasy. IT IS JUDGED BY GOD AND CONDEMNED BY GOD.

SECOND Peter 2:2 does not say MIGHT FOLLOW OR COULD FOLLOW. It says bluntly that the many WILL FOLLOW THE FALSE TEACHERS TO ETERNAL RUIN. IT IS AN IMPERATIVE CONDITION: IT WILL HAPPEN. We have many on the broad way, and we have many Christians following after false prophets, and many rejected by Christ. Therefore by deduction we can conclude and confirm what Peter and Christ warned: IT IS A FALSE DOCTRINE, THAT IF EMBRACED AND BELIEVED, REMOVES THE POSSIBILITY OF EVER COMING INTO UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST. Is all of this sheer coincidence?

## **5. “BY REASON OF WHOM THE WAY OF TRUTH SHALL BE EVIL SPOKEN OF.”**

This is a key verse for finding out just where it is the false prophets strike. Here is where they will contradict, disavow and refuse what Christ clearly stated. Remember that right after He spoke of the strait gate and narrow way that He warned us of the false prophets. It was not coincidental, for Christ was clearly telling us the false prophets will zero in on the ONLY WAY TO ENTER HEAVEN, AND ATTACK IT WITH A MASTERPIECE COUNTERFEIT. Look at what Peter says:

# **THE WAY** **OF THE TRUTH** **SHALL BE EVIL SPOKEN OF.**

The false prophets bring in a group of heresies that cause **THE WAY** of the truth to be evil spoken of. **NOTICE that THE TRUTH is not evil spoken of, but only THE WAY.** It is **THE WAY** of the truth that is evil spoken of, and NOT THE TRUTH ITSELF. It is clear then that Peter is warning us that there will come false doctrines that will UPHOLD JESUS CHRIST, UPHOLD THE TRUTH, UPHOLD DIVINE AGAPE LOVE, UPHOLD ALL THE MAJOR TENETS. They will only cause **THE WAY** to be evil spoken of. Remember the false prophets cannot speak evil of Jesus Christ, nor will they! They uphold Jesus Christ to the world. IT IS ONLY **“THE WAY”** that they cause problems with.

Jesus said that we must WALK THE NARROW “WAY”. Jesus said that you could not come to life, or know the truth unless you walked THE NARROW WAY, for IT LEADETH unto LIFE. The WAY OF THE TRUTH IS STRAIT AND NARROW. Because there is only one valid WAY of the truth, then obviously THE FALSE PROPHETS WILL DEVELOP THEOLOGIES AND DOCTRINES THAT CAUSE PEOPLE TO SPEAK EVIL OF THE REAL WAY, WHICH IS STRAIT AND NARROW. The word for “way” here is ‘hodos’, and it means **HIGHWAY, ROAD, PATHWAY, PROGRESS, JOURNEY**. It is the mode by which one enters in to the New Covenant. Peter then is most blunt, and it is beyond misinterpretation:

# **THE HIGHWAY, PATHWAY, JOURNEY, PROGRESS**

## **OF THE TRUTH**

### **SHALL BE EVIL SPOKEN OF.**

The heresies of these Christian leaders will zero in ON THE WAY, AND ONCE EMBRACED, THEY CAUSE THE PEOPLE TO SPEAK EVIL OF THE REAL WAY. What could be more obvious? Peter is saying that THOSE ON THE BROAD WAY WILL EMBRACE THE THEOLOGY OF THE FALSE PROPHETS, AND THOSE ON THE NARROW WAY WILL COME UNDER ATTACK:

“STRAIT IS THE GATE AND NARROW IS **THE WAY...**

**THE WAY OF THE TRUTH SHALL BE EVIL SPOKEN OF.”**

Now we know why these heresies ARE DAMNABLE. They come against THE ONLY WAY TO HEAVEN THERE IS, THE NARROW WAY. Their theology refutes it, denies it, contradicts it. We will study this ‘way’ of Jesus Christ in full detail, and this way is mentioned in ACTS 16:17; 18:25; 1 CORINTHIANS 12:31; HEBREWS 10:20 and 2 PETER 2:15. All of these words are ‘hodos’ and refer to the journey of the Christian that leads unto life, which will be proved, is REGENERATION. The wise Christian will not spiritualize away the meaning of the word “way” and will also become obedient to it.

Therefore it is the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY THAT THE FALSE TEACHERS COME AGAINST, AND THEIR DOCTRINES ARE ACCEPTED CHURCH WIDE AS TRUTH. The word “truth” in this passage by Peter is ‘aletheia’ and it means **THAT WHICH IS TRUTH**. The root is ‘alethes’ and it means **THE WHOLE TRUTH, AS NOT CONCEALING, AS NOTHING HIDDEN, NOTHING CONCEALED, BOTH POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE ASPECTS, ALL OF IT**. Remember the word “privily”? That it meant something done by SUBREPTION? SUBREPTION MEANS TO HIDE OR CONCEAL CERTAIN FACTS, THE FACT THAT IT IS CONCEALED IS THIS: IT IS

**ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY FOR EVERYONE**  
**TO WALK THE NARROW WAY OR THEY CANNOT ENTER HEAVEN!**

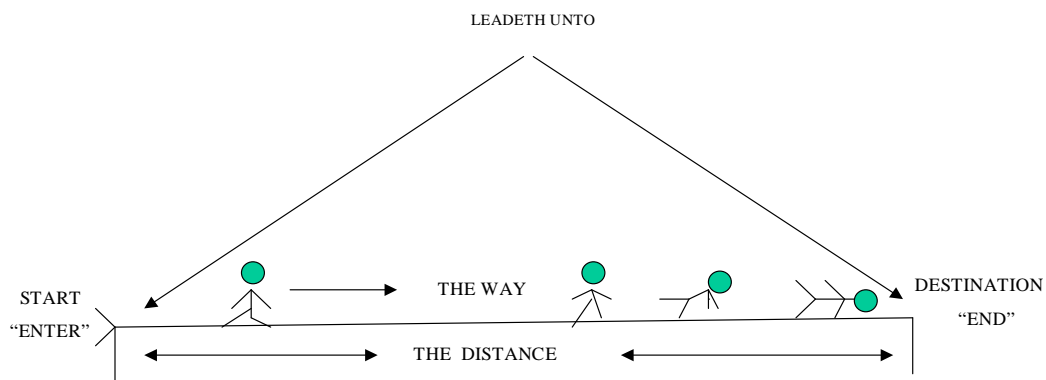
That aspect will be concealed, altered, twisted and destroyed by an entire new satanic theology. By hiding the necessary facts concerning what true salvation actually entails, THEY NULLIFY THE NEW COVENANT, NULLIFY THE GRANT OF PETITION FOR MERCY, AND DESTROY THE MILLIONS WHO EMBRACE IT FOR EVER AND EVER.

### **PRELIMINARY INVESTIGATION OF THE ‘WAY’.**

We are going to prove out that when Jesus Christ said there was a ‘way’ that LEADETH UNTO LIFE, that He was not fooling even one bit. This was the most serious of all doctrines, which is why Christ spent time explaining it, and then warning that a new theology would emerge that

would attempt to do away with it. As you know the word way is ‘hodos’ and it means **A JOURNEY, PROGRESS, HIGHWAY, PATHWAY**. It is therefore the **MEANS, THE MODE, A PROCESS USED**. It is the obvious that we often overlook and stumble upon, so it is necessary to review some things here that **SHOULD BE OBVIOUS TO EVERYONE**.

First Jesus said there was a literal “way”. Second, He said this **WAY** leadeth unto **LIFE**. The word “leadeth” is very important, for it proves the meaning of the word “way”. It is ‘apago’ and it means **TO CARRY AWAY, TO LEAD OFF, TO PUT TO DEATH, TO TAKE AWAY**. It implies **DISTANCE BETWEEN THE STARTING POINT AND THE DESTINATION**. The point between **START** and **FINISH** IS **THE ‘WAY’**. The starting point is the **STRAIT GATE**. The finish is “**LIFE**”. The distance in between is **THE NARROW WAY**.



1. If there is a highway, a journey, a progress, you must **ENTER** this journey at some point, i.e. you must **GET ON THE ROAD AT SOME POINT**. If there is a journey, you must **START THE JOURNEY AT A SPECIFIC LOCATION**. If there is a progress, you must **BEGIN** somewhere. So then we have **AN ENTRANCE, A GATE, A STARTING POINT**. Jesus called it the ‘**STRAIT GATE**’, AND HE SAID WE ARE TO “**STRIVE**” TO ENTER IN. It is therefore **DIFFICULT TO EVEN ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, AND MOST PEOPLE ARE NOT ABLE**.



2. If there is a highway, then obviously the **HIGHWAY, PROGRESS OR JOURNEY COVERS A GIVEN DISTANCE, THE DISTANCE BETWEEN THE START AND FINISH POINTS.** That is why Jesus used the word “leadeth”. If there is a distance to travel to reach your destination, then obviously **YOU MUST TRAVEL THE ENTIRE DISTANCE TO REACH THE DESTINATION.** If there is a progress to be made, you must reach the destination to be successful! If you stop short of your intended destination, then you do not ever reach it. You cannot claim you are at the destination at the beginning, or at the middle, but **ONLY WHEN YOU ACTUALLY REACH THE SPECIFIED DESTINATION.** In this case, the specified destination is called “life”. It will be proven that “life” is **AUTHENTIC REGENERATION.** The way you obtain this “life” is to travel the “**NARROW IS THE WAY**” SAID JESUS.



3. If there is a highway, progress, journey, and you start at the specified starting point, and travel the entire distance to reach the destination, then **IT MUST TAKE TIME TO ACCOMPLISH.** If there is a journey to be made, **IT MUST TAKE TIME TO ACCOMPLISH.** If there is a progress to be made, and you must start at the beginning and travel the entire route to the destination, then it must **TAKE TIME TO ACCOMPLISH.**



The Lord of our Universe gave us a very specific starting point, **THE STRAIT GATE**. There is **NO OTHER METHOD OF ENTRANCE OTHER THAN THE STRAIT GATE**. He gave us a very specific pathway or way we must follow, **THE NARROW WAY**. **There is no other WAY OR METHOD TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT. EITHER YOU JOURNEY ALONG IT, OR YOU DO NOT AVAIL YOURSELF OF THE NEW HEART.**

# IT IS AN EXCLUSIVE.

He gave us a very specific destination, which He called LIFE, WHICH SCRIPTURE **CATEGORICALLY PROVES IS REGENERATION, OR AGAPE LOVE LIFE.**

The false prophets will then **CONTRADICT, REFUTE AND DISAVOW WHAT THEIR LORD SAID.**



1. Jesus said the gate was STRAIT. That means full of obstacles, narrow, very difficult to enter through, verified by Christ in Luke when He said we **MUST STRIVE TO ENTER IN**. If the

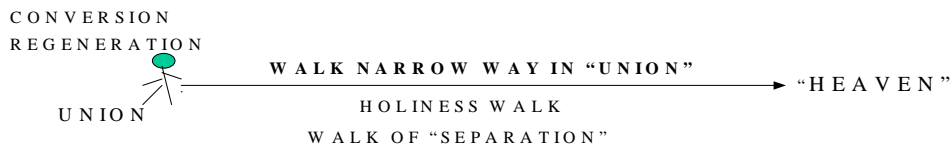
false prophets are true to form, they will then **CONTRADICT CHRIST AND CLAIM IT IS EASY, THERE ARE NO OBSTACLES, AND THE GATE IS WIDE**. They have accomplished it by the **INSTANT FAITH, INSTANT SALVATION DOCTRINE OF MODERN CHRISTIANITY**. A complete reversal by theological doctrine, accomplished by the redefinition of two words: **FAITH AND GRACE**.

2. Jesus said the way was **NARROW**. The word “narrow” means full of pressure, agony and tribulation of the soul. The false prophets will then say **THERE IS NO PRESSURE, NO AGONY, NO TRIBULATION OF SOUL: IT WILL BE EASY, PLEASANT AND ENJOYABLE. YOU CAN EMBRACE THEIR GOSPEL WITH GREAT “JOY”**. Simply make a decision for Jesus, accept Him into your heart by a choice of the will, and **PRESTO! INSTANT JOY FILLED CHRISTIAN! THEN CLAIM ALL OF THE SALVATION PROMISES IN SCRIPTURE BY FAITH, AND YOUR NAME IS WRITTEN IN THE LAMB’S BOOK OF LIFE FOREVER, AND YOU ARE ETERNALLY SECURE. WHO WOULD NOT JUMP FOR JOY? THEY WILL EXCLAIM LOUDLY** that anything contrary to this doctrine is a perversion of **FAITH AND GRACE**, a form of “works” or “legalism”. On the surface it would appear they were right. The problem is they **WERE WRONG, DEAD WRONG. IT COST THEM ETERNITY**.

3. Jesus said that the way **LEADETH** unto a destination. He implies it takes a long period of time, and therefore one must **CONTINUE, ABIDE, REMAIN AND BE STEADFAST OR DILIGENT**. It requires *patience*. The false prophets will then contradict Jesus Christ and say **THAT NO TIME AT ALL IS REQUIRED, IT CAN BE DONE INSTANTLY, IMMEDIATELY AND BY A SIMPLE ACT OF FAITH AND UNBELIEF**.

4. Jesus said that the destination was ‘**LIFE**’. Scripture will absolutely prove this word means **REGENERATION**. The false prophets will claim via redefinition that ‘life’ actually means heaven, which is only the future abode of those who have “life” in agape love. Because “life” really means heaven to the false teachers; then they will teach that they reach the **DESTINATION AT THE END OF THEIR LIVES**, and that the “narrow way” is traveled **IN UNION WITH CHRIST, BECAUSE REGENERATION OCCURS INSTANTLY AT CONVERSION. THEREFORE THERE IS NO TIME OR DELAY IN THE PROCESS OF REGENERATION, IF THEY WILL ADMIT TO A NARROW WAY**.

That position is a precise fulfillment of the prophecy of Peter. By either **OUTRIGHT REMOVAL OF THE WAY**, or by **CHANGING THE MEANING OF LIFE INTO HEAVEN**, they **TOTALLY NEGATE ANY CHANCE FOR SALVATION**. The two concepts actually hinge upon each other. Modern Christian theology claims that **CONVERSION AND REGENERATION ARE THE SAME THING. THEY ARE NOT**. They are in fact a strait gate and a narrow way apart, which is why the vast majority of Christians **ARE REJECTED**. They were **CONVERTED**; they had undergone **CONVERSIONS**. You cannot enter the Body of Christ without a **CONVERSION**. None of them, however, was **REGENERATED**. They were not regenerated because their theology **TOLD THEM THEY WERE, WHEN THEY WERE NOT**. In other words, **BECAUSE THEY INSIST THAT CONVERSION AND REGENERATION ARE IDENTICAL, THEY PROCLAIM THEMSELVES SAVED AND HEAVEN BOUND**. This negates the strait gate; this negates the narrow way. They remove it, it is non-existent in their theology. In graph form, it looks like this:



In the conservative camps of the fundamentalists, we find an identical position. A person is converted and regenerated at sincere repentance and the asking of Christ for forgiveness of sin, and by asking Jesus into their hearts. This is done in all primary fundamentalists denominations, such as the Nazarenes or Baptists. Their theology then tells them that **THEY ARE BORN AGAIN**. They are to accept this **REBIRTH BY FAITH ALONE**. In other words, THEY 'LAY HOLD OF' **INSTANT REGENERATION AT CONVERSION**. They are BORN AGAIN because their interpretation of Scripture TELLS THEM THEY ARE BORN AGAIN. They have no evidence of it, it is taught as totally non-experiential, and that they are just to LAY HOLD OF IT BY FAITH. They DO IT BY FAITH, THEY LAY HOLD OF IT BY FAITH, AND IT HAS HAPPENED BECAUSE **THEY CLAIM GOD'S WORD SAYS IT HAPPENED.**

In other words, they INSTANTLY LAY CLAIM TO THE PROMISES OF SALVATION WITH THE VERSES OF 'BELIEVE' AND 'FAITH'. In their concept, this means MENTAL BELIEF, MENTAL FAITH. THEY MERELY ARE TO ACCEPT IT ALL AS TRUE, BECAUSE THE BIBLE SAYS BELIEVE, AND YOU ARE SAVED. Therefore they are obedient, and THEY BELIEVE IT. It never dawns upon them that Jesus QUALIFIED THE WORDS BELIEF AND FAITH. Their definition and the definition Christ gives **ARE DIAMETRIC OPPOSITES**. This is exactly why the 'MANY' CHRISTIANS ARE REJECTED. **THIS IS WHY THEY STAND IN STUNNED SHOCK WHEN CHRIST TELLS THEM HE NEVER KNEW THEM.**

Because they now proclaim themselves SAVED, AND REGENERATED, the fundamentalists then BEGIN THEIR NARROW WAY WALK **ALREADY SAVED**. Their narrow way walk is a walk OF HOLINESS, OF SEPARATION FROM THE WORLD, OF RIGHT THINKING, RIGHT DOING, RIGHT WORSHIP, RIGHT WORKS. The destination of the narrow way, according to their theology, IS HEAVEN ITSELF. The narrow way becomes a **WALK OF HOLINESS BEFORE THE LORD**. In truth, the narrow way is not a walk of holiness at all, it has nothing to do with holiness. It is instead a way of exposing the human soul to ITS OWN DEPRAVITY AND DEATH. This aspect of the narrow way is the way of the CROSS; OF DYING. We will explore this in depth later in this series.

What the false prophets MUST DO in order to prevent you or I from entering in to the New Covenant is to REMOVE THE NARROW WAY, AND BY REMOVING IT, THEY CAN THEN BRING THE STARTING POINT AND FINISH POINT TOGETHER. In point of actual

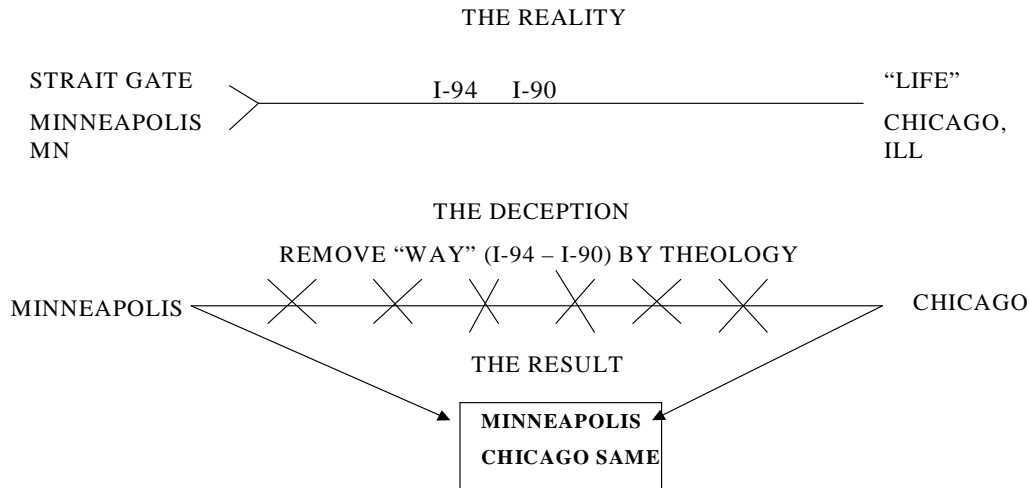


fact, they negate by their theology the entire structure of true salvation. They remove the STRAIT GATE, THE NARROW WAY, and they SEIZE THE PRIZE OF REGENERATION INSTANTLY, EXACTLY IN ACCORDANCE TO THE PARABLE OF THE SOWER AND THE 'ANON WITH GREAT JOY' CROWD THAT JESUS CHRIST CONDEMNED!

It is imperative that this be understood. For the sake of example, if you went from Minneapolis, Minnesota to Chicago, Illinois, you would take the INTERSTATE HIGHWAY SYSTEM I-94 and I-90. In this example, there IS NO OTHER WAY TO GET THERE. The interstate is YOUR ONLY HIGHWAY, OR YOUR NARROW WAY. Now then you must ENTER the interstate at Minneapolis. That is your STRAIT GATE. You must then STAY ON THE HIGHWAY ALL THE WAY TO YOUR DESTINATION. To accomplish that, you must CONTINUE, ABIDE UPON, REMAIN ON THE HIGHWAY FOR THE ENTIRE LENGTH OF TIME REQUIRED FOR YOU TO REACH CHICAGO. It is the interstate that 'leadeth' to Chicago.

- 1. If you refuse to enter the DESIGNATED GATE, can you get on the highway?**
- 2. If you refuse TO CONTINUE, AND ABIDE on the interstate for the length of THE JOURNEY/WAY, will you reach Chicago?**
- 3. If you travel the distance, did it take a PERIOD OF TIME OR WAS IT INSTANT OR IMMEDIATE?**
- 4. In your traveling down the highway, DID YOU PROGRESS FROM TOWN TO TOWN, WAS THERE AN OBSERVABLE PROGRESSION?**

Now you might say all of this is obvious, but the enemy uses the obvious to trip us up. Some things are SO OBVIOUS they are TOTALLY OVERLOOKED. The false teachers REFUSE TO ENTER THE GATE, CLAIM THEY TRAVEL FROM MINNEAPOLIS TO CHICAGO INSTANTLY, AND BY THEOLOGY CLAIM THAT MINNEAPOLIS IS CHICAGO! By theology they REMOVE THE HIGHWAY TOTALLY, AND BRING CHICAGO AND MINNEAPOLIS TOGETHER!



From the above example, we begin to understand what the false teachers do to the WAY OF JESUS CHRIST; THE WAY OF THE TRUTH. THEY REFUTE AND DENY THE STRAIT GATE, THE NARROW WAY, THEY CLAIM LIFE AND REGENERATION AT THE VERY BEGINNING, AND IF THEY ACKNOWLEDGE A NARROW WAY, CLAIM UNION WITH CHRIST FROM THE BEGINNING AND **WALK THE WAY "WITH HIM"**.

In other words they again contradict Jesus Christ. Christ was very emphatic about where LIFE was. It was at then **END** of the narrow way. Thus the false prophets have no choice but to claim LIFE is at THE BEGINNING OF THE JOURNEY. Their union with Christ is immediate, instant and they walk in union with Christ from this point on. Because they claim they already ARE IN UNION, THEN THEIR THEOLOGY MUST BE TELLING THEM THEY ARE REGENERATED IMMEDIATELY AT THE BEGINNING OF THEIR WALK.

The vast majority of Christians buy into this theology hook, line and sinker. Because they are told they are "born again" immediately and instantly upon bending the knee and saying the sinner's prayer, they NEVER WILL IN TRUTH FIND THE STRAIT GATE OR WALK THE NARROW WAY. Why should they? They have it all now! That is why they stand in such utter shock before Christ when He sends them away! THERE NEVER WAS ANY UNION, HE NEVER DID ENTER INTO THEIR HEARTS, HE DID NOT KNOW WHO THEY WERE, AND THUS THEY NEVER DID ENTER THE NEW COVENANT. THEY WERE ALL BASTARD SONS AND DAUGHTERS, WHO LAID HOLD OF REGENERATION AND THE PROMISES OF THE KINGDOM BY A FALSE THEOLOGY RADICALLY DIFFERENT THAN THE THEOLOGY OF JESUS CHRIST!

Their doctrines and theology tell them they are born again; they are regenerated. The biblical EVIDENCES GIVEN TO PROVE AUTHENTIC REGENERATION ARE DISCARDED OUT OF HAND. Not only are they discarded, **THE ACTUAL EVIDENCES ARE BRANDED AS**

**SATANIC.** What a delusion, what a deception! Because the “many” are **UTTERLY CONVINCED** that they are saved and heaven bound, they **SPEAK EVIL OF THE WAY OF REAL AND AUTHENTIC SALVATION.** They speak ‘evil’ of it. The word “evil” is ‘blasphemo’ and it means **TO SPEAK IMPIOUSLY, TO DEFAME, TO RAIL AGAINST.** In other words, the **MANY WILL RAIL AGAINST AND DEFAME THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.**

They will claim the **TRUE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY A FORM OF “WORKS” OR LEGALISM.** They will say it is a **PERVERSION OF FAITH AND GRACE, A HERESY, A FALSE GOSPEL, ANOTHER CHRIST, AND THEY WILL BRAND ANYONE WHO PRESENTS IT AS “ACCURSED”.** Thus do they **RAIL AGAINST IT, DEFAME IT, AND BLASPHEME IT.** In reality, they are guilty of **BLASPHEMY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, FOR IT IS THE HOLY SPIRIT’S JOB TO CONVICT OF TRUE SIN (WHICH IS THE LACK OF AGAPE LOVE WITHIN); OF RIGHTEOUSNESS (AGAPE LOVE COMPARED TO PHILEO LOVE); AND JUDGMENT (DEATH AND ETERNAL SEPARATION FROM A HOLY GOD).** All these things the Holy Spirit is to do, and they are **DEEP, AND THEY ARE FULLY EXPERIENTIAL, AND THEY ARE HORRIBLE TO UNDERGO, JUST AS JESUS SAID THEY WERE.** Because this **JUDGMENT IS REFUSED, AND BRANDED AS SATANIC ATTACKS, THESE POOR SOULS ACTUALLY END UP COMMITTING THE ONE SIN THAT CAN NEVER BE FORGIVEN: BLASPHEMY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.**

If you refuse the **CONVICTION AND THE REPROOF OF CHRIST** from the **DEEPEST INNER HEART,** then how can Christ **SAVE YOU?** He cannot, for **THE ONE METHOD HE GAVE US TO ACCOMPLISH IT IS REFUSED, AND ANOTHER GOSPEL IS BROUGHT IN, WHICH IS SIMPLE, EASY, AND SOUNDS WONDERFUL.** Thus the vast majority of Christians **ARE ETERNALLY LOST, FOR THEY REFUSED AND BLASPHEMED THE HOLY SPIRIT.** They will **NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE.** The **WHOLE** truth of salvation they will **NOT ACCEPT.** The strait gate and narrow way will be branded a **FORM OF WORKS, A FORM OF LEGALISM. ALL THE NEGATIVE ASPECTS OF THE SALVATION DOCTRINE ARE DONE AWAY WITH.**

This would have to be true because instant salvation can only be achieved by altering the scriptural definitions of faith and grace, which also expands to alter the definition of works and what is meant by works. Thus with great anger the “many” will reject the narrow way and go into eternal damnation. What a price to pay because they simply would not go into the Word on their own to find the truth. They never had life, but they claimed they did. They never see heaven, but put all of their faith in the fact that they would spend eternity there. This is a tragic ending for holding a theology so much in contradiction that they could have easily spotted it had they really wanted to seek the truth. Thus the vast majority within the Body of Christ embrace a false gospel of salvation, and only **THE FEW** will escape this snare of Satan.

## **6. “AND THROUGH COVETOUSNESS, SHALL THEY WITH FEIGNED WORDS MAKE MERCHANDISE OF YOU.”**

The word for “covetousness” is ‘pleonexia’ and it means **BY FRAUD, BY EXTORTION, FOR GREED.** The word “extort” according to Webster’s is: “to obtain from a person by force, or illegal power of **INGENUITY.**” The word “extortion” means “the art or practice of extorting money or property.” According to Peter, these false prophets will attract the vast majority of unwary Christians, and they will then **RISE TO EXTREMELY HIGH POSITIONS OF POWER AND AUTHORITY, BECAUSE OF THEIR VERY POPULARITY; AND BY THEIR INGENIOUS SCHEMES AND FALSE GOSPEL WILL EXTORT MILLIONS UPON**

MILLIONS OF DOLLARS FROM THEIR FOLLOWERS, ALL IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST. It is every bit extortion. It is every bit deception. Lifting the Gospel totally out of its context, these men of Satan who appear as angels of light will ply upon the fears, guilt and loneliness of their flocks, and shear them of their wealth. Their greed will be manifested in lifestyles the **EXACT OPPOSITE OF JESUS CHRIST**. They will live in luxury, demanding the finest for God's servant. Their followers will agree with their demands.

The word "feigned" is 'plastos', and it means **ARTIFICIAL, MOLDED, FALSE BUT WITH THE APPEARANCE OF BEING TRUE OR REAL**. Remember these people bring in their false theology in **UTTER SECRECY, UNDETECTED BY THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS**. A few would notice and raise warnings, but they would go unheeded. Here we have a total confirmation of what Peter said before: **THEY TRANSFORM THE REAL GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST INTO SOMETHING THAT IT IS NOT, BUT IT LOOKS CORRECT AND RIGHT**. It is a master counterfeit, designed and packaged in such a way so that the unwary **WILL FLOCK TO IT AS BEES TO HONEY**. **THEY OMIT AND CONCEAL WHAT EVERY BELIEVER MUST KNOW TO COME TO TRUE AND AUTHENTIC SALVATION**. There is something missing, and that which is missing

**IS THE STRAIT GATE AND THE NARROW WAY THAT LEADETH UNTO LIFE;**

**IS THE SUPERNATURAL BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE;**

**IS THE UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST!**

If you remove the strait gate and narrow way by theology, then in reality you **HAVE REMOVED ALL CHANCE FOR UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST, ALL CHANCE FOR REGENERATION, ALL CHANCE FOR EVER GOING TO HEAVEN. YOU HAVE DAMNED YOUR SOUL FOR EVER**. You can claim all you want by your theology, your denomination bias, your preconceived ideas, that you are saved; but **TRUTH WILL PREVAIL**. A claim made is only valid **IF THE AUTHORITY BEHIND THE CLAIM AGREES WITH YOU**. In this case the authority is Jesus Christ, and He clearly did not agree with the **VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WHO CLAIMED THEY WERE REGENERATED AND HAD A RIGHT TO ENTER HEAVEN! IF JESUS CHRIST does NOT AGREE with you, your claims are WORTHLESS, AND YOUR CASE IS CLOSED FOR EVER WITH NO RECOURSE, NO HOPE, NO MERCY, NO CLEMENCY WHATSOEVER**.

There is a reason for this harshness on the part of Jesus Christ. **YOU HAVE NO EXCUSE FOR NOT KNOWING THESE WERE FALSE PROPHETS!** Christ clearly shows us the **CORRECT WAY TO ENTER HEAVEN. He did not ask us for permission to set it up that way. He did not come down here and ask for a world committee to determine how one should enter heaven. He did not solicit you or anyone else's opinions whatever**. This is an issue of **THE SOVEREIGNTY OF GOD**. Not only did God tell you what you must do in a multitude of places, He also gave us **WARNINGS IN COMPLETE DETAIL OF HOW THIS MESSAGE WAS GOING TO BE PERVERTED AND TWISTED**. He gave His life on a cross to seal the deal for you and I. Who do we think we are? By what arrogance of heart do we dare question what He said? What more can Christ do for us? He gave us the **WAY**, He gave us **EXPLICIT WARNINGS**, and He sealed it in His own blood. **CASE CLOSED. YOU EITHER OBEY, OR YOU BURN; THAT SIMPLE; THAT BLUNT**.

Christians cry for revival. We hear the prayers for revival all the time; from pastors to laymen. Heaven it seems has become brass, because no revival comes. Do you know why it never comes? **RANK DISOBEDIENCE TO JESUS CHRIST.** Do you want a revival? Then you must become convinced in your conscious heart **THAT GOD IS SOVEREIGN, HE MEANS WHAT HE SAYS, HE WILL BURN YOU IN ETERNAL HELLFIRE IF YOU REFUSE TO OBEY HIM.** THEN YOU GET OFF YOUR DEAD CENTER AND YOU PUT YOUR FAITH IN TO ACTION, and **YOU DO, AND NOT TALK ABOUT DOING!** When a human heart becomes aware that he/she is NOT WHERE THEY SHOULD BE BEFORE THE LORD, AND IS FULLY CONVINCED SOMETHING IS WRONG, SOMETHING IS MISSING, REVIVAL COMES TO THAT HEART. How is any revival going to come from **FALSE PROPHETS AND THEIR MANUFACTURED JESUS CHRIST?** The revivals and the signs and wonders that come from the false prophets **ARE PREPARING THE WORLD FOR THE GRAND DELUSION, AND THEY ARE NOT TRUE REVIVALS, BUT COUNTERFEIT REVIVALS TO FOOL THE “MANY” AND THE WORLD INTO ETERNAL RUIN.**

The word for “merchandise” is ‘eporeuomai’ and it means **TO PEDDLE, TO TRADE, TO PROFIT IN, TO PEDDLE MERCHANDISE.** In other words, the false teachers within the Body of Christ will rise to positions of leadership, and with their fabricated gospel of their instant way to salvation, they **WILL MERCHANDISE JESUS CHRIST** just the same way you sell an automobile. Their gospel will be designed to appeal to the carnal mind, to the natural heart and soul of worldly people. Their gospel will sound almost too good to be true, and **IT WILL BE.** They will be business retailers of a false gospel, **FABRICATED TO FIT THE WORLD.** Their gospel will be one of ease and simplicity that promises all who come heaven and eternal life. It will attract **MILLIONS INTO THE SHEEPFOLD. IT WILL BECOME THE MOST POPULAR SALVATION MESSAGE THE WORLD HAS EVER HEARD.** From these newly found sheep they will glean millions of dollars via pleas to spread their **FALSE GOSPEL** throughout the world, in fulfillment of the **GREAT COMMISSION. IT WILL ALL BE DONE IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST.**

According to Peter, their ministries will be huge, with millions of followers, grossing millions of dollars a year. We know that because by the time of the end, the **SHEEPFOLD WILL BE FILLED WITH MILLIONS OF CHRISTIANS.** They will grow to worldwide proportions, with a vast radio and television mission field, all done under the guise of “serving Jesus” and “fulfilling the great commission”. It will be true that they are fulfilling the great commission. They will think they are “serving Jesus”. They **WILL NOT SPEAK EVIL OF JESUS, FOR THEY UPHOLD JESUS CHRIST.** These are real **BIBLE THUMPERS.** They lift up Jesus Christ as the King of Kings and the Glory of all Glories. They will have huge crusades and will attract a multitude of followers. They will be very popular and well known, not only to the Church, but to the whole world at large. **MANY OF THEM WILL BE GREATLY ADMIRER MEN, WORKING THEIR WAY RIGHT INTO THE CONFIDENCE OF THE LEADERS OF THE SECULAR WORLD.**

Peter is blunt: The many, the vast majority of Christians will elevate these false teachers to be the leaders of what the world sees as “Christianity”. These huge ministries will be operating from within the Body of Christ, therefore they will be spread throughout the various denominations or will be “non-denominational”. Then we have no choice and no options: **THE LATTER DAY CHRISTIAN CHURCH WILL BE A FALSE CHURCH, FOR BY THEN THE LEAVEN OF THE FALSE TEACHERS WILL HAVE LEAVENED THE ENTIRE BODY OF CHRIST.** The modern Christians will flock to these ministries of **DEATH.** They will be spreading their **FALSE GOSPEL OF SALVATION VIA ALL MODERN MEANS; RADIO, TELEVISION, MOVIES, TAPES, MUSIC, ENTERTAINMENT, BOOKS AND ANY**

METHOD THEY CAN DREAM UP. They will thus package and sell a false Christ, a false gospel and make **MERCHANDISE OUT OF THE CHRISTIANS THAT FOLLOW THEM**. They will in effect **BE TRAFFICKING IN THE SOULS OF MEN AND WOMEN FOR PROFIT AND GAIN**. They will extort huge fortunes in the NAME OF JESUS CHRIST.

Jesus Christ and His work upon the cross will be held up to the masses as the ONLY name under heaven by which we may be saved, but by their false theology of salvation, they will **MOCK EVERYTHING HE COMMANDS AND DID**. These ministries will be the “darlings” of the Church, which we know from previous inspection, is doomed to eternal ruin. Their gospel of ease and simplicity, of instant salvation with no strait gate and narrow way, will have great appeal to the masses of fallen mankind. Their Christ is the Christ of the broad way.

The slogans and advertising of these false teachers will be no different than any other major business corporation. They will be slick and rely upon every known weakness of the human condition. Much of their advertising and appeals for funds will be made by secular advertising agencies or advisors. Their appeals will be very emotional, and are designed to induce guilt and sorrow at whatever cause is chosen for the moment. The elderly, the shut-ins, the widows who are alone and gullible will be moved to take what **LITTLE THEY HAVE** and give it to these satanic **MONSTERS**. Not content with just getting into the pocketbooks of their sheep, they move with boldness to actually get the **ESTATES** of their sheep. They will then extort homes, properties and large sums of the money **RIGHTFULLY BELONGING TO FAMILY**, and make off with untold millions of dollars **ALL IN THE MIGHTY NAME OF JESUS**. The fires of hell await them. They will exclaim with tears and crying, **“THAT TO JESUS GOES THE GLORY, HALLELUJAH, HALLELUJAH, HALLELUJAH, PRAISE THE LORD, PRAISE YOU, JESUS!”** These slick con men out of the pits of hell will fleece the flock of their money, their homes, their property. If that is not enough, they fleece them **OF HEAVEN AND UNION WITH CHRIST!** How do you think Jesus is going to dispose of these monster counterfeits?

In order to accomplish their objective, they **REPACKAGE JESUS CHRIST**. They **FABRICATE ANOTHER ONE**. They do it with “feigned” words. Their gospel is the gospel of the **BROAD WAY**. They turn Jesus over to Madison Avenue and they in turn come up with slick promotional appeals designed for one thing: **THE EXTORTION OF MONEY FROM THEIR FOLLOWERS**. The Christ they offer to a dying world offers instant salvation, instant regeneration, eternal security, healing, the promise of wealth and prosperity, forgiveness of all their sins, their every indulgence, their every desire, and all they need to do is “**BELIEVE**”. Their definition of faith and belief is utterly foreign to Jesus Christ, who throws them into eternal fire with a wave of a hand.

Their Jesus is all positive and there is no such thing as anything negative about their Christ. Anything negative whatever is branded as satanic and out of the pits of hell. All the positive aspects of the Scripture are promoted with great vigor! Great and wonderful signs and wonders follow after these false prophets. They can prophesy, heal, speak in tongues and slay hundreds “in the spirit” at the wave of a hand. They offer a “Jesus Cookie” along with a “Jesus Pop” to wash it down with. This cookie and pop gospel slides down the throats of the many with great ease, and they smile and demand **MORE!** Little do they know their real destination. Little do they know that their worm dieth not, and the fire burn eternally with them in the middle of it. All the distasteful elements of the commands of Jesus are removed. All the negative aspects of salvation **ARE CONCEALED**, AND THEY ARE GLOSSED OVER AS THOUGH NOT EVEN THERE.

This is done so that Jesus appeals to the masses. People do not respond to negative news. They will not “buy into” anything that requires of them **REAL EFFORT, REAL PAIN, REAL**

SUFFERING. That is offensive to people. Negative news, like eternal hellfire, is not welcome with these folks. The recent election proves it. Ross Perot was the ONLY candidate that told Americans the truth. Time after time the networks interviewed people who said they believe Perot. But they would not vote for him. Why? Because his gospel to the nation WAS A NEGATIVE GOSPEL. PEOPLE WILL NOT ACCEPT A NEGATIVE GOSPEL. They die in their sins, and then they ARE FORCED TO ACCEPT IT. The false prophets know about this aspect of the human condition.

Their Jesus **MUST NOT, AND DOES NOT OFFEND ANYONE**. Their Jesus will not be saying anything negative. Their Jesus would never ever suggest anything as negative as entering a strait gate and walking a narrow way. Their Jesus would never suggest to them that their faith was going to be tried in a fire they could barely stand up to. He would certainly not suggest to them that they **DIE TO FIND LIFE**. All of the “hard sayings” of Jesus, all of the offensive sayings of Jesus are simply eradicated. **ANYONE IN THE WHOLE WORLD CAN LOVE THEIR JESUS**. It is by this very method that they attract the unwary souls! Remember that Peter says these false teachers **EXTORT THEIR MONEY AND PROPERTY WITH FEIGNED WORDS**. It is via an utterly false gospel that it is done!

These are the wolves in sheep’s clothing. Their easy gospel **is a gospel of damnation and eternal ruin**. Their idea of Christ cannot save anyone, but instead damns you forever. Their theological Christ is a FRAUD, A LIAR. Also remember that all of this is done VIA THEOLOGICAL MEANS, VIA FALSE DOCTRINES THAT LOOK TOTALLY CORRECT. They will defend themselves with great vehemence against anyone who dared suggest they were false prophets. **Their primary method of operation is via redefinition of the key words used in salvation.**

It is via their redefinition of faith that allows them to bypass the strait gate and narrow way. The grace of God is thrown in to boot for good measure. It also allows them to deny THE EVIDENCE YOU MUST HAVE OF YOUR SALVATION. Along with a total perversion of what FAITH really means, they will alter GRACE, REPENTANCE, CONVERSION, REGENERATION, AND WORKS. They have no choice, because all of these concepts and definitions hinge upon each other. THE LIE MUST BE BUILT UPON ITSELF. To the unwary, their house of theology appears sound, built upon the ROCK. The foundation APPEARS to be solid, firm, absolute. But is in reality built upon the sand, and when the storm of judgment comes, GREAT WILL BE THE FALL OF IT.

## **MORE WARNINGS OF FALSE PROPHETS**

There are MANY, MANY WARNINGS ABOUT THESE FALSE PROPHETS, and we will explore the other warnings given in Scripture for our instruction. Paul had the same problem in his day that we have in ours:

**“For we are NOT as MANY,  
WHICH CORRUPT THE WORD OF GOD:  
but as of sincerity, but as of God,  
IN THE SIGHT OF GOD  
WE SPEAK IN CHRIST.”  
(2 Corinthians 2:17)**

Paul is blunt, concise: “We are not AS MANY.” Once again we run into the MANY. To consolidate this:

1. Many travel the broad way
2. Many stand before Jesus Christ rejected
3. Many are called, but FEW are chosen
4. Many follow after the false prophets
5. Many corrupt the Word of God.

Once again, the word many means the **VAST MAJORITY**. Paul is telling us something: the merchandising of Jesus Christ for money began almost as soon as the Church began, and it is always the **VAST MAJORITY INVOLVED**. The word “corrupt” is ‘kapeleuo’ and it has its roots in ‘kapelos’ and they mean **TO BE A HUCKSTER, TO RETAIL OR TO SELL, TO MERCHANDISE**. Paul himself found that he was up against a great many false teachers who twisted and perverted the Word of God and made a **LIVING FROM IT**. It did not take long for the corrupt human mind to figure out that here was a gold mine of opportunity. (A gold mine for money, power, prestige and be able to have large followings).

In order to sell the gospel, you must fabricate it in such a way as to make it appealing to the masses. It becomes so attractive that it cannot be resisted for it is easy, simple, and it offers great joy and eternal life. It appears to hold the answer to life’s problems. Remember that the root of the word “wide” means **MOLD OR TO FABRICATE**. You then mold or fabricate a theology and doctrine that repackage Jesus Christ for the broad way. It will at its root, always **CONTRADICT AND OPPOSE JESUS CHRIST**. It will always appeal to the carnal nature of man. So then you would play up the positive things like **SUPERNATURAL, SPIRITUAL POWER, ETERNAL LIFE, THE ABSOLUTE PROMISE OF HEAVEN, THE PROMISE OF POWER, AUTHORITY, WEALTH AND HEALING**. You hide all that is unpleasant so you can hook your victim, and then proceed to fleece them of their money and property, **ALL IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST**.

Paul was contrasting himself and his ministry to the ministry of the many. He claimed he did his out of true sincerity, **IN THE SIGHT OF GOD**. We will find out that when Paul uses that term he is speaking about the fact that **HE DOES IT IN TRUE AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE SIGHT OF GOD**. When God looks at the world, He looks through His eyes of pure 100% agape love! In his second epistle to the Corinthians, Paul mentions a group of people who were speaking the gospel for **THEIR OWN GLORY AND SELF GAIN**. He claimed that they **DESIRED “OCCASION”**. The word for “occasion” is ‘aphorme’ and it means **OPPORTUNITY, A STARTING POINT TO, BY WHICH THEY MIGHT DRAW OFF LARGE NUMBERS OF FOLLOWERS FOR THEIR OWN GLORY**. Paul says he does what he does out of pure agape love for Christ, because Christ has entered into a known and experiential union with him. He then contrasts his labor of pure agape love with those who seek their own glory and opportunity.

**“As THE TRUTH OF CHRIST IS IN ME, no man shall stop me  
OF THIS BOASTING in the regions of Achaia.**

**Wherefore? because I (AGAPE) LOVE YOU NOT?**



**God KNOWETH.”**  
**(2 Corinthians 11:10-11)**

Notice again this little word with a very big meaning: AGAPE LOVE. Paul is relating **AGAPE LOVE TO CHRIST BEING IN HIM**. It will be clearly shown later that one can be in the Body of Christ and still NOT have Christ within. However, one cannot have Christ within and not have agape love, for Christ is agape love! What Paul is doing is contrasting those that have no agape love within them, but who profess to be teachers, with those who do have agape love, the real shepherds of the flock. It is the agape love of Christ within that allows **one to teach the word from a pure motive!** If it is not there, the motive may *appear* pure, but it is not, it is for gain, for personal recognition, for power, for greed. **IT IS A DECEPTION OF THE INNER HEART, A DECEPTION THEY WOULD HAVE KNOWN AND FOUND HAD THEY WALKED THE NARROW WAY, FOR IT IS THE ‘WAY’ OF REVELATION OF THE TRUTH OF OUR INNERMOST HEART.**

**“But what I do, that I will do,  
THAT I MAY CUT OFF OCCASION FROM THEM WHICH DESIRE OCCASION:  
THAT WHEREIN THEY GLORY,  
THEY MAY BE FOUND EVEN AS WE.”**  
**(2 Corinthians 11:12)**

Notice how Paul words it; they desire to present the Gospel of Christ to the masses, so they may **GLORY IN THEMSELVES**, a big **numbers game**. The more you draw off to follow you, the bigger in stature you become. If your ministry grows to the millions of followers, think how much power and authority you hold in your hands! That is what Paul means here, they want to glory in themselves. Paul adds that they want to be found even as Paul is found, **A TRUE DISCIPLE**. In other words, these false teachers, preachers and evangelists **APPEAR TO BE AND ARE ACCEPTED AS THE TRUE APOSTLE!** They are wolves in sheep’s clothing, angels of light, ministers of darkness because they are not regenerated, and they do not know what **REGENERATION** means. They peddle **another gospel, another Christ**, **BUT THEY ARE FOUND BY THEIR FOLLOWERS AS THE SAME AS PAUL AND OTHER TRUE APOSTLES**. They were then **COUNTERFEITS**.

In order to look like Paul and the others, these false teachers must **FEIGN AGAPE LOVE**, which of course may be feigned on the surface. Man has a form of agape love in the social sense, in the moral sense, but it has been utterly corrupted by the fall, thus man can **FEIGN TO A DEGREE THE DIVINE LOVE OF GOD**.

**“For such are  
FALSE APOSTLES, DECEITFUL WORKERS,  
TRANSFORMING THEMSELVES  
INTO THE APOSTLES OF CHRIST.”**  
**(2 Corinthians 11:13)**

Paul is very clear about who they are: FALSE APOSTLES, DECEIVERS, WHO HAVE TRANSFORMED THEMSELVES INTO SOMETHING THEY ARE NOT. Their claims of regeneration and being born again are false; THEY HAVE NO AGAPE LOVE WITHIN, therefore they are bastard sons, workers of iniquity. How do you transform yourself into something you are not? BY CLAIMING SOMETHING TO BE TRUE THAT IS NOT TRUE. Remember that the false teachers contradict Christ and the “way” of salvation. They invent another way, an easy way, a fast way. By removing the ‘way’ of the strait and narrow, they can claim instant union with Jesus Christ! They claim they have it all at the beginning of their journey. If they are claiming to be true Christians, then they must have the love of Christ within them. It is all a delusion, for Christ is not present, **agape love is not present**, and they are liars.

The word for “false” is ‘pseudapostolos’ and it means **PRETENDER, FALSE TEACHER, HYPOCRITE**. The root of the word is ‘pseudes’ which means **UNTRUE, FALSE, ERRONEOUS, DECEITFUL, WICKED, LIAR**. Remember the wicked servant that Christ called a hypocrite? How could one who thought he was sincere and thought he knew Jesus, be so deluded? The answer is he is **under deception** because of disobedience. He invents a new theology that offers him instant union with Christ, instant bestowment of agape love. His theology tells him he has it within, therefore he is regenerated, but he has never walked the narrow way to obtain **TRUE AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS LIFE**.

Paul said IT WAS A TRUTH THAT AGAPE LOVE WAS WITHIN HIM, THAT CHRIST WAS IN HIM. Paul was positive of it, wholly convinced it was a fact. How did Paul know? How did he know the others were liars? By their fruits, by what they were doing and by their theology. A true Christian who has walked the narrow way to soul death, and has come face to face with Jesus Christ **KNOWS**. He knows because he is spiritual, and he sees through the eyes of agape love, given to him by Jesus under the New Covenant. IT WAS THEIR TESTIMONY ITSELF, THEIR THEOLOGY ITSELF, THAT GAVE THEM AWAY.

The word “transforming” is ‘metaschematizo’ and it means **TO CHANGE, TO DISGUISE, TO TRANSFIGURE**. The root of the word is ‘meta’ and it means **AMID, OR TO ACCOMPANY, TO PARTICIPATE, TO BE WITH, TO JOIN WITH**. In other words, **TO LOOK LIKE CHRISTIANS, ACT LIKE CHRISTIANS, TO SOUND LIKE CHRISTIANS, BUT THEY ARE WOLVES IN SHEEP’S CLOTHING**. They walk in spiritual darkness, they are the blind leading the blind, and millions are swept away by them. What they do in reality is claim Christ within, then transform their own human love into the love of Christ.

**“And no marvel; for Satan himself  
IS TRANSFORMED INTO AN ANGEL OF LIGHT.  
Therefore it is no great thing if  
HIS MINISTERS ALSO BE TRANSFORMED  
AS THE MINISTERS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS;  
WHOSE END SHALL BE ACCORDING TO THEIR WORKS.”  
(2 Corinthians 11:14-15)**

The false prophets, by satanic deception, ARE TRANSFORMED INTO THE MINISTERS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. It will be proven later in this series that righteousness is a code word for the

agape love of God, just as the word “light” means agape love. These people have a FORM OF GODLINESS, but they deny the POWER of God. An essential part of the power of God is the cross. One obtains the agape love of God via being crucified with Jesus Christ. The POWER OF LIFE RESIDES IN DEATH. It is a paradox to the living, but a truth of God.

These false teachers merely “appropriate” their holiness via their theology, claim a union with Christ that is fraudulent, and then transform themselves into teachers, preachers and evangelists for their own personal gain and greed. They are workers of iniquity, they are liars, and the fires await. They do not know who Jesus Christ is, but they will soon find out the hard way.

*“For I have not **SHUNNED TO DECLARE UNTO YOU**  
**ALL**  
**THE COUNSEL OF GOD.**  
**TAKE HEED THEREFORE**  
*unto yourselves, and to all the flock,*  
*over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to*  
**FEED THE CHURCH OF GOD,**  
**WHICH HE HATH PURCHASED WITH HIS OWN BLOOD.”**  
(Acts 20:27-28)*

Paul gets to the point: “I have not shunned to declare **ALL** THE COUNSEL OF God. The word “all” is ‘pas’, and it means **ALL, EVERY BIT, ENTIRE, THE WHOLE, EVERY ITEM WITH NOTHING CONCEALED**. It is like the word TRUTH, in that truth, if it is truth, **DOES NOT CONTAIN CONCEALED INFORMATION**. We already know that the false prophets CONCEAL THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. They conceal all the NEGATIVE, UNPLEASANT FACTS CONCERNING TRUE SALVATION. They conceal these, making their doctrine and gospel easy, pleasant and popular. The real division point is right here: **THE GOSPEL, TO BE TRUTH, MUST INCLUDE THE NEGATIVE COMMANDS AS WELL AS THE POSITIVE PROMISES**. If one will not obey the negative commands, one cannot claim any of the positive results. The “many” rejected of Christ refused the negative, claimed the promises, and must now suffer eternal ruin for their mistake.

Paul then says we are to take heed. Of what?

*“For **I KNOW** this,  
that after my departing  
shall **GRIEVOUS WOLVES ENTER IN AMONG YOU,**  
**NOT SPARING THE FLOCK.”**  
(Acts 20:29)*

It is a certain fact. IT WILL HAPPEN. There are essentially two types of false prophets: first, those who would ensnare you into “works” or a form of “legalism”, which is some type of system in which you attempt to JUSTIFY YOURSELF before God by your GOOD DEEDS, RIGHT BEHAVIOR OR GOOD THOUGHTS; and secondly, those who DENY THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.

**Both methods will end you up in eternal ruin, and both concepts put you into the WORKS CATEGORY. Remember that Christ warned us about false prophets right after He told you that you must enter in at the strait gate, and take the narrow way that leads to life. He told you that because THERE IS NO OTHER WAY TO ENTER IN TO THE NEW COVENANT. NO OTHER WAY, ZERO, NOT, NONE, NO OTHER WAY. It has to be done, it must be done, and any attempts by WHATEVER MEANS TO CIRCUMVENT IT will ABSOLUTELY END YOU UP IN ETERNAL RUIN. Do not make excuses, do not offer up false theology, do not offer up “my pastor says”, do not offer up “my denominational teaching does not agree”, do not offer up “my opinion is”. YOU WILL DIE IN YOUR SINS IF YOU DO.**

Christ is the author of our salvation. That means **HE WROTE THE PLAN BEFORE HE CAME DOWN HERE TO SEAL IT IN HIS OWN BLOOD.** If Christ wrote the plan, and He is our FINAL AUTHORITY, then by what right do we claim to be Christian and then turn right around and totally CONTRADICT HIM? The wisdom of that is sheer folly.

These false prophets mean business, they will not spare the flock of God. The flock is their target, for Satan does not know if anyone walks the narrow way HE HAS LOST A SOUL TO CHRIST. Therefore ALL EFFORTS WILL BE DIRECTED AGAINST THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. SATAN WILL EITHER CONCEAL IT, OR REDEFINE WHAT IT MEANS. All of his genius will be directed towards that end. Christ warns that Satan will be highly successful, trapping 999 Christians out of every thousand! Only the few will escape the snare! How did the FEW ESCAPE? They HEEDED THE COUNSEL OF GOD, THEY KEPT THE SAYINGS OF JESUS, AND THEY DID THE WILL OF THE FATHER. They searched for the Lord with all of their heart, mind, strength and soul UNTIL they found him.

That is the entire pivot point of the FEW vs. the MANY. The FEW kept the **WHOLE COUNSEL OF GOD, BOTH POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE,** even though it was not popular, positive or easy.

***“Also OF YOUR OWN SELVES shall men ARISE,  
SPEAKING PERVERSE THINGS,  
TO DRAW AWAY DISCIPLES AFTER THEM.  
Therefore WATCH, and REMEMBER,  
that by the space of THREE YEARS I CEASED NOT TO WARN  
EVERY ONE NIGHT AND DAY WITH TEARS.”***  
(Acts 20:30-31)

Again we find a positive proof that the false teachers are not on the outside attacking the Church. They are on the inside, rising up with perverse doctrine (false theology), that sweeps those who embrace it into eternal ruin. These people ARE CHRISTIANS, WITHIN THE CHRISTIAN COMMUNITY. The word “perverse” is ‘diastrepho’ and it means **TO DISTORT, TO MISINTERPRET, TO CORRUPT THE TRUTH, TO ALTER THE TRUTH.** Please grasp this; it is vital:

**THEY MISINTERPRET THE WORD OF GOD.**

Is this not the same thing as a heresy? Is this not the same warning of Peter, that false teachers would CREEP IN TOTALLY UNAWARES with a *false gospel of salvation*?

The false teachers misinterpret what the Word says. They write great papers and books proclaiming their vast knowledge of the Word of God. Their commentaries would fill libraries; they are “ever learning, but never able to come to a knowledge of the truth”. THEY DENY AND CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST; THEY DENY THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY; THEY REFUSE TO PREACH THE WHOLE GOSPEL; THEY ONLY PREACH WHAT THEY WANT, AND ALL OF IT IS POSITIVE! **“And anon with great joy” their followers embrace these doctrines and are swept away.**

Their *hidden motive* is made plain. I would suggest that *their motive is also hidden from their own hearts! They are under a deception, and they “knowest not”*. Man, according to Scripture, has TWO HEARTS. One is known, the other is much deeper, and very powerful. It is this INNER HEART that believers do not come to recognize, because they refuse to walk the narrow way, which is a way of REVELATION OF THE REAL EVIL WITHIN. This inner heart, however secret to us, however hidden its motives may be, is plain to God, who searches the inner hearts. The hidden motive of these “popular” ministries is TO DRAW OFF A FOLLOWING. They need money to keep their ministries going. These poor dupes of Satan actually believe they are fulfilling the great commission of Jesus Christ! They watch their ministries grow to huge proportions, a sign to them that God is blessing their work. But was it God blessing their works or was it Satan? Who stands to gain the most if these ministries continue to propagate a wholly false salvation message, God or Satan? Does God allow it because of disobedience?

These “misinterpretations” of the Word of God have not one ounce of the Holy Spirit within them. They paint a portrait of a Christ who does not exist. Their Christ is always full of love and mercy and compassion, and forgives their every sin, and indulges their every lust, PROMISING LIBERTY TO ALL WHILE THEY THEMSELVES ARE THE SERVANTS OF CORRUPTION. Where was the love and mercy and compassion of Christ for the many? Surely you would have to see that the act of Christ in sending the vast majority of Christians away is not mercy! There is no compassion here, for they are sent away forever with no recourse! Mercy and compassion grant a REPRIEVE FROM JUST DUE PUNISHMENT. There IS NO REPRIEVE HERE!

Paul must have thought this was a matter of extreme importance for he warned them over a space of three years, and in literal weeping and crying. Why? Because Paul knew where the souls would end up if they did not heed what he was telling them. He knew that the Gospel of salvation would be turned into an **ALL POSITIVE, INSTANT GOSPEL, WITH NO OBSTACLES, NO PAIN, NO ANGUISH, NO DELAY**. It would sound right, look right, use the right words, but it would damn the person who embraced it. PAUL THOUGHT THIS EXTREMELY SERIOUS BUSINESS. The many who are rejected find out just how serious!

## **OTHER WARNINGS OF FALSE PROPHETS**

There are warnings of false prophets that verify all that we have studied so far. They had further testimony and support to help show us why so many Christians never enter heaven.

***“For many shall come in MY NAME,*  
***SAYING, I AM CHRIST;*****

**AND SHALL DECEIVE MANY.”**

**(Matthew 24:5)**

The usual interpretation given is that these people are **FALSE CHRISTS**. In other words they **CLAIM THEY ARE JESUS CHRIST**. I would suggest quite a different interpretation, because Jesus specifically mentions **FALSE CHRISTS** a little later in this discourse, and Jesus was not one to **REPEAT HIMSELF**. Read carefully what it says, and this is in relation to the **LATTER DAYS, THE DAYS OF THE LAODICEAN CHURCH**; of which we are in the very end of those latter days. The word “many” is ‘polus’ which means the **VAST MAJORITY WITHIN A SPECIFIC GROUP**. In this case, they **COME IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST**. “Many shall come in **MY** name”, means exactly what it says: **THEY WILL COME IN THE NAME OF JESUS**. The word “name” here is ‘onoma’ and it means **NAME OR AUTHORITY OF**. Jesus says that a whole group, **VERY LARGE GROUP OF PEOPLE ARE GOING TO RISE UP AND APPEAR IN THE AUTHORITY OF, AND IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST**, are going to **rise up, appear or come upon the scene, UNDER THE NAME OF, AND IN THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST**. That is exactly **AND ONLY** what it says.

This group that rises up, **IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST, AND CLAIMING THEY ARE UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHRIST; ARE GOING TO DECEIVE THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS**. This is what they say: **THEY SAY THAT JESUS CHRIST IS THE MESSIAH**. They come upon the scene **LIFTING UP JESUS CHRIST AS THE MESSIAH, AS THE LORD**. They are not saying that **THEY ARE THE CHRIST**, they come **IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST, SAYING “I (JESUS)” AM THE CHRIST. HE IS THE CHRIST**. We know that Jesus is **THE CHRIST**, so what is it that they do? Jesus is blunt; **THEY DECEIVE THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS**. The word “deceive” is ‘plano’ and it means **TO CAUSE TO WANDER, TO CAUSE TO GO ASTRAY, TO BE OUT OF**

## **THE ‘WAY’!**

These people, who rise up in the **LATTER YEARS, WHICH IS THE 20TH CENTURY**, all uphold Jesus Christ as the Messiah, but their theology, their doctrines **CAUSE THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS TO WANDER OUT OF THE WAY**. Because there is only one correct way to enter into the New Covenant, then obviously their doctrines **DECEIVE PEOPLE OUT OF THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY**. Is that not exactly what **PETER SAID IN SECOND PETER 2:1-3**? Did not Peter warn us that a whole group of false teachers would rise up **FROM INSIDE THE CHURCH, THAT WOULD UPHOLD THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST AS MESSIAH? THAT THEY WOULD BE CHRISTIAN IN APPEARANCE, AND THAT THEIR DOCTRINES WOULD BE SO CLOSE TO THE TRUTH THAT THE HERESY OF IT WOULD NOT BE DETECTED? THIS IS A WHOLE GROUP OF MEN WHO ARE FALSE PROPHETS THAT COME IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST, AND BY THEIR FALSE DOCTRINES OF SALVATION, DECEIVE MANY**.

Christ always warns His people. You have **NO EXCUSE FOR NOT KNOWING**. This is serious; this is a most deadly doctrine. Simply because you **UPHOLD JESUS CHRIST AS MESSIAH DOES NOT PROVE ANYTHING**. It is the **DOCTRINE COMPARED TO THE**

PLAINLY STATED DOCTRINE OF CHRIST THAT PROVES IT ALL. Jesus told you to BEWARE. That means you are to KNOW YOUR SCRIPTURES AND THEN BE ABLE TO COMPARE THE DOCTRINES OF TEACHERS AGAINST THE WORD OF GOD. THE WORD OF GOD IS THE STANDARD, and EVERYTHING MUST BE MEASURED FROM IT.

That this interpretation is correct is borne out by the fact that Jesus specifically mentions FALSE CHRISTS in Matthew 24:24. The term there for a false Christ is ONE WHO CLAIMS TO BE THE ACTUAL MESSIAH. These people claim to be THE CHRIST HIMSELF. That is not what Matthew 24:5 states whatsoever. To the contrary, these people come in the name and authority of Jesus Christ, they uphold Jesus Christ, but they deceive the vast majority of Christians by a false gospel message of salvation.

***“For there shall arise FALSE CHRISTS AND FALSE PROPHETS,*  
***AND SHALL SHEW GREAT SIGNS AND WONDERS;*  
***INSOMUCH THAT, IF IT WERE POSSIBLE,*  
***THEY SHALL DECEIVE THE VERY ELECT.”*  
**(Matthew 24:24)**********

A false Christ is one who declares that HE IS CHRIST. He will declare himself as the Messiah. We have hundreds of them running around in our day. A false prophet is one who teaches false doctrine or who gives false prophecy. We have hundreds of prophetic ministries in America, and some of them proclaim themselves true servants of God, and that God has anointed them prophets. They have deceived many people by their false prophetic utterances. It is one thing to MISINTERPRET PROPHETIC SCRIPTURE, IT IS QUITE ANOTHER TO PROCLAIM YOURSELF A PROPHET AND UTTER THE PROPHECY AS THOUGH IT WAS FROM THE LIPS OF GOD. This concept is what allows NEW DOCTRINE to invade the Church. When challenged on their NEW doctrines, they proclaim loudly that they are above challenge, for it came direct from the Lord, FROM THE LIPS OF GOD ALMIGHTY. God has another message: **READ MY LIPS, FOR I HAVE SPOKEN BY MY PROPHETS OF OLD.**

The false prophets here are the same ones that Christ warned about right after His statement about the narrow way. They will rise up in the latter days with a whole new gospel, a whole new Christ, a whole new theology. Their doctrines accompanied by lying signs and wonders will be so close to the real thing that IF IT WERE POSSIBLE, IT WOULD FOOL THE VERY ELECT. They use this supernatural display of signs and wonders to PUT THE STAMP OF GOD ON THEIR TEACHINGS. It will not matter if it contradicts Christ, the signs and wonders will be THE PROOF OF THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE CLAIMS.

Notice that IF IT WERE POSSIBLE it would fool the elect. That means IT IS NOT POSSIBLE TO FOOL THE REAL SON OF GOD. Why not? It is impossible to fool anyone who has undergone true, authentic regeneration, for it includes with it, A KNOWLEDGE OF THE TRUTH, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE. IT IS NOT POSSIBLE TO FOOL THEM, FOR THEY HAVE DIED UPON THE CROSS OF CHRIST, AND THIS DEATH WAS FULLY EXPERIENTIAL. YOU CANNOT FOOL THEM BECAUSE THEY HAVE PASSED FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE. YOU CANNOT FOOL THEM BECAUSE THEY EXPERIENTIALLY KNOW THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE AND KNOW FROM THE

**SPIRIT THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN IT AND HUMAN LOVES.** To prove that this is true, to further point out that the bestowment of agape love is the dividing line between the regenerated and the lost, Paul says this:

*“Even him (antichrist), whose coming is after the working of Satan with **ALL POWER AND SIGNS AND LYING WONDERS,** and with all deceivableness of **UNRIGHTEOUSNESS** in them **THAT PERISH;** **BECAUSE***

**THEY RECEIVED NOT**  
**THE (AGAPE) LOVE**

*OF THE TRUTH,*

**THAT THEY MIGHT BE SAVED.”**  
(2 Thessalonians 2:9-10)

This verse is often misinterpreted, but simply read, it says that antichrist will come with great lying signs and wonders, which will deceive **EVERYONE WHICH IS GOING TO DAMNATION,** and they go into damnation FOR ONLY ONE REASON! The reason is that they did not **OBTAIN THE AGAPE LOVE OF JESUS CHRIST (THE TRUTH).** Remember in 1 John 3:1 where it says that those that were THE SONS OF GOD had beheld and had bestowed upon them **AGAPE** LOVE? Jesus said you must be born again to enter heaven, and being born again means coming to a **knowledge of the mystery of God, that is DIVINE AGAPE LOVE.**

This verse is very clear: **YOU MUST RECEIVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD TO BE SAVED.** This verse IS NOT a verse that says if you love and search the scripture you will be saved, for we can prove that many people searched the scriptures and never came to a knowledge of the truth. This verse is very clearly a warning that **YOU MUST RECEIVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST IN ORDER TO BE SAVED.** If you do not lay hold of it, **YOU ARE NOT SAVED, AND WILL GO UNDER DECEPTION.** That which makes it **IMPOSSIBLE TO DECEIVE THE VERY ELECT IS THAT THEY KNOW IT BY DIRECT AND SUPERNATURAL REVELATION FROM GOD, FOR IT CANNOT BE LEARNED, IT IS BEYOND ALL UNDERSTANDING.** The rest **ONLY THINK THEY KNOW WHAT IT IS!**

We are going to research this verse intently later in this series, but the object lesson is in total harmony with everything else we have seen: **THIS MYSTERIOUS AGAPE LOVE OF GOD IS THE DIVISION POINT BETWEEN LIFE AND DEATH.** Paul then says:

*“And for **THIS CAUSE** **(THAT THEY DID NOT LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE)** God shall send them **STRONG DELUSION,***



**THAT THEY SHOULD BELIEVE A LIE:**  
**THAT THEY ALL MIGHT BE DAMNED**

**WHO BELIEVED NOT THE TRUTH,**  
**BUT HAD PLEASURE IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.”**

**(2 Thessalonians 2:11-12)**

God says there is only one cause for eternal damnation. **THAT THEY DID NOT RECEIVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST, THEY WERE NEVER IN UNION WITH HIM.** Jesus Christ is our only means of entering the New Covenant. He is the only name under the whole of heaven by which a soul may be saved. You must come into union with Him for He is our KINSMAN REDEEMER. Please notice that it is GOD HIMSELF that sends this delusion upon an unregenerate Church and unregenerate world. The Church will be seduced by bewitching spirits and be led right into the arms of the antichrist!

Jesus, in the Gospel of John, says there is only ONE REASON people are lost. **THEY WOULD NOT COME TO THE LIGHT TO HAVE THEIR DEEDS REPROVED** (John 3:19-20). Light is nothing more than a CODE WORD FOR AGAPE LOVE. Jesus says **THEY WOULD NOT COME TO THE LIGHT OF HIS LOVE, TO HAVE THEIR DEEDS COMPARED TO TRUE LOVE.** They refused to do it. They may have worshipped Christ, they may have been Christians, **BUT THEY REFUSED TO ALLOW JESUS CHRIST TO JUDGE THEM.** In other words, they did everything else, but **REFUSED JUDGMENT.** They had faith, they believed, they performed all sorts of miracles, but they **WOULD NOT** allow Christ to **JUDGE THEM AND DECLARE THEM GUILTY.** Their guilt, if they had any, was **SURFACE, MENTAL, OF THE SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN.**

When Christ said He would send the Holy Spirit to **JUDGE THE WORLD OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT, HE WAS NOT FOOLING.** This is not a **MENTAL PROCESS, A “BELIEVING” PROCESS,** or a process of conjuring up guilt feelings, or self-condemnation! This is a **SUPERNATURAL, VERY NEGATIVE PROCESS,** WHEREBY GOD **LITERALLY TEARS APART ALL OF THE DELUSIONS, DECEPTIONS, LIES AND FABRICATIONS OF A SATANIC CONTROLLED MIND AND HEART.** It is a very painful process, one that takes a considerable period of time, while God calls out, and then **JUDGES** the soul of the true believer. At the end of this process, that soul **KNOWS FROM DEEP WITHIN, FAR DEEPER THAN ANY MENTAL KNOWLEDGE, THAT IT IS DEAD, LOST AND HELL BOUND. IT KNOWS IT IS LOST FOR ETERNITY.** That is what the word “judgment” actually means! It is not positive, it is **NEGATIVE ALL THE WAY.**

God must do this, for He is **BRINGING THE SOUL TO THE “LIGHT” of PURE AGAPE LOVE, THE STANDARD OF LOVE FOR THE UNIVERSE.** God **MUST** and **WILL** bring that soul down to complete and **TOTAL HUMILIATION, RUIN, DEATH AND TOTAL LOSS.** He will literally **DESTROY THAT SOUL,** as is amply proved out later in this series. This destruction is **SUPERNATURAL,** and occurs while the soul is alive and walking around. The soul is being **BROUGHT INTO THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT. HIS DEEDS ARE BEING REPROVED, AND HE IS BEING FOUND GUILTY BEFORE THE MOST HIGH GOD.** That soul will find out **WHAT SCRIPTURE MEANS WHEN IT SAYS WE ARE DEAD IN OUR TRESPASSES AND SINS.** We ARE dead, and it will be proven to **THE TRUE CHRISTIAN WHO IS SEARCHING FOR GOD, just HOW DEAD, DEAD REALLY IS!** It is **VERY DEAD.** It is **UTTER RUIN.** The standard that God uses in this judgment is **DIVINE**

AGAPE, which Jesus called “light”. Because the believer DOES NOT HAVE ANY DIVINE AGAPE LOVE, he/she stands before God GUILTY, and MUST BE CONDEMNED TO ETERNAL RUIN.

This is where Jesus Christ STEPS IN. The soul has been JUDGED GUILTY, and this judgment is FULLY EXPERIENTIAL, IN SPITE OF WHAT MODERN CHRISTIAN FALSE PROPHETS CLAIM. You will BE FULLY AWARE OF THIS JUDGMENT. You will be able to TESTIFY TO IT. After having been found GUILTY, and CONDEMNED, Christ comes forward and SAVES THAT SOUL. HE OFFERS HIS OWN “AGAPE” TO THE REAL, AUTHENTIC BELIEVER, WHO HAS PROVED HIS FAITH AND HIS LOVE FOR CHRIST BY WALKING THE NARROW WAY, AND OFFERING UP HIS OWN LIFE FOR CHRIST. The offering of Christ’s OWN AGAPE to the believer is AN OFFER TO ACQUIT AND SET ASIDE THE GUILTY VERDICT.

If the believer ACCEPTS THE OFFER OF CHRIST, CHRIST BESTOWS AGAPE TO THE BELIEVER (1 John 3:1). HE COMES “INTO” the very INNER HEART of that believer (Revelation 3:20), and TAKES HIS RIGHTFUL PLACE UPON THE THRONE OF THAT BELIEVER’S HOLY OF HOLIES. It is FULLY EXPERIENTIAL, and you must have THE TESTIMONY OF IT. That believer then passes from DEATH UNTO LIFE (1 John 3:14) and CANNOT COME INTO CONDEMNATION again, for the ISSUE between the believer and God has been SETTLED BY CHRIST, WHO IS OUR ONLY MEDIATOR.

**THERE IS NO OTHER NAME UNDER HEAVEN BY WHICH WE MAY BE SAVED. THERE IS ONLY ONE MEDIATOR OF THE NEW COVENANT. IT IS JESUS CHRIST. HE WAS THE ONLY ONE ANOINTED BY GOD THE FATHER.**

It is the AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST that saves the believer. It is the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF CHRIST that saves the believer. It is this AGAPE LOVE that is THE ROBE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, THE WHITE ROBE OF CHRIST THAT COVERS THE BELIEVER. It is a REAL, EXPERIENTIAL PROCESS, and only a FEW can testify to it, and only a FEW are SAVED.

This process is SO PAINFUL, JESUS SAID, THAT ONLY A FEW WILL GO THROUGH IT WHILE ALIVE. In essence, every true believer WILL FOLLOW CHRIST RIGHT INTO THE PIT OF HELL AND DAMNATION. If it is refused, THAT SOUL WILL BE LOST FOR ETERNITY, for it refused the ONLY WAY INTO THE NEW COVENANT. There is NO OTHER WAY IN. There is no other way listed in all of Scripture. NOT ONE. THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS TO THIS. Either you can testify to it, and KNOW IT FOR A FACT, or you are under DECEPTION.

That is why Scripture says that IF YOU DO NOT LAY HOLD OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST, YOU WILL GO UNDER THE DELUSION OF FALSE SALVATION, A FALSE SECURITY. IT DAMNS YOU FOR EVER AND EVER AND EVER. You cannot ESCAPE once you have rejected Christ. Where is the mercy and compassion of a God of love here? It is God Himself that sends the delusion to **DAMN THE ENTIRE HUMAN RACE FOREVER**. Do not multiply the grace of God beyond where Scripture says the boundaries are. The many were not under the grace of God even though they claimed they were. The grace, the mercy and

compassion of God have always fallen **ONLY UPON THOSE WHO ARE OBEDIENT TO HIS COMMANDS.**

These people did not believe THE TRUTH. “THY WORD IS TRUTH”, SAID JESUS. They did not believe what the Bible said. They did not believe that God meant what He said! They did not believe they had to obey God or keep the sayings of Jesus. They declared the strait gate and narrow way a pack of lies and an insult to their theology and their doctrines of faith and grace. They manufactured another Gospel, another Christ, one that was befitting for their own corruption and degradation. Their Christ took them right into eternal loss and ruin. What a price to pay for arrogance, pride and the refusal to simply read as a child the plain and simple commands of God.

Jude wrote of a group of men who would sneak into the sheepfold and who would redefine WHAT GRACE MEANS. The redefinition of faith and grace are the foundation from which the false teachers build their theology. From grace and faith, you take a small step and slowly redefine works, repentance, conversion, regeneration and legalism.

*“For there are certain men*  
**CREPT IN UNAWARES,**  
*who were before of old*  
**ordained to this condemnation,**  
**UNGODLY MEN,**  
**TURNING THE GRACE OF OUR GOD**  
**INTO LASCIVIOUSNESS,**  
**AND DENYING THE ONLY LORD GOD,**  
**AND OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST.**  
(Jude 4)

The word for “crept in unawares” is ‘pareisduno’ and it means **TO LODGE STEALTHILY, TO SETTLE IN ALONGSIDE, TO GO UNDETECTED.** This is not Christian cults, folks, this is **MAINSTREAM CHRISTIANITY FROM THE FUNDAMENTALISTS TO THE LIBERALS.** This doctrine, this **PERVERSION OF WHAT GRACE MEANS,** would be **ACCEPTED BY THE CHURCH, FOR THEY ARE UNAWARE OF THIS PERVERSION.** It is in perfect accord with the warnings of Peter.

This new doctrine, this new theology would sound wonderful, and would expand upon the **GRACE OF GOD, AND THAT GRACE IS GRACE,** and after all, is not grace 100%? Does it not allow me to be me? Does it now allow me to be what I can be? Am I not free under grace to explore myself? Either we are free, or we are not free, and either we are under grace, or we are not under grace! The arguments for this definition of **ABSOLUTE GRACE AND UNCONDITIONAL GRACE** would lead to a **“GRACE EXPLOSION”** which would corrupt all those that eagerly accepted it! Once again it would **CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST.** It would oppose everything He taught about the grace of God. Their teachings would become **THE UNDERPINNINGS** for a license of all sorts of ungodly behavior.

The teachers themselves are ungodly men, they are **NOT REGENERATED, FOR THEY ARE CALLED ‘UNGODLY’.** A REGENERATED CHRISTIAN IS NEVER CALLED UNGODLY, FOR THAT WOULD DECLARE CHRIST UNGODLY, AND THE REGENERATED ARE

UNDER THE ROBES OF CHRIST, AND THEIR CHARACTER HAS BEEN ALTERED INTO A NEW CREATURE BY THE AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. We find once again, a common denominator throughout all those who are condemned: **NO REGENERATION, NO AGAPE LOVE, NO UNION WITH CHRIST.** They are, with one accord, **BASTARD SONS AND DAUGHTERS, POSING AS ANGELS OF LIGHT WHEN THEY ARE ANGELS OF DARKNESS AND DEATH.** Short of full and complete BIBLICAL REPENTANCE, their damnation slumbers not.

THEIR REDEFINITION OF GRACE IS ORIENTED TOWARDS THE “SELF”. IT FREES THE “SELF” AND ALLOWS THE “SELF” TO BE ALL THAT THE “SELF” WANTS TO BE. It is focused upon ‘I’ and “ME”, and what “I WANT”. The books that are flooding the market right now focus upon THE SELF, THE PERSON, THE BELIEVER. Paul was very blunt: IT WAS NOT PAUL THAT LIVED, BUT CHRIST IN PAUL. PAUL WAS DEAD. PAUL HAD DIED THE DEATH OF THE CROSS. HE KNEW THAT “THE SELF” was HIS ENEMY, AND NO PLACE COULD BE GIVEN IT. It had to be CRUCIFIED DAILY. If the self is DEAD, then IT NO LONGER LIVES. If it no longer lives, then it no longer CONTROLS. If it no longer controls, then CHRIST DOES. The grace explosion movement is a massive lie out of the pits, another heresy of the last days.

The *real definition* of grace is very narrow, very strict: THE MANY DID NOT AVAIL THEMSELVES OF THE GRACE OF GOD. The grace of God is confined TOTALLY to the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. If you are not ENTERING IN, YOU ARE NOT UNDER THE GRACE OF GOD, insofar as the New Covenant is concerned. From a worldly viewpoint, THE WHOLE WORLD IS UNDER GRACE, FOR IT IS GOD THAT KEEPS THE WORLD TOGETHER. But we are speaking of the **GRACE THAT BRINGS ONE TO SALVATION, TO REGENERATION, TO AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT AND LIFE.**

Next, we find that Peter speaks of the writings of Paul, and that Paul’s writings were difficult to understand, because of the insight Paul had into the MYSTERY OF God and his understanding of the plan of redemption. We will now examine Peter’s remarks, for they will add yet another confirmation of everything we have learned to date:

*“As also in all his (Paul’s) epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood,*  
**WHICH THEY THAT ARE UNLEARNED AND UNSTABLE WREST,**  
*AS THEY DO ALSO THE OTHER SCRIPTURES,*  
**UNTO THEIR OWN DESTRUCTION.**  
*Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before,*  
**BEWARE LEST YE ALSO, BEING LED AWAY WITH THE ERROR OF THE WICKED,**  
**FALL FROM YOUR OWN STEADFASTNESS.”**  
(2 Peter 3:16-17)

The word “unlearned” is ‘amathes’ and it means **IGNORANT.** The word “unstable” is ‘asteriktos’, and it comes from ‘sterizo’ which means **TO BE FIXED, ESTABLISHED, RESOLUTE, FIRM, GROUNDED, SURE, TO SET FAST, OR IN THIS CASE THE**

**REVERSAL OF THOSE MEANINGS.** Thus these people are not grounded in SOUND DOCTRINE. The word “wrest” is ‘strebloo’, which is from ‘stropho’ which means **TO TWIST, TO TURN AROUND, TO PERVERT OR TO REVERSE.** In short, it means to misinterpret by the **ACTUAL REVERSING OF THE TRUE INTENT.** It carries with it the same concept of a **CONTRADICTION, A DENIAL, TO DISAVOW THE INTENT OF CHRIST;** or TWO TOTALLY OPPOSING VIEWPOINTS. The false teachers will bring forward a theology that **is the diametric opposite** of what Christ commanded be done. It will not appear a contradiction on the surface, it will appear as though the two concepts are identical and in agreement, but underneath the surface, **THEY WILL BE IN DIRECT OPPOSITION, ONE TO THE OTHER.**

This is an important clue for us to identify false teachers, for underneath all the high sounding Christian words will lie a **COUNTER THEOLOGY THAT RUNS IN TOTAL CONTRADICTION TO WHAT CHRIST COMMANDED.** Paul was a theologian because God is THE MASTER THEOLOGIAN. Paul presented the facts on repentance, faith, grace, works, legalism, etc. It is from Paul that we obtain most of our knowledge on how Christian faith and grace all come together. This is the exact area that the unstable wrest Scripture to their own destruction. The many “wrested” the Scripture to their eternal ruin. **THEY REVERSED IT!** Their theology reverses the meaning from the actual intent. Whatsoever Christ or Paul or the other writers say, they will reverse the meaning, **YET THEY WILL NOT REALIZE THEY ARE DOING SO!** They will be adamant that their “interpretation” is **WHOLY CORRECT.**

You can sit down with these people and point out **OBVIOUS** contradictions and they will say, “you are not reading it correctly. What Christ really means here is this...” and then they **TOTALLY REVERSE THE PLAIN AND DIRECT STATEMENTS MADE.** They take a Scripture from here and there, and **ALWAYS OUT OF CONTEXT,** and then weave them together to formulate their beliefs. It is a supernatural blindness that comes from disobedience. God says He will choose their delusions, and it does little good to debate with these types of people. They are not interested in truth; they are interested **only in confirmation of their pet theological positions.**

If these men contradict Christ and the Holy Spirit, using Scripture to accomplish it via wresting it to the opposite meaning, then we have a total confirmation what Jesus said: ***TWO GATES, TWO WAYS, TWO THEOLOGIES, TWO FRUITS AND TWO DESTINATIONS.*** Inasmuch as the narrow way is the **ONLY** way leading to life, for Christ gave us no alternatives, nor any exceptions to the rule, then all Scripture must be wrested in such a way as to oppose and contradict the strait gate and narrow way.

**That is exactly what we have found in all previous study. THE FALSE TEACHERS WITH ONE ACCORD VIA THEIR THEOLOGY CLAIM THAT THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY COULD NOT POSSIBLY MEAN WHAT IT SAYS, FOR IT IS A VIOLATION OF THEIR DEFINITIONS OF FAITH AND GRACE, AND IT THEREFORE MUST BE A FORM OF “WORKS” OR “LEGALISM”.**

**FALSE PROPHETS WHO REFUSE TO ALLOW OTHERS TO ENTER IN:**

*“But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye*  
**SHUT UP THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN AGAINST MEN:**

**FOR YE NEITHER GO IN YOURSELVES, NEITHER**  
**SUFFER YE THEM THAT ARE ENTERING TO GO IN.”**

(Matthew 23:13)

This stinging rebuke is just as applicable today against the modern Christian scribes and Pharisees, for they are also hypocrites, and by their theology THEY SHUT UP THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN AGAINST MEN. Their theology prevents anyone from entering into heaven because it is FALSE THEOLOGY. These modern false teachers will not enter in, because they are certain their theology is correct, so **THEIR CLAIM OF HAVING ALREADY ENTERED IN IS NO DIFFERENT THAN THE JEWS IN JESUS’ DAY!** They REFUSE to go in as Christ commands, their theology totally contradicts the only method Christ gave, and now they advance their false precepts to prevent all those **WHO WERE ENTERING FROM DOING SO.** The false teachers will suffer the same condemnation that those who rejected Christ when He was here faced. THERE IS NO WAY THEY CAN ESCAPE THE FIRES OF HELL, SHORT OF UTTER BIBLICAL REPENTANCE, WHICH IS VIA THE NARROW WAY.

*“Thou BLIND Pharisee, **CLEANSE FIRST***  
*that which **IS WITHIN THE CUP** and platter,*  
**that the outside OF THEM MAY BE CLEAN ALSO.”**

(Matthew 23:26)

Jesus is blunt: for all of their religious pretense at being Holy men of God, their religion only makes them appear **ON THE OUTSIDE TO BE CLEAN.** They were pious men, men of God, the religious leaders of their day. Jesus tells them something very strange: **CLEAN UP YOUR INNER HEART FIRST, WHICH, IF THEY WOULD DO SO, WOULD MAKE THEM CLEAN THROUGH AND THROUGH.** It is a valid reference to the New Heart Covenant, the bestowment of agape love. The ‘many’ rejected of Christ were the Christian religious leaders of our day, who by their pious manner **HAD A FORM OF GODLINESS, BUT THEY DENIED THE REAL POWER OF GOD, WHICH IS THE CROSS. THE POWER OF GOD IS KNOWN ONLY TO THOSE WHO PICK UP THEIR OWN CROSS AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO SOUL DEATH.** These false teachers claim they are clean, when in reality they are filthy unregenerate men, wholly **UNCLEAN** because they ARE NOT REGENERATED MEN, THEY HAVE NO AGAPE LOVE INSIDE OF THEM.

*“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye are*  
**LIKE UNTO WHITED SEPULCHRES,**

**WHICH INDEED APPEAR BEAUTIFUL OUTWARD,**  
**BUT ARE WITHIN FULL OF DEAD MEN’S BONES,**

***AND OF ALL UNCLEANNESS.***  
**(Matthew 23:27)**

This is the perfect description of the FALSE CHRISTIAN TEACHERS, PREACHERS AND EVANGELISTS! On the outside they carry a FORM OF GODLINESS, they appear in all manner of outward appearance as SINCERE, DEDICATED AND TRUE MEN OF GOD. It is all a façade, a false front, for INWARDLY THEY HAVE NEVER UNDERGONE THE AGAPE LOVE TRANSACTION, THEY HAVE NEVER BEEN REGENERATED. Their religion is all form and pretense, with not one bit of truth or authenticity to it! What makes a man clean is the agape love of Jesus Christ!

*“Even so  
ye also outwardly appear RIGHTEOUS UNTO MEN,  
BUT WITHIN YE ARE FULL OF HYPOCRISY and  
INIQUITY.”*  
**(Matthew 23:28)**

Satan’s “angels of light” appear in all manner of OUTWARD form to be GODLY CHRISTIANS. There is no way you can spot their true identity by a surface inspection. You must travel deeper into their statements of theology and doctrine, for it is here that they contradict their Lord. The “many” were sent away and called “workers of iniquity”, just as Jesus said these religious leaders were full of iniquity. Nothing ever changes, only names and places change, the situation always remain the same, played out in thousands of ways, but always with the same results!

## **THE CONFUSION OF BABYLON THE GREAT**

We are now going to turn our attention to the United States of America and the false prophets and teachers of our land. It may surprise you to learn, and most Christians utterly reject it, **THAT THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA IS THE NATION BABYLON THE GREAT.** There are over 140 parameters laid down by God in both the Old and New Testament that identify a great END TIME NATION with the CODE NAME BABYLON THE GREAT. A proper study of these parameters will prove to anyone with an open heart and mind, and one who can listen to God, that America is the **ONLY NATION ON EARTH** to fulfill those parameters. Whether you will receive it or not, **AMERICA IS BABYLON THE GREAT, AMERICA IS ALREADY UNDER THE JUDGMENT OF GOD, AND AMERICA IS GOING TO BE UTTERLY DESTROYED, AND THERE IS NO TURNING BACK, THERE WILL BE NO REPENTANCE, IT IS OVER, SEALED, AND DONE.** If the time schedules given to us by the Old Testament prophets are correct, and can be taken in a literal sense, America will not be here much longer.

It is a concept **UTTERLY REJECTED BY ALMOST ALL PROPHETIC SCHOLARS AND CHRISTIANS.** That is precisely and exactly what God said would HAPPEN IN BABYLON. They would refuse their identity; they would refuse to FACE WHO AND WHAT THEY

ACTUALLY ARE. Babylon is the VERY HEIGHT OF APOSTASY, ARROGANCE, PRIDE AND SIN AND REBELLION AGAINST THE WORD OF GOD. God has a very special message for EVERY SINGLE CHRISTIAN MINISTER, PREACHER BOY, EVANGELIST AND TEACHER OF FALSE DOCTRINE. Read it, heed it, **REPENT OR YOU WILL PERISH:**

**“MY PEOPLE (THE CHRISTIANS)**  
**HATH BEEN**  
**LOST SHEEP:**  
  
**THEIR SHEPHERDS**  
**(PASTORS, TEACHERS, EVANGELISTS)**  
**HAVE CAUSED THEM TO GO ASTRAY**  
**(TO GO OUT OF THE WAY),**  
**THEY HAVE TURNED THEM AWAY ON THE MOUNTAINS:**  
  
**THEY HAVE GONE FROM MOUNTAIN TO HILL,**  
**THEY HAVE FORGOTTEN THEIR RESTING PLACE.”**  
**(Jeremiah 50:6)**

God declares that in the latter day Babylon, a nation filled with a very rich people, who live in luxury and have every need and want satisfied, **ARE LOST SHEEP**. It sounds very much like a replay of the Laodicean Church that **knowest not it is not heaven bound**. GOD’S PEOPLE ARE LOST SHEEP. Sheep in this case refers to CHRISTIANS IN THE CHRISTIAN ERA. The statement is blunt: **THEY ARE LOST**. Why are they LOST, God?

BECAUSE THEIR SHEPHERDS (READ LEADERS OF THE CHURCH) have **LED THEM ASTRAY**. To lead one astray is **TO DECEIVE ONE, OR TO MAKE ONE GO OUT OF THE WAY**. Because there is only **ONE WAY**, then WHAT WAY DO THE SHEPHERDS LEAD THEM AWAY FROM? You guessed it, the **NARROW WAY**. If you do not believe it, read on, for God is very precise about what they do: **THEY TURNED THEM AWAY ON THE MOUNTAINS**.

What does God mean when He says they turned them away upon the mountains? What is the opposite of a mountain? A VALLEY. In Christian terminology, WHAT IS A MOUNTAIN TOP EXPERIENCE? Is it not a **GREAT EMOTIONAL HIGH**? Do you not hear the phrase **LIVE HIGH UPON THE MOUNTAINS WITH GOD? RISE ABOVE IT ALL, AND REACH OUT TO CLIMB THE MOUNTAIN? IT IS THE EXPERIENCE OF GREAT JOY AND LAUGHTER**. In short, the mountain top is an **ALL POSITIVE GOSPEL**. It is an all positive experience, all spiritual highs, and so His people are turned on to a **FALSE GOSPEL FILLED WITH JOY AND LAUGHTER, OR MOUNTAIN AND HILLTOP EXPERIENCES. HIS PEOPLE ARE LED BY THE FALSE SHEPHERDS INTO THE INSTANT SALVATION GOSPEL, THE “ANON WITH GREAT JOY” GOSPEL**.

Remember the ANON WITH GREAT JOY CROWD, in the parable of the sower? They were those who laid hold of the word with GREAT JOY INSTANTLY. Everything IS POSITIVE,



EVERYTHING IS INSTANT, **EVERYTHING IS A MOUNTAIN TOP OR A HILL TOP EXPERIENCE.** The shepherds feed them a gospel that **TURNS THEM UPON THE MOUNTAINS.** If they are turned upon the mountains, and the hills, **THEN DO THEY EVER GO TO THE VALLEY?**

If the mountain top experience is all joy and laughter, with great emotional and spiritual highs, a **CELEBRATION OF HAPPINESS,** then what do you suppose the VALLEY REPRESENTS? The valley is the direct opposite of a mountain. A valley represents the very depths of emotional despair and gloom. It might surprise you to know that the Lord fights His battles in **THE VALLEY.** The wars of Israel are **VALLEY WARS.** The valley to the Christian is a time of gloom, doom, despair and agony of the soul. It is a time of mental and soul anguish, pressure and tribulation of the soul, **FOR THE WAY IS NARROW.** Jesus termed the ONE TRUE WAY, NARROW. The word “narrow” is ‘thlibo’ and it means **TO CROWD, PRESS IN UPON, TO AFFLICT, TO CAUSE TRIBULATION, TROUBLE.** **In short, ANGUISH OF SOUL AND SPIRIT, A ‘VALLEY’ EXPERIENCE.**

If you will do a word study of how the word valley is used, you will find there are some incredible nuggets of wisdom to be found in relation to **SALVATION IN THE LORD.** The narrow way is a VALLEY WAY. Israel was promised the PROMISED LAND. They were to enter in to the Promised Land and claim it for their own. They were to **ENTER IN TO GOD’S REST.** We will begin where Moses is reminding the leaders of Reuben and Gad that they ought to go over the Jordan and fight with the other tribes. Moses harkens back to their fathers, who refused to enter the Promised Land:

*“For when they went up  
unto **THE VALLEY** of Eshcol, and  
**SAW THE LAND,**  
*they discouraged the heart of the children of Israel,  
**THAT THEY SHOULD NOT GO INTO THE LAND**  
**WHICH THE LORD HAD GIVEN THEM...**”*  
(Numbers 32:9)*

They went unto A VALLEY TO SEE THE PROMISED LAND. And when they saw it, they WOULD NOT ENTER IN. To get to the PROMISED LAND, **THEY MUST GO THROUGH THE VALLEY OF ESHCOL TO ENTER IN.** And the FATHERS (READ PREACHER BOYS, EVANGELISTS AND TEACHERS) DISCOURAGED THE HEART OF THE CHRISTIANS, AND TOLD THEM THEY SHOULD NOT GO THROUGH THE VALLEY, **THEY SHOULD NOT ENTER IN.** Is this not what Peter and Christ said would happen? That a whole group of men, POSING AS REAL, BONAFIED CHRISTIAN LEADERS WOULD RISE UP AND TELL THE CHILDREN OF GOD **THAT THEY SHOULD NOT ENTER INTO THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY?**

Because the SHEPHERDS TURNED THE FLOCK UNTO THE MOUNTAINS, AND UNTO A GOSPEL OF EMOTIONAL HIGHS AND GREAT JOY AND LAUGHTER, THEY REFUSED TO ALLOW THEM TO GO INTO THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH, WHERE THEY SHOULD HAVE GONE.

The prophecy is directed towards the latter day Babylon the Great, which is the United States. It says that **BECAUSE THE SHEEP WERE LED UPON THE MOUNTAINS AND HILLS, THEY WERE TURNED ASTRAY, AND LED OUT OF THE WAY.** If being upon hills and mountains is **OUT OF THE WAY, THEN THE VALLEY IS THE ONLY PLACE LEFT.** What is in the valley? God says that because the false shepherds turned them upon the hills and mountains **THEY FORGOT THEIR RESTING PLACE. Therefore the resting place must be found in the valley of affliction and trouble. We are commanded in Hebrews to enter into GOD'S REST.**

This prophecy against the SHEPHERDS OF THE UNITED STATES, THE PREACHER BOYS, THE EVANGELISTS, THE FALSE TEACHERS AND FALSE PROPHETS IS THAT THEY WOULD COME UP WITH A THEOLOGY **THAT WOULD MAKE THE SHEEP OF GOD, THE FOLLOWERS OF CHRIST, FORGET THEIR RESTING PLACE.** They would not even know what the REST WAS. They would be fed a line of garbage and would eat of it, rather than the pure Word of God. The word "resting place" is 'rebets' and it means **COUCH, PLACE OF REPOSE, LAY DOWN, QUIETNESS.**

*"Thus saith the Lord,*  
**STAND YE IN THE WAYS,**  
*(THE MANY WAYS OF THE BROAD WAY),*  
*AND SEE, AND ASK FOR THE*  
**OLD PATHS,**  
  
**WHERE IS THE GOOD WAY (NARROW)**  
  
**AND WALK THEREIN,**  
  
**AND YE SHALL FIND REST FOR YOUR SOULS.**  
  
*BUT THEY SAID,*  
**WE WILL NOT WALK**  
**THEREIN."**  
*(Jeremiah 6:16)*

The modern preachers, teachers and evangelists of America, preach a FALSE GOSPEL OF PEACE WITH GOD, WHEN THERE IS NO PEACE. THERE IS NO REGENERATION, AND THERE IS NO AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. THEIR THEOLOGY CAUSES THE SHEEP TO TURN ASIDE; AND THEY REFUSE TO ALLOW THEM TO WALK IN THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH. When any judgment from the Holy Spirit comes upon them, they claim it is A SATANIC ATTACK, AND ATEMPT TO "CAST OUT" that UNHOLY SPIRIT. God says to them: **STAND IN THE MULTITUDE OF YOUR WAYS. Look** at the multitude of your doctrines, of your theologies in your denominations; **LOOK AT THEM AND BE DISMAYED. LOOK AT WHAT YOU HAVE CREATED!**

Then when you have **REALLY LOOKED AT THE MESS YOU HAVE MADE**, ask God for the OLD PATHWAYS, WHERE THE NARROW WAY IS, AND WHEN YOU ONCE AGAIN FIND IT, WALK THEREIN! **BUT THEY WOULD NOT. THEY REFUSED TO DO IT, THEY UTTERLY REJECTED THE COUNSEL OF GOD.** That is why the vast majority of Christian leaders and Christian lay people perish. **THEY WILL NOT WALK THE NARROW WAY.** They stiffen their necks, and they invent all types of rationales and excuses TO PROVE THEY DO NOT HAVE TO DO IT. If you will walk the walk of the narrow way, **YE SHALL FIND REST FOR YOUR SOULS.** The rest of Christ is the **REST OF AGAPE LOVE, FOR IN AGAPE LOVE IS REST FROM YOUR LABORS!** Part one of the rest of God is the bestowment of AGAPE LOVE.

It is from America that the FALSE GOSPEL, **THE LOOK ALIKE GOSPEL COMES FROM AND GOES TO ALL THE WORLD, IT IS PART OF THE BABYLONIAN MYSTERY.** It is from America that the false teachers fulfill every single parameter of Peter. It is a gospel of damnation, for it turns the sheep upon the mountains, and Christ said you must Go DOWN TO THE LOWEST ROOM AND WAIT, TO GO DOWN TO THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH, AND ALLOW THE LORD TO PREPARE FOR YOU A TABLE IN THE PRESENCE OF YOUR ENEMIES. IT IS HERE, IN THE LOWEST ROOM OF DEATH THAT LIFE WILL BE FOUND.

The call of Christ is always the same: We must get down to the reasons behind sin, and not focus on sin itself. Why does man sin? What is there in man that makes him want to do those things that God has clearly told him to avoid? The answer is an evil heart. It is the heart of hearts that Jesus came to repair, and **AFTER HAVING ENTERED INTO THE HEART, HE BEGINS TO HEAL THOSE AREAS OF OUR LIVES THAT HAVE BEEN CORRUPTED BY OUR HEART.** The Christian 'religion' of today, with a totally perverted theology offers no more help to man than any other religion of the world, WHICH IS PRECISELY WHY THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH IS NOW DEEPLY INVOLVED IN PSYCHIATRY AND PSYCHOLOGY, WHOSE FOUNDERS WERE ADMITTED OCCULTISTS. THEY DEAL WITH THE MIND, THE SENSE MAN, THE SOUL MAN. THEY DO NOT, AND CANNOT DEAL WITH THE INNER HEART. In point of fact, there is very little DIFFERENT about Christianity today than the other world religions, which is why they are able to MERGE AND UNIFY WITH EACH OTHER, IN PREPARATION FOR THE FINAL GRAND DELUSION.

***“We are CONFOUNDED,***  
***BECAUSE WE HAVE HEARD REPROACH:***  
***SHAME HATH COVERED OUR FACES:***  
***FOR STRANGERS ARE COME INTO THE SANCTUARIES***  
***OF THE LORD’S HOUSE.”***  
***(Jeremiah 51:51)***

The American Church is going to hear REPROACH. THEY ARE GOING TO HEAR SEVERE REBUKE. Their faces shall be covered with shame, **FOR THEY ALLOWED STRANGERS, WITH ALIEN DOCTRINES,** to enter into their Churches. These strangers were ANGELS OF LIGHT, sent to seduce the Church **INTO THE NEW AND WHOLLY FALSE DOCTRINES.** These aliens, total strangers to the Lord, took up residence **WITHIN THE VERY**

**SANCTUARIES OF THE LORD.** They gained entrance because of the **FALSE SHEPHERDS, WHICH PAVED THE WAY FOR THE ULTIMATE DELUSION AND DECEPTION.** The new age guru's moved right into every major denomination, and finally once in there they did **PERSECUTE** the real believers. **WOE UNTO YOU, YOU FALSE SHEPHERDS. REPENT! REPENT! REPENT!**

Jesus Christ is not a religion. He did not bring another religion. He came to offer man a **NEW HEART, A SUPERNATURAL CHANGE BY THE LIVING GOD!** The form and ritual of religion do not avail anything today, they are vain and lead to utter ruin. Christ came to put the ax to the root of the human condition, and that root is the hidden innermost heart. The many refused to allow Christ to deal with their heart. They held to a mental and intellectual form of faith that appeared for all the world to be a heart faith, a true heart belief. God allowed that delusion, for these people refused to enter the strait gate and would not walk the narrow way to find life. They refused to face the reproof of God; they refused the judgment of God. They would none of His counsel, and none of His reproof. They refuse to allow their deeds to be judged by God's standards: **AGAPE LOVE.** They are all swept into eternal ruin.

We must now examine **WHY** all of this happened. We have proved in the absolute sense that there is one common denominator in all of what we have researched: **THE MANY, THE NON-OVERCOMERS, THE FALSE TEACHERS, PREACHERS AND EVANGELISTS, THE EVIL SERVANTS AND ALL THE OTHERS HAVE ONE THING IN COMMON:**

**THEY NEVER CAME TO AUTHENTIC REGENERATION**

**THEY NEVER ENTERED INTO TRUE UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST**

**THEY WERE NEVER GIVEN A NEW HEART.**

So now we are left with a question that **WE MUST ANSWER. SO YOU THINK YOU KNOW Jesus, BUT DOES Jesus KNOW YOU?** The one common reason **EVERYONE MISSES HEAVEN AND GOES INTO ETERNAL RUIN IS WHOLLY DEPENDENT UPON JESUS KNOWING YOU!** Your claims to **KNOWING JESUS ARE NOT VALID IN THIS THING WE CALL SALVATION.**

Do you understand the ramifications of this? It becomes imperative then to find out if there is **ANY EVIDENCE WE AS BELIEVERS CAN HAVE THAT PROVES BEYOND ANY DOUBT WHATEVER, THAT JESUS DOES IN FACT KNOW US!** If our very salvation depends upon this **ONE ITEM,** then it would seem that Jesus would tell us what He means when He says **HE MUST KNOW US!** Indeed He does, and the proofs that He offers are not the proofs given to us today by modern Christian theology whatever. In fact, the proof **YOU MUST HAVE IS DENIED BY EVERY MAJOR DENOMINATION IN AMERICA TODAY.** They will not enter in, and neither will you if you do not have this one **UNMISTAKABLE PROOF.**

***DOES JESUS KNOW YOU?***

## **DARK LIGHT SERIES – THREE**

# **THE CREATION OF MAN IN THE IMAGE OF GOD**

In the first two studies we have examined the Scriptures and found that not only is it possible for souls to think they are saved and going to heaven when the reality is the reverse, but that **THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS ARE INVOLVED IN THIS DELUSION**. We found that THE MANY REJECTED, THE EVIL SERVANTS, THE NON-OVERCOMERS, THE MANY WHO FOLLOW AFTER THE FALSE PROPHETS HAVE ONE THING IN COMMON THAT THEY ARE MISSING: **AUTHENTIC REGENERATION**.

IT WAS ALSO PROVED THAT THEIR DECEPTION HINGES UPON THE FACT THAT THEY **CLAIMED A SPIRITUAL REBIRTH, A REGENERATION AND A UNION WITH CHRIST THAT WAS NOT TRUE, BECAUSE THEY HAD EMBRACED A THEOLOGY OF THE FALSE PROPHETS**. We have found that the one common element that makes it untrue is that they failed TO LAY HOLD OF THIS **MYSTERIOUS LOVE OF GOD CALLED 'AGAPE'**. The only way this can happen is to FORM A BELIEF STRUCTURE AROUND UNTRUE DOCTRINE, UNTRUE THEOLOGY. They embrace a false doctrine, a heresy, and that heresy DAMNED THEM TO ETERNAL RUIN. IT HAS BEEN OFTEN CLAIMED THAT A MAN'S THEOLOGY DOES NOT MATTER; ALL THAT MATTERS IS THAT HE BE SINCERE. Nothing could be further from the truth, for a soul's theology is WHAT HE BELIEVES TO BE TRUE. If the theology is wrong, and it is embraced as truth, THE THEOLOGY BECOMES A SUBSTITUTE FOR THE LIVING CHRIST, and that soul in fact becomes an IDOL WORSHIPPER, AND THE IDOL IS THE THEOLOGY, which POSES AS CHRIST.

The primary key to all of this boils down to what **CONSTITUTES AUTHENTIC REGENERATION**. All of the people sent away NEVER UNDERWENT A TRUE AND AUTHENTIC REBIRTH. This being the case, then our efforts must be directed toward finding out ***WHAT CONSTITUTES AUTHENTIC REGENERATION. WHAT IS IT? WHAT MUST I DO TO BE SAVED? WHAT ARE THE PROOFS? IS IT EXPERIENTIAL OR NOT? CAN I KNOW FOR SURE?***

This issue is so important that Satan and his demons are going to apply all of their effort and time to attacking those areas that lead to authentic regeneration, and he will obviously attempt to REDEFINE WHAT IT MEANS, so that people WILL THINK AND BE POSITIVE THEY ARE REGENERATED AND BORN AGAIN WHEN IN FACT THEY ARE NOT. In other words, Satan WILL BRING IN A SUBSTITUTE REBIRTH. HE WILL DO IT FOR THE CHRISTIAN, AND HE WILL DO IT FOR THE "SPIRITUAL" PERSON. The only safe method we have is to dig deep into the Word of God and find out what God says about it, and cross compare what we find out with all the rest of Scripture. If we find a harmony from Genesis to Revelation, then we must embrace it as truth, and become obedient to what we have learned. To find out the simplicity of the mission of Christ, we must go to Genesis and the story of the creation and fall of man. **If we can once grasp the SIMPLICITY OF WHAT GOD IS TELLING US, THE ENTIRE DOCTRINE OF SALVATION WILL BECOME CRYSTAL CLEAR, AND WE WILL KNOW FOR SURE WHY THE MANY WERE REJECTED.**

We will begin at the very beginning, and we will trace the key essential elements of our creation through all of Scripture to prove our points. Many theologians play down the LOVE ASPECT OF MAN, and claim that it is only a small part of the issue. They are TOTALLY WRONG. IT IS THE ONLY ASPECT

OF MAN THAT GOD DEALS WITH IN SALVATION. All other issues are side issues, and of little consequence. It will be proven that the **AGAPE LOVE ISSUE** is the only issue between God and mankind. The depravity of man is based upon **HIS CENTRAL CORE ESSENCE, AND IT IS FROM HIS CENTRAL CORE ESSENCE THAT ALL THE OTHER ISSUES COME FROM.**

We will prove that man was created in the **AGAPE LOVE IMAGE OF GOD**. God created man with an essence of 100% pure agape love, direct from the central core image and essence of God. Out of this pure agape love flows all truth, all mercy, all compassion. From man's pure agape love, flows pure phileo love, pure eros love, pure joy and peace that comes from total communion with God. Man was in total peace with his Creator and with his world.

*“And God said, **LET US MAKE MAN  
IN OUR IMAGE,  
AFTER OUR LIKENESS:***

*and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.*

***SO GOD CREATED MAN  
IN HIS OWN IMAGE,  
IN THE IMAGE OF GOD CREATED HE HIM;***

***MALE AND FEMALE CREATED HE THEM.”  
(Genesis 1:26-27)***

Genesis is very blunt and very direct: God created man IN THE IMAGE AND LIKENESS OF HIMSELF. The word “image” is ‘tselem’ and it means RESEMBLANCE, A PHANTOM, A REPRESENTATIVE FIGURE. What is this so called ‘image’ and ‘likeness’? What is God’s image and God’s likeness? What is God’s central core essence, what is God LIKE, WHAT IS HIS TRUE IMAGE? Scripture proves IT IS AGAPE LOVE. FROM THIS CENTRAL CORE ESSENCE, THIS IMAGE, THIS LIKENESS, MAN WAS CREATED. The THEOLOGICAL WORDBOOK OF THE OLD TESTAMENT, by R. Laird Harris, Gleason L. Archer, Jr. and Bruce K. Waltke, has this to say about the word image:

“...God’s image obviously does not consist in man’s body which was formed from earthly matter, BUT IN HIS SPIRITUAL, INTELLECTUAL, MORAL LIKENESS TO GOD WHOM HIS ANIMATING BREATH CAME...GOD is non-material, the Creator (Deut. 4:15-19), THIS SPIRITUAL ASPECT OF MAN HAS BEEN DAMAGED BY THE FALL AND IS DAILY TARNISHED BY SIN...”

We must turn to Scripture to get our answers, and the answers MUST BE TOTALLY ACCURATE, for if we misunderstand the fall, then we will not understand what Christ was attempting to convey to us in the doctrine of salvation. We will now attempt to prove that the CENTRAL CORE SPIRITUAL ESSENCE OF GOD IS PURE AGAPE LOVE, AND FROM THIS CORE FLOWS HIS CREATION, HIS COMMITMENT TO UPHOLD IT AND SUSTAIN IT, HIS GRACE, HIS PROMISES, HIS GOVERNMENT AND EVERYTHING ELSE, FLOWS FROM THIS INNER CORE ESSENCE.

*“Beloved, let us (AGAPAO) LOVE ONE ANOTHER:  
FOR (AGAPAO) LOVE IS OF GOD; and everyone that  
(AGAPAO) loveth is BORN OF GOD,  
and knoweth God,  
HE THAT (AGAPAO) LOVETH NOT  
  
KNOWETH NOT GOD;  
FOR GOD IS (AGAPAO) LOVE.”  
(1 John 4:7-8)*

Here we have a flat statement that ANYONE CAN READ; GOD IS AGAPAO/AGAPE LOVE. The agapao love of God is pure 100% love, untainted. We could say PURE, OF ABSOLUTE PURITY. That does not mean 80% pure, 90% pure, or 99.99% pure. IT MEANS ABSOLUTE 100% PURITY. THERE IS NOT EVEN THE SLIGHTEST TRACE OF ANY IMPURITY IN GOD’S AGAPE/AGAPAO LOVE. That is an important thing to remember as we trace what happened at the fall, and why man is now separated from God and is condemned to eternal ruin.

John also tells us that in order to KNOW GOD, WE MUST HAVE BEEN BORN OF GOD’S PURE 100% AGAPE LOVE. UNLESS AND UNTIL A PERSON OBTAINS THIS 100% PURE AGAPAO LOVE, HE IS NOT BORN OF GOD, HE IS NOT REGENERATED, AND HE DOES NOT KNOW GOD AT ALL. This confirms our conclusion about the ‘many’ who were rejected by Christ: THEY DID NOT KNOW GOD, THEY DID NOT KNOW CHRIST, THEY DID NOT HAVE THE AGAPAO LOVE OF GOD IN THEM. They only professed they knew God, but they did not POSSESS the agapao love of Christ or God.

We now have ONE PROOF THAT THE ESSENCE OF GOD IS AGAPE/AGAPAO LOVE. We will now look for more:

*“And we HAVE KNOWN and believed the  
(AGAPE) LOVE THAT GOD HATH TO US.  
GOD IS (AGAPE) LOVE;  
AND HE THAT DWELLETH  
IN (AGAPE) LOVE  
DWELLETH IN GOD,  
AND GOD IN HIM.”  
(1 John 4:16-17)*

Once again we find a direct statement that GOD IS AGAPE LOVE. Once again we find that those who DWELL WITH GOD HAVE THIS AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. God dwells IN THEM. If God and Christ dwell in them, then Jesus WOULD KNOW THEM. What did Christ say to the ‘many’ rejected? He said ‘I NEVER KNEW YOU.’ It is obvious then, that AGAPE LOVE WAS NOT IN THEM, FOR CHRIST AND GOD ARE AGAPE LOVE. You cannot dwell in the very core of a soul and NOT KNOW THEM. It is this agape love of God that brings UNION WITH CHRIST. The agape love of Christ is the

INTERPRETER that allows communion with GOD AND CHRIST. These verses prove that the ESSENCE AND IMAGE OF GOD IS AGAPE LOVE. The Likeness of God is AGAPE LOVE.

*“Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the  
**(AGAPE) LOVE OF GOD,**  
**WHICH IS IN JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD.**”*  
(Romans 8:39)

*“Finally brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort,  
and be of one mind, live in peace; and  
**THE GOD OF (AGAPE) LOVE**  
and peace **SHALL BE WITH YOU.**”*  
(2 Corinthians 13:11)

*“The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and  
**THE (AGAPE) LOVE OF GOD,**  
and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.*  
(2 Corinthians 13:14)

*“But God, who is rich in mercy, for  
**HIS GREAT (AGAPE) LOVE**  
**WHEREWITH HE (AGAPAO) LOVED US...**”*  
(Ephesians 2:4)

*“But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is  
**THE (AGAPE) LOVE OF GOD PERFECTED:**  
**HEREBY KNOW WE THAT WE ARE IN HIM.**”*  
(1 John 2:5)

*“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world.  
If any man love the world,  
**THE (AGAPE) LOVE OF THE FATHER**  
**IS NOT IN HIM.**”*  
(1 John 2:15)



We could go on. We could fill a whole book to prove that the **CENTRAL CORE IMAGE, LIKENESS OR ESSENCE OF GOD IS 100% PURE AGAPE/AGAPAO love**. As we unravel the story of the fall, it will become obvious to you that **THE ONLY ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD IS THIS AGAPE LOVE ISSUE**. This issue **MUST BE SETTLED**. One cannot enter heaven's gate until and unless this issue is taken care of. According to Jesus Christ, this issue **CANNOT BE SETTLED UNLESS ONE ENTERS THE STRAIT GATE AND WALKS THE NARROW WAY**. At the end of the narrow way is 'life' and Scripture proves that 'life' is **AGAPE LOVE, AS YOU WILL SEE**.

**NOTHING COULD BE MORE BOLDLY STATED, NOTHING COULD BE MORE PLAIN:**

**THE IMAGE, LIKENESS AND ESSENCE OF GOD IS PURE  
AGAPE LOVE.**

*"In this was manifested the  
**(AGAPAO) LOVE OF GOD**  
toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might  
**LIVE THROUGH HIM.**  
**HEREIN IS (AGAPAO) LOVE, not that we (AGAPAO) LOVED GOD, but that**  
**HE (AGAPAO) LOVED US,**  
**AND SENT HIS SON TO BE THE PROPITIATION FOR OUR SINS."**  
(1 John 4:9-10)*

Our English language does not convey the importance of the different types of love found in the Greek or original Aramaic. The translators simply translated all of these different forms of love as simply LOVE. If you read it simply as LOVE, you **miss the entire essence of what Scripture is attempting to show you**. In fact, the English translations paved the way for the final great apostasy, for they do not show the **VAST DIFFERENCE BETWEEN MAN'S LOVE and GOD'S AGAPE LOVE**. If a believer does not recognize this vital difference, he/she simply assumes that **OBEDIENCE TO GOD MEANS TO SIMPLY 'LOVE' MORE**. Thus obedience to God means that we are to 'decide to love' and if we will, we are then fulfilling **GOD'S COMMANDS**.

This decision to love is then via doctrine and theology branded 'making a decision for Christ'. This is true because we are told that **CHRIST IS LOVE**. Therefore if we make a **DECISION FOR CHRIST, HE INSTANTLY COMES INTO OUR HEARTS AND WE BEGIN TO LOVE**. In reality this so called 'DECISION FOR CHRIST' is no more than a decision to LOVE, and the love that then comes from within the human heart is nothing more than **HUMAN LOVE DISGUISED AS THE LOVE OF CHRIST**. It is in fact **ONE OF THE KEY ESSENTIAL INGREDIENTS IN THE GRAND DELUSION**. The Scripture does not tell you to make a **DECISION FOR CHRIST**. It tells you to be **OBEDIENT TO CHRIST, AND DO AS CHRIST COMMANDED YOU TO DO, TO OBTAIN THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST**. **IF YOU REFUSE, YOU DO NOT OBTAIN IT, YOU ARE LOST**.

**IF YOU WILL DO WHAT CHRIST COMMANDED YOU TO DO, THAT IS, IF YOU WILL ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY, you will then FIND THE TRUE AND AUTHENTIC (AGAPE) LOVE OF GOD**. The vast majority of Christians **REFUSE TO DO SO**, and they

are handed a **COUNTERFEIT OR FEIGNED LOVE** WHICH IS NOT AGAPE AT ALL, BUT IS WHOLLY FALSE, WHOLLY FEIGNED, WHOLLY A FABRICATION OF THEIR OWN HEARTS. HOWEVER, IT DOES NOT APPEAR THAT WAY, IT APPEARS TO THEM AS **THE GENUINE LOVE OF GOD**. The Christ they are presented with by the false prophets in effect is a **PLACEBO**, and it triggers within them THE ILLUSION OF A NEW LOVE. We will explore this in great depth, for the **ANTICHRIST SYSTEM IS BASED UPON THIS FALSE LOVE.**

We have already proved that the many who were rejected of Christ LACKED ONE THING: **REGENERATION, WHICH IS THE BESTOWMENT OF THE SUPERNATURAL AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.** The many held a doctrine, a theology that TOLD THEM they HAD IT WHEN THEY DID NOT HAVE IT. Their so-called **DECISION FOR CHRIST**, their **HOLY GHOST BAPTISM**, their **WATER BAPTISM**, their **CONVERSION TO CHRIST**, their **BELIEF**, their **FAITH**:

- A) DID NOT OBTAIN FOR THEM THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD**
- B) DID NOT OBTAIN FOR THEM UNION WITH CHRIST**
- C) DID NOT OBTAIN FOR THEM ETERNAL LIFE.**

They waged a bet on a wholly false theology, brought into being by Satan's FINEST ANGELS OF LIGHT, AND IT COST THEM ETERNAL LIFE FOR EVER. This is no joke, and this is no laughing matter. WE ARE SPEAKING OF YOUR ETERNAL DESTINY, AND IF YOU FAIL TO SEEK THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, AND FIND IT, AND HAVE HEAVEN'S SECRET OPENED TO YOU, YOU ARE GOING TO BE DAMNED FOR ETERNITY, WITH NO HOPE, NO MERCY, NO COMPASSION, AND NO REPRIEVE.

What happened? The long and short of it is very simple: THEY HAD NATURAL HUMAN LOVE IN THEIR HEART WHICH BY A SIMPLE DECISION FOR CHRIST (WHICH MAKES THEIR FALSE CHRIST A PLACEBO), THEY TRANSFORMED IT INTO THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. They began to release this love, and did mighty works in the name of the Lord. Peter and Christ had a major confrontation OVER THIS VERY ISSUE IN John 21:15-18. Christ asked Peter if Peter AGAPE LOVED CHRIST. Peter replied in the AFFIRMATIVE, and then SUBSTITUTED HIS OWN NATURAL PHILEO LOVE FOR THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. Peter did NOT KNOW OR UNDERSTAND THE DIFFERENCE, AND THE DIFFERENCE IS RADICAL, SO RADICAL YOUR VERY SALVATION HINGES UPON YOU **FINDING OUT WHAT AGAPE LOVE IS.**

**AGAPE LOVE IS SO RADICAL, IN FACT, THAT IT CANNOT BE KNOWN BY A HUMAN BEING WITHOUT IT BEING SUPERNATURALLY REVEALED AND BESTOWED UPON THE SEEKER OF GOD'S TRUTH. THE METHOD OF THE SEARCH IS CLEARLY OUTLINED FOR YOU: THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.** The many did what Peter did, they claimed their NATURAL LOVE RELEASED WAS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. Who would dare say Peter did not love Jesus Christ? Peter left everything and followed his Lord and Master. He even attempted to kill to protect Jesus. Yet Peter, for ALL OF HIS NATURAL HUMAN LOVE, DID NOT AGAPE LOVE CHRIST. We will explore this exchange between the resurrected Christ and Peter and PROVE that this problem of the vast majority of Christians rejected was the same problem Peter had: **THEY BELIEVED THAT HUMAN LOVE RELEASED IS THE LOVE OF GOD:**

*“So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter,*

*Simon, son of Jonas, **(AGAPE) LOVEST** thou me more than these?*

**YEA Lord; THOU KNOWEST THAT I (PHILEO) LOVE THEE.**

*He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.”*  
(John 21:15)

I must stop right here and point out what Peter is doing; ALTHOUGH I DOUBT Peter REALLY UNDERSTOOD HE WAS DOING IT. Jesus asked Peter if he **AGAPE LOVED** Him. Peter responded **IN THE AFFIRMATIVE**, and then **SUBSTITUTED PHILEO LOVE FOR AGAPE**. In other words, Peter said the **TWO FORMS OF LOVE WERE EQUALS, THE SAME THING**. If this were not true, Peter would have said, “**NO LORD, THOU KNOWEST I ONLY PHILEO LOVE YOU**.” Peter did not respond **IN THE NEGATIVE**. He responded in the **POSITIVE, THE AFFIRMATIVE, AND THEN WENT ON TO PROVE IT BY SAYING HIS PHILEO LOVE WAS THE SAME AS AGAPE. PETER, AND THE MANY THOUGHT THAT**

## **PHILEO LOVE = AGAPE LOVE!**

Peter was under the **DELUSION** that **THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD IS WHAT BEATS WITHIN OUR BREASTS, AND ALL WE HAVE TO DO IS RELEASE IT**, and by that release of our natural love, **WE ARE BEING OBEDIENT TO THE LOVE COMMANDS OF THE LORD, IT IS AN ILLUSION. IT IS A LIE, THE VERY LIE OF ANTICHRIST, WHO SUBSTITUTES THE LOVE OF MAN FOR THE LOVE OF GOD, AND PROCLAIMS IT IS GOD’S**.

This is exactly what the ‘many’ who stand rejected did. **They claimed their natural love WAS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. They made a serious mistake.**

*“He saith to him again the SECOND TIME, Simon, son of Jonas,*

**(AGAPE) LOVEST THOU ME?**

**YEA, LORD; THOU KNOWEST THAT I (PHILEO) LOVE THEE.**

*He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.”*  
(John 21:16)

Christ now presses Peter again, because **Peter missed the entire point of the question**. The attack upon Peter’s love theology deepens, for Christ must smash it, just as the ‘many’ had their ‘love theology’ smashed to pieces, but for them, it was too late. Christ has different plans for Peter. Peter was going to be made **TO FACE THE ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD; THE AGAPE ISSUE**. Peter **AGAIN ATTEMPTS TO EQUATE HIS OWN NATURAL PHILEO LOVE WITH THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST**. He answers again in the **AFFIRMATIVE, AND THEN SUBSTITUTES ONE LOVE TYPE FOR THE OTHER**. He again tells Christ that **HIS PHILEO LOVE IS JUST AS GOOD AS THIS ‘AGAPE’ LOVE** that Christ is speaking of. Christ however will have none of **THIS GRAND DECEPTION, THIS GRAND DELUSION**. Peter is too important a soul and he is **ONE**

**OF THE CALLED, ONE OF THE FEW.** The attack to Peter's heart is now made without MERCY OR COMPASSION.

*“He saith unto him the **THIRD TIME**, Simon, son of Jonas,*

**(PHILEO) LOVEST THOU ME?**

*Peter **WAS GRIEVED** BECAUSE HE SAID UNTO HIM THE **THIRD TIME**,*

**(PHILEO) LOVEST THOU ME?**

*And he said unto him, **LORD**.*

**THOU KNOWEST ALL THINGS;**  
**THOU KNOWEST THAT I (PHILEO) LOVE THEE.**

*He saith unto him, **Feed my sheep.**”*

**(John 21:17)**

This exchange is one of the most important exchanges in the Bible to show you **THAT THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD IS NOT THE NATURAL HUMAN LOVE OF MAN RELEASED**, WHICH IS WHY GOD CALLS IT A NEW HEART COVENANT. IF MAN HAD AGAPE LOVE WITHIN HIM, HE WOULD NOT NEED A NEW HEART. **THE NEW HEART IS A CHANGED HEART, A LOVE CHANGE:**

## **FROM PHILEO TO AGAPE!**

WITHOUT THIS **SUPERNATURAL LOVE CHANGE**, THERE IS NO SALVATION. Peter was under a DELUSION, A DECEPTION.

No one could say that Peter did not love his Lord. No one could claim that Peter had not left everything behind and followed Jesus Christ. No one could claim that Peter had not gone where Christ had ordered him to go. Peter had come near murder in an attempt to save his Master's life. That Peter displayed BEAUTIFUL AND TRUE HUMAN LOVE FOR CHRIST CAN NOT BE QUESTIONED. Whatever Peter was, whatever Peter's human frailties, HE LOVED JESUS CHRIST TO THE CORE OF HIS BEING, WITH ALL THE NATURAL LOVE HE HAD WITHIN.

How would you feel to follow someone all these years, to have left everything, only to have the one you love turn upon you AND CLAIM YOU DID NOT LOVE HIM ENOUGH? You would feel as Peter did, and you would break, and you would CRY AND WAIL IN PAIN. This is exactly what the MANY REJECTED DO. THEY STAND **IN STUNNED SILENCE AT THEIR REJECTION**. THEY CANNOT BELIEVE WHAT THEY ARE HEARING. THEY THEN BEGIN TO PROTEST, CLINGING TO THEIR DEEDS TO PROVE THEIR LOVE FOR JESUS. Do you know what the many are really saying: **DIDN'T WE AGAPE LOVE YOU? DIDN'T WE PROVE OUR LOVE BY OUR WORKS AND LOVE DEEDS? DOES NOT OUR OBEDIENCE TO YOUR COMMANDS**

**BY ALL OF OUR DEEDS PROVE THAT WE HAD YOUR AGAPE LOVE WITHIN US? IS NOT LOVE PROVED BY OUR DEEDS?** Deeds done or not done do not prove anything. A man full of hatred can do a wonderful deed if he feels it is to his best interest at the time.

**THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST MUST BE PUT WITHIN THE INNER MAN BY A SUPERNATURAL MIRACLE, IT CHANGES THE ENTIRE INNER NATURE OF MAN; IT IS A CHANGED ESSENCE.** THAT IS WHY DEEDS OR WORKS ARE EXCLUDED. THEY PROVE NOTHING WHATEVER, NOR DOES JUSTIFICATION BEFORE GOD COME BY WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. IT COMES ONLY BY WALKING THE NARROW WAY TO A SUPERNATURAL SOUL DEATH, WHERE YOU ARE ALIVE, YET KNOW YOU ARE DEAD, AND THEN CHRIST, WHEN HE ELECTS, COMES AND **TAKES YOU OUT OF DEATH AND INTO THE NEW LIFE OF AGAPE LOVE.**

You see the ‘many’ were positive they were born again and **had the agape love of God within them.** They were positive they had true union with Christ. Their mistake was in their theology, a theology that TOLD THEM, AND PROVED TO THEM THAT THEY HAD AGAPE LOVE WHEN THEY DID NOT. THEY WERE UNDER A DELUSION, A DECEPTION. The love that they had was their OWN NATURAL LOVE. Christ became nothing more than a **PLACEBO.** Because THEY THOUGHT AND BELIEVED CHRIST WAS IN THEM, VIA THEIR THEOLOGY, it allowed them to **RELEASE THEIR OWN PENT UP LOVE VIA THE DOCTRINE OF FAITH.** It was all a lie, a total sham, a fabrication of Satan and his false teachers! They made the identical mistake Peter made!

The agape love of God will not show mercy WHERE SALVATION IS CONCERNED. Who could deny that Peter HAD FAITH? Who could deny that Peter DID NOT BELIEVE? Who could deny that Peter had not done MANY WONDERFUL WORKS? Who could deny that Peter had not CAST OUT DEVILS? Yet for all of it, PETER LACKED ONE THING: **AGAPE LOVE, FOR PETER WAS NOT YET BORN AGAIN!**

Peter was not grieved because Jesus asked him the same question THREE TIMES. That was not what Peter got so upset over. He became exceedingly sorrowful over A TRUTH THAT ONLY CHRIST KNEW; **PETER WAS NOT REGENERATED, PETER WAS NOT BORN AGAIN. PETER DID NOT HAVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD WITHIN HIM.** When Jesus dropped the use of AGAPE and instead asked as Peter had answered, PETER INSTANTLY KNEW WHAT JESUS WAS DRIVING AT: **HE DID NOT HAVE THIS AGAPE LOVE, AND IT BROUGHT ANGUISH AND TEARS TO PETER.** He was being told that FOR ALL OF HIS WORKS, FOR ALL OF HIS HUMAN LOVE, FOR ALL OF EVERYTHING PETER WAS, IT WAS NOT ENOUGH. HE LACKED ONE THING: **AGAPE LOVE.**

This confrontation actually began back when Peter DENIED HE KNEW JESUS CHRIST in front of the mob. It has a far deeper spiritual meaning than we might at first realize. THE DENIAL WAS A DENIAL OF ‘KNOWING’ JESUS. From a worldly view, PETER DID KNOW JESUS, but from a spiritual view **PETER DID NOT KNOW JESUS AT ALL.** The denial by Peter that HE KNEW JESUS WAS A FACT CHRIST USED TO PROVE HIS DENIAL A LITERAL TRUTH; HE DID NOT KNOW JESUS BECAUSE HE DID NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE IN HIS HEART. Peter DID NOT KNOW JESUS, NOR DID THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS KNOW JESUS. They did not know, because they **HAD NOT THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST WITHIN THEM.**

Jesus knew Peter’s heart, just as He knows your heart. He knows that within you lies a **LOVE FORM, WHICH WE WILL SIMPLY CALL PHILEO.** Phileo love can be very intense. Phileo love can be very emotional. Phileo love can come from **DEEP WITHIN.** Phileo love, WHEN IT FEIGNS AGAPE LOVE, CAN EVEN DRIVE MEN TO DIE FOR ONE ANOTHER. Yet, in the end, it is still ONLY

PHILEO LOVE, ONE MUST ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY. If you will do it, you will **FIND** the LIVING JESUS CHRIST. YOU WILL FIND AGAPE LOVE, YOU WILL HAVE THE **MYSTERY OF GOD** OPENED UP TO YOU, AND **YOU WILL “KNOW THAT JESUS KNOWS YOU.”**

Our modern translations fail to convey the essential key aspects of what the original documents are attempting to tell us. There is a **RADICAL DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE LOVE OF MAN AND THE LOVE OF GOD**. Supernatural agape love is in fact **NOT VIEWED AS LOVE BY THE VAST MAJORITY OF MANKIND**. In point of fact, MANKIND HATES THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. It does not know it, nor does it want to know it. This is just as true for those who claim they are religious as those who are unbelievers! Scripture is adamant that **ALL NATURAL MAN HATES GOD**.

The point is this: THE IMAGE, THE LIKENESS, THE ESSENCE OF GOD IS PURE AGAPE LOVE. If mankind was **CREATED IN THE IMAGE OF GOD**, then **HE WAS CREATED WITH AN INTERNAL ESSENCE OF PURE 100% AGAPE LOVE**. SCRIPTURE PROVES IT TRUE. He resided in perfect communion and harmony with his environment and with his Creator. Could we prove that the other members of the Godhead were also of the same essence? We would then have positive proof that man was indeed and in fact created with a pure agape love essence, in perfect peace and harmony with God.

Jesus said that God was a Spirit, and John says that God is a spirit of AGAPE LOVE. Combined together, we have a God of Spirit, and that Spirit's essence is pure AGAPE LOVE. Jesus stated that He and the Father dwelled together, that they WERE ONE:

***“Jesus said unto them, IF GOD WERE YOUR FATHER, YE WOULD (AGAPE) LOVE ME: for I proceeded forth, and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent Me.”***  
**(John 8:42)**

***“I and my Father ARE ONE.”***  
**(John 10:30)**

***“IF ye had KNOWN ME, ye should have known my FATHER ALSO: AND FROM HENCEFORTH YE KNOW HIM, AND HAVE SEEN HIM.”***  
**(John 14:7)**

***“Believest thou not THAT I AM IN THE FATHER, AND THE FATHER IN ME? The words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: BUT THE FATHER THAT DWELLETH IN ME; he doeth the works.***

***BELIEVE ME THAT I AM IN THE FATHER,***

***AND THE FATHER IN ME: or else believe me for the very works' sake.”***  
**(John 14:10-11)**

*“I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the ALMIGHTY.”*

**(Revelation 1:8)**

*“And unto the angel of the Church of Sardis write; these things saith HE THAT HATH THE SEVEN SPIRITS OF GOD, AND THE SEVEN STARS...”*

**(Revelation 3:1)**

*“For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given; and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called WONDERFUL, COUNSELOR, THE MIGHTY GOD, THE EVERLASTING FATHER, THE PRINCE OF PEACE.”*

**(Isaiah 9:6)**

There is no question that Jesus claimed to be GOD, or that He dwelled with the Father, and that the Father dwelled with Him. God is a SPIRIT OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. PURE AGAPE LOVE DWELLED WITHIN CHRIST, AND THUS CHRIST AND GOD WERE ONE. When Christ prayed that all believers come unto TRUE UNION, AND BECOME ONE WITH THE GODHEAD, He was praying that all His followers COME TO AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, which is the GLUE OF UNION. In other words, WHERE PURE AGAPE LOVE IS, GOD IS THERE ALSO. God is a SPIRIT OF LOVE THAT PERVADES AND FILLS THE UNIVERSE, HIS CREATION. Where AGAPE LOVE IS NOT, GOD IS NOT. What makes a Son of God is AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, and this AGAPE LOVE is GOD. That is why Christ prayed that the AGAPE LOVE OF THE FATHER BE IN THEM, SO HE COULD BE IN THEM.

The vast majority of Christians go into eternal ruin **BECAUSE THERE WAS NEVER A UNION WITH CHRIST, NEVER A UNION WITH AGAPE LOVE. AGAPE LOVE IS THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, AGAPE LOVE IS THE SPIRIT OF GOD.** It is important to realize that the Holy Spirit’s GRANTING OF A POWER BAPTISM HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH UNION WITH CHRIST, as we have proven by the ‘many’ who had the Holy Spirit. Some may object and say that the essence of the Holy Spirit IS AGAPE LOVE. The logic sounds correct, but the truth is THAT THE HOLY SPIRIT’S MINISTRY IS NOT TO REVEAL HIS ESSENCE TO THE BELIEVER, NOR TO PLACE THAT ESSENCE INTO THE INNER HEART.

The Holy Spirit’s ministry is to **BAPTIZE** THE BELIEVER INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST, GIVE GIFTS SEVERALLY AS HE WILL, **CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT** (THE NARROW WAY), WHICH LEADS THE BELIEVER INTO THE ‘**TRUTH**’. When the believer is brought down to **DEATH**, HE ABIDES IN DEATH UNTIL CHRIST ARRIVES TO BRING THE NEW HEART AND TO TAKE UP RESIDENCE WITHIN. The revelation and the bestowment of AGAPE LOVE ARE RESERVED FOR GOD THE FATHER AND CHRIST, AND THE HOLY SPIRIT DOES NOT HAVE A PART IN IT. THAT PART OF THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST IS A MYSTERY AND IS NEVER REVEALED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT ITSELF. THE JOB OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IS TO LEAD THE BELIEVER TO THE POINT OF THE REVELATION, AND THEN GOD AND CHRIST TAKES OVER FROM THERE. We will study that in depth later in this series. If God then be pure agape love, and God was in Christ, then we should find references to the AGAPE LOVE OF JESUS CHRIST:

*“Who shall separate us from the  
(AGAPE) LOVE OF CHRIST?”  
(Romans 8:35)*

*“For the (AGAPE) LOVE OF CHRIST constraineth us...”  
(2 Corinthians 5:14)*

*“And TO KNOW THE (AGAPAO) LOVE OF CHRIST, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be  
filled with all the FULNESS OF GOD.”  
(Ephesians 3:19)*

*“And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith  
AND (AGAPE) LOVE WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS.”  
(1 Timothy 1:14)*

*“Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and (AGAPE)  
LOVE, WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS.”  
(2 Timothy 1:13)*

We could continue, but if this is not evidence for you, your problem is not the evidence, but a refusal to face the evidence presented. GOD THE FATHER IS PURE AGAPE LOVE; JESUS CHRIST IS PURE AGAPE LOVE. If this is true, **WAS CHRIST MADE IN THE IMAGE AND LIKENESS OF GOD THE FATHER?** He claimed it was so, and to say otherwise would be to declare Christ a liar. Original man was called Adam. Christ was called by Scripture the second Adam. Man was made in the IMAGE OF GOD. Christ was made in the IMAGE OF GOD. Christ was PURE AGAPE LOVE, VIA THE VIRGIN BIRTH. Man was created in the identical image, PURE AGAPE LOVE.

We will show later in this series that Christ was born into the human race under what is known as KINSMEN-REDEEMER LAW. He was born of a woman so He could be a NEAR KINSMEN TO THE ADAMIC RACE, SO THAT HE COULD LEGALLY REDEEM US FROM SATANIC BONDAGE AND THE CHAINS OF DEPRAVITY. He was born of a virgin to BYPASS THE SIN NATURE, BORN OF A PURE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE SO HE COULD PAY THE RANSOM PRICE. Once you grasp the central essence of redemption in its beautiful simplicity, all the rest will fall into place.

We have shown you that both GOD THE FATHER AND JESUS CHRIST HAVE THE SAME CORE ESSENCE OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. What about the Holy Spirit?



*“But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you **FROM THE FATHER**, even the **SPIRIT OF TRUTH**, which proceedeth **FROM THE FATHER**, he shall testify of me.”*  
(John 15:26)

*“And I will pray the Father, and **HE SHALL GIVE YOU ANOTHER COMFORTER**, that he may **abide with you for ever...**”*  
(John 14:16)

Notice that the Holy Ghost PROCEEDS FORTH FROM THE FATHER. If the Father is pure agape love, and Christ is pure agape love, THEN THE HOLY SPIRIT MUST BE PURE AGAPE LOVE AS WELL, FOR NO PART OF THE GODHEAD IS TARNISHED OR FALLS SHORT IN ANY WAY.

*“But the **FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT IS (AGAPE) LOVE...**”*  
(Galatians 5:22)

The FRUIT of the Spirit, that is, ALL THE PREPARATION, ALL THE CONVICTING OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT, ALL OF THE POWER BAPTISMS, ALL OF THE GIFTS HAVE AN ULTIMATE GOAL; **THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE**, AND ITS PERFECTION WITHIN THE REAL BELIEVER. Again, I will say, IT IS NOT THE JOB OF THE HOLY SPIRIT TO BESTOW AGAPE LOVE, BUT ONLY TO LEAD THE BELIEVER TO THE POINT OF THE REVELATION. **JESUS HIMSELF COMES AND REVEALS THE MYSTERY OF THE GODHEAD, THAT IS, THE SECRET ESSENCE OF ALL OF THE TRINITY. WE WILL SHOW THIS WITH MANY VERSES OF SCRIPTURE, AND IN ALL OF THEM, THE HOLY SPIRIT IS NEVER MENTIONED!**

Notice that the final fruit of the Holy Spirit is **AUTHENTIC AGAPE LOVE**, and this is in perfect harmony with the prayer of Christ, that the **AGAPE LOVE OF GOD BE PLACED INTO EACH BELIEVER’S HEART**. The problem with the many is that **THEY DID NOT BARE THE FRUIT OF AGAPE LOVE, BECAUSE THEY WOULD NOT WALK THE NARROW WAY**. They never came to the point where **GOD BESTOWED IT UPON THEM, THEY MERELY CLAIMED THEY HAD IT, BY A THEOLOGY THAT TOLD THEM THEY HAD IT**. The whole ball of wax for the Christian is to FIRST OF ALL LAY HOLD OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST, THEN SECONDLY, TO PERFECT IT, ONCE HE OBTAINED IT. **The ‘many’ never laid hold of it!**

We have proved the central core essence of the Godhead is pure agape love. Each single member of the Trinity has a pure central essence of AGAPE LOVE. From this flows all of truth, all of doctrine, all that God has for the universe and the world of man. There is a very real and very literal Trinity. They are all distinct individuals, each with a DIFFERING MINISTRY WHEN IT COMES TO THE ADMINISTRATION OF THE NEW COVENANT AND SALVATION.

- 1. The Holy Spirit IS NOT Jesus Christ or God the Father.**
  - 2. Jesus Christ IS NOT the Holy Spirit or God the Father.**
  - 3. God the Father IS NOT Jesus Christ or the Holy Spirit.**
- AND YET THEY ARE ALL ONE IN AGAPE LOVE**

Each one has a differing ministry as will be proven. They are in UNITY, IN UNION, IN CONCERT AND THEY ARE ONE IN ESSENCE: PURE AGAPE LOVE. THEY HAVE DIFFERING FUNCTIONS; DIFFERING PARTS TO PLAY IN BRINGING THE SOUL TO SALVATION. ALL THREE WORK TOGETHER TO BRING THE LOST SOUL INTO UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST. The whole thrust of the New Covenant is a NEW HEART OF AGAPE LOVE, THE VERY HEART OF JESUS CHRIST, SO THAT UNION WITH CHRIST BECOMES A FACT. Does the Bible say anywhere that THE HOLY SPIRIT is the only name under heaven by which we must be saved? Does the Bible say anywhere that GOD THE FATHER is the only name under heaven by which we must be saved? NO! Their function in this great plan of salvation **IS TO BRING THE BELIEVER INTO TRUE UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST!** The whole thrust, the entire operative mode of the TRINITY IS TO BRING THE BELIEVER INTO AUTHENTIC REGENERATION, WHICH IS THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS.

It is this agape love issue that SEPARATES GOD FROM THE HUMAN RACE. It is the work of Jesus Christ upon the cross that RECONCILED GOD TO MAN. But man IS NOT RECONCILED TO GOD, FOR IF THEY WERE, NOT ONE HUMAN SOUL WOULD EVER BE LOST. It is the work of the Holy Spirit and God the Father to **DRAW AND CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT. THIS PROCESS IS TO BRING A SOUL TO A FULL RECOGNITION OF HIS TRUE LOST STATE BEFORE GOD. IT IS IN THIS FULLY EXPERIENTIAL STATE OF BEING UTTERLY LOST, IN RUIN, AND IN TOTAL HUMILIATION THAT GOD CAN BEGIN TO DEAL WITH THE INNER HEART. THE SOUL IS TO BE, AND MUST BE, READJUSTED BACK TO THE STANDARD OF GOD: AGAPE LOVE. EXCEPT TWO BE AGREED, THEY CANNOT WALK TOGETHER.**

The narrow way IS this process that leads to the RECONCILIATION OF MAN TO GOD. It is a fatal flaw of modern theology that suggests that the work of Christ WAS A TWO-WAY RECONCILIATION. IT WAS NOT. The many, in spite of all their work and dedication and sincerity to the Lord Jesus Christ **REFUSED TO RECONCILE THEMSELVES TO HIM OR TO GOD.** They only claimed a reconciliation; their hearts were NEVER RECONCILED BECAUSE THEY REFUSED THE REPROOF OF GOD THAT ALLOWS FOR THAT RECONCILIATION TO TAKE PLACE.

God does not have to reset His timepiece to man's schedule; man must set his to God's. THE NEW COVENANT IS THE WAY OF RECONCILIATION OF MAN TOWARDS GOD. God's reconciliation to man IS THROUGH THE WORK OF JESUS CHRIST. Man's reconciliation to God is THROUGH OBEDIENCE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY. If you refuse it, your heart is NOT RECONCILED TO GOD. That God is your friend now is of NO CONSEQUENCE. Remember the parable of the marriage supper, and how God came over to the man WITHOUT THE PROPER WEDDING GARMENT ON? What did God call him? He called him FRIEND. He called him friend because GOD IS NOW THE FRIEND OF MAN, THROUGH THE WORK OF CHRIST. But God threw the man into eternal ruin, FRIEND OR NOT. WHY? Because he did not have on a RECONCILIATION ROBE OF AGAPE LOVE. The soul that refuses the strait gate and narrow way HATES GOD, AND HATES CHRIST, IN SPITE OF ALL HIS 'RELIGION, HIS PIETY, and HIS PROTESTS TO THE CONTRARY'.

*“For MY THOUGHTS  
ARE NOT YOUR THOUGHTS,  
neither are YOUR WAYS MY WAYS*

*saith the Lord.*

*For as the HEAVENS ARE HIGHER THAN THE EARTH,  
SO ARE MY WAYS HIGHER THAN YOUR WAYS,  
AND MY THOUGHTS THAN YOUR THOUGHTS.”  
(Isaiah 55:8-9)*

This can only be understood in relation to the AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. This is the ONLY issue between man and God. It is what separates man from his Creator. God is higher than man not only because He is God, but because HE HAS PURE AGAPE LOVE AND MAN DOES NOT. Scripture will prove that MAN LOST HIS AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE AT THE FALL. His loss of agape love plunged him into a world of sin, depravity and eternal ruin. Thus God is saying to man, MY AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE IS WHAT MAKES ME HIGHER THAN YOU, AND MY WAYS HIGHER THAN YOUR WAYS. God is so far above the love plane of man that there IS NO COMPARISON. Only those who have searched for the face of God with all diligence (THE FEW), ever look into the depth, height and width of the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.

To those that refuse to come as God demanded, who refuse Jesus Christ, they are handed a SATANIC COUNTERFEIT, a mimic, a look alike, a DELUSION because they REFUSED GOD, THEY REFUSED CHRIST, AND THEY CAME UP WITH SOME OTHER WAY. ALL RELIGIONS LEAD TO ETERNAL HELLFIRE, INCLUDING CHRISTIANITY, BECAUSE TRUE AUTHENTIC CHRISTIANITY IS NOT A RELIGION. IT NEVER WAS A RELIGION. RELIGION IS WHAT SATAN MANUFACTURES TO SATISFY THE SPIRITUAL NATURE OF MAN. HE TOOK THE TRUTH OF CHRISTIANITY AND PERVERTED IT INTO A RELIGIOUS MONSTER TO DERAIL THOSE WHO WERE SMART ENOUGH TO FIGURE OUT CHRIST REALLY WAS THE MESSIAH. HE TAKES THAT ASPECT OF CHRIST, AND TWISTS IT ALL AROUND INTO A RELIGIOUS “BELIEF SYSTEM”. True Christianity is not a religious belief system. It is not another “faith system”. All religions have at their core FAITH AND BELIEF. Modern Christianity is wholly a PERVERSION OF THE TRUTH OF JESUS CHRIST. It is a SATANIC SUBSTITUTE FOR THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.

Christianity was SO RADICAL in its very nature that MAN COULD NOT UNDERSTAND WHAT CHRIST BROUGHT. The ORIGINAL CHURCH KNEW THE TRUTH, TAUGHT THE TRUTH, AND HELD FAST TO THE TRUTH. If the original church was on earth today, it would be branded as a totally fanatical far out “cult”, as a group of mentally disturbed people in great need of help. Apostasy set in, and soon the TRUTH WAS MERGED WITH ALL SORTS OF LIES AND DECEPTIONS, EXACTLY AS PAUL AND THE OTHER APOSTLES FORETOLD. What was truth was eventually called a lie, and the lies were brought in as truth. The modern faith movement, which began in the 1700s and the early 1800s was the final assault upon the REAL TRUTH OF CHRIST. The faith movement UTTERLY REMOVED THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY AND SUBSTITUTED IN ITS PLACE A SYSTEM OF INSTANT “DECISIONS”, PARADED AS “FAITH” AND “BELIEF” THAT HAS AND WILL DAMN MILLIONS OF SOULS TO ETERNAL RUIN.

Man has always RECOGNIZED that in Christ was something very special, and very different (even Pilate knew that) and thus more books are written about Christ than any other figure in human history, and more

problems and fights have arisen over Christ and the meaning of Christ than any other figure in history. But for all that, because man is UNREGENERATE, and because man WILL NOT DO AS CHRIST COMMANDED, the vast majority of believers, and all unbelievers of whatever persuasion, VIEW CHRISTIANITY AS A RELIGION which is PRECISELY WHY ALL THE WORLD RELIGIONS ARE BEING COMBINED TO FORM A ONE WORLD RELIGION; AND CHRISTIANITY WILL BE A KEYNOTE RELIGION IN THIS FINAL APOSTATE ANTICHRIST SATANIC DECEPTION.

CHRISTIANITY IN TRUTH IS SO SIMPLE IT GOES RIGHT OVER THE HEADS OF MAN. THEY FLAT DO NOT GRASP THE SIMPLICITY OF CHRIST. CHRISTIANITY CAN BE SUMMED UP AS THIS: A CHANGED HEART, A REAL, LITERAL ALBEIT WHOLLY SUPERNATURAL CHANGED HEART. IT IS A MIRACLE. IT IS A LOVE CHANGE. IT IS SUPERNATURAL TO MAN. MAN IS DEPRAVED AND LOST BECAUSE HE LOST AGAPE LOVE AT A REAL AND LITERAL FALL. Man's heart is therefore called UNREGENERATE. He must, if he is to enter heaven, OBTAIN A NEW HEART, A HEART OF AGAPE LOVE. He does not obtain it by becoming "religious". He does not obtain it by going to "church". He does not obtain it by ANY FORM OF RELIGIOUS BELIEF SYSTEM ON PLANET EARTH. HE DOES NOT OBTAIN IT BY MAKING A "DECISION FOR CHRIST". He does not obtain it by faith as it is defined by today's false prophets. He obtains it BY BEING OBEDIENT TO THE COMMAND OF CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER, which, when summed up to their final essence is this: "SEARCH FOR THE LORD THY GOD WITH ALL THY MIND, ALL THY HEART, ALL THY SOUL, AND ALL THY STRENGTH, AND THOU SHALT FIND HIM." That search, says the Scripture, PROVES FAITH VALID. It tries the faith, the profession to see if it be true or not. FAITH HATH A WORK. That "work" is not "works" or "legalism".

Dear soul, this is not a religious command. It is not a command to do ANYTHING EXCEPT TO SEARCH FOR THE MEANING BEHIND YOUR LIFE UNTIL YOU HAVE MET THE LIVING CHRIST FACE TO FACE. IT WILL HAPPEN TO YOU IF YOU WILL, AND IT WILL NOT HAPPEN IF YOU WON'T. DIVINE AGAPE IS NOT KNOWN BY NATURAL MAN. Natural man knows NOTHING of the agape love of God. It is beyond HIS MIND, BEYOND HIS REASON, BEYOND HIS BEING, BEYOND HIS IMAGINATION. He cannot COMPREHEND OR KNOW ANYTHING ABOUT IT. It is HIDDEN because of the FALL OF MAN.

If God has HIDDEN SOMETHING, and it is a MYSTERY, a SECRET, and UNKNOWN, then to FIND IT, MAN MUST ENTER INTO A SEARCH. The call to SEARCH IT OUT is the PRIMARY CALL OF CHRIST, GOD THE FATHER AND THE HOLY SPIRIT. The STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY ARE THE SEARCH. If any human soul will RESOLVE IN THEIR HEART THAT WILL SEARCH THIS MATTER OUT WITH ALL DILIGENCE, GOD WILL MOVE HEAVEN AND EARTH TO SHOW YOU THE TRUTH. AS YOU SEARCH, GOD SUPERNATURALLY BRINGS YOU DOWN. If you will not make this SEARCH the PRIMARY, THE ONE AND ONLY EFFORT IN YOUR LIFE, CHRIST SAYS YOU WILL NEVER FIND HIM, FOR THAT IS HIS PRIMARY COMMAND TO YOU. Scripture wholly proves it true.

It is not a "work". It is not a form of "legalism". It is in fact a diametric opposite of works or legalism. But if you insist that IT IS A WORK, OR IT IS A FORM OF LEGALISM, YOU WILL PERISH IN YOUR SINS, YOU WILL BE LOST FOREVER. But if you will DO IT, YOU WILL FIND CHRIST, YOU WILL FIND AGAPE, and you will find "life". And when you do, you will be utterly amazed and held in total awe at this AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. You will stand transfixed as you LOOK DEEP INTO THE DEPTH, THE HEIGHT, THE BREADTH AND THE WIDTH OF HIS LOVE. You will be amazed AT THE SIMPLICITY OF CHRIST. You will be AWED at the POWER OF GOD. You will KNOW A SECRET THAT ONE OF THE 'FEW' WILL FIND.

You will know with Paul what it is to say, “ I KNOW I HAVE BEEN CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST.” You will KNOW what Paul means when he speaks of the MYSTERY OF GOD. You will know what is meant by TRUE JOY AND TRUE PEACE, that Christ said was NOT OF THIS WORLD. But if you will not LIFT YOUR FINGER TO SEARCH IT OUT, God says YOU ARE A FOOL, AND HE WILL MOCK YOU IN YOUR DAY OF TROUBLE. Now you can either believe the Bible, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD, or you can believe the modern FALSE PROPHETS OF DEATH and go WITH THEM INTO THE FLAMING FIRE FOREVER.

Mankind invents all sorts of religions. He invents all sorts of philosophies to explain life. They all end up in death. They are all utter foolishness to God. They are the reasoning of unregenerate hearts WHO REFUSE to be OBEDIENT to ONE simple command: SEARCH IT OUT WITH ALL YOUR STRENGTH, ALL YOUR MIND, ALL YOUR HEART. Drop all bias, drop all pretense, drop all tradition, drop all knowledge, and SIT AT THE FEET OF CHRIST and LISTEN TO WHAT HE SAYS. LISTEN AND YOU WILL FIND LIFE, REFUSE AND YOU WILL REMAIN FOREVER IN DARKNESS.

All religions are satanic counterfeits to the simplicity of the Gospel call of Christ. Satan does know that IF YOU WILL DO AS COMMANDED, you will find the truth. Then you will be SET FREE. Then Satan has lost yet another soul to Christ, whom he HATES WITH A PASSION. So if this be the case, Satan will INVENT WHATEVER HE MUST INVENT TO PREVENT YOU FROM ESCAPING. Usually he wraps it up in theological doublespeak, and complicated programs to confuse the mind. Christ, on the other hand, said it was simple; HIDDEN BUT SIMPLE. You must die, He said, while yet you live. IF YOU WILL DIE, YOU WILL FIND LIFE. He was not speaking of suicide, but of a literal and real method God employs to bring the human soul DOWN THE PIT, so God can deal IN TRUTH.

RELIGION IS THE OPPOSITE OF WHAT GOD AND CHRIST COMMAND BE DONE. That is why RELIGIONS are dangerous. That is why RELIGIONS CAN KILL, TORTURE, AND ENSLAVE ALL IN THE NAME OF CHRIST AND GOD OR ALLAH OR WHOMEVER. They know not love. They know nothing about TRUE LOVE. They are slaves to their passions, to their beliefs, and they will KILL YOU FOR THOSE BELIEFS. Thus it is that RELIGIONS WAR UPON MAN, because SATAN IS THE GOD OF ALL RELIGIONS, and he WARS UPON MAN. Satan’s entire purpose upon earth is to do anything he must to accomplish his goal of UTTER DESTRUCTION OF THE HUMAN RACE. He is a VERY REAL, VERY POWERFUL, EXTREMELY INTELLIGENT CREATURE OF EVIL. Those that have walked the narrow way KNOW THIS FOR A FACT.

The religious soul clothes himself or herself with robes of RIGHTEOUSNESS. They are “religious” and “pious” and “good”. They dress in long robes and parade about in PRETENSE. Christ had words for them and they are not pleasant. They will die in their sins. THE CALL OF GOD IS NOT TO BE RELIGIOUS, BUT TO DESIRE TO FIND THE TRUTH BEHIND LIFE MORE THAN ANYTHING ELSE. RELIGION, ON THE OTHER HAND IS QUITE SOMETHING ELSE:

**IT IS THE SATANIC COUNTERFEIT TO DAMN THE HUMAN RACE BECAUSE THEY REJECTED TRUE AGAPE LOVE, THEY REJECTED CHRIST, THEY REJECTED THE METHOD GOD GAVE TO MAN, AND ALL THE PROOFS GOD GAVE TO MAN.**

They said WE WILL NOT HAVE THIS MAN RULE OVER US. They then manufactured a million religions, a million philosophies, a million ideas which at the root HAD ONLY ONE PURPOSE:

**TO CIRCUMVENT THE CROSS OF CHRIST, TO  
CIRCUMVENT HIS COMMANDS.**

*“And for **THIS CAUSE** (no other reason whatever)*

*GOD SHALL SEND THEM STRONG DELUSION,*

*THAT THEY **SHOULD BELIEVE A LIE***

*THAT THEY **ALL MIGHT BE DAMNED** WHO BELIEVED NOT  
THE TRUTH,*

*BUT HAD PLEASURE IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.”*

*(2 Thessalonians 2:11-12)*

Notice how God says that there is ONLY ONE CAUSE THAT FORCES HIM TO SEND A DELUSION UPON THE WORLD OF CHRIST REJECTERS WHICH INCLUDES THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS: ONE CAUSE; WHAT WAS IT?

*“...because THEY **RECEIVED NOT THE (AGAPE) LOVE OF THE TRUTH***

*(JESUS CHRIST).”*

*(2 Thessalonians 2:10)*

There is ONLY ONE REASON LISTED IN ALL OF SCRIPTURE FOR A SOUL GOING INTO ETERNAL RUIN: **THEY DO NOT LAY HOLD OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST, THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST WITHIN.** Because they refused the strait gate and refused the narrow way, THEY NEVER LAY HOLD OF IT, AND THEY ARE LOST FOREVER. The whole of modern Christianity is rapidly falling into the **GRAND DELUSION OF GOD, ALONG WITH ALL NATIONS OF THE WORLD.** The United Nations, the Masonic Lodges, the world religions, all the world philosophies are BEGINNING TO UNDERSTAND THAT LOVE AND BROTHERHOOD ARE THE ONLY **UNIFYING FORCES** THERE ARE TO PREVENT WAR.

All mankind knows about love. Every human soul has at one time or another experienced the fantastic heights of LOVE. It may have been only a fleeting moment, but ALL OF MAN KNOWS THE POWER OF LOVE. It is the one common GLUE to bring man together. THE DELUSION IN ALL OF THIS IS THAT **THE LOVE OF MAN IS NOT LOVE AT ALL.** IT IS MANIPULATIVE, SELF-CENTERED, POWER SEEKING AND LEADS TO UTTER RUIN. It only appears to be the answer! It is the BASELINE OF THE GRAND DELUSION.

The ROOT of the grand delusion is that **THE NATURAL LOVE OF MAN RELEASED IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.** In other words, human love released, human love IN ACTION, by being a ‘point of light’ IS THE VERY LOVE OF GOD, AND IS THE FULFILLING OF THE COMMANDS TO LOVE. Thus if a soul goes out and rights some wrong, or does something good and nice, HE IS FULFILLING THE COMMANDS OF GOD TO LOVE, AND HIS LOVE IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF

GOD. Scripture will prove that **THIS IS THE GRAND DELUSION**. It is from this base delusion that all other delusions will spring from. **HUMAN LOVE RELEASED IS ONLY HUMAN LOVE RELEASED**. It may be beautiful, it may be wonderful, it may fill you with great joy and peace, **BUT IT IS NOT THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD**.

The grand delusion is not just for UNBELIEVERS. It is for **EVERYONE THAT DOES NOT LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE**. You cannot lay hold of agape love unless you walk the NARROW WAY to find LIFE, which is in CHRIST. THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WILL BE SWEEPED AWAY IN THE GRAND DELUSION OF ANTICHRIST, which is why so many Christians are involved in UNITED NATIONS OPERATIONS, PEACE DEMONSTRATIONS, NEW AGE CONCEPTS AND SEE NOTHING WRONG WITH IT. The love the UN espouses, along with the Masonic Lodge, and all other religions of the world IS PHILEO LOVE. It will damn them and you in the end if you embrace it.

The AGAPE LOVE of God **was lost** at the fall. Mankind does not even have the faintest idea of what agape love is. His form of agape love is nothing more than a sub-definition of his PHILEO LOVE OR BROTHERLY LOVE. The agape love of man is twisted, perverted, ruined by a very literal and real fall, as we explore later in this series. The hunger within man, the all pervading search of man for his Creator centers in his CRAVING TO OBTAIN LOVE. The human soul wants to be loved more than anything else in the world. It wants to BE LOVED AND TO LOVE. All of life is nothing but a search for this illusive thing we call love. **What man REFUSES TO RECOGNIZE, AND REFUSES TO DEAL WITH, IS HIS TOTAL INABILITY TO ACCOMPLISH THAT WHICH HE SEEKS TO DO.**

The **LOVE WHICH MAN SEEKS HE DOES NOT HAVE**. IT IS NOT WITHIN HIM. IT IS NOT WITHIN HIS NATURE. HE IS NOT CAPABLE OF BEING ANYMORE THAN WHAT HE IS; A FALLEN CREATURE, DESTINED FOR SORROW AND RUIN. His nature does not allow anything more than strife, division, factions, crime, murder, war, thefts and power plays. HE ENDS UP IN ETERNAL RUIN. Christ came down to the world and said to man: "Look, I am your redeemer. I hold the secrets to your troubles, to your pain, and to your suffering. I can answer all of your hungering, all of your loneliness, all of your fears. I can show you WHY THESE THINGS BE. I can give you all the answers. I can heal you; I can make you all well." He then proceeded to prove He was something very special by performing all manner of healing and miracles. But we are a hardened lot, and we live in pain and suffering. We watch a loved one die in terrible suffering and we are hopeless to do anything about it. We stand by in total anguish, with huge anger in our hearts and chests for we ARE HOPELESS IN THE FACE OF DEATH. WE ARE NOT THE MASTER OF OUR SOULS; WE ARE NOT THE MASTER OF OUR SHIP. **THERE IS AN UNSEEN FORCE DRIVING EVERYTHING WE KNOW, EVERYTHING WE LOVE, EVERYTHING WE SEE TO UTTER RUIN AND DESPAIR.**

We view Christ with a hardened eye. We hear His message, yet we see what we see. We are unable to reconcile the two concepts. If God is love, then why does He allow all of this to happen? Why does He not put a stop to it? Christ gave us the answers, BUT WE HATE THE ANSWERS. SO WE REJECT IT OUT OF HAND, IN ANGER. We blame God for everything unpleasant. We throw mud at God when things do not go right. But God is not to blame. ADAM AND EVE ARE TO BLAME. THEY SOLD US OUT. THEY SOLD US INTO THE DOMINION OF A CREATURE NAMED SATAN. He holds a tight fist dominion over the entire human race, and HE HATES EVERY MAN, WOMAN AND CHILD EVER BORN INTO IT. He is worse than the worst nightmare movies Hollywood ever dreamed up. He is real; he is literal; and he will sweep the human race into utter ruin.

**We do not like what Christ said. We do not like His NEGATIVE GOSPEL. We live in a negative world, and who needs MORE NEGATIVE NEWS? His worst news? OUR LOVE**

**IS NOT LOVE AT ALL. NO HUMAN BEING IN TRUTH KNOWS WHAT TRUE LOVE REALLY IS. He said to us: “Your problem here is simple, but difficult to face. Your love, the love you have been born with is a hurtful type of love. You need ANOTHER TYPE OF LOVE. YOU NEED A LOVE CHANGE. YOU NEED TO HAVE YOUR OWN NATURAL LOVE UPROOTED, AND ANOTHER TYPE OF LOVE PUT IN ITS PLACE. If you will follow my directions, I WILL GIVE YOU A NEW LOVE, A NEW HEART, A HEART FILLED WITH TRUE LOVE, AGAPE. With it, you will be healed. With it, you will enter heaven. With it you will learn the secret behind the ENTIRE UNIVERSE.**

“To get what it is I bring to you, you will first have to suffer many things, for I am going to CUT OUT OF YOU THAT WHICH IS WRONG. SURGERY IS NEVER EASY; SURGERY IS PAINFUL. But if you will do as I tell you, and go through the anguish of the narrow way, WHEN YOU ARE DEAD, YET THOUGH YOU LIVE; I WILL COME AND GIVE YOU LIFE. Do you believe it?” The world rejects it, and the vast majority of believers reject it. Jesus even tells us why they reject it OUT OF HAND: THEY WILL NOT BE REPROVED BY THE LORD. THEY WILL NOT FACE THE REAL JUDGMENT, THE REAL TEST; THAT THERE IS NO AGAPE LOVE IN THEIR HEARTS. BUT DOES IT MATTER IF THE WORLD REJECTS IT OR NOT? BECAUSE

## **IT IS TRUE** **NEVERTHELESS.**

### **MORE PROOF THAT AGAPE LOVE RESIDES ONLY WITH GOD**

Jesus gave us much proof to prove out the real essence of God, if the direct statements of Scripture are not sufficient for you. Christ jelled down the ENTIRE LAW AND PROPHETS, THE ENTIRE BIBLE DOWN TO THE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE. You are familiar with the Ten Commandments. Most Christians view them as rules for DO’S and DONT’S. In reality they are not for that purpose at all, they have a much deeper purpose: THEY SHOW US SOMETHING ABOUT OURSELVES THAT WE REFUSE TO FACE AND ADMIT: **WE DO NOT AGAPE LOVE.**

Scripture says that NO HUMAN SOUL ON EARTH CAN KEEP THE TEN COMMANDMENTS. It is an impossibility. Try as you might, you will fail, in either THOUGHT, WORD OR DEED. Scripture also says that IF YOU FAIL IN EVEN ONE POINT OF THE LAW, ONLY ONE TIME, YOU ARE DAMNED FOR ETERNITY. In other words, you must keep the law 100% for 100% of your entire life, and if you fail, you are eternally lost.

***“FOR WHOSOEVER (that’s you and I)  
shall KEEP THE WHOLE LAW, AND YET***



***OFFEND IN ONE POINT,  
HE IS GUILTY OF ALL.***

***(James 2:10)***

***“Now we know that what things soever the law saith,  
It saith to them who are under the law:  
That every MOUTH MAY BE STOPPED, AND***

***ALL THE WORLD MAY BECOME GUILTY BEFORE GOD.***

***Therefore BY THE DEEDS OF THE LAW THERE SHALL  
NO FLESH BE JUSTIFIED IN HIS SIGHT:***

***For by the law is the KNOWLEDGE OF SIN.”***

***(Romans 3:19, 20)***

The law of God is designed to place the human soul in a box, shut the box up tight, and close him in. NO ONE CAN KEEP THE LAW. ALL WHO FAIL TO KEEP THE LAW ARE UNDER CONDEMNATION. The law REPRESENTS THE PERFECT LOVE OF GOD. The law represents the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. The whole concept of the law is to prove to you THAT YOU DO NOT HAVE THE LOVE OF GOD IN YOUR HEART, AND BECAUSE YOU DO NOT HAVE IT, YOU CANNOT KEEP THE LAW. In other words, **BECAUSE YOU DO NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE, YOU ARE CONDEMNED.**

This is the real function of the law. It is to prove to you that YOU DO NOT AGAPE LOVE. You do not need to be told to love your neighbor IF YOU LOVE HIM. You do not need to be told to love God, IF YOU LOVE HIM. You do not need to be told not to steal if you LOVE THE ONE YOU WOULD STEAL FROM. Now to prove this to the human race, Christ gave us several illustrations that say it all:

***“Master, WHICH IS THE GREAT COMMANDMENT IN THE LAW?***

***Jesus said unto him, THOU SHALT (AGAPAO) LOVE the Lord thy God  
with ALL THY HEART,  
AND WILL ALL THY SOUL, AND WITH ALL THY MIND.  
This is the first and great commandment.***

***And the second is like unto it,  
thou SHALT (AGAPAO) love thy neighbor as thyself.  
ON THESE TWO COMMANDMENTS  
HANG ALL THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS.”***

***(Matthew 22:36-40)***

So Christ Himself jells down the entire Scripture to TWO COMMANDMENTS, BOTH OF WHICH HAVE THE COMMAND TO AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THEM. What is Christ telling us? He is saying there is ONLY ONE CENTRAL ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD: THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. There is no other issue. Everything ever written, all of Scripture, both Old and New Testament deal with this issue and this issue alone: agape love. The testimony of the Scripture, of the Law and of the Prophets is this: AGAPE LOVE OR PERISH.

There is yet another incidence in Luke 18, in which a young ruler asks Jesus what he must do to OBTAIN ETERNAL LIFE. The answer Christ gives is ASTOUNDING IN IMPLICATION:

*“And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master,  
what shall I do to INHERIT ETERNAL LIFE?”*

*And Jesus said unto him, why callest thou me good? None is good, save one, that is, God.*

*Thou KNOWEST THE COMMANDMENTS, DO NOT COMMIT ADULTERY, DO NOT KILL, DO NOT STEAL, DO NOT BEAR FALSE WITNESS, HONOUR THY FATHER AND THY MOTHER.*

*And he said, ALL THESE THINGS HAVE I KEPT FROM MY YOUTH UP.*

*Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him,*

**YET LACKEST THOU ONE THING:**

**SELL ALL THAT THOU HAST,**

*and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven:*

**AND COME, FOLLOW ME.**

*And when he heard this, HE WAS VERY SORROWFUL; FOR HE WAS VERY RICH.*

*And when Jesus saw he was very sorrowful, He said,  
HOW HARDLY SHALL THEY THAT HAVE RICHES  
ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD!*

***FOR IT IS EASIER FOR A CAMEL TO GO THROUGH A  
NEEDLE’S EYE,  
THAN FOR A RICH MAN  
TO ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD.***

*And they that heard it said,  
**WHO THEN CAN BE SAVED?***

*And he said, THE THINGS WHICH ARE IMPOSSIBLE WITH MEN  
ARE POSSIBLE WITH GOD.”*

**(Luke 18:18-27)**

Notice that Jesus said the rich young ruler only lacked ONE THING. WHAT WAS IT? In truth it was the **AGAPE LOVE OF GOD**. This man was a religious man, a leader in his local synagogue. He had kept the commandments from the time he was a boy. Jesus did not dispute whatever the statement this man made. He did not even remotely suggest the man was lying or under deception. He did not slight the man's religious piety or godliness. IT WAS NOT THE ISSUE. The issue is a NEW HEART. THE ISSUE IS NOT LAW KEEPING, OR DOING GOOD WORKS, BUT PLACING THE LAW WITHIN THE HUMAN HEART. This man lacked only one thing: **A NEW HEART, A HEART OF AGAPE LOVE!** All the religions in the world fail utterly to address this issue!

Jesus told the young man to go and sell ALL OF WHAT HE OWNED, AND THEN TO FOLLOW HIM. **He would not do it.** This is further proof that he did not have within AGAPE LOVE. He claimed he loved God. He claimed that he was showing he loved God by keeping the law. Many Christians do the same thing. They claim they love God, and their proof is by going to church and keeping to the many functions "Christians" are supposed to do. It is not proof of anything but a delusion. It is evidence of nothing whatever. When Jesus Christ called upon this man to TURN HIS BACK UPON THE WORLD (ENTER THE STRAIT GATE), and to FOLLOW CHRIST (WALK THE NARROW WAY TO DEATH OF SELF); THE RICH MAN REFUSED. The many refused to do the same thing.

The many claimed they loved Jesus loud and long. They claimed their love of Jesus from the rooftops of their various churches. They said they did love Jesus with all their heart, soul and mind. YET THEY WOULD NOT TURN THEIR BACK UPON THE WORLD AND WALK THE NARROW WAY UNTO DEATH TO FIND LIFE. This they utterly refused to do, and their theology told them they did not have to do it. Their answer to Christ is the same as the rich man's answer: We'll take eternal life, but **don't you dare tell us HOW TO GO ABOUT IT.** The rich man's so called love was proven a sham, a lie, a deception. THEY ALL HAVE ONE THING LACKING IN COMMON: THE PURE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD WITHIN THEIR HEARTS.

To the many, Jesus said "I NEVER KNEW YOU". You see, they only lacked ONE THING: 'CHRIST DID NOT KNOW THEM'. The rich young ruler only lacked ONE thing: AGAPE LOVE. The rich man could not admit HIS REAL NEED. HE COULD NOT ADMIT HE NEEDED A LOVE SOURCE OUTSIDE HIMSELF.

**JESUS SAID TO HIM: "THOU LACKEST ONE THING."**

## **ONE THING.**

How was he to obtain that which he lacked?

- 1. HE WAS TO LEAVE EVERYTHING BEHIND.**
- 2. HE WAS TO FOLLOW JESUS.**

Jesus could not have been more to the point. GO AND SELL ALL THAT YOU HAVE. Is Jesus defining the STRAIT GATE? Is Jesus defining a **COMMITMENT TO FIND THE TRUTH THAT EXCEEDS ALL OTHER COMMITMENTS IN LIFE?** Is Jesus defining what the apostates now call **TOXIC FAITH?** Is Jesus giving us a WARNING about the **COMMITMENTS REQUIRED TO WALK THE NARROW WAY?** I hear many Christians tell me that if Jesus told them to get out of their business they would do so. IS IT POSSIBLE THAT HE ALREADY DID, AND THEY ARE NOT LISTENING?

When Jesus said 'FOLLOW ME', WHAT DID HE MEAN? Phase one is turning your back upon the world, and phase two is to FOLLOW JESUS. Where did Jesus go? He went to Calvary. He died unto Himself. He went to Hades and obtained the keys of Hades, death and eternal life. Jesus died upon a cross. Jesus also demanded that we pick up our own cross. Could it be that picking up your own cross has NOTHING TO DO WITH SELF DENIAL WHATEVER, BUT IS INSTEAD THAT THE BELIEVER MUST DIE A VERY LITERAL AND VERY REAL SOUL DEATH WHILE THEY ARE ALIVE AND WALKING AROUND? IS DYING TO SELF THE VERY OPPOSITE OF WHAT IS PRESENTLY BEING TAUGHT IN MANY FUNDAMENTALIST CHURCHES?

The common explanation from the fundamentalist camp is that dying to self, means giving everything over to Jesus, that is, He takes over. We must surrender, they say, we must lay it all on the line and LET GO AND LET JESUS. But what if that is incorrect? What if this DYING TO SELF MEANS A VERY LITERAL AND VERY REAL AND EXPERIENTIAL DEATH WALK WHILE WE YET LIVE? WHAT IF IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH GIVING UP ANYTHING AT ALL EXCEPT LIFE ITSELF? IS THERE A SUPERNATURAL ELEMENT INVOLVED THAT ONLY GOD CAN WORK OVER A PERIOD OF TIME? That God HIMSELF KILLS US WHILE WE LIVE? Could it be that dying to self means the total extinguishing of the inner man, the inner spirit? Could it be that you do nothing whatever except **SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH BEHIND CHRIST WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART, SOUL, MIND AND STRENGTH, AND GOD DOES ALL THE REST?** IS THIS DEATH NECESSARY BEFORE AGAPE LOVE WILL BE GRANTED? The question to you is this: **DID JESUS MEAN WHAT HE SAID?** Your answer will determine your eternal destiny.

To prove that Christ did not have a slip of the tongue or of sanity when He reduced the entire Bible down to the two commandments, He then went a step further: HE REDUCED THE BIBLE DOWN TO ONE THING ALONE:

*"As the Father HATH (AGAPAO) LOVED ME,*

*so have I (AGAPAO) LOVED YOU:*

**CONTINUE YE IN MY (AGAPE) LOVE.**

**If ye KEEP MY COMMANDMENTS,**

**YE SHALL ABIDE IN MY (AGAPAO) LOVE**

*even as I have kept my Father's commandments,*

**AND ABIDE IN HIS (AGAPE) LOVE.**

*These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.*

**THIS IS MY COMMANDMENT,  
THAT YE (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER,**

**AS I HAVE (AGAPE) LOVED YOU."**

**(John 15:9-12)**

So here we have the final commandment in all of its simplicity and beauty: AGAPE LOVE ONE ANOTHER. THE ENTIRE BIBLE IS JELLED DOWN TO THIS ONE THING: AGAPE LOVE. WE ARE TO AGAPE LOVE, FOR GOD IS AGAPE LOVE, AND CHRIST IS AGAPE LOVE. Did Jesus make a mistake here?

***“These things I COMMAND YOU, that ye (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER.”***  
***(John 15:17)***

This is the simplicity of the Gospel. This is the simplicity of Christ. This is the beauty of God. It all reduces down to this AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. Obviously the many who stood before Jesus Christ never understood what it meant. They had a theological knowledge of what it meant, but Christ had never showed them EXPERIENTIALLY WHAT IT MEANT. HE DID NOT ‘KNOW’ THEM. They did not have union, they did not have agape love. THEY ONLY THOUGHT THEY HAD IT. Their theology and their doctrines TOLD THEM THEY HAD IT, BUT IN REALITY THEY DID NOT. Their theology told them that entering the strait gate and walking the narrow way fell under ‘works’ or ‘legalism’. Their theology told them that Christ WAS THEIR TOTAL SUBSTITUTE, AND THAT HE DID EVERYTHING FOR THEM. Question: Is the doctrine of substitution as currently taught correct? The answer will shock you! NO.

Thus we find in all cases that the central core issue is always this one item: THE MYSTERIOUS LOVE CALLED AGAPE. Paul speaks of this very thing:

***“For this, thou shalt not commit adultery, thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not steal, thou shalt not bear false witness, thou shalt not covet; AND IF THERE BE ANY OTHER COMMANDMENT,***

***IT IS BRIEFLY COMPREHENDED IN THIS SAYING, NAMELY,***

***THOU SHALT (AGAPAO) LOVE THY NEIGHBOUR AS***  
***THYSELF.”***  
***(Romans 13:9)***

Is that not what Jesus said? Did not Jesus jell it down to only one issue? Paul is telling you what is behind the Ten Commandments: AGAPE LOVE. How then can we AGAPE LOVE AS COMMANDED ***IF IT IS NOT A PART OF US?*** The answer is chilling in implication:

**WE CANNOT FULFILL THIS LAW WHATSOEVER.**

The new law, the New Covenant, is the LAW OF ***AGAPE LOVE WITHIN.*** The commandment is plain: AGAPE LOVE. The many who stood before Jesus Christ rejected DID MANY WONDERFUL WORKS. THEY PERFORMED MIRACLES IN THE NAME OF JESUS. They all lacked on thing: AGAPE LOVE. ***If the law commands you to AGAPE LOVE, and you DO NOT HAVE IT WITHIN YOU,***

***THEN YOU CANNOT FULFILL THE COMMAND! It does not matter how great your works of faith are, you still CANNOT FULFILL THE COMMAND.***

Scripture proves that agape love ***IS NOT*** simply human love IN ACTION. Agape love IS NOT natural human love RELEASED. Agape love is SUPERNATURAL, beyond the human condition. Mankind does NOT KNOW OR UNDERSTAND AGAPE LOVE. IT IS BEYOND HIS KNOWLEDGE, BEYOND HIS UNDERSTANDING, BEYOND HIS NATURE. That puts us into a box, it shuts the cover down hard, and it DAMNS US FOR ALL ETERNITY.

Do you understand the gravity of this? If this AGAPE LOVE is not even a part of our nature, then how in the world can we fulfill the commandment of Jesus Christ? The answer is simple: WE CANNOT, ***UNLESS WE OBTAIN THIS AGAPE LOVE VIA REGENERATION, WHICH BESTOWS IT UPON US.*** Do you see? Jesus said you had to be born again to even see heaven! Jesus said we had to be born again to enter heaven. **THE FIRST REQUIREMENT OF CHRIST IS THAT WE BE BORN AGAIN, OR REGENERATED.** The many failed to become regenerated, they failed to become BORN AGAIN. Because they were NOT REGENERATED, THEY COULD NOT FULFILL THE COMMANDMENT OF JESUS CHRIST! ***You cannot agape love UNLESS YOU HAVE IT WITHIN YOU.***

Jesus told the ‘many’ that they were ‘workers of iniquity’. Their works were EVIL. Why? Because the ***NEW COVENANT REQUIRES ALL WORKS TO BE DONE IN AGAPE LOVE,*** and the only way you can OBTAIN agape love is to be REGENERATED! All of their religion, all of their works, all of their godliness was A TOTAL SHAM, A TOTAL DECEPTION. **THEY FAILED TO SETTLE THE ISSUE BETWEEN THEMSELVES AND GOD:**

## **THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE.**

Because they did not have agape love within them, then all of their dedication and service was in VAIN. The ONE SINGLE INGREDIENT THEY NEEDED TO BE ACCEPTED BY GOD WAS MISSING: AGAPE LOVE. So the real question becomes this: HOW DO WE OBTAIN IT? It is not a “decision for Christ”. It is not simply BELIEVING IT. It is not by claiming it as an ACT OF FAITH.

We now come back to Paul and will take another look at his comments on CHARITY, and it should become obvious to you what Paul is saying:

***“Though I speak with the TONGUES OF MEN AND OF ANGELS,  
AND HAVE NOT (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY,  
I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.***

***And though I have THE GIFT OF PROPHECY,  
AND UNDERSTAND ALL MYSTERIES, AND ALL KNOWLEDGE;  
AND THOUGH I HAVE ALL FAITH, SO THAT I COULD REMOVE MOUNTAINS,  
AND HAVE NOT (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY,  
I AM NOTHING.***

***And though I BESTOW ALL MY GOODS TO FEED THE POOR,  
AND THOUGH I GIVE MY BODY TO BE BURNED,***

**AND HAVE NOT (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY,  
IT PROFITETH ME NOTHING.”**  
(1 Corinthians 13:1-3)

**What Paul is telling us is that WITHOUT THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE AT REGENERATION, WE WILL NOT ENTER HEAVEN.** You can become the greatest superstar TV evangelist in the world, the greatest miracle worker ever, the most sought after theologian to ever walk planet earth, you can be a Mother Theresa, you can give away everything you own; and become a world known philanthropist; and it will AVAIL YOU NOT ONE THING, YOU WILL NOT PROFIT FROM IT. Entrance to heaven is not based upon any of these things.

Your gifts of the spirit will avail you nothing, your faith will avail you nothing, your belief will avail you nothing, for none of these are what CONSTITUTE SALVATION ITSELF. Faith and belief are MERELY **DYNAMICS** THAT MOVE YOU THROUGH THE NARROW WAY over time TO OBTAIN SALVATION. FAITH IS NOT SALVATION ITSELF. BELIEF IS NOT SALVATION ITSELF. FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST IS NOT SALVATION. BELIEF IN JESUS CHRIST IS NOT SALVATION. THESE ARE ONLY THE BEGINNING STEPS, AS THE ‘MANY’ FOUND OUT THE HARD WAY. THE BIBLE TELLS YOU EXACTLY WHAT SALVATION IS: **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, UNION WITH THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST.**

The following will be proven totally:

1. Agape love does not come at conversion to Jesus Christ.
2. Agape love does not come at baptism in water.
3. Agape love does not come at baptism in the Holy Spirit.
4. Agape love does not come simply because you have faith.
5. Agape love does not come simply because you believe.
6. Agape love does not come because you were confirmed.
7. Agape love does not come because you made a decision for Christ.
8. Agape love does not come because you asked Jesus into your heart.
9. Agape love does not come simply because you go out and do good works.

AGAPE LOVE COMES WHEN AND ONLY WHEN YOU HAVE BEEN OBEDIENT TO THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, HAVE KEPT HIS SAYINGS, HAVE ENTERED THE STRAIT GATE, AND HAVE WALKED THE NARROW WAY TO THE FINDING OF CHRIST AND UNION. In spite of all the theological denials in modern Christianity, you will not **ENTER THE NEW COVENANT ANY OTHER WAY.** You can either do it or you will simply be left behind for eternity. The choice is yours. Your opinions do not count, your bias does not count, your beliefs do not count, your church denomination’s opinions do not count, NOTHING WHATEVER ON EARTH COUNTS: **GOD IS SOVEREIGN, YOU DO AS HE SAYS, OR YOU PERISH IN YOUR SINS. CASE CLOSED.**

*“And now abideth faith, hope, (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY,  
THESE THREE  
BUT THE GREATEST OF THESE IS (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY.”*  
(1 Corinthians 13:13)

The word “greatest” is ‘meizon’ and it means **LARGEST, THE GREATER, THE MORE**. It is comparative to ‘megas’, which means **EXCEEDINGLY GREAT**. Faith is good, hope is good, but of all things this **AGAPE LOVE IS THE GREATEST OF ALL**. The reason is simple: **IT GETS YOU INTO HEAVEN’S GATE, IT IS YOUR TICKET TO HEAVEN**.

*“And ABOVE ALL THESE THINGS*

*PUT ON (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY,*

*WHICH IS THE BOND OF PERFECTNESS.”*

*(Colossians 3:14)*

Notice how this is worded: **ABOVE ALL THINGS** we are told to **PUT ON CHARITY**, for it is the **BOND** of perfection. The word “bond” here is ‘sundesmos’ and it means a **JOINT TIE, A UNITING PRINCIPLE**, and it comes from the word ‘sun’ which means **UNION, TO BE WITH, TOGETHER**. It verifies wholly the prayer of Christ, that **ALL BELIEVERS WOULD COME TO FULLNESS OF AGAPE LOVE UNION**. Agape love itself **IS THE BOND OF PERFECTNESS**. The word “perfectness” is ‘teleiotes’ and it means **PERFECTNESS, COMPLETENESS, PERFECTION**. In other words, when agape love is bestowed **ONE HAS ENTERED INTO COMPLETENESS WITH CHRIST**. They have entered into **UNION WITH CHRIST**.

*“Now THE END of the commandment is*

*(AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY*

*OUT OF A PURE HEART,*  
*AND OF A GOOD CONSCIENCE, AND OF*  
*FAITH UNFEIGNED.”*

*(1 Timothy 1:5)*

The **END, OR THE FINAL RESULT OF THE COMMANDMENT OF CHRIST IS THAT WE OBTAIN AGAPE LOVE FROM GOD**. When you come to the end, when you are dead and know it, when you have walked the narrow way, when **AGAPE LOVE IS REVEALED AND BESTOWED**, then you have a **PURE HEART, AND YOU ALSO HAVE A FAITH THAT IS UNFEIGNED**. There is a false faith, in fact, it is the faith of the modern faith movement. **IT IS A FALSE FAITH, AN UNTRIED FAITH, A COUNTERFEIT FAITH, A FAITH THAT IS POSING AS REAL FAITH**. It all began back in the 1700s from which came the modern faith movement.

Many verses of Scripture have been shown that prove the essence of the Godhead is 100% **PURE AGAPE LOVE**. Scripture clearly says that God created man in **HIS OWN IMAGE, IN HIS OWN LIKENESS**. It will now be proven totally that **‘IMAGE’** means precisely the image of **AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT ESSENCE**:

*“IN WHOM THE GOD OF THIS WORLD HATH BLINDED THE MINDS OF THEM WHICH*



*BELIEVE NOT,*

***LEST THE LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE)  
OF THE GLORIOUS GOSPEL OF CHRIST,  
WHO IS THE IMAGE OF GOD,  
SHOULD SHINE UNTO THEM.***

***(2 Corinthians 4:4)***

Christ is the IMAGE of God. The word “image” here is ‘eikon’ which means **A LIKENESS, A REPRESENTATION**. It is the same meaning as the word “image” in the Old Testament. As Christ was made in the image of God, and we have proved that Christ was pure 100% agape love, then man was also created in the same image, the image of 100% pure agape love. Speaking of Christ in Colossians, we find:

***“Who is THE IMAGE OF THE INVISIBLE GOD,  
the firstborn of every creature...”***

***(Colossians 1:15)***

There is no question here, man was created in the exact image of God, and we have Christ as our example, which is why Christ was called the SECOND ADAM:

***“And so it is written,  
The FIRST MAN ADAM WAS MADE A LIVING SOUL;***

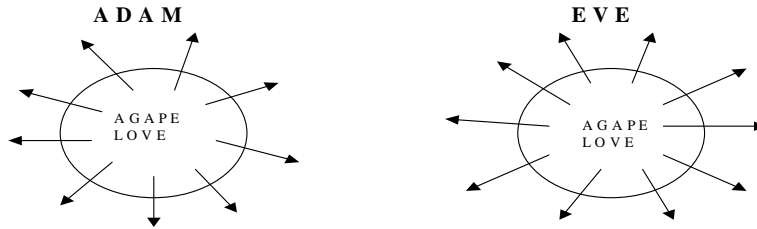
***THE LAST ADAM WAS MADE A  
QUICKENING SPIRIT.***

***(1 Corinthians 15:45)***

Jesus was called the second Adam to tell us something very important: AGAPE LOVE WAS LOST AT THE FALL, AND THROUGH CHRIST, IF WE BE OBEDIENT TO HIS COMMANDS, WE CAN REGAIN OUR LOST SPIRITUAL ESSENCE. THE REGAINING OF AGAPE LOVE AT REGENERATION IS ALSO CALLED ‘QUICKENING’. We must regain it or we will perish in our sins. The ‘many did not regain their lost spiritual essence; they refused to comply with the demands of Jesus Christ.

Their theology told them His demands were non-essential. It cost them eternity. DO NOT MAKE THE SAME MISTAKE. ETERNITY IS A LONG TIME.

Therefore we conclude that both Adam and Eve were made in the AGAPE LOVE IMAGE AND LIKENESS OF GOD. In graphic form, it would appear like this:



You will notice in the graphics that there are lines coming from the center of their hearts outward, flowing AWAY FROM THEM. It is vital you grasp why this is so. It is an ATTRIBUTE OF PURE AGAPE LOVE TO ALWAYS FLOW OUTWARD, TOWARDS OTHERS, NEVER INWARD TOWARDS SELF. True love concerns itself MORE WITH OTHERS THAN WITH ITSELF. Agape flows outward from the giver, who in reality is nothing more than a conduit for God to work through. This type of love is pure, without guile, without wrong motive. Divine agape love is the HIGHEST LOVE FORM IN THE UNIVERSE. THERE IS NO LOVE GREATER THAN DIVINE AGAPE.

## THE BOOK DEFINITION OF AGAPE LOVE

We have been using the term agape to describe a form of love that in its pure form belongs only to God. If we were to study Scripture we could learn what definition God applies to it, that is, we could learn ABOUT AGAPE LOVE. When we discuss the definition of agape love, we are only discussing the book definition, we are only going to learn ABOUT agape love. This examination will give to us a ‘mental’ knowledge of agape love, and only from the perspective of FALLEN MAN. This means that whatever we learn, it is only from the very limited perspective of our fallen nature, for pure agape love is beyond all knowledge, all wisdom, all ability for us to comprehend, unless it is REVEALED TO US.

Scripture proves that it is not sufficient to learn ABOUT AGAPE LOVE. To learn ABOUT agape love is to learn things ABOUT CHRIST. You can memorize the Scripture, learn it forward and backward, and still only know **ABOUT JESUS**. That is a ‘mental knowledge’ or a soul knowledge that extends only to the FACTS AND THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS CHRIST. That is wholly insufficient for REGENERATION. Jesus warned of this very thing:

***“SEARCH THE SCRIPTURES;  
FOR IN THEM YE THINK YE HAVE ETERNAL LIFE;***

*AND THEY ARE THEY WHICH TESTIFY OF ME.*  
**AND YE WILL NOT COME TO ME (VIA THE STRAIT GATE AND  
NARROW WAY),  
THAT YE MIGHT HAVE LIFE.”**  
(John 5:39-40)

Jesus is telling us that the Scriptures are **ONLY A TESTIMONY OF WHO JESUS CHRIST IS**. It is a factual document that tells us many things about this person Jesus Christ. **THEY ARE A TESTIMONY**. Jesus is telling you that the **SCRIPTURES DO NOT CONTAIN ETERNAL LIFE**. You can search the Bible all you want to, night and day, you can memorize verses, you can quote them backward and forward but it will not bring to you ETERNAL LIFE. You can claim all the promises by FAITH, and you will not have eternal life. **WHAT YOU ARE ENGAGED IN AT THAT POINT IS A HEAD KNOWLEDGE, A SENSE KNOWLEDGE, A SOUL KNOWLEDGE ABOUT JESUS CHRIST, OF WHAT JESUS CHRIST IS. YOUR SO CALLED FAITH IS A HEAD FAITH, A MENTAL FAITH, NOT A HEART FAITH.**

The danger here should be obvious to all: **YOU CANNOT SIMPLY EMBRACE A BUNCH OF FACTS AND PROMISES OF THE BIBLE ‘BY FAITH’** and then claim SALVATION. You do not claim salvation by saying “The Bible says I’m saved, so I’m saved!” **SALVATION IS NOT APPROPRIATED IN THAT MANNER, FOR THAT IS EXACTLY WHAT THE MANY DID, AND THEY WERE NOT SAVED, THEY DID NOT HAVE SALVATION**. Notice what Jesus says: **‘AND YOU WILL NOT COME TO ME.’** Facts are one thing, promises are one thing, but none of it avails you anything at all, **UNLESS AND UNTIL YOU COME TO THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST, FOR THE REMISSION OF YOUR SINS.**

Jesus is *separating Himself from the Scripture*. Jesus Christ is NOT THE BIBLE. Jesus Christ is a living entity, head of His Church, ruler of the Universe. He lives, and He oversees His Kingdom.

How are you to come to the Lord Jesus? He told you how, ***by entering the strait gate and walking the narrow way***. The ‘many’, or the vast majority of Christians, ARE BOOK CHRISTIANS, BIBLE CHRISTIANS. They have a VAST KNOWLEDGE ABOUT JESUS CHRIST. They know all about Him. These are mere FACTS. They EMBRACED THE FACTS AND SAID BY KNOWING THE FACTS, **BY ACCEPTING THE FACTS AS A MATTER OF FAITH, THEY WERE SAVED. NO WHERE DOES THE BIBLE SAY THAT. IT SAYS YOU MUST COME TO THE LIVING CHRIST, AND VIA THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY OF DEATH.** The rejected merely embraced a few promises IN THE BIBLE BY AN ACT OF FAITH, AND DECLARED THEMSELVES REGENERATED, AND IN FULL UNION WITH CHRIST. They redefined what faith really is, and it cost them eternity. **THEY WOULD NOT COME TO THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST.**

It is the LIVING JESUS CHRIST THAT WE MUST COME TO. IT IS THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST WE MUST FIND AND SEARCH OUT. It is the living Jesus Christ that offers SALVATION. It is UNION WITH THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST that offers you eternal life. You can KNOW ALL **ABOUT** JESUS CHRIST WITHOUT KNOWING **WHO** JESUS IS. We will cover this in depth later in this series, for it is vital that you know the difference BETWEEN KNOWING **ABOUT** JESUS, AND KNOWING JESUS IN REALITY, EXPERIENTIALLY IN HIS PERSON, HIS INNER ESSENCE, OR **WHO** HE REALLY IS.

**“And TO KNOW THE (AGAPE) LOVE OF CHRIST,**

**WHICH PASSETH ALL KNOWLEDGE,**

**THAT YE MIGHT BE FILLED WITH ALL THE FULLNESS**

**OF GOD.”**

**(Ephesians 3:19)**

The word “passeth” is ‘huperballo’ and it means **TO GO BEYOND, TO SURPASS, TO BE EXCEEDINGLY BEYOND**. It is essential you grasp what this means: IT MEANS THAT TRUE, DIVINE AGAPE LOVE IS BEYOND MANKIND. It is not a part of his nature. It is not something HE CAN LEARN FOR IT IS BEYOND THE CAPACITY OF MAN TO LEARN IT. It is totally beyond our knowledge or wisdom because **IT IS ALIEN TO US, WE DO NOT HAVE IT WITHIN US**. That is why Paul said you could have ALL KNOWLEDGE, AND UNDERSTAND ALL MYSTERIES, AND STILL NOT HAVE AGAPE. AGAPE IS NOT SOMETHING YOU LEARN. AGAPE IS NOT SOMETHING THAT COMES THROUGH THE MIND OR SENSES. There are many things you can search out with the human mind HOWEVER,

## **AGAPE LOVE IS NOT ONE OF THEM.**

The only thing you can understand about agape love **IS THE FACTS ABOUT IT**. For example, you could read 1 Corinthians 13 and find out **ABOUT** AGAPE LOVE. You could study the life of Jesus Christ and find out **ABOUT** AGAPE LOVE IN ACTION. You could even memorize everything there was to know about it, and then go out and MIMIC JESUS CHRIST and do everything He did, and still **YOU DO NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE WITHIN**. The human soul CANNOT MANUFACTURE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE. It is simply and totally **BEYOND HIS CAPACITY**. He does not have it within, and that is why **GOD MUST BESTOW IT UPON THE SEEKING SOUL**.

It is absolutely essential that you understand that simply because you have a mental knowledge of something, or that you know something from a human perspective, that **YOU HAVE NOT CHANGED YOUR NATURE**. You CAN learn ALL ABOUT AGAPE LOVE. You CAN by sheer will power VOW to carry out all the tasks that agape love requires. That is, you can feed the poor; give clothing to the naked, visit the sick, the shut-ins, and those in jails and prisons. You can attend church every Sunday, for every service, and any other functions during the week. You can tithe, you can give alms, you can sing your songs and pray diligently every hour on the hour. **YOU HAVE STILL NOT CHANGED YOUR NATURE, YOUR ESSENTIAL NATURE REMAINS THE SAME. A FALLEN HUMAN BEING IS A FALLEN HUMAN BEING, NO MATTER HOW MUCH HE MAY WHITWASH HIS SOUL AND PUT ON A FRONT TO DECEIVE HIMSELF AND HIS FELLOW HUMANS.**

AGAPE LOVE is something that one must **POSSESS**. AGAPE LOVE MUST BECOME PART OF YOUR NATURE, YOUR INNER ESSENCE. *Your inner heart must be RESURRECTED IN A LOVE CHANGE*, AND YOU MUST BE GIVEN A NEW HEART THAT IS MADE DIRECT FROM THE HAND OF GOD, A SUPERNATURAL ACT. Agape love is either **WITHIN** the heart or it is NOT. You do not learn about it to get it, you do not memorize the deeds of it and then go do it to possess it. You

must do what God commands, and if you will, **HE WILL GIVE IT TO YOU AS A GIFT. IF YOU WILL NOT, HE WILL NOT. AGAPE LOVE KNOWN EXPERIENTIALLY IS THE DISTILLATION OF THE BIBLE. WHEN GOD REVEALS THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE TO THE BELIEVER, THE BELIEVER INSTANTLY KNOWS WHAT THE ENTIRE BIBLE IS ALL ABOUT. THAT IS THE SIMPLICITY OF CHRIST.**

That is what Paul is telling us in his discourse on charity. NONE OF THE ITEMS LISTED AVAIL YOU OF ANYTHING. YOU MUST LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE VIA THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. You must enter into AUTHENTIC UNION with the LIVING JESUS CHRIST. Remember the ‘many’ rejected of Jesus? Remember the lukewarm Church REJECTED? Remember the NON-OVERCOMERS? Remember the ‘many’ who followed after the false teachers? Remember the wicked and evil servants? They all have one thing in common: **NO AGAPE LOVE WITHIN.** They did not have it because they refused to enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way.

We will now turn to an expository dictionary and find out the DICTIONARY interpretation of agape love. This tells us ABOUT WHAT AGAPE LOVE IS. The “Expanded Vine’s Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words”, will be the first place we will stop. It is one of the better explanations ABOUT agape love from mankind’s perspective. We turn to page 692 and we read: “LOVE” – verbs

1. AGAPAO and the corresponding noun AGAPE PRESENT “the characteristic word of Christianity, and since the Spirit of revelation has used it to **EXPRESS IDEAS PREVIOUSLY UNKNOWN, inquiry into its use, whether in Greek literature or in the Septuagint, throws BUT LITTLE LIGHT UPON ITS DISTINCTIVE MEANING IN THE NEW TESTAMENT...**”

I would like to stop right there, for this statement is **more profound than most realize.** Agape love was **UNKNOWN PRIOR TO CHRIST.** There is no corresponding word in the Old Testament. It is UNKNOWN because **CHRIST CAME TO REVEAL IT.** The life of Jesus Christ **REVEALS THE NATURE OF AGAPE LOVE.** The life of Christ **REVEALS WHAT AGAPE LOVE IS.** Prior to Christ the created nature of man was locked in the distant past, and unknown, a mystery. Christ came to show us **ABOUT THE MYSTERY.** The Old Testament was merely A TESTIMONY OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. Christ came as **PERSONIFIED AGAPE LOVE.** Christ was the actual and literal ***SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE COME IN THE FLESH,*** BORN OF A WOMAN TO BE A SON OF MAN, BORN OF A VIRGIN TO BE SON OF GOD. THE VERY NATURE OF CHRIST, HIS VERY ESSENCE, **THE FIBERS OF HIS BEING WERE PURE AGAPE LOVE.**

Agape love is indeed a **DISTINCTIVE TYPE OF LOVE,** and by and large, expositors **IGNORE THIS RADICAL DISTINCTION.** Christ was a **RADICAL,** and His distinction lies in **HIS ESSENCE; PURE AGAPE LOVE.** Scripture proves **MANKIND KNOWS NOTHING WHATEVER ABOUT THIS FORM OF AGAPE LOVE.** Man has a form of agape love, but that form is nothing more than a sub-definition of his **PHILEO LOVE, HIS NATURAL LOVE.** We will learn about phileo love later. We will now continue:

“AGAPE and AGAPAO are used in the NT (a) to describe the attitude of God toward His Son, John 17:26; the human race, generally, John 3:16; Rom. 5:8; and to such as believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, particularly, John 13:34, and toward all men, 1 Th. 3:12; 1 Co. 16:14, 2 Peter 1:7; (c) to **EXPRESS THE ESSENTIAL NATURE OF GOD.** 1 John 4:8.

Love can be known only from the **ACTION IT PROMPTS.** God’s love is seen in the gift of His Son, 1 John 4:9, 10. But obviously this is not the love of complacency, or affection, that is, it is not drawn out by

any excellency of its objects, Romans 5:8. It was an exercise of the Divine will in deliberate choice, made without assignable cause save that WHICH LIES IN THE NATURE OF GOD HIMSELF, cp Deut. 7:7,8.

Love had its perfect expression among men IN THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, 2 Co. 5:14; Eph. 2:4, 3:19, 5:2. CHRISTIAN LOVE IS THE FRUIT OF HIS SPIRIT IN THE CHRISTIAN, Gal. 5:22.

Christian love, whether exercised towards the brethren, or towards men generally, IS NOT AN IMPULSE FROM THE FEELINGS, IT DOES NOT ALWAYS RUN WITH THE NATURAL INCLINATIONS, NOR DOES IT SPEND ITSELF ONLY UPON THOSE FOR WHOM SOME AFFINITY IS DISCOVERED. LOVE SEEKS THE WELFARE OF ALL, Romans 15:2, and WORKS NO ILL TO ANY, 1 Co. 13:8-10, LOVE SEEKS OPPORTUNITY TO DO GOOD TO ALL MEN AND ESPECIALLY TOWARD THEM THAT ARE OF THE HOUSEHOLD OF THE FAITH, Gal. 6:10. See further 1 Co. 13 and Col. 3:12-14.

In respect of AGAPAO as used of God, it expresses the DEEP AND CONSTANT LOVE AND INTEREST OF A PERFECT BEING TOWARDS ENTIRELY UNWORTHY OBJECTS, producing and fostering a reverential love in them towards the Giver, and a practical love towards those who are PARTAKERS OF THE SAME, and a desire to help others to SEEK THE GIVER.”

This is probably the best book definition you will find on the actual FACTS concerning AGAPE LOVE. **IT IS THE HIGHEST FORM OF LOVE IN THE UNIVERSE, IT IS ALSO NOT EMOTIONAL, IN THE SENSE THAT WE VIEW PHILEO LOVE. IT IS FAR DEEPER, ALIEN TO THE HUMAN CONDITION.** Mankind, in his fallen natural state DOES NOT POSSESS THIS DIVINE TYPE OF AGAPE LOVE. It is not that man does not have a FORM OF AGAPE LOVE, but that form is perverted, and twisted, and thus MAN’S AGAPE LOVE IS A FEIGNED LOVE, AN UNTRUE LOVE. The religions of the world attempt to MANUFACTURE A FORM OF AGAPE LOVE **WITHOUT GOING TO THE CROSS OF JESUS CHRIST TO GET IT.**

There is no question that AGAPE LOVE IS THE KEY TO SALVATION. It will be proven so in this series with hundreds of verses of Scripture. To be regenerated, we MUST BE PARTAKERS OF THE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE, and we MUST ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO OBTAIN IT.

## CODE WORDS FOR AGAPE LOVE

There are many code words used that in reality mean AGAPE LOVE. The use of code words was done because agape love is the secret of God, the mystery of God. Agape love is HIDDEN from man because it is not a part of his nature, therefore he cannot comprehend its meaning. Man is dealing totally with the supernatural, totally with an alien form of love he cannot fathom. The Bible is written in code. It has one meaning for the unregenerate who will not obey the command to search things out, and quite another to those that will be obedient. It is designed that way to give the disobedient a **GRAND DELUSION OF SALVATION** that is UTTERLY FALSE. It is a SURPRISE, SURPRISE approach, allowed by God for the simple reason HE WARNED US ALL TO SEEK IT OUT WITH GREAT DILIGENCE.

The use of code words is done to throw off those whose hearts are not sincere in their search. They will read it, but not understand it. They will hear it, and not comprehend what was said. God did that on purpose because He foreknew that the vast majority of the ‘religious’ were impostors, hypocrites, liars and deceivers. **The Bible therefore was supernaturally written and designed in such a way as to**

**REFLECT THE INNER HEART MOTIVE BACK TO THE READER, IN A MANNER SO AS TO JUSTIFY THEMSELVES IN DELUSION.** The white supremacist groups quote the Bible to prove their points. They preach race hatred from a book of love. The homosexuals quote Scripture, and use it to justify their sin. The Baptists quote the bible, and use it to condemn all others. The Catholic Popes used Scripture to torture and murder millions of people. How is it possible? Because the Bible was written by a supernatural God who TOLD US IN HIS BOOK **THAT HE WOULD CHOOSE OUR DELUSIONS.** The impact of that remark is awful in implication.

If the heart of a believer is NOT SEEKING TRUTH, THE REAL TRUTH, no matter how close to home it comes, and it will hit DEAD CENTER to the seeker's heart, THEN GOD WILL CAUSE A DELUSION IN THE MIND OF THAT SOUL. The truth that God presents to the human race is a TERRIBLE TRUTH, so bad, in fact, that CHRIST SAID FEW WOULD FACE IT.

If we have millions of people quoting from their Bibles, millions of people believing they are saved and going to heaven, when Christ says the opposite, have we not then **MASSIVE DELUSION?** **HAVE WE NOT MILLIONS OF PEOPLE THAT ARE TOTALLY MISTAKEN AS TO THEIR STANDING BEFORE GOD?** Man will not face the real truth, so God allows him to twist the Scripture totally around, pervert it, distort it, and sail on right into damnation.

We will now look at some of the more frequent words which mean AGAPE LOVE. When you begin to discover these code words, the message of the Bible becomes much clearer, and the meanings of what Christ was referring to jump off the pages at you, and you begin to discern the Scripture in a whole new light.

## **WATER**

Water is the basis for all physical life on earth. It is one of the key essential ingredients that allow us to live. As water is the central essence for physical life, so too is agape love the essence of all spiritual life. Agape love IS THE WATER OF THE SPIRIT. Because this is true, the use of the word water, waters, wash, washed, washing, wells, pools, sprinkling, sprinkle, clouds and rain, often have a direct code meaning to agape love. When you study the Scripture with this in mind, a whole new truth begins to emerge from previously mysterious comments. One of the last verses of the entire Bible has this comment:

***“And THE SPIRIT AND THE BRIDE SAY, COME.  
AND LET HIM WHO HEARETH SAY, COME.***

***AND LET HIM THAT IS ATHIRST COME.***

***AND WHOSOEVER WILL,  
LET HIM TAKE THE WATER OF LIFE FREELY.”***

***(Revelation 22:17)***

This is an open invitation to all mankind to come and to DRINK OF THE WATER OF LIFE. The water of life is AGAPE LOVE, the essence of God, the image of God. Notice the precondition of BEING ATHIRST. If we are thirsty we will come. If we are not, we will not. The invitation of the strait gate and narrow way lies before man. He can come as God has ordained, and drink of agape love, which is at the end of the narrow way, or he can die and go into eternal ruin.

***“AND HE SHEWED ME A PURE RIVER OF WATER OF LIFE,  
CLEAR AS CRYSTAL,  
PROCEEDING OUT OF THE THRONE OF GOD  
AND OF THE LAMB.”  
(Revelation 22:1)***

Again we find WATER OF LIFE. As agape love is the life of the Spirit, then we know that what is meant by this is a PURE RIVER OF AGAPE LOVE, PURE AS CRYSTAL, which comes forth from God and Christ. The agape love of God and Christ is 100% PURE. There are no imperfections in it, it is not 99.9999% pure; it is **TOTALLY PERFECT, PERFECT PURITY.**

***“And HE SAID UNTO ME, IT IS DONE.  
I AM ALPHA AND OMEGA, THE BEGINNING AND THE END.  
I WILL GIVE UNTO HIM THAT IS ATHIRST  
OF THE FOUNTAIN OF THE WATER OF LIFE FREELY.  
HE THAT OVERCOMETH SHALL INHERIT ALL THINGS;  
AND I WILL BE HIS GOD,  
AND HE SHALL BE MY SON.”  
(Revelation 21:6-7)***

We must read this carefully, for all the elements that constitute TRUE SALVATION are right here. We find **THE WATER OF LIFE**, which is agape love. We find the precondition of being **ATHIRST**. Christ places a **CONDITION UPON THE GRANTING OF THE WATER OF LIFE: I WILL GIVE UNTO HIM THAT IS ‘ATHIRST’**. That means He will *not* give to those that ARE NOT ATHIRST, something we shall prove out later. He then ties together the **GIVING OF THE WATER (AGAPE LOVE) TO THAT OF BEING AN OVERCOMER**. It is the granting of the gift of AGAPE LOVE that makes one an overcomer. He then ties that directly to **BEING A SON OF GOD**. That totally confirms 1 John 3:1 and 1 John 3:14. We then see a SEQUENCE:

- 1. THIRST**
- 2. THE GRANTING OF AGAPE LOVE**
- 3. THAT MAKES ONE AN OVERCOMER**
- 4. THAT MAKES ONE A SON OF GOD**
- 5. THAT MAKES ONE PASS FROM DEATH TO LIFE.**



The use of the term water tied to life proves also that LIFE is another code word for agape love, something easily proved by a word search on the word life. We will now look at the encounter Christ had with the woman at the well, for here is a perfect confirmation:

*“Jesus answered and said unto her,  
IF THOU KNEWEST THE GIFT OF GOD,  
AND WHO IT IS THAT SAITH TO THEE,  
GIVE ME TO DRINK;  
THOU WOULDST HAVE ASKED OF HIM,  
AND HE WOULD HAVE GIVEN THEE LIVING WATER.”*  
(John 4:10)

Jesus says, “IF THOU KNEWEST THE GIFT OF GOD...”; 1 John 3:1 says that AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED IS THE GIFT OF GOD. The LIVING WATER FROM THE WELLS OF SALVATION HAS TO THEN BE AGAPE LOVE. We are to KNOW IT, TO EXPERIENCE IT. We find again a reference to LIVING WATER, which is another way of saying the WATER OF LIFE. Jesus says over and over that HE HIMSELF GIVES OF THIS WATER. This will be important later when we study the different functions of the Trinity in salvation. IT IS JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF PERSONALLY THAT GIVES US THE WATER OF LIFE, which is AGAPE LOVE.

*“BUT WHOSOEVER DRINKETH OF THE WATER  
THAT I SHALL GIVE HIM SHALL NEVER THIRST;  
BUT THE WATER THAT I SHALL GIVE HIM  
SHALL BE IN HIM A WELL OF WATER  
SPRINGING UP INTO EVERLASTING LIFE.”*  
(John 4:14)

Again Christ claims HE HIMSELF SHALL GIVE THIS WATER OF LIFE. It is not the Holy Spirit, it is not God the Father, BUT HE HIMSELF, PERSONALLY, something we shall verify totally as we proceed, even though modern theology DENIES IT. This ‘water’ that Christ gives PROMISES that the believer shall NEVER THIRST AGAIN, and in fact holds with it ETERNAL LIFE.

*“HE THAT BELIEVETH ON ME,  
AS THE SCRIPTURE HATH SAID,  
OUT OF HIS BELLY SHALL FLOW  
RIVERS OF LIVING WATER.”*  
(John 7:38)

HE THAT BELIEVETH ON JESUS CHRIST SHALL HAVE THIS LIVING WATER. The 'many' Christians believed, yet they did not have this LIVING WATER. WHY NOT? The answer lies in the QUALIFICATIONS THAT CHRIST LAYS DOWN FOR HIS DEFINITION OF 'BELIEVE'. **IT IS A REGENERATIVE BELIEF! IT IS A BELIEF THAT COMES ONLY TO THE REGENERATED, A BELIEF FROM THE INNER HEART.**

*“But God be thanked, THAT YE WERE THE SERVANTS OF SIN,  
BUT YE HAVE OBEYED FROM  
THE HEART  
THAT FORM OF DOCTRINE WHICH WAS DELIVERED YOU.”*  
(Romans 6:17)

*“THAT IF THOU SHALT CONFESS WITH THY MOUTH  
THE LORD JESUS,  
AND SHALT BELIEVE IN  
THINE HEART  
THAT GOD HATH RAISED HIM FROM THE DEAD,  
THOU SHALT BE SAVED.*

*FOR WITH THE HEART  
MAN BELIEVETH UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS;  
(WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT)  
AND WITH THE MOUTH  
CONFESSION IS MADE UNTO SALVATION.”*  
(Romans 10:9-10)

It is imperative to understand that the MANY WERE POSITIVE THEY BELIEVED FROM THEIR HEART. THEY ALSO CONFESSED WITH THEIR MOUTH, YET THEY WERE REJECTED OUT OF HAND, THEY WERE NOT SAVED. Scripture proves MAN HAS TWO HEARTS, ONE OUTER, ONE INNER. IT IS WITH THE INNER HEART THAT MAN IS REGENERATED. ONE MUST BELIEVE FROM THE INNER HEART, AND TO ACCOMPLISH THAT, THE INNER HEART MAN, THE SPIRIT MAN, MUST BE REGENERATED INTO NEW AGAPE LOVE LIFE.

The living waters are of course a never ending supply of AGAPE LOVE, for Christ is the supplier, and Christ is God, who holds a limitless supply of this divine love. Out of the inner heart of one who has come to believe from their INNER HEART upon Christ WILL FLOW THIS LOVE. The believer becomes a conduit of the great power in the Universe, the power of pure AGAPE LOVE.

*“Jesus answered, VERILY, VERILY, I SAY UNTO THEE,  
EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN OF WATER*

***AND OF THE SPIRIT,  
HE CANNOT ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD.***  
(John 3:5)

Here we find **THE CONDITION** for entering the kingdom of God. That means if we do not have the condition of being **BORN OF WATER, AND OF BEING BORN OF THE SPIRIT, we CANNOT, NOT IN ANY CASE, IN NO WISE, ENTER THE KINGDOM.** Many Christians laugh and scoff at the concept of REBIRTH OR BEING BORN AGAIN, and many churches REFUSE to allow anyone to even SPEAK OF IT, but their laughter will turn to sorrow, their mocking to tears. Jesus uses the term water here, and **He is not referring to baptism in some baptismal font,** He is speaking of being **BORN OF AGAPE LOVE WATER, OF HAVING YOUR ESSENTIAL NATURE CHANGED, OF BEING TRANSFERRED FROM DEATH TO LIFE VIA THE MIRACLE OF AGAPE LOVE REVELATION AND BESTOWMENT.** It will be totally proven out by series end. If water represents AGAPE LOVE, then terms that would indicate DRYNESS, would indicate the LACK OF AGAPE LOVE.

***“THESE ARE WELLS WITHOUT WATER,  
CLOUDS THAT ARE CARRIED WITH A TEMPEST;  
TO WHOM THE MIST OF DARKNESS IS RESERVED FOR EVER.”***  
(2 Peter 2:17)

We have studied the false prophets, the false teachers. What makes them false is that THEY HAVE NO WATER, **THEY HAVE NO AGAPE LOVE WITHIN.** They were *never regenerated.* They are wells WITHOUT WATER. They are **DRY WELLS.** They look like wells, they talk like wells, they act like wells, but within, they are **DRY, UNREGENERATE, WITH NO AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THEM.** The mist of eternal ruin is reserved for them. **There is a terrible warning to all modern evangelists, whose testimony does not match that of Scripture, whose teachings are far from the mark.**

*“These are spots in your feasts of charity,  
when they feast with you,  
feeding themselves without fear:  
CLOUDS THEY ARE WITHOUT WATER,  
CARRIED ABOUT OF WINDS;  
TREES WHOSE FRUIT WITHERETH,  
WITHOUT FRUIT,  
TWICE DEAD, PLUCKED UP BY THE ROOTS;”*  
(Jude 12)

The clue is again that they are called **CLOUDS WITHOUT WATER.** No water, no agape love, or **NOT REGENERATE.** If we go back to the Old Testament, we will find many reference that mean agape love, which at that time was not revealed to man, because Christ had not yet come into the world to show man what agape love means. The first place to stop is the story of Moses taking Israel between the waters of

the Red Sea. It is interesting to note that **THE WATERS PARTED, AND BETWEEN THEM WAS A NARROW WAY OF ESCAPE.**

Water can refer to either the natural love of man or to divine love. The portrait of the parting of the sea is the **DIVIDING OF THE WATERS** that is making a distinction between the two, and placing a narrow way of escape. It is the perfect portrait of **THE DIVISION BETWEEN PHILEO LOVE AND AGAPE LOVE, AND THE NARROW WAY TO FIND THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.** It is also interesting that as they walked the narrow way, **THAT BOTH TYPES OF LOVE WERE BESIDE THEM.** It is likewise true of the believer, but he does not recognize the difference between the two, nor can he, until he comes out on the other side, and his deliverance is realized by direct revelation of agape love, which passes all understanding.

It was water that destroyed man in the flood, and water is a code for agape love. Agape love is both water and fire. In fact the waters are to turn into fire in the end. If man ignores the command of Christ and God to lay hold of agape love no matter what the cost, then **AGAPE LOVE ITSELF WILL JUDGE MAN, DESTROY MAN, AND BURN HIM.**

What happens after Israel reaches the other side is where we will focus, for it shows us the difference between the two types of love, two types of water:

*“So Moses brought Israel from the Red Sea, and they went out into the  
**WILDERNESS OF SHUR;**  
**AND THEY WENT THREE DAYS IN THE WILDERNESS**  
**AND FOUND NO WATER.***

*AND WHEN THEY CAME TO MARAH,  
**THEY COULD NOT DRINK OF THE WATERS OF MARAH,**  
**FOR THEY WERE BITTER:**  
**THEREFORE THE NAME OF IT WAS CALLED MARAH.”**  
(Exodus 15:22-23)*

This is very important to our search, for they traveled **WITHOUT WATER.** If you go **THREE DAYS** without water, you are **ATHIRST.** You are **PARCHED AND DRY.** They come to a lake called Marah, which means **BITTERNESS.** The water was too bitter for them to drink. It is a perfect portrayal of the **VARIOUS PHILEO LOVES OF MAN.** It represents the **END RESULT OF THE LOVE OF MAN, IT IS BITTER, NOT FIT TO DRINK. IT IS FULL OF BETRAYAL, BROKEN PROMISES,** and the landscape is littered with those who put their trust in the love of man. Jesus characterized the love of man **AS EVIL, AS HURTFUL,** for it is wholly conditional, manipulative and seeks power and recognition in the end. **IT IS BITTER, FULL OF BITTERNESS.**

*“And the people murmured against MOSES, saying,  
**WHAT SHALL WE DRINK?***

*AND HE CRIED UNTO THE LORD;  
**AND THE LORD SHEWED HIM A TREE (THE CROSS),***

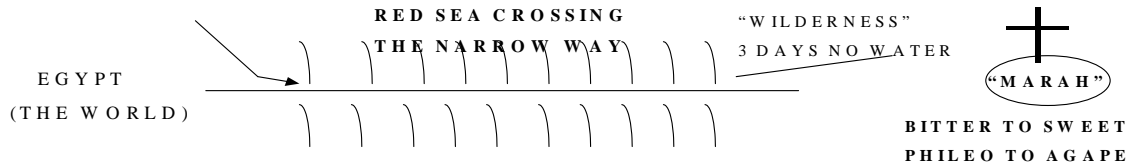
**WHICH WHEN CAST INTO THE WATERS,  
THE WATERS WERE MADE SWEET:  
THERE HE MADE FOR THEM A STATUTE AND  
AN ORDINANCE, AND THERE HE PROVED THEM...”**  
(Exodus 15:24-25)

We have a lake of bitter waters, representing the phileo love mankind. The Lord showed Moses a TREE. Jesus was crucified on a TREE. The tree represents JESUS CHRIST ON THE CROSS, and JESUS CHRIST REPRESENTS AGAPE LOVE, when the tree is CAST INTO THE BITTER WATERS OF PHILEO LOVE, WHEN IT IS SUPERIMPOSED UPON IT, THEY ARE MADE SWEET. A TRANSFORMATION TAKES PLACE, A REGENERATION, A CHANGE IN NATURE, A CHANGE IN ESSENCE to the one who walks the narrow way to SOUL DEATH. IT HAPPENS ONLY TO THE ONE WHO DIES WITH CHRIST ON A TREE. He finds the BITTER WATERS OF PHILEO WATER REPLACED BY THE SWEET WATER OF AGAPE LOVE. This he can drink, **FOR THEY ARE THE WATERS OF LIFE.**

It was the **transformation of one love to another love** that changed the waters from bitter to sweet. We must UNDERGO A REAL, LITERAL AND FULLY EXPERIENTIAL LOVE CHANGE, WE MUST MOVE FROM

## **PHILEO LOVE TO AGAPE LOVE,**

and this love change **WILL NOT AND CANNOT** be made until one complies with the requirements of being ATHIRST. The dry land between the seas, the **three days without water represent the NARROW WAY UNTO DEATH. JESUS TOLD US TO PICK UP OUR CROSS. THE CROSS IS AT CALVARY. YOU BEGIN AT CALVARY, AND YOU GO BEYOND CALVARY, AND ON THE THIRD DAY, YOU WILL BE RESURRECTED WITH HIM, IN NEWNESS OF LIFE, IN AGAPE LOVE.** We have a perfect portrait of the strait gate, narrow way, what it represents, and the AGAPE LOVE CHANGE AT THE END OF THE JOURNEY. It was here that the Lord gave them a statute, an ordinance. Was it not Christ who commanded that we walk the narrow way to find LIFE? What is the water of LIFE? Was it not Christ who laid down for us a STATUTE, AN ORDINANCE? Was it not Christ that commanded we AGAPE LOVE ONE ANOTHER? THUS:



We find then a perfect picture of redemption via the narrow way, of the finding of the water of life at the end of the narrow way, of the finding of Christ Himself at the end of the narrow way, of a **LOVE CHANGE, FROM BITTER TO SWEET**. It is all there if we would but look upon it with eyes that were open and not asleep. Everyone must come the same way, the rich man and the poor man. We all must pay the **IDENTICAL PRICE**, WE MUST ALL WALK THE NARROW WAY OR WE WILL NOT ATONE FOR OUR SOULS:

***“The rich SHALL NOT PAY MORE,***  
***AND THE POOR SHALL NOT GIVE LESS***  
***THAN A HALF A SHEKEL,***  
***WHEN THEY GIVE AN OFFERING UNTO THE LORD,***  
***TO MAKE AN ATONEMENT FOR YOUR SOULS.”***  
 (Exodus 30:15)

The station one holds in life does not matter to God, for He is not a respecter of persons. The strait gate and narrow way are laid out for all mankind to see. God does not care if you are a Moslem rich man, a Christian poor man, a Buddhist, or a New Ager. **ALL MUST COME THE SAME WAY, ALL MUST PASS THROUGH THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY.** If they will not, there IS NO ATONEMENT FOR THEIR SOULS. All must give of their life before God. “Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and DIE, it ABIDETH ALONE”, said Jesus. Therefore **ALL MUST DIE, OR ALL MUST ABIDE ALONE.**

It is interesting that in the worship of the Jews that WATER and WASHING IN WATER played such an important part in their ritual and ceremony for the cleansing away of SIN. In the outer court of the tabernacle was placed a laver. It was there to wash in for a cleansing from sin.

***“THOU SHALT ALSO MAKE A LAVER OF BRASS,  
AND HIS FOOT ALSO OF BRASS,  
TO WASH WITHAL:  
AND THOU SHALT PUT IT BETWEEN  
THE TABERNACLE OF THE CONGREGATION AND THE ALTAR,  
AND THOU SHALT PUT WATER THEREIN.***

***SO THEY SHALL WASH THEIR HANDS AND THEIR FEET,  
THAT THEY DIE NOT:  
AND IT SHALL BE A STATUTE FOR EVER TO THEM,  
EVEN TO HIM AND TO HIS SEED THROUGHOUT  
THEIR GENERATIONS.  
(Exodus 30:18, 21)***

Without the washing, we die. But where is the water of life that we might wash in it? AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY. The vast majority of Christians perish because they **NEVER WASH IN THE WATER OF LIFE**. They claim they have, they are told they have by the false prophets and teachers, but they have not, thus THEY DIE FOR EVER. Jesus had this to say to Peter:

***“Then cometh he to Simon Peter:  
AND PETER SAITH UNTO HIM, LORD,  
DOST THOU WASH MY FEET?***

***Jesus answered and said unto him,  
WHAT I DO THOU KNOWEST NOT NOW;  
BUT THOU SHALT KNOW HEREAFTER.***

***Peter saith unto him,  
THOU SHALT NEVER WASH MY FEET.***

***Jesus answered him,  
IF I WASH THEE NOT, THOU HAST NO PART WITH ME.***

***Simon Peter saith unto him,  
LORD, NOT MY FEET ONLY, BUT  
ALSO MY HANDS AND MY HEAD.***

***Jesus saith unto him,  
HE THAT IS WASHED NEEDETH NOT SAVE TO WASH HIS FEET,  
BUT IS CLEAN EVERY WHIT:  
AND YE ARE CLEAN, BUT NOT ALL.”  
(John 13:6-10)***

Peter at that time did not KNOW WHAT THE WASHING REPRESENTED, for Peter and the others did not realize that the **AGAPE LOVE WASHING OF THEM, TO MAKE THEM CLEAN EVERY WHIT, WAS TO COME UPON THEM**. It is the washing in AGAPE LOVE that cleans one EVERY WHIT.

They are then considered by God **TOTALLY CLEAN IN CHRIST**. Notice again WHO DOES THE WASHING, **JESUS HIMSELF**. He says that **IF WE WILL NOT ALLOW HIM TO WASH US, WE ARE NONE OF HIS**. The companion verse to this is Romans 8:9, which speaks of the SPIRIT OF CHRIST WITHIN THE REAL REGENERATE BELIEVER. The ‘many’ were never washed by Christ. They would not allow it. Their phileo love was as good as Christ’s agape love, and they were lost forever.

We will now tie together Christ with water in the Old Testament, for it is the key to understanding much Scripture:

*“Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together,  
thou, and Aaron thy brother,  
and SPEAK YE UNTO THE ROCK BEFORE THEIR EYES;  
AND IT **SHALL GIVE FORTH HIS WATER,**  
AND THOU SHALT BRING FORTH TO THEM  
**WATER OUT OF THE ROCK:** SO THOU SHALT GIVE  
**THE CONGREGATION AND THEIR BEASTS DRINK.**”  
(Numbers 20:8)*

The rock of course represents Christ. Out of this solid rock, which represents the rock of our foundation comes **PURE WATER, THE WATER OF LIFE, THE PURE WATER OF AGAPE LOVE**. Moses made a big mistake, for he did not speak to the rock, but instead SMOTE IT TWICE WITH A ROD. He paid the price of his life for **UNBELIEF AND DISOBEDIENCE**. Christ died only once for our sins. **HE WAS SMITTEN BY THE ROD ONLY ONCE, NOT TWICE**. The point being here is that CHRIST AND WATER ARE BROUGHT TOGETHER. Compare to the Matthew Seven foundation of the house.

*“Behold, **GOD IS MY SALVATION;**  
**I WILL TRUST, AND NOT BE AFRAID:**  
**FOR THE LORD JEHOVAH IS MY STRENGTH AND MY SONG;**  
**HE ALSO IS BECOME MY SALVATION.**  
  
**THEREFORE WITH JOY SHALL YE DRAW WATER**  
**OUT OF THE WELLS OF SALVATION.**”  
(Isaiah 12:2-3)*

We find water associated with SALVATION, and 1 John 3:1 ties AGAPE LOVE TO SALVATION, so then it becomes obvious does it not? WATER IN MANY CASES IS A CODE WORD FOR AGAPE LOVE:

*“**WHEN THE POOR AND NEEDY SEEK WATER,**  
**AND THERE IS NONE,**  
**AND THEIR TONGUE FAILETH FOR THIRST,**  
**I THE LORD WILL HEAR THEM,**  
**I THE GOD OF ISRAEL WILL NOT FORSAKE THEM.**”*



**I WILL OPEN RIVERS IN HIGH PLACES,**  
**AND FOUNTAINS IN THE MIDST OF THE VALLEYS:**  
**I WILL MAKE THE WILDERNESS A POOL OF WATER,**  
**AND THE DRY LAND SPRINGS OF WATER.”**  
(Isaiah 41:17-18)

**“FOR I WILL POUR WATER UPON HIM THAT IS**  
**THIRSTY,**  
**AND FLOODS UPON DRY GROUND:**  
**I WILL POUR MY SPIRIT UPON THY SEED,**  
**AND MY BLESSING UPON THINE OFFSPRING.”**  
(Isaiah 44:3)

Here again we find the **PRECONDITIONS OF THIRST, OR A POINT OF DESPERATION FOR THE SEEKER OF WATER.** It's at this point of severe need that the Lord says HE WILL ANSWER THEM. The many obviously never came to this point. Notice that God also ties together water with His Spirit. It is poured out like water. WATER IS INDEED AGAPE LOVE. We will now look at a negative confirmation, such as Jude gave us on the false prophets:

**“FOR MY PEOPLE HAVE COMMITTED TWO EVILS;**  
**THEY HAVE FORSAKEN ME**  
**THE FOUNTAIN OF LIVING WATERS,**  
**AND HEWED THEM OUT CISTERNS, BROKEN CISTERNS,**  
**THAT CAN HOLD NO WATER.”**  
(Jeremiah 2:13)

The vast majority of Christians did the identical thing. They REFUSED the command of Christ to enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way, and thereby have **FORSAKEN THE LORD**, and then they turned around and hewed out **CHURCH DENOMINATIONS, CHURCH BUILDINGS, LED BY FALSE TEACHERS THAT HAD NO WATER, NOR COULD HOLD WATER.** There is no AGAPE LOVE IN THEM. They have forsaken the RIGHT WAY, they have CARVED OUT ANOTHER WAY, they have bypassed the cross and they die **WITHOUT AGAPE LOVE, AND THEY PERISH FOR EVER.**

God likens Himself to the fountain of LIVING WATERS, a statement we found at the end of the book of Revelation. Indeed, God changes not.

**“As for thee also,**  
**BY THE BLOOD OF THY COVENANT**  
**I HAVE SENT FORTH THY PRISONERS**  
**OUT OF THE PIT WHEREIN IS NO WATER.”**

(Zechariah 9:11)

By the blood of Christ, the New Covenant was SEALED UP AND SECURED. It is via this New Covenant that we may obtain release from earth, which is the **PIT WITH NO WATER**. There is no AGAPE LOVE UPON EARTH for agape love is **ALIEN TO EARTH**. It is a further confirmation that man does not know about, nor comprehend, nor has within his nature, **THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD**. **Earth is indeed a PIT WITH NO WATER!**

The strait gate and the narrow way is the method Christ uses to separate His believers, His followers into two camps: THE OBEDIENT AND THE DISOBEDIENT. Agape love is the SEPARATION POINT BETWEEN THE REDEEMED AND THE LOST. The vast majority of Christians, although very sincere, did not realize their disobedience, and therefore were lost. They did not have the **WATER OF AGAPE LOVE SPRINKLED UPON THEM**. They were not **separated** from the world by the **WATER OF SEPARATION**.

One of the most important rituals ever performed in Israel's religious ceremony was that of the **WATERS OF SEPARATION**. Very few Christians have heard of it, although it is crucial to understanding WHY agape love is the DIVISION POINT, THE TRANSITION POINT, THE SEPARATION POINT, THE CROSSOVER POINT, that passes one from **DEATH UNTO LIFE**. It involves what is known as the RED HEIFER. You will find it all in Numbers Chapter 19. In short, a RED HEIFER, WITHOUT SPOT, WITHOUT BLEMISH was selected and burned OUTSIDE THE CAMP OF ISRAEL.

**The red heifer represents the Lord Jesus Christ**, who was KILLED OUTSIDE THE CAMP, because as you know, Israel REJECTED Christ, and He was crucified and went through the fires of hell OUTSIDE THE CAMP. They then would take the ashes of this red heifer, and gather them up and KEPT THE ASHES OUTSIDE THE CAMP IN A 'CLEAN' PLACE. They were kept for the children of Israel for **A WATER OF SEPARATION**:

*“And a man that is clean shall gather up the ASHES OF THE HEIFER,  
and lay them up **WITHOUT THE CAMP** IN A CLEAN PLACE,  
and it shall be kept for the  
CONGREGATION OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL  
**FOR A WATER OF SEPARATION:**  
**IT IS A PURIFICATION FOR SIN.”**  
(Numbers 19:9)*

Within those words lies the destiny of **MILLIONS OF CHRISTIANS WHO WILL NEVER SEE HEAVEN**. Christians are PART OF ISRAEL, and they are PART OF THE CONGREGATION OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL. We may not partake in the literal killing of red heifers, of burning them, of smashing the burnt remains into a fine powder, or of sprinkling that powder into a jug of water, but **WHAT IT MEANS HAS NEVER CHANGED**, AND IF WE ARE NOT PURIFIED BY THE **LITERAL, REAL, EXPERIENTIAL SPRINKLING OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH SEPARATES US, WE PERISH IN OUR SINS**.

Keep in mind that water is a symbol of agape love, and the ashes are Christ. Remember back to the TREE THAT MADE THE BITTER WATERS SWEET. Here is another form of the same thing, the ashes in the

water, MAKES THE WATER OF AGAPE LOVE, which in turn, **WHEN BESTOWED UPON YOU, SEPARATE YOU FROM THE REST OF MAN, AND PURIFY YOU FROM SIN.**

*“And the **CLEAN PERSON (JESUS CHRIST)**  
**SHALL SPRINKLE UPON THE UNCLEAN (You and I)**  
**ON THE THIRD DAY, AND ON THE SEVENTH DAY:***

*AND ON THE SEVENTH DAY **HE SHALL PURIFY HIMSELF,**  
**AND WASH HIS CLOTHES,**  
**AND BATHE HIMSELF IN WATER,**  
**AND SHALL BE CLEAN AT EVEN.”***

*(Numbers 19:19)*

Notice that it is a CLEAN PRIEST that sprinkles the **UNCLEAN ON THE THIRD DAY**. Our HIGH PRIEST IS JESUS CHRIST. It will be proven that Jesus Christ HIMSELF grants the true believer AGAPE LOVE after walking the narrow way. Notice that there ARE TWO SPRINKLINGS AND A BATHING ON THE SEVENTH DAY. The first sprinkling represents Christ coming to the believer with the **BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE**. The second sprinkling and BATHING IN THE WATER represents the **RESURRECTION RAPTURE**, in the which, the real believer is TOTALLY PURIFIED, for the knowledge of good and evil is **WHOLLY REMOVED, AND THE PURE AND COMPLETE AGAPE LOVE IS BROUGHT BACK INTO BEING, BACK TO OUR ORIGINAL CONDITION PRIOR TO THE FALL OF MAN**. The first sprinkling leads to the second. It is a progression UPWARDS.

Now comes the warning, and this warning is found throughout all of Scripture: if you refuse to do as commanded, you will be CUT OFF from the congregation of Israel. The vast majority of Christians were CUT OFF from the congregation of Israel, they never saw heaven, they never saw any of it at all, but instead, eternal ruin. **THEY WERE NEVER SPRINKLED WITH THE WATER OF SEPARATION, NOT EVEN ONCE, LET ALONE TWICE.**

*“**BUT THE MAN THAT SHALL BE UNCLEAN,**  
**AND SHALL NOT PURIFY HIMSELF,**  
**THAT SOUL SHALL BE CUT OFF FROM AMONG THE CONGREGATION,**  
**BECAUSE HE HATH**  
**DEFILED THE SANCTUARY OF THE LORD:**  
**THE WATER OF SEPARATION**  
**HATH NOT BEEN SPRINKLED UPON HIM;**  
**HE IS UNCLEAN.”***

*(Numbers 19:20)*

Notice who it is that is to do the purifying. Christ commanded YOU to WALK the narrow way. He did not say He would do it for you. Christ commanded YOU to pick up YOUR CROSS, He did not say He

would do it for you. OBEDIENCE IS IN THE DOING OF IT, not in the talking about it. There is something the BELIEVER MUST DO THAT THE VAST MAJORITY FOR WHATEVER REASONS DO NOT DO. Because they will not do it, **THEY NEVER COME TO CHRIST IN TRUTH, WHO HOLDS AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE WATER OF SEPARATION.**

That which purifies the believer is SOUL DEATH, as we will show you. The believer is to die to his natural love and be RESURRECTED TO A NEW FORM OF LOVE, AGAPE. Agape love is the WATER OF SEPARATION. Notice how it is worded, for it is important. The unclean person, the one who **REFUSES TO PURIFY HIMSELF, HAS NOT BEEN SPRINKLED WITH THE WATER.** Has NOT BEEN SPRINKLED, means NEVER HAS. It was not the first time, so the second time CANNOT take place. The second washing is contingent upon the first washing. The Lord could not say that HE HAD NOT BEEN SPRINKLED if the first sprinkling had taken place.

This confirms what happened to the many. THEY NEVER CAME TO AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, WHICH IS THE FIRST SPRINKLING. They were never SEPARATED unto God, never made holy, **NEVER REGENERATED.** Because they were never regenerated, THEY REMAIN UNCLEAN, AND NO UNCLEAN PERSON, AND NO BASTARD CAN REMAIN IN THE SANCTUARY OF THE LORD. The important thing here is that IF A MAN WILL NOT PURIFY HIMSELF BY THE WATER OF SEPARATION HE IS 'CUT OFF'. The many were 'cut off' because they were not regenerated, they did not possess AGAPE LOVE.

***“Not by WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS WHICH WE HAVE DONE,  
BUT ACCORDING TO HIS MERCY HE SAVED US,  
BY THE WASHING OF REGENERATION,  
AND RENEWING OF THE HOLY GHOST;”  
(Titus 3:5)***

The WASHING IN THE WATER OF AGAPE LOVE IS REGENERATION. THE WASHING IN THE WATER OF AGAPE LOVE IS THE RENEWING OF THE HOLY GHOST. THE WASHING OF REGENERATION IS THE SPRINKLING OF THE WATERS OF SEPARATION. Without it, you perish.

## MANNA

Another word that is a code for agape love is MANNA, and the associated word BREAD. We will study the word 'manna', and I suggest you do a word study on bread, for one will find it refers to the **ESSENCE OF SPIRITUAL LIFE, AGAPE LOVE.**

***“And when the children of Israel saw it (the manna),  
they said one to another, **It is manna:**  
FOR THEY WIST NOT WHAT IT WAS.***

***AND MOSES SAID UNTO THEM,  
THIS IS THE BREAD  
WHICH THE LORD HATH GIVEN YOU TO EAT.”***

(Exodus 16:15)

The word “manna” is ‘man’ in the Hebrew, which means **WHATNESS, OR WHAT IS IT?** It is like our word **MYSTERY, SECRET, UNKNOWN, ALIEN**. It was nothing like anything ever seen before upon earth. **IT CAME DOWN FROM HEAVEN. IT WAS AN UNKNOWN, AND IT HAD TO BE EATEN.** This has tremendous significances for us, for **IT IS SYMBOLIC OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS AN UNKNOWN, A MYSTERY, A SECRET, AN ALIEN FORM OF LOVE.** Notice also that Moses compares the manna to bread, and calls **IT BREAD FROM THE LORD.**

*“And Moses said unto Aaron,  
TAKE A POT, AND PUT AN OMER FULL OF MANNA THEREIN,  
AND LAY IT BEFORE THE LORD,  
TO BE KEPT FOR YOUR GENERATIONS.”*

(Exodus 16:33)

*“And after the second veil,  
the tabernacle which is called  
THE HOLIEST OF ALL;  
WHICH HAD THE GOLDEN CENSER,  
AND THE ARK OF THE COVENANT OVERLAID  
ROUND ABOUT WITH GOLD,  
WHEREIN WAS THE GOLDEN POT THAT HAD MANNA,  
AND AARON’S ROD THAT BUDDED,  
AND THE TABLES OF THE COVENANT;”*

(Hebrews 9:3-4)

This manna that rained down from heaven was so vital to ISRAEL **THAT IT WAS PLACED IN THE ARK OF THE COVENANT.** The ark was located in the **HOLY OF HOLIES**, in which were also the tables of law, which Christ reduced down to **AGAPE LOVE**, and Aaron’s rod that budded represents **DEATH TO LIFE**, all of which are representative of **REGENERATION**. Could the strait gate and narrow way be the **WAY INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES**, WHEREIN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD AND HIS AGAPE LOVE ARE FOUND?

*“AND THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL  
DID EAT MANNA FORTY YEARS,  
UNTIL THEY CAME TO A LAND INHABITED;  
THEY DID EAT MANNA, UNTIL THEY CAME UNTO THE BORDERS  
OF THE LAND OF CANAAN (THE PROMISED LAND).”*

(Exodus 16:35)

This verse is quite crucial, for it ties to the waters of separation, and gives us another clue as to how **AGAPE LOVE WORKS IN THE SALVATION PROCESS.** Manna represents **AGAPE LOVE**. When a

believer has been obedient and walked the narrow way, he is bestowed agape love, which is 'life', as we will prove in this series. The Christian is to **EAT OF AGAPE LOVE UNTIL HE COMES TO THE PROMISED LAND, WHICH IS IN FACT RESURRECTION/RAPTURE**. The true Christian who is regenerated, is walking in the WILDERNESS OF EARTH, A DESERT IN WHICH THERE IS NO AGAPE LOVE. Remember that the water of separation was sprinkled ON THE THIRD DAY AND AGAIN ON THE SEVENTH DAY, which represents the MILLENIAL REIGN OF CHRIST. There was then a 4 DAY PERIOD OF TIME BETWEEN THE SPRINKLINGS AND THE FINAL BATHING IN THE WATER. Now we find 40 years. Do the four days and 40 years represent the same thing that is FROM THE TIME OF REGENERATION TO THE RESURRECTION/RAPTURE? IS IT THE SAME AS ISRAEL CROSSING THE JORDAN AFTER 40 YEARS IN THE WILDERNESS?

***“BUT NOW OUR SOUL IS DRIED AWAY:  
THERE IS NOTHING AT ALL BUT THIS MANNA,  
BEFORE OUR EYES.”  
(Numbers 11:6)***

This verse is far deeper than one might think. The complaint of Israel is that their SOUL HAD DRIED AWAY, AND ALL THERE WAS IS THIS 'MANNA'. The apostle Paul complained that WHEN THE COMMANDMENT CAME, SIN REVIVED AND HE DIED. His soul dried up, died. THERE WAS NOTHING BUT MANNA. "Not I that liveth, but Christ in me." When AGAPE LOVE COMES TO THE BELIEVER, HIS SOUL HAS DRIED AWAY. It will be proven in our study of the NARROW WAY, WHICH IS THE WAY OF THE SOUL DRYING UP.

***“AND HE HUMBLLED THEE, AND SUFFERED THEE TO HUNGER,  
AND FED THEE WITH MANNA,  
WHICH THOU KNEWEST NOT,  
NEITHER DID THY FATHERS KNOW;  
THAT HE MIGHT MAKE THEE KNOW  
THAT MAN DOES NOT LIVE BY BREAD ONLY, BUT BY EVERY WORD THAT  
PROCEEDETH OUT OF THE MOUTH OF THE LORD DOTH MAN LIVE.”  
(Deuteronomy 8:3)***

Scripture proves that the narrow way is a way of **INNER HEART HUMBLING**, and there is here the condition of HUNGER, as we found in ATHIRST FOR WATER. The precondition of being athirst, of being hungry leads to the humbling, which leads to MANNA BEING GRANTED. Notice again that the **MANNA WAS AN UNKNOWN, A MYSTERY, A SECRET OF GOD, A HIDDEN THING**. The drying up of the soul, FORCES ONE TO CHRIST, who is the only supplier of this mystery of agape love. So **AGAPE LOVE IS A HIDDEN THING TO MAN**. Regenerate man does not live by food and drink alone, but by a SPIRITUAL POWER. If man would READ THE BIBLE, AND SEARCH FOR THE MEANING BEHIND WHAT IT SAYS, HE WOULD FIND THE POWER OF AGAPE LOVE.

***“I AM THAT BREAD OF LIFE.***

***YOUR FATHERS DID EAT MANNA IN THE WILDERNESS,  
AND ARE DEAD.***

***THIS IS THE BREAD WHICH COMETH DOWN FROM HEAVEN,  
THAT A MAN MAY EAT THEREOF, AND NOT DIE.***

***I AM THE LIVING BREAD  
WHICH CAME DOWN FROM HEAVEN:  
IF ANY MAN EAT OF THIS BREAD,  
HE SHALL LIVE FOR EVER.”***

***(John 6:48-51)***

Jesus is comparing Himself to the manna of the Fathers, showing them that the bread their fathers ate was symbolic of something much deeper. They died, but now, if any man eat of the MANNA OF CHRIST, HIS AGAPE LOVE, THEY WILL LIVE FOR EVER.”

***“THIS IS THE BREAD WHICH CAME DOWN FROM HEAVEN:  
NOT AS YOUR FATHERS DID EAT MANNA, AND ARE DEAD:  
HE THAT EATETH OF THIS BREAD SHALL LIVE  
FOR EVER.”***

***(John 6:58)***

Those that heard it said it was a ‘HARD SAYING, WHO CAN HEAR IT?’ In other words, who can understand what this Jesus is teaching us, we do not understand. Jesus then in verse 63 explains that THIS IS A SPIRITUAL THING, IT IS THE SPIRIT THAT QUICKENETH, which is proven to be that agape love IS SPIRITUAL LIFE, MANNA FROM HEAVEN, BREAD FROM HEAVEN.

***“HE THAT HATH AN EAR,  
LET HIM HEAR WHAT THE SPIRIT SAITH UNTO THE CHURCHES;  
TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH  
WILL I GIVE TO EAT  
OF THE HIDDEN MANNA...”***

***(Revelation 2:17)***

Here we have a direct tie to **OVERCOMING TO HIDDEN MANNA**. The fact that Jesus says it is HIDDEN verifies the Old Testament concept of the word ‘manna’. **AN UNKNOWN QUANTITY TO MANKIND, JUST AS JESUS CONFIRMS THAT AGAPE LOVE IS WHOLLY UNKNOWN TO ALL MANKIND EXCEPT THE CHOSEN ‘FEW’**. They have walked the narrow way to find the mystery behind the meaning of the word ‘life’: agape love, THE MYSTERY of God and Christ. Only the OVERCOMER is granted the **HIDDEN MYSTERY MANNA**. The rejected of Christ, the vast majority

of Christians, NEVER were granted to eat of the HIDDEN MANNA. They were never OVERCOMERS, they were never GRANTED AGAPE LOVE.

We could go through each word that is a code word for agape love and prove it all out, but that would make another book. What I will do instead is give you the key words, to prove it out to yourselves, so that when you read these words, you will understand more about what those verses are saying to you. The most common code words for agape love are: LIGHT, GLORY, TRUTH, LIFE, SALT, REST, BREAD, MANNA, RIGHTEOUSNESS, LIBERTY, UNITY, UNION, FRUIT, KNOW, SEE, SIGHT, BORN, REGENERATION, REFRESHING, QUICKEN and QUICKENETH all refer either directly to agape love, OR THE RESULTS OF THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE, for agape love is the essence behind holiness, sanctification, justification, righteousness, liberty, etc.

In the fourth chapter of this series on DARK LIGHT we will move to the fall of mankind, and we will prove that THE FALL OF MANKIND WAS REAL, LITERAL AND HAD DEVASTATING RESULTS: IT UTTERLY SEPARATED MAN FROM HIS CREATOR, IT ERECTED A GULF OF SILENCE THAT MAN HAS BEEN ATTEMPTING TO BRIDGE BY RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY THROUGHOUT THE AGES. The anguishing cries of mankind echo down through the corridors of history, rebounding and reverberating off the stony walls of space and time. His cries remain unanswered. In his face blow the cold winds of silence and emptiness. He lives but a short time, his life is full of trouble and sorrow, and he dies, and goes into oblivion. He watches little babies wither in pain and die. He watches young men and women die in anguish. He watches the elderly and fears his time is soon to come.

From out of his mind he runs, and tries to escape that which he cannot escape. He occupies his mind with war, with machines, with business, with sex, with ANYTHING so he does not have to face the silence of the grave. He fears death but refuses to admit it. He is a victim; he cannot escape. Philosophies have attempted to pierce the darkness, but they too are total vanity.

Jesus said for us to come to Him. He said that if we would, if we would obey the Gospel, if we would “keep His saying” and do the “will of the Father” that we COULD KNOW THE TRUTH BEHIND ALL OF LIFE, BEHIND THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE. He said that this truth ‘would set us free’. Jesus said we could JUMP THE GULF OF SILENCE, JUMP THE VASTNESS OF OUTER SPACE, PENETRATE THE DEPTHS OF INNER SPACE, AND JUMP THE GIGANTIC GULF THAT SEPARATES MAN FROM HIS CREATOR. I am here to tell you He was telling the truth. You too can meet God, and you too can know WITH ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE THE TRUTHS OF GOD. Any person on earth can gaze into the beauty of God and Jesus Christ. They can stare into the depth of eternity past and eternity future. They can see in a very literal way the vastness of the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. THEY CAN RE-ENTER UNION WITH THE GODHEAD.

The cross of Jesus Christ is the ONLY BRIDGE we have to jump the silent gulf between man and God. There is no other name under the heavens by which we may be saved. If we will but be obedient to His commands to PICK UP THE CROSS, to STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, to WALK THE DISTANCE OF THE NARROW WAY, then God, in His great mercy, in His love for the LOST SOUL will reach down from His lofty throne in the heavens and will SPEAK TO YOU AND I. He who created the heavens, He who keeps the stars shining and upholds the order of the universe, WILL COME DOWN AND VISIT YOU, AND SPEAK TO YOU AND SUP WITH YOU, AND WHEN HE DOES, YOU WILL KNOW THE MYSTERY BEHIND ALL OF LIFE. YOU WILL HAVE JUMPED THE GULF AND YOU WILL KNOW THE TRUE DEFINITION OF GOD, AND YOU WILL UNDERSTAND WHO JESUS REALLY WAS, FOR YOU WILL HAVE MET HIM, AND SPOKEN TO HIM, AND HE WITH YOU.



Do not mock His commands. Do not belittle what He says. FOR PERHAPS THE FIRST TIME IN YOUR LIFE, PICK UP YOUR SCRIPTURE, STILL YOUR OWN HEART, YOUR OWN VOICES, AND LET GOD SPEAK TO YOU IN HIS WISDOM. He will teach anyone who sincerely wants to know. He will not mock sincere questions. He loves you with a love so deep you cannot fathom it unless you see it, and when you see it, the MYSTERY OF THE AGES will be yours to keep.

I know it for a fact, for I was called out of darkness and into HIS LIGHT. I entered the strait gate and I walked the narrow way unto death. I went down to the pit, and I heard the screams of the lost, and I FELT AND KNEW THE STENCH OF DEATH AND ALONENESS. I sat in the darkness of the pit, watching as Satan struggled with Christ over my soul. I watched almost as an innocent bystander these two gigantic forces in our universe FIGHT IT OUT OVER WHO WAS GOING TO CLAIM DOMINION OVER MY SOUL.

When all hope was lost, when everything was fading into total oblivion, then Christ came. He showed me WHY I was a lost soul, why I had been damned for eternity. He revealed to me the beauty of AGAPE LOVE. He showed me the secret of the ages. He spoke to me, He called me by name, just as the Bible says He does to all the TRUE SHEEP. IT IS LITERAL, IT MEANS WHAT IT SAYS. The sheep know the voice of their shepherd, and they will not follow another. He asked me if I would AGAPE LOVE, and when I said YES to Him He bestowed it upon me. He came into my heart. I felt Him move right in, and my entire life did a reversal.

The Scripture is WHOLLY TRUE. IT MEANS EXACTLY WHAT IT SAYS IT MEANS. BELIEVE IT, AND BECOME OBEDIENT TO IT, AND YOU SHALL LIVE. You will pass from death unto life. You will then KNOW what very few know. The choice is yours.

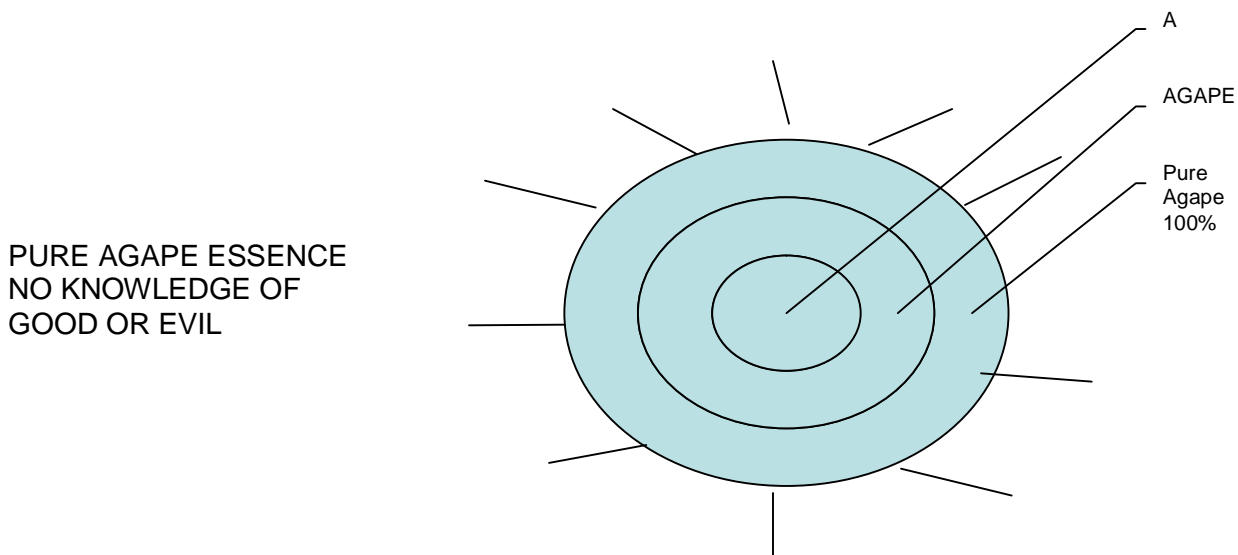
**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**FOUR**  
**WHATEVER HAPPENED TO MAN?**  
**THE FALL FROM DIVINE LOVE**

We have proved beyond question that the central core essence of God is a mysterious and apparently unknown AGAPE LOVE. We have examined it in brief detail, so we know from a mental viewpoint something ABOUT IT. We have also found that the reason why the vast majority of Christians never enter heaven is because they do not LAY HOLD OF, OR RECEIVE THIS DIVINE LOVE IN THEIR HEARTS, THEY ARE NEVER REGENERATED IN TRUTH.

When man was created, he was CREATED IN THE IMAGE OF GOD, AND THEREFORE WAS CREATED WITH AN INTERNAL ESSENCE OF DIVINE AGAPE LOVE. He was one with his Creator, in total UNION, and in total COMMUNION. He walked, he talked, and he lived in and through his Creator.

We must now examine the fall of man, and explore the depth of this catastrophic event, for if you do not understand what REALLY HAPPENED, then you will not understand the beauty and the simplicity of the mission of Christ. The simplicity of His mission is wrapped up in two areas: THE CROSS OF CHRIST, AND THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST. If there has been NO CRUCIFIXION OF THE SELF, THERE IS NO DIVINE LOVE GRANTED. It is that simple, that blunt. That is why Paul said he preached CHRIST CRUCIFIED. Jesus told us we MUST PICK UP THE CROSS AND FOLLOW HIM. WE MUST WALK WITH JESUS IN AND THROUGH OUR OWN CALVARY.

To refresh our memory, man looked like this at creation in graphic form:



He was 100% pure agape love inside, with a HEART, A SUB-CONSCIOUS MIND, AND A CONSCIOUS MIND, WHICH COMPRISE THE SOUL. He also had a BODY. The body and soul comprise what the Bible calls THE FLESH. For our purposes, we will leave the body out of it, and concentrate upon the spirit and soul aspect of man. The spirit is called THE HEART. The soul is referring to the two parts of your mind: CONSCIOUS AND UNCONSCIOUS. For all practical purposes, when the Bible refers to the heart, you can put in the word SPIRIT. When the Bible uses the word spirit, you can place the word HEART.

In any event Adam and Eve were a DIRECT CREATION from the hand of Almighty God. They lived in complete unity and union with the Godhead; a life of peace, joy, and harmony with every need taken care of. There is no such thing as FEAR, TERROR, SORROW OR SUFFERING. These are totally unknown, non-existent. They love each other and their Creator with a pure AGAPE LOVE, which radiates outward from their inner core being. Because they have no knowledge of good or evil, their phileo and Eros love is pure, untainted by lust or greed.

**HEART & SPIRIT = THE CENTER OF MAN'S BEING, THE THRONE ROOM OF THE GREAT I AM.**

**FLESH = BODY AND MIND.**

**THE MIND = CONSCIOUS AND UNCONSCIOUS ASPECTS.**

The mind will also be referred to as SOUL MAN, CARNAL MAN, FLESH, SENSUAL MAN, SENSE MAN. All of these refer to the FLESH, the body and the two aspects of the mind. It is important that you grasp the essential differences between these aspects of mankind. In regeneration, the Bible speaks of BELIEVING FROM THE HEART. That is the key to understanding that when Christ says BELIEVE, HE IS SPEAKING OF THE HEART/SPIRIT OF A PERSON, NOT THEIR MIND, WHICH INCLUDES THE CONSCIOUS OR UNCONSCIOUS MIND.

Scripture proves that the many HAD A SOUL BELIEF, A MIND BELIEF WHICH POSED AS A TRUE HEART BELIEF. In other words, the 'many' had a mental or INTELLECTUAL SALVATION, which was NOT FROM THE HEART, BUT ONLY THEIR MIND. We will prove the modern man DOES NOT REALIZE THE VAST DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE MIND AND THE HEART. We will be exploring these differences as we journey through the remainder of the book.

Everything is now pure; everything is as God wanted. Their joy and peace are complete beyond anything that natural man can comprehend. God then did something that mankind has never understood, and has been argued over in theological circles for eons. God put a tree in the MIDST OF THE GARDEN, a tree so terrible, so deadly that most consider God should have never placed it there. Man does not realize that one of the attributes of PURE AGAPE LOVE IS THE PRESENTATION OF ALL KNOWN TRUTHS. Nothing can be hidden; nothing can be placed out of reach or concealed. AGAPE LOVE REQUIRES FULL DISCLOSURE, BOTH ALL POSITIVE AND ALL NEGATIVE ASPECTS HAVE TO BE PRESENTED. It also requires full disclosure of consequences as well, or any warnings needed to be given to warn anyone of danger in any of these 'truths' agape love must present.

God resides in a place of complete PERFECTION in which ALL SPIRITUAL NEGATIVES ARE SIMPLY NOT ALLOWED. In a universe of absolutes, or pure agape love, there is always the chance that a being created by God, who has free will, MAY CHOOSE REBELLION. This is true because of the nature of FREE WILL, which plays a major role in the fall of man, and also in

redemption and regeneration. The very essence of free will **ALLOWS FOR FREEDOM OF CHOICE, OR FREEDOM TO CHOOSE**. In a universe of pure love, **WHAT IS THERE TO CHOOSE? WHERE IS THERE ANY CHOICE?**

If there is love, there is the opposite of hate. If there is good, there is the opposite of evil. If there be truth, the opposite is lie. If there be harmony, the opposite is discord, and so it goes. As soon as any standard is raised, **THE OPPOSITE REFLECTION MAY BECOME A REALITY**. For example, if we create a man and put him in a cage, and lock the door, and take the key, but then we say to him, **“YOU HAVE FREE WILL TO STAY OR TO GO, YOUR CHOICE”**, we are liars, for **HE HAS NO WAY TO EXERCISE HIS SO-CALLED ‘FREE WILL’**. In order for free will to be free, you must **ALLOW THE ALTERNATIVES TO BECOME A REALITY**. Thus any being created **INDEPENDENT OF GOD**, and given a central awareness, would have a **REAL ABILITY TO MAKE REAL CHOICES, WHICH HAVE REAL CONSEQUENCES**. If you allow no such choices, free will is a lie, a non-truth. **GOD ALLOWS REAL FREE CHOICE AND GAVE HIS CREATED BEINGS REAL FREE WILL**.

Any created being, that is separate from God, and has ‘life’ of ‘its’ own, and is **AWARE OF ITSELF, THAT HAS A CENTRAL “I AM”, IS GRANTED A TOTAL FREE WILL**. A computer, for example, although it has artificial intelligence and can mimic a real “self” has no **REAL CENTRAL AWARENESS**. It could be programmed to **MIMIC AWARENESS**, but it will never have awareness as we do. Any time you create an entity that can operate independently, you create for yourself immediate problems, which was the basis of the movie **TERMINATOR II**. In that movie, the computers developed self-awareness, and when they did, they elected to destroy mankind to preserve themselves.

God does not want robots or computers. He wanted **FELLOWSHIP AND COMMUNION OUT OF A FREE WILL, WHICH INCLUDES A REAL FREE CHOICE**. In order to accomplish this, God must grant the created entity a separate ‘life’, a central awareness of its own, that is, it would know **ITSELF, OR WOULD HAVE AN ‘I AM’**. It would be aware of its own identity. The central essence of these beings would have to be agape love, for agape love only fellowships with agape love, can only have union with its own. Remember when dealing with God you are dealing with **ABSOLUTES**.

This creates a real dilemma for God. If He chooses to create an independent creature apart from Himself, then He also runs the risk of **REBELLION**. He knew because of total foreknowledge that some of them would, and therefore developed a plan to contain this rebellion within His creation. God has three choices: (1) non-creation; (2) creation with risk; (3) creation with no risk, i.e. robotics. In His sovereignty, He elected to create with risk, so that He could have **FREE WILL UNION**. He wanted them to enjoy His creation in perfect peace and joy, hence an essence of pure **AGAPE LOVE UNTAINTED**.

## **THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE**

*“And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the TREE OF LIFE also in the midst of the garden, and*

***THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL.”***

***(Genesis 2:9)***

What is this tree of knowledge of good and evil? Is it literal, or is it just symbolic of something else. Mankind has made a tragic mistake in not investigating this mystery from the ancient past. Upon this short verse of Scripture lies the entire premise of the Bible. This verse of Scripture is the foundation upon which all doctrines are built, the entire mission of Jesus Christ, and was the basis of the PASSION OF CHRIST. If this verse of Scripture is UNTRUE, THEN JESUS CHRIST WAS A LIAR, A LUNATIC AND WORSE.

Christ demands that we take this verse in its most literal sense. If we can grasp the key essential elements of what we are being told, we will have found the keys required to unlock the MYSTERY OF THE CHURCH, OF REGENERATION. With it, we will then know WHY THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WERE REJECTED, WHAT THEY MISSED AND HOW THEY COULD HAVE PREVENTED IT.

The first place we will start is by word study. We will examine the original meanings for the words TREE, KNOWLEDGE, GOOD AND EVIL. This alone will unlock the harsh realities of our world and will tell us WHY there is nothing but constant strife and turmoil in human affairs.

The word for “tree” is ‘ets’ and it means in the most literal sense **WOOD, MADE OF WOOD, A TREE**. God is then telling us that in the MIDST OF THE GARDEN STOOD A REAL LITERAL TREE, A TREE OF LITERAL WOOD. We are told that this tree bore a FRUIT:

*“And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:*

***BUT OF THE TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL,***

*thou SHALT NOT EAT OF IT...”*

*(Genesis 2:16, 17)*

*“And the woman said unto the serpent, we may eat OF THE FRUIT of the trees of the garden:*

*but of THE FRUIT of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, YE SHALL NOT EAT OF IT, NEITHER SHALL YE TOUCH IT, LEST YE DIE.”*

*(Genesis 3:2, 3)*

The word “fruit” is ‘periy’ and it means **LITERAL FRUIT**. The word “eat” is ‘akal’, which means **TO EAT, TO CONSUME, TO DEVOUR**. We are being told then that GOD PLANTED A REAL LITERAL TREE THAT BORE A FORM OF FRUIT THAT MAN COULD EAT. We are told to take this in the most literal manner. This fruit contained a ‘knowledge’. The word for “knowledge” is ‘da’ath’ and it means **EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE, CUNNING, EXPERIENTIAL AWARENESS, TO BE AWARE OF, TO HAVE A TOTAL KNOWLEDGE OF**. The fruit then contains within it a TOTAL EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. Because knowledge refers to MENTAL ABILITY, THIS FRUIT WILL THEN CHANGE THE HUMAN SOUL AND SPIRIT IF IT IS TOUCHED. It will radically alter the PRESENT PURE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE of man.

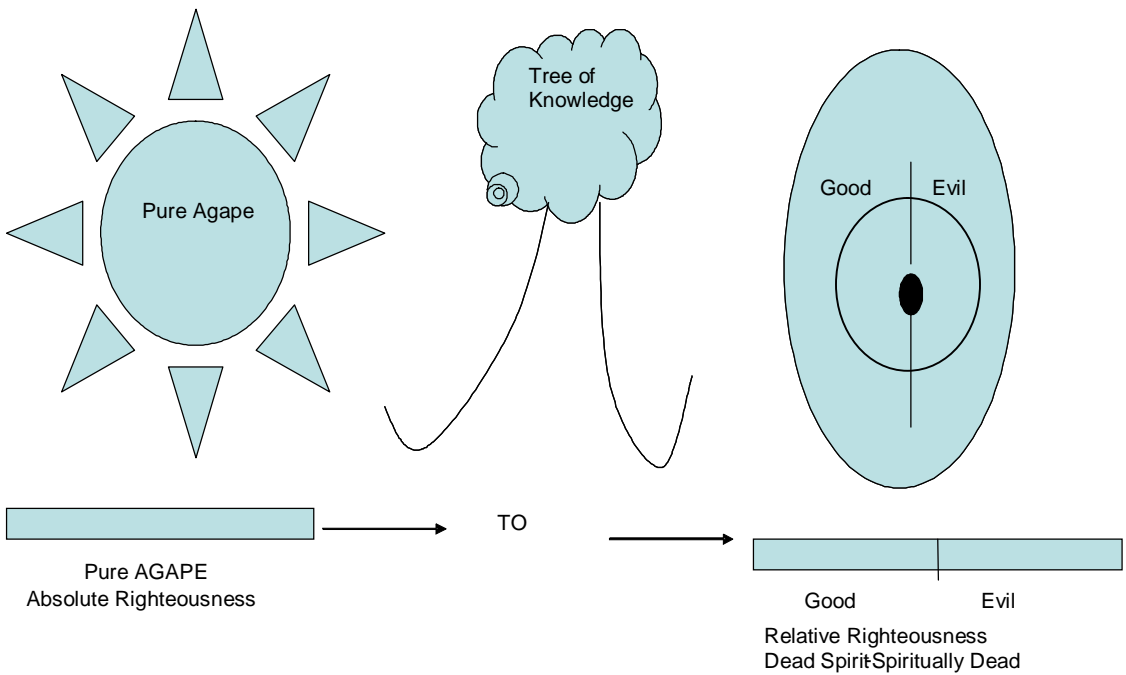


nothing of either one, and is wholly UNAWARE. He knows nothing of lies, deception, wrong motive or any evil intent. He is ignorant of his goodness, HE SIMPLY 'IS'. His whole being, his whole essence is pure, and he has no need to be AWARE.

3. Mankind would have to be viewed in this condition as being AMORAL, but not in the sense of a rock or object. He is amoral in the sense that HE KNOWS NOTHING OF GOOD AND EVIL, HE TRANSCENDS IT, IS FAR ABOVE IT, ON A WHOLLY DIFFERENT PLANE OF EXISTENCE. God is amoral in this sense of the word, simply because He transcends ALL OF IT. We could define this type of AMORAL as being TOTALLY MORAL, ABSOLUTE MORALITY; TOTAL PERFECTION ON THE SIDE OF GOOD. It is essential this be grasped, for GOD IS NOT ON ANY SCALE OF MORALITY AT ALL, HE IS ABOVE IT, BEYOND IT AND OPERATES ON A DIFFERENT CONCEPT. Absolute morality is something we are simply not able to comprehend or fathom. It is beyond our reach, not a part of our nature.

*“For my thoughts ARE NOT your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the Lord.  
For as the heavens are HIGHER than the earth, SO ARE MY WAYS HIGHER THAN YOUR WAYS, and my thoughts than your thoughts.”  
(Isaiah 55:8-9)*

God’s thoughts and ways ARE NOT ON ANY MORAL PLANE OF OPERATION. THEY TRANSCEND MORALITY, AND THE ESSENCE IS AGAPE LOVE PERFECTION. This agape love perfection places God upon a scale of ABSOLUTE MORALITY, SO FAR ADVANCED BEYOND MAN IT CANNOT BE COMPREHENDED, for man does not KNOW what pure agape love is! Man will thus become trapped if he eats of this literal fruit. He will leave his agape love standard and be plunged into a whole different plane of being, which is RELATIVE MORALITY. He will move from his ABSOLUTE STANDARD TO A RELATIVE STANDARD. He will not remember the absolute; it will vanish like a puff of smoke from his central awareness. HE WILL DIE TO PURE AGAPE LOVE. Thus:



If we look up the word 'MORAL' in our dictionary, we will begin to perceive what is being told to us. It is interesting to note that the word MORAL is not used in either the Old or New Testament. The reason is that God does not consider man to be either moral or ethical, but rather EVIL AND WICKED. This is so because He is dealing from HIS ABSOLUTE PERSPECTIVE. Man deals only from a RELATIVE PERSPECTIVE. The two concepts are VASTLY DIFFERENT, AND THERE IS A HUGE GULF BETWEEN THE TWO.

The Random House dictionary of the American Language says "MORAL – 1. **of or pertaining to, or concerned with RIGHT CONDUCT, OR THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN RIGHT AND WRONG.**" Good can be traced to RIGHT, and evil can be traced to WRONG. The tree then represents a SHIFT FROM MAN'S CREATED AMORAL STATE TO A MORAL STATE. THUS:

### **AMORAL BUT PERFECT TO MORAL AND IMPERFECT**

Therefore if man eat of this tree, he will move from a perfect being with pure agape love essence, from a PERFECT MORALITY, FROM AN ABSOLUTE MORALITY, **OF WHICH HE IS UNAWARE**; to a being with **no agape love**, with only a RELATIVE righteousness. He will become an ADMIXTURE of both good and evil, tossed upon the seas of a raging war within as two powerful but invisible forces rage in his soul. He will leave the harmony of peace and joy and communion with his Creator to a position of trouble and sorrow totally separated from his Creator. He will have no peace, little joy, and all of his days will be filled with trouble.

Man will be REBORN into a '**new consciousness**', a SATANIC CREATION. He will throw away the purity of agape love for a whole new form of 'being'. A hideous creature will emerge from the rubble of the fall, a creature incapable of loving anything but itself. He will plunge from the pure light of agape love to the total darkness of **conditional love**. He will plunge from freedom and all that went with it to becoming a slave to his own nature, unable to break the chains of bondage. No matter how noble and how good his deeds, THE EVIL SIDE OF HIS NATURE WILL ALWAYS BE THERE. He cannot escape it, for it is PART OF HIS VERY NATURE. HE BECOMES A PRISONER OF HIS OWN NATURE. The evil becomes **HIS INNER ESSENCE, AN UNKNOWN AND HIDDEN ESSENCE, OF WHICH HE IS PARTIALLY AWARE, BUT NOT FULLY AWARE OF**. The good essence becomes primarily his conscious essence, with the evil floating just under the surface. Therefore man will think of himself as primarily good, and he can control and eventually get rid of his evil nature. In other words, by various methods, man can eliminate that part of his nature and **RISE ABOVE IT**. Thus it is that religions are formed, and various philosophies, governments, laws, etc. The hope of man is that **HE CAN RISE BY HIMSELF TO GODHOOD STATUS**. This is a primary concept of the evolutionary doctrine, that man is EVOLVING UPWARDS, INTO PERFECTION. It is a lie, a fabrication of the evil one, who controls everything from behind the scenes. The more man perceives himself as good, and as going towards Godhood, the more evil he becomes in his actions. The worst evils of man have always been covered over by high principal and ethical rationales.

If we were to view this from a different perspective, we could take a bucket full of white paint. We will say it represents PURE AGAPE LOVE, JUST AS MAN WAS CREATED WITH. If we throw any IMPURITY into it, IT IS NOT LONGER PURE, BUT IMPURE. We will say that black paint represents the IMPURITY, THE KNOWLEDGE OF EVIL. We throw into our white



bucket some BLACK PAINT. The white paint is now a SHADE OF GRAY. It is no longer PURE WHITE. It has only a RELATIVE WHITENESS COMPARED TO EITHER FULL EVIL (BLACK) OR FULL GOOD (WHITE). In other words **IT LIES ON A SCALE BETWEEN THE TWO CONCEPTS**, being NEITHER TOTALLY EVIL OR TOTALLY GOOD. **IT IS NOW ON A RELATIVE SCALE**. MAN WILL THEN BE UNABLE TO ATTAIN TO PERFECTNESS, **BUT ONLY TO RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS**.

To demonstrate how this works, we have created a scale to show how the morality issue really works. We have numbered our scale from 0-10 on both sides of the spectrum of good and evil. Most people would then view God as being the perfect number 10 on the scale of RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS:

### RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE

EVIL					"I AM"					GOOD										
10	9	8	7	6	5	4	3	2	1	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10

What is the reality of the situation? Where does God actually fit on this scale of RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS, OF MORALITY AND GOOD AND LOVE? In point of fact He does not sit anywhere on the scale at all. The reason being is, this is a scale of **RELATIVE MORALITY, RELATIVE ETHICS FROM A HUMAN PERSPECTIVE**. God is not on the scale, for HE OPERATES UPON A **TOTALLY DIFFERENT BASIS; ABSOLUTE AGAPE LOVE**. Man does not know anything of PURE AGAPE LOVE. The knowledge of God was totally and completely cut off from man when he ate of this tree of knowledge of good and evil. THE EVIL SIDE OF THIS KNOWLEDGE BROUGHT IN THE IMPURITY, THE BLACK PAINT IN OUR ILLUSTRATION. Man was instantly severed from God, **BECAUSE HE WENT FROM THE ABSOLUTE TO THE RELATIVE STANDARD**.

God now becomes invisible to man, unknowable to man. Man is instantly cut of and severed from God and now must **DRIFT ALONE IN THE SEAS OF RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS**. There will be evidence that a God exists in the creation, but God will become a 'mystery', totally unknown, out of reach because of His very nature.

That man did eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil is a fact that Jesus claims we must **accept at face value**. It is recorded in Genesis 3:6. Both Eve and Adam did eat of this fruit. The vast majority of man, and the vast majority of Christians have no concept of what this means, and theological research proves the vast majority of theologians totally miss the mark at what we are being told. The creation and fall of man has not been examined carefully enough, nor has the simplicity of what has been presented accepted in a literal manner, and usually laughed at, and very few take it literally. That explains apostasy from the truths of the salvation message. IT IS LITERAL, AND ADAM AND EVE DID EAT OF THIS TREE. THEY PLUNGED FROM PURE AGAPE LOVE TO RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS. It cost them eternity.

### THE LOVE CHANGE OF THE TREE

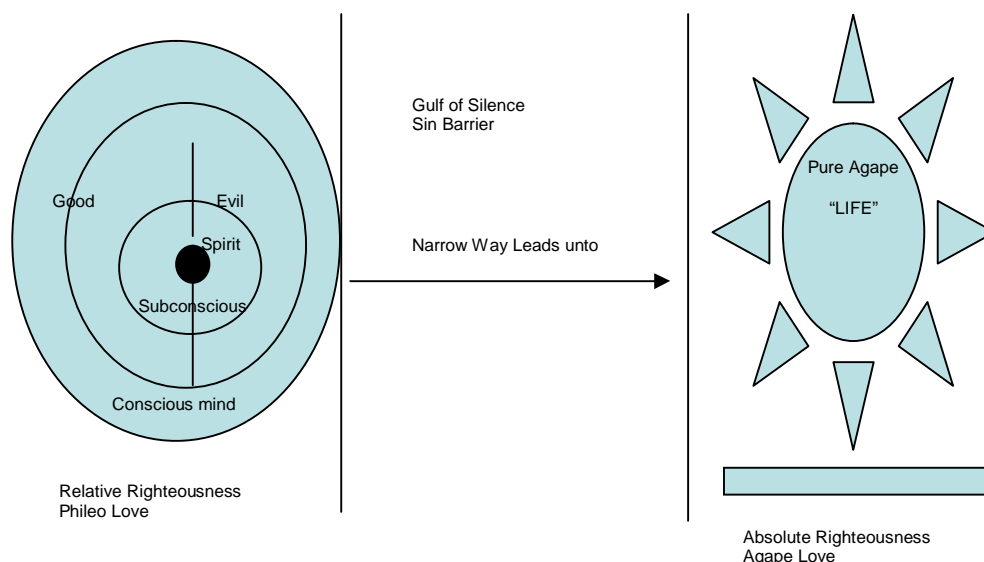
The tree of the knowledge of good and evil represents a **TOTAL AND COMPLETE LOVE CHANGE SHIFT**. This is the crucial change, and it is the change that the entire doctrine of **REGENERATION IS GEARED TO RESOLVE**. We have shown you that God is a Spirit, and a Spirit of pure AGAPE LOVE. Because Adam and Eve were created in the image and likeness of God, they too were also of the same pure AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE.

Agape love is 100% pure. It is imperative you understand this. **THERE ARE NO IMPERFECTIONS IN GOD'S AGAPE LOVE**. It is totally pure in the ABSOLUTE SENSE. There is not one impurity found within it. From this absolute pure agape love flows ABSOLUTE RIGHTEOUSNESS, ABSOLUTE JUSTICE, ABSOLUTE TRUTH, ABSOLUTE GOOD, ABSOLUTE MORALITY AND ETHICS. This means that God's agape love is 100% pure. It is not 99.99999999% pure, but WHOLLY PURE.

The fruit contains a knowledge of both GOOD and EVIL. Because evil is present within the knowledge, and evil is the **COUNTERMANDING FORCE TO LOVE AND GOOD**, then IF INGESTED, THE **PURITY** OF AGAPE LOVE WOULD BE VIOLATED. It would no longer be pure. Therefore IT WOULD NO LONGER BE PURE BUT IMPURE. If by definition DIVINE AGAPE LOVE IS ABSOLUTE PURITY, then DIVINE AGAPE LOVE IS INSTANTLY LOST. Agape love is a thing of the past, for now the purity is violated and it is no longer DIVINE LOVE. It is instead ANOTHER FORM OF LOVE, A LOVE IMPURE, A LOVE NOT PERFECT.

As we are dealing with a love not perfect, a love not pure, less than 100% in purity, then MAN DIED TO PURE AGAPE LOVE, AND WAS SEPARATED FROM IT. As the word death means SEPARATION, THEN WE WOULD HAVE EVERY RIGHT TO SAY **THAT MAN DIED TO PURE AGAPE, HE DIED TO PURITY, BUT CAME ALIVE TO IMPURITY**. He then died to God and came alive to Satan. He went into **SPIRITUAL DEATH**.

The radical knowledge of good and evil brings with it a radical change in purity. As divine agape love is defined as PURE LOVE, then mankind is NO LONGER ALIVE TO IT. Instantly his communion with God is severed. Instantly the knowledge of God he had through UNION with God is severed. Man dies a spiritual death UNTO GOD AND GOD'S KINGDOM. IN GRAPH FORM IT LOOKS LIKE THIS:



Did GOD mention any of this to either Adam or Eve? The fact is, He did, but we can also know that Adam or Eve would not be able to comprehend what God was speaking of. They could not comprehend SPIRITUAL DEATH anymore than man can comprehend **SPIRITUAL REBIRTH UNTIL HE GOES THROUGH IT.** The concept of spiritual death would not mean much to them, for they were alive and had total peace and joy in their hearts. Of what would they know of this DEATH? Nevertheless, God, in His agape love, WARNS THEM NOT TO PARTAKE OF THIS FRUIT:

***“But of the TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL,  
THOU SHALT NOT EAT OF IT:***

***FOR IN THE DAY THAT THOU EATEST THEREOF  
THOU SHALT SURELY DIE.”***

***(Genesis 2:17)***

What did God mean when He said they would DIE IN THE VERY DAY THEY PARTOOK OF THIS KNOWLEDGE? The word “die” is ‘muwth’ and it means **TO DIE, TO KILL, TO SLAY.** It is the OPPOSITE OF LIFE. It is the **CESSATION OF LIFE.** It means CUTTING OFF, A SEVERANCE, A SEPARATION FROM. The question we have is this: FROM WHAT IS MAN GOING TO DIE? The answer becomes obvious: FROM THE 100% purity of agape love he was created with. **HE WILL DIE TO PURE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE. HE WILL BE CUT OFF AND SEVERED FROM IT.** Because God is also pure agape love, man will be CUT OFF AND SEVERED FROM GOD. HE WILL BE CUT OFF, AND SEVERED FROM GOD AND HIS SPIRITUAL ESSENCE. He will go from UNION AND COMMUNION (WHICH IS EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF GOD) TO TOTAL SEVERANCE, TO A REAL AND LITERAL DYING TO GOD.

We can prove that Adam and Eve lived many years after the day they ate of this fruit. But God is not a liar, and He plainly states that BOTH ADAM AND EVE WILL DIE IN THE VERY DAY THEY EAT OF THIS FRUIT. Obviously God is speaking of another form of dying and not physical death. This dying will be SPIRITUAL. **THEY WILL DIE SPIRITUALLY TO GOD.** Their love will no longer be pure, and that impurity brings INSTANT CESSATION OF UNION.

It is also interesting to note that to God a thousand years of earth time represent ONE DAY (2 Peter 3:8; Psalm 90:4). Adam lived for 935 years and died (Genesis 5:5). We are not told how long Eve lived, but we know it was not over 1000 years. From God’s point of view then, both Adam and Eve DID DIE in the “DAY” they ate of that fruit, but the primary message being given to us is that of **SPIRITUAL DEATH, DUE TO THE LOSS OF PURE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE.**

The love change went from pure agape to what the Bible calls PHILEO LOVE. The love of man changes from agape to another form of love, which we could call NATURAL LOVE, THE LOVE WE ARE BORN WITH. Standing behind phileo love is God’s agape in a very TWISTED FORM. It is a perverted agape, a RELATIVE AGAPE, primarily referred to in Scripture simply as PHILEO. The Greek lists over 19 forms of ‘phileo’ love. They have the form of ‘phi’ in them. They include:

“philagathos” which means **LOVE OF GOOD MEN;**

“philadelphia” which means	<b>BROTHERLY LOVE, LOVE OF THE BRETHREN;</b>
“philadelphos” which means	<b>FOND OF THE BRETHREN, FRATERNAL LOVE;</b>
“philandos” which means	<b>FOND OF MAN, AFFECTIONATE, AS A WIFE LOVES HER HUSBAND</b>
“philanthropia” meaning	<b>FONDNESS FOR MANKIND, BENEVOLENCE (PHILANTHROPY); KINDNESS, LOVE TOWARDS MAN;</b>
“philanthropos”, meaning	<b>FONDLY TO MEN, HUMANELY, COURTEOUSLY;</b>
“philarguria” which means	<b>LOVE OF MONEY;</b>
“philautos” which means	<b>LOVE OF SELF, SELFISH, LOVER OF OWN SELF;</b>
“phileo” meaning	<b>TO HAVE AFFECTION FOR, A PERSONAL ATTACHMENT FOR, A MATTER OF SENTIMENT OR FEELING;</b>
“philedonos” meaning	<b>FOND OF PLEASURE, LOVER OF PLEASURE, VOLUPTUOUS;</b>
“philema” meaning	<b>THE GIVING OF A KISS;</b>
“philemon” which means	<b>FRIENDLY;</b>
“philetos” which means	<b>AMIABLE;</b>
“philia” which means	<b>FONDNESS OF FRIENDSHIP;</b>
“philos” which means	<b>FOND OF, FRIEND, NEIGHBOR, AN ASSOCIATE.</b>
“philostorgos” meaning	<b>CHERISHING ONE’S KINDRED, LIKE PARENTS OR CHILDREN. FOND OF FAMILY, NATURAL RELATIVES, OR FRATERNAL;</b>
“philoteknos” meaning	<b>FOND OF ONE’S OWN CHILDREN, MATERNAL LOVE, MOTHERLY LOVE;</b>
“philotimeomai” which means	<b>LOVE OF HONOR, EMULOUS;</b>
“philophonos” meaning	<b>WITH FRIENDLINESS OF MIND, KINDLY, COURTEOUSLY.</b>

The Greek words convey the SPECTRUM OF THE PHILEO LOVES OF FALLEN NATURAL MAN. These are the various forms of NATURAL LOVE that all humans have to one degree or another. The vast majority of Christians who were sent away rejected of Christ ALL HAD THESE NATURAL LOVES OF MAN BEATING WITHIN THEIR BREASTS. Mankind is under the deception that **PHILEO LOVE RELEASED IS IN FACT THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD**. They do what Peter did, they EQUATE LOVE AS LOVE. In other words phileo love is agape love, or certain forms of phileo love is agape love. If we were to take our scale of morality of good and evil, and then apply PHILEO LOVE TO IT, WE WOULD THEN SEE THE FOLLOWING:

**RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE**

<b>LOVE NOT PRESENT</b>					<b>“I AM”</b>					<b>LOVE PRESENT AND RELEASED</b>										
<b>10</b>	<b>9</b>	<b>8</b>	<b>7</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>0</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>7</b>	<b>8</b>	<b>9</b>	<b>10</b>
evil and unethical people					HEART					moral & ethical people										

Notice that PHILEO LOVE RELEASED, that is ACTS OF LOVE TOWARDS OTHERS, goes hand in hand with being MORAL AND ETHICAL. The *more love we release*, the more love PROMPTS US TO DO, **THE HIGHER UP WE CLIMB ON THE RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE**. In other words, the more WE LOVE IN ACTION, the more man thinks of us in terms of BEING RIGHTEOUS, OF BEING HIGHLY MORAL, OF BEING

TOTALLY AND SINCERELY ETHICAL; we could say the MORE GODLIKE WE BECOME. To coin a New Age phrase, we become ***POINTS OF LIGHT***.

Mother Teresa is a very good example of this type of soul, OF A POINT OF LIGHT. She has turned her back upon the world and turned wholly and totally to WORKS OF PHILEO LOVE. She is considered a ***SHINING EXAMPLE OF WHAT MAN OUGHT TO BE***. She is considered by many to be **GODLIKE. SHE IS A LEADER IN THE NEW AGE MOVEMENT, AND IS PRESENT AT MANY NEW AGE MEETINGS. BUT IS SHE IN REALITY GODLIKE? DO HER DEEDS EARN HER ANY RESPECT IN THE EYES OF GOD?**

On the other side of the scale we quickly realize that LOVE NOT RELEASED IN ACTS OF KINDNESS QUICKLY DEGENERATES INTO WORKS OF EVIL. Not only is this sort of soul UNLOVING OR NEUTRAL, THEY ENGAGE IN OVERT ACTS OF ANGER, HOSTILITY AND RAGE. They act out their violent aggression on their victims, the VERY OPPOSITE OF LOVE. We rate them on a scale of 1-10 on the NEGATIVE SIDE, OR EVIL SIDE OF NEUTRAL. We quickly conclude that love NOT RELEASED EQUATES TO EVIL.

It becomes apparent then that man rates morality and ethics in reality ON A LOVE RELEASED SCALE. In love released, the more acts of love DONE, the higher the score in points. Mother Teresa is a number 10, Ted Bundy on the other hand was a minus 10. All the world religions, including Christianity claim that LOVE IS THE ONLY FORCE CAPABLE OF HOLDING MAN TOGETHER IN PEACE AND BROTHERHOOD. If man would BUT LOVE IN DEED AND IN TRUTH, he could somehow navigate himself AROUND DISASTER. The New World Order of George Bush and company is a last ditch effort to FIND A WAY TO GET MAN TO RELEASE HIS OWN NATURAL LOVE.

The trouble with all of this is that it's based upon **THE NATURAL PHILEO LOVES OF MANKIND**. Our scale of morality is based UPON phileo love, relative love and relative righteousness. **THE PURE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD IS NOWHERE TO BE FOUND ON THIS SCALE.** There is a giant gulf that separates man from God, and what separates God from this scale is THE RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF MAN. GOD IS ABSOLUTE. HE IS TOTAL RIGHTEOUSNESS. Therefore in the end, if a soul were to score a PERFECT PHILEO LOVE RELEASE ALL OF THEIR LIFE, THEY ARE STILL IN PHILEO LOVE, NOT IN AGAPE. This is precisely why Paul said you could GIVE AWAY ALL THAT YOU OWN TO THE POOR, ALL THAT YOU HAVE HAD AND ARE, AND YOU COULD POUR YOUR VERY LIFE FOR CHRIST AND IT WILL NOT AVAIL YOURSELF OF SALVATION. It will not for one simple reason: **ALL OF THESE WORKS WERE DONE IN NATURAL PHILEO LOVE.**

God is NOT A PERFECT LOVE ON THE PHILEO SCALE. It is not that He does not have perfect PHILEO LOVE, **BUT HE SITS UPON ANOTHER HIGHER SCALE; THE SCALE OF ABSOLUTE PURE AGAPE LOVE.** In point of fact we should not call it a scale, for scale is used to measure, and there is nothing to measure about God's perfect love, it is always ABSOLUTE. In point of fact, we will prove that mankind hates the agape love of God, and DOES NOT EVEN VIEW IT AS LOVE AT ALL, **BUT INSTEAD AS A FORM OF EVIL.** Christ was pure agape love in the flesh. He was hated and killed because **MAN COULD NOT TOLERATE PURE AGAPE LOVE.** It immediately POINTS OUT THE LIE OF OUR HUMAN LOVE, THE INABILITY OF MAN TO EVEN LOVE IN PHILEO LOVE, LET ALONE AGAPE!

For example, let us say we have a bucket of GRAY PAINT. We'll say it is a medium gray. Through the years man teaches people that this gray paint is in fact white. HE GROWS ACCUSTOMED TO THIS GRAY AS BEING CALLED WHITE, AND ACCEPTS IT AS WHITE. He declares HIS GRAY PAINT IS PURE WHITE, AND COMES TO BELIEVE IT AND EMBRACE IT AS A TRUTH. Then someone comes along with REAL PURE WHITE PAINT. The gray becomes DARK BY COMPARISON. The owner of this newly formed paint begins to sell it on the basis that the so called WHITE OF THE COMPETITION IS A LIE, A FRAUD, AND WHAT THEY HAVE BEEN SELLING THE PUBLIC IS NOT WHITE, IT NEVER WAS, AND IN FACT THEY KNEW IT ALL ALONG.

This would kill the paint manufacturer's business. They have been exposed. The general public is smarter than you think. You can fool some of the people some of the time, most of the people part of the time, but not all the people all the time. They wake up sooner or later to the lies and the deception. The paint manufacturers get together and decided THEY MUST KILL OFF THEIR COMPETITOR. If they do not, they will be ruined. THEY BUY UP ALL THE REAL WHITE PAINT, AND KILL OFF THE INDIVIDUAL THAT BROUGHT IT TO THE WORLD. That is the story of Jesus Christ. He brought with Him pure white paint, and told us that our paint was dark gray.

The religious men of the world had been selling gray paint dressed up in works of righteousness as WHITE PAINT. They became WHITEWASHED SEPULCHERS. They took their WORKS OF PHILEO LOVE RELEASED AND CLAIMED IT WAS THE PURE WHITE PAINT OF AGAPE LOVE. They painted themselves with it, thinking that it would fool God and fool the people. It may have fooled the vast majority of people, but it did not fool God at all. When they came before God He sent His angels to get some real tough PAINT STRIPPER CALLED TRUTH, for He knew that if this was indeed AGAPE LOVE, IT WOULD STAND UP TO ANYTHING, IT WAS IMPERVIOUS TO DAMAGE. The angels came and slapped on the stripper, and lo and behold, their SO CALLED AGAPE LOVE WHITE PAINT MELTED AND THEIR PHILEO LOVE GRAY PAINT WAS EXPOSED TO THE LIGHT OF TRUTH. They were liars, frauds and hypocrites, CLAIMING THAT THEIR PHILEO LOVE DEEDS WERE IN FACT THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.

***“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye are like unto  
WHITED SEPULCHRES,  
which indeed appear BEAUTIFUL OUTWARD  
BUT ARE WITHIN FULL OF DEAD MEN'S BONES,  
AND OF ALL UNCLEANNESS.”  
(Matthew 23:27)***

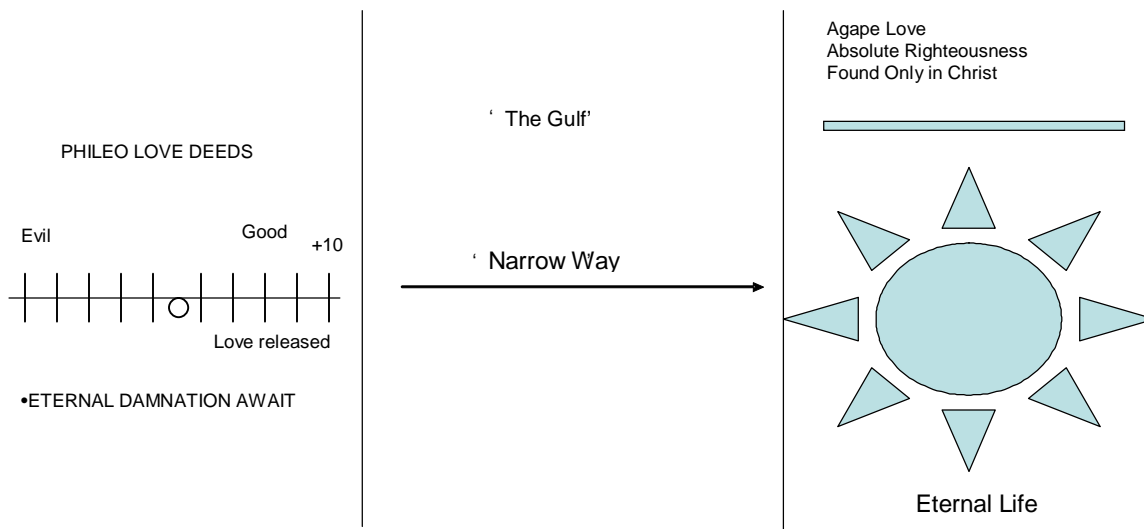
We must remember that Jesus told us in the Sermon on the Mount:

***“For I say unto you, THAT EXCEPT  
YOUR RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL EXCEED  
THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES, YE SHALL  
IN NO CASE  
ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN.”  
(Matthew 5:20)***

The Scribes and Pharisees were LAW KEEPERS TO A FINE DEGREE. They had over 600+ laws that they had to KEEP WITHOUT FAIL. This law keeping is what made them RIGHTEOUS. It was their bucket of white paint. Christ is telling us that UNLESS WE EXCEED THAT ABILITY, we cannot enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. What does He mean? He means that IT IS UTTERLY IMPOSSIBLE TO ENTER HEAVEN BY ANY FORM OF LAW KEEPING OR ANY OTHER ATTEMPTS TO JUSTIFY OURSELVES BEFORE GOD. All forms of “works” or “legalism” are done away with under Christ. They are to no avail. The only way Christ gave us is via the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY, WHICH LEADETH UNTO LIFE (AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT) and it is via the FREE GIFT OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST THAT WE ENTER HEAVEN. The strait gate and narrow way are not WORKS OR LEGALISM. It is not by any means an attempt to JUSTIFY YOURSELF BEFORE GOD, but rather the very reverse, it is the method used to bring the soul TO AGREEMENT WITH GOD FROM HIS HEART OF HEARTS.

You must understand that gray paint is gray paint, and you calling it white do not change it. PHILEO LOVE IS PHILEO LOVE, AND IT IS NOT AGAPE LOVE, NO MATTER WHAT YOUR CLAIMS MAY BE TO THE CONTRARY. Works of righteousness or law keeping DO NOT CHANGE THE HEART. The NEW COVENANT may *only* be entered by a SUPERNATURAL HEART CHANGE, FROM PHILEO LOVE (A HEART OF STONE); TO AGAPE LOVE (A HEART OF FLESH). The Scribes and Pharisees are no different than the vast majority of Christians, who walk around doing all of these GOOD WORKS, BUT THEY DO THEM ALL IN PHILEO LOVE, AND REFUSE TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO FIND **TRUE AGAPE LOVE**. THEY CLAIMED THAT THEIR NATURAL LOVE RELEASED WAS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. They claimed that all they had to do was make a “decision” for Christ, which was in reality a decision “to love”, for Christ is love. THEY TOTALLY IGNORED THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN AGAPE LOVE AND PHILEO LOVE.

Mankind is on THE PHILEO LOVE PLANE OF LIFE. He knows no other form of love. He is trapped by virtue of the knowledge of good and evil. He can reach a level of +10 on the plane of RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF PHILEO LOVE, but he is still under PHILEO LOVE. All of his religion, all of his good deeds, all of his efforts to prove to God that he is capable of SOME GOOD, ends in disaster. THE LAW OF AGAPE LOVE PREVAILS. Thus:

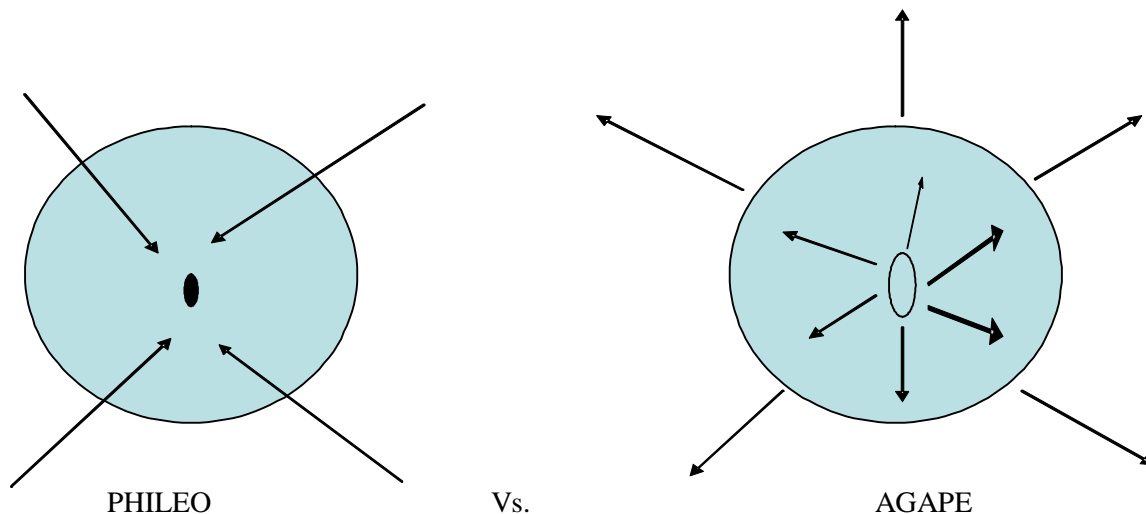


You will notice that God is not on the PHILEO LOVE/RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE. He is not on there because He is PURE AGAPE LOVE. He sits way over TOTALLY OUT OF REACH OF MAN, SEPARATED BY A GIANT GULF, A GIANT CHASM OF SILENCE AND INVISIBILITY. THAT WHICH SEPARATES MAN FROM GOD IS THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. HE IS APART and UNKNOWABLE to natural man, UNLESS AND UNTIL HE WALKS "THE WAY". The tree of knowledge of good and evil brought INSTANT SPIRITUAL DEATH, CESSATION AND SEVERANCE FROM GOD. God is simply NOT KNOWABLE BY MANKIND IN HIS PRESENT STATE. HE IS A FALLEN CREATURE, WHO OPERATES ON A PLANE OF IMPERFECT PHILEO LOVE.

All of the human love in the world RELEASED would not jump this gigantic gulf between man and God. Satan on the other hand, **WILL POUR OUT LYING SIGNS AND WONDERS IN AN ATTEMPT TO PROVE TO MAN THAT HIS OWN NATURAL PHILEO LOVE RELEASED IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST AND GOD!** He will subvert any Christian theology in an attempt to prove that this is so. He will invent a million religions in an effort to sidetrack man into WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, ALL DONE VIA THE RELEASE OF PHILEO LOVE. The very platform of Antichrist is **PHILEO LOVE OF MAN RELEASED**. It is, as I have stated before, the ROOT OF THE GRAND DELUSION. From this root deception spring all other deceptions, and every one of them will attempt to prove that **PHILEO LOVE RELEASED IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD**.

All that man needs to do, says the antichrist spirit, is to REALIZE THAT THE LOVE HE HAS WITHIN IS OF GOD. Man in his delusion will go one step further; he will declare that the love he has within IS GOD. He will then RELEASE IT AND DECLARE HIMSELF GOD. It is all a delusion, all a deception.

There is in reality a gigantic gulf between the most perfect of phileo love and the agape love of God. They are wholly different from each other. They stem from different roots. The phileo love of man stems from a root of **SELFISHNESS**. We will see why this is so shortly. The agape love of God stems from a root of **SELFLESSNESS**. The two concepts are in reality DIAMETRIC OPPOSITES. There is no COMPATIBILITY, **FOR ONE FLOWS INWARD, THE OTHER FLOWS OUTWARD**. It is a Satanic deception that the phileo love of man flows outward, because at the ROOT OF WHY IT IS GIVEN IS TO OBTAIN SOMETHING IN RETURN. Thus:



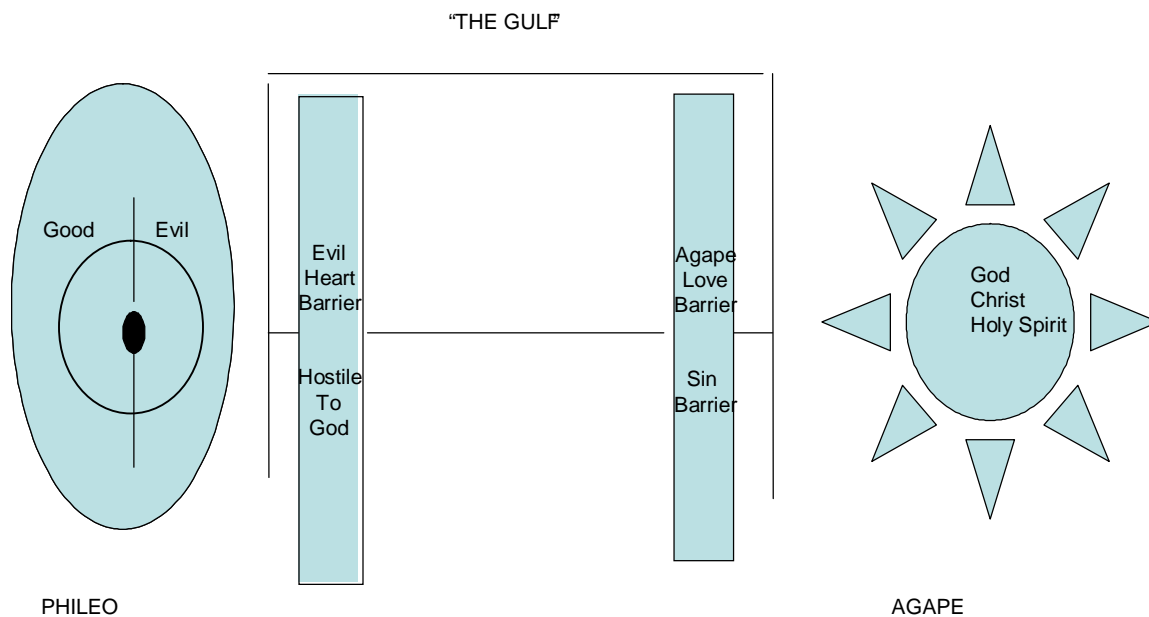


The gulf that separates man from God is called by theologians the SIN BARRIER. It is in reality an AGAPE LOVE BARRIER. It is the utter lack, the utter destitution of man in the AGAPE LOVE AREA that erects a barrier between man and God. In reality there are TWO BARRIERS BETWEEN MAN AND GOD. ONE BARRIER IS THE BARRIER ERECTED BY GOD BECAUSE OF SIN, DUE TO A LACK OF AGAPE LOVE, AND THE OTHER BARRIER IS ERECTED BY MAN AGAINST GOD, BECAUSE OF HIS NATURAL REBELLION AND HATRED OF GOD. This hatred and rebellion is aided and abetted by Satan, who took LITERAL DOMINION OVER MAN AT THE FALL.

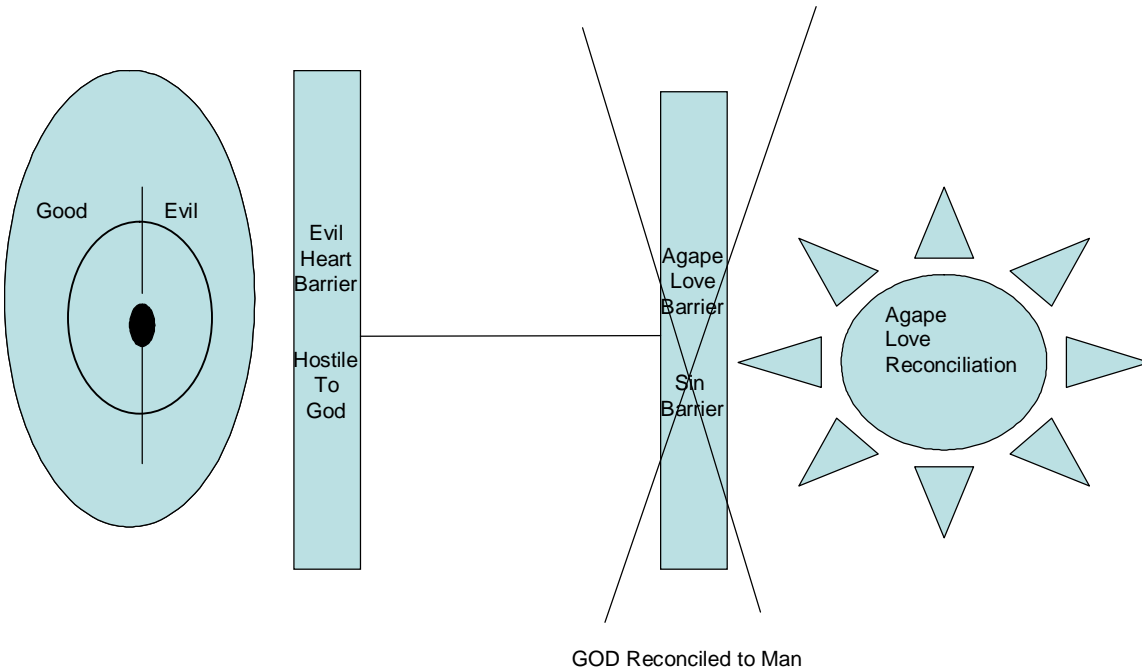
Spiritual death means what it says: TOTAL SEVERANCE FROM GOD AT THE ROOT HEART OF MAN. He not only does not KNOW GOD, he does not LOVE GOD. In point of fact, he hates God and seeks to kill God, just as those that believed upon Christ tried to stone Him to death. AGAPE LOVE LOST IS SPIRITUAL DEATH. We shall later prove this out with a multitude of Scripture.

Christ removed the barrier that God erected against man by His work upon the cross. The other barrier, the rebellion barrier of the inner heart remains in full force and effect. This barrier is what modern Christian theology ignores totally, and in most cases declares does not even exist. In their 'new plan' of salvation, they IGNORE AND BYPASS THIS BARRIER, CLAIMING THAT THE WORK OF CHRIST REMOVED ALL BARRIERS BETWEEN MAN AND GOD, AND ALL THAT MAN HAS TO DO IS UNDERSTAND THAT AND EMBRACE IT AS AN ACT OF FAITH.

If we were to view the two barriers, it would look like this:



The work of Christ upon the cross REMOVED THE SIN BARRIER. God is now RECONCILED TO MAN VIA THE WORK OF CHRIST. Now we have only one barrier left:



**What does man have to do in order to remove this barrier of rebellion and hostility towards the True God?** Jesus told us what we have to do: ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO THE DEATH. We must undergo A LOVE CHANGE FROM PHILEO LOVE TO AGAPE LOVE, AND WHEN GOD HAS ACCOMPLISHED THAT, RECONCILIATION AND UNION BECOME **AN EXPERIENTIAL REALITY TO THE BELIEVER**; ALL BARRIERS ARE DOWN. It will be proven later that the ‘many’ held a theology that told them THERE WERE NO BARRIERS BETWEEN THEM AND GOD. They merely had to “make a decision” for Christ and in this so-called “decision” God AUTOMATICALLY AND INSTANTLY GRANTED AGAPE LOVE TO THAT SOUL. Everything was appropriated by an ACT OF FAITH; AN ACT OF BELIEF. FAITH BECAME SALVATION ITSELF. FAITH BECAME CHRIST HIMSELF. Their theology cost them heaven. They embraced it with a whole heart and refuted all the warnings of Christ that it was false.

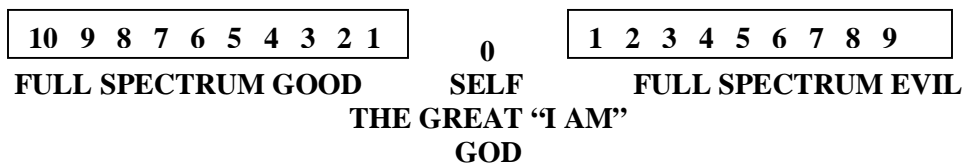
Reconciliation will be fully discussed later, but it is essential you understand THERE IS A HUGE BARRIER BETWEEN MAN AND GOD AND IT IS THE PHILEO LOVE (REBELLION) BARRIER.

## THE TREE AND GODHOOD

If the fruit of the tree represents an **EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF BOTH GOOD AND EVIL**, then man must and will enter a form of pseudo GODHOOD. It was the claim of Satan to Eve:

***“For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your EYES SHALL BE OPENED, and ye shall be AS GODS, KNOWING GOOD AND EVIL.”***  
**(Genesis 3:5)**

Satan claimed that man would become GODS, knowing good and evil. It is a statement of literal fact. What Satan did not tell Eve was what his definition of God meant. The word “gods” is ‘elohiym’ and it means among other things **SUPREME RULER, MAGISTRATE, RULER OR JUDGE**. Satan is telling Eve that if she eats of this fruit, SHE WILL BECOME A JUDGE OVER WHAT IS GOOD AND WHAT IS EVIL. SHE HERSELF WILL BE THE SUPREME RULER WITHIN HER OWN AWARENESS. This knowledge will make her A GOD. This is a true statement of fact, for if we have FULL SPECTRUM EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF BOTH GOOD AND EVIL, then we have a COMPARATIVE BASIS. Because man was created with CENTRAL OR CORE AWARENESS OF EXISTENCE, THE GREAT “I AM” THAT SITS UPON THE THRONE OF SELF BECOMES THE RULER AND JUDGE OF ALL ISSUES OF MORALITY AND ETHICS.



From the graph it becomes quite clear that there is a NEUTRAL ZONE between the TWO FORCES OF GOOD AND EVIL. This is where the great ‘I AM’ of self sits upon the throne as judge and God. All issues of morality and ethics are made on the basis OF COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS. Man becomes a LIVING COMPUTER, WITH THE ABILITY TO EXAMINE FULLY THE ISSUE AND MAKE A CHOICE. Herein lies the great danger: HE BECOMES SEPARATE, A RULER UNTO HIMSELF, AND BECAUSE HE HAS NO ABSOLUTE STANDARDS BY WHICH TO JUDGE, he begins to drift further and further away from any absolute standards whatever. The so-called ‘New Morality’ of today is nothing more than the IMMORALITY OF YESTERDAY. He then develops a whole new system of morality and ethics called SITUATIONAL ETHICS. He declares there is no real right or wrong, no real good or evil, and because there is no real good or evil, there is no real SIN. SIN THEN BECOMES A FIGMENT OF THE IMAGINATION. GOD BECOMES A FIGMENT OF THE IMAGINATION.

Each race, tribe or nation of man forms their own CODES OF CONDUCT, each based upon their own INTERPRETATION OF RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS, based upon THEIR SITUATION IN LIFE. Thus when the Arabs, for example, slay a princess in public for adultery, those tribes of men that do not agree with this code of conduct ARE OUTRAGED BY THIS ACT. Likewise the Arabs are outraged at what they consider lax standards in the West and in Western culture. Japan bashing is the in-thing right now, and Americans are outraged at the remarks of some Japanese rulers on the American work ethic. All of these arguments have a root in RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS, RELATIVE INTERPRETATIONS.

The move of Antichrist is to claim that THERE IS NO REAL TRUTH TO MEASURE BY. It is the Masonic creed that ALL RELIGIONS HAVE GOOD IN THEM, AND NO ONE RELIGION IS CORRECT, FOR THERE IS NO SUCH THING AS ABSOLUTE TRUTH. Therefore ALL FORMS OF RELIGION, ALL FORMS OF GOVERNMENT, ALL FORMS OF BELIEFS ARE WHOLLY ACCEPTABLE EXCEPT ONE: THAT THERE IS

## ONE KNOWABLE, ABSOLUTE TRUTH.

Satan cannot allow man to develop any concept that would POINT TO THE FACT OF THERE BEING A SINGLE, KNOWABLE ABSOLUTE TRUTH BEHIND THE UNIVERSE. For this concept to be allowed to develop would **PUT THE LIE TO THE MULTITUDE OF SO CALLED "TRUTHS"** that Satan has developed over the centuries. It would give man AN ANCHOR THAT WAS OUTSIDE OF HIMSELF. He would then have this ONE TRUTH BY WHICH TO GAUGE THE AUTHENTICITY OF ALL OTHER TRUTHS. Satan's plan would fall to the ground in ruin.

The tree of knowledge then represents a RADICAL SHIFT IN MAN FROM TOTAL DEPENDENCE UPON GOD TO ONE OF COMPLETE INDEPENDENCE FROM GOD. Man becomes dependent only upon himself, and the great "I AM" ascends to the **THRONE OF THE INNER HEART, THE VERY CORE SPIRITUAL ESSENCE OF MAN.** He takes the place of God on the throne of self in the most Holy of Holies, and from there each human soul will evaluate and judge what is and what is not right or wrong, good or evil, ethical or moral. Each human soul does then decide BY HIMSELF/HERSELF what is going to be accepted AS TRUTH, and what is going to be rejected AS A LIE. Each soul becomes a true GOD. The Creator God, the God of absolute agape love, is brutally kicked off the throne within the Holy of Holies, and is cast out into outer darkness.

This radical shift in GODHOOD then lays the groundwork for man to actually think HE IS A GOD, AND THAT THE REAL GOD IS SIMPLY A FIGMENT OF HIS IMAGINATION. They will begin to imagine that whatever they can conceive of, they can do. They will begin to imagine in their vain world they control their own destinies, and can shape the world to a heaven on earth. This is another part of the GRAND DELUSION. The New Age Movement, the Masonic Lodge and a host of other movements have this claim as a central belief. It is found in the POSITIVE THINKING, POSITIVE AFFIRMATION BELIEF STRUCTURE. With the rise of Godhood status, another problem raises its ugly head:

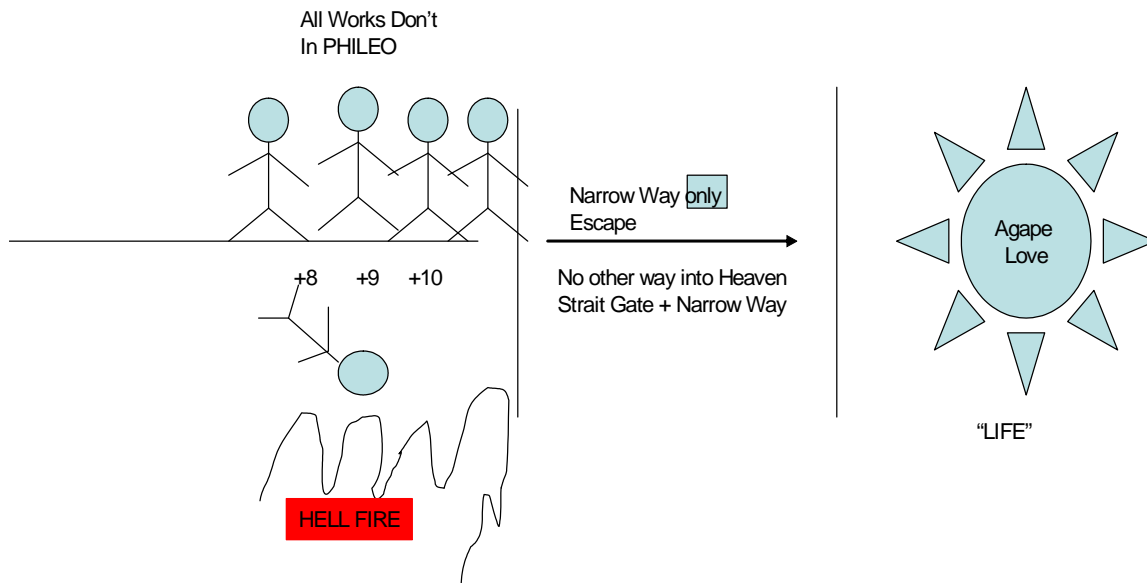
## **THE TREE AND THE ISSUE OF RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS**

Closely tied to the foregoing issue that the tree of knowledge brought to man, is this issue of RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS that we have discussed previously. Because man will know that good is preferred over evil, and that right is preferred over wrong, SYSTEMS OF MEASUREMENT WILL BE INTRODUCED TO CONTROL THE MASSES. We call this GOVERNMENT. Those within a given society that conform to the requirements of their government WILL BE CONSIDERED GOOD AND RIGHTEOUS CITIZENS. They will be perceived as UPRIGHT, HONEST, SINCERE AND DEDICATED CITIZENS, MORAL AND ETHICAL IN EVERY WAY. Associated with this is of course the RELEASE OF PHILEO LOVE. The more released, the MORE GODLIKE ONE BECOMES. The more Godlike one becomes, the FINER CITIZEN HE BECOMES. Each nation develops its own codes of what it considers to be good and evil, right and wrong.

This system of RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS will be of man's own MIND/INTELLECT and from hard experience. It will evolve in time to more complex issues. The vacancy caused by God's total absence from within the heart of man will haunt man down through the years.

Knowing that something is missing, but not sure at all what it is, man will EVOLVE SYSTEMS OF RELIGIONS AND PHILOSOPHIES IN AN ATTEMPT TO RECONCILE HIMSELF TO HIS ALONENESS. All religious quests will be an attempt to solve the mystery of the UNKNOWN GOD. Man will reason within himself that love and good are beautiful things, divine, and thus attribute those to the UNKNOWN GOD. He will then reason that if HE IS GOOD, AND DOES GOOD, AND LOVES, AND HAS RIGHT THOUGHTS, THAT GOD WILL APPROVE AND HE WILL FINALLY END UP IN UNION WITH THE ‘UNKNOWN GOD’.

The basis of all the world religions rests upon this primary concept. Christians would call them FORMS OF WORKS, OR LEGALISM. If a soul be good, do good works, think kind and right thoughts, and keep the evil within him at bay, he will then find APPROVAL BEFORE GOD. In other words, it is an attempt to JUSTIFY ONESELF BEFORE GOD. The hope of all of this is that when one dies, GOD WILL THEN APPROVE OF THE CONDUCT IN LIFE AND WILL ACCEPT THAT SOUL. That hope is a total lie, and anyone that embraces it will end up in eternal damnation. Here is why:



You will notice the little stick figure does all of his work under the RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE, UNDER THE PHILEO LOVE SCALE. Great and mighty works were done during this soul’s life. Fantastic giving, fantastic love was released. Clothing, food, shelter were supplied to the needy and the homeless. Vast sums of money were given to supply the needs of the Church. This soul was an evangelist who preached the Gospel of Christ worldwide, and brought millions into the sheepfold. He performed miracle after miracle and healed thousands of people with his mighty power from the Holy Spirit. He then dies and stands before the judgment seat of Jesus Christ. To his horror, he is rejected. WHY? Because ALL OF HIS WORKS WERE DONE UNDER PHILEO LOVE.

Do you see? He NEVER SETTLED THE AGAPE LOVE QUESTION. He never entered the strait gate and walked the narrow way to find TRUE AGAPE LOVE. All of his works were totally vain. They did not profit him one bit. HIS ENTIRE LIFE WAS SPENT IN VANITY. The real issue between him and his God was never faced, never resolved. All of the toil in his life was FOR NOTHING WHATEVER. This soul remained in PHILEO LOVE RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS. Never once did he come to the living Christ to be granted the gift of PURE

AGAPE LOVE WITHIN HIS SPIRIT. Never once did he open the door of his Holy of Holies and allow Christ to ascend to the throne.

## **CAN WE PROVE SPIRITUAL DEATH?**

God plainly stated that man would die in the very day that the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil was eaten. Jesus asked us to accept this as a plain and very literal fact. We have shown you that this knowledge of good and evil REMOVED AGAPE LOVE INSTANTLY WITHIN ADAM AND EVE. We have suggested that this REMOVAL OF AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE IS IN FACT WHAT SPIRITUAL DEATH IS ALL ABOUT. This issue is serious, for not only is man separated from God while alive on this earth, HE WILL BE FOREVER SEPARATED FROM GOD IN ETERNITY AS WELL, AND FACE WHAT THE BIBLE CALLS THE SECOND DEATH.

The spiritual death of man results in PHYSICAL DEATH AS WELL. At physical death the spirit and soul are separated from the body. The body then goes into the ground, and the spirit and soul go to their appropriate destination, which is determined by one factor: **THE AGAPE LOVE FACTOR**. If the soul has not received the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, that soul faces ETERNAL SEPARATION FROM HIS CREATOR. The blood of Christ will not avail that soul anything, the grace of God will not avail that soul anything. **THAT SOUL FACES ETERNAL SEPARATION FROM GOD, WHICH CHRIST TERMED THE 'SECOND DEATH'.**

He called it the “second death” because man is already dead, he is not aware that he is dead in a spiritual sense, because that aspect is hidden from him. He is not aware of either the Kingdom of Heaven or the dominion of Satan. Both are a mystery to him, unknown, and a secret. He may wonder about them, he may meditate upon them, but they are beyond his natural knowledge. Because man is dead spiritually to God by the absence of agape love within, he is very much alive unto Satan and to the world.

Because Jesus Christ claims that all men ARE SPIRITUALLY DEAD UNLESS REGENERATED, then OBVIOUSLY THEY FACE ANOTHER DEATH AFTER PHYSICAL DEATH: **TOTAL AND COMPLETE SEPARATION FROM GOD.**

*“Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the FIRST RESURRECTION:*

*ON SUCH THE SECOND DEATH HATH NO POWER, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.”*

**(Revelation 20:6)**

There is a SECOND DEATH. This second death is for ALL ETERNITY. There is no reprieve, no second chance, no way out. The scripture makes it clear that **IF A PERSON HAS NOT LAID HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE DURING THEIR LIFETIME ON EARTH, AND THEY DIE ON EARTH WITHOUT IT, THEY FACE THE SECOND DEATH.**

*“He that hath an ear let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches;*

***HE THAT OVERCOMETH SHALL NOT BE HURT OF THE SECOND DEATH.***

***(Revelation 2:11)***

Notice what Jesus says here: **HE THAT OVERCOMETH SHALL NOT BE HURT OF THE SECOND DEATH.** Jesus ties overcoming directly to the second death having no power. We found in 1 John 4:7 that EVERYONE BORN OF GOD HAS AGAPE LOVE. We found in 1 John 3:1 that IT WAS AGAPE LOVE THAT MADE ONE A SON OF GOD. We find then a common denominator, that **AGAPE LOVE FOUND AND BESTOWED IS WHAT MAKES ONE AN OVERCOMER:**

*“For WHATSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD OVERCOMETH THE WORLD...”*

***(1 John 5:4)***

If we are granted AGAPE LOVE AT SPIRITUAL REBIRTH, then obviously **WE DID NOT HAVE IT PRIOR TO THAT POINT OF TIME.** If we did not have it, we were not **ALIVE UNTO GOD.** God does not need to grant you something if you have it already. If agape love granted is what makes you a Son of God, and anyone born of God AGAPE LOVES BECAUSE HE HAS BEEN GRANTED IT, THEN ONLY THOSE WHO AGAPE LOVE ARE THE OVERCOMERS! To be an overcomer is to be BORN OF GOD. No one can be born of God unless and until they have OBTAINED AGAPE LOVE, which is IN THE SON.

1 John 5:12 says:

*“He who HATH THE SON HATH LIFE;*

***AND HE WHO HATH NOT THE SON OF GOD***

***HATH NOT LIFE.”***

Jesus told us rather bluntly that **LIFE WAS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY.** He also told us that we **MUST ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY THE FULL DISTANCE TO FIND LIFE.** If Jesus IS LIFE, and that LIFE is the destination of the narrow way, then **CHRIST WAITS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY TO BESTOW AGAPE LOVE TO THE BELIEVER, BECAUSE AGAPE LOVE IS ‘LIFE’.** We have come full circle; we have found complete agreement between Genesis and the fall of man to the very heart of the message of Jesus Christ.

Christ considered **ALL MEN TO BE SPIRITUALLY DEAD TO GOD.** He made a remark to one of His believers and followers to that effect. To us it appears rude when we consider the circumstances, for one of His believers wanted to go and bury his father.

*“And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me **FIRST TO GO AND BURY MY FATHER.***

*But Jesus said unto him, **FOLLOW ME;**  
and let the **DEAD BURY THEIR DEAD.**”  
(Matthew 8:21-22)*

What Jesus was saying is that ALL MANKIND IS SPIRITUALLY DEAD BECAUSE OF THE FALL OF MAN. Even though man is alive and walks upon planet earth he is DEAD TO GOD in his essence. Because they are dead spiritually, and because they will NEVER COME TO THE TRUE SPIRITUAL LIFE, Christ is blunt: **let the dead bury their own dead.** They die and await the final **SECOND DEATH.** What is this second death?

*“And **DEATH and HELL WERE CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE.**  
**THIS IS THE SECOND DEATH.***

*And **WHOSOEVER WAS NOT FOUND WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF LIFE**  
**WAS CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE.**”  
(Revelation 20:14, 15)*

Christ and God both insist that there is a very literal and real lake of fire. All those that are not found written in this book of ‘LIFE’ WERE CAST ALIVE INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE. What is this so-called book of life? We will find that it is the **BOOK OF AGAPE LIFE.** It is the book in which all those who **overcame** and were granted the gift of agape love are written. Those that DID NOT OVERCOME, AND DID NOT FIND AGAPE LOVE WERE NOT WRITTEN THERE. For one reason or another, they failed to comprehend **THE SEVERITY OF THEIR DESTINATION.** The world overcame them, and they go into eternal ruin.

When you tie together the comments of Christ here and His statements that one had to be BORN FROM ABOVE, and we couple them with Genesis and the story of the fall, a portrait begins to emerge, and we begin to FIND THAT AGAPE LOVE LIES AT THE BOTTOM OF IT ALL. You will find such words as ‘quicken, born again, regenerated, and life, all have a common denominator: **THE BESTOWMENT OF DIVINE AGAPE LOVE TO THE TRUE SEEKER OF GOD.** All others go into eternal ruin. Thus it is that any human soul, who will KEEP THE SAYINGS OF JESUS and will DO THE WILL OF THE FATHER, can find ETERNAL LIFE AND AVOID THE SECOND DEATH. They will find AGAPE, and they will KNOW THE TRUTH BEHIND ALL OF LIFE, and this truth shall set them FREE INDEED.

To move further in depth to prove that agape love lost is in fact spiritual death, we will explore the conversation that Satan had with Eve in closer detail:



*“Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, HATH GOD SAID, YE SHALL NOT EAT OF EVERY TREE OF THE GARDEN?”*

**(Genesis 3:1)**

The word “subtil” is ‘aruwmn’ and it means **CUNNING, CRAFTY**. In short an **ARTIST AT DECEPTION**. Christ claimed that Satan was the Father of lies, and that he is the deceiver of the **WHOLE WORLD**:

*“And the great dragon was cast out, that OLD SERPENT, called THE DEVIL, and Satan,*

**WHICH DECEIVETH THE WHOLE WORLD:**

*he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.”*

**(Revelation 12:9)**

The vast majority of people on earth **DO NOT REALLY BELIEVE IN SATAN**. They may have a form of mild belief, but they do not **UNDERSTAND OR KNOW THE DECEPTION OF SATAN**. The vast majority of apostate Christians do not believe in Satan or his demons either. They are totally under his control and dominion. Satan’s primary method of operation **IS VIA TOTAL SECRECY**. He operates behind the scenes, an invisible power that sweeps the vast majority of man into eternal ruin. Christ declared Satan **WAS REAL**. The Bible does not attempt to prove the reality of Satan; it merely says that **SATAN IS**. The Bible does not attempt to prove the reality of God; it simply states that **GOD IS**. Jesus said that if we want to come to a knowledge of the **REAL TRUTH** behind life, we must become as little children. We must **SIMPLY TRUST WHAT GOD SAYS, AND ACCEPT IT AS FACTUAL**.

When we do, and when we comply with the sayings of Jesus, and do the will of the Father, the reality of **THE SPIRIT WORLD WILL BE MADE KNOWN**. It will be made known in the **EXPERIENTIAL SENSE OF THE WORD**. The believer on the narrow way will experience first hand **THE REALITY OF DEMONS**. **THEY WILL COME TO HIM AND ATTEMPT TO PREVENT PASSAGE**. They will apply every trick in the book to prevent passage down the narrow way, for they must if they are to keep that soul from entering heaven. **IT WILL ALL BE DONE VIA DECEPTION**. This deception will be in that form of **DIVERSION TO OTHER THINGS OR BY FALSE DOCTRINE OR THEOLOGY**.

Satan has then an advantage over Eve. He is the master of deception. Notice what he does to Eve. He asks a seemingly innocent question: **YOU CAN’T EAT OF ANY TREE IN THE GARDEN?** He does not point out the **ONE TREE HE KNOWS THEY CANNOT EAT FROM**, HE **SWEEPS THE ENTIRE LOT OF TREES**. He knows that this will **RIVET EVES ATTENTION TO THE ONE FORBIDDEN TREE**, and he does not have to even mention it.

*“And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:*

*But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall*

*not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, LEST YE DIE.*

*And the serpent said unto the woman, YE SHALL NOT SURELY DIE.*

*For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your EYES SHALL BE OPENED,  
AND  
YE SHALL BE AS GODS, KNOWING GOOD AND EVIL.”  
(Genesis 3:2-5)*

Once Satan has the attention of the woman riveted upon the ONE forbidden tree, he then CONTRADICTS GOD. He says to her, “YEA, HATH GOD SAID?” Satan works the same way today, and clearly works that way through the false teachers WHO DENY OR CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST. If a searching soul points out to a false teacher or preacher a truth about the narrow way, HE WILL WAVE A HAND AND COME UP WITH A THEOLOGY TO DENY OR CONTRADICT IT. ‘YEA, HATH GOD SAID?’ The invisible power behind the false prophets is Satan himself. To the unbeliever or only casual seeker of truth, he will plant all forms of questions, disputing and doubting about the AUTHENTICITY OF THE WORD OF GOD. He will question its integrity, and that it is really only a bunch of ancient fables. If that does not work, he will then attempt to REINTERPRET WHAT WAS CLEARLY STATED, AND ALWAYS VIA THEOLOGY OR DOCTRINE THAT CLEARLY STANDS IN CONTRADICTION TO WHAT CHRIST SAID.

The mark of a false teacher is always CONTRADICTION OR DIRECT OPPOSITION TO THE CLEAR WORDS OF GOD. Satan must and always does CONTRADICT THE WORD OF GOD. A contradiction is at the root a DENIAL OF THE WORD OF GOD. After Satan contradicts it, he then SUBSTITUTES THE LIE FOR THE TRUTH. If Christ said the ONLY way to eternal life is via the strait gate and narrow way, that will be CONTRADICTED, AND THE DIRECT OPPOSITE WILL BE ADVANCED AND HELD OUT AS THE REAL TRUTH. God said that the eating of the fruit of the tree would bring immediate death. Satan utterly denied it, and said it would bring a new form of LIFE. What Satan says always has truth in it, but HE REDEFINES EVERYTHING.

Those who have read George Orwell’s 1984 know about the art of DOUBLESPEAK. The communists are masters at the art of doublespeak. They use the same words you use, but their meanings ARE REVERSED. Satan is behind them, he is the driving force behind everything they do and say.

Satan traps the vast majority of mankind simply by discrediting the word of God. They simply do not accept or believe what the Bible says about mankind or the mission of Christ. If they come to a realization that it is telling the truth, Satan immediately moves in to make sure that it is not PROPERLY UNDERSTOOD. He takes simple and direct commands of Christ and makes them complicated. Within the complicated theology Satan presents always is a CONTRADICTION, and always that contradiction HAS REDEFINITIONS OF THE KEY WORDS CHRIST USED.

The tree of knowledge thus contains a knowledge that has grave implications for mankind, and he becomes A LIVING BUT SPIRITUALLY DEAD ENTITY, AND HE BECOMES A GOD UNTO HIMSELF:

***“But the Lord is the TRUE GOD, he is the LIVING GOD, and the EVERLASTING KING: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation.***

***Thus shall ye say unto them, THE GODS THAT HAVE NOT MADE THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH,***

***EVEN THEY SHALL PERISH FROM THE EARTH, AND FROM UNDER THESE HEAVENS.”***

***(Jeremiah 10:10-11)***

***“The THOUGHTS OF THOSE WHO DWELL UPON THE EARTH SHALL TRANSGRESS WITHIN THEM; AND THEY SHALL BE PERVERTED IN ALL THEIR WAYS.***

***THEY SHALL TRANSGRESS,***

***AND THINK THEMSELVES GODS;***

***WHILE EVIL SHALL BE MULTIPLIED AMONG THEM.”***

***(Enoch 79:8-9)***

Man will drift so far away from his literal Creator that he will begin to think that HE IS GOD HIMSELF. He will develop a spiritual concept that claims that THE GOD FORCE LIES WITHIN, AND THAT ALL MAN HAS TO DO IS TO UNLEASH IT. This God force will be called the CHRIST WITHIN. It will be a total delusion, a deception from Satan, which God willingly allows for they have refused the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. The root of this deception is the NATURAL LOVE FORCE WITHIN THEM. They will remember the bliss of love in these moments, and they will seek it from WITHIN THEMSELVES.

They will explore the inner mysteries of the mind, and will declare that WITHIN LIE THE SECRETS OF THE UNIVERSE. INNER SPACE WILL BE THE LAST AND FINAL FRONTIER. If man can conquer these secrets, he will unlock the DIVINE, AND WILL AT LAST MERGE WITH GOD, AND JUMP THE LAST QUANTUM LEAP INTO GODHOOD AND TOTAL UNION WITH GOD. In many areas the New Age Theology is very correct. It is almost a mirror image of Christianity. Where it is wrong IS THE METHOD OF FINDING THE TRUE GOD. They claim that He lies WITHIN THEM, AND BEATS IN THEIR INNER HEARTS AS THE TRUE LOVE. All they need to do is to somehow UNLOCK THIS LOVE, AND LET IT FLOW FROM WITHIN TOWARDS OTHERS.

It is the unlocking of this LOVE FORCE that is THE CHRIST. All mankind has this CHRIST FORCE dwelling within them. The search is not FOR CHRIST, but to UNLOCK THEIR CHRIST FORCE. Again we stress this so called CHRIST FORCE IS PHILEO LOVE, OR NATURAL LOVE WITHIN. They refuse to accept the concept that they ARE DESTITUTE OF REAL TRUE LOVE. They refuse the Scriptural position that THEY DO NOT POSSESS TRUE LOVE AT ALL, THAT IT IS NOT A PART OF THEM OR THEIR NATURE. They CONTRADICT CHRIST who declares they are DEAD WITHIN, WALKING DEAD MEN.

According to Christ, man does not have true love within his nature. He could search to unlock true love all he wants, it will avail him nothing, he will die and go into eternal ruin. This is the heart of the denial of Satan. Christ says the human soul has no real love within, Satan says: “YEA, HATH GOD SAID?” He then presents the concept that **NATURAL PHILEO LOVE IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, IS DIVINE LOVE, IS DOING WHAT GOD COMMANDED.** This concept has infiltrated the Church totally, for all believers are told to LOVE OTHERS. No attempt is made to DISTINGUISH THE TWO TYPES OF LOVE, AND NO ATTEMPT IS MADE TO TELL PEOPLE THAT THEY MUST ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO FIND AGAPE LOVE.

The concept of Godhood and spiritual death go hand in hand. Spiritual death SEPARATES MAN FROM HIS TRUE CREATOR. God is not even in the MEMORY OF MAN. He looks around and innately knows that there must be a God, BUT WHO IS THIS GOD? Is God simply a FORCE? Is God simply an IT, an impersonal unknowable God? Is God personal, and if so, what kind of person is He? If He is personal, why can't we KNOW HIM? The created beings must also assume the role of God in their new state. They ascend with Satan to their throne in the Holy of Holies. They will, along with Satan now control every aspect of their life. They are a masterpiece of lies and deceptions. Their entire nature is radically altered for all time.

***“And the EYES OF THEM BOTH WERE OPENED.”***  
**(Genesis 3:7)**

The word “eyes” is most interesting, AND IT WILL SHED FURTHER LIGHT ON OUR STUDY OF THE FALL. The word “eyes” is ‘ayin’ and it means **BOTH PHYSICAL EYE AND INNER ESSENCE; THEIR CORE AWARENESS, THEIR CENTRAL AND GREAT “I AM”**. It represents the SEAT OF POWER, THEIR HOLY OF HOLIES. It says that this central spiritual essence was OPENED. The word “opened” is ‘paqach’ and it means **OPEN, TO OBSERVE, TO SEE**. What did they see? The Scripture does not really tell us, except that THEY KNEW THEY WERE NAKED. There came upon them an AWARENESS THEY HAD NOT KNOWN BEFORE.

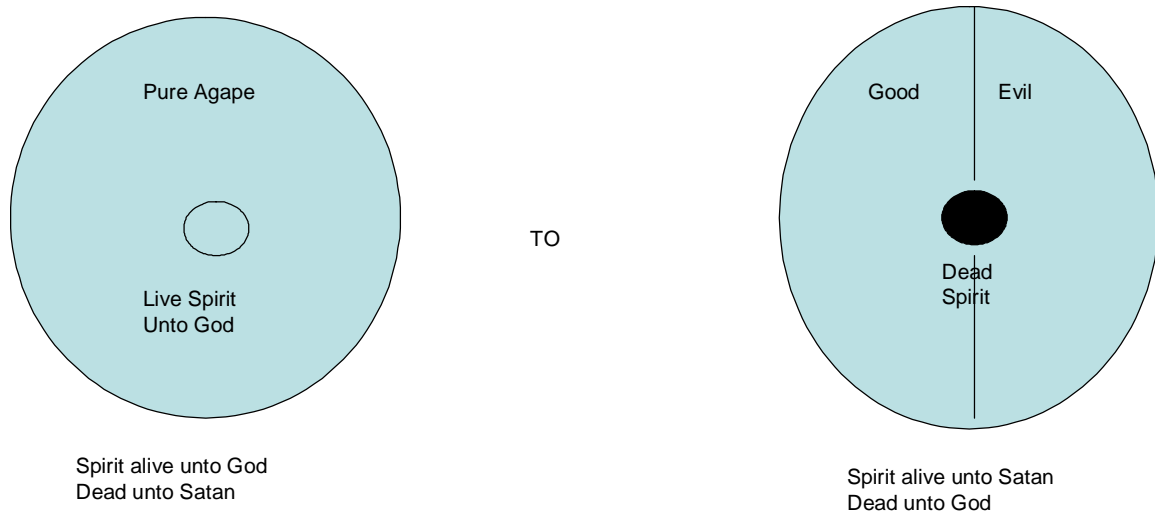
We get a sense of this type of NON-AWARENESS in the animal kingdom. Animals ARE NOT AWARE THAT THEY ARE NAKED. They are not concerned with their nakedness; it is not a part of their make-up. They would not, nor could not comprehend what you were saying to them even if you could communicate with them, FOR IT IS NOT IN THEIR NATURE. Animals will fornicate right in front of anyone if nature calls them to do so. They ARE NOT AWARE. It is only man that is AWARE, AND THAT AWARENESS COMES FROM THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL.

Man suddenly KNEW EXPERIENTIALLY FROM DEEP WITHIN that he was naked and should be clothed. They ingested a very literal and very real knowledge that instantly changed their make-up.

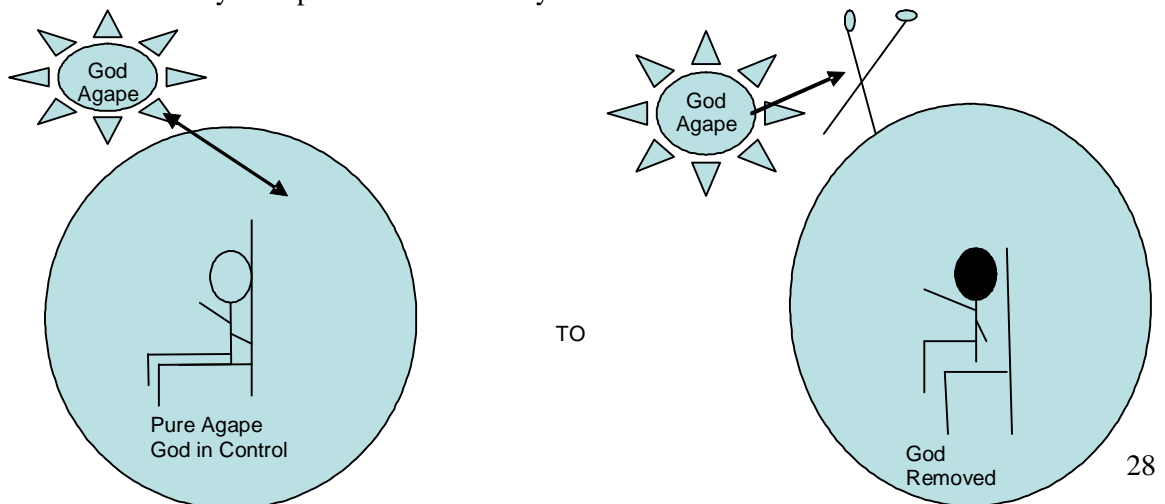
***“For Adam WAS NOT DECEIVED,***  
***but the woman BEING DECEIVED WAS IN TRANSGRESSION.”***  
**(1 Timothy 2:14)**

Here we find that the woman was under DECEPTION. It did not change the matter of TRANSGRESSION. Simply because one is ignorant does not excuse the act of transgression. The penalties of the law fall swiftly upon those who KNOW AND TRANSGRESS AND THOSE WHO DO NOT KNOW AND TRANSGRESS. Modern theology makes a big issue of how Eve was in total disobedience, but the fact really is she was under RANK DECEPTION. This does not make her any less disobedient, but it radically alters THE REFLECTION OF HER DISOBEDIENCE. Adam was not in deception. He knew perfectly well what he was doing was forbidden by God, and he did it anyway. He saw the woman he loved with a pure agape love go into ruin. He elected to be with her. He laid down his life to be with his wife. He went into this thing with his eyes wide open. It was rank disobedience. Now God has a real problem on His hands. Eve was under deception, and Adam did what he did out of pure love.

Both underwent immediate spiritual death as we have shown. They went from a pure agape love essence with no knowledge of good or evil to a creature filled with SELF LOVE, FEAR, AND HAVING A SPLIT PERSONALITY; A KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. In graph form it looks like this:



Notice that the internal core of their being is now BLACK; symbolic of spiritual death to God. There is now no trace of pure agape love, but in its place a dualistic nature with an imperfect phileo love emerges, a NEW CREATION, FOR MAN WAS BORN INTO THE KINGDOM OF SATAN. Satan is now their Father and is now their master and lord. In the next drawing we will show what actually took place within the Holy of Holies of man:



Notice that prior to the fall, THE CREATOR GOD SITS IN UNION WITH MAN IN THE CENTER OF HIS BEING. GOD WAS UPON THE THRONE IN THE HOLY OF HOLIES. After the fall, God is tossed out, and man ASCENDS TO THE POSITION OF GODHOOD on the throne of self. AGAPE LOVE DIES, UNION WITH GOD DIES, COMMUNION IS SEVERED AND MAN IS ALONE. This is the truth that Christ attempted to show to man. It was violently rejected by all except the FEW. From His ministry on earth for over three years of intense teaching, Christ came up with a handful of TRUE BELIEVERS. All the rest had left Him at one time or another. THEY COULD NOT STAND HIS HARD SAYINGS; THEY COULD NOT BARE HIS DOCTRINES.

We will now go direct to Scripture and prove that SPIRITUAL DEATH IS THE LOSS OF DIVINE AGAPE LOVE, AND THIS LOSS OF LOVE IS WHAT DAMNS THE HUMAN RACE. Sin is only the SURFACE MANIFESTATION of this inability to agape love. Christ was most steadfast in His insistence that man was SPIRITUALLY DEAD, AND THAT BECAUSE HE WAS DEAD; HE HAD TO BE REBORN INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD. He had to be born AGAIN, A SECOND TIME.

***“Verily, verily, I say unto thee, EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN AGAIN, HE CANNOT SEE THE KINGDOM OF GOD.***

***Jesus answered, VERILY, VERILY, I SAY UNTO THEE, EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN OF WATER AND OF THE SPIRIT, HE CANNOT ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD.***

***That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is Spirit.***

***Marvel not that I said unto thee, YE MUST BE BORN AGAIN.”***

***(John 3:3, 5-7)***

Why should we have to be born again a SECOND TIME? Why would you have to be born of the Spirit if your spirit is alive to God right now? The answer is obvious: YOU WOULD NOT. Christ is clearly telling us that man must UNDERGO A SUPERNATURAL TRANSFORMATION OF THE SPIRIT, AND HE MUST BE BORN A SECOND TIME, or he cannot enter heaven. If spiritual rebirth is an absolute requirement to enter heaven, then WOULD IT NOT BEHOOVE US TO MOVE EVERY OBSTACLE THAT WE COULD TO ATTAIN IT? Christ gave NO OTHER OPTIONS, NO OTHER WAYS, NO OTHER PATHWAYS, NO OTHER DOCTRINES, NO OTHER THEOLOGIES and NO OTHER ALTERNATIVES WHATSOEVER. Your opinions do not count, your concepts and your ideas do not matter with God: YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN.

***“I am the DOOR: BY ME IF ANY MAN ENTER IN, HE***

***SHALL BE SAVED,***

***AND SHALL GO IN AND OUT, AND FIND PASTURE.”***  
**(John 10:9)**

That is pretty exclusive, for it REMOVES ANY OTHER NAME, ANY OTHER SYSTEM, and ANY OTHER WAY INTO HEAVEN WHATEVER. You either come in VIA THE LIVING CHRIST, WHO HOLDS AGAPE LOVE IN HIMSELF, or you do not enter in. Christ is LIFE. Life is in the essence of the Son: AGAPE LOVE. One can only enter heaven by FINDING CHRIST, FINDING AGAPE LOVE. Scripture proves THE REAL CHRIST IS WELL HIDDEN. He cannot be found unless one searches with all of HIS HEART, SOUL AND MIND. Christ alone holds the keys. Satan of course knows this to be a fact, so all of his efforts will be made in the area of DIVERTING THE SEEKER FROM EVER COMING INTO LITERAL CONTACT WITH JESUS CHRIST. He will offer up a substitute theology that denies ANY SUCH CONTACT WITH THE LIVING CHRIST IS NECESSARY.

Christ is then telling us we need to be REBORN. When one is born, what is granted to him: LIFE. A stillborn is one who is born dead. From God's perspective all human beings are born as STILLBORNS. They are dead to Him and to His kingdom, because they have no AGAPE LOVE LIFE. Life beats in our breast as we go out to explore this world we are brought into. Jesus said, "That which is born of the FLESH IS FLESH". The flesh has a form of life. It is energized and can walk around. Part of the flesh is the human soul. The soul includes the CONSCIOUS AND UNCONSCIOUS MIND. The flesh part of man is very much ALIVE. But the life it has within IS THE LIFE OF THE FLESH, FOR IT IS BORN OF THE FLESH.

Christ then added, "THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE SPIRIT IS SPIRIT". Man may be alive IN THE FLESH, BECAUSE HE IS BORN OF THE FLESH BUT HE IS NOT ALIVE TO GOD IN THE SPIRIT. His spiritual essence, HIS HEART OF HEARTS IS A STONE TO GOD. It is alive only to Satan, energized by a mysterious force of evil, which is why man tends towards strife and violence, and must by discipline and much effort learn to curb the evil within. Christ is separating the two concepts, attempting to explain to us the RADICAL DIFFERENCE BETWEEN FLESH AND SPIRIT. It is in the SPIRIT that man must be reborn, for the flesh is lost, hopeless, totally corrupted, and beyond repair. That is why Jesus said the following:

***“It is THE SPIRIT THAT QUICKENETH;***  
***the FLESH PROFITETH NOTHING:***  
***the words that I speak unto you,***  
***THEY ARE SPIRIT, AND THEY ARE LIFE.”***  
**(John 6:63)**

The flesh, the soul man DOES NOT PROFIT from this spiritual walk, in point of fact, the FLESH, THE SOUL MAN WIL HATE IT. It will run against everything in his nature. THE ISSUE HERE IS SPIRITUAL LIFE, NOT THE LIFE OF THE FLESH, OR THE LIFE OF THE SOUL.

***“GOD IS A SPIRIT: AND THEY THAT WORSHIP HIM  
MUST WORSHIP HIM IN SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH.”  
(John 4:24)***

When Jesus arrived He brought with Him a radical message. MAN MUST UNDERGO A SPIRITUAL REBIRTH. Unless and until a soul had undergone this SPIRITUAL REBIRTH, he could not worship GOD IN THE SPIRIT, NOR IN TRUTH. The word “must” is ‘die’ and it means **NECESSARY, BINDING**, in our language, **ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY, NO OTHER OPTIONS**. It is a direct requirement. We will find that the word truth here is a code word for AGAPE LOVE. Remember when Jesus said you must be born of WATER AND OF THE SPIRIT? Scripture proves water is A CODE WORD FOR AGAPE LOVE. A person MUST BE BORN AGAIN INTO THE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE IN HIS SPIRIT. When that occurs, HE IS BORN OF WATER AND OF THE SPIRIT. HE IS THEN ABLE TO WORSHIP GOD IN THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE WORSHIP. You will see how all of this fits together.

***“Beloved, LET US (AGAPAO) LOVE one another: for (AGAPAO) LOVE IS OF  
GOD:***

***AND EVERY ONE THAT (AGAPAO) LOVETH***

***IS BORN OF GOD, AND KNOWETH GOD.”***

***(1 John 4:7)***

Here then we have another proof of SPIRITUAL DEATH, AND THAT SPIRITUAL DEATH WAS THE LOSS OF THE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE. It is the agape love essence bestowed that IS BEING BORN AGAIN. We would not need to be born again IF WE ALREADY HAD AGAPE LOVE WITHIN OUR SPIRIT, OR OUR SOUL. The facts of these Scriptures prove conclusively that WHEN MAN ATE OF THE TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL HE LOST HIS AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE, HE WAS PLUNGED INTO SPIRITUAL DEATH, AND HE IS DEAD UNTO HIS CREATOR.

There is your answer in all of its beauty and simplicity. We must be born again into PURE AGAPE LOVE IF WE ARE TO ENTER HEAVEN. Christ then, is ABSOLUTE IN HIS CALL: YE MUST BE BORN AGAIN INTO THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT OR YOU CANNOT WORSHIP GOD EITHER IN SPIRIT OR IN TRUTH. That is why the vast majority of Christians are sent away into eternal ruin and loss: THEY NEVER CAME TO AUTHENTIC REBIRTH, THEY NEVER WERE GRANTED DIVINE AGAPE LOVE TO COVER THEIR MULTITUDE OF SINS.

***“Behold what MANNER OF (AGAPE) LOVE the Father hath***

***BESTOWED UPON US,***

***THAT WE SHOULD BE CALLED THE SONS OF GOD...”***



(1 John 3:1)

*“For whom he did foreknow, he also did PREDESTINATE  
TO BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON,  
that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.”  
(Romans 8:29)*

The image and likeness of God is AGAPE LOVE. The image and likeness of Christ WAS PURE AGAPE LOVE. Then it is obvious that the IMAGE WE ARE TO BE CONFORMED TO IS THE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST. In order to be conformed to that image, you must have it BESTOWED TO YOU. Christ said that the only way that would ever happen is if we ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY. If you refuse, you are simply HANDED A DELUSION, A DECEPTION THAT YOU ARE SAVED, THAT YOU HAVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST WHEN IN FACT IT IS A LIE OF LIES.

The whole process of REGENERATION and subsequent SANCTIFICATION is to bring us into a CONFORMING IMAGE IN **AGAPE LOVE**. We are being brought back in a step by step process to our ORIGINALLY CREATED IMAGE, WE ARE BEING BROUGHT BACK TO ADAM AND EVE AS THEY WERE PRIOR TO THE FALL. The process will not be completed until the resurrection/rapture.

We will now offer more proof that man is considered by God to be spiritually dead, with no agape love within his flesh.

*“And you HATH HE QUICKENED, who  
WERE DEAD IN TRESPASSES AND SINS,  
Wherein in times past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to  
THE PRINCE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR, THE SPIRIT THAT NOW WORKETH IN  
THE CHILDREN OF DISOBEDIENCE:  
Among whom also WE ALL had our conversation in times past in the LUSTS OF THE  
FLESH, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; AND WERE  
BY NATURE THE CHILDREN OF WRATH, EVEN AS OTHERS.  
But God, WHO IS RICH IN MERCY, FOR HIS GREAT (AGAPE) LOVE WHEREWITH HE  
(AGAPAO) LOVED US,  
EVEN WHEN WE WERE DEAD IN SINS,  
HATH QUICKENED US TOGETHER WITH CHRIST, (BY GRACE YE ARE SAVED)  
AND HATH RAISED US UP TOGETHER, AND MADE US SIT TOGETHER*

***IN HEAVENLY PLACES IN CHRIST JESUS.”  
(Ephesians 2:1-6)***

Here we have a direct confirmation that ALL MANKIND LIES UNDER THE DOMINION OF THE PRINCE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR (SATAN). He now works in the minds and hearts of all UNREGENERATE MEN AND WOMEN. He is THEIR REAL AND LITERAL FATHER. UNLESS THEY ARE BORN OF GOD, THEY ARE BORN OF THE FLESH, AND THEY ARE UNDER SATANIC CONTROL. Once again we find the element of AGAPE LOVE embedded in the message. We are MADE ALIVE WITH CHRIST, WE ARE QUICKENED WITH HIM. We will study this later, but the word quickened is another word for BEING BORN AGAIN, OR REGENERATION. It is the granting of LIFE, and this life SITS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY.

***“And you, BEING DEAD IN YOUR SINS  
AND THE UNCIRCUMCISION OF YOUR FLESH,  
HATH HE QUICKENED  
TOGETHER WITH HIM  
HAVING FORGIVEN YOU ALL TRESPASSES,***

***blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to  
us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross...”  
(Colossians 2:13-14)***

Again we find another reference to BEING DEAD IN TRESPASSES AND SINS. Could it be God was not fooling when He told Adam that death would follow the minute he ate of the forbidden fruit? Once again with death being mentioned, the necessary counterpart of being BORN AGAIN is mentioned by the word ‘quicken’. Again we find a reference to this QUICKENING TO BEING ‘TOGETHER WITH CHRIST’. If you are together with Christ, could we not say you ARE IN UNION AND COMMUNION WITH HIM?

***“And this is the CONDEMNATION, that LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE IN CHRIST)  
IS COME INTO THE WORLD, AND***

***MEN LOVED DARKNESS (THEIR OWN PHILEO LOVE DARKNESS)***

***RATHER THAN LIGHT, BECAUSE THEIR DEEDS WERE EVIL.”***

***(John 3:19)***

This is a very important verse to prove out spiritual death and the total absence of agape love. Christ says there is but ONE CONDEMNATION. That condemnation is this: AGAPE LOVE CAME INTO THE WORLD IN CHRIST, BUT MEN LOVED THEIR OWN PHILEO LOVE LIGHT WHICH IS DARKNESS TO GOD, and they WOULD NOT come to the light of AGAPE LOVE to have their deeds proved for what they really were. In other words, MEN WOULD NOT

ALLOW CHRIST TO JUDGE THEIR WORKS BY HIS AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. They refused HIS MEASURING POINT FOR TRUE JUDGMENT OF ANY WORKS DONE.

They said THEIR OWN PHILEO LOVE, THEIR OWN NATURAL LOVE RELEASED was just as good as any other love, and therefore THERE WAS NO REAL NEED TO COME. That was the delusion within their minds. They refused to come to Christ and have their deeds REPROVED BY THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. If their so-called works were held up to the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE, THE TRUE LOVE STANDARD OF THE UNIVERSE, their works would pale in comparison. They would be proved liars and hypocrites, their so-called WORKS OF PHILEO LOVE WOULD BE A TOTAL SHAM. They would not face, they could not FACE THIS REBUKE OF THE LORD.

If in fact the natural love of man was TRUE AGAPE LOVE, man would have no need to fear any form of judgment. Mankind however HAS AN INNATE FEAR OF GOD, AN INNATE FEAR OF DEATH, BECAUSE HE KNOWS THERE IS A REAL AND LITERAL JUDGMENT COMING. He pretends he does not know it; he busies himself with a multitude of things in life so he does not have to face it, but face it we all must. WHY NOT FACE IT NOW, GET IT OVER WITH, AND BE RESCUED FROM ETERNAL RUIN BY ONE WHO REALLY LOVES YOU? Why not enter the strait gate now and begin the long walk of the narrow way, and be judged of Christ? It hurts, it is full of anguish, it is full of sorrow, it is full of REPROOF, but at the end, when He who loves you have broken your soul, and has smashed you to a million pieces, HE WILL COME, HE WILL APPEAR UNTO YOU AND GENTLY HOLD YOU IN HIS ARMS AND SAVE YOU FROM ETERNAL RUIN. Do not delay it, for the time is far shorter than you think.

## **MORE PROOF THAT MAN IS SEVERED FROM GOD**

If mankind is in fact DEAD UNTO GOD, and is SEVERED FROM GOD, CUT OFF, and is in fact adrift with no hope and no compass, then we might say that MANKIND IS BLIND TO GOD, THAT HE DWELLS IN DARKNESS, THAT HE KNOWS NOT WHATEVER ANYTHING OF GOD, HE IS DESTITUTE OF ANY KNOWLEDGE OF GOD. If a man is blind, he walks in darkness. The use of the term blind refers to one WHO CANNOT SEE. Because man is DEAD IN HIS TRESPASSES AND SINS, HE CANNOT SEE GOD. HE CANNOT FATHOM GOD, HE IS BLIND TO GOD, AND HE WALKS IN THE DARKNESS OF NO AGAPE LOVE.

***“Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I AM THE LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE) OF THE WORLD: he that FOLLOWETH ME SHALL NOT***

***WALK IN DARKNESS, BUT SHALL***

***HAVE THE LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE) OF LIFE.”***

***(John 8:12)***

Notice how Jesus contrasts the LIGHT to the DARKNESS; notice that He also says that ONE MUST FOLLOW HIM IF THEY ARE TO HAVE THE LIGHT. If they refuse to follow, they

shall not obtain the light, in spite of their claims to the contrary. We have said that LIGHT is a code word for AGAPE LOVE. There are many code words for agape love in Scripture: TRUTH, LIGHT, WATER, SALT, AND MANY OTHERS WHICH WE WILL PROVE OUT TO BE TRUE. John refers to this light, and ties it directly to the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD:

***“This then is THE MESSAGE which we HAVE HEARD OF HIM, AND  
DECLARE UNTO YOU, THAT GOD IS LIGHT,  
AND IN HIM IS NO DARKNESS AT ALL.”  
(1 John 1:5)***

This is pretty blunt and not hard to understand. GOD IS LIGHT. John also said GOD IS AGAPE LOVE. It does not take a MENTAL GENIUS TO FIGURE OUT THAT LIGHT IS AGAPE LOVE. The inner essence of God is what makes Him LIGHT. His inner core essence is PURE AGAPE LOVE LIGHT. GOD IS LIGHT, GOD IS AGAPE LOVE, AND GOD IS LIFE. We find a direct reference to the ABSOLUTE PURITY OF GOD’S AGAPE LOVE, THERE IS NO DARKNESS IN GOD AT ALL. That is a direct reference to the 100% purity of THE DIVINE LOVE OF GOD. Therefore:

## ***GOD IS LIGHT VS MAN IS DARKNESS***

Man lives in darkness to the agape love of God because it was totally lost at the fall. It is not a part of his nature, of his make-up, IT IS A MYSTERY TO MAN, TOTALLY UNKNOWABLE.

***“To OPEN their eyes, and to  
TURN THEM FROM DARKNESS UNTO LIGHT,  
AND FROM THE POWER OF SATAN UNTO GOD,  
THAT THEY MAY RECEIVE FORGIVENESS OF SINS,  
AND INHERITANCE AMONG THEM WHICH ARE SANCTIFIED BY FAITH  
THAT IS IN ME.”  
(Acts 26:18)***

Here again we find a direct reference that man lives IN UTTER DARKNESS, UNDER THE DOMINION AND THE CONTROL OF SATAN. Again we find a reference to LIGHT, which we know is AGAPE LOVE, and that THIS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT WILL BRING THEM TOTAL FORGIVENESS OF THEIR SINS. The ‘many’ who stood before Christ did not have their sins forgiven them. THEY DIED IN THEIR TRESPASSES AND SINS. This

happened because they did not lay hold of agape love light so their sins might be forgiven them. Those who have AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT ARE THE ONLY ONES WHO INHERIT THE KINGDOM. BASTARDS WILL NOT ENTER THE KINGDOM. THE MANY WERE IN FACT BASTARDS, IMPOSTORS, WHO ONLY CLAIMED TO HAVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST, BUT WHO REFUSED TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO OBTAIN IT.

***“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but  
AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES, AGAINST POWERS,  
AGAINST THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS OF THIS WORLD,  
AGAINST SPIRITUAL WICKEDNESS IN HIGH PLACES.”  
(Ephesians 6:12)***

The fight is not against our fellow man, but is instead AGAINST AN UNSEEN AND HIGHLY ORGANIZED ENEMY. Satan has a vast army of demons which are invisible to us, but who control and have dominion over the minds of men, women and children. It is this very FORMIDABLE ARMY that WE MUST FIGHT A BATTLE AGAINST. Satan and his demons have an entire well-organized army that has but one purpose: TO KEEP MANKIND FROM COMING TO THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. He does it by diversion, by deception, by false theology and false doctrine. If one wades through all of that, and begins to walk the narrow way, he will FIND AND ENCOUNTER HAND TO HAND COMBAT OF THE DEMONIC FORCES OF EVIL. God knew this, and so gave the TRUE SEEKER OF CHRIST THE POWER TO DEFEAT UTTERLY THE ENEMY.

The point being that Satan is the CHIEF OF THE SPIRITUAL POWERS OF DARKNESS. His dominion is over the MINDS OF MAN. HE WORKS IN THE CONSCIOUS AND SUBCONSCIOUS MIND, but he works in total secrecy. HE CONTROLS AND MANIPULATES MANKIND TO HIS OWN ENDS; HE WANTS TO BE WORSHIPPED JUST AS GOD IS WORSHIPPED. Mankind is about to enter into the greatest delusion of all: HE WILL WORSHIP SATAN THINKING HE IS WORSHIPPING GOD HIMSELF.

***“Who hath delivered us FROM THE POWER OF DARKNESS,  
and hath TRANSLATED US INTO THE KINGDOM OF HIS DEAR SON.”  
(Colossians 1:13)***

Again we find a reference to DARKNESS. For the one who has undergone true and authentic rebirth, HE HAS BEEN TRANSLATED FROM THE KINGDOM AND DOMINION OF SATAN, OVER TO THE KINGDOM OF JESUS CHRIST. We find the same concept; FROM DARKNESS TO LIGHT, FROM NATURAL LOVE TO DIVINE AGAPE LOVE. The word “translated” is ‘methistemi’ and it means **TO TRANSFER, TO CARRY AWAY, TO REMOVE, TO EXCHANGE**. By what method does God transfer us, carry us out of, remove us from, or exchange us INTO THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN? We already know the answer: **A LOVE TRANSFER, A LOVE CHANGE, THE UPROOTING OF PHILEO LOVE AND THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE.**

At physical birth we are born in sin, or to word it another way, we are born in darkness. We have only the natural PHILEO love within us. Satan holds dominion over our minds, our hearts, and our world. He is invisible, but he is there and in control. The only method Christ gave us to come to the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE is via the strait gate and narrow way. THIS IS THE METHODOLOGY GOD USES, FOR IT BRINGS US TO THE TRUTH OF PURE AGAPE LOVE.

*“But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood,  
an holy nation, a PECULIAR PEOPLE;  
that ye should shew forth the praise of HIM WHO HATH CALLED YOU*

*OUT OF DARKNESS*

*INTO HIS MARVELOUS LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE).  
(1 Peter 2:9)*

Notice that God calls His people peculiar. Why? Because they have this mysterious AGAPE LOVE DWELLING WITHIN THEM. They were called OUT OF THE DARKNESS AND INTO THE LIGHT OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. There is then a TRANSITION OR A TRANSLATION FROM DARKNESS TO LIGHT. Jesus simply called it BEING BORN AGAIN. The vast majority of Christians and all the rest of mankind REFUSE TO COME TO THE LIGHT; THEY REFUSE TO BE JUDGED BY THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. THEY WILL NOT COME OUT OF DARKNESS. They abide in darkness because they reject the counsel AND THE REPROOF OF GOD.

*“But he that hateth his brother is in DARKNESS*

*AND WALKETH IN DARKNESS,*

*AND KNOWETH NOT WHITHER HE GOETH,*

*BECAUSE THAT DARKNESS HATH BLINDED HIS EYES.”*

*(1 John 2:11)*

The word “darkness” in all of these verses is ‘skotos’ and it means **SHADINESS OR OBSCURITY**. The root of the word is ‘skia’ and it means **SHADE OR DARK, OR DARKNESS OF ERROR**. In other words, mankind lives under A TOTAL DECEPTION, A DELUSION. HE LIVES IN SPIRITUAL ERROR, AND **HE DOES NOT REALIZE THAT HE’S GOING INTO ETERNAL DAMNATION**. He does not know where he is going. He has no idea of the horrible fate that awaits him. He is utterly **OBLIVIOUS TO THE REALITY OR NATURE OF HELL**. He has within him A VAIN HOPE that if he is good, and tries to do good in his life, that he will somehow avoid this terrible fate. That is exactly what Satan wants him to think. Satan does not deceive man into eternal ruin because he wants company; he does it because HE HATES JESUS CHRIST AND CANNOT STAND TO LOSE SOULS TO JESUS CHRIST.

If man cannot see where he is going, then we could say he is **BLIND**. We have come full circle. **SPIRITUAL DEATH BROUGHT BLINDNESS AND MAN WALKS IN UTTER DARKNESS**, and has no concept of his eternal fate. Many people die saying they have no quarrel whatever with God. They never profess any belief in Christ; they never profess any of the testimony the Bible requires. They shut their eyes in death only to be rudely awakened to their REAL FATE. It dawns on their souls TOO LATE THAT THEY WERE DECEIVED, AND UNDER A RANK DELUSION. In life they had too much to do to bother reading the Bible. They could not be bothered to study it; to determine if any of what it said was true. THEY FIND OUT THE HARD WAY IT WAS.

***“The LORD OPENETH THE EYES OF THE BLIND:***

***the LORD raiseth them that are BOWED DOWN: the LORD LOVETH THE  
RIGHTEOUS...”***  
**(Psalm 146:8)**

***“Then the eyes of THE BLIND SHALL BE OPENED, and the  
EARS OF THE DEAF SHALL BE UNSTOPPED.”***  
**(Isaiah 35:5)**

***“And I WILL BRING THE BLIND***

***by A WAY THEY KNEW NOT;***

***I WILL LEAD THEM IN THE ‘PATHS’ THAT THEY HAVE NOT KNOWN:  
I WILL MAKE DARKNESS LIGHT BEFORE THEM,***

***AND CROOKED THINGS STRAIGHT. These things will I do unto them,***

***AND NOT FORSAKE THEM.”***  
**(Isaiah 42:16)**

Please read this very carefully. Let the impact of what is being said really sink in to your mind. In this verse we have a reference to BLINDNESS, DARKNESS, AND A ‘WAY’ THEY KNOW NOTHING ABOUT, AND THIS WAY LEADS TO LIGHT. Is that not what Jesus Christ stated in Matthew chapter seven? Did he not INSIST that there was only one WAY? That the way was via A STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY? We will find that this reference to a way is the narrow way, something God laid down before man long before Christ came upon the scene to VERIFY IT.

***“Having their UNDERSTANDING DARKENED,  
being ALIENATED FROM THE LIFE (AGAPE LOVE) OF GOD***

***THROUGH THE IGNORANCE THAT IS IN THEM,  
BECAUSE OF THE BLINDNESS OF THEIR HEART...”  
(Ephesians 4:18)***

Now we are getting very close to the matter. SATAN DARKENS THEIR UNDERSTANDING, and natural man is **ALIENATED FROM THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, WHICH IS THE LIFE OF GOD.** The word “alienated” is ‘apallotrioo’ which root is ‘apo’ and it means **ESTRANGED, SEPARATED, CUT OFF, SEVERED, NOT WITH, A STRANGER, A NON PARTICIPANT.** In short, they do not HAVE OR KNOW ANYTHING about the agape love of God, which is in Christ Jesus. They are blind in their heart; there is an actual and literal DARKNESS AND BLINDNESS TO AGAPE LOVE. The vast majority of Christians were IN LIKE MANNER. THEY DID NOT HAVE ANY REAL AWARENESS OF TRUE AGAPE LOVE. They manufactured a theology that told them they had it. They were IGNORANT, THEY KNEW NOT.

This is another proof of the ABSOLUTELY BLIND AND DARKENED CONDITION OF THE NATURAL FALLEN HUMAN SPIRIT OR HEART. The fall brought total and complete alienation from agape love. Man lives in utter rebellion, and although Christ reconciled God to man, man refuses to reconcile himself to God. He WILL NOT enter the STRAIT GATE and HE WILL NOT WALK THE NARROW WAY. Instead he devises all forms of religions and methods to BYPASS THE CROSS OF CHRIST, TO BYPASS THE REPROOF AND REBUKE OF ALMIGHTY GOD.

***“In whom THE GOD OF THIS WORLD (SATAN)  
hath BLINDED THE MINDS  
OF THEM WHICH BELIEVE NOT,  
LEST THE LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE) OF THE GLORIOUS GOSPEL OF CHRIST, WHO IS  
THE IMAGE OF GOD,  
SHOULD SHINE UNTO THEM.”  
(2 Corinthians 4:4)***

This is yet another proof of the REALITY OF SATAN AND HIS TOTAL DOMINION OVER THE MIND OF MAN. It is literal and it is real. Satan is called the GOD OF THIS WORLD, and mankind worships Satan by means of their many religions, which mankind says ALL LEAD TO THE SAME GOD. They are correct: THEY ALL LEAD TO SATAN, THEY ALL LEAD TO THE GOD OF THIS WORLD. They all lead to eternal ruin and complete eternal loss. The God of this world is NOT the God of the universe. Mankind bows down to SATAN AND CALLS HIM GOD. THE TRUE GOD THEY REFUSE TO WORSHIP, THEY REFUSE TO COMPLY



WITH HIS DEMANDS, AND THEY HATE HIM AND IT SHOWS BY THEIR HOSTILITY TOWARDS THE TRUE GOSPEL OF THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.

Mankind then, because of the fall, because of his loss of divine agape love, IS IN TOTAL BONDAGE TO SATAN. HE IS A SLAVE TO AN INVISIBLE FORCE, A MYSTERY HE CANNOT FATHOM. HE IS LED INTO DEATH AND ETERNAL RUIN. His one chance of escape, his one option to be made free he tosses aside with the wave of an angry hand. So also do the vast majority of Christians. If you approach them with the concept of the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY, they become instantly hostile, for God is not within them, it is Satan that is their true Father, and HIM THEY WILL FOLLOW, AND HIM THEY WILL SERVE.

***“Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he (Jesus) also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might DESTROY HIM THAT HAD THE POWER OF DEATH, THAT IS THE DEVIL (SATAN);***  
***AND DELIVER THEM WHO THROUGH FEAR OF DEATH***  
***WERE ALL THEIR LIFETIME SUBJECT TO BONDAGE.”***  
**(Hebrews 2:14-15)**

All mankind is under the bondage of Satan and of death. There is one that came to deliver you and I. He told you what you must do to be delivered. He told you about the strait gate and narrow way. He told you to be obedient. He warned you that if you refused to “keep His sayings”, that if you refused to obey, **YOU WOULD NOT BE DELIVERED.** We all live in darkness, we all live in PHILEO LOVE LAND, THE LAND OF RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS. We have been told that we must lay hold of **DIVINE AGAPE LOVE, IF WE ARE TO BE SAVED.**

The fall of man was real. Spiritual death was real. Spiritual death resulted in the agape love of God being removed from man, who now walks in spiritual darkness and who is blind to the light of agape love. He is alive in the flesh, but he is dead to God in the spirit. He must, if he is to enter heaven’s gate, **LAY HOLD OF THIS AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE.** Christ is the holder of agape love. WE MUST ALL COME TO HIM ON HIS TERMS. WE MUST BOW TO AGAPE LOVE, FOR IT WILL NOT BOW TO US. We must find out all we can about what Christ means by BEING BORN AGAIN, what He means by THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. OUR ETERNAL DESTINY HANGS UPON OUR CORRECT UNDERSTANDING OF IT; AND THEN BECOMING **OBEDIENT TO THE DEMANDS.**

## DARK LIGHT SERIES FIVE

### LIKE FATHER, LIKE SON LIKE MOTHER, LIKE DAUGHTER

Adam and Eve have now plunged themselves into total spiritual darkness. The pure agape love essence that they were created with has vanished, and their spiritual death will now be passed onto all of their descendants. Many Christians laugh and scoff at the idea that the sin nature of man is passed on via breeding and genetics, but when pressed they can give no valid Scriptural answer. The Bible is very clear and very blunt: **THE SIN NATURE OF MAN IS PASSED DOWN VIA BREEDING, BY THE MALE, BY HIS SPERM.** This will be proven to you as we proceed.

Having now DESTROYED THEIR AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE, AND HAVING PLACED THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL WITHIN THEIR SPIRIT AND SOUL, SATAN HAS NOW GAINED A VICTORY, AND TAKES COMPLETE CONTROL AND DOMINION OVER THE HUMAN RACE. Although mankind is not aware of it, and most Christians reject it, SATAN HAS A REAL, LITERAL AND LEGAL DOMINION OVER THE HUMAN RACE. He controls their minds, their thoughts and their emotions to HIS OWN ENDS.

Millions of Christians do not believe in Satan or in demons, and claim it is just a symbolic way of explaining our evil impulses. Christ on the other hand not only said that Satan was real; He spent a vast amount of time casting demons out of people. Either Christ was a total liar and lunatic for casting out non-existent demons, or He was telling us a literal truth! Christians who make such comments had best do their homework, and had best quit calling their Lord a liar. Had they themselves drawn the SWORD and entered the strait gate and walked the narrow way, THEY WOULD KNOW FOR A LITERAL FACT SATAN AND HIS DEMONS WERE REAL; THEY WOULD HAVE HAD CLOSE AND LITERAL COMBAT WITH THEM.

It is imperative you understand how real and literal this dominion actually is, for it helps explain the mission of Christ, and why He said REGENERATION is imperative and difficult.

*“And the great dragon was cast out, **THAT OLD SERPENT,**  
called the Devil, **AND SATAN,***

***WHICH DECEIVEITH THE WHOLE WORLD...”***

***(Revelation 12:9)***

Was it not the SERPENT that deceived Eve into eating the forbidden knowledge? What does Jesus call him in Revelation? THAT OLD SERPENT, SATAN! The names of Satan are many: THAT OLD SERPENT, THE GREAT DRAGON, THE DEVIL, BEELZEBUB (Matthew 10:25; 12:24), BELIAL (2 Corinthians 4:4), PRINCE OF THIS WORLD (John 12:31), PRINCE OF

THE POWER OF THE AIR (Ephesians 2:1-3), ACCUSER OF THE BRETHREN (Revelation 12:10), THE ENEMY (Matthew 13:39), TEMPTER (Matthew 4:3), THE WICKED ONE (Matthew 13:19,38; John 10:10), ROARING LION (1 Peter 5:8-9), THIEF (John 10:10), FATHER OF LIES (John 8:44), AND SOWER OF DISCORD (Matthew 13:39).

Does it not seem odd to you that the Bible has so many names for a NON-existent entity? It should also be pointed out the Bible does not attempt to prove the existence of Satan, demons or God and His angels. It merely presents the information as a matter of literal fact and truth. If you want proof of both, do as you are told, enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way. You will find literal and experiential proof that all of this is indeed real.

The word “deceiveth” is ‘planao’ and it means to **ROAM FROM THE TRUTH, TO GO ASTRAY, TO BE IN ERROR, TO SEDUCE, TO BE OUT OF THE WAY OF**. The root is ‘plane’ and it means **FRAUDULENCE, ERROR, DELUSION, DECEPTION**. The word for “whole” is ‘holos’ and it means **ALL COMPLETE, ALL TOGETHER, EVERY ONE, THROUGHOUT, EVERY**. Let that sink in your mind a bit. The ramifications are very severe: **EVERY MAN, WOMAN AND CHILD BORN INTO THE HUMAN RACE, IS UNDER A DELUSION, IS IN GRAVE SPIRITUAL ERROR AND IS UNDER A DECEPTION**. That is exactly what this verse of Scripture says boldly. **THIS IS A BLANKET STATEMENT WITH NO EXCEPTIONS WHATEVER**.

Satan is the mastermind behind this delusion. **HE IS HIDDEN FROM VIEW; HE WORKS IN TOTAL SECRECY BEHIND THE SCENES**. All mankind is **SPIRITUALLY DEAD TO GOD BECAUSE THEY HAVE NO PURE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE WITHIN THEM**. They walk in darkness, they are blind, and their God and their Father is Satan. The entire planet earth is ruled over by Satan and his demons, but the worst part of all of this is that the human race is **TOTALLY UNAWARE OF IT**.

***“Wherein in times past ye walked according to the COURSE OF THIS WORLD,  
ACCORDING TO THE PRINCE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR,  
THE SPIRIT THAT NOW WORKETH IN THE CHILDREN OF DISOBEDIENCE.”  
(Ephesians 2:2)***

Satan is called the **PRINCE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR**. He rules the earth and immediate heavens above it. Small wonder the UFO activity concerns itself to the immediate heavens of the earth. UFO’s are real, they are **SATANIC**, and they will play a major role in the **GRAND DELUSION OF THE TRIBULATION PERIOD**. All people **NOT REGENERATED** are called the children of disobedience. Satan is also called a **SPIRIT**. Satan is an **INVISIBLE SPIRIT BEING OF IMMENSE INTELLIGENCE AND POWER**. His spirit **WORKS WITHIN THE MINDS, THE CONSCIOUS AND SUBCONSCIOUS, OR THE SOUL**. The soul is Satan’s playground. He literally enters into and holds the souls of mankind in spiritual bondage. They are in a prison house, chained with no mercy. **IT IS THIS SPIRIT THAT WORKS WITHIN MAN TO KEEP THEM FROM COMING TO A KNOWLEDGE OF THE TRUTH OF JESUS CHRIST, AND PREVENTS THEM FROM BELIEVING PROPERLY**. This very same spirit works in all these false teachers and false prophets, for we found that none of them were **REGENERATED, NONE OF THEM KNEW THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE**.

***“Now is the judgment of this world: NOW SHALL THE  
PRINCE OF THIS WORLD BE CAST OUT.”***

**(John 12:31)**

Jesus refers to Satan as the PRINCE OF THIS WORLD. The word “prince” is ‘archon’, which means ***FIRST IN RANK OR POWER, CHIEF, RULER OR MAGISTRATE***. Satan is called by Jesus the ***highest ranking power on planet earth***. He is the ruler, the number one boss. Now either Christ was telling us the truth, or Christ was a liar. This is verified in Revelation 12 as we saw previously. Jesus is saying that **BY HIS DEATH, SATAN WILL BE JUDGED, and HE WILL BE CAST OFF HIS THRONE**. Why then are we being told by the New Testament writers that Satan **STILL RULES IN THE HEARTS AND MINDS OF ALL UNREGENERATE MEN?** The answer is that Christ did not take possession of the earth then. He will not take possession until 2000 years have passed since His birth.

During that time, Satan is allowed to continue to rule, and he still works in all unregenerate mankind, and will continue to do so right up to the return of Jesus for His Church. Satan retains his non-existent powers by **DELUSION, BY FRAUD, and BY DECEPTION**. He runs the minds of mankind by **DEFAULT**, because man refuses to believe he exists, let alone **CHALLENGE HIS RIGHT TO RULE**. The person who enters the strait gate and begins the walk of the narrow way ***FINDS OUT THAT SATAN HAS A STRONG HOLD OVER THEM, BUT IT IS BY FRAUD***. If the believer will be obedient to Christ, he will be brought through this satanic bondage, and he will **BREAK THE CHAINS THAT BIND HIM**.

It is important to remember however that Satan still rules in the hearts and minds of all those who do **NOT** have **AGAPE LOVE WITHIN**, and he also can do serious damage even to those who are **REBORN**. Jesus acknowledged this power that still holds over man:

***“To open their eyes, to turn them from darkness to light,***

***AND FROM THE POWER OF SATAN***

***UNTO GOD...”***

**(Acts 26:18)**

The power of Satan must still be fully operative for Christ to declare that the Gospel must be preached **AND OBEYED** to accomplish this deliverance! If it all happened at the cross, then there would be no need for any strait gate or narrow way. It would be automatic for everyone on earth! Notice how Christ words it, for He says **THE POWER OF SATAN**. Satan has a very real and literal power. The word “power” is ‘exousia’ and it means ***FORCE, MASTERY, INFLUENCE VIA AUTHORITY, JURISDICTION, RIGHT OR STRENGTH***. Christ came with the plan of the New Covenant so that He might turn **OBEDIENT BELIEVERS** from this tremendous power of Satan over to the **POWER OF GOD**. He wanted to transfer them from ***PHILEO LOVE TO AGAPE LOVE VIA REGENERATION***.

*“But if our gospel be hid, it is **HID TO THEM THAT ARE LOST:***

*In whom the **GOD OF THIS WORLD**  
**HATH BLINDED THE MINDS OF THEM**  
**WHICH BELIEVE NOT,**  
**LEST THE LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE)**  
**OF THE GLORIOUS GOSPEL OF CHRIST,**  
**WHO IS THE IMAGE OF GOD (AGAPE LOVE)**  
**SHOULD SHINE (BE REVEALED) UNTO THEM.”**  
**(2 Corinthians 4:3-4)***

One could write an entire book to explain the depth of this passage, but that which is important to our discussion here is that IT IS SATAN THAT BLINDS THE MINDS OF ALL OF THOSE WHO DO NOT COME TO AN AGAPE LOVE KNOWLEDGE. The light of agape love is NEVER REVEALED TO THEM, THEY DO NOT KNOW WHAT IT IS. The false prophets, the false teachers, the non-overcomers, the evil servants, the foolish virgins all had one thing in common: NO TESTIMONY OF AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. It will be proven later that the word ‘believe’ means REGENERATIVE BELIEF, WHICH IS HEART/SPIRIT BELIEF, not mental or head belief.

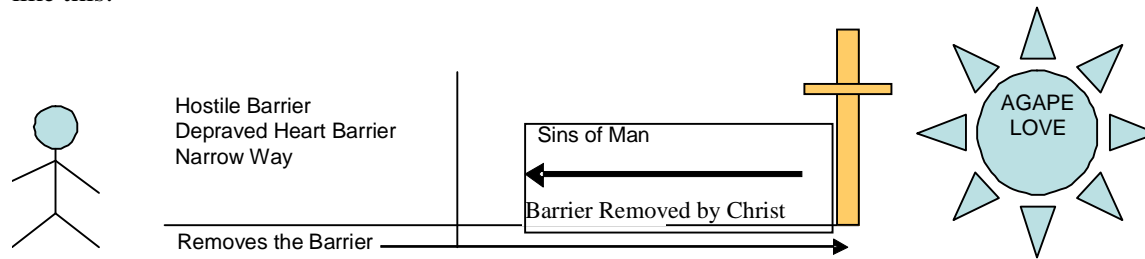
*“Jesus said unto them, **IF GOD WERE YOUR FATHER, YE WOULD (AGAPE) LOVE ME: FOR I PROCEEDED FORTH AND CAME FROM GOD;**  
**neither came I of myself, but he sent me.***

***WHY DO YE NOT UNDERSTAND MY SPEECH?  
EVEN BECAUSE YE CANNOT HEAR MY WORD.  
YE ARE OF YOUR FATHER, THE DEVIL...”**  
**(John 8:42-44)***

Jesus is very blunt here about the issue of agape love and whose Father is who. As we have seen previously, AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THE HUMAN HEART IS THE DIVISION LINE. The important thing here is what Jesus says to them, for it relates directly to the power of Satan who blinds the minds of all those who never become REGENERATED. He says WHY CANNOT YOU UNDERSTAND MY SPEECH? Then He answers His own question: BECAUSE YOU CANNOT HEAR MY WORDS. The word “hear” is ‘akouo’ which means **TO UNDERSTAND WHAT IS BEING SAID**. It is beyond their comprehension to understand Jesus. Jesus links this utter inability to understand DIRECTLY TO SATAN. His very next words imply **THEY CANNOT UNDERSTAND BECAUSE SATAN IS THEIR FATHER, AND HE HAS BLINDED THEIR MINDS.**

Mankind has the “self” which sits upon the throne in the heart of man, and then he must deal with the power of Satan and his demons as well. Both are formidable enemies, which is precisely why Jesus said that THE RIGHTEOUS SCARCELY BE SAVED, which means with GREAT DIFFICULTY. That is why Jesus said we MUST STRIVE TO EVEN ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, for the enemy is not going to let go without a real fight. It is this dominion, this power, and the power of self **THAT ERECTS A BARRIER BETWEEN MAN AND GOD THAT**

**PREVENTS THE RECONCILIATION OF MAN TOWARDS GOD.** It was the work of Jesus that smashed the barrier of SIN THAT GOD ERECTED TOWARDS MAN. We could view it like this:

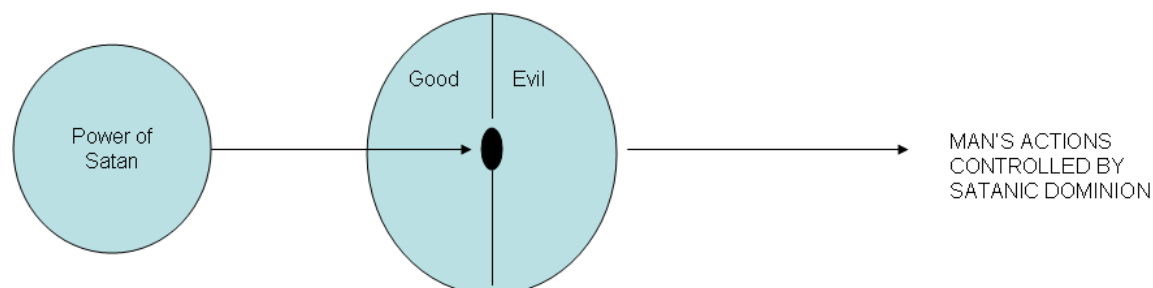


The barrier that is erected in the HEART AND SOUL OF MAN CAN ONLY BE PENETRATED BY ENTERING THE STRAIT GATE AND WALKING THE NARROW WAY. It is a one-way system, and neither God nor Christ can penetrate it. The individual soul MUST PENETRATE IT. NO ONE ELSE CAN. This is exactly why the commands of Christ TO BE OBEDIENT TO HIS COMMANDS, IS YOUR ONLY WAY OF ESCAPE. There is no other way to get through the stronghold of self and Satan. That is why the many perish; they would not raise their sword against self and Satan. Their theology told them they did not have to, their theology told them THEY WERE INSTANTLY RECONCILED TO GOD BY MAKING A DECISION FOR CHRIST. They were taught that the reconciliation of GOD TO MAN, AND MAN TO GOD WAS ACCOMPLISHED BY CHRIST AT THE CROSS. It was not; it was a lie, a deception of Satan. Had they even thought about it for a moment, they would have realized it could not be true, for if that doctrine were in fact true, NO SOUL BORN WOULD EVER BE LOST, FOR IF RECONCILIATION WERE INDEED A TRUTH, HOW COULD ANYONE BE LOST? The warnings of Scripture are positive proof that the reconciliation process of man towards God THROUGH Christ has not yet been accomplished.

Jesus told us to PICK UP **OUR CROSS** AND FOLLOW HIM. He went further to say that IF WE WOULD NOT, **WE COULD NOT BE SAVED.** The death of Christ on the cross EFFECTED A PURCHASE OF THE HUMAN RACE BY CHRIST. IT ALSO BROUGHT ABOUT THE GOD TO MAN RECONCILIATION. The method man must use to reconcile HIMSELF TO GOD is via the CROSS. That is why Paul said that the **POWER OF GOD IS THROUGH THE CROSS, BUT ONLY IF YOU PICK IT UP AND DIE. THE POWER OF LIFE IS IN DEATH. THE POWER OF DEATH IS IN THIS LIFE. IF WE DIE TO THIS LIFE, WE WILL BE RESURRECTED INTO REAL SPIRITUAL LIFE, AND DEAD UNTO SATAN AND THE FLESH! DO YOU SEE?** Christ gave us the WAY WE MUST GO. The vast majority of Christians will not do it. The false prophets of Satan lead them into a deceptive theology **THAT BYPASSES THE CROSS, BYPASSES THE NARROW WAY.** It is the gospel of FAITH ALONE.

God is not able to break the barrier erected by man against Him. He cannot do so because man has FREE WILL, and so He cannot, and will not violate a human soul's FREE WILL. The work of Christ upon the cross DID NOT REMOVE THIS BARRIER OF NATURAL HOSTILITY AND REBELLION OF MAN TOWARDS GOD. It is a tragic and utterly false theology that claims that He did, or that claims there is no such barrier. Man is not automatically reconciled to God by making a DECISION FOR CHRIST. He is not reconciled until HE FINDS LIFE, AND LIFE IS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY. **Believe it, for it is true.**

When Adam and Eve partook of the knowledge of good and evil, their AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE DIED. Self ascended the throne in the Holy of Holies; the center of their being, their spirit, their heart. This is where the great “I AM” dwells in REGAL SPLendor. THE SELF REIGNS SUPREME IN ALL UNREGENERATE MEN. The self, then, becomes a real and literal GOD. Behind the throne of self, in the spirit world dominated by Satan stands SATAN HIMSELF, who rules behind the scene, who rules WITHOUT THE SELF EVEN AWARE THAT SATAN IS THERE. If we could picture this in graph form, it would look like this:



Satan rules in total secrecy. He rules as an invisible and unknown ‘force’ that propels man to his ultimate ruin, and who deceives men into either rejecting the Gospel of Christ, or **MISINTERPRETING THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST**. Satan has a million interpretations of Scripture, all designed to appeal to specific types of people. He works in the conscious and sub-conscious mind, but the owner of the mind is not aware of this activity. The blindness to the truth of the Gospel, the refusal to enter the strait gate, the refusal to walk the narrow way and be reproved of God of the REAL SIN OF MAN has behind it one source: SATAN HIMSELF. Satan literally sends demons to inhibit the understanding of the Bible. Remember the parable of the sower? The very FIRST OBSTACLE that the seeking soul must overcome IS THE DEMONIC OBSTACLE, WHICH PREVENTS THE MIND FROM UNDERSTANDING THE REQUIREMENTS OF THE GOSPEL.

Many very intelligent people who know how to read very well, and who have a tremendous grasp of their language, and know the meanings of a multitude of words, who have college degrees and who operate in a highly sophisticated environment **CANNOT UNDERSTAND THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST**. They pick up the Bible to read it, BUT THEY CANNOT MAKE HEAD NOR TAIL OUT OF IT! Guess who is behind this inability to understand? SATAN AND HIS DEMONS. Has it not ever made you wonder why anyone can read any book at all, but when it comes to the Bible, they **EITHER CANNOT READ IT, OR WON'T READ IT**? Have you ever wondered why all the cursing in the world is against God or Christ? Have you ever heard anyone curse in the name of Satan? Satan is behind the self, telling the self, “You don’t want to read that, you have other things much more important to do”. In complete obedience to Satan, these poor souls eventually run out of time, run out of life and die and are lost forever.

Had they but PICKED UP THE SWORD, AND **FORCED THEIR WAY INTO THE SCRIPTURES** AND HAD OVERCOME THE RESISTANCE OF SELF AND THE DEMONIC FORCES, AND HAD THEY CONTINUED, AND SEARCHED WITH ALL OF THEIR HEART, SOUL AND MIND; JUST AS CHRIST COMMANDED THEM TO DO, **THEY WOULD HAVE FOUND THE TRUTH**. It is also a provable fact that if a Christian, a church attendee, will do as Christ commanded, and begin to search and study the Scripture on their own, THEY WILL IMMEDIATELY RUN INTO A HUGE WALL OF RESISTANCE FROM THEIR

PASTOR, FROM THEIR FELLOW CHRISTIANS, FROM THEIR FAMILY. When the human soul makes the decision that IT WILL FIND THE TRUTH NO MATTER WHAT THE COST, Satan will throw everything he can at that person to **STOP THE SEARCH**. Because the vast majority of pastors and laymen in the Church ARE UNSAVED, AND UNREGENERATE, Satan uses them as his first line of offence.

I have been amazed at how Pastors will tell people that INDIVIDUAL STUDY IS DANGEROUS, and that ONE SHOULD NOT UNDERTAKE AN IN-DEPTH STUDY OF THE SCRIPTURES. It is too complicated, they will say, it is deep, and can only be understood by THE ELITE PASTORATE WHO HAVE ATTENDED SEMINARY. The unwary Christian will accept this advice, and return to BECOME ONE OF THE MANY SENT INTO ETERNAL RUIN. People who will scream and yell that they stand totally upon the Scriptures will turn with a vengeance upon those who honestly begin to search the truth out! Guess who is behind it all: SATAN. Obstacle number two in the parable of the sower is **THE FALSE CHURCH, THE FALSE TEACHERS, THE FALSE LAYMEN WHO CLAIM A SALVATION THEY DO NOT HAVE, THE STONY HEART PEOPLE, WHO NEVER ENTER THE NEW HEART COVENANT TO HAVE THEIR HEARTS REGENERATED WITH AGAPE LOVE.**

***“THE HEART IS DECEITFUL ABOVE ALL THINGS,***

***AND DESPERATELY WICKED:***

***WHO CAN KNOW IT?”***

***(Jeremiah 17:9)***

The word “heart” is ‘leb’ which means **THE CENTER OF ANYTHING**. The center of the human being is the HOLY OF HOLIES, THE THRONE ROOM OF THE SELF. This center is DECEITFUL ABOVE ALL THINGS. The word “deceitful” is ‘aqob’ which means **FRAUDULENT, CROOKED, POLLUTED**. Jeremiah verifies what Christ said about the human heart. IT IS FRAUDULENT, CROOKED, DISHONEST, POLLUTED, EVIL. Notice that this FRAUDULENT HEART IS ABOVE ALL THINGS. The word “above” is ‘ma’al’ and it means **ABOVE, FROM THE TOP, HIGH, VERY HIGH, OR EXCEEDINGLY HIGH, HIGHEST**. The word “all” is ‘kol’ which means **THE WHOLE, EVERY PART OF, ALL, THE ENTIRE THING, COMPLETELY ALL**. In other words, EVERY HUMAN HEART ON EARTH IS **ABOVE ALL THINGS** TOTALLY AND COMPLETELY CORRUPTED.

The word for “desperately wicked” is ‘anash’ which means **INCURABLE, SICK, BEYOND REPAIR, BEYOND ANYTHING WE CAN KNOW**. The word “know” is ‘yada’ which means **OBSERVATION, RECOGNITION**. The human heart and soul **IS UTTERLY CORRUPT, SO CORRUPT IT IS BEYOND REPAIR, BEYOND HELP**. It is so corrupt that it is not OBSERVABLE OR KNOWABLE. It is beyond human ability to understand or know the true state of the human spirit.

The deception, the fraudulent part about the human heart and soul is that IT PERCEIVES ITSELF AS BEING GOOD AND UPRIGHT. This is the deception behind the concept that a sincere person, with a sincere heart will be looked upon with favor by the Lord. **NO PERSON** has a sincere heart. They only think they have a sincere heart. Sincerity has nothing to do with the salvation process. This is because there is no such thing as true sincerity. Salvation is not



predicated upon sincerity, but instead upon **OBEDIENCE TO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST**. The person that IS OBEDIENT, THAT WALKS THE DISTANCE OF THE NARROW WAY **PROVES THEIR SINCERITY OF PURPOSE, NOT THEIR HEART'S SINCERITY**.

This is a vast difference between PURPOSE and being sincere. The road to hell is paved with sincere and good intentions. The many thought they were sincere. They also thought they were sincerely saved. They refused to comply and their so-called sincerity cost them eternal life. **THE HUMAN SPIRIT AND SOUL ARE UTTERLY BLACK**. We will to do and walk in darkness, blind to the TRUTH OF OUR CONDITION. The narrow way is nothing more than how God proves to the human soul **HOW UTTERLY DESTITUTE IT IS, THAT IT IS CORRUPTED BEYOND REPAIR, LOST, HEADED FOR RUIN**. This ESTABLISHES A NEED WITHIN THE HUMAN HEART TO CRY OUT FOR SALVATION. The cry of salvation **MUST BE FROM THE HEART OF HEARTS, FROM THE HOLY OF HOLIES, AND IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH A MENTAL KNOWLEDGE!**

*“For there is not a  
**JUST MAN UPON EARTH,  
THAT DOETH GOOD, AND SINNETH NOT.**”  
(Ecclesiastes 7:20)*

The word “just” is ‘tsaddiyq’ and it means **LAWFUL, RIGHTEOUS**. Remember that Christ sends away the ‘many’ with the words that they were workers of INIQUITY. They were not lawful because they had no agape love in their hearts, therefore they could not satisfy the law of agape love. Their works were done in phileo love, and therefore they were neither lawful nor RIGHTEOUS. That which makes a soul righteous to God is for that soul to be cloaked in the robes of **THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST**. No human soul is ever righteous or lawful. It is THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST BESTOWED THAT MAKES THEM RIGHTEOUS. All men are sinners, and no one does good. That is a very negative statement, hardly a positive Gospel message.

*“For **ALL HAVE SINNED,**  
and come short of the **GLORY OF GOD.**”  
(Romans 3:23)*

There is not ONE RIGHTEOUS PERSON UPON PLANET EARTH. All have sinned, and all come far short of the glory of God. The glory of God is HIS AGAPE LOVE. Glory is another code word for AGAPE LOVE, the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD, AND HIS GLORY COMES FROM HIS ESSENCE: **PURE RADIANT AGAPE LOVE**.

There are many other verses to prove the corruption of man from the fall and the loss of agape love. The primary method of Satan to hide the harsh facts of this utter corruption is via DECEPTION. It will be proven that ALL FALSE DOCTRINE, AND ALL FALSE THEOLOGY CONCEAL THE TRUE NATURE OF THIS CORRUPTION. The deception is of course ALWAYS THE OPPOSITE OF THE TRUTH. Thus:

IF GOD SAYS  
The heart is corrupt  
The heart is evil  
The heart is insincere  
We cannot know the heart  
The heart is arrogant  
The heart is proud

SATAN SAYS  
The heart is not corrupt  
The heart is good  
The heart is sincere  
We can know the heart  
The heart is meek  
The heart is humble

Satan and his false prophets *always CONTRADICT THE LORD*. They will not do it openly, or blatantly, they will do it via doctrinal deception, so that the truth of the real position is not recognized. The human heart is so wicked that it will FEIGN HUMILITY, MEEKNESS, AGAPE LOVE, FAITH AND BELIEF. It does so to prevent THE SELF FROM BEING DESTROYED BY GOD. It will then attempt to DECEIVE THE SEEKER BY A FALSE HUMILITY, A FALSE LOVE, A FALSE FAITH, which is *precisely why Paul said we must come to a FAITH UNFEIGNED AND AN AGAPE LOVE THAT IS UNFEIGNED*.

If indeed the human heart believes it is good, just and righteous, and that is a delusion, then from God's perspective He would say the heart was ARROGANT, PROUD, HAUGHTY. It will not face the TRUTH OF ITS CONDITION, IT WILL NOT FACE THE REPROOF OF GOD TO PROVE THAT IT IS TRUE.

*“And I will punish the WORLD FOR THEIR EVIL,  
AND THE WICKED FOR THEIR INIQUITY;  
AND I WILL CAUSE THE ARROGANCY OF THE PROUD TO CEASE,  
AND WILL LAY LOW THE HAUGHTINESS OF THE TERRIBLE.”  
(Isaiah 13:11)*

The word “arrogancy” is ‘ga’own’ and it means **MAJESTY, PRIDE, PROUDLY, SWELLING, PUFFED UP**. If the whole human race lies under a delusion and a deception then what is the deception? If the real truth is that we are evil, wicked and corrupt, THEN WHAT MUST BE THE DECEPTION? It will of course be the opposite, that man is good, has value, is just and honest. This VIEW IS THE DECEPTION, AND IT SWELLS MAN’S pride and ego. He becomes puffed up over his accomplishments, over his goodness. It must be said that man DOES NOT REALIZE THAT HE IS PROUD, ARROGANT AND PUFFED UP, THEY ‘KNOWEST NOT’. That is what delusion does, that is what deception is.

The narrow way is designed to *UNMASK THIS DELUSION*. If you do not walk it, your so called humility, your so called meekness, your so called goodness is all feigned, not from the heart, but is a trick of the mind. We have millions of Christians who think they know they are evil, who confess a multitude of sins, who cry and wail at the altar, who think they are humble, who think they are meek, but who in reality are *ARROGANT, FULL OF PRIDE, PUFFED UP, AND WHO REFUSE ALL FORMS OF REPROOF*. When convicted by the Holy Spirit, they

claim it is an attack of Satan, and thus “cast out” this evil spirit of conviction and judgment. Indeed, the human heart IS wicked beyond anything we can know.

If the human heart is ARROGANT AND FULL OF PRIDE, AND IS HAUGHTY BEFORE GOD, then we could also say that there would be TENSION BETWEEN GOD AND MAN. God is saying one thing is true, man is claiming just the opposite. There would be violent disagreement between man and God, and this would cause man to be IN TRUTH VERY HOSTILE TOWARDS GOD, BECAUSE GOD HOLDS THE TRUTH, AND MAN WILL NOT FACE THIS TRUTH:

***“Because the CARNAL MIND IS ENMITY AGAINST GOD:  
FOR IT IS NOT SUBJECT TO THE LAW OF GOD,  
NEITHER INDEED CAN BE.”  
(Romans 8:7)***

The word “enmity” is ‘echthra’ and it means **HOSTILITY, HATRED**. This verse of Scripture says very bluntly and clearly that ALL UNREGENERATE (CARNAL) MAN HATES GOD AND IS HOSTILE TO GOD. That means that the vast majority of Christians, who professed they loved Jesus Christ with all of their heart, soul and mind ACTUALLY HATED HIM WITH A PASSION. This is proven by their REFUSAL TO WALK THE NARROW WAY. Jesus said that if we IN TRUTH LOVED HIM, WE WOULD OBEY HIM. The many were UNDER A RANK DELUSION, THEIR LOVE WAS HATRED, and THEIR FRIENDSHIP WITH CHRIST WAS IN FACT HOSTILITY. They were not the friends of Jesus at all; THEY WERE HIS ENEMY. Because both Peter and Christ say the last day church is UNSAVED AND UNREGENERATE, THEN THE LATTER DAY CHURCH IS IN REALITY THE ENEMY OF CHRIST, THE ENEMY OF THE CROSS.

***“As it is written, THERE IS NONE RIGHTEOUS,  
NO, NOT ONE.  
THERE IS NONE THAT UNDERSTANDETH,  
THERE IS NONE THAT SEEKETH AFTER GOD.  
THEY ARE ALL GONE  
OUT OF THE WAY,  
THEY ARE TOGETHER BECOME UNPROFITABLE;  
THERE IS NONE THAT DOETH GOOD,  
NO, NOT ONE.”  
(Romans 3:10-12)***

This is another NEGATIVE REMARK that is not well received by mankind, and especially those that consider themselves RELIGIOUS. These folks go to great lengths to prove their love for the Lord. They do great and asundry works to prove it be true. They sacrifice their time, their money, and their possessions to prove to the Lord that they are in fact RIGHTEOUS. Their religion is all in vain. They are in a GRAND DELUSION, FOR IN REALITY THEY HATE GOD. THEY CANNOT STAND CHRIST, NOR WILL THEY OBEY HIM. They will not accept His method of salvation. They know more than Jesus does. Their arrogance is only exceeded by their stupidity.

This is why Jesus put the cap on the whole human condition when He said that there was only ONE CONDEMNATION: THAT LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE) HAD COME INTO THE WORLD, BUT MAN WOULD NOT COME TO THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE TO HAVE THEIR DEEDS REPROVED. Agape love is the standard of measure God will use against ALL MANKIND. No one is exempt. The unregenerate will have all of their deeds reviewed. Their entire life history will be played back, line by line, act by act, thought by thought. These will be held up to the standard of God for examination to see if they match up to PERFECT AND PURE LOVE. They do not measure up, and thus they are led away into eternal ruin.

The regenerated ones, who have had AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED, have had all their past sins forgiven them. They are covered by the AGAPE LOVE ROBES OF CHRIST. He died on the cross for them, and took their sins out of the way. THEY FOUND THE RANSOM. After regeneration their sins were covered by the same robes of agape love, for **CHRIST EVER LIVETH TO MAKE INTERCESSION FOR THE SAINTS**. They cannot and will not ever come under condemnation, for THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE WAS SETTLED FOREVER BY UNION WITH CHRIST.

Satan blinds men to the simplicity of the Gospel. But simply because it is simple does not make it easy. It is the pride and the arrogance of man that will not allow him to RECONCILE HIMSELF TO GOD. He simply will not face the reproof, the rebuke of God. He will not allow God to tell him that he does not love at all, that he is self centered, evil and corrupt.

So we find mankind now ruined by the fall, SEPARATED AND CUT OFF FROM HIS CREATOR; HIS CENTRAL ESSENCE OF AGAPE LOVE DESTROYED, HE IS ALONE, A SHIPWRECK, ADRIFT ON THE SEA OF DARKNESS. HE HAS NO RUDDER; HE HAS NO LIGHTHOUSE. He is in short utterly alone.

## THE TRIAL OF SIN

Adam and Eve are now under the total dominion of Satan, and now their new nature will spread to the whole human race by breeding.

*“And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begat a son*

**IN HIS OWN LIKENESS,**

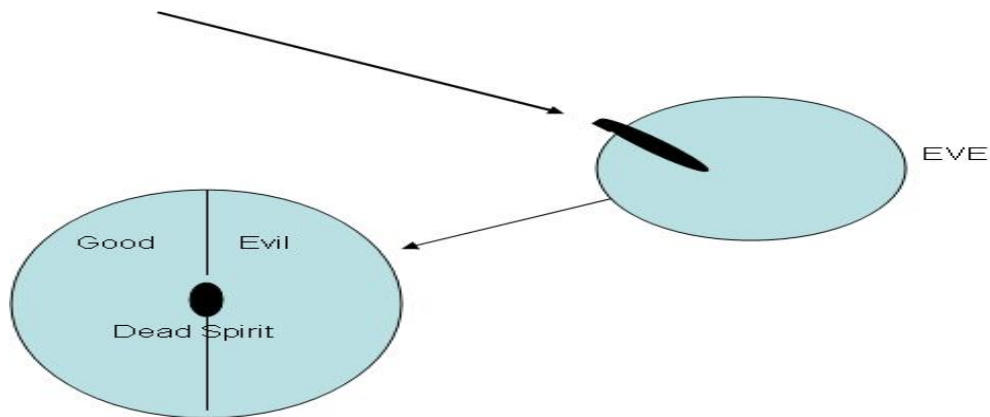
**IN HIS OWN IMAGE...**  
**(Genesis 5:3)**

There is now a pronounced shift away from the *image of God*. Now all children born in the human race will have the **LIKENESS AND IMAGE OF THEIR FALLEN PARENTS**. They will be born with a spirit **DEAD TO GOD, AND THEY WILL HAVE WITHIN THEM THE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL**. All men from henceforth are born into the Kingdom of Satan. They are children of the devil. In graph form it looks like this:



Notice that both Adam and Eve have a dead Spirit to the Lord, and that they both have the knowledge of good and evil. The man's sperm, which carries with it the sin nature, is black, and the woman's egg is white, or pure, **BECAUSE IT DOES NOT CARRY THE SIN NATURE WITHIN IT**. As we go through the Bible you will **FIND REFERENCES TO THE MALE AS THE SIN BEARER BUT YOU WILL NEVER FIND ANY REFERENCE TO THE FEMALE BEING THE SIN BEARER**. There is a valid reason for this: **GOD IS GOING TO USE THE WOMAN TO COME INTO THE HUMAN RACE, AND BY PLACING THE NATURE OF GOOD AND EVIL UPON THE GENETICS OF THE MALE ONLY, HE CAN LATER ENTER THE HUMAN RACE BY A VIRGIN BIRTH AND BYPASS THE ORIGINAL SIN NATURE.**

Every baby born into the human race will have the knowledge of good and evil, which results in spiritual death from the outset, because it takes the male sperm and the female egg to form a new creation. Thus:



The obvious consequence of this union is that the two genetic traits unite and FORM ONE FLESH. The traits of the female and the male unite and NO ONE CAN ESCAPE THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. That is why you can go anywhere in the world, to any tribe of man, to any nation upon earth and you will find THEY ALL HAVE THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL, THEY ARE ALL MORAL CREATURES.

*“Wherefore,*

*AS BY ONE MAN*

*SIN ENTERED INTO THE WORLD,*

*AND DEATH BY SIN; AND SO DEATH*

*PASSED UPON ALL MEN,*

*FOR THAT ALL HAVE SINNED.”*

*(Romans 5:12)*

It was via the sperm of Adam that ADAM PASSED THE SIN NATURE DOWN TO HIS SONS AND DAUGHTERS. The knowledge of good and evil is ALWAYS IN THE SPERM OF THE MALE, NEVER IN THE EGG OF THE FEMALE. If you have trouble understanding this, take three glasses. Fill two of them half full of water. Label one Adam and one Eve. Keep the glass of water that represents Eve pure. Put black ink or food dye into the glass marked ADAM. The darkness of the water represents the knowledge of good and evil. EACH GLASS REPRESENTS EITHER THE SPERM OR THE EGG.

Now pour the sperm into the egg glass and what happens? INSTANT DARKNESS, INSTANT SIN NATURE. It does not matter if the resulting baby is a boy or a girl, THEY WILL HAVE WITHIN THEIR SPIRIT AND SOUL THE SIN NATURE. There will be NO DIVINE AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THAT HEART. The male sperm ALWAYS, ALWAYS CARRIES WITH IT THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. The female egg does not carry it at all; it could not,

for if it did, THERE WOULD BE NO WAY TO REDEEM MANKIND. WE WOULD HAVE BEEN ETERNALLY LOST.

Notice that it was BY ONE MAN THAT SIN ENTERED INTO THE HUMAN RACE. By this method, because humans reproduce by procreation, THEN THE SIN NATURE WILL BE PASSED DOWN BY THE MALE INTO THE ENTIRE HUMAN RACE. No one upon planet earth is exempt!

*“Therefore as BY THE OFFENCE OF ONE (ADAM)*

*JUDGMENT CAME UPON ALL MEN TO CONDEMNATION...”*

*(Romans 5:18)*

All men are under condemnation because all men have the knowledge of good and evil. Because all men have the knowledge of good and evil, NO ONE HAS AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THEM. Because they do not have agape love within them, they cannot fulfill the LAW OF AGAPE LOVE, THUS THEY ARE ALL CONDEMNED! The fall sets up a chain reaction that damns the entire human race for ever. *SPIRITUAL DEATH IS PASSED UPON ALL MEN, THEREFORE ALL WALK IN DARKNESS, ALL ARE BLIND, AND ALL DESPERATELY NEED TO BE DELIVERED!* Sin being universal, condemns the entire human race.

## THE RESULTS OF THE FALL

*“And they (Adam and Eve) heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife HID THEMSELVES FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE*

*LORG GOD AMONGST THE TREES OF THE GARDEN.*

*And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou?*

*And he said, I heard thy voice in the GARDEN, AND I WAS AFRAID, BECAUSE I WAS NAKED; AND I HID MYSELF.*

*And he said, WHO TOLD THEE THOU WAST NAKED?  
Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?*

*And the man said, THE WOMAN WHOM THOU GAVEST TO BE WITH ME, SHE GAVE ME OF THE TREE, AND I DID EAT.*

*And the LORD God said unto the woman, WHAT IS THIS THAT THOU HAST DONE?  
And the woman said, The serpent BEGUILED ME, AND I DID EAT.*

(Genesis 3:8-13)

There are several things you have to notice here. First, the UNION AND THE COMMUNION WITH GOD PRIOR TO THE FALL WAS INTERNAL, OF THE SPIRIT. Now God is EXTERNAL, communicating to them, as we would talk to a neighbor. SPIRITUAL DEATH SEVERES ALL INTERNAL UNION WITH THE CREATOR. God must now deal via EXTERNAL MEANS.

Notice what is said: 'I WAS AFRAID; I HID MYSELF; SHE DID IT, THE SERPENT DID IT'. There is **NO RECORD OF FEAR PRIOR TO THE FALL**. Fear is one of the first effects of the fall. All men from now on will live in fear, and in spite of their protests to the contrary, their primary fear will be a fear of DEATH. It is yet another proof of the **LOSS OF AGAPE LOVE, FOR AGAPE LOVE DOES NOT KNOW FEAR**:

*"There is NO FEAR IN (AGAPE) LOVE;*

*BUT PERFECT (AGAPE) LOVE CASTETH OUT FEAR:*

*BECAUSE FEAR HATH TORMENT.*

*HE THAT FEARETH IS NOT MADE PERFECT IN (AGAPE) LOVE."*

**(1 John 4:18)**

Fear is placed into the human heart by Satan. Satan fears God and hates God. His spirit sits behind the throne of the great "I AM" of fallen man. The innate fear of death is in reality a fear of **IMPENDING JUDGMENT AND DESTRUCTION**. Satan also fears this coming judgment and destruction. He knows it is near, even at the door. Thus unregenerate man is fearful, even if he will not admit it. The next feature is the SHIFTING OF BLAME. Unregenerate man is a master AT SHIFTING THE BLAME TO OTHERS. He may admit to wrong, but he will very rarely admit HE WAS WRONG. It is usually someone else that is wrong. Mankind innately knows that IF HE IS TO BLAME, PUNISHMENT WILL COME. THE EASY WAY OUT; SHIFT THE BLAME; FIND A SCAPEGOAT, BLAME SOMEONE OR SOMETHING ELSE.

Fear and guilt bring blame shifting. This in turn is an attempt to JUSTIFY ONESELF. IF YOU WERE NOT AT FAULT, THEN YOU ARE JUSTIFIED BY YOUR ACTIONS. Unregenerate men must at all costs **JUSTIFY THEMSELVES, THEIR EXISTENCE AND THEIR ACTIONS**. In truth, man has no justification whatever. All mankind lives because of the grace and mercy of God. The very definition of grace is UNMERITED FAVOR. The true believer in Christ, who has walked the narrow way, **KNOWS HE HAS NO JUSTIFICATION WHATEVER, HE WAS SAVED ONLY BY THE GRACE OF CHRIST**. This knowledge is one aspect of entering into the 'rest' of the Lord.

There can be no question then the Bible claims that ALL MEN ARE IN BONDAGE TO SATAN, that they are prisoners, chained to their nature, unable to escape.



***“THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME, BECAUSE HE HATH ANOINTED ME TO  
PREACH THE GOSPEL TO THE POOR;  
HE HATH SENT ME TO HEAL THE BROKENHEARTED,  
TO PREACH DELIVERANCE TO THE CAPTIVES,  
AND RECOVERING OF SIGHT TO THE BLIND,  
TO SET AT LIBERTY THEM THAT ARE BRUISED.”***

**(Luke 4:18)**

Jesus then obviously considers mankind to be **POOR, BROKENHEARTED, CAPTIVES, BLIND AND BRUISED.** Because of genetic and DNA codes, no human being escapes the clutches of Satan and his demons. They can deny it, they can ignore it, they can invent a million ways in an attempt to get around it, but it is all TO NO AVAIL. The world's governments can cry against it, they can scream that such a gospel is hateful and intolerant, the UN can legislate to silence this message, but when death comes their foolishness is revealed, and they spend forever in the deepest of regrets, but unable to extricate themselves, for they **DENIED THE ONLY NAME UNDER HEAVEN BY WHICH THEY MIGHT HAVE BEEN SAVED.** Forever is a long time for a few years of foolishness.

It should now be apparent to you why Jesus Christ was born of a literal and very real virgin. It is simply one of the absolute requirements of KINSMAN-REDEEMER LAW. God placed the fallen nature upon man because HE FOREKNEW HOW HE WAS GOING TO EXTRICATE MAN FROM HIS PREDICAMENT. It would all be perfectly legal, in total compliance with universal law. Just as Satan won mankind by legal means (albeit unscrupulous), God likewise outsmarted Satan at his own game. By bypassing the tainted sperm of man, and by coming through the pure egg of the woman, God could enter the human race, via the womb of the woman, have human blood in His veins, be a real human being; and yet in bypassing the sin nature, be of pure AGAPE LOVE, A SECOND ADAM. Wholly of God, wholly of man, **THE GOD MAN.**

## **THE REAL NATURE OF SIN**

You have now seen how by the genetics and DNA coding within man that the knowledge of good and evil spreads to the entire race of man. Man is in total bondage, totally unable to extricate himself by the act of his original parents. God has a major problem on His hands; Eve fell because of DECEPTION AND FRAUD, and Adam because of LOVE FOR HIS WIFE. It would be totally against God's AGAPE LOVE NATURE to abandon mankind, seeing that it was God Himself that put the tree of knowledge in the garden in the first place.

Many people do not understand why God would do such a thing. Why would He put a tree that had such devastating results within the reach of man, command him not to eat of it, knowing all the while he would, and be plunged into eternal ruin? It does not seem on the surface to be an act of love. The answer is two fold.

1. The very nature of agape love requires **PRESENTATION OF ALL TRUTH.** By God presenting the knowledge to man, and placing it within his reach so he could, if he chose to

partake of it, GOD FULFILLS THE FIRST REQUIREMENT OF AGAPE LOVE. God did not withhold or lie to mankind whatsoever. He presented this to man and told him what it was, and also **WARNED HIM NOT TO EAT OF IT, LEST HE DIE**. He then went a step further: **HE COMMANDED THEM NOT TO EAT OF IT**. It was a direct order. If God had not presented this knowledge, the so-called FREE WILL OF MAN WOULD HAVE BEEN A JOKE. The knowledge of good and evil is a spiritual knowledge, and as such IS THE OPPOSITE SIDE OF GOOD.

If man was not presented this knowledge, of what choice does man have? In reality he has none, and is not a free will agent, he must remain in AGAPE LOVE FOR IT IS HIS ONLY NATURE. God fulfills all requirements that agape love demands. THE LOVE OF GOD IS FAR DIFFERENT THAN THE PHILEO LOVE OF MAN. It will present TOTAL TRUTH, and further, IT WILL EXPOSE YOU TO IT.

2. We must remember that God has lost one third of His created angels by this time. It is my belief that God is going to get back what He lost, and He is doing it via the HUMAN RACE. This is a test upon mankind, to see WHO WILL AND WHO WILL NOT OBEY GOD AND HIS COMMANDS. The entire system of salvation is nothing more than a test of OBEDIENCE. Anyone who has entered the strait gate and narrow way KNOWS AND WILL KNOW FOREVER WHAT EVIL IS, WHAT SIN IS, WHAT DEATH IS, WHAT SEPARATION FROM GOD IS. That will be forever engraved upon his spirit. **THERE WILL NEVER BE ANOTHER REBELLION**. God is insuring that by this process of salvation, the few that He gets out of the many ARE NEVER GOING TO BE REBELS. I believe the FEW represent the same number as were lost in the original angelic rebellion in eternity past. When that number is completed, the program is closed forever.

We now know that all mankind is lost, blind and lives in darkness. But what is SIN? You will hear preachers speak of sin. They tell you that sin is ANY TRANSGRESSION OF GOD'S LAW. That is an absolute truth. Lying, stealing, cheating, adultery, fornication, drug use, etc. are all sins listed in the Bible. Jesus had quite a list of things that He termed sin:

***“But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.***

***For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:***

***These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.”***

**(Matthew 15:18-20)**

This pointed comment of Christ shows that it is THE HEART, THE VERY CENTER OF A MAN THAT IS DEFILED. It is the inner heart of man that is wicked and evil, and from that core springs all of his sins. It is the ‘SELF’ that sits upon the throne, and which demands to be satisfied by its various wants and desires. If we desire sex, we set about to find someone to satisfy us in that department. If we desire to be rich, we set out to accomplish that. If we desire things, and we cannot afford them, we steal them. If we hate a neighbor for some reason, and have a chance to ‘get even’, we indulge in false witness. It is the inner heart’s desires that prompt us to

sin. SIN BEGINS IN THE INNER HEART, EXPRESSES ITSELF IN THE CONSCIOUS MIND, IS THEN ACTED UPON AND SIN IS THEN BORN.

The word “heart” here as used by Jesus is ‘kardia’ and it means **THE INNER WELLSPRING OF EXISTENCE, THE SEAT OF LIFE, THE CORE, THE CENTER OF BEING**. It is from this core, this inner seat that our darkness and our blindness ORIGINATE FROM. We have found that the inner core of being was radically altered by the fall from pure agape love. WE WENT FROM SELFLESSNESS TO SELFISHNESS. We went from UNCONDITIONAL LOVE TO CONDITIONAL LOVE. Scripture tells us that at the fall of man, the INNER SPIRIT AND THE SOUL WERE WELDED TOGETHER IN A NEW FORM OF EVIL. They combined, and the SOUL MAN, THE SENSE MAN, THE FLESH BEGAN TO REIGN SUPREME.

This aspect of the fall is very important to comprehend, for man was not created that way. He was created so that THE SPIRIT, THE INNER CORE WOULD RULE THE SOUL. In other words, the heart of man, the spirit, WOULD RULE OVER THE SUBCONSCIOUS AND CONSCIOUS MIND. When the fall occurred, the very reverse became true; HE BECAME A SENSE CREATURE, A SOUL CREATURE, CAPTURED BY HIS BODY AND THE DESIRES THEREOF. His spirit became only the seat of lusts and desires. THE GREAT ‘I AM’ WAS GOING TO DO WHATEVER IT HAD TO DO TO SATISFY THE SOUL AND BODY. They acted in union in their many crimes.

At the fall, the SPIRIT ESSENCE OF AGAPE LOVE WAS LOST, and the spirit fell under the dominion of the soul, and the soul fell under the dominion of the body. The heart of man became united with his soul in evil, forged a union, and became AS ONE. Man became a prisoner of SENSE KNOWLEDGE, SOUL KNOWLEDGE. MAN BECAME A SOUL MAN. Everything a man knows about life comes through the five senses. He learns through his sense knowledge, and his brain takes in and digests and catalogues the millions of inputs it gets each day. This memory bank grows over time, and as a computer, mankind draws upon his EXTENDED MEMORY just as a computer draws from extended memory. He places all his inputs into his computer brain, and draws upon them in the future.

To fallen man, HIS SOUL AND HEART OR SOUL AND SPIRIT ARE ONE UNIT. There is no division. Thus as he thinks SO IS HE. He is, however under a delusion, for THE WILL OF HIS MIND IS NOT THE WILL OF HIS HEART. An example of the truth of this is for you to attempt to give up a well-entrenched habit. YOUR CONSCIOUS WILL DECIDES TO DROP THIS CERTAIN HABIT. You simply will to drop it. You will immediately run into a brick wall, a wall of resistance that is very powerful. That wall of resistance is the INNER WILL WHICH DOES NOT WISH TO GIVE THE HABIT UP. By sheer willpower you can FORCE THE INNER WILL TO CAVE IN, but it is a very difficult fight.

This resistance to ANY CHANGE WHATEVER FROM THE STATUS QUO is because of the conflict **BETWEEN THE MIND WILL AND THE SPIRIT/HEART WILL**. It will be proven that your CONSCIOUS MIND’S WILL AND HEART HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH YOUR INNER WILL AND HEART. Scripture proves that the journey from your mind and outer heart to your inner heart is a LONG AND PAINFUL JOURNEY, and it is called the narrow way.

This is a crucial key to understanding the deception of the ‘many’ who were positive they were saved and regenerated but they were not. Scripture proves that a man must BELIEVE FROM HIS INNER HEART. The inner heart is the INNER CORE SPIRIT OF MAN, THE VERY CENTER OF BEING, THE HOLY OF HOLIES OF HIS TEMPLE. The word of God, if allowed to act, WILL LITERALLY TEAR APART AND DIVIDE ASUNDER THE SOUL AND THE SPIRIT

THAT WERE WELDED TOGETHER AT THE FALL OF MAN. This tearing apart, this dividing asunder of the soul and spirit is done VIA THE NARROW WAY. God must SEPARATE THE TWO, DIVIDE THEM, RIP THEM ASUNDER, BECAUSE IN REGENERATION HE ONLY REGENERATES THE SPIRIT OF MAN, NOT HIS FLESH. The knowledge of good and evil still remains after regeneration. The flesh is utterly corrupt, which is why the Bible says NO FLESH SHALL ENTER HEAVEN.

***“For the Word of God is QUICK, AND POWERFUL, AND SHARPER THAN ANY TWOEDGED SWORD,***

***PIERCING EVEN TO***

***THE DIVIDING ASUNDER OF SOUL AND SPIRIT,***

***AND OF THE JOINTS AND MARROW,***

***AND IS A DISCERNER OF THE THOUGHTS***

***AND INTENTS OF THE HEART.”***

***(Hebrews 4:12)***

The Word of God has a purpose: IT IS TO BRING THE SOUL THROUGH THE STRAIT GATE AND AS HE WALKS THE NARROW WAY, GOD LITERALLY SEVERS THE SOUL AND THE SPIRIT. This is done via the agency of the Holy Spirit, which is sent to CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT, which we shall explain later in this series. This process is very painful, which is why Christ used the term ‘narrow’, which as you know means full of ANGUISH, PRESSURE, TRIBULATION AND TROUBLE. The dividing asunder of the soul and the spirit is of absolute necessity so that God can REGENERATE THE DIVIDED SPIRIT BACK TO ITS ORIGINAL CONDITION BEFORE THE FALL. The flesh part of man, that is the soul and the body, beyond salvation as they are now, which is why they undergo radical changes at the resurrection/rapture.

Do not spiritualize the above verse away, for it is another description of the narrow way. The many refused this process, though they quoted from this verse often, never realizing that it had such a literal meaning. The wedding of the soul with the spirit at the fall must be reversed. It is part and parcel of the healing process of God. A sick patient often has to undergo radical surgery before he can recover and be healed. The thrust of all salvation and regeneration is TO THE CORE HEART OF MAN, NOT THE SOUL MAN, THE SENSE MAN. The many, because they refused the narrow way, NEVER UNDERSTOOD that the inner heart is not the soul heart. They honestly thought that their MENTAL DECISION FOR CHRIST BROUGHT THEM INTO A INNER HEART UNION. It was a total delusion.

This process must be endured by every real believer. This process is necessary because of the knowledge of good and evil within. As stated before, Christ does not alter in any way the knowledge of good and evil at regeneration, for the thrust of regeneration is NOT THE SOUL, BUT THE SPIRIT. It is the SPIRIT that profits, said Jesus, the flesh does not profit at all. By severing the soul, and its knowledge of good and evil, and then REGENERATING ONLY THE

SPIRIT, CHRIST CAN INDWELL THE BELIEVER AND BE UNTOUCHED BY THE GOOD AND EVIL KNOWLEDGE OF THE SOUL.

Because God CANNOT RESIDE with EVIL, and because AGAPE LOVE IS PURE LOVE, then CHRIST DIVIDES ASUNDER THE SOUL AND SPIRIT, SO THAT THEY ARE SEPARATE, DIVIDED, TWO UNITS, TWO ENTITIES. That is why Paul referred to THE OLD MAN AND THE NEW MAN. The inner man and the outer man: THE SPIRIT AND THE SOUL. The inner man is a NEW CREATION, AND IN THAT NEW CREATION GOD POURS THE WINE OF AGAPE LOVE:

***“And no man putteth NEW WINE into OLD BOTTLES;  
else the NEW WINE will BURST THE BOTTLES,  
AND BE SPILLED, AND THE BOTTLES PERISH.***

***BUT NEW WINE  
MUST BE PUT INTO  
NEW BOTTLES;  
AND BOTH ARE PRESERVED.”  
(Luke 5:37-38)***

You must understand what this parable means, for wine is used here as a code word for agape love, the SPIRIT OF CHRIST. This parable goes hand in hand with the DIVIDING ASUNDER OF THE SOUL AND THE SPIRIT. It explains what Christ is speaking about. It also proves what Christ meant when He said that we must worship God in SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH. The NEW WINE IS THE NEW COVENANT, AND THE NEW COVENANT IS THE AGAPE LOVE HEART OR SPIRIT. The BOTTLE IS THE SPIRIT BODY ITSELF. Man has a SPIRIT BODY, just as he has a physical body.

The spirit body of man IS ALIVE UNTO SATAN. Jesus calls it THE OLD BOTTLE. You are not to pour the new wine of agape love into the OLD SPIRIT BODY, FOR IT WOULD NOT BE ABLE TO HOLD IT, IT WOULD BURST, AND THE ENTIRE MAN WOULD BE INSTANTLY KILLED AND PERISH. Jesus says we MUST OBTAIN FIRST A NEW BOTTLE. He said that we must be born OF THE SPIRIT. Through the process of the narrow way, the OLD BOTTLE IS DESTROYED, FOR THE OLD BOTTLE CONTAINS PHILEO LOVE, OR NATURAL LOVE. It is not fit for the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.

Under the intense rebuke and reproof of God via the conviction of the Holy Spirit of sin, righteousness and judgment, the OLD BOTTLE AND THE OLD WINE ARE REMOVED, DESTROYED, DONE AWAY WITH. At regeneration, A NEW BOTTLE IS CREATED, AND A NEW MAN IS CREATED. The process is a LITERAL SEVERANCE FROM THE SOUL, WHICH IS TARNISHED WITH THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. This is a necessary part of the creation of the NEW SPIRIT MAN. Jesus then says that WE POUR THE NEW WINE INTO THE NEWLY CREATED BOTTLE. Remember when Jesus said we must worship in SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH? The SPIRIT MAN IS RESURRECTED FIRST, THEN THE TRUTH IS Poured INTO IT. The truth that sets us free is AGAPE LOVE.

After Jesus has resurrected the dead spirit man into a new creation, HE POURS THE WINE OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, INTO HIS NEW BOTTLE! That way,

says Jesus, BOTH ARE PRESERVED. Jesus said that NEW WINE MUST BE Poured INTO NEW BOTTLES. It is imperative. The word “must” here is ‘dei’ which means **NECESSARY, BINDING**. It is an absolute requirement. When Jesus said we must be born of the SPIRIT AND OF WATER, He was saying the identical same thing in a different way, for water is a code word for agape love.

The many who stood before Christ rejected DID NOT UNDERSTAND THE VAST DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THEIR SOUL HEART AND THEIR INNER MOST CORE HEART. They thought their decision for Christ was a complete and total heart decision, when in fact it was only a soul decision. They never obtained a NEW BOTTLE, AND THEY NEVER OBTAINED THE NEW WINE.

## **SIN AND THE HEART OF MAN**

We have shown you where Jesus claims the inner core heart of man is where the actual sin resides. It is this hidden nature of man that gives him his sin problems. Because the heart and soul of unregenerate man are welded together, the two combine to forge a powerful enemy of God. The reason we sin then lies at the very core of our being, we are born into it. It is in the HOLY OF HOLIES OF THE HEART WHERE THE SIN NATURE ORIGINATES. It comes from there because there is NO DIVINE AGAPE LOVE THERE. The old bottle and the old wine of phileo love or CONDITIONAL LOVE drive man to sin.

The sins listed by Jesus are ONLY THE SURFACE MANIFESTATION OF A MUCH DEEPER PROBLEM. Man sins because he WANTS THINGS. It is the GREAT ‘I AM’ OF SELF that demands satisfaction of the desires. This is nothing more than SELF LOVE. The concept is identical for a long list of sins. Self-love is the primary root culprit, and SELF LOVE, OR CONDITIONAL LOVE IS THE OLD WINE THAT MUST BE DESTROYED. Self-love is the diametric opposite of the agape love of God. The agape love of God denies self for the good of others. The two concepts are MUTUALLY EXCLUSIVE, DIAMETRIC OPPOSITES. They are not compatible.

If agape love is to come to the heart, and it is the opposite of self love, or the opposite of the self that resides on the throne, then WHICH ONE HAS TO LEAVE FOR CHRIST TO ASCEND TO HIS RIGHTFUL PLACE ON THE THRONE? Phileo love must die, it must be replaced with a stronger pure love: AGAPE.

It is then this self that sits upon the throne and plays God that dictates all of our “I wants”. It goes from “I want” to “I will” and then DOES IT. Sin always begins in the heart of man:

*“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these;*

***ADULTERY, FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS, LASCIVIOUSNESS,***

***IDOLATRY, WITCHCRAFT, HATRED, VARIANCE, EMULATIONS, WRATH, STRIFE, SEDITIONS, HERESIES,***

***ENVYINGS, MURDERS, DRUNKENNESS, REVELLINGS AND SUCH LIKE: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, THAT THEY WHICH DO SUCH THINGS SHALL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”***  
**(Galatians 5:19-21)**

***“The fool hath said in his heart, THERE IS NO GOD. Corrupt are they, and have done ABOMINABLE INIQUITY: THERE IS NONE THAT DOETH GOOD.***

***God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God.***

***Every one of them is gone back: THEY ARE ALTOGETHER BECOME FILTHY; THERE IS NONE THAT DOETH GOOD, NO, NOT ONE.”***  
**(Psalm 53:1-3)**

Such then is the nature of fallen man. He wars, he fights, he kills, he rapes, he steals and in all of it he attempts to justify himself. It is a lie of lies, a delusion of delusions. MAN IS EVIL TO THE CORE CENTER OF HIS HEART. HE IS CORRUPT THROUGH AND THROUGH.

***“This know also, THAT IN THE LAST DAYS PERILOUS TIMES SHALL COME.***

***For men shall be LOVERS OF THEIR OWN SELVES, COVETOUS, BOASTERS, PROUD, BLASPHEMERS, DISOBEDIENT TO PARENTS, UNTHANKFUL, UNHOLY,***

***WITHOUT NATURAL AFFECTION, TRUCEBREAKERS, FALSE ACCUSERS, INCONTINENT, FIERCE, DESPISERS OF THOSE THAT ARE GOOD,***

***TRAITORS, HEADY, HIGHMINDED, LOVERS OF PLEASURE MORE THAN LOVERS OF GOD.***

***“But EVIL MEN AND SEDUCERS SHALL WAX WORSE AND WORSE, DECEIVING AND BEING DECEIVED.”***  
**(2 Timothy 3:1-4,13)**

Speaking of the conduct of all of us prior to coming to a knowledge of the Lord IN TRUTH, we find the following example of UNREGENERATE MEN:

***“For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.***

***But AFTER THAT THE KINDNESS AND (AGAPE) LOVE OF GOD OUR SAVIOUR TOWARD MAN***

**APPEARED,**  
*not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to HIS MERCY HE*  
**SAVED US,**

***BY THE WASHING OF REGENERATION, AND  
RENEWING OF THE HOLY GHOST.”***  
(Titus 3:3-5)

This verse is quite blunt: we were (it is presumed in this verse the reader is in fact regenerated) totally in the flesh. Then when **AGAPE LOVE APPEARED, AND WAS BESTOWED UPON US, WE WERE SAVED. AND THAT APPEARANCE AND BESTOWMENT IS CALLED THE WASHING OF REGENERATION. WE ARE SAVED BY REGENERATION, BY BEING BORN AGAIN, BY HAVING THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE GRANTED TO US. BUT WHAT IS SIN IN THE FINAL SENSE OF THE WORD?** If we examine the words in the Old and New Testament that are used for sin, they all say the same thing: **MISSING THE MARK.** In the New Testament, we find the words ‘hamartano’; ‘hamartema’; and ‘hamartia’, which mean in their basic concept TO MISS THE MARK. In the Old Testament we find ‘charta’ and ‘chattaah’ which mean **TO MISS, OR TO MISS THE MARK.** They are archery terms, and they imply that we cannot HIT THE MARK OF PERFECTION, OF EXCELLENCE. It means then by implication to BE LED ASTRAY, TO BE LED INTO ERROR, TO TRANSGRESS THE LAWS OF GOD. It means that we MISS THE HIGH CALLING AND GLORY OF GOD.

What is the HIGH CALLING OF GOD? What is the GLORY OF GOD? What is the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD? Behind it all lies **THE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE.** Sin then in its final form, IS TO MISS THE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE. All manifestations of sin are the SURFACE MANIFESTATION OF A DEEPER PROBLEM: NO AGAPE LOVE IN THE HEART. The long and short of ALL SIN is the transgression of the LAW OF AGAPE LOVE. The Ten Commandments are nothing more than a way of God showing the human race IT DOES NOT AGAPE LOVE. Certainly they also are a code of conduct, but behind the code stand the MYSTERY OF GOD: AGAPE LOVE.

Since we know that the heart of man is utterly wicked and corrupt, then the wellspring of all sin is this center core heart of man. From the very nature of man springs HIS UTTER LACK OF ABILITY TO “HIT THE MARK”. If he cannot hit the mark, then obviously he misses it! If he is required to hit the mark and he cannot, then he is condemned to perish. HE FALLS SHORT OF THE GLORY OF GOD.

*“But the Scripture HATH CONCLUDED ALL UNDER SIN, that*

***the promise***  
***BY FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST***  
***MIGHT BE GIVEN TO THEM THAT BELIEVE.”***  
(Galatians 3:22)



We have seen that the essence of God, Christ and the Holy Spirit is pure agape love, and that the essence of fallen man is a very conditional PHILEO LOVE. We have seen that Christ commanded us to AGAPE LOVE ONE ANOTHER. God says we must agape love or perish, yet we have no agape love within us! So then what? God then condemns the human race because of something that is not even a part of his nature! We are in a prison, THE PRISON IS THE WORLD, AND THE WORLD IS THE “PIT WITH NO WATER”, FOR THERE IS NO AGAPE LOVE IN THE WORLD. We are condemned, and we are in big trouble unless we **EXTRICATE OURSELVES FROM OUR PRISON CELLS**. In fact the trouble that you are in is worse than your worst nightmare, worse than anything you have ever experienced, worse than being hauled off to a real prison, worse than torture, worse than being killed. It is so bad that **THE HUMAN MIND CANNOT CONCEIVE OF THE FATE THAT AWAITS HIM. HE REFUSES TO BELIEVE IT IS TRUE, YET IT IS.**

***“Whosoever committeth sin TRANSGRESSETH  
ALSO THE LAW:  
FOR SIN IS THE TRANSGRESSION OF THE LAW.”  
(1 John 3:4)***

There is a NEW LAW called AGAPE LOVE LAW. A transgression of the AGAPE LOVE LAW IS ALSO SIN. That is to say, we do not love as we ought to love, and that is a transgression of the law of agape love. But the law of agape love is WITHOUT AS THE TEN COMMANDMENTS, BUT WITHIN AS A NEW SPIRIT, A NEW HEART, A NEW AND RADICAL CHANGE INWARDLY. First, Second and Third John all concern themselves primarily with the AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. Paul concurred when he said through the Holy Spirit:

***“Owe no man any thing, but to (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER:  
FOR HE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH ANOTHER HATH FULFILLED THE LAW.  
  
For this, THOU SHALT NOT COMMIT ADULTERY, THOU SHALT NOT KILL, THOU  
SHALT NOT STEAL, THOU SHALT NOT BEAR FALSE WITNESS, THOU SHALT NOT  
COVET;  
  
and if there BE ANY OTHER COMMANDMENT, it is BRIEFLY COMPREHENDED IN  
THIS SAYING, NAMELY,  
  
THOU SHALT (AGAPE) LOVE THY NEIGHBOUR AS THYSELF.  
  
(AGAPE) LOVE worketh no ill to his neighbour;  
  
THEREFORE (AGAPE) LOVE IS THE  
FULFILLMENT OF THE LAW.”  
(Romans 13:8-10)***

There is the law of agape love. The Old Law, the Ten Commandments were done away by Christ, and the NEW LAW, THE NEW COVENANT, TOOK ITS PLACE. As we have previously said, ONE CANNOT POSSIBLY FULFILL THE NEW LAW OF AGAPE LOVE UNLESS ONE IS REGENERATED. If you fail to become regenerated, if you fail to LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE, then God has no options, YOU MUST BE SENT AWAY. Therefore we have come full circle:

**DIVINE LOVE                      VS                      NATURAL LOVE**  
**AGAPE LOVE                      VS                      PHILEO LOVE**

We have now come full circle back to the confrontation that Peter had with the resurrected Christ. As you remember in that exchange, Christ asked Peter if he AGAPE LOVED him. Peter answered in the affirmative and then SUBSTITUTED THE PHILEO LOVE OF MAN FOR AGAPE LOVE. Peter claimed that his love was as good as, and the same thing as AGAPE LOVE. Because Peter was one of the CALLED AND CHOSEN, Christ was not going to allow Peter to get by with his false theology of human love. He proceeded to smash Peter's theology to the ground, and it lay in utter ruin before Christ was done with him, and Peter was in tears. **AGAPE LOVE WILL NOT ALLOW FALSEHOOD. IT WILL PROTECT ITS OWN AT ALL COST.**

God is very insistent that PHILEO LOVE WILL NEVER BE AGAPE LOVE. It does not matter how wonderful your love deeds are, it does not matter if you give away all of your goods, or if you perform mighty miracles, or if you give your life for Jesus Christ. ONLY ONE THING MATTERS; THAT YOU LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE, SO YOU DO NOT PERISH.

## **THE PHILEO LOVE OF MAN & THE BOOKS OF WORKS**

We have now advanced enough Scripture to prove that man is unrighteousness in the eyes of God. We have advanced evidence to suggest strongly that the reason man is considered wicked, evil, depraved or any other tag you wish to hang upon it is because of one thing: **SPIRITUAL DEATH, THE ABSENCE OF AGAPE LOVE IN THE HEART.** No matter where we turn, no matter where we look, we always run into this ONE COMMON ELEMENT; AGAPE LOVE. All mankind is condemned to eternal separation from God because they do not have this one single thing within them.

If this is true, and we advanced a whole host of Scripture to prove it out, then it should be obvious that PRIOR TO REACHING THAT POINT, WE ARE IN A STATE OF SPIRITUAL DEATH.

If we are in a state of death prior to actual and authentic spiritual rebirth, then the ONLY LOVE IN OUR SOULS IS THE **PHILEO LOVE OF MAN AND A FEIGNED AGAPE.** Because all men is born with a **DEAD SPIRIT TO AGAPE LOVE,** then mankind has ONLY ONE TYPE OF LOVE HE CAN IDENTIFY WITH; **HIS NATURAL LOVE.** Natural phileo love would be universally recognized for it is innate, a part of his make-up. It is interesting to note that in the Old Testament Ten Commandment; the word "love" is a NATURAL FORM OF LOVE.

When God gave the law, He in fact asked man to ONLY LOVE WITH HIS NATURAL LOVE, AND HE DID NOT USE A WORD TO SIGNIFY DIVINE LOVE. Yet we have said the Ten Commandments were set up to prove we DO NOT HAVE DIVINE LOVE. It seems like a contradiction. There are two reasons for this: (1) CHRIST HAD NOT YET BEEN REVEALED TO THE WORLD, and Christ was AGAPE LOVE in the flesh. (2) God used the command in the natural form of love to prove a point: **HE COULD NOT EVEN LOVE AS COMMANDED WITH HIS OWN NATURAL LOVE. He simply cannot do it.**

The fall so badly damaged man, and made him so self centered that his natural phileo type loves cannot consistently be expressed, and it is a hurtful, or as Christ said, an evil form of love, for it is MANIPULATIVE, ALWAYS CONDITIONAL, ALWAYS WITH A MOTIVE OTHER THAN THAT EXPRESSED. God proved to man that even with what he did have within him he could not keep the law, which makes him fall even further behind the mark in AGAPE.

We have explored the ramifications of how mankind sets up standards of relative righteousness, and that in reality they are based on natural phileo love being released to others. Because agape love is hidden, and not a part of the natural make-up of man, then natural love would be the ONLY TYPE OF LOVE A HUMAN BEING COULD KNOW, AND IT WOULD BE TO HIM ANYWAY, THE 'LIGHT OF GOD'. From the perspective of natural man, what other type of love is there? He knows no other type. He is not even aware there is another type. Is not the law of God to love? Is not this love within, this natural love within that I am to then release to others? Is this not the light that lighteth everyone that comes into the world?

***“That was the TRUE LIGHT, which  
lighteth every man that cometh into the world.”  
(John 1:9)***

Every person born into the human race has THE LIGHT OF NATURAL LOVE. What love remains from the fall is what is left over from AGAPE. Thus we could say that FROM AGAPE LOVE FLOWS PURE PHILEO, PURE EROS. When the fall came, PURE AGAPE VANISHED, DIVINE AGAPE LEFT, and in its place came a twisted and self centered, self-oriented love. It is the SMOKING REMAINS OF PURE AGAPE. Behind the love of man stands AGAPE. There would be no love in man whatsoever if AGAPE WAS NOT SOMEWHERE BEHIND IT. The light of DIVINE AGAPE LOVE is what gives us our NATURAL LOVE. In other words, the NATURAL LOVE OF MAN, WHICH HE IS BORN WITH, HAS ITS ULTIMATE SOURCE IN DIVINE LOVE.

We could view it as a spring of pure mountain water. When it comes up at the source, it is PURE, FRESH, and BEAUTIFUL. THE SOURCE IS PURE. Downstream it becomes filled with IMPURITIES, POLLUTANTS. We will say the source of our water supply is high upon a cliff. WE CANNOT GET TO IT, it is BEYOND OUR REACH. As the pure water makes its way down the cliff, it picks up impurities, and becomes tainted; it is no longer pure. The only place we can get to this water is a pool of it at the base of the cliff. THAT IS OUR ONLY SOURCE. The natural love of man IS THE POOL OF WATER AT THE BOTTOM OF THE CLIFF. WE CANNOT REACH THE WELLSPRING. THERE IS NOTHING WE CAN DO TO GET TO IT. **We must drink from our polluted water supply.**

The source of all human love is AGAPE. Natural human love is PHILEO. Although they all come from the same source; they are RADICALLY DIFFERENT. The light that lights every person born is the LOVE SOURCE OF AGAPE. From this pure love source, agape IS FILTERED THROUGH THE DIRTY CLOTH OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. By the time it comes out, it is badly contaminated, filled with pollutants, grossly impure. TO MANKIND, HOWEVER, FROM HIS POINT OF VIEW, IT IS ALL THAT HE HAS, ALL THAT HE COULD POSSIBLY ATTAIN TO. From his perspective, THIS TAINTED LOVE RELEASED TO OTHERS APPEARS PURE AND CLEAN. It is this relative righteousness, this APPEARANCE OF CLEANLINESS THAT IS THE DECEPTION OF PHILEO LOVE, THE DECEPTION OF SATAN; THE ROOT OF THE GRAND DELUSION.

Man knows the beauty of love, for he has moments when his own natural love shines through, and it can be very deep and very emotional. It makes one feel good all over. People who fall in love are DELIRIOUS AND OBLIVIOUS TO ANYTHING ELSE BUT THE OBJECT OF THEIR LOVE. We then know from a natural viewpoint that LOVE IS GOOD AND LIFE, AND THE LACK OF LOVE IS EVIL AND DEATH. We don't have any excuse before the Creator when it comes to having a knowledge of the GOODNESS OF LOVE, AND THAT IT BRINGS WITH IT JOY AND PEACE. And this is from a twisted and badly deformed love! OF WHAT JOY AND PEACE COULD COME FROM PURE AGAPE LOVE?

Mankind then, knows instinctively that love is preferred over hate, and that love is a tremendous healing power. It will work miracles! We then, over the course of the centuries, begin to catalog our various strife, warfare, murders and such like, and it finally dawns upon the consciousness of man THAT LOVE IS THE ONLY ANSWER TO ALL OF HIS PROBLEMS! BROTHERLY LOVE, PEACE, AND UNITY WILL PREVAIL IF MAN WOULD BUT LOVE. Herein is the stage set for the GRAND DELUSION OF GOD. Herein was the GRAND DELUSION OF PETER. Peter was positive that his natural love for Christ WAS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. He was so sure of it that he answered Christ in the AFFIRMATIVE, AND THEN BOLDLY USED PHILEO IN PLACE OF AGAPE.

This IS the springboard for the grand delusion to be cast down upon earth by God Himself. Christ said that HE HAD COME IN HIS FATHER'S NAME, AND THE WORLD REJECTED HIM. HE ALSO SAID THAT ANOTHER WOULD COME IN HIS OWN NAME, AND HIM THE WORLD WOULD ACCEPT. Let's take a close look at what Jesus is really telling us here.

***"I am come in my FATHER'S NAME, AND  
YE RECEIVE ME NOT:  
IF ANOTHER SHALL COME IN HIS OWN NAME,  
HIM YE WILL RECEIVE."  
(John 5:43)***

Jesus said He came in the name of the Father. He was here on the Father's business. Who is the Father? God is a SPIRIT, AND HE IS THE SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE. Christ came **IN THE SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE TO PRESENT THIS LOVE TO THE HUMAN RACE**. Christ was the manifestation of agape love to the world. The world NO LONGER HAS ANY EXCUSE, THEY NO LONGER HAVE ANY CLOAK TO HIDE THEIR SIN. Christ came to MANIFEST AGAPE LOVE TO THE WORLD.

***“If I HAD NOT COME AND SPOKEN UNTO THEM,  
THEY HAD NOT HAD SIN:  
BUT NOW THEY HAVE NO CLOKE FOR THEIR SIN.”  
(John 15:22)***

Jesus is telling us that IF HE HAD NOT COME INTO THE WORLD, AND SHOWN THE WORLD VIA DEMONSTRATION WHAT AGAPE LOVE WAS, the world could not be condemned. Because He did come here, and because He did show the world openly what agape love really is, and also gave us the plan of salvation via the New Covenant, ***THE WORLD HAS NO CLOAK, IT CANNOT HIDE BEHIND IGNORANCE. There is now NO HIDING PLACE FOR ANY LIVING PERSON UPON EARTH.*** God has openly revealed HIS AGAPE LOVE, HIS SON, AND HIS METHOD FOR SALVATION. He openly explained the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. He warned about impostors who would attempt to pervert it. He died and sealed His message in His own blood. He was innocent of any wrongdoing, YET the world KILLED HIM AND HUMILIATED HIM UPON THE CROSS. THE WORLD TRIED HIM ON PHONY TRUMPED UP CHARGES, BY A GROUP OF INSANE OLD TOTTERING RELIGIOUS FOOLS WHO THOUGHT THEY KNEW ALL ABOUT TRUTH. These same tottering old men, who could not give up their positions of power and influence decided to simply murder the AGAPE LOVE BRINGER.

Do you really think the WORLD HAS A CLOAK FOR WHAT IT DID? Do you believe that the world is going to be let off the hook? NO WAY! The entire world sealed its fate when it hung Christ on that cross, and THERE IS NO WAY OF ESCAPE WHATSOEVER EXCEPT VIA THE WAY OF THE CROSS. As we did to Jesus, so we MUST DO TO OURSELVES!

If Christ came in the NAME OF THE FATHER, AND BROUGHT AGAPE LOVE TO THE WORLD, and the world REJECTS CHRIST AND AGAPE LOVE, then it has rejected the HIGHEST, THE ONLY TRUE LOVE IN THE UNIVERSE. IT HAS SAID NO TO IT. It has utterly rejected the Father and the Son. Psalm Two now takes on its real meaning:

***“Why do the heathen rage, and the PEOPLE IMAGINE A VAIN THING?  
The KINGS OF THE EARTH SET THEMSELVES, AND THE RULERS  
TAKE COUNSEL TOGETHER,  
AGAINST THE LORD,  
AND AGAINST HIS ANOINTED, SAYING,  
LET US BREAK THEIR BANDS ASUNDER, AND CAST AWAY THEIR  
CORDS FROM US.”  
(Psalm 2:1-3)***

Mankind rages and THEY IMAGINE A VAIN THING. The kings of the earth, and all the rulers of the earth COME TOGETHER, THEY UNITE TO TAKE COUNSEL TOGETHER AND THIS COUNSEL IS AGAINST THE LORD AND HIS ANOINTED, WHICH IS JESUS

CHRIST. This is then a worldwide conspiracy, and the leaders of the whole world gather together to take counsel. They wish to BREAK ASUNDER THE CLAIMS THAT CHRIST AND GOD HAVE FOR PLANET EARTH. Christ is the legal owner of the entire planet and all who walk upon it. He bought them with a price; He bought them with His blood.

Where do the governmental leaders of the world COME TOGETHER FOR THEIR COUNSEL? Is there a place in this world, WHERE THE LEADERS OF THE WORLD GATHER AND DISCUSS THEIR MUTUAL PROBLEMS, AND ATTEMPT TO FIX THEM? What is the United Nations for? What is the VISION OF THE UNITED NATIONS? What is the platform of the United Nations? Is it not PEACE, LOVE AND BROTHERHOOD? Do not all the governments send their representative to the United Nations?

What kind of LOVE does the United Nations espouse? WHAT IS THE VISION OF THE UNITED NATIONS? What do they see for the FUTURE OF THE WORLD? What do they mean when they speak of a NEW WORLD ORDER? What do they mean when they say they want ALL GOVERNMENTS TO GIVE UP THEIR NATIONAL SOVEREIGNTIES AND COME TOGETHER INTO A UNITED FEDERATION? What do they mean when they say THAT ALL RELIGIONS ARE THE SAME, THAT THEY ARE ALL LEADING TO THE SAME GOD? THAT WE MUST FIND COMMON GROUND AND UNITE, AND DROP OFF ANYTHING THAT IS NEGATIVE OR DIVISIVE?

The prophet Daniel said he saw a beast rise up that had ten horns upon its ugly head. Each horn was to represent a King, or ruler. It is interesting to note that the United Nations under its Club of Rome operatives (one worlders) has DIVIDED THE WORLD UP INTO 10 BIO-REGIONS. Each region is to be ruled by a ruler, or a king. Within the United Nations building is what is called a MEDITATION ROOM. It is in the form of pyramid upon its side, with the CAPSTONE MISSING. On the wall where the capstone should be, is a painted mural; which has within the ALL SEEING EYE OF LUCIFER. There are TEN CHAIRS IN THIS MEDITATION ROOM. There are TEN LIGHTS in the ceiling that shine down upon a STONE ALTER THAT SITS IN THE MIDDLE OF THE ROOM.

The United Nations has been very busy over the years in destroying the sovereignty of the nations and is attempting to get all nations to PASS OVER THEIR RIGHTS TO THE UNITED NATIONS VIA THE PROCESS OF TREATY. Daniel the prophet said that the ANTICHRIST was a very diverse form of government, unlike anything the world had ever seen before. Daniel said that the antichrist forces THINK TO CHANGE THE LAW. This law change is done via TREATY. The United Nations gets all of its authority to operate via TREATY POWER. For example, one joins the United Nations by TREATY WITH IT.

The United States was brought under the control of the United Nations Charter when the United States RATIFIED THE TREATY WITH THE UN. The United Nations Charter then becomes the SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND, because under the United States Constitution, TREATIES SUPERSEDE THE CONSTITUTION. For example, the United States was DIVIDED INTO 10 REGIONS as part of the UNITED NATIONS PLAN TO REGIONALIZE THE ENTIRE WORLD. This was done under Executive Order 11674, issued by President Nixon. The United States is very busy signing over all of our citizens' rights under TREATY POWER.

The average American citizen thinks their rights are protected under the United States Constitution, which contains the Bill of Rights. What they do not realize is that the CONSTITUTION IS BYPASSED VIA TREATY POWER. The treaties that the United States

ratifies with the United Nations BECOME THE SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND; our bill of rights has been destroyed by the process of TREATY RATIFICATION. There are many Senators and Congressman who know exactly what they are doing, and who are in reality ONE WORLD OPERATIVES. It is indeed a CONSPIRACY, just as Psalm Two says it is.

The underlying religion of the United Nations is fully and wholly ANTICHRIST. The UN seeks to destroy every nation that is foolish enough to join it. It is the masterpiece of DECEPTION, A SATANIC COUNTERFEIT OF THE RULE OF PLANET EARTH BY JESUS CHRIST. Its operatives fully intend to TAKE OVER THE ENTIRE WORLD IN THE NAME OF LUCIFER, AND SIT AS KINGS IN THE PLACE OF JESUS CHRIST WHO HAS THE ONLY RIGHT TO RULE THE WORLD.

But what is THE VAIN THING THE PEOPLE IMAGINE? What type of LOVE does the UN really ESPOUSE? If one reads the literature handed out by the United Nations, it becomes obvious that THEY HAVE REJECTED THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST. It becomes obvious that THE LOVE THEY ESPOUSE TO THE WORLD IS THE NATURAL LOVE OF MAN. Satan knows that all human beings can identify with NATURAL HUMAN LOVE. He also knows that ALL MANKIND KNOWS THAT LOVE IS THE GLUE THAT COULD BE USED TO BRING THE WORLD TOGETHER AS ONE. It could be the FORCE, THE POWER, and THE SPIRITUAL GLUE to bring the world together.

Everyone can identify with love. All the religions of the world espouse as their baseline, LOVE ONE ANOTHER. All mankind then WILL RESPOND TO LOVE. If this be true, THEN WHAT BETTER PLACE TO DECEIVE THE ENTIRE HUMAN RACE THAN RIGHT HERE? What better place to MIMIC JESUS CHRIST THAN RIGHT HERE? Did not Jesus say to LOVE ONE ANOTHER? DID HE NOT BRING A MESSAGE OF PEACE, LOVE AND BROTHERHOOD? This then MUST BE, HAS TO BE WHERE SATAN WILL STRIKE.

The word 'antichrist' has two meanings to it. The word "antichrist" is 'antichristos', which means an **OPPONENT OF MESSIAH**. The word "anti" is 'anit' and it means **INSTEAD OF, SUBSTITUTE**. In other words the antichrist comes AS A SUBSTITUTE FOR THE REAL CHRIST. He is in the place of, or that is, HE MIMICS AND MIRRORS JESUS CHRIST, BUT UNDERNEATH HE IS THE DIRECT OPPOSITE OF JESUS CHRIST. The only way that could be done is TO REDEFINE THE WORD LOVE, REDEFINE WHAT THE LOVE OF GOD IS. You see antichrist has no choice, FOR CHRIST IS LOVE. Therefore THE LOVE OF THE ANTICHRIST IS A COUNTERFEIT, A LOOK ALIKE, A MASTER COUNTERFEIT THAT APPEARS IN ALL CASES TOTALLY AUTHENTIC.

Now then, if the WORLD HAS REJECTED AGAPE LOVE, what form of love is LEFT? What form of love can the whole world IDENTIFY WITH AND UNDERSTAND? Phileo love would recognize phileo love. The love of the world recognizes and applauds ITS OWN LOVE. The common recognition factor then will be the LOVE OF UNREGENERATE MANKIND. Antichrist will then declare that THIS LOVE OF MANKIND RELEASED IS THE LOVE OF GOD.

Christ said that He came in the Father's name and was rejected. Another SHALL COME IN HIS OWN NAME, AND HE WILL BE ACCEPTED. We have a total verification then of the BASE OF THE GRAND DELUSION; AGAPE LOVE WAS REJECTED, THE PHILEO LOVE OF MAN RELEASED WILL BE ACCEPTED. Just as Jesus Christ PERSONIFIED AGAPE LOVE, SO TOO WILL THE ANTICHRIST PERSONIFY PHILEO LOVE. As Jesus Christ

was the perfect example of God's AGAPE LOVE, the antichrist will be the perfect example of PHILEO LOVE. He will be the MIRROR IMAGE OF JESUS CHRIST.

***“Even him (antichrist), WHOSE COMING IS AFTER  
THE WORKING OF SATAN  
WITH ALL POWER AND SIGNS  
AND LYING WONDERS...”  
(2 Thessalonians 2:9)***

Antichrist, with his perfect PHILEO LOVE, will arrive on the scene by the WORKS OF SATAN, THE MASTER DECEIVER. His arrival upon the world scene will be accompanied by **POWER, SIGNS, AND LYING WONDERS**. The word “power” is ‘dunamis’ and it means **FORCE, MIRACLE POWER, MIGHTY MIRACLES**. Antichrist, with his false phileo love will arrive with GREAT SATANIC POWER IN THE FORMS OF MIRACLES. The word “signs” is ‘semeion’ and it means **A SIGN, A TOKEN, A WONDER**. It is a physical manifestation of supernatural power. The word for “lying” is ‘pseudos’, has the root ‘pseudomai’ and it means **TO DECEIVE BY FALSEHOOD, TO DECEIVE BY LYING**. The word “wonders” is ‘teras’ and it means **OMEN, WONDER**. Thus the arrival of antichrist will be full of supernatural signs and wonders. These supernatural miracles, signs and omens will be for ONE PURPOSE: **TO PROVE TO ALL UNREGENERATE MEN THAT THE MESSAGE OF THE ANTICHRIST IS THE TRUTH, AND THAT IT IS OF GOD.**

As we know that the antichrist does not have THE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD WITHIN HIM, and as we know his message must be one of LOVE, PEACE AND BROTHERHOOD, we then begin to understand the seriousness of this whole arrival: **IT WILL DECEIVE THE ENTIRE WORLD OF UNREGENERATE MAN.** The whole world will fall for this.

***“And with ALL DECEIVABLENESS OF  
UNRIGHTEOUSNESS IN THEM THAT PERISH;  
BECAUSE  
THEY RECEIVED NOT THE (AGAPE) LOVE OF THE TRUTH,  
THAT THEY MIGHT BE SAVED.”  
(2 Thessalonians 2:10)***

Please read this over and over until the impact hits to the core of your soul. This is one of the most deadly verses of Scripture ever penned by the Holy Spirit. We are going to take it phase by phase so that you fully grasp **WHAT IS** the **GRAND DELUSION THAT ALL UNREGENERATE MEN FALLS UNDER.**



The first phrase is 'THE DECEIVABLENESS OF UNRIGHTEOUSNESS'. The word "deceivableness" is 'apate' and it means A DELUSION, A DECEPTION, TO CHEAT, TO DELUDE. There is a great delusion in this so-called UNRIGHTEOUSNESS. The word "unrighteousness" is 'adikia' which means **INJUSTICE, UNJUST, INIQUITY**. If we go back to why Christ rejected the vast majority of Christians, what did He say? He said they were workers of 'iniquity', which means LAWLESSNESS. Inasmuch as AGAPE LOVE FULFILLS THE LAW, AND IT IS THE ONLY THING THAT FULFILLS THE LAW, then **ANYONE WHO HAS NOT LAID HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE IS IN INIQUITY; NO MATTER HOW GOOD HIS DEEDS SEEM.**

There are only two divisions of people in the world insofar as God is concerned: **THE SAVED AND THE DAMNED**. The saved are those who have agape love within them via the New Heart covenant. They are also called THE RIGHTEOUS. All others do not have agape love within them because they REFUSED CHRIST, THEY REFUSED HIS COMMANDS, THEY REFUSED THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. Because they do not have agape love, THE ONLY LOVE THEY DO HAVE IS NATURAL LOVE, OR PHILEO. They are NOT regenerated; they are UNRIGHTEOUS. The baseline of all unrighteousness then is the **DELUSION OF NATURAL LOVE, OR PHILEO LOVE.**

The next phrase is '**IN THEM THAT PERISH**'. The delusion is **INTERNAL**. It is reinforced by EXTERNAL SIGNS AND WONDERS. It is only in them that are perishing. The word "perish" is 'apollumi' and it means **TO DESTROY FULLY, COMPLETE DESTRUCTION, TO COMPLETE RUIN, OR ETERNAL RUIN**. It is the deception that PHILEO LOVE RELEASED IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD THAT RESIDES WITHIN THEIR SOULS AND MINDS THAT LEADS THEM TO RUIN. Why does this happen?

BECAUSE THEY RECEIVED NOT THE **AGAPE LOVE OF THE TRUTH**. Jesus said He was THE TRUTH. What love did Jesus have? AGAPE. They did not receive the **AGAPE LOVE THAT JESUS HAS. IT WAS NEVER BESTOWED UPON THEM.** That means that the VAST MAJORITY WITHIN THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH WILL GO UNDER THE GRAND DELUSION, AND GOD WILL DO IT HIMSELF BECAUSE THEY REFUSED TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO HAVE AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED. The word "because" simply means THAT THEIR RUIN, THEIR GOING INTO ETERNAL RUIN HAS BUT ONE CAUSE: THEY DID NOT RECEIVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF THE TRUTH. The word "receive" is 'dechoma' and it means **TO ACCEPT, TO TAKE, TO LAY HOLD OF, TO RECEIVE**. The word "love" here is 'agape' and we already know that it refers to the **DIVINE LOVE OF GOD, PERFECT AGAPE**. The word "truth" is 'aletheia' and it means **VERITY, TRUTH**.

The word truth has a big meaning. We have to explore it a bit to fully understand the ramifications of what is being said. God gave the laws to Israel TO MAKE A DIFFERENCE.

***"For I am the LORD your God: ye shall therefore SANCTIFY YOURSELVES,  
AND YE SHALL BE HOLY;  
FOR I AM HOLY:  
NEITHER SHALL YE DEFILE YOURSELVES  
WITH ANY MANNER OF CREEPING THING THAT CREEPETH UPON THE EARTH.***

***For I am the Lord that bringeth you up out of the LAND OF EGYPT, TO BE YOUR God:***

**YE SHALL THEREFORE BE HOLY, FOR I AM HOLY.**

*This is the law of the beasts and the fowl, and of every living creature that moveth in the waters, and of every creature that creepeth upon the earth:*

**TO MAKE A DIFFERENCE**

***BETWEEN THE UNCLEAN AND THE CLEAN,***

***AND BETWEEN THE BEAST THAT MAY BE EATEN AND THE BEAST THAT MAY NOT BE EATEN.”***

***(Leviticus 11:44-47)***

The laws of Israel were given in all manner, be they of eating or whatever TO SEPARATE ISRAEL FROM THE WORLD. THEY WERE GIVEN TO MAKE A DIFFERENCE, TO CAUSE A DIFFERENCE. It is THIS DIFFERENCE THAT DETERMINES WHAT IS CLEAN AND WHAT IS NOT CLEAN. It is this difference that DETERMINES AND DISTINGUISHES BETWEEN THE UNCLEAN THING AND THE CLEAN THING.

If we transfer this over to the LAW OF ISRAEL AND THE TEN COMMANDMENTS, which Christ said were reduced down to ONE LAW: AGAPE LOVE, then **THAT WHICH MAKES THE DIFFERENCE, THAT WHICH DISTINGUISHES BETWEEN CLEAN AND UNCLEAN IS AGAPE LOVE.** What are we saying: we are saying that THE STANDARD OF MEASURE, THE STANDARD OF GOD, THAT WHICH ALLOWS GOD TO DETERMINE WHO IS CLEAN AND WHO IS NOT, IS AND **MUST BE AGAPE LOVE.**

Jesus said that if WE WOULD CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE, WE WOULD FIND THE TRUTH AND THE TRUTH WOULD SET US FREE. Paul said that the only reason people are damned is because they DO NOT LAY HOLD OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF THE TRUTH. As truth is verity, then **THE TRUTH ITSELF IS THE STANDARD OF MEASURE, IT IS WHAT DETERMINES THE DIVISION POINT.** Agape love is the ESSENCE OF ALL TRUTH, and GOD IS TRUTH. The truth here is well defined, no one could mistake what it says: THE AGAPE LOVE OF THE TRUTH. Christ said HE WAS THE TRUTH. They failed to lay hold of the AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST.

The point is that God uses agape love as His measuring point. It is the truth that IS THE STANDARD OF GOD. In order to be able to **DISCERN THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN AGAPE LOVE AND PHILEO LOVE, ONE WOULD HAVE TO BE IN POSSESSION OF AGAPE LOVE.** If one did not have it revealed and bestowed so that they **KNEW THE DIFFERENCE EXPERIENTIALLY,** one would go under DECEPTION.

This is true because the standard by which we MEASURE IS AGAPE LOVE. A counterfeit is a look alike. But how can you detect a counterfeit? You cannot, **UNLESS YOU HAVE THE REAL ITEM IN FRONT OF YOU.** In other words, you **MUST HAVE THE GENUINE ARTICLE IN ORDER TO COMPARE IT TO THE FALSE OR COUNTERFEIT.** A gemologist KNOWS WHAT A REAL DIAMOND LOOKS LIKE. He then takes THE STANDARD OF THE PERFECT DIAMOND, AND MEASURES ALL OTHER DIAMONDS AND IMITATIONS AGAINST IT.

One cannot be a gemologist unless one has studied and examined UNDER CLOSE EXAMINATION THE REAL THING TO LEARN WHAT IT REALLY IS. He must have in his possession THE REAL DIAMOND. He must have it, look at it and study it. HE MUST KNOW THE STANDARD. The perfect diamond IS THE STANDARD OF MEASURE. From this standard all other things ARE JUDGED. The standard of measure in Spiritual things is **THE PERFECT AGAPE LOVE OF GOD**. From this standard, all other things can be measured and judged. By this then, we can detect that which is real, that which is a counterfeit. **ALL OF GOD'S TRUE SONS AND DAUGHTERS HAVE BEEN GRANTED OR BESTOWED PURE AGAPE LOVE**. They have the REAL DIAMOND. THEY HAVE THE TRUTH, THE REAL STANDARD. Because true agape love MUST BE REVEALED IN THE MIRACLE OF REGENERATION, **THEN THEY "KNOW" EXPERIENTIALLY THE TRUTH**.

The truth that they know, and have been given IS A SPIRITUAL TRUTH, NOT SOMETHING FROM THE SOUL MAN, OR THE MIND. According to the Scripture, truth can be determined by the **TESTIMONY OF TWO WITNESSES**. The true sons and daughters of God, who have entered the strait gate and walked the narrow way, have the **WITNESS OF A DIRECT REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE FROM CHRIST HIMSELF PERSONALLY**. We will cover this later in the series in great detail. There are a multitude of verses to PROVE IT. The believer then takes this **EXPERIENTIAL ENCOUNTER WITH CHRIST, AND APPLIES IT TO THE SECOND WITNESS FOR TOTAL VERIFICATION**. The second witness is the **WORD OF GOD**. If the experiential encounter matches 100% with the **STATED WORDS OF SCRIPTURE, THAT PERSON THEN HAS TWO WITNESSES IN AGREEMENT, AND THEN 'KNOWS THAT HE KNOWS THAT HE KNOWS'**.

***"But the NATURAL MAN  
RECEIVETH NOT the things of the SPIRIT OF GOD:***

***for they are FOOLISHNESS UNTO HIM:***

***NEITHER CAN HE KNOW THEM, BECAUSE  
THEY ARE SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED.***

***BUT HE THAT IS SPIRITUAL  
JUDGETH ALL THINGS,  
YET HE HIMSELF IS JUDGED OF NO MAN."***

***(1 Corinthians 2:14-15)***

This verse is a key verse in getting to the root of the delusion that is even now spreading across the earth in preparation for the appearance of the antichrist. Paul is blunt: THE NATURAL MAN, THE CARNAL MAN, THE FLESH CANNOT RECEIVE THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD. The real truths of God cannot be discerned by the mind and by the soul. The word "discerned" means to **INVESTIGATE, TO SCRUTINIZE, TO QUESTION, TO EXAMINE AND TO JUDGE**. It is beyond the capacity of the unregenerate man to **DISCERN TRUE SPIRITUAL MATTERS**.

This is why the vast majority of Christians end up in eternal ruin in the first place. They refused to enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way to FIND CHRIST, TO FIND AGAPE LOVE, TO

FIND REGENERATION. Because they are not regenerated, they *in truth* HAVE **NO SPIRITUAL DISCERNMENT**. Because all spiritual discernment has as its point of measure the perfect agape love of God, THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS CANNOT DISCERN THEIR TRUE STATUS BEFORE GOD, **THEY KNOW NOT**. Is this not exactly what Christ said of the rejected? They KNEW NOT THEIR TRUE SPIRITUAL CONDITION? They were under a delusion brought about by DISOBEDIENCE to Christ. All of their discernment is in the flesh, in the mind, in the soul. They read the Word of God and in their minds and souls they determine what it means. They then embrace this carnal choice as truth *by faith*.

Because they have a head, mental, or intellectual knowledge of Scripture, a soul man knowledge, a sense man knowledge, or a NATURAL MAN KNOWLEDGE, they think themselves SPIRITUAL. *The false teachers all claimed to be highly spiritual men.* They espoused their great wisdom of Scripture to all who would listen to them. BUT THEIR WISDOM WAS CARNAL, NATURAL, NOT OF THE SPIRIT. Because they refused to do as Christ commanded, they are handed **A DELUSION FROM THE HAND OF GOD**. These people are POSITIVE THEY KNOW SPIRITUAL ISSUES.

Paul then says that **IF A PERSON IS SPIRITUAL, HE IS ABLE TO JUDGE ALL THINGS, AND YET NO MAN CAN JUDGE HIM**. The word “spiritual” is ‘pneumatikos’ and it means **NON CARNAL, OF THE SPIRIT, SUPERNATURAL, REGENERATE**. We have proven to you that regeneration means the bestowment of agape love. Therefore the **REGENERATE MAN HAS HAD THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE, AND HAS HAD IT GRANTED TO HIM, HE POSSESSES IT WITHIN**. He now looks out at the world THROUGH THE EYES OF AGAPE LOVE. Because he has agape love within, he is **ABLE TO JUDGE ALL THINGS**. The word “judge” here is the same as discern. **THE PERSON WITH AGAPE LOVE IS ABLE TO DISCERN THE REAL TRUTH AND COMPARE ALL THINGS TO IT**. He then can determine by this investigation that which is true, and that which is a counterfeit.

He is now commanded by God to **JUDGE ALL THINGS**. The word “all” here is ‘pas’ and it means **ALL, ANY, EVERYTHING, THE WHOLE**. The true regenerate man is able to pass a judgment upon everyone he comes into contact with. He not only is able, he is commanded to do it! This judgment is not a judgment of condemnation, but of **WHETHER OR NOT THE PRESENTED GOSPEL, THE PRESENTED TESTIMONY, THE PRESENTED CLAIMS ARE AUTHENTIC OR NOT**. Any regenerate person can and must do this. It is called SPIRITUAL DISCERNMENT. Paul then goes on to say that **NO MAN CAN JUDGE THE SPIRITUAL MAN**. What does he mean?

If things of the Spirit of God are known only by the Spirit, then **ONLY THE SPIRIT OF GOD CAN JUDGE THE TRUE BELIEVER**. No natural man is able to judge him; no man is even able to understand where he is coming from. **HE WILL NOT UNDERSTAND HIS WORDS, HE WILL NOT UNDERSTAND HIS SPEECH**. The natural man will pass a natural judgment, but it will not avail him of anything, for he does not realize whom he is judging.

So here we find the DIVISION. THE DIVISION IS BETWEEN THE NATURAL MAN AND THE SPIRITUAL MAN. THAT WHICH MAKES THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE TWO IS AGAPE LOVE. The natural man does NOT have it, and cannot know it, and knows nothing about it, but the spiritual man has it, knows what it is, and is able to pass a TRUE JUDGMENT. He then is able to **DETECT THE COUNTERFEIT**. This is why Jesus said:

*“For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and SHALL SHEW GREAT SIGNS  
AND  
WONDERS; INSOMUCH THAT,*

**IF IT WERE POSSIBLE,**

***THEY SHALL DECEIVE THE VERY ELECT.”***

**(Matthew 24:24)**

Notice that Christ said THEY WOULD FOOL THE ELECT OF GOD **IF** IT WERE POSSIBLE. It is not possible to fool them. Why not? Because they have **AGAPE LOVE WITHIN**. Did not Paul say that **THE DELUSION, THE DECEPTION IS CAST DOWN UPON THOSE WHO DID NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE?** The division, that which makes a difference, that which makes a person Holy IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST. The regenerate person HAS THE AGAPE LOVE WITHIN, AND SO HE CAN PASS A JUDGMENT UPON ANY **COUNTERFEIT LOVE** THAT COMES ALONG, and INCLUDING THE LOVE OF ANTICHRIST.

What has all of this got to do with the deception of phileo love? Everything. The entire human race, including the vast majority of Christians, because **THEY ARE NOT REGENERATE, ARE NOT ABLE TO JUDGE**. They have no standard from which to judge. They cannot detect the counterfeit, because they have no real standard from which to measure. The apostate unsaved Church is swept right into the antichrist delusion. They were deluded in the first place! It was easy for the antichrist forces to infiltrate the Church and seduce the many.

Now we come back to Paul and what he says. Remember that agape love of Christ is the division that the Lord applies; it is His standard. It says THAT THEY **RECEIVED NOT** THE AGAPE LOVE OF THE TRUTH THAT THEY MIGHT BE SAVED. It totally confirms everything we have learned before. They did not lay hold of agape love; they are **NOT SAVED**.

***“And for THIS CAUSE (ONLY ONE) GOD SHALL SEND THEM  
STRONG DELUSION, THAT THEY SHOULD BELIEVE A LIE:  
THAT THEY ALL MIGHT BE DAMNED  
WHO BELIEVED NOT THE TRUTH, BUT HAD PLEASURE  
IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.”  
(2 Thessalonians 2:11-12)***

The only cause listed in Scripture for not being saved is **NOT OBTAINING AGAPE LOVE**. Christ verified that when He said that men would not come to the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. Because man refuses to comply with the requirements of God to obtain His love, He sends them

instead a STRONG DELUSION. The word “delusion” is ‘plane’ and it means **TO GO ASTRAY, TO WONDER, TO SEDUCE, TO BE OUT OF THE WAY**. The word “send” is ‘pempo’ and it means **TO DISPATCH, TO TRANSMIT, TO BESTOW**. Grasp the full impact of this statement: GOD HIMSELF IS GOING TO BESTOW UPON THE ENTIRE CHRIST REJECTING HUMAN RACE, INCLUDING HIS OWN DISOBEDIENT PEOPLE, A DELUSION **SO POWERFUL, SO STRONG**, THAT THEY WILL NOT BE ABLE TO STAND AGAINST IT.

This delusion, this deception, this error in thought has but one purpose: TO DAMN ALL THOSE WHO DID NOT LAY HOLD OF AGAPE, BUT WHO HAD ALL THEIR PLEASURE IN PHILEO LOVE. The delusion lays the groundwork for them to **BELIEVE A LIE**. What is the lie? The very lie that PETER BELIEVED: **THAT PHILEO LOVE IS THE LOVE OF GOD**. It is this error, and this error alone that propels the whole world, including the vast majority within the Church of Jesus Christ into **ETERNAL DAMNATION**. The word “damned” is ‘krino’ and it means **TO TRY, TO CONDEMN, TO JUDGE**. The whole object of God bringing the antichrist into the world is TO TRY THEM, TO PUT THEM ON TRIAL AND TO FIND THEM GUILTY OF NO AGAPE IN THEIR HEARTS, AND THUS THEY GO INTO ETERNAL LOSS.

Now we come back to the United Nations to conclude our study of the deception of PHILEO LOVE. The love espoused by the United Nations, the apostate Christian Church and the other world religions **IS THE PHILEO LOVE OF MAN**. In point of actual fact, NO OTHER RELIGION ON EARTH, NOR ANY OTHER RELIGIOUS FOUNDER EVER MADE SUCH A RADICAL DISTINCTION OF THE TWO TYPES OF LOVE AS DOES GOD AND CHRIST. The natural love is UNIVERSAL ON PLANET EARTH. This is the one common denominator by which they can glue their restive beliefs together. There is now a gathering ecumenical movement within the Church to gather all the denominations together, because “after all, we are all Christians, and we have the same Lord, and we are TO LOVE ONE ANOTHER”. The reasoning is that, what keeps the Church split into factions, is AT THE BASE OF IT DOCTRINAL DIFFERENCES.

If it is DOCTRINE THAT SPLITS US APART, THAT DIVIDES US, THAT CAUSES STRIFE AND FACTIONS, ARGUMENTS AND GRIEF, then WE MUST RE-EXAMINE OUR DOCTRINES. The call of Christ was UNCONDITIONAL LOVE. Therefore to be more Christ-like, we must TOSS ASIDE ALL DOCTRINAL DIFFERENCES AND GRAB HOLD OF ALL THINGS THAT WE HOLD IN COMMON. Thus all doctrinal differences that DIVIDE must be tossed aside, in the name of CHRIST’S LOVE. Thus the unification of the Church is now in full swing, and doctrines that divide are simply either ignored or done away with. The error is in their thinking; they are unregenerate, and do not KNOW AGAPE, WHICH MUST AND DOES UPHOLD ONLY TRUE DOCTRINE, AND WILL NOT TOLERATE UNTRUE DOCTRINE.

This same movement is rapidly gaining around in all other world religions, and there are active, very active men and women all over the world attempting to FIND THE COMMON GROUND SO THAT ALL WORLD RELIGIONS CAN MERGE TOGETHER AND BECOME ONE. The entire program of the Masonic Lodge is built upon the concept that ALL RELIGIONS CONTAIN GOOD, AND THAT NO ONE HAS ANY EXCLUSIVE TRUTH, AND NO ONE CAN KNOW WHAT IS ABSOLUTE TRUTH. If one cannot possibly know absolute truth, or that there is ONE TRUTH, then **ALL RELIGIONS HAVE MERIT, AND SHOULD BE RESPECTED, REVERED AND TREATED AS EQUALS**.

There is to come then a **DOCTRINAL AGREEMENT BETWEEN ALL WORLD RELIGIONS**. The ROOT basis of this agreement will be **PHILEO LOVE, WHICH BRINGS PEACE AND BROTHERHOOD TO ALL MEN**. There is NO RELIGION BETTER THAN ANOTHER, THERE IS NO ONE TRUTH, THERE ARE MANY TRUTHS, ALL OF WHICH LEAD TO THE DIVINE.

This is THE LIE that God casts down upon the human race. This is so because Jesus Christ said He was the **only one that held the keys to heaven**. There is no other name under heaven by which we may be saved. Jesus said He was IT. If Jesus Christ IS THE ONLY SON OF GOD, AND THE ONLY ONE ANOINTED OF THE FATHER TO SAVE MAN, then that is **EXCLUSIVE OF ALL OTHERS, OF ALL OTHER RELIGIONS, OF ALL OTHER CONCEPTS**. The antichrist system will tolerate ANY RELIGION, ANY IDEAS, ANY CONCEPT EXCEPT ONE: THAT THERE IS ONLY **ONE TRUTH, ONE MESSIAH, ONE WAY, ONE METHOD**. That will be outlawed, and that concept if promoted will be punishable by death.

The United Nations is working hard to bring this aspect of the antichrist system into reality. It is called the **“International Covenant on Civil and Political Rights”**. **This treaty provides that “any ADVOCACY OF NATIONAL, RACIAL OR RELIGIOUS HATRED THAT CONSTITUTES INCITEMENT TO DISCRIMINATION, HOSTILITY OR VIOLENCE SHALL BE PROHIBITED BY LAW.”** There are other restrictions added to protect the REPUTATIONS OF OTHERS OR THE PUBLIC HEALTH OR MORALS. Freedom of speech is clearly protected by our Constitution and people don’t like what you have to say, they need not listen, and they need not believe it. THIS TREATY HOWEVER WILL PAVE THE WAY TO THE IMPRISONMENT OF CHRISTIANS, for their GOD HOLDS VERY SPECIFIC VIEWPOINTS, AND GOD HATES OTHER RELIGIONS TO THE POINT THAT HE DAMNS THOSE THAT BELIEVE THEM AND REFUSE HIS SON, TO ETERNAL HELLFIRE. Now the UN can call that intolerant. They can scream it is UNFAIR. They can call God all the names they want. It will not change anything. GOD IS SOVEREIGN, and GOD HAS DECREED CHRIST AS THE ONLY ANOINTED ONE.

The internationalists must come up with a method to **STOP THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST DEAD IN ITS TRACKS**. It will be done via UN treaty or RESOLUTION. This treaty, along with the Genocide treaty will soon make it illegal to speak of the Lord Jesus Christ AND HIS ONE TRUTH. It will be outlawed, for it will be branded as **INTOLERANT OF OTHER VIEWPOINTS, WHICH IS A FORM OF HATRED, AND BECAUSE IT INCITES PEOPLE TO CONDEMN OTHER PEOPLES BELIEFS**. Therefore the so-called love of Jesus Christ COULD NOT POSSIBLY BE LOVE, BUT HATRED.

Agape love EXPOSES PEOPLE TO A STANDARD. By its very nature, MAN IS HOSTILE TO IT. Agape love will tell the sinner that what he or she is doing is wrong, and it WILL LEAD TO ETERNAL DAMNATION. That is the truth of God’s word. Phileo love on the other hand, puts its arm around the sinner, and say “it’s OK, we understand, we accept you, we applaud you for your bravery and we love you.” Phileo love WILL NOT OFFEND BY EXPOSURE TO TRUTH. THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST WILL OFFEND TO BRING THE WAYWARD SOUL TO THE TRUTH. The two concepts, the two types of loves are RADICALLY DIFFERENT.

Agape love will not TOLERATE ANY FORM OF SIN. It purges and sanctifies its own and cleans them up and makes them HOLY. Phileo love does no such thing, but is a soft, mushy, all accepting, all forgiving pseudo-love that is hatred at the core of it. Agape love is open, honest, sincere, and tells the truth, no matter what the pain in bearing it. Yet it is gently, meek, and

patient. Phileo love is never honest, never sincere, and never tells the truth because it does not know what the truth is!

## **THE BOOKS OF JUDGMENT**

We will now look at the two aspects of the ruin and depravity of man, which also help us to understand the real problem inherent in phileo love of man. You must also understand that a deception is exactly that: people **UNDER DECEPTION OR DELUSIONS DO NOT REALIZE IT**. The process of coming out from under deception can be very slow and painful, for it requires a process of self-examination, adherence to facts and not opinions or feelings; the facing of the possibility that one is wrong. The overall thrust of the gospel of Christ is to BRING THE BELIEVER OUT OF THE DECEPTION HE/SHE IS IN. The Scripture clearly says ALL MEN ARE UNDER A DECEPTION. In order to come OUT from that deception, MANY AREAS OF HUMAN LIFE HAVE TO BE EXAMINED, DISCARDED, and that is a painful process. IT IS CALLED THE NARROW WAY.

The first area we are going to look at is the area in which the judgment of man is done by God. If we examine this judgment closely, we are going to find further proof of the radical difference between the agape love of God, and the phileo love of natural man. It will help to shed some light and more proof on that fact that the love of God IS HIDDEN from man, that MAN DOES NOT KNOW ANYTHING ABOUT IT, and it is mystery, a secret that is revealed ONLY TO THOSE WHO ARE OBEDIENT TO CHRIST.

We will first look at the BOOKS THAT ARE USED IN THE JUDGMENT PROCESS. The first and most important book we must look at is called the LAMB'S BOOK OF LIFE:

*“And ALL THAT DWELL UPON THE EARTH SHALL WORSHIP HIM (ANTICHRIST),*

*whose names ARE NOT*

*WRITTEN IN THE  
**BOOK OF LIFE OF THE LAMB***

*slain from the foundation of the world.”  
(Revelation 13:8)*

Here we find mention of a BOOK OF LIFE OF THE LAMB. Who is the Lamb? A quick check of the following will prove who the Lamb is: John 1:29, 36; 1 Peter 1:19; Revelation 5:6,8,12 & 13; 6:1 & 16; 7:9-10,14 & 17; 12:11; 13:11; 14:1,4 & 10; 15:3; 17:14; 19:7 & 9; 21:14,22 & 23 and 22:1 & 3. If that does not prove to you that Jesus Christ is the LAMB, your problem is unbelief. We find mention of the LAMB'S BOOK OF LIFE ONLY TWICE. It is not mentioned anywhere else in the Scripture.



***“And there shall in no wise enter into it (NEW JERUSALEM – THE HOLY CITY) ANY THING THAT DEFILETH, NEITHER WHATSOEVER WORKETH ABOMINATION, OR MAKETH A LIE:***

***BUT THEY WHICH ARE WRITTEN IN THE LAMB’S BOOK OF LIFE.”***  
**(Revelation 21:27)**

Here we find that ONLY THOSE WHO ARE WRITTEN IN THE LAMB’S BOOK LIFE ARE GOING TO ENTER HEAVEN AND THE HOLY CITY, NEW JERUSALEM. This of course is why Jesus said HE WAS THE DOOR. Notice that ANYTHING ELSE THAT DEFILETH IS REMOVED. What is it that defileth, worketh abomination, or makes a lie? CARNAL MAN, FLESH MAN, SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN IN SHORT, PHILEO LOVE MAN. The distinction here is blunt: YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN, you must be written in the Lamb’s book of life.

The Lamb is Christ. This is a book of ‘life’. Jesus said the only way we could find ‘life’ was if we walked the narrow way to the destination, which was where ‘life’ was. We have found that the LIFE OF CHRIST IS AGAPE LOVE LIFE. Obviously then, the LAMB’S BOOK OF LIFE IS A BOOK THAT CONTAINS THE NAMES OF THE REGENERATED. We found out previously that the WORD OVERCOMER was used exclusively for the AGAPE LOVE REGENERATED:

**NARROW WAY LEADETH UNTO**

**STRAIT GATE -----LIFE**

***“For whatsoever IS BORN OF GOD (REGENERATED)***

***OVERCOMETH THE WORLD.”***

**(1 John 5:4)**

Anyone who is born of God, that is anyone who has undergone AUTHENTIC REGENERATION is an OVERCOMER. He has fought the fight of the narrow way and obtained the prize of AGAPE LOVE, OF UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST.

***“We KNOW that we have passed***

***FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE,***

***BECAUSE WE (AGAPAO) LOVE THE BRETHREN.***

***HE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH NOT HIS BROTHER ABIDETH IN DEATH.”***

**(1 John 3:14)**

When one is born of God, one goes from DEATH UNTO LIFE. Agape love is the pivot point of passage. Because John says in 1 John 3:1 that agape love is what causes us to be called Son's of God, then the terms OVERCOMER, BORN AGAIN AND LIFE all mean the same thing.

***“He that HATH THE SON HATH LIFE;***  
***and HE THAT HATH NOT THE SON OF GOD***  
***HATH NOT LIFE.”***  
***(1 John 5:12)***

If we pass from death unto life by the bestowment of agape love, and Christ is agape love, then HE THAT OBTAINS LIFE IN THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST HAS CHRIST, AND IS IN UNION WITH CHRIST. The only life listed in Scripture being IN CHRIST, IS AGAPE LOVE LIFE. Therefore we conclude correctly that THE LAMB'S BOOK OF LIFE IS IN FACT THE BOOK OF ALL THOSE WHO HAVE HAD AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED UPON THEM. They are the overcomers, the regenerated.

***“And THIS IS THE RECORD,***  
***THAT GOD HATH GIVEN TO US ETERNAL LIFE,***  
***AND THIS LIFE IS IN HIS SON.”***  
***(1 John 5:11)***

It is important to realize how the BOOKS ARE USED IN JUDGMENT. We are going to find that there were TWO BOOKS OF LIFE. One is the LAMB'S BOOK, the other is a book that lists every man, woman and child ever born on earth. It is simply called THE BOOK OF LIFE. We will see how all of this fits together. The Book of Life is in reality a BOOK OF ALL NATURALLY BORN HUMAN BEINGS WHO HAVE NATURAL LOVE IN THEM. The book of life could be called THE BOOK OF PHILEO LOVE LIFE for all practical purposes. It will soon become clear why this is so.

We find mention of this book of life in several places, and we should examine them close, for it helps unlock the mystery of the deception of phileo love. We have not covered the very controversial subject of the deception of phileo love. We have not covered the very controversial subject of ETERNAL SECURITY IN THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. That can be found in the last book in this series. The long and short of it is this: ETERNAL SECURITY IS AN ABSOLUTE FACT ONLY FOR THOSE WHO HAVE BEEN REGENERATED. It will be proven with multiple verses of Scriptures that this is a truth, even if you do not believe it. The problem with the doctrine of eternal security is that the false prophets, teachers, preachers and evangelists CLAIM A REGENERATION THEY DO NOT HAVE, AND THEN ADD THE DOCTRINE OF

ETERNAL SECURITY TO MULTIPLY THEIR DECEPTION! Some of the verses we will examine will imply the doctrine of eternal security IF YOU HAVE LIFE IN CHRIST JESUS. It does not apply to anyone else.

There are numerous verses of Scripture advanced by the opponents of eternal security to prove it could not be true. The verses they advance to prove their point CATEGORICALLY STATE ONE CAN LOSE HIS POSITION IN THE BODY OF CHRIST. This is not a matter of the opponents to eternal security misinterpretation of what is said, IT IS A MATTER OF WHERE YOU 'PLUG IT IN' to the entire process of salvation. The Bible does not contradict itself. If you have two seemingly OPPOSITE STATEMENTS, it is not a case that one is right and the other is wrong, IT IS A CASE OF WHERE DOES ONE APPLY IT AND TO WHAT AREA OF OUR WALK TO MEET CHRIST! Scripture proves that eternal security is not only a fact but also a necessary ingredient to walking in total victory over the world, as will be shown.

We will now look at the verses that speak of the book of life, and we will see how all of this fits together. Once you grasp it, it becomes very clear why the obtaining of AGAPE LOVE is an absolute requirement if one wants to see heaven.

*“He that OVERCOMETH, the same shall be CLOTHED IN WHITE RAIMENT;*

*and I WILL NOT (I WILL NOT)*

*BLOT OUT HIS NAME OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE,*

*BUT I WILL CONFESS HIS NAME BEFORE MY FATHER,  
AND BEFORE HIS ANGELS.”*

*(Revelation 3:5)*

Jesus ties BEING AN OVERCOMER to wearing the white robes of agape love, as John did, and He says of this OVERCOMER, **THAT HE WILL NOT BLOT HIS NAME OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE.** That means that the ONE WHO BECOMES REGENERATED, AND WHO OVERCOMES THE WORLD BY WALKING THE NARROW WAY TO LIFE CANNOT BE BLOTTED OUT OF THIS 'BOOK OF LIFE'. This book of life is different than the 'lamb's book of life'.

Here is why this must be true: It is only the overcomers who are not blotted out of this book of life. That means there are other people WRITTEN IN THIS BOOK WHOSE NAMES **WILL BE BLOTTED OUT.** A name has to be written there or it could NOT be blotted out! So who then is going to be blotted out from this book? **ALL THOSE WHO ARE NOT OVERCOMERS!** The book of life is a book in which all who are born on planet earth **ARE DUTIFULLY RECORDED BY THE ANGELS THAT KEEP THE BOOKS.** That means that your name and my name and everyone we know and don't know are listed in this heavenly book. **THIS BOOK OF LIFE IS THE BOOK OF HUMAN LIFE, OF HUMAN PHILEO LOVE.** This will become very clear as we proceed.

*“And I saw a GREAT WHITE THRONE, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no more place for them.*

*And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God;*  
**AND THE BOOKS WERE OPENED:**  
**AND ANOTHER BOOK WAS OPENED,**  
**WHICH IS THE BOOK OF LIFE:**  
**AND THE DEAD WERE JUDGED OUT OF THOSE THINGS WHICH WERE**  
**WRITTEN IN THE BOOKS,**  
**ACCORDING TO THEIR WORKS.”**  
**(Revelation 20:11)**

We have to take a close look at this: there is **TWO TYPES OF BOOKS OPENED**; ONE IS CALLED **THE BOOK OF LIFE**, THE OTHER APPEARS TO BE A **BOOK OF WORKS**. In other words, all of these people have a book of works, or a complete history of everything they have ever done, thought and said. This is known as the **GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT**. Every person here is going to have a complete life review, and will be **JUDGED OUT OF THOSE THINGS THAT WERE WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF WORKS**. But we must ask, what is the **STANDARD GOD IS GOING TO USE TO JUDGE THEIR WORKS?** WHAT IS HIS MEASURE?

*“And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged*

**EVERY MAN**

**ACCORDING TO THEIR WORKS.**

*and death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the SECOND DEATH.*  
**AND WHOSOEVER**  
**WAS NOT FOUND WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF LIFE**  
**WAS CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE.”**  
**(Revelation 20:13-15)**

Now this may sound confusing, but it is not if you will bring it all together. Christ said He would **NOT BLOT OUT THE OVERCOMER’S NAME OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE**. **ALL OTHERS WILL HAVE THEIR NAME BLOTTED OUT**. **ANYONE AT ALL THAT IS NOT AN OVERCOMER IS GOING TO BE DESTROYED AT THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT**.

Notice again that the dead are judged **OUT OF THE BOOK OF WORKS**. Their deeds upon earth are going to be measured against **THE STANDARD OF GOD**. Then we find what at first appears

to be a contradiction: all those WHO ARE NOT WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF LIFE ARE CAST ALIVE IN THE LAKE OF FIRE. If all people are written in the book of life, then how could anyone NOT BE THERE? The answer is what Jesus said: HE WHO OVERCOMETH WILL NOT BE BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE. The reason why all of these people are being judged ACCORDING TO THEIR WORKS IS **BECAUSE THEY WERE NOT OVERCOMERS**. BECAUSE THEY ARE NOT OVERCOMERS, **THEY WILL BE BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE**. This judgment is extremely serious: **IT IS THE JUDGMENT OF THE ETERNALLY DAMNED**.

The word “works” here is ergon’ and it means **TO WORK, TO TOIL, TO DO, AN ACT, DEEDS, DOING**. This is clearly then a complete record of each human life. The issue of sending a human soul to eternal ruin and destruction is something the Lord does not take lightly. It is not His will that any human being perish. The complete record, **EVERY SECOND OF TIME, EVERY DEED, EVERY THOUGHT, EVERY ACT IS KEPT IN THE BOOKS**. We would envision this as an INTERNAL AND EXTERNAL VIDEO of everything ever done in that life. God is **SEARCHING FOR SOMETHING**. He is desperately looking for something **IN THESE BOOKS THAT WILL EXEMPT THAT SOUL FROM ETERNAL RUIN**. What is He looking for?

What God is searching for is the **ACT OF ACCEPTING JESUS CHRIST INTO THE INNER CHAMBERS, INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES**. Notice that there ARE TWO BOOKS HERE: WORKS AND LIFE. Did Jesus overlook anyone? Is there one single human soul that somehow slipped through the cracks and is here by mistake? Every second is reviewed. They do not find this name in the book of life, because **JESUS HAD ALREADY BLOTTED IT OUT ONE THOUSAND YEARS BEFORE!**

Do you understand this? The entire human race is written in the BOOK OF LIFE. Then there are those who are covered by the WORK OF CHRIST. Those that OVERCAME are NOT BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE WHEN CHRIST COMES TO JUDGE THE WORLD. They are the ONLY ONES REMAINING IN THE “BOOK OF LIFE”. The LAMB’S BOOK OF LIFE, and THE BOOK OF LIFE ARE NOW IDENTICAL. They remain identical for the 1000 year reign of Christ. At the last resurrection, ONLY THE NAMES OF THOSE PROTECTED BY CHRIST ARE LEFT IN THE BOOK OF LIFE.

Now comes the LAST AND FINAL RESURRECTION. THE BOOK OF LIFE IS OPENED. THE BOOK OF WORKS IS OPENED. Anyone that is NOT WRITTEN IN THE BOOK OF LIFE IS CAST ALIVE INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE. Because ALL THOSE WHO REJECTED CHRIST HAVE BEEN BLOTTED OUT BY CHRIST ONE THOUSAND YEARS PRIOR, NOT ONE NAME IN THIS ERA OF TIME WILL BE IN THE BOOK OF LIFE. The only remaining book they will be in is the BOOK OF WORKS.

There is now nothing left but works. The works of these people, because they REFUSED TO COME TO CHRIST AS HE DEMANDED THEY DO, AND BE COVERED BY HIS AGAPE LOVE, must now be reviewed to see if they MEASURE UP TO GOD’S STANDARD OF PURE AGAPE LOVE.

***“And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I JUDGE HIM NOT: FOR I CAME NOT TO JUDGE THE WORLD, BUT TO SAVE THE WORLD.*”**

**HE THAT REJECTETH ME,  
AND RECEIVETH NOT MY WORDS, HATH ONE THAT JUDGETH HIM:**

**THE WORD THAT I HAVE SPOKEN, THE SAME SHALL  
JUDGE HIM AT THE LAST DAY.”**

**(John 12:47-48)**

Jesus says all those who rejected what Christ said will come under the JUDGMENT OF THE WORD OF GOD. His words encompass the ENTIRE BIBLE, ALL OF SCRIPTURE. All mankind is going to be judged BY THE LAW. We know that what stands behind the law is the GLORY AND RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD, WHICH COMES FROM HIS INNER ESSENCE OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. The standard by which this judgment is going to be done is the ABSOLUTE STANDARD OF PURE 100% AGAPE LOVE. They are going to be put to the agape love test. Each act, each so called “work” is held up to the agape love standard.

We know because of the fall that NO HUMAN BEING HAS AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THEM. We know from experience that we cannot even love in our natural human phileo love 100% of the time. These folks do not stand a chance. But God is not going to take any chances, and He is going to determine how everyone measures up. DID THEY KEEP THE LAW OF PURE AGAPE LOVE OR NOT?

**“FOR WHOSOEVER SHALL KEEP THE WHOLE LAW,  
AND YET OFFEND IN ONE POINT, HE IS GUILTY OF ALL.**

**(James 2:10)**

**“Now we know that what things soever the law saith,  
it saith to them who are under the law:  
That every mouth may be stopped,  
and all the world may become guilty before God.**

**THEREFORE BY THE DEEDS OF THE LAW  
THERE SHALL NO FLESH BE JUSTIFIED IN HIS SIGHT:  
FOR BY THE LAW IS THE KNOWLEDGE OF SIN.”**

**(Romans 3:19-20)**

Jesus said the world that rejects Him shall be judged by the Word. Paul says they will be judged by the LAW. GOOD DEEDS WILL NEVER JUSTIFY ONESELF BEFORE GOD. It does not matter how many good deeds you do, YOU WILL NEVER BE JUSTIFIED BEFORE GOD. There is no living person who can measure up to the standard of God. If you kept all the points of the law all of your life, and offended IN EVEN ONE POINT, YOU ARE GUILTY BEFORE GOD AND MUST BE CONDEMNED. We also know that Christ reduced ALL OF THE LAW DOWN TO AGAPE LOVE. We therefore realize that keeping the law or doing good works will not avail us of anything whatsoever.

This is why Paul said that UNLESS ONE HAS AGAPE LOVE HE WILL PROFIT NOTHING WHATEVER. He can have faith, belief, Holy Ghost power, give everything he owns away, give his own life, and will still go into eternal ruin.

Those people that REJECT CHRIST AND HIS COMMANDS TO ENTER IN TO THE NEW COVENANT OF AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT have to stand before God on their OWN MERITS. Their merit is their so-called 'works'. They are in reality pitting all of their human works, which were done in PHILEO LOVE against THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD AND CHRIST. God is going to deal with them on the basis OF DEBT:

***“Now to him that worketh IS THE REWARD NOT RECKONED OF GRACE,  
BUT OF DEBT.”  
(Romans 4:4)***

All human beings born on planet earth have TWO OPTIONS BEFORE THEM: They can come to Christ via the strait gate and narrow way, and find HIM AND HIS AGAPE LOVE, which is under GRACE, or they can opt to reject Christ and ATTEMPT JUSTIFICATION BY BEING GOOD AND DOING GOOD DEEDS, which is “law keeping” or “legalism”. If you “work” for someone, and do “work” for him, then he owes you for the work done. Because the grace of God shown us through Christ was IGNORED, these people then have only their deeds left. They are telling God He OWES THEM FOR THEIR DEEDS.

The problem is, GOD DID NOT HIRE THEM. They were not under His employ. If God went into His employment files and looked, He would find none of them had filled out any work application. For example, let's say you own and apple orchid. You go out and hire some folks to help you pick the apples now that harvest has come. They fill out their papers, give you their social security numbers and you officially ACCEPT THEM IN YOUR EMPLOY. You agree to pay them at the end of their time based upon whatever you agreed to. Now let us suppose that another group of people, WHO YOU KNOW NOT, COMES AND PICKS YOUR APPLES. Are you obligated to them in any way? Must you pay them because they went out and did the work, even though you did not hire them to do so? The answer is obvious. YOU ARE NOT UNDER ANY OBLIGATION WHATEVER TO THEM.

What these people did whom you did not hire was attempt TO PUT YOU UNDER DEBT TO THEM. But you ARE NOT IN DEBT TO THEM because they DID NOT COME INTO YOUR HIRE IN THE CORRECT MANNER. They are out of luck; their work was in vain. THEY END UP IN TOTAL LOSS. It is this way with the human race. They attempt to justify themselves before God by a multitude of “works”, and they attempt to put God IN A DEBT SITUATION. It does not work. God showed them HOW TO ENTER INTO THE NEW COVENANT. They refused to do as He commanded them to do.

God brought Christ into the world at a very important and very VISIBLE JUNCTURE OF TIME. The Roman Empire was the largest the world had ever known. The entire world knew all about Rome. By bringing Christ into the world at the APEX OF POWER OF ROME, CHRIST WAS VISIBLE TO ALL. Jerusalem was a highly visible city of the world. From Judea the Gospel was spread to the whole world. The Gospel tells the world that Christ has come to redeem man from the chains of slavery. The Gospel ALSO TELLS MAN WHAT HE MUST DO TO PARTAKE

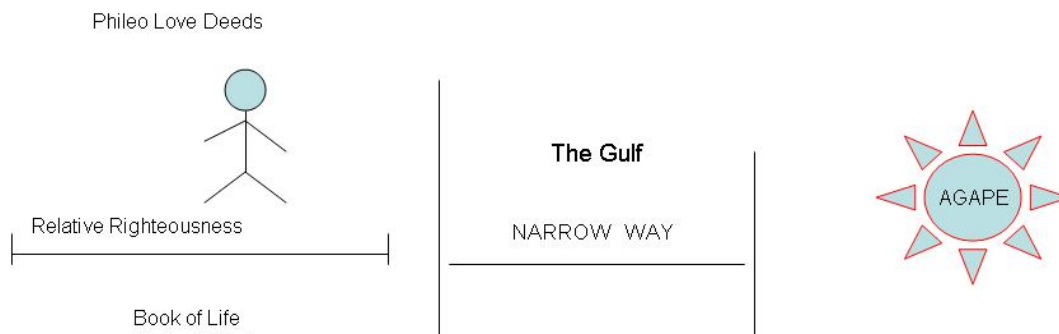
**OF THIS ACT OF GOD.** If we refuse to comply, then we CANNOT ENTER, GOOD WORKS OR NO, DEBT OR NO.

***“Fear them not therefore: FOR THERE IS NOTHING COVERED,  
THAT SHALL NOT BE REVEALED;  
AND HID, THAT SHALL NOT BE KNOWN.”  
(Matthew 10:26)***

What Christ was referring to is THE BOOKS OF WORKS. They are opened before all, and the judgment of all is FROM WHAT IS WRITTEN IN THE BOOKS. If human love is such a great thing, and if mankind is so “essentially good”, then why do we have POLICE, JAILS, PRISONS, COURTS, GOVERNMENTS, WAR, MILITARY MACHINES, ETC.? If man is so good, why do we have all of this murder, rape, theft, arson, beatings, torture and who knows what? Human love is going to be exposed for what it is: SELF CENTERED, CORRUPT, MANIPULATIVE, AND EVIL. When God takes even the most noble of human deeds and applies His standard, they are PITCH BLACK BY COMPARISON. That is why **WORKS DO NOT AVAIL THE HUMAN SOUL WHATEVER.**

Entrance to heaven is not based upon ‘works’ of righteousness or ‘works’ of the law. Entrance to heaven is based upon KEEPING THE SAYINGS OF JESUS AND DOING THE WILL OF THE FATHER. That is in fact the definition of FAITH. FAITH IS OBEDIENCE, AND OBEDIENCE IS DOING WHAT YOU ARE TOLD. IF YOU REFUSE TO DO WHAT IS TOLD, YOU DO NOT HAVE BIBLICAL FAITH, FOR YOU DO NOT BELIEVE GOD OR CHRIST ENOUGH TO DO AS COMMANDED. In fact, you have no real faith, and no real belief. It is the work of the human being TO BELIEVE FROM HIS HEART OF HEARTS. The strait gate and narrow way are the only method God gave to us so that we CAN BELIEVE FROM OUR HEART OF HEARTS. If we refuse to comply, we may believe as deeply as we wish IN THE SOUL, BUT IT WILL AVAIL US NOTHING.

If we examine works in PHILEO LOVE, we can then fully understand why the vast majority of Christians and the entire Christ rejecting world goes into eternal ruin: THEY SPEND ALL OF THEIR TIME IN PHILEO LOVE WORKS AND NEVER WALK THE NARROW WAY TO FIND AGAPE LOVE AND ‘REST’ in GOD!





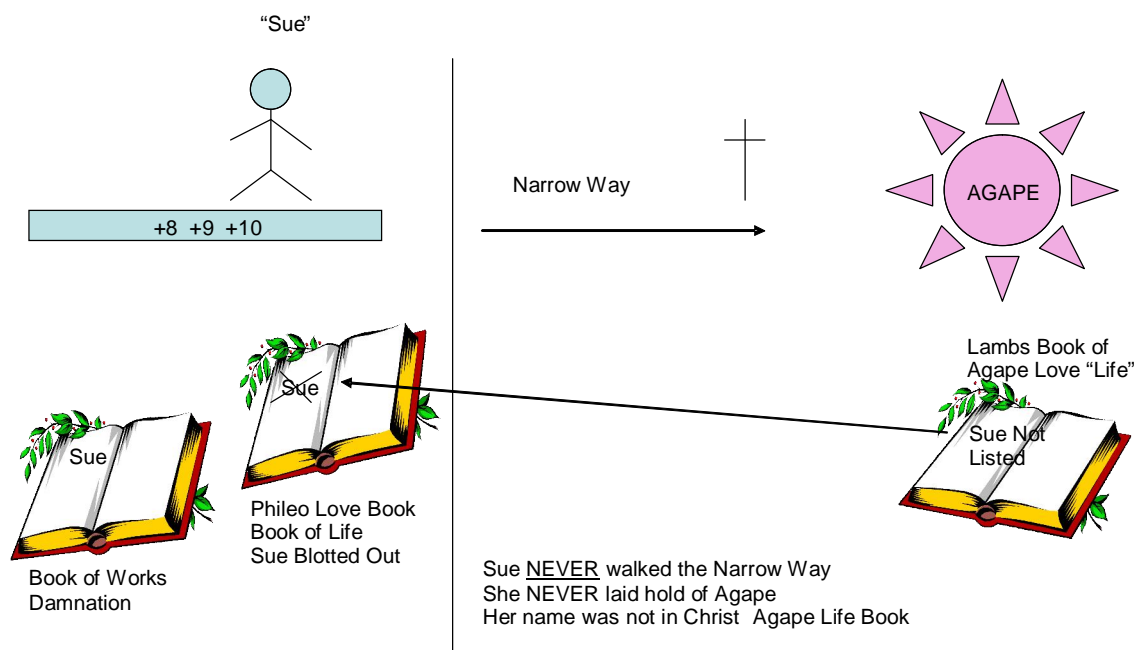
You will notice that the gigantic gulf between man and God is separated by the narrow way. This is the only way listed, so it is the only way God gives us. You will also notice in the illustration that all mankind SPEND THEIR TIME ON THE HUMAN PHILEO LOVE SIDE, THE RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SIDE. Their works under phileo love may be astounding. They could have flawless works, be utterly dedicated to others and finally give their lives for others. Let's take a few examples to be sure we understand it.

Our first example will be a woman we call Sue. Sue from the time she was a child LOVED OTHER PEOPLE. She worked hard and gave of everything she ever earned to the good of others, and kept nothing for herself. Through the years her dedication to the good of man and for her unflinching love of others earned her a great admiration of the world. Her flawless love of others finally obtained her the Nobel Peace Prize award. She was hailed over the world as the model example of the greatness and the power of love. Her dedication and zeal was the subject of magazine articles and books. She became a role model for many others who would follow her.

She finally grows old and dies. The angels of heaven come and take her spirit body before the Lord. She is positive, absolutely certain that her standing before the Lord is good. After all, she had done everything the Lord had told her to do. Much to her surprise, SHE IS REJECTED OUT OF HAND. SHE STANDS STUNNED. God wanted to know what she had done about Jesus. He wanted to know where was her AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT, HER UNION WITH CHRIST? She did not have the agape love robes of Jesus Christ. Jesus said unto her: "Get away from me, you who work iniquity." The Holy angels are summoned, and she is led to the gates of hell, where she is then taken and chained in the fires until the great White Throne Judgment.

Sue's problem was that she did not LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE. She was working under the delusion that her own great love for man WAS THE LOVE OF GOD, AND THAT IT WAS WHAT GOD DEMANDED OF HER. Had she read the bible, had she studied it at length, she would have known that she was in grave danger with her love theology. So it was for the many.

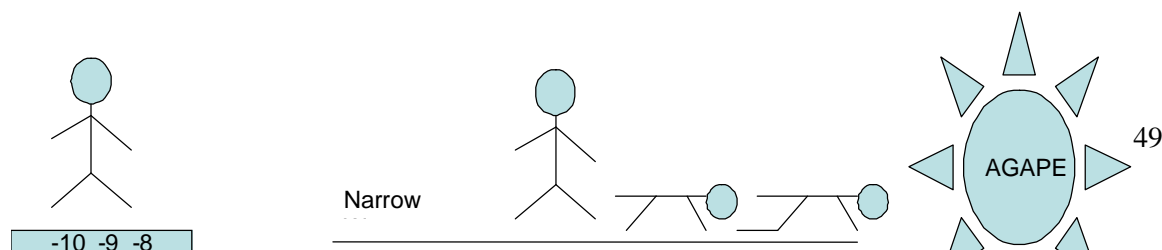
ALL HER WORKS, ALL OF HER RIGHTEOUSNESS WAS ON THE RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE. ALL OF HER WORKS WERE DONE IN PHILEO LOVE. She never came to know or understand the mystery of God's agape love.



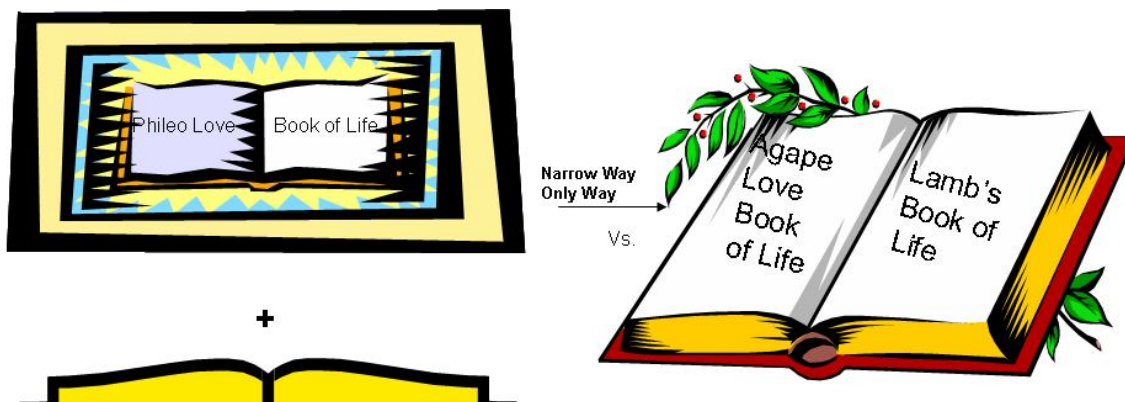
Our next example is a man named Bob. He did both good and bad deeds. When he was younger he got into real trouble with the authorities and had to spend some time in community service. In his middle years, Bob got involved with some real evil people, and was responsible for several people getting murdered. He was sent up for life. While in prison, Bob began to really examine his life, and how it had all been a total waste. He knew he had done real wrong, and felt real guilty over it. While in prison he was given a Bible by the Gideon's. Faithfully he read it night and day, trying to find the answer to life and everything about it. He became convinced that Jesus was telling the truth, and in silent prayer one night, he decided that he was going to find the truth of this Jesus, and he decided that no matter what, he was going to lay hold of the 'truth'.

He asked the Lord to show him the truth. He became a fanatic at Scripture study. He read it, and then he meditated on it. Bit by bit the Holy Spirit began to work on Bob and gently brought him along the narrow way. In the course of the next three years Bob was brought down via the power of the Holy Spirit. He was convicted of sin, righteousness and judgment. Bob knew he was dead inside. The conviction of this death grew as time passed. Finally Jesus came to him. "Your trouble, Bob, is that you do not have agape love," Jesus gently said. Bob readily confessed it was a truth. Jesus showed him in the spirit what agape love was. He looked into the depth of it, the height of it, the breadth of it. Jesus said, "Will you agape love?" Bob struggled for a moment and finally said "yes, Lord". At that moment, Jesus entered into Bob's Holy of Holies and THE UNION WAS ACCOMPLISHED.

Bob died and went to heaven. Jesus was waiting for him. "Well done, thou good and faithful servant, enter thou in to the JOY OF THY LORD."



The difference between Sue and Bob WAS THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. Bob ADMITTED HE WAS LOST, ADMITTED HE WAS A SINNER, ADMITTED HE DESERVED DEATH. Over the course of three long years, Bob proved his faith in Christ was genuine as God tried it in the fire. He did as Christ commanded, and HE CONTINUED IN HIS DOCTRINE UNTIL HE FOUND THE TRUTH: AGAPE LOVE, AND THAT TRUTH SET HIM FREE. Bob allowed the Holy Spirit to convict him of sin and judgment to his heart of hearts, and he never turned back from the REBUKE AND THE REPROOF OF THE LORD. Bob knew that a mental commitment was not enough; he knew there was MORE, MUCH MORE. Sue on the other hand would never ADMIT SHE WAS A LOST SINNER. SHE NEVER WOULD ADMIT THAT SHE DESERVED ANYTHING BUT LIFE. Her faith was in her works and in her own CAPACITY TO PHILEO LOVE.



The grand delusion is therefore that **THE PHILEO LOVE OF MAN IS THE LOVE OF GOD**. In conclusion then, we have found that the fall of man brought him into utter subjection and control by Satan and his demons. It brought man to utter destitution within. He died a spiritual death, he lost agape love, and he is in very deep trouble with the Lord for his actions. We found that through genetics and the DNA code that the sin nature is passed down to all men and women via the male sperm. All men are thus condemned to eternal ruin. There is only **ONE ESCAPE: JESUS CHRIST**. We must all, one by one, come to the **LIVING CHRIST**, and we can only come to Him **VIA THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY**. He gave us no options; He gave us no exceptions. **ALL MUST COME THE SAME WAY, FOR GOD IS NOT A RESPECTOR OF PERSONS**.

Will you come? Will you submit your spirit and soul to the conviction of the Holy Spirit? Will you enter the strait gate? Will you walk the narrow way? Or will you allow your own denominational theology to keep you from doing it? The choice is yours, the penalties for disobedience are more severe than you can imagine. I urge you to consider this carefully.

**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**SIX**  
**HEART AND SOUL**

In this next group of reports, we are going to deal with the issue of the walk TO the living Christ, and by exploring what the Bible actually says about it, and comparing that to what modern Christian theology says, we will discover why the vast majority went wrong in their profession of faith. From that determination, we can be sure that we are NOT numbered among the MANY.

We have now shown you that it is possible to believe most sincerely you are a saved and regenerate Christian, to believe that you are in union with Jesus Christ, and still be rejected because Jesus did not know you. We have seen the outright statements of Christ, and in some of the parables that **IT IS JESUS KNOWING US THAT DETERMINES OUR SALVATION, NOT US THINKING WE KNOW JESUS.** I will say that again:

**IT IS JESUS CHRIST KNOWING US THAT DETERMINES OUR SALVATION, AND NOT US THINKING WE KNOW JESUS.**

The vast majority of Christians rejected **THOUGHT THEY KNEW JESUS, BUT DID JESUS KNOW THEM?** He says He did not, and thus **FOR THAT REASON ALONE, THEY WERE CAST OUT OF HEAVEN.** We have also proved that the reason given by Christ that He did not know them was their **failure to be regenerated,** or born again IN TRUTH. They did not have the SPIRIT OF CHRIST, THE SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE. Do we not then have the right to draw this conclusion?

HAVING JESUS CHRIST KNOW US DEPENDS UPON AUTHENTIC REGENERATION OR REBIRTH.

HAVING JESUS KNOW US IS DEPENDENT UPON AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, WHICH IS THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST FOR AGAPE LOVE IS CHRIST.

HAVING JESUS CHRIST KNOW US THROUGH HIS SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE IS UNION WITH CHRIST.

If this is true, then we have also proved that **THE VAST MAJORITY OF PEOPLE HAVE A FAULTY CONCEPT OF WHAT REBIRTH OR REGENERATION IS, FOR THEY ARE SENT AWAY FOR EVER.** They were positive they were born again or regenerated or whatever

their theology told them union with Christ meant. We have also proved that **TRUE UNION WITH CHRIST IS CONNECTED TO AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**. We can then conclude that the vast majority of people had a very faulty concept of what AGAPE LOVE REALLY IS, AND HOW ONE OBTAINS IT. They claimed they had it, they claimed they knew what it was, they claimed A UNION WITH CHRIST THEY DID NOT HAVE. WHY?

We have implied that there is a difference between the CONSCIOUS HEART AND SOUL and the **SUBCONSCIOUS INNER HEART**. We have hinted that IN THIS AREA MIGHT BE ANOTHER KEY TO FIND OUT WHAT HAPPENED TO THE MANY.

Whenever you attempt to bring that which is of the invisible world to graphics or words in an attempt to explain the virtually unexplainable, you run the extreme likelihood of over simplification, and being incorrect because of it. It has been said by those in modern science that the mind is the final frontier. We know very little about the mind and how it operates, but we do know some things. The Bible does have much to say about the make-up of man, and we are going to attempt to unravel its comments, and then distill them down so we grasp the key essentials.

We have some questions that we must ask. Is there a radical difference between the soul and the inner core of our heart? Is man constructed just like the tabernacle of Old Israel? Does regeneration occur only in the Holy of Holies? Is this where the TRUE UNION WITH CHRIST ACTUALLY OCCURS? Is the strait gate and narrow way the DISTANCE BETWEEN THE CONSCIOUS SOUL AND HEART AND THE DEEP INNER AND HIDDEN HEART? Is that why Jesus said it was full of anguish and agony, full of mental pressure and mental tribulation? Our answers will determine our eternal destiny. Does the IMAGE OF GOD, THE LIKENESS OF GOD EXTEND BEYOND THE AGAPE LOVE AREA? What does Jesus mean we He says that we have A MIND, A SOUL, AND A HEART?

***“Jesus said unto him, THOU SHALT LOVE THE LORD THY GOD  
WITH ALL THY HEART,  
AND WITH ALL THY SOUL,  
AND WILL ALL THY MIND.”  
(Matthew 22:37)***

***“AND THOU SHALT LOVE THE LORD THY GOD  
WITH ALL THY HEART,  
AND WITH ALL THY SOUL,  
AND WITH ALL THY MIND.”  
(Mark 12:30)***

***“And he answering said, THOU SHALT LOVE THE LORD THY GOD***

*WITH ALL THY HEART,  
AND WITH ALL THY SOUL,  
AND WITH ALL THY STRENGTH,  
AND WITH ALL THY MIND;  
AND THY NEIGHBOUR AS THYSELF.”*  
(Luke 10:27)

There is no question here that Jesus taught there are THREE SECTIONS TO MAN IN THE INVISIBLE REALM, **THE HEART, THE SOUL, AND THE MIND**. I also believe that the sequence He gives is important to our understanding. God constructs or creates everything from the INSIDE OUT. THAT IS TO SAY, HE DOES NOT BUILD A TREE BY PUTTING ON THE BARK, AND THEN MOVING TOWARDS THE CENTER, HE STARTS AT THE CENTER, AND MOVES OUTWARD.

If this is the case, then Jesus is giving us a clue as to the stepping stones of the invisible realm of man: **THE HEART IS AT THE VERY CENTER, THE SOUL IS NEXT, AND THE MIND IS THE OUTER PORTION OF ACTIVITY**. We should find a verification of this concept. If we look up the definition of the word ‘heart’ as used by Jesus, it does indeed verify that the heart is the center. The Expanded Vines EXPOSITORY Dictionary of New Testament Words says on page 537 about the heart (kardia) ...

“The Bible describes human depravity as in the ‘heart’, because sin is a principal which has its seat IN THE CENTER OF MAN’S INWARD LIFE, and then defiles the whole circuit of his action, Matt. 15:19, 20.”

It is the SEAT OR THRONE UPON WHICH THE GREAT “I AM” SITS ENTHRONED IN THE MAJESTY OF GODHOOD. The heart is the VERY CORE OF HUMAN EXISTENCE. From the heart of man, from his CENTER, spring the issues of life. It is the heart that lost the AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE. It is the heart; that Jesus Christ must change.

The heart however, is not considered as a SINGULAR ESSENCE. The heart has more than one section or layer, according to the Scripture. A heart can be DIVIDED, IT CAN BE DOUBLED, NOT WHOLE.

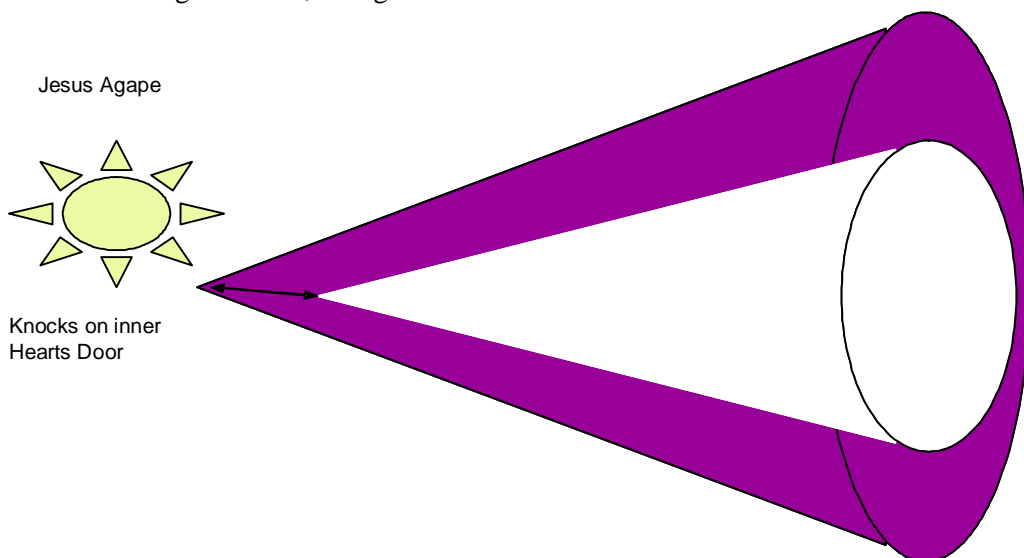
*“They speak vanity every one with his neighbour: with flattering lips and  
WITH A DOUBLE HEART DO THEY SPEAK.”*  
(Psalm 12:2)

The word “double” here is in reality a mistranslation. It was simply put in there to express something implied. In reality, the Hebrew uses the word “leb” TWICE. In other words it says

“leb leb”. The word “leb” means **CENTER OR HEART**. This is important to us to realize for what the Old Testament is telling us **IS THAT THERE ARE TWO CENTERS, TWO HEARTS, TWO ‘I AM’ LOCATIONS**. This is the key to what happened to the **MANY CHRISTIANS THAT ARE REJECTED**.

If we interpret this exactly as it is written, it means in the most literal sense **TWO SEPARATE AND DISTINCT HEARTS; LEB (1) LEB (2)** One heart says one thing, the other heart says something else. Could this be why the Bible says we must be of a **WHOLE HEART, OR WITH ALL OUR HEART?** Could it be that the many Christians rejected did not worship Christ with their **WHOLE HEART, WITH ALL OF THEIR HEART, THAT ONLY ONE OF THEIR HEARTS WAS INVOLVED**, THE OUTER HEART, THE CONSCIOUS HEART, THE CONSCIOUS “I AM” AND WILL? THAT THE OTHER REMAINED COLD AND UNYIELDING, HARDENED.

If we were to diagram it out, it might look like this:



Notice that we have drawn it like ice cream cones that overlap each other. The centers of both represent the **TWO HEARTS**. The center of the outer cone represents the conscious heart of man, the conscious “I AM”. In this heart, a man wills to do and operates on the conscious level. You might decide to go to town, or buy something. This is done by this **OUTER CONSCIOUS MIND, WILL AND HEART**. If I ask you your name, you reply with it. This is your **CONSCIOUS “I AM”**. The evidence would suggest that this conscious I AM is more aware of the good side of the knowledge of good and evil, while the subconscious is more activated by the evil side of this knowledge. The **INNER HEART, THE INNER “LEB” REMAINS UNKNOWN AND HIDDEN, A SECRET, A MYSTERY TO THE VAST MAJORITY OF MAN.**

This secret inner heart, mind and will of man is represented by the second cone, and this is the **REAL TRUE SEAT OF MAN, WHERE THE GREAT ‘I AM’ SITS UPON THE THRONE IN THE HOLY OF HOLES DIRECTING THE SECRET AFFAIRS OF MAN**. It is **THIS HEART** that is the target of God, for it is **THIS SECRET INNER HEART** that **MUST BE REGENERATED OR ALL IS LOST**. The strait gate and narrow way are then a way of **UNMASKING THE EVIL WITHIN, OF UNMASKING THE TRUE NATURE OF THE HUMAN BEAST**.



*“Blessed are they that keep his testimonies, and that seek him  
WITH THE **WHOLE HEART.**”  
(Psalm 119:2)*

The word for “whole” is ‘kol’ and it means **EVERY PART, THE WHOLE, ALL OF IT TOGETHER.** In other words, the **TWO HEARTS OF MAN, THE TWO CENTERS OF MAN MUST BE UNITED TOGETHER, TO FORM A COMPLETE HEART.**

*“And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye search for me  
WITH **ALL YOUR HEART.**”  
(Jeremiah 29:13)*

The word “all” here is ‘kol’ and as before it means **EVERY PART TOGETHER, THE COMPLETE HEART, THE WHOLE OF THE PIECES OF THE HEART TOGETHER.**

*“And I will give them an heart to **KNOW ME,**  
that I am the **LORD:**  
and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall **RETURN**  
**UNTO ME WITH THEIR WHOLE HEART.**”  
(Jeremiah 24:7)*

*“...**THOU SHALT LOVE THE LORD THY GOD WITH**  
**ALL THY HEART.**”  
(Matthew 22:37)*

The command of the Lord was that we **AGAPE LOVE WITH ALL OF OUR HEART, WITH OUR WHOLE HEART, WITH EACH HEART.** If man has in fact **TWO HEARTS, TWO CENTERS, TWO “I AM’S”**, then the command is obvious:

**WE ARE TO HAVE TWO CENTERS, WHICH ARE SEPARATE, COMBINED AND FORGED TOGETHER INTO A WHOLE UNIT: UNDIVIDED, COMPLETE, PERFECT.** Is this what Scripture is saying?

*“For the eyes of the **LORD** run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to **SHEW HIMSELF STRONG IN THE BEHALF OF THEM***

***WHOSE HEART IS PERFECT***

***TOWARD HIM...”***

(2 Chronicles 16:9)

The word “perfect” here is ‘shalem’, and it means to be **COMPLETE**. The root of the word is ‘shalam’ which means **TO BE SAFE, TO BE COMPLETE, TO HAVE COMPLETED, TO RESTORE**. It has to do with regeneration, which is what makes a person complete. A portrait is beginning to emerge here that is very important.

If God requires that **OUR TWO HEARTS, OUR TWO CENTERS TO BE COMBINED AND BOTH OF THEM TRUE TOWARDS HIM**, then the reverse of that would be that if only one of our hearts was true towards Him, but the other was not, we would then **BE NOT TRUE, BUT FALSE IN OUR CLAIMS OF SEEKING THE LORD**. If we be false in our claims of **SEEKING** the Lord, then our proclamations are **FEIGNED, UNTRUE, FALSE, HYPOCRITICAL**:

*“And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah hath*

*NOT TURNED UNTO ME WITH HER WHOLE HEART,*

*BUT FEIGNEDLY, saith the LORD.”*

*(Jeremiah 3:10)*

The point God is making here is very clear: **IF YOUR HEART IS NOT WHOLLY TURNED, IF BOTH OF YOUR HEARTS ARE NOT UNITED TOGETHER**, then you are **FEIGNING YOUR DEVOTION, IT IS NOT PURE, IT IS NOT REAL**. The word “feignedly” is ‘sheqer’, and it means **AN UNTRUTH, DECEIT, FALSE, LIAR, VAIN, WRONGFULLY**. Keep in mind that if something is untrue with God, is vanity, that it is vain. What makes this false is that it is not done **IN TOTALITY**. In order to have this be true, **THEN ONLY ONE OF THE HEARTS IS INVOLVED, AND NOT THE OTHER**. They are both to be brought together, unified.

Is this what happened to the many? Did they sincerely love Jesus with their **OUTER CONSCIOUS HEART, AND WILL**, but were **TOTALLY UNAWARE OF THEIR INNER HEART**? If they refused the narrow way, there would be no way they could have known about it, for the **NARROW WAY** is the method God uses to **EXPOSE OUR INNER HEART NATURE TO US**.

The opposite of feigned is unfeigned. If we look into the Scripture for the word unfeigned, we find four references, which tell us bluntly what happened to the many.

*“Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth  
THROUGH THE SPIRIT*

*UNTO UNFEIGNED (AGAPE) LOVE*

*OF THE BRETHREN,*

***SEE THAT YE (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER***

***WITH A PURE HEART FERVENTLY:***

***BEING BORN AGAIN...***

***(1 Peter 1:22-23)***

Peter ties together ***UNFEIGNED AGAPE LOVE TO BEING BORN AGAIN***, in complete agreement with 1 John 3:1 & 14. The point here is that ***IF THERE IS AN AGAPE LOVE UNFEIGNED, THERE IS A FEIGNED (OR FALSE) AGAPE LOVE***. If there is a false or hypocritical agape love, then it is an AGAPE LOVE OF DECEPTION. It pretends to be true, but is false. We know that in Jeremiah God tied together the fact that if the WHOLE HEART IS NOT INVOLVED, IT IS A FEIGNED COMMITMENT. IT IS FALSE BECAUSE ONLY ONE HEART HAS BEEN CHANGED, NOT BOTH.

The conclusion we must draw then is that REGENERATION, BEING BORN AGAIN, BEING BORN OF AGAPE LOVE, REQUIRES ***BOTH HEARTS*** OF MAN TO BE COMBINED, TO BE IN TOTAL AGREEMENT. If they are not, no regeneration can take place. The MANY CHRISTIANS REJECTED had only a FEIGNED AGAPE LOVE, BECAUSE THEY WERE NOT WHOLLY COMMITTED UNTO THE LORD. The requirement of God TO FIND HIM, IS TO HAVE BOTH HEARTS TOTALLY COMMITTED.

***“By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost,***

***BY (AGAPE) LOVE UNFEIGNED.***

***(2 Corinthians 6:6)***

Again I point out that ***IF THERE IS AN UNFEIGNED AGAPE LOVE, THERE IS A FEIGNED AGAPE LOVE***. The false teachers HAD A FEIGNED AGAPE LOVE, A FEIGNED UNION, A FEIGNED REBIRTH. It was all vanity. The warnings of the Scripture, the warnings about the many rejected, of how the false teachers come in with FEIGNED WORDS, and a FALSE GOSPEL OF SALVATION all come together here: THE DECEPTION OF THE MANY WAS THAT THEY WERE BORN AGAIN WHEN THEY WERE NOT. THEY CLAIMED THEY WERE WHOLLY COMMITTED UNTO THE LORD WHEN THEY WERE ONLY HALF COMMITTED. ONLY ONE OF THEIR HEARTS HAD UNDERGONE CONVERSION TO CHRIST, NOT THE OTHER. Their deception was made by the REDEFINITION OF FAITH. The Bible also speaks of an UNFEIGNED FAITH. The opposite would be a FEIGNED OR FALSE FAITH.

***“Now THE END of the commandment***

***IS (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY OUT OF A PURE HEART,***

*AND OF A GOOD CONSCIENCE, AND*

*OF FAITH UNFEIGNED.”*

*(1 Timothy 1:5)*

Here we find that the end of the commandment is PURE AGAPE LOVE. If the END OF THE COMMANDMENT IS PURE AGAPE LOVE, OR DIVINE AGAPE LOVE, how do we attain it? By regeneration. IF WE BE REGENERATE, WE HAVE AN AGAPE LOVE UNFEIGNED, because GOD BESTOWS THE REAL THING. AND HE WILL NOT BESTOW IT UNTIL BOTH HEARTS ARE READY AND PREPARED, AND THAT BESTOWMENT BRINGS WITH IT A FAITH UNFEIGNED.

The many rejected had a FEIGNED FAITH. Their definition of faith was not the Biblical definition of faith. They redefined faith to make it into something it is not! They then peddle this false concept of faith to the masses, who grab it, and who then by that FEIGNED FAITH, CLAIM A FEIGNED REGENERATION, A FEIGNED AGAPE LOVE, AND A FEIGNED UNION. The Bible definition of BELIEF AND FAITH IS ALWAYS REGENERATIVE. Only the regenerated Christian has a true faith, and a true agape love. ALL OTHERS ARE FEIGNED.

We now can draw some conclusions that are not pleasant. THE FALSE TEACHERS, THE FALSE PREACHERS AND EVANGELISTS, AND THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WHO FOLLOWED THEM FAILED TO GET BOTH OF THEIR HEARTS TOGETHER,

## **THEY WERE OF TWO HEARTS.**

We have proven that the false teachers and the many who follow them into eternal ruin ARE UNDER A DECEPTION. If you are under a deception, YOU ARE NOT AWARE OF IT. JESUS SAID THEY “KNOWEST NOT”. Jesus waited until the JUDGMENT SEAT TO INFORM THEM OF THEIR DECEPTION. He did not warn them prior to it.

We then have only one conclusion to draw: THE ONE HEART THAT WAS FULLY COMMITTED TO CHRIST WAS THE ONLY HEART THEY WERE

## **CONSCIOUS OF.**

What heart are you CONSCIOUS OF? What does God mean by TWO HEARTS? We will now look a little deeper into this and examine what the Scripture says about the mind:

*“A DOUBLE MINDED MAN*

*IS UNSTABLE IN ALL HIS WAYS.”*

*(James 1:8)*

*“Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you.  
Cleanse your hands, ye sinners;  
and  
PURIFY YOUR HEARTS,  
YE DOUBLE MINDED.”  
(James 4:8)*

In speaking of double mindedness, James says the following:

*“But let him ask in FAITH, NOTHING WAVERING.  
FOR HE THAT WAVERETH IS LIKE A WAVE OF THE SEA DRIVEN WITH THE WIND  
AND TOSSED.  
  
FOR LET NOT THAT MAN THINK THAT HE SHALL  
RECEIVE ANY THING OF THE LORD.”  
(James 1:6-7)*

Remember that we looked at UNFEIGNED FAITH. What would then be a feigned faith? A FEIGNED FAITH WOULD BE A PARTIAL FAITH, A FAITH ONLY FROM ONE HEART. James goes on to say they will receive nothing from the Lord. The many did not receive the PROMISE OF GOD, THAT IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. They did not receive REGENERATION. What happened?

We are closing in on the real issues involved. The words “believe” and “faith” are for all practical purposes IDENTICAL. Man has TWO HEARTS. Each heart is distinctly different than the other. Each heart has a WILL, A CENTER, AN “I AM”, AND HAS FAITH AND HAS BELIEF.

The two hearts of man are THE CONSCIOUS HEART AND THE UNCONSCIOUS HEART. The conscious heart is where man lives, reasons, feels, has emotions, thinks and carries on his CONSCIOUS ACTIVITIES IN LIFE. For all practical purposes, THE CONSCIOUS HEART IS THE SENSE MAN, THE SOUL MAN, THE EARTHLY MAN. Paul refers to it as CARNAL MAN, FLESH MAN. This outer layer of the MIND, of which there ARE TWO, science calls the CONSCIOUS MIND.

The conscious mind is a SENSE MIND, and it collects data, just like a computer collects data. The data is collected by the five senses. TOUCH, SMELL, HEARING, SEEING, TASTING. These are all INPUT SIGNALS, WHICH THE CONSCIOUS MIND THEN SORTS, FILES AWAY AND COMPUTES. All of the emotions, such as fear, love, joy, happiness and such are SENSUAL EXPERIENCES. THEY ARE SENSUAL, OF THE SENSES. They are earthly, of the earth. Man became, after the fall, DOMINATED BY HIS SENSES. His outer mind, his conscious mind TOOK CONTROL OVER THE SPIRIT.

All sense knowledge comes in via the five senses. If you study the Bible, you either use your sight to read, or you use your sight and hearing, or your hearing only, depending upon the method of input. THIS IS CALLED SENSE KNOWLEDGE. It is a knowledge DERIVED OF THE

SENSES. You can memorize the Bible, backwards and forwards, upside down and right side up, you could be able to quote it by every phrase as a computer can in seconds and wow your audience. BUT IT IS STILL ONLY SENSE KNOWLEDGE. It is only of the OUTER MIND, which simply draws the memory from the subconscious mind which has files within it. A computer works the same way. You file data in the computer for future retrieval and use depending upon what you are doing.

By filing the data in FILES, you make it readily accessible for retrieval when needed. The human brain works like a computer in this respect. We all have FILES, or PIGEON HOLES, in which we deposit data for future use. Those involved in memory studies have found methods that really do work to help us KEEP TRACK OF OUR MANY FILES. If you ask a computer to search for a FILE, IT MAY FIND IT INSTANTLY, BUT THEN AGAIN IT MAY TAKE AWHILE TO LOCATE IT. Once in a while the computer says FILE NOT FOUND. Once in awhile (more often than we like) we run in to the same thing: FILE NOT FOUND. That happens when you try to think of a name and cannot remember it! FILE NOT FOUND.

When you attempt to recall information, you are in fact sending a signal to the SUBCONSCIOUS MIND WHICH SEARCHES FOR THAT INFORMATION. YOU YOURSELF CAN RUMMAGE THROUGH THE FILES TRYING TO LOCATE IT. It might take a long time to do it. You wake up in the middle of the night and suddenly REMEMBERED THE NAME. File found!

This outer core of man, this outer part of the brain, which we call the CONSCIOUS MIND, HAS A HEART, A WILL, A GREAT 'I AM' AND CAN DECIDE WHAT IT WILL AND WILL NOT ACCEPT AS TRUTH. The conscious mind then IS THE CONTROLLING MIND FOR LIVING IN THE SENSE WORLD.

It is vital to understand that when a person makes a decision to do something or not to do something, **THAT IT IS THE CONSCIOUS MIND THAT IS INVOLVED**. The conscious mind has a CENTER, OR SEAT.

The seat, or center of the CONSCIOUS MIND, IS WHERE THE HEART IS. The word heart always refers to the CENTER, OR WELLSPRING OF THE CONSCIOUS HEART, IF THAT IS THE HEART WE ARE DEALING WITH. The center is where your great "I am" is located. If I walk up to you and ask you what your name is, you would say "I am so and so". How do you know that? Because you are in possession of your faculties, of your mind, and your conscious mind is FULLY AWARE OF WHO IT IS.

When you decide to do something, and do it, your conscious mind, your conscious HEART, your conscious WILL all act in harmony AND YOU DO THAT WHICH YOU PROPOSED TO DO, be it go to town, bake cookies, go fly fishing, or whatever. Until you decide, your mind evaluates what ever DATA IT HAS, and puts you on hold until a decision is made. "I'm not sure" is being put on hold. Your mind is not MADE UP, YOU HAVE NOT DECIDED FULLY IN YOUR CONSCIOUS HEART.

When you have finally evaluated all your data, or gone and found more data to help you decide, you will eventually arrive at a decision: THE WILL IS ALWAYS INVOLVED IN THIS DECISION. "I will do this", or "I will not do this". Some people however will do something WITHOUT WANTING TO DO IT. Their decision to do it is based upon what others think, not what they think. Nevertheless, a DECISION HAS BEEN MADE TO ACT. This involves the

will. ONCE THE WILL IS COMMITTED THAT PERSON WILL THEN PROCEED TO CARRY OUT WHATEVER CHOICE WAS MADE.

What is important to understand is that WHEN A DECISION FOR CHRIST IS MADE, IT IS MADE WHOLLY AND TOTALLY IN THE CONSCIOUS MIND, BY THE CONSCIOUS WILL, BY THE CONSCIOUS "I AM". It is, and must be WHOLLY A SENSE DECISION, FOR WE HAVE NO OTHER CHOICE. We are in control of our conscious mind. We ourselves sit upon the throne of the conscious mind, and we DECIDE TO ACCEPT THE CLAIMS OF CHRIST OR REJECT THEM.

But what if this is not enough? What if this CONSCIOUS HEART DECISION DOES NOT AVAIL US OF UNION? What if there is ANOTHER HEART, DEEPER, BEYOND ANYTHING WE CAN REACH? What if THAT HEART REMAINS A STONE? What if our conscious mind DECEIVED US INTO THINKING IT IS OUR WHOLE HEART? Because we are only AWARE OF OR CONSCIOUS OF OUR CONSCIOUS HEART, THEN IT EASILY CAN POSE AS BEING OUR TRUE HEART, WHEN IN FACT IT IS NOT. We at that time come under a DECEPTION AND DELUSION.

What if there is yet another heart, a heart so deep within that it lies buried beneath the SUBCONSCIOUS, AND LIES IN THE VERY INNERMOST CENTER OF OUR BEING? What if God and Christ are telling us that IT IS THIS INNERMOST HEART THAT MUST BE REGENERATED AND NOT THE CONSCIOUS HEART? Then we would be in big trouble, and not be aware of it! The only time we would become aware of it would be when we die, and GOD EXPOSES IT TO US, AND SHOWS US THIS UGLY, DARK, EVIL INNER HEART OF HEARTS WHICH WE CONSCIOUSLY NEVER KNEW ABOUT. It would be like Goober of Mayberry RFD who says "SURPRISE! SURPRISE!"

What a SURPRISE IT IS for the many! What utter shock and what utter HORROR AND TERROR THEY NOW FACE BECAUSE THEY WERE NOT AWARE OF THIS INNER HIDDEN, AND VERY SECRETIVE HEART, A HEART FULL OF DECEPTION AND LIES. What if Jesus MUST COME TO KNOW AND COME INTO UNION WITH THIS INNER HEART, AND NOT THE OUTER HEART AT ALL?

Is there an INNER HEART? Is there an INNER MAN? Is there a SPIRIT MAN THAT DWELLS DEEP, DEEP WITHIN, AT THE VERY CENTER OF OUR BEING?

***"But let it be the HIDDEN MAN OF THE HEART,  
in that which is NOT CORRUPTIBLE,  
EVEN THE ORNAMENT OF A MEEK AND QUIET SPIRIT,  
which is in the sight of God of great price."  
(1 Peter 3:4)***

Science will tell you without Scripture that there is a SUBCONSCIOUS MIND. It is an extremely POWERFUL DYNAMO, AND IF WE LEARNED TO CONTROL IT PROPERLY, HOW MUCH POWER WOULD MAN HAVE? Those that study the mind claim this subconscious part of ourselves is PROGRAMMABLE, and that we program it via our CONSCIOUS MIND THOUGHTS. In other words, what you think about, what you read, do, watch and hear is what is

filtered through INTO THE SUBCONSCIOUS MIND. That MIND THEN BEGINS TO MIRROR BACK WHAT WE FEED IT, AND WE BECOME WHAT WE THINK. Jesus said the same thing: “As a man thinketh, so is he.”

How does one become a Christian? First of all he makes a ‘choice’ for Christ and begins to ‘follow’ after Christ. He follows ‘after’ Christ by reading the Bible and reading all sorts of books, watching videos and listening to tapes, and going to church functions. HE FEEDS HIS MIND ON THINGS OF CHRIST. The subconscious dynamo dutifully records all of this input and BEGINS TO MIRROR BACK THAT WHICH IS PLACED INTO IT. This mirroring back is sensed as a form of DEEP INNER COMMITMENT.

If you walk up to a mirror and say, “I am ugly”, and you do that twenty million times, you will **CONVINCE YOURSELF UTTERLY IT IS A TRUTH**. The real truth about it does not matter, **FOR THE MIRROR IMAGE OF YOURSELF REPEATS BACK WHAT IT IS PROGRAMMED WITH**. Some things spoken to us when we are very young GO DIRECT INTO THE SUBCONSCIOUS AND THEY REMAIN THERE AS “TRUTHS”.

Many a child is crippled emotionally by their thoughtless parents by cruel and untrue remarks which the child, who **FULLY TRUSTS THE PARENTS, ACCEPTS THESE THINGS AS TRUE**, and they ARE TRUE FOR THAT CHILD’S MIND, even if they are not true as a matter of fact. IT IS THIS DISTORTION OF REALITY THAT CRIPPLES THE HUMAN SOUL. Counseling of the emotionally disturbed is nothing more than an attempt to REPROGRAM THE SUBCONSCIOUS, AN ATTEMPT TO ERASE THE DATA FILES IT HAS DEEP WITHIN. All sorts of methods are used to go deep into the inner mind, such as hypnosis, meditation, etc.

It is the duty of the subconscious to RECORD EVERY INPUT RECEIVED. It is like a huge video camera that records SIGHT, SOUND, FEEL, SMELL AND TASTE. From all of this data, A BEING IS SHAPED, LIKE A CLAY DOLL IS SHAPED BY ITS MAKER.

The subconscious mind is, ONCE PROGRAMMED, very powerful, and will not GIVE UP ITS PROGRAMMED INFORMATION EASILY. When you issue the command to DELETE FILE, it refuses to do so. The human subconscious does not have a DELETE FUNCTION. You cannot erase what is written there. Once placed there, it is there forever. What we attempt to do is then to REROUTE, TO OVERWHELM WITH NEW EVIDENCE THE REAL TRUTH. As we present NEW EVIDENCE, the DECEPTION, THE DELUSION we are under in OUR SUBCONSCIOUS MIND IS EXPOSED TO OUR CONSCIOUS MIND. We begin the slow and painful process of REPROGRAMMING OUR FAULTY INFORMATION.

Because of the power of this subconscious mind and its ability to MIRROR BACK that which is programmed to do, IT IS A SMALL LEAP TO ATTEMPT TO REPROGRAM WITH ALL POSITIVE, ALL AFFIRMATIVE INFORMATION. If we were to continually tell ourselves that we are good, great, wonderful, beautiful people, that we are in reality GODS, soon the SUBCONSCIOUS MIND BEGINS TO MIRROR BACK THOSE AFFIRMATIONS, AND WE PROGRAM OURSELVES INTO THE FINAL GRAND DELUSION. We become puffed up at our own importance, our own Godhood. Enter the NEW AGE MOVEMENT, AND ALL NEW AGE CONCEPTS.

Their entire basis lies in this ability to REPROGRAM THE HUMAN SUBCONSCIOUS, AND THUS WE CAN BECOME ANYTHING WE WANT BY THIS METHOD. The methods vary, but the concept is identical: WE WILL BECOME THAT WHICH WE BELIEVE. It is the power



of the subconscious mind that man is now tinkering with, and they dub it THE LAST FRONTIER.

They are not aware HOW CORRECT THEY ARE. IT IS THE LAST FRONTIER, IT IS THE LAST THING GOD WILL ALLOW MAN TO PLAY WITH. This is the other basis for the grand delusion. What man does not realize is that SATAN'S DOMAIN IS THE INNER SUBCONSCIOUS MIND, and when they unleash the power of it, THEY WILL UNLEASH THE SUPERNATURAL POWER OF SATAN, WILL OF ITS LYING SIGNS AND WONDERS. Because Satan also has dominion over the atmosphere as well, he will SUBSTANTIATE THE INNER DELUSIONS WITH PHYSICAL MANIFESTATIONS TO PROVE IT ALL TO MAN. The internal MANIFESTATION will be that PHILEO LOVE RELEASED IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, and WILL PROVE TO MAN'S SPIRIT THAT HE IS GOD, THAT HE WAS GOOD, THAT HE IS GOOD, THAT HE IS EVOLVING UPWARDS, THAT GOD IS WITHIN.

The phileo love of man released is a powerful force, in fact the most powerful force man has within him. ***PHILEO LOVE IS A CARNAL LOVE, A SOUL LOVE, A FLESH LOVE, A SENSE LOVE.*** It is of the earth, earthly. It is the common LOVE FORM that man will use to GLUE TOGETHER HIS ONE WORLD ORDER OF THE ANTICHRIST. PHILEO LOVE ISSUES FORTH FROM THE CONSCIOUS HEART OF MAN. As stated before, EVERY HUMAN BEING KNOWS ABOUT PHILEO LOVE IN ALL ITS VARIOUS FORMS. THIS IS THE COMMON BOND, THE COMMON IDENTIFIER. Satan will then use the subconscious mind's ability to deceive itself, and will then add an OUTER MANIFESTATION TO PROVE IT WAS ALL TOTALLY CORRECT!

Lying signs and wonders, manifestations from the Spirit world, such as the many sightings of Mary, like the Fatima visions will spread around the world, with the call to FULL REPENTANCE. This call will be further strengthened by UFO activity, with a supposed contact with EXTRA TERRESTRIALS, so that we can be merged with an INTERGALACTIC CIVILIZATION, THE NEXT STEP OF MAN TO GODHOOD.

The explosion of UFO activity and so called "channelers" who write via 'automatic writing' prove the case. With one accord the so called 'aliens' are calling for LOVE, PEACE, BROTHERHOOD. The so called 'love' they are calling for is NATURAL HUMAN LOVE RELEASED FROM DEEP WITHIN. The entire premise is based upon the fact that **LOCKED UP DEEP WITHIN EACH HUMAN BEING IS A CORE OF LOVE.** It is the OUTER GARMENT, (the conscious and subconscious mind) THAT IS CAUSING US THE PROBLEMS, AND ALL WE NEED TO LEARN TO DO IS TO RELEASE THIS INNER CORE OF LOVE, AND WHEN WE DO, WE THEN WILL REALIZE OUR GODHOOD.

It is this release of love that must be attained by mankind before he will be allowed to enter this so called INTERGALACTIC CIVILIZATION THAT IS BASED UPON LOVE. Our UFO brothers, who have come to help us make the change, will inform us exactly how it is to be done. We will then follow their instructions and be REBORN INTO GODHOOD STATUS; OUR RADIANT INNER LOVE SHOWING FORTH TO ALL. With Satan at the helm, he will mix in LYING SIGNS AND WONDERS (OF WHICH THE UFO ITSELF IS A PART OF), and this will **PROVE TOTALLY TO MAN THAT HE IS IN FACT A GOD, THAT HE IS IN FACT EVOLVING, THAT HE IS IN FACT DESTINED FOR THE STARS.**

The explosion of movies such as Star Trek, Star Wars, E.T., Close Encounters of The Third Kind, The Day the Earth Stood Still and a host of others is TO PREPARE MANKIND OF THE

PHYSICAL MANIFESTATION OF THE FALLEN SONS OF GOD. Jesus said that as it was in the days of Noah, so would it be again. Noah lived 950 years, with 600 of those years before the flood. He saw the Sons of God arrive from the so called 'heavens'. Revelation 12 says it will happen again.

There are three main baselines to the grand delusion that God is going to heap upon unregenerate man, and that also includes the vast majority of Christians. They are:

1. Phileo love released is the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.
2. That mankind is inherently good, and simply must learn to control the evil.
3. That mankind is destined by evolution to become GODS.

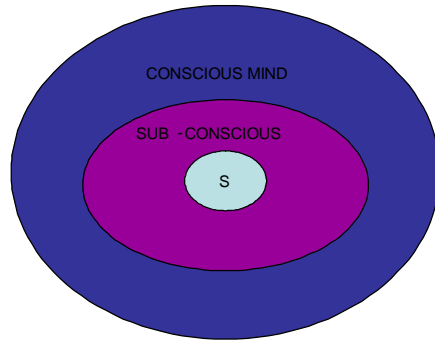
From these three parameters come all the other delusions. The fact that mankind is to EVOLVE TO GODHOOD, WILL BE PROVEN BY CONTACT WITH EXTRATERRESTRIALS. In the movie COCOON, the aliens when unsuited are beings of LIGHT. THE BIBLE SAYS THAT SATAN APPEARS AS AN ANGEL OF LIGHT. We have a multitude of people all over the world who have reported seeing these unidentified flying objects. In our files, we have records that are copies of US Government agency secret reports that prove contact with aliens is an established fact. THESE DOCUMENTS ALSO PROVE SOMETHING MORE IMPORTANT: THE GOVERNMENT'S OFFICIAL POSITION IS THAT **EVOLUTION IS A FACT**.

The concept of evolution is one of the main underpinnings of the entire concept that PHILEO LOVE IS AGAPE LOVE. If man is evolving upwards, then where does this so called 'evolution' stop? Only one place: FULL GODHEAD STATUS. Man must merge with his creator. If man is evolving, then man is where he is supposed to be on the scale of evolution. Because everything is reduced down to natural evolution, then the natural love of man **MUST BE THE LOVE OF GOD, WHOSEVER HE MAY BE PICTURED TO BE.**

The mind is the last frontier that man thinks he can conquer. To prove it, God will allow Satan to throw every supernatural power he has at man to deceive them, because they rejected the ONLY WAY TO THE TRUTH THERE WAS; THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. The grand delusion is designed in such a way as to prove to man that HE IS A GOD, THAT HE IS DIVINE, THAT HE DOES NOT HAVE TO DO WHAT CHRIST SAID. The unregenerate church will plunge headlong into this delusion, and in fact has already by and large EMBRACED PARTS OF IT.

We must now go deeper into the mind to the very center, that which is the deepest part of man, the inner chamber, the innermost place of activity. It lies beyond the subconscious, and it is here that THE INNER MAN, THE SPIRIT MAN, THE REAL MAN DWELLS IN SECRECY, HIDDEN FROM ALL EXCEPT THE LORD GOD ALMIGHTY. He sits in ABSOLUTE SPLENDOR, ROBED AS SOLOMON AND SITS UPON THE THRONE OF THE MOST HIGH GOD. HE SITS OVER HIS OWN MERCY SEAT, FORGIVING ALL OF HIS OWN SINS. He is cloaked in utter secrecy, BEYOND THE REACH OF THE CONSCIOUS MAN.

THIS INNERMOST MAN, THE MOST HIGH GOD, IS WHERE SPIRIT MAN SITS. Because of the fall SPIRIT MAN IS DEAD TO GOD BUT VERY MUCH ALIVE TO SATAN. It is this inner spirit man, the real heart of man where all the evil lies, and from that poisonous heart spews forth the evil that TAINTS THE ENTIRE MAKEUP OF SUBCONSCIOUS AND CONSCIOUS MAN. IN GRAPHIC FORM IT LOOKS LIKE THIS:



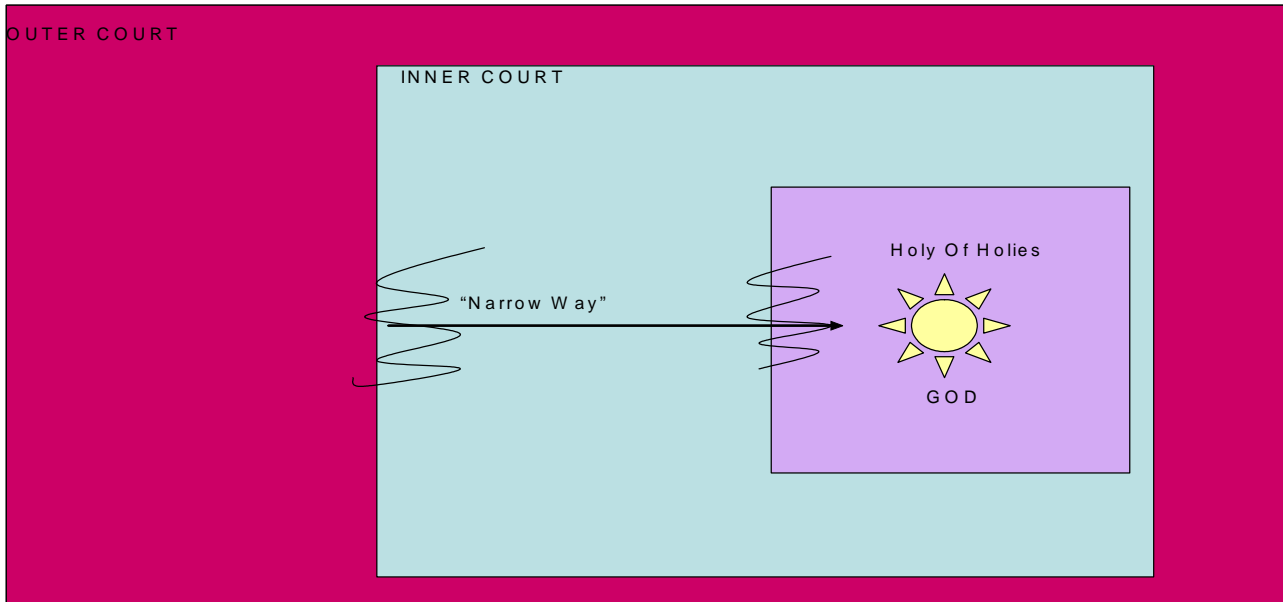
Notice that we have THREE MAIN PARTS TO MAN, A TRIPARTITE BEING. We have the outer most surface part, THE CONSCIOUS MAN. We then go to the subconscious man, where all of his deep filing system is stored. The subconscious mind is VEILED FROM VIEW; we cannot see into it. We know there is a deeper part to us, but we cannot reach it. THAT IS THE SUBCONSCIOUS. THEN AT THE CENTER IS THE VERY WELLSPRING OF ALL THAT WE ARE; THE INNER MAN, THE SECRET MAN, THE SPIRIT MAN.

Because God is a SPIRIT, and because AGAPE LOVE IS A SPIRIT LOVE, and because SPIRITUAL THINGS CAN ONLY BE KNOWN BY THE SPIRIT, then we begin to discern that IT IS, AND MUST BE THE INNER MAN, THE SPIRIT MAN THAT IS IN FACT REGENERATED. Then we should find proof that Jesus considers the SPIRIT MAN A TOTALLY SEPARATE ENTITY FROM THE SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN.

Is there other proof in Scripture that is a fact? Could it be that the TABERNACLE IN THE WILDERNESS AND THE TEMPLES IN ANCIENT ISRAEL REPRESENT THE INVISIBLE CONSTRUCTION OF MAN? Does the temple of the Lord also represent THE WAY TO TRUTH?

***“THY WAY,  
O GOD,  
IS IN THE SANCTUARY...”***  
(Psalm 77:13)

THE WAY OF GOD IS IN THE SANCTUARY. It is in the temple. It is so portrayed to the people so that NO ONE HAS EXCUSE. Could it be that both the construction of man, and THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY ARE ACTUALLY SHOWN TO US IN THE CONSTRUCTION OF THE TEMPLE OF GOD?



Notice in the drawing that there are THREE COMPARTMENTS:

1. THE OUTER COURT
2. THE INNER COURT
3. THE HOLY OF HOLIES

In the chapter on regeneration we will go over the temple in depth, for it portrays the perfect picture of the **WAY OF THE TRUTH**. The act of regeneration occurs IN THE HOLY OF HOLIES. It was in the Holy of Holies that the God of Israel dwelt. His presence was literally seen by the High Priest as the SHEKINAH GLORY, a brilliant white light that floated over the mercy seat of the Ark of the Covenant. Within the ark was the **TWO TABLETS OF THE LAW**. Jesus brought all the law down to **AGAPE LOVE**. Also contained in the Ark of the Covenant was **MANNA**. Manna is a code word for **AGAPE LOVE**. Christ referred to it as the **HIDDEN MANNA**. The next object found was AARON'S ROD THAT BUDDED. It was a dead stick: **FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE**. All the elements of **REGENERATION ARE FOUND ONLY IN THE HOLY OF HOLIES**.

It should be noted that ISRAEL and the religious duties of Israel ARE A SHADOW OF THINGS TO COME. Israel is an example to the Christian. Many within the church totally ignore the Old Testament, and are told by their pastors that the Old Testament has no meaning for the Christian today. It is absolutely wrong, a heresy, and by so doing also ignore their own salvation, because buried deep within the traditions of Israel lie the keys to the hard sayings of Jesus. **Ignore them at your own peril.**

If it is **ONLY** in the **HOLY OF HOLIES WHERE AGAPE LOVE DWELLS**, could it be that we have to journey all the way to the center of the temple to get it? That the Holy of Holies represents our **HIDDEN, SECRET AND VEILED INNER HEART, THE SEAT OF OUR LIFE, OUR OWN HOLY OF HOLIES?** Could it be that the death of Christ TORE OPEN THE VEIL SO WE COULD THEN ENTER IN THROUGH HIM? That His work on the cross PAVED THE WAY FOR ANYONE TO ENTER, if they would be obedient?

*“And, behold, the VEIL OF THE TEMPLE WAS RENT IN TWAIN  
**FROM THE TOP TO THE BOTTOM;**  
AND THE EARTH DID QUAKE, AND THE ROCKS RENT.”  
(Matthew 27:51)*

Does not a veil hide from you what is inside? That a veil keeps it from your conscious mind, from your sight? Unless you PENETRATE THE VEIL, you cannot find out what is in the INNER COURT, and beyond that, in THE HOLY OF HOLIES? Is not your subconscious mind veiled from your view? You know you have a subconscious mind, but you cannot probe its depths. We all have a hidden inner secret THRONE ROOM, and that is where the OTHER SELF SITS IN GLORY.

Where then in reality is THE REAL HEART OF MAN? Is it in fact VEILED FROM VIEW, TOTALLY HIDDEN, TOTALLY SECRET, AND NOT AT ALL REVEALED UNLESS AND UNTIL YOU ENTER **THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO THE CENTER OF YOUR OWN HEART?** Could it be that the inner heart of man is SO WICKED, SO DEPRAVED, SO EVIL that God in His mercy HID IT FROM OUR VIEW SO WE COULD AT LEAST LIVE WITH SOME FORM OF SANITY? Could it be that people like Ted Bundy and Hitler are but what we all are deep within? That somehow they failed to BRIDLE THE EVIL IMPULSE THAT LIES WITHIN EACH OF OUR HEARTS? Could it be that **THIS HEART OF OUR OWN PERSONAL HOLY OF HOLIES IS THE HEART THAT MUST BE CHANGED?**

*From whence does all of our evil come from? Jesus said it was the VERY CENTER OF MAN, HIS HEART OF HEARTS.* It is *manifested* in the OUTER HEART, FOR THAT IS WHERE WE LIVE, WORK, PLAY AND SPEAK. What if the call of Jesus was for us to take a very lonely journey to the center of our own heart, so we could see FIRSTHAND WHAT WE ARE? So we could see FIRSTHAND IN A *VERY EXPERIENTIAL MANNER HOW DESTITUTE WE ARE?* If man cannot see his own heart, and its utter destitution is hidden from him, then it would require SUPERNATURAL POWER to come to Christ, who is waiting and knocking on the door of THE INNER HEART! What if the cry to God for *SALVATION MUST COME FROM THIS INNER CORE HEART?* What if our RECOGNITION OF WHAT OUR TRUE SIN IS HAS TO COME FROM THIS INNER HEART? DOES THE TEMPLE OF ISRAEL RESEMBLE HOW WE ARE MADE?

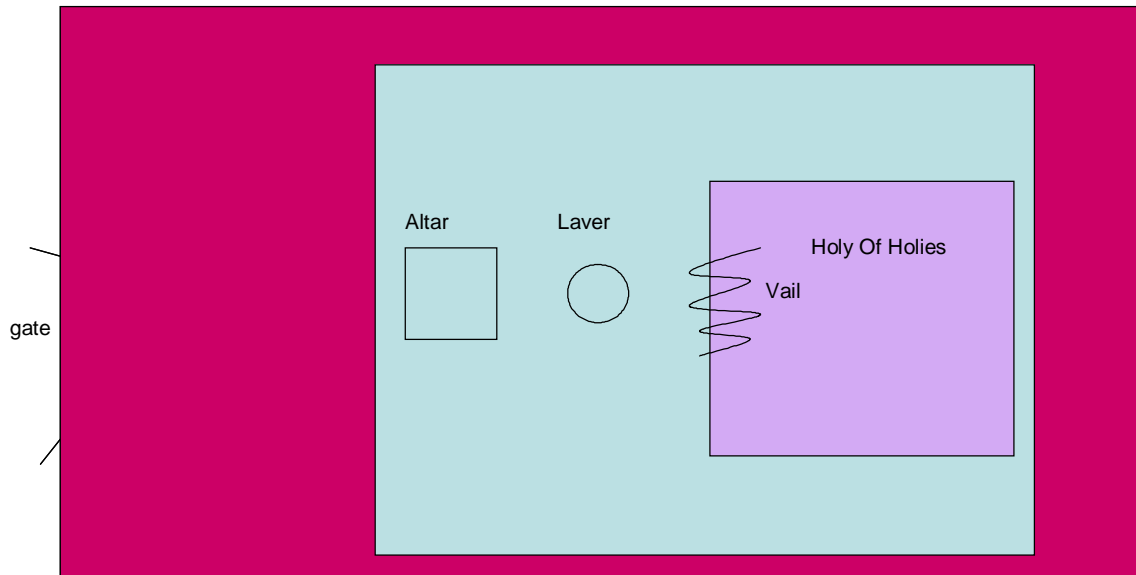
Is this why Christ said that it was IMPOSSIBLE TO COME TO HIM unless the FATHER DRAWS US IN? Is that what Paul meant by the POWER OF GOD? Is this why Jesus called the journey STRAIT AND NARROW? That is in truth a supernatural journey that ONLY A FEW WILL MAKE? IS GOD TRYING TO TELL US SOMETHING, AND WE ARE IGNORING IT? The correct answer determines your eternal destiny.

IS IT POSSIBLE THAT WE HAVE TO JOURNEY THROUGH THE VEIL OF OUR SUBCONSCIOUS TO BE SHOWN THAT WE ARE DESTITUTE OF TRUE LOVE? THAT WE ARE INDEED DEAD? Could it be that in this journey of UNMASKING THE TRUTH OF WHO AND WHAT WE REALLY ARE, WE ARE REBUKED AND REPROVED OF GOD?

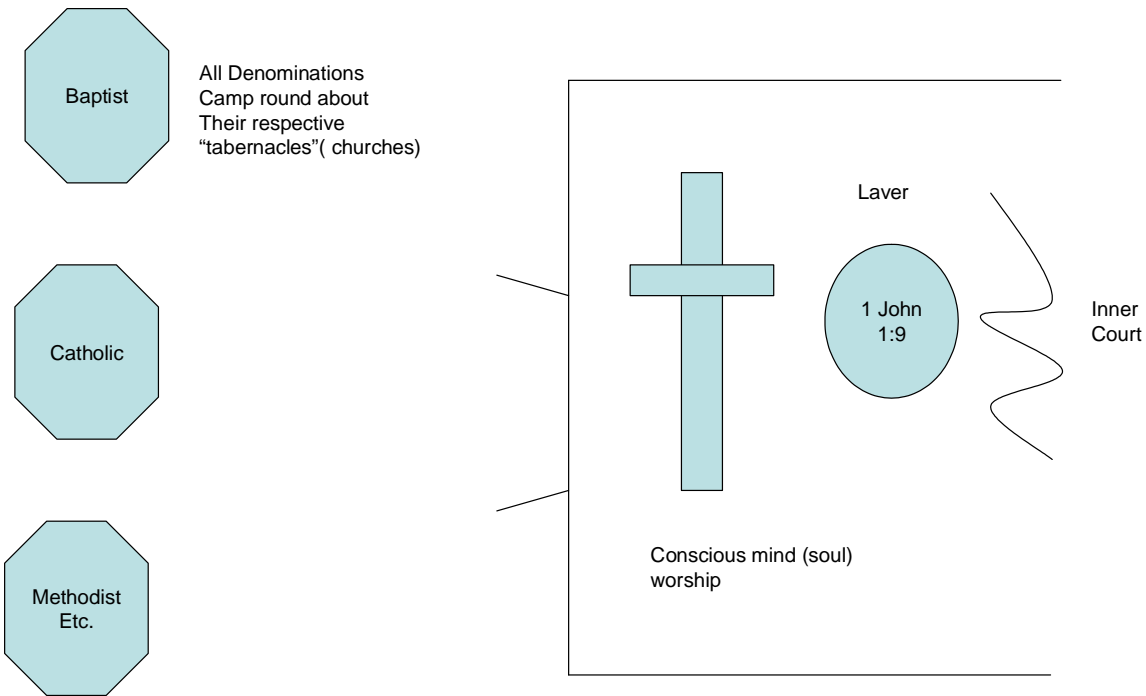
## THE OUTER COURT

The outer court had a WIDE GATE that was 20 CUBITS WIDE. It had a beautiful four-colored curtain, which could be seen afar off. This gate was on the EAST SIDE, by which the children of Israel could enter in to the BROAD OUTER COURT to perform their religious obligation. That gate was clearly visible for all the children of Israel to see. It is not hidden; it is not VEILED FROM THE SIGHT. The children of Israel camped around the tabernacle, with each tribe assigned a specific location. **All of the VISIBLE RELIGIOUS ACTIVITIES WERE CONDUCTED IN THE OUTER COURT. That is where the people came to offer up their offerings and to be cleansed from their sins. It was the duty of the Priesthood to assist in these duties.**

Located in the outer court were two main objects: THE BRAZEN ALTAR AND THE BRAZEN LAVER. The altar was where the animals were brought to God, and offered as a sacrifice, under the 'law of the burnt offering'. It was also the place for the PEACE OFFERING. It was for A SIN OFFERING. The spilling of the blood of innocent animals was a foreshadow of Christ, who spilled His innocent blood to cover our sins. The LAVER was a polished bowl with water in it. By washing in the water, all sins were forgiven. The outer court looked like this:



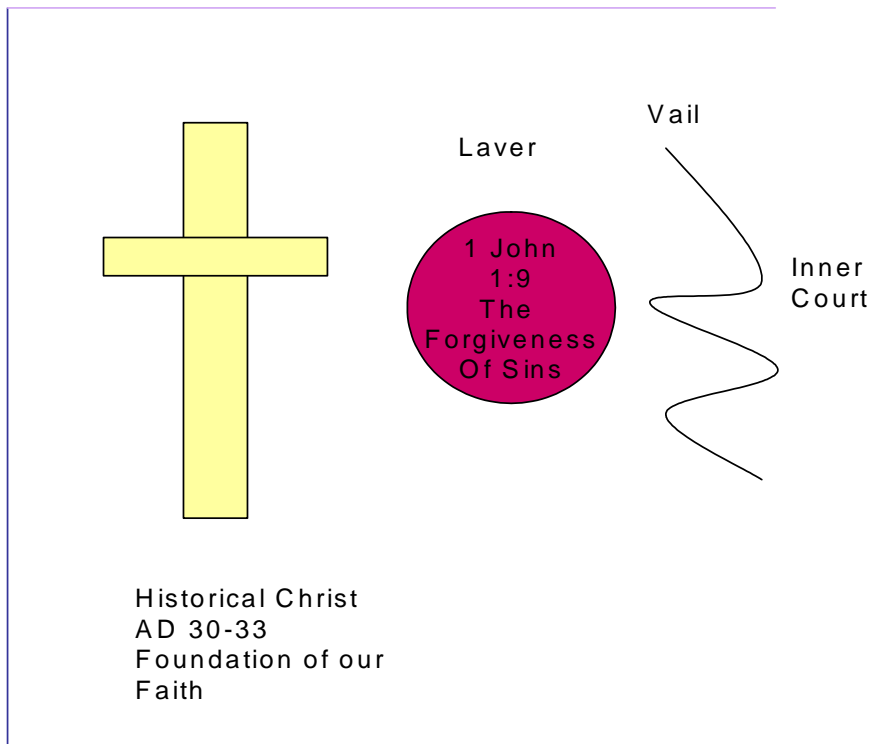
What does this have to do with Christianity? Everything. We are, by virtue of OUR FAITH IN CHRIST, GRAFTED IN TO THE OLIVE TREE OF ISRAEL. WE ARE PART OF ISRAEL. The outer court represents something very important to the Christian: IT IS WHERE THE HISTORICAL CROSS OF CHRIST STANDS:



How can we make such a statement? All things in the outer court are VISIBLE FOR ALL TO SEE. The entire world, if they wanted to come and look, could have looked upon the OUTER COURT OF THE TABERNACLE OF ISRAEL. ALL THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL COULD EASILY SEE AND KNOW WHAT WENT ON THERE. Israel is but an EXAMPLE, for the Church.

Christ died upon a cross IN FULL VISIBILITY OF MANKIND. Christ coming to earth was the **PHYSICAL, VISIBLE MANIFESTATION OF GOD ON EARTH. THE GODMAN CHRIST DIED UPON A CROSS OPENLY.** The Church upon earth is the **VISIBLE MANIFESTATION OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL IN THE CHURCH AGE.** It is now the CHURCH that is CAMPED ROUND ABOUT THE TABERNACLE OF ISRAEL. The cross STANDS WHERE THE ALTAR STOOD. **THE CROSS STANDS IN THE PLACE OF THE BURNT OFFERINGS, THE SIN OFFERINGS.**

In the place of the laver; **WE HAVE 1 JOHN 1:9.** By claiming 1 John 1:9, the Christian washed himself/herself in the laver of AGAPE LOVE WATER. The more things change, the more they remain the same. GOD DOES NOT CHANGE. HIS THOUGHTS DO NOT CHANGE. **THUS:**



Each Christian is told to perform his religious obligations. Billy Graham says it this way: “And go to church next Sunday”. What Billy Graham is saying is what any pastor of any church will say to you: **GO TO CHURCH**. Going to church is the fulfillment of **RELIGIOUS OBLIGATION. IT IS ALL VERY VISIBLE**. Is the church you go to a **VISIBLE CHURCH**? **CAN YOU SEE IT? DO YOU KNOW THE ADDRESS OF IT? CAN THE WORLD SEE IT? DOES YOUR COMMUNITY KNOW IT IS THERE?** If any stranger were to come along, could he enter in and **WATCH THE VISIBLE PERFORMANCE OF THE SERVICE?** **COULD HE WATCH THE PEOPLE OFFER UP THEIR TITHES AND OFFERINGS AS THE PLATE IS PASSED?** **COULD HE WATCH PEOPLE GO FORWARD AND ASK FORGIVENESS OF SIN?** **COULD HE HEAR THE SONGS OF WORSHIP AND PRAISE?**

The answer is of course, **YES**. The visible Church is the **VISIBLE PART OF THE BODY OF CHRIST UPON EARTH. IT IS PLAIN FOR ALL TO SEE!** If the outer court **REPRESENTS THE VISIBLE ASPECTS OF THE WORSHIP OF GOD,** THEN WHERE WOULD WE HAVE TO PUT THE **CROSS OF CHRIST, WHICH WAS HIGHLY VISIBLE?**

How do we drive to church? How do we decide to even go? How do we decide to listen to our pastor or to ignore his sermon and fall asleep? How do we sing? How do we pray? How do we offer our offerings? How do we decide where to sit? With whom to sit with? How do we decide who we wish to converse with? **ALL OF OUR RELIGIOUS ACTIVITIES ARE ACCOMPLISHED IN OUR CONSCIOUS MIND, WITH OUR CONSCIOUS HEART, MIND, AND WILL!** Our **CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL ARE VERY VISIBLE TO US, WE ARE AWARE OF THEM; THEY MANIFEST THEMSELVES TO US IN A VERY VISIBLE AND EXPERIENTIAL WAY!** It is from our conscious heart that all of our emotions



come from. It is from here that we EXPERIENCE JOY, HAPPINESS, LAUGHTER, LOVE, PASSION, LUST, SADNESS, CRYING, ETC.

It is from our CONSCIOUS MIND THAT ALL OF OUR 'DECISIONS' are made. WE HAVE NO OPTIONS; THAT IS HOW GOD CONSTRUCTED US. Any so called 'decision' for Christ **MUST BE, HAS TO BE MADE BY THE CONSCIOUS MIND, BY THE CONSCIOUS HEART.** You utilize **YOUR OWN WILL AND MAKE THE CHOICE TO FOLLOW CHRIST.** With your conscious mind you decide to follow through or not follow through on your decision. If your decision was a **WHOLE OUTER HEART CHOICE, WITH NOTHING HELD BACK, YOU WILL FOLLOW THROUGH AND BECOME WHAT IS KNOWN AS A DEDICATED CHRISTIAN.** You will be sincere, active and dutifully fulfilling ALL OF YOUR KNOWN RELIGIOUS OBLIGATIONS.

Does then the **OUTER COURT OF THE TABERNACLE REPRESENT OUR OUTER MIND, AND THE VISIBLE ASPECTS OF CHURCH RITUAL AND DUTY?** The conscious mind has a center, or seat from which all decisions are made. CONVERSIONS TO CHRIST ARE ALWAYS MADE HERE, IN THE OUTER MIND, BY THE OUTER HEART, THE OUTER "I AM" AND THE OUTER WILL. CONVERSION IS A SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN, FLESH MAN or CARNAL MAN ACTIVITY.

In the services of ancient Israel, the congregation of Israel would all come in to the outer court and offer up their sacrifices and then wash themselves in the LAVER OF WATER TO CLEANSE THEMSELVES OF THEIR SINS. They would then journey back out the WIDE GATE BACK TO THE WORLD. The activity REPRESENTS THE CONSCIOUS ACTIVITY OF ACCEPTING THE CLAIMS OF GOD, ACCEPTING THE AUTHORITY AND LORDSHIP OF JEHOVAH GOD. It represents the religion of CAIN, as we will see later in this series.

The Christian then accepts CHRIST THE MESSIAH, ACCEPTING HIM AS LORD, AND SAVIOR. The Christian accepts all of the claims of Christ as being true. All of this is done via CONVERSION, and conversion is **ALWAYS AN ACT OF THE HUMAN OUTER CONSCIOUS WILL TURNING TO GOD, AND THAT WILL IS LOCATED IN THE CONSCIOUS MIND, AND IS THE SAME WILL YOU USE DAILY TO DECIDE WHAT TO DO.**

When a person makes a 'decision' for Christ, it is an act of the conscious mind, of the sense mind, of the soul mind. It is the act of the human being RECEIVING THE CLAIMS OF CHRIST AS VALID, AND CONSCIOUSLY BOWING HIS KNEE TO THE CLAIMS OF CHRIST. The fatal error in all of this is that THE INNER HEART, THE DEEP SECRET INNER SEAT OF MAN REMAINS UNTOUCHED, ALOOF TO IT ALL. It does not bow the knee upon command; it refuses to do so. Thus a person may think they are being sincere, and in fact are, WITH THEIR OUTER HEART, MIND AND WILL. They remain UNAWARE OF THE HIDDEN SECRET MAN. THE INNER MAN THAT IS STILL IN TOTAL REBELLION.

Because CONVERSIONS are done in the conscious mind, they can be very emotional, and POSE AS A TRUE TOTAL HEART COMMITMENT. These CONVERSIONS often have much feeling to many people. To many others they do not, depending upon their emotional make-up. The point to remember is that **IT IS ALL DONE IN THE CONSCIOUS MIND ITSELF.**

All the activity of the "religious" people is done in their MINDS. All of it is done in the CONSCIOUS MIND, THE CONSCIOUS HEART AND BY THE CONSCIOUS WILL. If their

WHOLE CONSCIOUS HEART IS THROWN INTO IT, THEY ARE VERY SINCERE AND VERY DEDICATED CHRISTIANS, EXACTLY LIKE PETER WAS VERY DEDICATED AND SINCERE. It is not that these people are not sincere in their own eyes and in their own minds. God words it this way:

*“There is  
A WAY  
WHICH SEEMETH RIGHT UNTO A MAN,  
BUT THE END THEREOF ARE THE WAYS OF DEATH.”  
(Proverbs 14:12)*

There is a way that seems right. It appears right to man. How does a person decide that which is right or wrong? BY THINKING, BY WEIGHING THE FACTS PRESENTED. He does his thinking in his CONSCIOUS MIND. He decides in his CONSCIOUS HEART, IN HIS CONSCIOUS MIND WHAT TO DO. He utilizes his conscious will and then DOES IT. It is a conscious choice. **THERE IS A WAY THAT SEEMETH RIGHT**. The way that seems right is the way of his conscious mind. The way that seems right is in the SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN. But God says this way ends up in **death and ruin**. IT HAS ALL THE APPEARANCE OF BEING CORRECT BUT IT IS A DECEPTION. IT IS THE WAY OF DEATH, NOT LIFE. IT IS THE VERY **OPPOSITE** OF LIFE!

*“There is A WAY  
that SEEMETH RIGHT UNTO A MAN;  
but the end  
thereof ARE THE WAYS OF DEATH.”  
(Proverbs 16:25)*

It might seem that God is being a bit redundant, but when He utters things **TWICE OR MORE BE DOUBLY AWARE**. It is a warning.

*“Every way of a man  
IS RIGHT IN HIS OWN EYES:  
But the LORD PONDERETH  
THE HEARTS.”  
(Proverbs 21:2)*

Three strikes and you're out. Three times the Lord has warned that the ways of man that seem right ARE ALL IN HIS HEAD KNOWLEDGE. But God looks at the HEARTS (PLURAL) OF

MAN, THE TWO HEARTS, THE TWO CENTERS OF MAN, THE SEATS OF MAN. Notice how God words it, **HE GOES FROM A SINGULAR MAN TO A STATEMENT ABOUT TWO HEARTS**. The word heart there is PLURAL. It is not a mistake. BE WARNED. Since we know that God declares man has two hearts, and that **BOTH MUST COME INTO AGREEMENT IN ORDER FOR ANYONE TO HAVE A WHOLE HEART**, then the way that seemeth right **MUST BE THE WAY OF THE OUTER HEART**. God, however, is looking at BOTH HEARTS, THE OUTER AND THE INNER! Is it possible that a person could be FULLY CONVERTED IN HIS OUTER HEART AND YET HAVE HIS INNER HEART STILL ROCK HARD COLD TO THE LORD?

Is this what happened to the many? Is this why they stand in such shock and disbelief that they are about to be sent off to eternal ruin? Could it be that all of their OUTER HEART WAS WHOLLY CONVERTED TO THE LORD, NEVER REALIZING THAT THEIR TRUE INNER HEART WAS STILL A STONE BECAUSE IT WAS HIDDEN FROM THEM? Is this why Christ **DEMANDED** we enter the STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY? Is this the only method God has of really exposing ourselves to **WHO AND WHAT WE REALLY ARE DEEP WITHIN?** Does the conscious mind and heart of man LIVE IN A DECEPTION AND DELUSION? Is this deception brought on by THE VEIL OVER OUR INNER CORE OF BEING?

This would answer why the “many” were so shocked. It would answer all of our questions about BEING SINCERE AND DEDICATED, OF HAVING ALL THE FORM AND APPEARANCE OF BEING SAVED, AND EMBRACING ALL OF THE SCRIPTURE MENTALLY, BY THE CONSCIOUS MIND, THE CONSCIOUS HEART, THE CONSCIOUS WILL. This would then answer our questions about the religious people of both ancient Israel and modern dedicated Christians WHO THOUGHT THEY WERE SINCERE, WHO THOUGHT THEY WERE DEDICATED, WHO THOUGHT THEY LOVED THE LORD: THEY DID, BUT IT WAS ALL OF THEIR CONSCIOUS HEART. IT WAS THE ONLY HEART THEY KNEW ABOUT. IT WAS THE ONLY HEART THEY THOUGHT THEY HAD. They were in a delusion, a deception. **MAN HAS TWO HEARTS. BOTH MUST COME INTO AGREEMENT BEFORE REGENERATION CAN TAKE PLACE**. This then is why God said following:

*“Wherefore the Lord said, FORASMUCH AS THIS PEOPLE*

*DRAW NEAR ME WITH THEIR MOUTH,*

*AND WITH THEIR LIPS DO HONOUR ME,*

*BUT HAVE REMOVED THEIR HEART FAR FROM ME,*

*AND THEIR FEAR TOWARD ME IS*

*TAUGHT BY THE PRECEPT OF MEN.”*

*(Isaiah 29:13)*

How is it possible to be so deceived, to be so deluded? It is only possible when you realize what God is saying to His people, His priesthood that had fallen into apostasy. What part of our brain

do we utilize to think with, to speak with? Speech is a function of the **CONSCIOUS MIND, THE CONSCIOUS HEART, THE CONSCIOUS WILL**. If you do not believe it to be true, try talking to an **UNCONSCIOUS PERSON AND SEE HOW FAR YOUR DISCUSSION GOES!** A person who is in a COMA OR COMATOSE CONDITION IS RENDERED SPEECHLESS. The very words “knocked unconscious” should tell us the truth of it.

WE WORSHIP GOD WITH **OUR MOUTHS AND LIPS, FROM OUR CONSCIOUS SELF**. Therefore it is WITH THE CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL THAT GOD’S PEOPLE DRAW NIGH UNTO HIM, AND DO HONOR HIM. THEY SING THEIR PRAISES, THEY WORSHIP, THEY PAY A GREAT TITHE, AND THEY DO A GREAT WORK. But God says THEIR HEART (SINGULAR) IS FAR REMOVED FROM HIM. In this case, God went from plural man to a singular heart. THIS IS A SEVERE WARNING. He must be speaking of the **INNER HEART, THE SECRET HEART, THE PERVERSE AND UGLY HEART**. Jesus verified it:

***“THIS PEOPLE DRAWETH NIGH UNTO ME WITH THEIR MOUTH,  
AND HONOURETH ME WITH THEIR LIPS;  
BUT THEIR HEART IS FAR FROM ME.”***  
(Matthew 15:8)

***“He answered and said unto them, Well hath E-sa-ias prophesied of  
YOU HYPOCRITES, as it is written,  
THIS PEOPLE HONOURETH ME WITH THEIR LIPS,  
BUT THEIR HEART IS FAR FROM ME.”***  
(Mark 7:6)

There are several things we have to look at here. Remember when God said He PONDERED THE HEARTS (PLURAL) OF A MAN. Notice that Christ uses the word heart in the SINGULAR? It is not by accident. These people were dedicated men after God. They WERE SINCERE. The Bible says so. Paul says of Israel:

***“For I bear them RECORD  
THAT THEY HAVE A ZEAL OF GOD,  
BUT NOT ACCORDING TO KNOWLEDGE.”***  
(Romans 10:2)

It is not that the people of Israel did not have a zeal for the things of God. Jesus even acknowledged that the LAW KEEPING OF THE RELIGIOUS JEW WAS SUPERB, and He said it during the Sermon on the Mount:

***“For I say unto you, THAT EXCEPT YOUR RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL EXCEED  
THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES,  
YE SHALL IN NO CASE ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN.”  
(Matthew 5:20)***

This is an acknowledgment of a ***FORM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS***. These poor people kept over 600 laws each and every day so that they could enter heaven. Yet for all of that, Jesus said it was not enough. **THEY HAD TO DO MORE; THEY HAD TO DO BETTER**. Notice also that He turned right around and many times called them **HYPOCRITES**. Why? Paul tells us:

***“For I bear them record that they have a ZEAL OF GOD,  
BUT NOT ACCORDING TO KNOWLEDGE.  
For they BEING IGNORANT (THEY KNOW NOT)  
OF GOD’S RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
AND GOING ABOUT TO ESTABLISH THEIR OWN RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
HAVE NOT SUBMITTED THEMSELVES UNTO  
THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD.”  
(Romans 10:2-3)***

It was not that these people were not sincere. It is not that they were not dedicated. It is not that their whole lives were not spent in their devotion to the Lord. ***BUT IT WAS A MISGUIDED DEVOTION, A DEVOTION WITHOUT KNOWLEDGE***. The word “ignorant” here is ‘agnoeo’ and it means **NOT TO KNOW, TO NOT UNDERSTAND, UNKNOWN**. If something is not known, then it is hidden from them:

***“But their MINDS WERE BLINDED: for until this day remaineth the same  
VAIL UNTAKEN AWAY IN THE READING OF THE OLD TESTAMENT;  
WHICH VAIL IS DONE AWAY IN CHRIST.  
BUT EVEN UNTO THIS DAY, WHEN MOSES IS READ,  
THE VAIL IS UPON THEIR HEART.”  
(2 Corinthians 3:14-15)***

There is a veil over the MIND, and there is a veil over the HEART. This is a very important statement. Where is the veil? What is hidden from view? What happened to the Jew was that they could not RECOGNIZE WITH THEIR INNER SECRET HEART WHO CHRIST REALLY WAS. There is a real and literal veil over our SUBCONSCIOUS MIND AND HEART. This veil must BE PENETRATED AND REMOVED IN ORDER TO COME INTO A RECOGNITION OF WHO CHRIST IS.

The Jews knew how to read their Scriptures; they were experts in the Old Testament. Even though experts in the word, even though they were the LEARNED MEN OF THEIR TIME, they DID NOT KNOW WHO CHRIST WAS. He stood right before them, He performed miracles in front of them; He fulfilled all of the Messianic prophecies written by the prophets, yet for all of that THEY DID NOT RECOGNIZE IT. Blindness of mind and of the heart causes the reasoning mind not to CONNECT THINGS. It is in reality the VEIL UPON THE INNER HEART THAT CAUSES THE MIND TO ERR IN NORMAL REASONING AND LOGIC.

The ‘many’ Christians, THE LEARNED MEN OF OUR DAY, also had a VEIL UPON THEIR HEART. Because of this veil upon their heart, THEY COULD NOT UNDERSTAND AT ALL WHAT THE SCRIPTURES MEANT: they were EXPERTS IN THE WORD, COULD QUOTE IT INSIDE OUT, KNEW ALL OF THE INTRICATE DETAILS OF THE MYSTERY OF ISRAEL AND OF CHRIST ON EARTH, and yet, FOR ALL OF THAT, THEY COULD NOT DISCERN THE REAL MYSTERY OF CHRIST, THE HIDDEN MYSTERY, THE SECRET BEHIND LIFE. What was this hidden mystery they were IGNORANT OF? What was this KNOWLEDGE THEY WERE IGNORANT OF?

We are told it was THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD. They did not understand WHAT THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD REALLY WAS, THEY WERE IGNORANT OF IT. Paul says they went about ESTABLISHING THEIR OWN RIGHTEOUSNESS. How does one do that? By religious duties, by being observant of all religious obligations, by doing GOOD WORKS, GOOD DEEDS, AND THINKING RIGHT THOUGHTS. By keeping their 600+ laws, these poor folks THOUGHT IN THEIR CONSCIOUS MINDS AND HEARTS THAT THEY WERE BEING RIGHTEOUS. Their CONSCIOUS MIND AND HEART TOLD THEM IT WAS THE RIGHT WAY. Their OUTER MINDS AND HEARTS WERE FULLY AND WHOLLY DEVOTED TO GOD.

Paul then says they WOULD NOT SUBMIT TO THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD. They refused to SUBMIT TO IT. The word “submitted” is ‘hupatasso’ and it means **TO OBEY, TO PUT UNDER, TO BE IN SUBJECTION, TO BE UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF ANOTHER**. What is it they refused to submit to? THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD. The word “righteousness” is ‘dikaiosune’ and it means **JUSTIFICATION OR EQUITY**. They would not submit to the PLAN OF SALVATION THROUGH CHRIST. Just as the Jews before them, the vast majority of Christian leaders of today WILL NOT SUBMIT TO THE DEMANDS OF CHRIST, THEY WILL NOT SUBMIT TO THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF CHRIST. They will not be judged by the AGAPE LOVE STANDARD OF GOD.

They claim THEY ARE OF CHRIST just as the Jews before them claimed THEY WERE OF GOD, BUT IT WAS A LIE; they were hypocrites. THEY KNEW NOT THE HIDDEN THINGS OF THEIR OWN HEARTS. They refused to face their own depravity. They would speak of sin, but it was all in the CONSCIOUS MIND, AND THEIR KNOWLEDGE OF IT WAS ONLY A CONSCIOUS KNOWLEDGE. The real issue of sin, the REAL SIN ISSUE BETWEEN THEM AND THEIR GOD, LAY DEEP WITHIN; HIDDEN FROM VIEW. Because they refused to journey forth, and enter the strait gate, and walk the narrow way, their knowledge of sin was only

a **SURFACE KNOWLEDGE OF SIN**. They did not understand that Christ was TO PUT AN END TO THEIR REAL SIN: **THEIR UTTER LACK OF AGAPE LOVE IN THEIR INNER HEARTS**.

*“For Christ is the  
END*

**OF THE LAW FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS  
TO EVERY ONE THAT BELIEVETH.”**  
(Romans 10:4)

That is clear enough to understand. CHRIST WAS THE END OF THE LAW. He took the Law, which represented **EXTERNALLY, AGAPE LOVE**. CHRIST WAS AGAPE LOVE. THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD AND CHRIST ARE THEIR AGAPE LOVE. When Christ came He offered to man entrance into the **NEW COVENANT VIA THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY**. This was the only method God brought to earth so that the REAL ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD COULD BE FOREVER SETTLED. **The LAW OF AGAPE LOVE HAD TO BE WRITTEN ON THE INWARD PARTS, IN THEIR INNER STONE COLD HEART OF HEARTS**. The entire controversy between man and God always comes back to the AGAPE LOVE ISSUE.

The Jews refused Christ, and refused HIS NEW COVENANT, HIS STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY THAT **LEADS INTO THAT COVENANT**. Again we find that LACK OF OBEDIENCE IS WHAT CAUSES THEM TO BE LOST. They refused to be JUDGED BY THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. They refused the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD, AND WENT ABOUT ATTEMPTING TO PROVE THEIR OWN RIGHTEOUSNESS BY GOOD WORKS. We know it does not work.

Notice then what Paul says a bit later:

**“That if thou SHALT CONFESS WITH THY MOUTH  
(THE OUTER CONSCIOUS MIND RUNS THE MOUTH)**

*THE LORD JESUS,*

*AND SHALT **BELIEVE IN THINE HEART**  
THAT GOD HATH RAISED HIM FROM THE DEAD,  
**THOU SHALT BE SAVED**.*

*FOR **WITH THE HEART**  
MAN BELIEVETH **UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS;**  
AND **WITH THE MOUTH**  
CONFESSION IS MADE UNTO SALVATION.”*

(Romans 10:9-10)

Now Jesus said a whole group of people worship Him with their mouth and their lips, but their hearts are far removed. We know that the conscious mind and heart, along with the conscious will cause men to speak. What are we being told then? Paul makes a very clear **DISTINCTION BETWEEN THE MOUTH AND THE HEART**. We can easily prove that you speak with your conscious mind; you choose (your will – your decision) what words to say and how to say it. Thus THE MOUTH REPRESENTS THE OUTER HEART, MIND AND WILL OF A PERSON. That alone does not save anyone. YOU MUST GO FAR DEEPER, TO THE INNER HEART, TO THE HIDDEN INNER MAN. They are separate, distinct entities.

We also know that God says that we have TWO HEARTS. Yet Paul uses the singular word HEART. Which heart is Paul speaking of? It becomes obvious: **THE OUTER HEART HAS ALREADY EMBRACED CHRIST, IS IN FULL ACCORD, AND MAKES A CONFESSION WITH THE MOUTH**. Deep within man is HIS INNER SECRET HEART. IT IS IN THIS HEART THAT MAN MUST ‘BELIEVE’.

The vast majority of Christians were REJECTED BY CHRIST. They, just as the Jews, **HAD A ZEAL FOR CHRIST BUT WITHOUT KNOWLEDGE**. They, just as the Jews, were sincere and devoted, and dedicated men of God. THEY HAD ALL MADE A CONFESSION OF CHRIST WITH THEIR MOUTH. THEY HAD ALL CALLED UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD. There was something they did not realize. There was something they were all IGNORANT OF: **A KNOWLEDGE OF THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD, A KNOWLEDGE OF AGAPE LOVE**. They did not know it, they did not understand it, they only claimed they knew it and possessed it. IT WAS A DECEPTION.

The deception and the delusion are in the CONSCIOUS MIND. THESE PEOPLE AND THE WORLD AT LARGE DID NOT REALIZE THEY HAD A DEEPER INWARD HEART OF STONE. They did not realize they were HYPOCRITES. Jesus called those that worshipped Him with their mouths and lips as HYPOCRITES. That word means a **STAGE PLAYER, AN ACTOR**. But He also said that they were **UNDER A DECEPTION**, THEY KNEW NOT. **If they ARE IGNORANT BUT HAVE A ZEAL FOR GOD, THEN WHAT? They are in A REAL DELUSION, A REAL DECEPTION THAT TRAPS THE VAST MAJORITY OF THOSE WHO SEEK AFTER GOD AND CHRIST.**

Christ told them WITH AN ABSOLUTE COMMAND TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO FIND LIFE. He not only told us, He gave us warnings of false prophets who would by various means and theology DENY THAT IT WAS A NECESSARY THING TO DO. Because they did not enter in, **THEY WERE NEVER EXPOSED TO THE TRUTH OF THEIR INNER HEART**. They never realized the evil that lay just beneath. They never did call upon the name of the Lord IN TRUTH:

*“The Lord is nigh unto all them  
THAT CALL UPON HIM,  
TO ALL THAT CALL UPON HIM  
IN TRUTH.”  
(Psalm 145:18)*



It is a bald faced lie of the modern false prophets that claim that all you have to do is call upon the name of the Lord, and you will be saved. The many called upon the name of the Lord. They went to the altar and they accepted Christ. They made their 'decision' for Christ, and they called upon His name to save them. To say otherwise is to throw rocks where they ought not be thrown. **THE DEDICATION AND SINCERITY OF THE LOST CHRISTIAN IS NOT IN QUESTION HERE.** What is in question is WHY WERE THEY NOT SAVED? The answer is simple: **THEY DID NOT CALL UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD IN TRUTH.** The calling upon the Lord has to be, must be

## **IN TRUTH.**

Now do you see why Jesus demands we enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way? **TO DO IT IS TO CALL UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD IN TRUTH!** It is to show God you are willing, you will do as He commands. To do something **IN TRUTH MEANS TO OBEY THE COMMANDS.** If you refuse the commands, but claim you are calling upon the Lord, you are a liar, a hypocrite! Jesus said He never knew the vast majority of Christians. If He never knew them, we can be assured they **DID NOT CALL UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD IN TRUTH.**

By bringing all of this together, we can form a conclusion: **THE FAITH AND THE BELIEF OF THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS IS A HEAD FAITH, AN INTELLECTUAL FAITH, A SENSE FAITH, A SOUL FAITH.** It is a delusion, a FALSE FAITH, A HYPOCRITICAL FAITH, and for reasons only known to God, HE ALLOWS SIGNS AND WONDERS TO FOLLOW THIS TYPE OF FAITH MOVEMENT. They have embraced the CHRIST OF HISTORY, THE CHRIST OF THE CROSS, THE VISIBLE CHRIST, ALONG WITH THE SCRIPTURES WITH THEIR CONSCIOUS HEART. They have embraced it with ALL OF THEIR CONSCIOUS HEART AND WILL. It is all with their senses, and all of their knowledge is a sense knowledge, a soul knowledge. **DEEP WITHIN LIES AN INNER HEART THEY ARE UNAWARE OF, A HEART OF ICE, A HEART OF STONE.**

They would, if you asked them, swear to you they love Christ. They would react as Peter reacted. The confrontation that Christ had with Peter was by Christ Himself. It was Christ Himself who had to point out to Peter that the love he had was NOT THE CORRECT "TYPE" OF LOVE. Deep within Peter laid a heart of ice, a heart of stone. That would all be changed by the supernatural miracle of **REGENERATION.** Peter was WHOLLY DEVOTED TO CHRIST. HE WAS SINCERE, DEDICATED, AND PROVED IT. He left everything behind to follow his master and Lord. PETER'S LOVE FOR JESUS WAS A SOUL LOVE, A SENSE LOVE, AND A CARNAL LOVE. PETER'S SINCERITY, HIS DEDICATION, HIS DEVOTION WERE OF THE FLESH, CARNAL, SOULISH, EARTHLY. Peter was a half heart Christian **who did not realize it at all. He did later.** Peter went on to become the owner of AGAPE LOVE, AND THE PERFECTER OF IT UNTO DEATH.

The religion of the many is the religion of the OUTER COURT OF THE TEMPLE OF ISRAEL. They go to church, they pray, they praise, they give of their tithes and offerings. They wash their sins away by claiming 1 John 1:9 and then they go out the wide gate of the outer court into the world. They spend their entire lives in the outer court of the temple. It never dawns upon them

there is any more. They flock to the CROSS; THEY SING SONGS ABOUT THE CROSS; THEY WORSHIP AND LOVE THE JESUS OF THE CROSS WITH ALL OF THEIR CONSCIOUS HEART, SOUL AND MIND. BECAUSE THE LOVE OF THE CONSCIOUS MIND IS A FLESHLY LOVE, A CARNAL LOVE, IT IS A PHILEO LOVE. It is not the required AGAPE.

Before them, hidden from view, was the INNER COURT AND THE HOLY OF HOLIES. Hidden from view was the SHEKINAH GLORY, THE LAW, THE HIDDEN MANNA, THE ROD OF AARON THAT SIGNIFIES THE PASSING FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE, AT THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE. Because they never ventured further, because they refused the strait gate and narrow way, they are lost forever. Christ tore the veil, BUT HE DID NOT MOVE THE HOLY OF HOLIES. It still stands in the CENTER OF THE TEMPLE. It is here and here alone that THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD CAN BE FOUND. IT IS HERE AND HERE ALONE THAT ONE OBTAINS THE PRECIOUS GIFT OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. IT IS HERE AND HERE ALONE THAT ONE PASSES FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE. IT IS HERE THAT OUR HIGH PRIEST DWELLS, WAITING, WAITING, WAITING FOR ALL THAT WILL COME TO COME.

Oh the precious gift of agape love! Oh how the eyesight changes when one finally sees and understands the SIMPLICITY OF THE CROSS, THE SIMPLICITY OF CHRIST. It is here that the High Priest of Israel SPRINKLED THE BLOOD UPON THE MERCY SEAT. Our High Priest is Jesus Christ. He is waiting for you. He wants you to enter in, He wants you to journey past the OUTER COURT, PAST YOUR CONSCIOUS RELIGION, PAST YOUR CONSCIOUS HEART, AND WANTS YOU TO ENTER THE INNER COURT, AND WALK WITH HIM TO CALVARY AND BEYOND. He wants to enter in to a REAL EXPERIENTIAL UNION WITH YOU. He loves you with a love you cannot fathom.

Will you do it? Will you drop all of your pretense, your religion, your bias, and your opinions? Will you simply SUBMIT TO HIS DEMANDS?

## THE INNER COURT

The next court in the Temple construction was called the INNER COURT. It had a relatively STRAIT GATE when compared to the outer gate. The inside of the inner court was NARROW compared to the much BROADER OUTER COURT. IT WAS COVERED BY A VEIL THAT COULD NOT BE SEEN OVER, FOR THE ENTIRE INNER COURT WAS COVERED. The INNER COURT WAS HIDDEN FROM VIEW. What is interesting is that ONLY THE PRIESTHOOD COULD ENTER THEREIN. The Levitical Priesthood carried on religious duties INSIDE THE INNER COURT.

*“Ye also, as LIVELY STONES, ARE BUILT UP A SPIRITUAL HOUSE,*

*AN HOLY PRIESTHOOD,*  
*TO OFFER UP SPIRITUAL SACRIFICES,*  
*ACCEPTABLE TO GOD*  
*BY JESUS CHRIST.”*  
(1 Peter 2:5)

The true Church, THE CHURCH OF THE LIVING GOD, is called a HOLY PRIESTHOOD. There is a great amount of meaning in that word, which we will study later. Every believer is supposed to become a PRIEST. As only the LEVITICAL PRIESTHOOD COULD ENTER INTO THE INNER COURT, SO TOO ARE THE TRUE BELIEVERS TO ENTER IN TO THIS INNER COURT. We are called to become PRIESTS OF THE MOST HIGH GOD.

*“But ye are A CHOSEN (MANY ARE CALLED FEW ARE CHOSEN) GENERATION,*

*A ROYAL PRIESTHOOD,*  
*AN HOLY NATION, A PECULIAR PEOPLE...”*  
(1 Peter 2:9)

Peter is quite certain that we are called to be a ROYAL PRIESTHOOD. We know that many are called, but ONLY THE FEW ARE CHOSEN. THOSE FEW MAKE UP THE PRIESTHOOD, THE REST ARE REJECTED. It is interesting to note that only PRIESTS AND KINGS REIGN WITH CHRIST. There is not one mention of a LEPER ENTERING INTO HEAVEN. This will become very clear as we proceed.

*“And hath made us KINGS AND PRIESTS*  
*UNTO GOD AND HIS FATHER;*  
*to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. A-men.”*  
(Revelation 1:6)

*“And hast made us unto our God*

*KINGS AND PRIESTS:*

*and we shall reign on the earth.”*  
(Revelation 5:10)

*“Blessed and holy is he that hath part  
**in the first resurrection:**  
on such the second death has no power,*

*but **they shall be PRIESTS**  
OF GOD AND OF CHRIST,  
AND SHALL REIGN WITH HIM A THOUSAND YEARS.”  
(Revelation 20:6)*

OVERCOMERS ONLY, THE CHOSEN ONLY are going to reign with Christ as PRIESTS AND KINGS. There is no mention of any others gaining entrance to heaven. Is this why Christ said:

*“And he **THAT OVERCOMETH,**  
AND **KEEPETH MY WORKS UNTO THE END,**  
TO HIM WILL I GIVE POWER OVER THE NATIONS:  
AND HE SHALL RULE THEM WITH A ROD OF IRON...”  
(Revelation 2:26-27)*

*“Him that **OVERCOMETH** will I make a  
PILLAR IN THE TEMPLE OF MY GOD, AND HE SHALL GO  
NO MORE OUT...”  
(Revelation 3:12)*

The priesthood is reserved to the **OVERCOMERS ONLY**. We know that the overcomers are those that are born of God, regenerated in the power of **THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT OF CHRIST**. It is interesting to note that the INNER COURT ENTRANCE, THE STRAIT GATE, HAS FIVE PILLARS IN IT. FIVE IS THE NUMBER OF REDEMPTION. Is it just a coincidence?

God said that the **WAY OF THE LORD WAS IN THE SANCTUARY**. Jesus said there was only ONE WAY. IT WAS THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. If God is telling us the truth, then AS WE JOURNEY TOWARDS THE HOLY OF HOLIES, WE SHOULD FIND EVIDENCE OF THE NARROW WAY. We should find a verification of what this narrow way is via looking at the inner court, and comparing what we find there to the narrow way for a match. We should also find a verification in the make-up of the invisible part of man.

Is it not interesting that our SUBCONSCIOUS MINDS ARE VEILED FROM OUR VIEW? That we cannot enter in to see what is actually going on in there? Could the inner court represent OUR SUBCONSCIOUS MIND? Indeed it not only could, it does, as you shall see. Could the VEIL REPRESENT THE STRAIT GATE THAT IS HIDDEN TO ALL EXCEPT THE CHOSEN

FEW? Could the inner court REPRESENT THE NARROW WAY THAT LEADETH UNTO LIFE?

When one left the outer court and ventured into the inner court, one left the outer world behind. One became **SEPARATED, AND SET APART** from the turmoil of the outer court and its religious duties, and from the entire world of unbelievers and scoffers. We see a progression of SEPARATION. First, we are separated from the world by the general call of Christ, and we become Christians. Secondly we are then called upon to separate ourselves from a profession of our mouth to a deeper walk, to go from mere worship with the mind to the depth of TRUTH. The walls of the inner court are lined with GOLD PLATE. You could see nothing but GOLD PLATE ALL AROUND YOU. Inside the inner court were several items that we must briefly look at. The first item, to our LEFT, WAS **A GOLDEN CANDLESTICK WITH SEVEN CANDLES**. It was made of pure gold. There were no windows of any kind in the inner court, and the only light there was the light from these SEVEN burning lamps. The number seven is the number of perfection, of completion. THE LAMPS REPRESENT THE SEVEN SPIRITS OF GOD AND CHRIST.

The oil represents the HOLY SPIRIT'S ANOINTING UPON THE BELIEVER. The light represents **KNOWLEDGE AND WISDOM AS THE HOLY SPIRIT GUIDES THE BELIEVER INTO 'ALL TRUTH'**. There is no other light here. This means that **THE HOLY SPIRIT ITSELF IS OUR ONLY LIGHT, OUR ONLY GUIDE**. When we leave the outer court, **we leave behind the teachers, the preachers, the evangelists, and the works of man**. We are now beyond the place where anyone can help us, and we must journey all alone, leaving behind family, friends, and all that we know and love. The call is to leave it, and to let the HOLY SPIRIT CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT. We leave behind the SOUL MAN, THE SENSE MAN, AND ALL SENSE AND SOUL KNOWLEDGE. We are now on a journey that ONLY THE HOLY SPIRIT CAN GUIDE US THROUGH. This is why it is said:

***“But the ANOINTING WHICH YE HAVE RECEIVED OF HIM  
ABIDETH IN YOU,  
AND YE NEED NOT THAT ANY MAN TEACH YOU:  
BUT AS THE SAME ANOINTING TEACHETH YOU OF ALL THINGS,  
AND IS TRUTH, AND IS NO LIE, AND EVEN AS IT HATH TAUGHT YOU, YE SHALL  
ABIDE IN HIM.”  
(1 John 2:27)***

When a believer enters the strait gate, and begins the journey of the narrow way, there is no one that can guide him, for it is all WITHIN. The only one within is the HOLY SPIRIT, and He is to convict you of SIN (because you agape love not) RIGHTEOUSNESS (because agape love is righteousness) and JUDGMENT (because we agape love not we are condemned to eternal death). Could the inner court represent this journey of the narrow way? Is that why it is paved in gold? Is it to TRY OUR FAITH?

***“That the TRIAL OF YOUR FAITH,  
BEING MUCH MORE PRECIOUS THAN OF GOLD THAT PERISHETH,  
THOUGH IT BE TRIED WITH FIRE,  
MIGHT BE FOUND UNTO PRAISE AND HONOUR AND GLORY AT  
THE APPEARING OF JESUS CHRIST.”***

(1 Peter 1:7)

As we look at the other items in the inner court, a portrait begins to emerge. We have left the realm of the conscious mind, and we are now on our way into our heart of hearts, our Holy of Holies, and there we will meet the LORD OF LORDS, AND THE KING OF KINGS. The penetration of the subconscious mind is something we are unable to do ourselves, it is something that GOD DOES WITH US. WE CONSENT TO IT; GOD DOES IT. The next item of interest is the TABLE OF SHEWBREAD.

The shewbread was made from FINE FLOUR. This flour was first threshed as grain. Then it was beaten and ground into a fine powder. Christ said that anyone He fell upon would be ground to fine powder:

***“And whosoever shall fall on this STONE  
SHALL BE BROKEN:  
BUT ON WHOMSOEVER IT SHALL FALL,  
IT WILL GRIND HIM TO POWDER.”  
(Matthew 21:44)***

What is Christ telling us? We first fall upon Christ (CONVERSION), and if WE WILL BE OBEDIENT, WE WILL BE BROKEN AND CHRIST WILL FALL UPON US AND GRIND US TO POWDER (REGENERATION). There is a big difference between you calling upon Christ, and Christ coming and falling upon you!

The grain, after being ground to a powder, was made into loaves and then BAKED OVER A VERY HOT FIRE, WHICH MADE IT INTO BREAD FIT FOR CONSUMPTION. It is the perfect portrait of the narrow way, which GRINDS THE BELIEVER INTO A POWDER, LEAVES HIM BROKEN, AND THE FIRES REFINE HIM TO A LOAF FIT FOR GOD. The table of shewbread held 12 loaves, which represented the 12 tribes of Israel and the 12 apostles. We are all to become bread for the Lord. We are going to examine this inner court more in the series on regeneration. There is no question that THE WAY OF THE LORD IS IN THE SANCTUARY. *God does not lie.*

The next item of great importance to us in the inner court is the ALTAR OF INCENSE. The incense represents the *PRAYERS OF THE TRUE SAINTS, AS THEY JOURNEY THROUGH THE NARROW WAY IN SEARCH OF GOD, and IN SEARCH OF CHRIST.* It is these prayers that the Lord hears, and it is these prayers that He answers. The altar of incense stood just before the HOLY OF HOLIES. These prayers are the CRIES OF ANGUISH as the soul journeys unto death, and cannot fathom what is wrong, or why God will not answer. It is the CRY OF ALONENESS, OF ONENESS, and OF BEING SEPARATE. It is a NEGATIVE CRY OF HUNGER AND THIRST. God hears these cries; they are music to His ears.

## THE HOLY OF HOLIES

The believer now stands before the veil that covers the Holy of Holies from view. He has traveled through the inner court and has been beaten, flailed, and ground to a powder. He has been broken, and his FAITH TRIED IN THE FIRE TO SEE IF IT WAS REAL OR NOT. *It has not been a mental journey, although the mind was used.* The knowledge of sin, of depravity, the stench of NO LOVE, the aloneness, the separateness, the death of the soul was not a mental knowledge, it came from much deeper, from a place HE KNEW NOT. He only knew that he knew that he knew, and this knowledge was *NEW TO HIM, FOREIGN, ALIEN, DIFFERENT, DEEPER, SO DEEP IN FACT IT COULD NOT BE FATHOMED BY THE MIND. IT WAS ALL FROM THE INNER SPIRIT REALM, THE WORK OF THE MASTER, THE HOLY SPIRIT.* He now, along with His Lord, has journeyed past Calvary, and down into the pits of hell to see firsthand the depravity of the inner heart. HE HAS PICKED UP HIS CROSS; AND HE HAS FOLLOWED HIS MASTER THROUGH AND BEYOND CALVARY. He has died, has been buried and now he waits in his agony and in his anguish, the RESURRECTION TO LIFE. He has journeyed with Jesus the THREE DAYS OF CHRIST.

Alone now, hanging upon the cross, the believer cries to be saved. But this is not a cry from the mind; it is beyond the mind, from the deepest of all places, the hidden inner heart. Confessing now the truth that death and hell await, confessing now the truth that is deserved and will be carried out, the believer cries in anguish for the Lord to save him. *THIS IS THE CRY OF THE INNER HEART, AND THIS IS THE ONLY CRY THAT WILL CUT ACROSS THE GREAT DIVIDE THAT HIDES GOD FROM MAN.* It is the cry of the lost soul, deep in sin, deep in depravity. The anguished cries go forth, just as they did from Christ: "My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me?" The aloneness, the anguish is indescribable, known only by those who have traveled the inner court. *"HOW LONG, O LORD, HOW LONG BEFORE THOU WILT SHOW THYSELF UNTO ME?"*

The veils that cover the inner court and the Holy of Holies are the veils that represent the vast and silent deep, the vast gulf of separation between God and man. He can search the vastness of outer space, probe deep in the vast regions of the stars, galaxies and beyond, but he will not find God. He can probe the regions of inner space, and he will not find God there. He can ponder the beauty of nature, the wonderful patchwork quilt of all life, and he will not find God there. He can invent a million religions, he can make up a million philosophies, he can invent all forms of governmental concepts, but he will not find God there.

He can venture into a children's hospital, and in anger watch the sufferings and deaths of the LITTLE ONES, AND HE WILL POINT HIS FINGER AT GOD AND SAY "HOW DARE YOU DO THIS!" He can visit the gravesites, he can read the stones, he can visit the war dead with the thousands of white crosses, and yet, he will not find God. He can travel the backwoods, go to all places on earth, and yet he will not find God. He can live to be a hundred, two hundred, or even two thousand years, and yet he will not find God. In desperation he begins to wonder if he is not alone, and if there is anything to it all.

He ponders his life, he busies himself in a million ways, and yet he knows that death is approaching. He tries not to think about it, but as the years roll by, and his friends begin to be claimed by this power that no one escapes, he ponders it all. The little ones have nightmares; the

elders dream their dreams of heaven and of escape from a body now gone bad. The windows of the soul have grown dim, the keepers of the house have gone lame, and he sits, awaiting that which must come. **BRAVELY HE NOW CONFESSES HIS MANY SINS AND WANTS PEACE WITH HIS GOD.** On his deathbed, he gathers his children and loved ones around and puts on a brave front. He thinks he has made peace with his Lord. **It was a cruel delusion, a cruel hoax, and a cruel deception.** He did not know, or realize just how CRUEL SATAN IS.

He dies, by the millions they **JUMP THE DIVIDE AND MEET THEIR GOD TOTALLY UNPREPARED.** The Old Testament had a warning for just an event. Although it was addressed to the people of Israel, the meaning is the same for all people, be they believers or unbelievers, and it still holds true today. It is exactly what happens to the “many”. **They came into the presence of God UNPREPARED.**

***“And the LORD said unto Moses, Go unto the people, and  
SANCTIFY THEM TO DAY AND TO MORROW, AND LET THEM  
WASH THEIR CLOTHES,***

***AND BE READY AGAINST THE THIRD DAY:  
FOR THE THIRD DAY THE LORD WILL COME DOWN  
IN THE SIGHT OF ALL THE PEOPLE UPON MOUNT SINAI.***

***And thou shalt SET BOUNDS UNTO THE PEOPLE ROUND ABOUT, SAYING,  
TAKE HEED TO YOURSELVES,  
THAT YE GO NOT UP INTO THE MOUNT,  
OR TOUCH THE BORDER OF IT:  
WHOSOEVER TOUCHETH THE MOUNT SHALL BE SURELY PUT TO DEATH...***

***And the LORD said unto Moses, GO DOWN,  
CHARGE THE PEOPLE,***

***LEST THEY BREAK THROUGH UNTO THE LORD TO GAZE,***

***AND MANY OF THEM PERISH.”***

***(Exodus 19:10-12, 21)***

Notice how this is worded. The Lord commanded Moses to go down and **SANCTIFY THE PEOPLE FOR TWO DAYS.** They were to be ready for **THE THIRD DAY.** The object of this preparation? TO MAKE THEM READY FOR THE LORD. If they should BREAK THROUGH BEFORE THEY ARE SANCTIFIED, BEFORE THEY ARE PREPARED, THEY WILL PERISH.

What happened to the MANY? Did they not BREAK THROUGH VIA DEATH TO GAZE UPON THE LORD BEFORE THEY WERE PREPARED? Anyone, believer or unbeliever who is UNPREPARED AND WHO GAZES UPON THE LORD WILL PERISH. This was the warning in the parable of the Ten Virgins. The five wise PREPARED THEMSELVES AND WERE READY. The five foolish did not prepare themselves, and they were NOT READY, NOT



PREPARED. The five wise WENT INTO THE MARRIAGE, AND THEY GAZED UPON THE LORD AND LIVED. The five foolish were not prepared, and they went into ruin.

The real believer in Christ, ***the one who searched Him out***, the one who CONTINUED IN HIS DOCTRINE, THE ONE THAT ALLOWED THE HOLY SPIRIT TO CONVICT OF REAL SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT, THE ONE WHO PUT CHRIST BEFORE ALL ELSE, THE ONE WHO GAVE UP THE WORLD AND SOUGHT AFTER THE KINGDOM OF GOD, THAT ONE, THAT IS THE ONE WHOSE CRIES WILL JUMP THE GREAT DIVIDE. IT IS THAT ONE WHO HAS PREPARED HIMSELF. IT IS THAT ONE WHO IS READY TO GAZE UPON THE LORD.

It is interesting to note that if ANYONE WENT INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES UNPREPARED, HE DIED. A rope was tied around the HIGH PRIEST SO THAT IF HE DIED WHILE IN THERE, THEY COULD PULL HIM OUT. It is a serious thing to gaze upon the Lord when you are ***NOT READY***. Sanctification is an absolute requirement. This is what the believer is doing when they walk the narrow way.

Watching intently from heaven while the Holy Spirit does His work, God and Christ await on the thrones. Finally the cries are heard from the altar of incense. The sweet smell of the incense rises up within the temple. It is almost time for Christ to come. "In yet a little while", says the Father. The cries grow more intense. The offering of another soul is finally nearing completion. Death of a believer's soul is now almost total.

On earth the believer is in his final anguish. He is spent, lost, and utterly hopeless against the invisible powers that rage within his soul. His faith is gone, his hope is gone, and all is lost. In his agony he gives one more final cry, and dies. He is now dead, and must remain in a state of death while he yet lives. Only God knows how long this will be, but in time, ***HE PASSES THROUGH THE VEIL INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES***.

Instantly Christ comes. Instantly Christ shows the believer what the real problem is. The believer gets a chance to look into the depth, height and width and breadth of the ***AGAPE LOVE OF GOD***. "This is love!" says Christ to His beloved. "This is love!" This is why you are dead, this is why you are alone, this is why you are separated from your Creator. ***THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE IS PRESENTED, DISCUSSED, ACCEPTED AND SETTLED***. The believer has now entered the Holy of Holies, and has met the LIVING GOD. He has gazed down into the ARK OF THE COVENANT. He has seen the tablets of the law, and now knows by ***EXPERIENTIAL DIVINE REVELATION WHAT THE LAW MEANS***. He has gazed INTO THE LAW OF GOD, HE HAS SEEN AGAPE LOVE IN ITS AWESOME BEAUTY. He now knows the SIMPLICITY OF CHRIST, THE SIMPLICITY OF THE CROSS.

He has picked up the manna, and ***TASTED OF THE HIDDEN MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE***. He will from now on eat of the hidden manna. He has now looked upon AARON'S ROD THAT BUDDED, ***AND NOW HE KNOWS WHAT IT IS TO PASS FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE***. The blood of the believer has been sprinkled upon the mercy seat by the High Priest Jesus Christ and is now wholly and fully acceptable unto God the Father. There is JOY ALL OVER HEAVEN.

The believer now departs and is free to go in and out to find pasture. ***HE HAS ENTERED THE SHEEPFOLD VIA THE DOOR. HE IS NOW A TRUE SHEPHERD OF THE SHEEP. HE IS NOW A PRIEST AND CAN HELP OTHERS FIND THE WAY***. He will now go out into the world and the world will not understand him. The Church will not understand him. The religious

will not believe him. They will say he has lost his mind. They will say he has a devil. They will say he is not fit to be in THEIR CHURCH. He will now enter the wilderness. But he will never be alone, for Christ is within. HIS LIFE IS NOW HID IN CHRIST.

Was it not Christ Himself that said the Kingdom of God was within you? Was it not God who said that the WAY was in the sanctuary? Do you suppose they MEANT WHAT THEY SAID? Do you suppose it all could be true? Is there a true and very real relationship between the construction of man and the temple of God? You have to decide.

Notice therefore that ONE MUST LEAVE THE OUTER COURT, THE OUTER VISUAL AND CONSCIOUS RELIGIOUS WORSHIP AND PRAISE AND SEPARATE THEMSELVES FROM IT ALL AND ENTER INTO THEIR SUBCONSCIOUS INNER COURT. They must journey through the regions of the hidden man, the playground of Satan and his demons, THE REALM OF THE SPIRIT. As they journey through this region, they will be exposed to the REAL TRUTH OF THEIR DESTITUTE HEART. THEY WILL BECOME EXPERIENTIALLY AWARE OF THEIR BEING DEAD WHILE YET THEY LIVE. They will experience the awfulness of SEPARATION FROM THEIR CREATOR. They will do as Christ said they must: THEY WILL DIE A VERY LITERAL AND VERY REAL SOUL DEATH. It will all be proven to be true.

We have now presented massive evidence to show you that there is much more here than meets the eye at first glance. We have shown you why the many were rejected of Christ, and have verified wherever it is we turn. There is therefore, proof text to prove that MAN HAS TWO HEARTS. HE HAS ONE IN THE OUTER COURT OF HIS EXISTENCE, HIS CONSCIOUS MIND, AND HE HAS ANOTHER ONE, LOCATED DEEP WITHIN, CALLED THE HOLY OF HOLIES. That which separates them is the INNER COURT. That which separates the conscious mind from the heart of hearts is the SUBCONSCIOUS MIND. Then we are being told something very important:

**THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY REPRESENT THE JOURNEY FROM OUR CONSCIOUS HEARTS AND CONFESSION OF FAITH THROUGH THE SUBCONSCIOUS, PAST IT AND BEYOND, TO THE INNER CHAMBERS OF OURSELVES. IT IS IN HERE THAT CHRIST WILL ENTER INTO UNION WITH US.**

The many confused their CONSCIOUS HEART, THEIR CONSCIOUS WILLS, with their inner heart. They thought that when they made a decision for Christ, that it was a SINCERE AND INNER HEART DECISION. It was a deception. Satan will MAKE ANYONE WHO WILL BELIEVE IT THINK THAT HIS CONSCIOUS MIND AND HIS INNER HEART ARE ONE, AND THAT WHATEVER HE 'DECIDES' IN HIS MIND IS A CHOICE OF THE INNER HEART. It is not. It is a choice of his OUTER HEART. To God it would BE A HALF HEART CHOICE.

Is this why Christ must TEAR ASUNDER THE SOUL AND THE SPIRIT? Must He divide up the soul of man (the conscious and unconscious part of man) and his spirit, which is the INNERMOST HEART OF MAN? Is this why the Scripture says:

***“For the WORD OF GOD is QUICK, AND POWERFUL,***

**AND SHARPER THAN ANY TWOEDGED SWORD,  
PIERCING EVEN TO THE  
DIVIDING ASUNDER OF SOUL AND SPIRIT,  
AND OF THE JOINTS AND MARROW,**

**AND IS A DISCERNER OF THE THOUGHTS AND INTENTS OF THE HEART.”  
(Hebrews 4:12)**

God says there is a distinct difference between the soul and the spirit. The job of the word of God is to DIVIDE THE TWO ASUNDER, THAT IS TO SPLIT THEM APART. The spirit sits upon the inner throne room, the Holy of Holies. He sits upon the throne that rightfully belongs to the Creator, Jesus Christ. When a believer travels through the inner court into his own Holy of Holies, he finds the truth of this inner heart, this inner spirit. It is depraved, wicked, and who can know it? Christ is THE WORD. He is the LIVING WORD, THE LOGOS. It is He that holds the SWORD IN HIS BEING:

**“And to the angel of the church in Per-ga-mos write; These things saith he which  
HATH THE SHARP SWORD WITH TWO EDGES...”  
(Revelation 2:12)**

Christ must rip apart the soul from the spirit, because the spirit dwells in the very innermost part of the soul. He must rip them apart so He can RESURRECT THE SPIRIT. Christ needs a PURE PLACE TO DWELL WITHIN THE BELIEVER. The soul, the mind, both the conscious and unconscious mind STILL RETAIN THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. Because they do, they are not pure, and Christ cannot dwell or touch that which is not pure. THE FIRST THING HE DOES IS RIP THE SOUL AND SPIRIT APART, AND HE TAKES UP RESIDENCE WITHIN THE SPIRIT. The inner spirit of a real believer, when it is regenerated, is regenerated in **PURE AGAPE LOVE**. It is here that CHRIST DWELLS, IT IS HERE THAT UNION WITH CHRIST OCCURS. Agape love is of the SPIRIT. Phileo love is OF THE SOUL. Agape love is alien to the CARNAL MIND OF MAN. The carnal mind is HOSTILE TO AGAPE LOVE.

Christ first takes up residence in the SPIRIT, which Paul refers to as THE NEW MAN, THE HIDDEN MAN, THE NEW CREATION. The soul, which contains the conscious and unconscious part of man, is called THE OLD MAN, CARNAL MAN, THE MAN OF THE FLESH. The walk after the cross, after regeneration actually takes place, is a walk in which the NEWLY FORMED SPIRIT SLOWLY TAKES CONTROL OVER THE OUTER MAN, THE SOUL MAN, THE FLESH MAN. The regenerated person must learn to WALK BY THE SPIRIT, NOT BY THE MIND. It is not the concern of this series.

It should be noted that the MARROW IS THE VERY CENTER PART OF THE BONES. The thrust of all of these verses is very clear: CHRIST IS GOING TO DEAL WITH THE INNER HEART OF MAN, THE VERY ROOT OF MAN, THE VERY CENTER OF MAN, THE

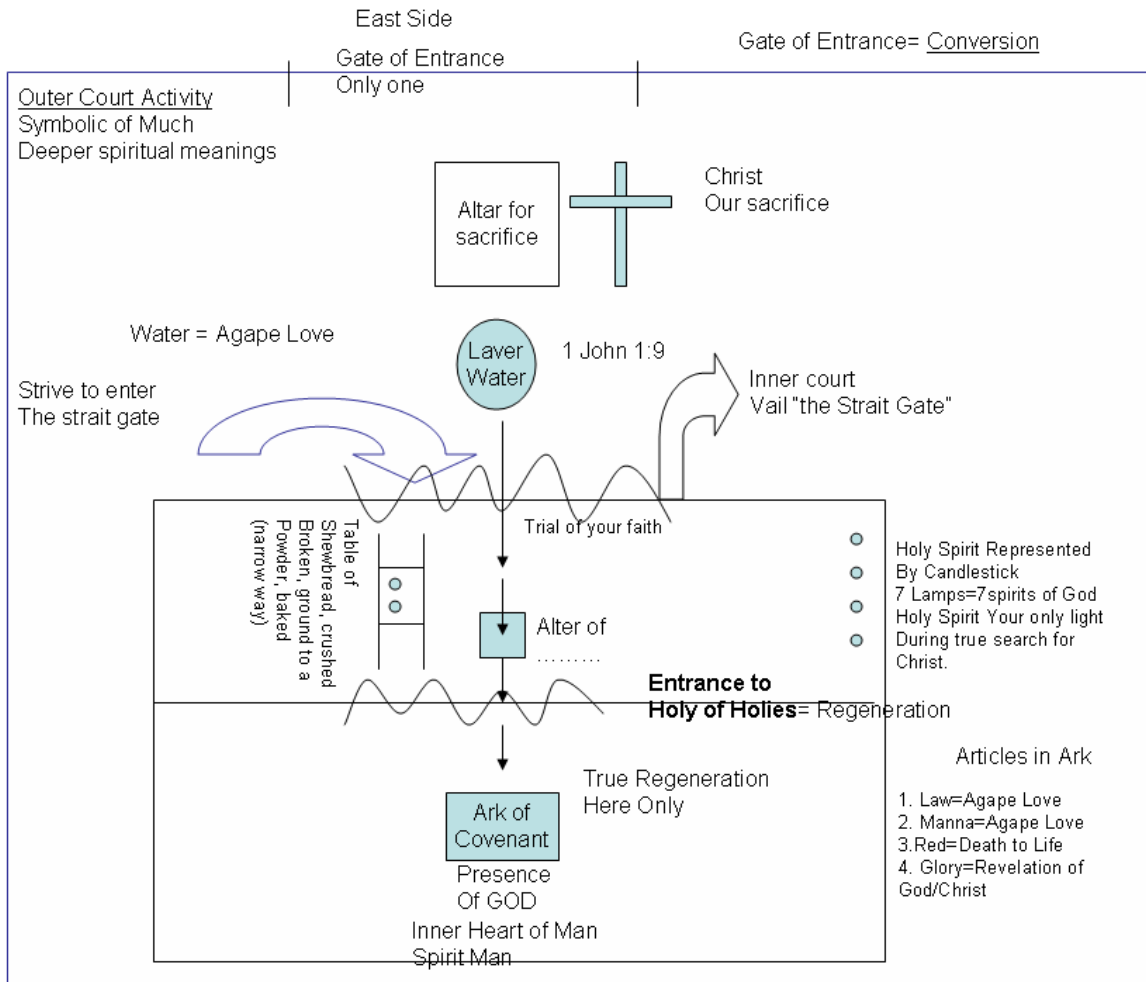
HIDDEN HEART, THE HIDDEN MAN. He is not going to fool around with the OUTER MAN, THE CONSCIOUS MAN. The walk of the strait gate and narrow way is a way by which CHRIST CAN RIP ASUNDER THE SOUL AND SPIRIT, AND GET TO THE VERY MARROW OF YOUR BONES, TO GET TO YOUR VERY CORE OF BEING. He wants to regain His rightful position in the Holy of Holies.

We are now going to turn our attention to something only the few realize. Just as there are TWO HEARTS, TWO MINDS AND TWO WILLS WITHIN MAN, THERE ARE TWO ASPECTS TO JESUS CHRIST. The first aspect is visual, manifested in the senses, in the soul, the flesh known by the CONSCIOUS MIND. It is earthly, of the earth. The second aspect of Christ is HIDDEN, SECRET, A MYSTERY, UNKNOWN. The outer conscious heart of man can GRASP THE ESSENTIAL CLAIMS OF CHRIST, CAN CONVERT OVER TO CHRIST, CAN BECOME WHOLLY DEVOTED TO THIS ASPECT OF CHRIST. The second aspect of Christ can only be grasped and understood by the INNER SPIRIT OF MAN, BY THE INNER HEART OF MAN.

The first aspect of Jesus Christ paved the way for salvation. That aspect brought us the New Covenant and told us how to enter it. That aspect of Christ lived and walked upon planet earth between 3 BC and 33 AD or thereabouts. That Christ died upon the cross upon Calvary. Believe it or not, THAT ASPECT OF CHRIST, THE CHRIST OF HISTORY, THE CHRIST OF THE CROSS CANNOT SAVE YOU.

The Christ of history, the Christ that lived and died so long ago to us now, IS THE VISIBLE CHRIST, THE MANIFESTED CHRIST UPON EARTH. That aspect of Christ is grasped by the CONSCIOUS MIND. The Bible proves that this aspect of Christ is not what saves you: IT IS THE HIDDEN CHRIST, THE LIVING CHRIST, THE CHRIST OF PURE AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THE HOLY OF HOLIES THAT SAVES YOU. The many, the vast majority of Christians ARE DEVOTED ONLY TO THE HISTORICAL CHRIST OF CHRISTIANITY. As that aspect can only be grasped by the mind, and the facts of Scripture only grasped by the mind, THIS IS THE ONLY ASPECT OF CHRIST THEY ARE AWARE OF.

We will now show you that Christ warned His followers that there WAS ANOTHER ASPECT OF CHRIST THEY WERE NOT AWARE OF, THAT THEY MUST FIND, SEARCH OUT, AND STRIVE TO GRAB HOLD OF, BECAUSE IT IS THIS HIDDEN CHRIST THAT WE MUST ENTER INTO UNION WITH.



**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**SEVEN**  
**THE TWO ASPECTS OF CHRIST**  
**VISIBLE-HISTORICAL AND**  
**INVISIBLE-PRESENT**

We have now shown that it is very probable that the vast majority of Christians were sent away from Christ because they were not regenerated, they did not enter the strait gate, nor walk the narrow way, and they did not ever have AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED UPON THEM to effect authentic union with their Lord. We have found several reasons that apparently work together to form a delusion of union, a delusion of regeneration.

1. They mistook their natural love they had within their souls, their PHILEO LOVES, as the AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST. They made the same mistake that Peter made.

2. They mistook their CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART, AND WILL as their TOTAL BEING, when in fact they did not realize they had a much deeper heart, mind and will within that was AS A STONE TOWARDS THE LORD. This then answered our question as to how a person could be absolutely sincere and dedicated, and do the work of the Lord, ALL DONE WITH THEIR WHOLE OUTER HEART, MIND AND WILL. Because they were never aware of their inner heart; they themselves were under a total deception.

3. It was suggested that the possibility exists that the strait gate and narrow way is the process by which the **HIDDEN INNER HEART IS EXPOSED TO THE OUTER MIND AND HEART.** If this is indeed the case, then UNLESS AND UNTIL a soul was OBEIDENT TO CHRIST, AND DID AS HE COMMANDED, THEY WOULD NEVER KNOW IT, THEY WOULD BE **TOTALLY UNAWARE OF THEIR TRUE INNER NATURE.** This would then answer two questions: WHY CHRIST WAITED TO INFORM THEM, AND WHY THEY WERE SO SHOCKED AT THEIR REJECTION.

A) Christ chose to wait until the very end to inform them because they WERE IN RANK DISOBEDIENCE. The STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY had been well laid out before them. There was no way anyone could not realize what Christ had said. He then described the narrow way with an abundance of Scripture. He warned of, and then described the alternative way that would lead to ruin. He warned of apostasy, He warned of false teachers, and **EVEN TOLD US EXACTLY WHAT THEY WOULD TEACH, AND HOW THEY WOULD BE IDENTIFIED.** He pleaded with man to listen, and repeatedly warned of DISOBEDIENCE TO HIS COMMANDS. He sealed the New Covenant with His blood. He rose again to prove it was all authentic, and that it has been approved by the Father. What more could one do?

B) The many were utterly shocked at their rejection because of their UNKNOWN DISOBEDIENCE. They made the mistake of thinking their outer heart, mind and will were all there was. They failed to read the Scriptures closely

enough to spot an obvious error in their faith and belief system. It was glaring at them, jumping off the pages of the Bible at them, yet they could not see it. They were, as the Jews before them, involved in RANK LEGALISM, ALL THE WHILE CLAIMING THEY WERE UNDER FAITH AND GRACE.

What we are going to attempt to prove out is that **THERE ARE IN REALITY TWO ASPECTS TO THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**. One aspect is grasped with the outer, conscious mind, heart and will, while the other is hidden, secret, and lies buried, deep within Christ, out of sight, **UNKNOWN TO ALL EXCEPT THE FEW**. We are going to prove that this hidden, secret aspect of Christ, **HIS INNER RADIANT ESSENCE**, can only be known by a direct act of God in a supernatural REVELATION.

The question we must ask is this: Is it possible to come to the VISIBLE, HISTORICAL CHRIST, THE CHRIST OF THE CROSS, THE CHRIST OF HISTORY, AND BE FULLY CONVERTED OVER TO HIM, TO WORSHIP HIM, TO PRAY TO HIM, TO ACCEPT HIM COMPLETELY AND YET NOT ENTER INTO UNION WITH HIM? The answer will stun you, for the answer is **YES, YOU CAN**.

First we should at least outline what we mean by two aspects of Christ, and how they work. When Christ came to earth and was born into our physical sense realm, He was born INTO THE CONSCIOUS WORLD OF MAN, INTO THE SENSE REALM, THE PHYSICAL REALM. It might seem obvious, but it is very important. The ministry of Christ was open for all to see and behold. Nothing was hidden; nothing was secret. The cross of Christ was also in **full view of the world**, as was His burial and resurrection. ALL OF THAT ASPECT OF JESUS CHRIST, THE PHYSICAL ASPECTS OF HIS LIFE, MINISTRY, DEATH, BURIAL, RESURRECTION AND ASCENSION WERE OPEN DISPLAYS, and easily grasped by the **CONSCIOUS MIND OF MAN**.

We will prove to you that Christ warned man that there **WAS ANOTHER ASPECT TO HIMSELF THAT WAS IN OPERATION DURING HIS VISIT WITH US**. This aspect was hidden, secret, and unknown to the entire world. In fact Jesus said the world COULD NOT KNOW IT. He went on to say that only the ELECT, **ONLY THE FEW WOULD EVER KNOW IT, AND EXPERIENCE IT**. It was the second, hidden aspect to the Lord that BROUGHT UNION AND SALVATION. The physical manifested Christ performed the work, purchased the human race by His blood, and laid before us the New Covenant. He told us how we could enter into that New Covenant of a new heart of AGAPE LOVE. THE WORK WAS A PHYSICAL WORK, A WORK OF HIGH VISIBILITY, A WORK THAT CARNAL MAN, FLESH MAN, SENSE MAN COULD SEE AND BE FULLY AWARE OF.

After the resurrection and ascension, the SECOND ASPECT OF CHRIST WOULD BE SENT BY THE FATHER TO THOSE WHO WERE OBEDIENT. It was the invisible inner radiance of Christ, His inner essence, HIS PURE AGAPE LOVE, which was TOTALLY INVISIBLE, which was to come and be bestowed to those who walked the narrow way. ALL OTHERS WOULD BE HANDED A DECEPTION, A DELUSION. Because of disobedience, they would be blinded to the truth, and would not discover it until the day of JUDGMENT. God Himself warned that HE WILL CHOOSE THE DELUSIONS OF THE DISOBEDIENT. This warning applies to the Church of today, as well as the Jews, it applies to GOD'S PEOPLE.

*“I also will **CHOOSE THEIR DELUSIONS**, and will bring their fears  
upon them;  
**BECAUSE WHEN I CALLED,  
NONE DID ANSWER;  
WHEN I SPAKE, THEY DID NOT HEAR:  
BUT THEY DID EVIL BEFORE MINE EYES,  
AND CHOSE THAT IN WHICH I DELIGHTED NOT.”**  
(Isaiah 66:4)*

One would do well to ponder these words. God is no longer interested in animal sacrifice, the burning of INCENSE OR ALL OTHER FORMS OF RITUAL AND TRADITION. He is not interested in solemn assemblies, in gatherings in which praise and worship are offered up **BY HYPOCRITES WHO REFUSE TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO A HUMBLE AND CONTRITE SPIRIT:**

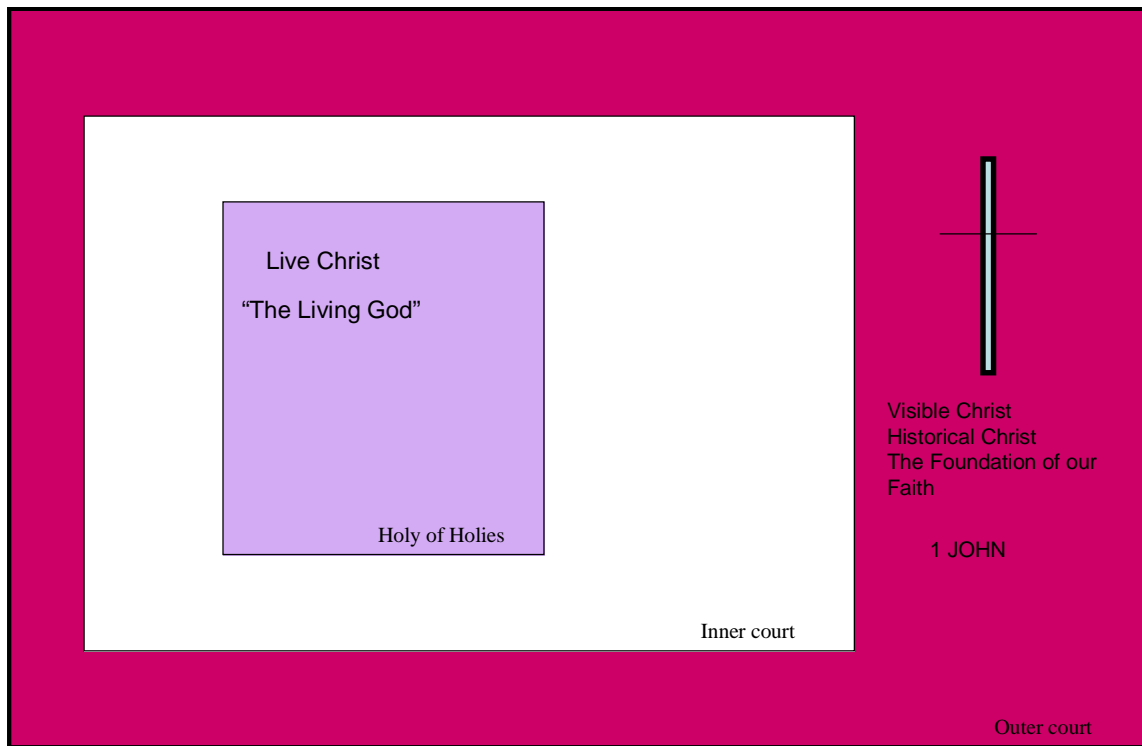
*“...but to this man will I look,  
**EVEN TO HIM THAT IS POOR**  
**AND OF A CONTRITE SPIRIT,  
AND TREMBLETH AT MY WORD.”**  
(Isaiah 66:2)*

Scripture proves that what God means by this is ONLY ACCOMPLISHED BY WALKING THE NARROW WAY. IT IS THE WAY OF THE SPIRIT. It is not the way of the flesh, it is not the way of carnality, it is not the way of the conscious heart, soul and mind. Notice that God says that HE CALLED, AND NONE DID ANSWER. HE SPAKE AND NONE DID HEAR. They did evil in front of Him, calling it good! What did Christ charge the many sincere and dedicated Christians of: WORKING INIQUITY, WORKING EVIL. Their religious assemblies, their prayers, their worship, everything they did was sheer VANITY. It was all a lie, a sham, a pretense, and THE LORD COUNTED IT AS NOTHING, IN FACT, HE HATED IT.

If God is the one that chooses the delusions for disobedience, then do we have the right to suggest that God chose the **DELUSIONS OF SALVATION IN CHRIST, REGENERATION, AND UNION WITH CHRIST FOR THE MANY?** Because of their rank disobedience to His Son, and their rank disregard of His calling them to GENUINE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE, HE BECAME THEIR ENEMY, AND DID THEM IN!

If we then accept the possibility that there are two aspects to Christ, and that the HISTORICAL PHYSICAL CHRIST WHO WENT TO THE CROSS, DIED, WAS BURIED, RESURRECTED AND ASCENDED ACCORDING TO THE RECORD OF TESTIMONY; IF THE FIRST ASPECT, AND THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, THE ESSENCE OF CHRIST IS THE SECOND INVISIBLE ASPECT, THEN WE CAN OVER LAY THIS ON THE TABERNACLE OF ISRAEL AND WE FIND SOMETHING VERY INTERESTING:





You will notice immediately that the cross is in the OUTER COURT, where we suggested it should be in the previous report. This is because the **CROSS IS THE VISIBLE, PHYSICAL SIGN OF JESUS CHRIST TO THE WORLD.** In the cross is wrapped up His virgin birth, ministry, death and mission. THE PASSION OF CHRIST IS THE CROSS. The cross was the apex of the mission to earth. His death sealed His victory.

Notice however that the INVISIBLE part of Christ, that is HIS INNER ESSENCE, LIES IN THE HOLY OF HOLIES, BEYOND VIEW, HIDDEN BY THE VEILS OF THE INNER COURT AND ENTRANCE TO THE HOLY OF HOLIES. Only those who will travel through the inner court will ever **EXPERIENCE THE REALITY OF THE INNER ESSENCE OF CHRIST.** They alone will find life that is IN Christ. Only those who travel through the inner court will experience the inner reality of Christ, will meet Him, and will enter into union with Him, if we meet Him there, He cannot say, ***"I never knew you."***

In the drawing we have shown that the distance between the outer court and the Holy of Holies is separated by the INNER COURT, WHICH REPRESENTS THE NARROW WAY. We will prove this out even more as we go deeper in our studies. It becomes clear that the strait gate is in reality the entrance into the inner court, and that it represents the LEAVING OF THE PHYSICAL SENSE WORLD BEHIND, and that the demands of Christ that we turn our backs upon the world to find the inner truth of Jesus were not idle comments, but were **literal commands.** Some of the verses of Scripture you have seen before, and will see again in this Dark Light Series, for they have impact upon many facets of our search for the truth. We must examine things closely to find out what Christ consider TRUE UNION, and what He does not.

***"This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but  
THEIR HEART IS FAR FROM ME.  
BUT IN VAIN THEY DO WORSHIP ME,***

**TEACHING FOR DOCTRINES THE COMMANDMENTS OF MEN.”  
(Matthew 15:8-9)**

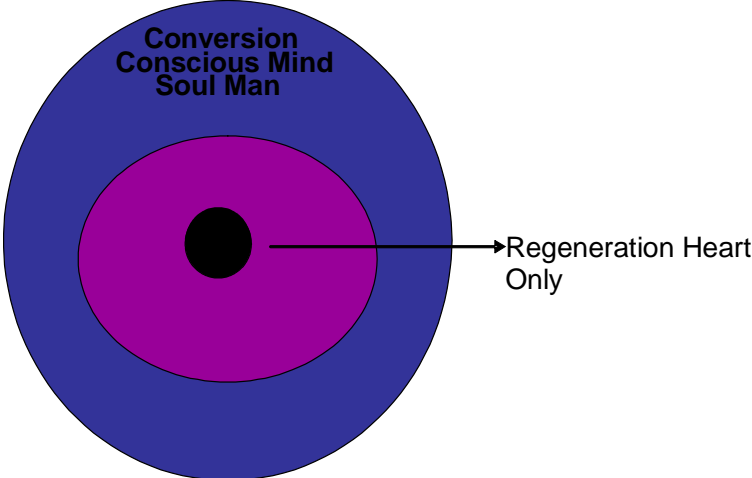
Here we have **WORSHIP, PRAISE AND HONOR GIVEN THE LORD BY CONSCIOUS MINDS, HEARTS AND SOULS**. That is, after all, how we worship the Lord in open, visible activity. This is the religion of the **OUTER COURT**. It is full of activity, full of works, full of social gatherings, a huge social structure known by the world as THE CHURCH. Notice what Christ says about them: **IN VAIN DO THEY WORSHIP ME**. It is to no effect, worthless, counted as nothing by the Lord. What is it these religious people are doing? They are teaching for doctrines THE COMMANDMENTS OF MEN. Their doctrine is **NOT OF THE HOLY SPIRIT. IT IS OF THE EARTH, SENSUAL, EARTHLY, TO NO EFFECT**. It may pose as SPIRITUAL, it may APPEAR SPIRITUAL, but it is not.

We have concluded this is true because THEIR INNER HEART, THEIR CORE HEART, HAS NEVER BEEN TOUCHED BY ALL OF THIS SO CALLED ADORATION FOR THE LORD. **Their inner self still hates the Lord, is still stone cold towards the Lord**. Their delusion is in the fact that the OUTER CONSCIOUS HEART, SOUL, AND WILL HAVE EXPERIENCED A TRUE CONVERSION TO CHRIST. Because they neglected to do as Christ commanded, they never discovered THE DEEPER INNER TRUTH. It will be shown that CONVERSIONS ALWAYS DEAL WITH THE CONSCIOUS OUTER HEART, MIND AND SOUL. Regeneration has nothing to do with it, FOR IT IS DONE VIA GOD HIMSELF, AND IT ONLY CONCERNS THE INNER HEART, WILL AND SPIRIT.

**CONVERSIONS = OUTER HEART, MIND AND WILL – DONE BY MAN  
REGENERATION = INNER HEART AND WILL – DONE ONLY BY GOD**

Because God cannot interfere with your FREE WILL, and because He will not push His way into the inner heart, HE MUST USE YOUR CONSCIOUS WILL AND HEART’S PERMISSION TO BEGIN THE WORK. This is what CONVERSION is supposed to accomplish. It is a tragic mistake of modern Christian theology to claim that CONVERSION AND REGENERATION ARE THE SAME THING, OR THAT THEY OCCUR AT THE SAME TIME. It is not that they cannot, but the evidence suggest they DO NOT IN THE USUAL CALL OF GOD. They do not mean the same thing in today’s language, and one has nothing to do with the other. This will become very clear as we proceed. CONVERSION IS ALWAYS DONE BY AN ACT OF THE **CONSCIOUS WILL OF MAN**, AND ONLY INVOLVES THE OUTER HEART, MIND AND SOUL. It is the act of the conscious “I am” to bow the **CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL TO THAT OF JESUS CHRIST**.

We could illustrate it this way:



We are going to find that there is an **OUTER FORM OF FAITH**, A CONSCIOUS FAITH, which is called in the Scripture **FAITH IN CHRIST**. There is also an INNER HEART FAITH, A SPIRIT FAITH THAT IS CALLED THE FAITH **OF** CHRIST. There is a major difference between faith **IN** Christ, and the faith **OF** Christ. It will be proven that your faith IN CHRIST, is going to be tried by your walk of the narrow way, and when completed, and you have been bestowed agape love, you will also be given another form of faith: THE FAITH OF CHRIST. We are going to find the Baptism of the Holy Spirit is upon the OUTER MAN, and that the GIFTS OF POWER are always gifts that are readily seen and MANIFESTED. They concern the sense man, the soul man, and the carnal man. They have nothing to do with regeneration.

There is a difference between the BAPTISM OF THE HOLY SPIRIT which baptizes the believer INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST, and demonstrates POWER VIA GIFTS, and the SEALING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, which is only accomplished AFTER one has walked the narrow way and found CHRIST, AGAPE LOVE, AND LIFE. When that occurs, the Holy Spirit **SEALS THE BELIEVER FOR ETERNITY**.

In baptism of the believer into the Body of Christ, the Holy Spirit does not **REVEAL HIS ESSENCE**. Agape love is neither revealed nor bestowed upon the believer at this point, as will be easily proved. This is because the Holy Spirit is working upon the **OUTER PART OF MAN, HIS CONSCIOUS MIND, HIS CONSCIOUS HEART AND WILL**. He slowly convicts the outer man to make an OUTER CONFESSION OF SIN. When that person CONVERTS, AND MAKES A “DECISION” FOR CHRIST, the Holy Spirit baptizes that believer INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST. They are now in the SHEEPFOLD by their profession of faith. The question is, will they now find the STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO FIND THE DOOR?

It is then the job of the Holy Spirit to **BEGIN THE PROCESS OF CONVICTING OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT**. It is here that the sword of the Lord begins its devastating work upon the true seeker of Christ. It is here that blow after blow is felt by the believer as the Spirit starts the very **SLOW** process of tearing apart the soul and the spirit. Are we saying there is another process, beyond the original work? Yes. The FIRST WORK is a conscious work, to convict the believer of a multitude of SURFACE SINS. That is what the law is for. The Holy Spirit holds up the law to the believer and says to him, “look at this, and look at yourself”! The Law **REPRESENTS THE CONSCIOUS, PHYSICAL AND OUTER MANIFESTATION OF SIN**. The law says, “do not steal” and yet here we have a thief. The act of stealing is a physical act. The law is a VISIBLE OUTER MANIFESTATION. We read the law with our eyes, we hear by our ears, we think about it in our CONSCIOUS MIND. We decide to be obedient to it by our **CONSCIOUS WILL. SINS ALWAYS CONCERN THEMSELVES WITH THE OUTER MAN**.

Sins (PLURAL) are the OUTER, PHYSICAL MANIFESTATION of something much deeper. The vast majority of Christians run forward at church and bow their heads and confess the **MULTITUDE OF PERSONAL SINS IN THEIR LIVES**. They then claim 1 John 1:9 for their washing away of their sins. This is all mental conscious activity. This was the activity of the outer court. They are under the impression that this is all they are supposed to do. They are in fact told that by every Christian denomination. After having done this, and having offered up their tithes and offerings, after they have sung their songs of praise, they leave and go back to the world, THINKING THEY HAVE ACCOMPLISHED ALL THAT GOD REQUIRES.

The issue between man and God has little to do with the multitude of sins that man commits. He steals, lies, murders, covets, commits adultery, fornicates, makes war and a whole host of things **BECAUSE OF A DEEP, CORE PROBLEM**. It is the BLACKNESS OF THE HEART THAT CAUSES MAN TO SIN. Unregenerate man can do NOTHING BUT SIN. The sins are the **OUTWARD, VISIBLE MANIFESTATION THAT REVEALS A DEEPER PROBLEM**. The Christian claims forgiveness of sin by claiming 1 John 1:9 for themselves. The Jews washed in the brazen laver. IT IS ALL OUTER COURT ACTIVITY.

There is no difference between the outer court activity of the Jew, and the activity of the modern Christian. Both concern themselves only with THE OUTER HEART, MIND AND WILL. Does the confession of our MULTITUDE OF SINS REALLY CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS AS JOHN CLAIMS? If it is true, then why were the many not saved and forgiven of their sins? Why are the non-overcomers spewed forth as poison from the mouth of Christ? Why were the vast majority of Jews rejected by God as utter apostates, liars and hypocrites? Does your confession of your MANY SURFACE SINS CLEANSE YOU OF ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS? The answer is obvious: NO IT DOES NOT. It could not have, for the only way these people could be rejected is THAT THEY ARE STILL IN THEIR SINS. As a matter of fact, it is all vanity, a deception, a delusion. It is all OUTER COURT ACTIVITY, ALL OUTER MAN ACTIVITY, and it NEVER goes deeper.

The confession of a multitude of sins does nothing to CHANGE THE REASON FOR THE SINNING. It is like putting a band-aid on a deep wound, and hoping the inner infection will go away. To clean a wound, you have to go to the very depth of it, and clean it with an antiseptic. To cleanse the REASON for sin, we have to go to the ROOT OF THE PROBLEM. The root of the problem **IS THE LACK OF AGAPE LOVE IN THE HEART**. The root of the problem is an UGLY, DARK, DEPRAVED HUMAN SPIRIT AND HEART. It must be resurrected to **NEW LIFE, TO NEW LOVE, TO THE LOVE OF GOD: AGAPE**.

Before the vast majority of Christians stood the INNER COURT VEIL. Before the vast majority of Christians, STOOD THE STRAIT GATE. It was all clearly laid out before them. They had the option of doing as commanded, and being obedient, or refusing to do it. THE VAST MAJORITY REFUSED TO DO IT, BECAUSE THEY BOUGHT INTO A THEOLOGY THAT TOLD THEM **THEY DID NOT HAVE TO**. "We are saved by FAITH and GRACE!" They screamed, "And this STRAIT GATE and NARROW WAY IS A FORM OF LEGALISM, IT IS WORKS!" They did not dig deep enough to FIND THE REAL TRUTH. It was a theology of false teachers, of carnal men, of men of the flesh, VAIN DOCTRINES OF MEN. Rather than believe what the Scriptures said, they believed what the PRIESTHOOD SAID IT SAID! **The blind lead the blind, and they all fall into the fiery pits of hell for all eternity.**

All of this relates back to the TWO ASPECTS OF CHRIST. THE ONE ASPECT IS HIGHLY VISIBLE, AND CONCERNS ITSELF WITH HIGHLY VISIBLE WORSHIP AND PRAISE. Jesus said:

*"Then said Jesus to those Jews that BELIEVED ON HIM,*

**IF** (a very conditional word)  
**YE CONTINUE IN MY WORD,**  
**THEN ARE YE MY DISCIPLES INDEED;**

AND YE SHALL KNOW THE TRUTH,

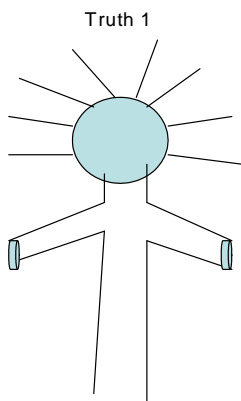
AND THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE.”

(John 8:31-32)

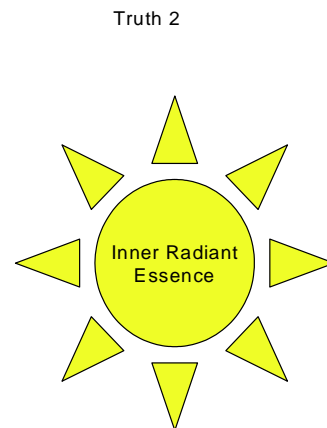
Jesus Christ stood before them. He had told them He was THE TRUTH. This highly visible Christ was speaking to highly visible Jews. This was an exchange of the OUTER MINDS, OF THE OUTER CONSCIOUS HEARTS AND WILLS. THIS WAS ALL IN THE PHYSICAL REALM, THE SENSE REALM, OF THE HEARING, OF SEEING. These Jews had ALREADY EMBRACED JESUS CHRIST AS MESSIAH. THEY HAD ALREADY EMBRACED HIS MESSAGE AS THE TRUTH. That is what is meant by the word BELIEVE. There is a conscious form of BELIEVING. It is done via the conscious mind evaluating facts, and then making a decision based on those facts. The Jews had EVALUATED CHRIST WITH THEIR CONSCIOUS MINDS AND HEARTS, AND MADE A COMMITMENT BY THEIR WILLS TO FOLLOW HIM.

It is imperative you grasp the implication of what Jesus says to them. He says that it is WHOLLY CONDITIONAL IF THEY WILL EVER FIND THE TRUTH THAT WILL SET THEM FREE. In other words, there is SOMETHING THEY MUST DO BEYOND BELIEVING. There is something THEY MUST DO beyond their ACCEPTANCE OF CHRIST AS MESSIAH. He clearly says what it is: THEY MUST CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE. They must abide in His teaching; they must WORK OUT THEIR OWN SALVATION. There is no question here that it is ALL CONDITIONAL.

If Christ is THE WAY, THE TRUTH, AND THE LIFE, then what more is there to embrace? If all we need to do is BELIEVE UPON JESUS CHRIST, AND ACCEPT HIM BY AN ACT OF FAITH, if all we need to do is to make a ‘decision’ for Christ, then what is this OTHER TRUTH? If Christ is standing before us, and we have embraced Him as our Lord and Savior, then WHAT OTHER TRUTH IS HE SPEAKING OF? It is obvious IT IS THIS OTHER TRUTH THAT SETS ONE FREE. WITHOUT IT, WE REMAIN IN OUR SINS! WE REMAIN IN THE CHAINS OF SATAN. Is there another truth? Are there TWO TRUTHS? In graphic form, it would look like this:



Christ  
Visible to Eyes  
Exterior sight Only



“Will set you Free”

If Jesus Christ is the WHOLE TRUTH, then what other truth could there be? If the HISTORICAL CHRIST IS ONLY ONE PART OF THE TRUTH, THE CHRIST THAT STOOD BEFORE THEM, THE CHRIST WHO DIED ON THE CROSS, THEN WHAT IS THIS OTHER TRUTH? And why do we have to SEARCH FOR IT? Why do we need to continue? If the modern Christian theology is correct, once a 'decision' for Christ is made, then we are saved, we are written in the Lamb's book of life.

Notice that the visible Christ standing before these believers IS NOT GOING TO SAVE THEM. He is quite blunt: IT IS THE OTHER TRUTH THAT WILL SAVE THEM, THAT WILL SET THEM FREE. If they do not find it, THEY ARE NOT FREE. This has grave implications for modern Christian theology, for IT IS NOT THE WORK OF CHRIST UPON THE CROSS THAT SAVES US AT ALL. It is only the preparation for a future work: IT IS THE WORK OF THE 'OTHER TRUTH' that ACTUALLY SAVES US!!! We already know what that other truth is: AGAPE LOVE.

This can be proved because the many obviously EMBRACED THE HISTORICAL CHRIST. They embraced Him as Messiah, as Redeemer, as Lord. They accepted His claims as the only Son of God. They accepted much of His doctrine. There is no question whatever that they embraced all of the visible, historical evidences of Christ. They made a 'decision' for this historical Christ. They read the Scriptures and they accepted BY FAITH everything the Scriptures had to say. They not only accepted the statements of Scripture as factual, they claimed them for their own. Yet for all that they WERE NOT SET FREE.

Had they in truth been free, then Christ could not have sent them away into eternal ruin. They WERE NOT SET FREE. But now we run into a paradox, because the 'many' were teachers, preachers and evangelists, and to be any of those, you must CONTINUE IN THE DOCTRINES OF CHRIST. They obviously had continued, yet they were STILL NOT SET FREE. This can occur only if the DOCTRINES POSING AS THE DOCTRINES OF CHRIST WERE NOT, THEY WERE IN REALITY THE DOCTRINES OF MEN, THE COMMANDMENTS OF MEN.

I have asked younger pastors who have gone to seminary what it is they study. I asked them if they ever study the SCRIPTURES THEMSELVES. The answer was very frightful to say the least. They do not study the Bible itself. Rarely do they ever look at one. What they study ARE THE INTERPRETATIONS OF THE BIBLE BY OTHER MEN. They study WHAT OTHERS HAVE TO SAY ABOUT WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS. They read all kinds of books, all kinds of study guides, but hardly ever, it seems, do they ACTUALLY STUDY THE BIBLE. It is small wonder, then, that these young men, eager to serve the Lord, have no concept whatever of what the Bible actually says. They were led by blind men, who make their followers blind, who in turn lead their flocks to eternal ruin.

The point is that we can prove that there are TWO ASPECTS OF CHRIST that we have to lay hold of. One is the person of Christ, His authority, His office, His majesty, His work, His passion and His mission. For simplicities sake, I refer to that as the HISTORICAL CHRIST. The historical Christ is the Christ of all modern denominations, including all nondenominational sects. This Christ is the Christ of the outer court. He is clearly visible, His worship is clearly visible, and it is all done by the conscious mind, heart and will. We lay hold of this Christ by CONVERSION.

The other aspect of Christ is the HIDDEN ASPECT, THE SECRET ASPECT. He is not accessible by the conscious mind, heart and will of man. Man cannot penetrate the veil to find

this aspect of Christ without the help of God. It ***will not*** be shown to him unless he is obedient to the commands of Christ. This other aspect of Christ, this TRUTH THAT WILL SET ONE FREE, is in fact the INNER ESSENCE OF THE LORD, THE INNER ESSENCE OF HIS BEING. It is hidden from view. ***We lay hold of this Christ when, and only when, God decides to REGENERATE US.*** **THUS:**

**CONVERSION = LAYING HOLD OF THE HISTORICAL CHRIST  
REGENERATION = LAYING HOLD OF THE INVISIBLE CHRIST**

If we could travel backwards in time, and visit Jesus, we would not see anything that would move us. The Scripture says He was not beautiful to look at. He was, if anything, the reverse to look at and behold. This was done by God to put all of the emphasis upon the WORDS OF CHRIST. All effort was made to banish anything that would appeal to the ***FLESH, THE CARNAL SIDE OF MAN.***

This being true, then we would have to ***TRAVEL BEYOND THE VEIL OF HIS FLESH, DEEP WITHIN HIS BEING TO FIND THE REAL TRUTH.*** And that is where this OTHER TRUTH OF JESUS was held. It was His inner essence of AGAPE LOVE, THAT WOULD BE BESTOWED UPON HIS ***“DISCIPLES INDEED”***, AND THAT TRUTH, THAT INNER RADIANCE, ***IS WHAT WOULD SET THEM FREE FOR EVER.*** Jesus said THAT TRUTH, and THAT TRUTH ALONE could set a man free, AND THEY WOULD BE FREE “INDEED”.

Jesus was not lying when He said He was the truth. He was. He is. But there is much more to Christ than His office as Lord of Lord and King of Kings. We must then penetrate His outer visage, and we must travel to the INSIDE OF HIS BODY TO VISIT AND COMMUNE WITH HIM THERE. We must commune SPIRIT TO SPIRIT. It will be proven true.

We will now turn to more Scripture to prove out this contention of the two aspects of Christ:

*“Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying,*

***YE BOTH KNOW ME, AND YE KNOW WHENCE I AM:  
and I am not come of myself, but He that sent me IS TRUE,***

***WHOM YE KNOW NOT.***

***BUT I KNOW HIM: FOR I AM FROM HIM,***

***AND HE HATH SENT ME.”***

***(John 7:28-29)***

Jesus cries out to His followers that ***THEY KNOW HIM, AND THEY KNOW FROM WHENCE HE CAME.*** What does Jesus mean by this remark? What was behind His passion that made Him cry out like this? Jesus meant that He was standing in front of them. He was visible to them. They could see Him, touch Him, and hear Him. This was the Jesus in the SENSE REALM. ***THEY KNEW WHO HE WAS. HE WAS A TEACHER, A RABBI, THE CARPENTER’S SON.*** They knew all about Jesus. The whole area was abuzz about this Jesus. They KNEW THE

PHYSICAL JESUS. They knew what He looked like, His manners, His demeanor, His manner of speech. They knew about His family, they probably knew every detail about Him you could dig up. He must have been the center of attention over many a dinner table. He was inspected and dissected by all the local gossips. **THEY KNEW AND ANALYZED THIS JESUS.**

But did they really know who Jesus was in the *invisible realm of the spirit*? Could they look into His *soul and mind and heart*? Could they penetrate the veil and see into Him, and feel and experience the wonder of the **AGAPE LOVE WITHIN**? No, they could not. What they knew about Him they knew FROM CONSCIOUS OBSERVATION. The facts they had were the facts of the **SENSE MAN**. They could see, hear, touch and smell Christ. From His statements they could consider what He said, compare it with what they already knew, and then make a choice, YEA OR NAY. Then Jesus says something important: **THEY DO NOT KNOW THE FATHER, ONLY HE KNOWS THE FATHER.**

Now lets go to John 8:19, where we read:

*“Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered,*

**YE NEITHER KNOW ME,**

**NOR MY FATHER: IF YE HAD KNOWN ME,  
YE SHOULD HAVE KNOWN MY FATHER ALSO.”**

Now these Jews that believed upon Jesus knew Him quite well. After all, they had embraced Him and His teachings. They had embraced the VISIBLE Jesus Christ. From telling people they **KNOW HIM**, He turns right around and says **THEY DO NOT KNOW HIM, OR HIS FATHER.** How can you BOTH KNOW, AND NOT KNOW SOMEONE AT THE SAME TIME? Because there are **TWO ASPECTS TO EACH OF US: THE VISIBLE, AND THE INVISIBLE.** What Christ is referring to is the **INVISIBLE, SPIRITUAL ASPECTS OF HIMSELF AND GOD THE FATHER.** They know about what they can see with their senses. What they do not know, and do not realize is that there is a much deeper, **HIDDEN AND SECRET ASPECT** to Him that they do not recognize or know anything about. Thus we have another confirmation that there are IN FACT TWO ASPECTS TO CHRIST.

It is the invisible truth that they do not know; it is the invisible truth that **WILL SET THEM FREE.** They are being confronted with the **MYSTERY OF UNION, WITH THE MYSTERY OF REGENERATION,** and that is something the human mind cannot comprehend unless and until **IT HAS EXPERIENCED IT.** We will now turn to the prayer of Jesus and again prove there are indeed two aspects to Christ, and that it is the UNION OF THE SECOND ASPECT THAT SAVES US.

*“And **THIS IS**  
**LIFE ETERNAL,**  
that they **MIGHT KNOW THEE** THE ONLY TRUE GOD,  
**AND JESUS CHRIST,***



**WHOM THOU HAST SENT.”**  
**(John 17:3)**

I thought the disciples already **KNEW JESUS**. They had been with Jesus for over **THREE YEARS**. They knew all about Jesus. But Jesus says that it is His PRAYER THAT THEY (HIS DISCIPLES) **MIGHT KNOW WHO THE FATHER WAS, AND WHO HE WAS**. So then there must be something that the DISCIPLES DO NOT KNOW. There must be something *secret and hidden from them that they have not yet discovered*.

**“I WILL NOT LEAVE YOU COMFORTLESS:  
I WILL COME TO YOU.  
Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me:  
BECAUSE I LIVE, YE SHALL LIVE ALSO.  
AT THAT DAY  
YE SHALL KNOW THAT I AM IN MY FATHER,  
AND YE IN ME, AND I IN YOU.”**  
**(John 14:18-20)**

This is positive proof of the two aspects of Christ. Christ stood before them in physical life, and their sense certainly knew who He was. They knew He held the keys to eternal life, they knew He was the long promised Messiah. They had embraced all of that. They had the **OUTER COURT RELIGION OF CHRISTIANITY**. But there was something they did not yet have, and that something was going to be brought by **CHRIST HIMSELF**. That something was going to **PROVE BEYOND ALL SHADOW OF DOUBT, THAT THEY HAD UNION WITH CHRIST**. They were going to KNOW IN THE ABSOLUTE SENSE THE TRUTH, AND THAT TRUTH WOULD SET THEM FREE. The mystery, the secret, the hidden aspect of the Spirit would be supernaturally revealed to them, and they **WOULD KNOW**.

**“Search THE SCRIPTURES, for IN THEM ye think ye have  
eternal life: and they are they which TESTIFY OF ME.**

**AND YE WILL NOT COME TO ME,  
THAT YE MIGHT HAVE LIFE.”**  
**(John 5:39-40)**

Remember the NARROW WAY THAT ‘LEADETH’ UNTO LIFE? What does Jesus say here? YE WILL NOT COME TO ME THAT YE MIGHT HAVE LIFE. The narrow way is the **ONLY WAY THAT LEADS TO CHRIST**. Christ stands waiting at the END OF THE NARROW WAY. He is not at the beginning of it, He is not at the STRAIT GATE, He is not in the MIDDLE OF IT. He stands at the END OF THE NARROW WAY.

## LEADETH UNTO LIFE = COME TO ME FOR LIFE

If life is the destination, then COMING TO CHRIST MUST BE THE 'WAY'.

***“HE THAT HATH THE SON HATH LIFE;***

***AND HE THAT HATH NOT THE SON OF GOD  
HATH NOT LIFE.”***

***(1 John 5:12)***

Do you see? There is something very important for us to recognize here. ***THE SCRIPTURES ARE NOT CHRIST***. They are the TESTIMONY ABOUT CHRIST. They are not Christ. The Bible shows all about the VISIBLE CHRIST, THE HISTORICAL CHRIST, THE CHRIST THAT DIED UPON A CROSS AROUND 30-33 AD. The Scriptures are ONE WITNESS to the proof of who Christ was. The Scriptures show us His claims, His mission, His passion, His work, His divinity. They show us all about Him, even much of His thoughts. ***THEY ARE THE RECORD, THEY ARE THE TESTIMONY***; they testify to His reality, to His authenticity.

If we study the Scriptures, and memorize them all, we then know ALL ***ABOUT*** JESUS CHRIST. We know all about the plan of God, the mystery of Israel, and the mystery of the Church. We can embrace all of this by simple faith as being true. We simply read the Scripture, and ***BY FAITH WE CLAIM IT IS TRUE***.

***“But WITHOUT FAITH it is IMPOSSIBLE TO PLEASE HIM:***

***FOR HE THAT COMETH TO GOD***

***MUST (FIRST) BELIEVE THAT HE IS,***

***AND THAT HE IS A REWARDER OF THEM***

***THAT DILIGENTLY SEEK HIM.”***

***(Hebrews 11:6)***

Before anyone would believe that Christ was the Messiah, they would first of all have to believe that GOD IS. Anyone who embraced Christ as Messiah would first of all have to believe that CHRIST WAS. The first step towards UNION with Christ is the ***EMBRACING BY FAITH THE FACTS OF SCRIPTURE***. It is this first step of faith, done by the conscious mind, heart and will, that ***STARTS A PROCESS***. Notice what it says next: it says that God is a REWARDER OF THOSE THAT ***DILIGENTLY SEEK HIM OUT***. The reverse would also be true: HE DOES NOT REWARD THOSE WHO DO NOT DILIGENTLY SEEK HIM OUT.

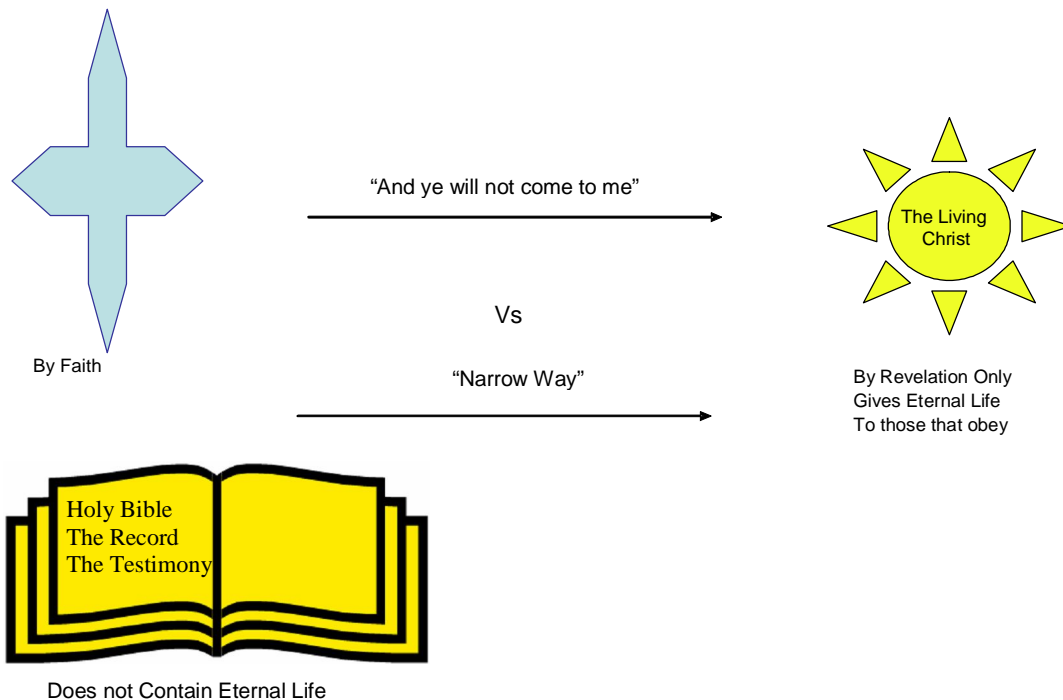
How do we seek Him out? Via the Scriptures. We search the Scriptures daily, thinking that ***IN THEM IS ETERNAL LIFE***. Surprise, surprise! Eternal life will never be found in the Scriptures.

The Scripture contains **ONLY OUTER COURT KNOWLEDGE. THEY CONTAIN ONLY OUTER COURT FACTS.** They are only a “testimony” of Christ ABOUT CHRIST. Knowing all about Christ, and embracing all of these facts about Christ, DOES NOT BRING US TO ETERNAL LIFE. Jesus is clear and blunt: **YOU MUST COME TO HIM.** Therefore:

**READING AND MEMORIZING THE SCRIPTURES IS NOT COMING TO CHRIST!  
EMBRACING THE SCRIPTURES AS TRUE BY FAITH IS NOT COMING TO CHRIST!**

Jesus is picking up the Bible and waving it at us. He says this is the testimony, but it is not me. He says **YOU MUST COME TO ME IF YOU WANT LIFE.** Obviously then, we have **THE TESTIMONY OF THE HISTORICAL CHRIST,** AND THEN WE HAVE ANOTHER ASPECT TO CHRIST; **THE LIVING CHRIST: “ME”.** The two are a strait gate and a narrow way APART:

**THE BIBLE = TESTIMONY OF HISTORICAL CHRIST – ACCEPTED BY FAITH  
THE LIVING CHRIST = SPIRIT TO SPIRIT COMMUNION – REGENERATION ONLY**



The Bible is a book. It is pieces of paper with ink on them. It is bound together with glue, and if you spend a little more money, you can even have a leather cover. You can read and study this book. You can embrace all the promises you want by simple faith out of this book. You can bow down and worship this book. You can hold it high in your hands and praise it all the way to hellfire. The Bible is **NOT ALIVE.** It does not speak; it does not say anything at all. If you throw it on the coffee table, it will lay there until you pick it up. If you put it on a bookcase, it will stay there until you take it down. It does not get up and walk around by itself. It does not do anything at all. It will burn as easily as any other book.

When I was a Gideon and went to the prisons, we left this book with many prisoners. Some of them would tear out the pages, and roll cigarettes with it, for the paper is fine, like cigarette paper. Others would use it as a coffee coaster. Still others would throw it in the corner. Others would slash it to ribbons. Some of them, a FEW of them, would treat it with respect.

But then there is the LIVING Jesus. He is very much alive and lives in Heaven. He is INVISIBLE, UNSEEN, HIDDEN, A SECRET. He looks down upon the sons of men, gazing to and fro to find those that are diligently searching Him out. To them alone will go the promise: AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED. The Christ of heaven speaks, moves, and rules the heavens. He rules over His Church. He is ALIVE AND WELL, AND IT IS HIM THAT WE MUST MEET, IT IS HIM THAT WE MUST COME INTO UNION WITH.

The Bible does not save you. Embracing the facts and promises of the Bible does not save you. The many embraced all the promises of the bible, all of the facts of Scripture. They appropriated all of it by ACTS OF FAITH. They claimed their UNION WITH CHRIST BY AN ACT OF FAITH. All of what they did, they did by faith, by belief. You cannot embrace the Bible any other way. The conscious mind is so made that it works upon FAITH. Embracing the promises of the Bible will not avail you of anything, because THE BIBLE IS NOT JESUS CHRIST, IT IS ONLY THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS CHRIST.

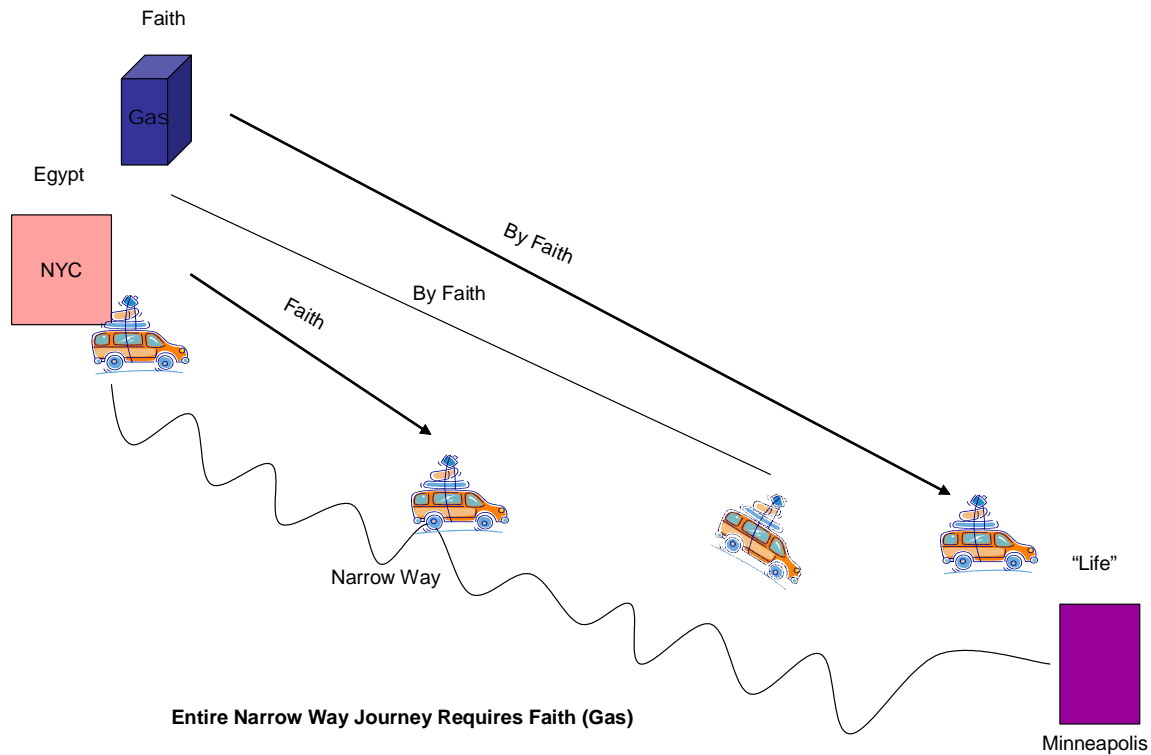
The promises of the Bible will do nothing for you at all. You can sit there and conjure up enough faith to EVEN MOVE A WHOLE MOUNTAIN and it will not avail you one thing. You can embrace the promises of the Bible by FANTASTIC BELIEF, and it will avail you nothing whatever. You can even do much of what it says we ought to do, and it will still avail us nothing.

Eternal life is NOT IN THE PROMISES OF GOD. Eternal life is not IN YOUR FAITH IN THE PROMISES OF GOD. Jesus warned us here not to TURN THE BIBLE INTO HIM. He is telling us that ETERNAL LIFE IS NOT IN THE SCRIPTURE, NOT IN THE VERSES, NOT IN BOOKS, NOT IN THE CHAPTERS. It is simply not there at all. If you remain only in your Bible, and place your faith only in the promises, then you have TRANSFORMED PAPER, GLUE, INK AND LEATHER INTO THE LIVING CHRIST. You have lifted a book of words into GODHOOD STATUS, YOU HAVE MADE THE BIBLE INTO AN IDOL. You have in fact transformed a book of testimony into the LIVING JESUS CHRIST.

The Word of God is to be used by the man of God to teach, to rebuke and to reprove. It is to bring him to a KNOWLEDGE OF WHAT HE IS TO DO, AND THEN HE IS TO BE OBEDIENT TO REVEALED TRUTH. If he is, more truth will be given, if he is not, truth will shut its door upon that soul. But the bible itself is USELESS UNLESS AND UNTIL IT IS TRANSFORMED IN YOUR MIND, AND THE RENEWING PROCESS IS ALLOWED TO TAKE PLACE.

The vast majority of Christians took the Bible and by faith made it into Jesus Christ. They made FAITH ITSELF into Jesus Christ. The modern faith movement, which began in earnest in the 1700's, TOOK FAITH, WHICH IS ONLY A DYNAMIC, ONLY A FORCE, AND CONVERTED IT INTO THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST.

Let's take an example to show what is meant here. Let's say you are in New York City. You have a car and you have been told the PRIZE TO BE WON (1 MILLION DOLLARS) is in MINNEAPOLIS, MINNESOTA. In order to GET THE VICTORY, you must ARRIVE IN MINNEAPOLIS AND CLAIM YOUR PRIZE. Let us further say that THE GASOLINE THE CAR BURNS TO PROPEL YOU DOWN THE HIGHWAY IS FAITH ITSELF. THUS:



So now we have our car, (OUR BODY) and we have our GAS (OUR FAITH) and in order to GAIN THE VICTORY, we must ARRIVE IN MINNEAPOLIS, go to the correct address and LITERALLY AND PHYSICALLY CLAIM OUR 1 MILLION DOLLARS. Only then is it ours, and only then DO WE HAVE VICTORY.

Now then, THE GAS is used to PROPEL THE CAR. Without GAS it will not run. It will not move. ONLY WHEN WE PUT GAS IN OUR AUTO DOES IT RUN AND MOVE. You say, that is obvious, so what? The GAS IS THE DYNAMIC OR PROPELLANT THAT MOVES THE CAR OVER THE GROUND, OVER THE HIGHWAY ("WAY") UNTIL WE REACH OUR DESTINATION. It is THE GAS ITSELF THAT GETS US THE VICTORY, FOR WITHOUT IT, WE COULD NEVER MOVE.

Now then, we have in our hands a LITTLE BOOK that says IF WE WANT TO ATTAIN TO THE VICTORY, WE MUST DRIVE TO MINNEAPOLIS VIA A SPECIFIC "WAY". If we fly to Minneapolis, we have come in "SOME OTHER WAY", and we are EXCLUDED. The contest rules are VERY SPECIFIC ABOUT THE ROUTE. Any violation of the rules, and we are instantly DISQUALIFIED.

Now let's ask some questions. Is the GAS, which REPRESENTS FAITH THE ACTUAL PRIZE ITSELF? In other words, is our GASOLINE THE ONE MILLION DOLLARS? Or is the one million dollars still sitting in Minneapolis? You will answer and say that THE GAS IS NOT NOW, NOR EVER WILL BE THE MILLION DOLLARS. GAS IS GAS, AND A MILLION DOLLARS IS A MILLION DOLLARS, WHY WOULD YOU ASK SUCH A STUPID QUESTION! Are we agreed? Then what is the gas? Why, you say, "it is the propellant, that if WE PUT IT IN THE CAR, AND GET IN THE CAR AND TRAVEL THE WAY, IT (THE GAS) will ALLOW US TO REACH OUR DESTINATION AND CLAIM OUR PRIZE!" You would be right.

Now then, THE INVISIBLE ESSENCE OF JESUS CHRIST IS OUR ONE MILLION DOLLARS. HE LIVES IN THIS EXAMPLE IN MINNEAPOLIS, MN. He has given us specific instructions IN **OUR LITTLE BOOK** on how we must travel over **A NARROW WAY**. He defines the narrow way for us. He says we must use **FAITH** (GASOLINE) to carry us **OVER THE DISTANCE OF THE NARROW WAY**. If we will use FAITH, He says, WE WILL REACH OUR DESTINATION AND BE ABLE TO CLAIM THE PRIZE. WE WILL HAVE FOUND “THE TRUTH”, and **OUR VICTORY WILL HAVE BEEN IN OUR “FAITH”**. This is so because without GAS we could not GO THE DISTANCE.

Do we accept what it says in the LITTLE BOOK? In other words, do we honestly believe that what the little book says is true? We have reports from others that INDEED IT IS TRUE, AND THERE REALLY IS A MILLION DOLLARS IN MINNEAPOLIS WAITING FOR US. How do we then accept the claims of this LITTLE BOOK? **BY FAITH ALONE**. How do we accept the ONE MILLION DOLLARS? **Be careful, IT IS NOT BY FAITH**. WE CAN ONLY CLAIM THE ONE MILLION DOLLARS (THE HIDDEN ESSENCE OF CHRIST) **BY GOING THE FULL DISTANCE TO MINNEAPOLIS!** If we sit in NEW YORK CITY and CLAIM THE PRIZE BY **FAITH ALONE**, BY SIMPLY EMBRACING THE LITTLE BOOK, AND **REFUSING TO DO AS IT COMMANDS**, WILL WE EVER GET OUR ONE MILLION? NO!

So we immediately begin to realize that there **ARE TWO ASPECTS TO FAITH**. One is a simple **BELIEF AND EMBRACING**; the other is **A DOING, AN OBEDIENCE TO THE RULES OF THE GAME**. The DOING FAITH is the putting of the gas into our car and actually MAKING THE JOURNEY TO FIND OUR PRIZE. If we sit in New York City and claim OUR GASOLINE IS THE PRIZE ITSELF, we NEVER WILL COLLECT OUR MONEY. We will never find it. If we sit in New York City and attempt to claim we ARE IN MINNEAPOLIS, AND CLAIM OUR MONEY BY FAITH ALONE, WE WILL DIE BROKE AND DESTITUTE.

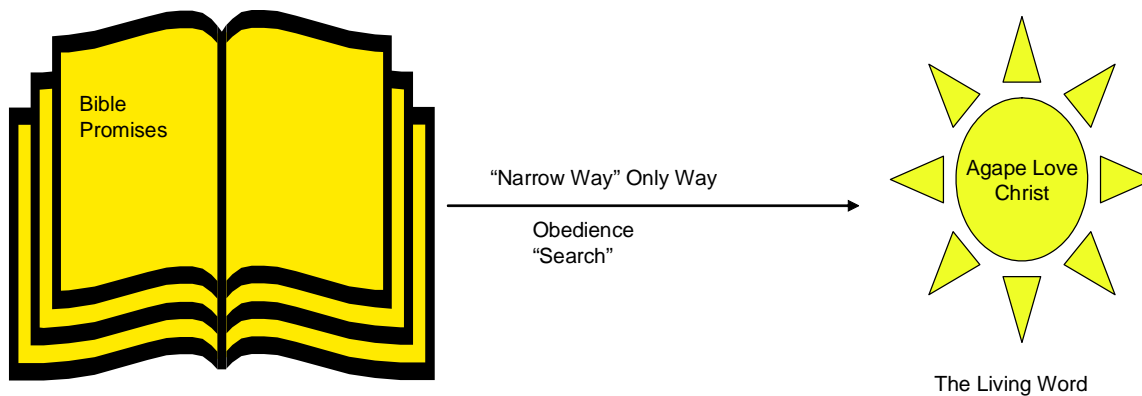
Do you see? We converted our GASOLINE (FAITH) **INTO** THE MILLION DOLLARS! We failed to realize there are **TWO TYPES OF FAITH**. One simply embraces facts as being true; the **OTHER ACT OF FAITH**, allows **US TO MOVE, TO BE OBEDIENT AND TRAVEL THE DISTANCE OF THE “WAY” TO CLAIM OUR PRIZE**. If we refuse to DO AS COMMANDED, we are NOT OBEDIENT, AND WE WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO CLAIM A VICTORY. We then have ONE TYPE OF FAITH, BUT NOT THE OTHER. We in fact DO NOT BELIEVE IT ENOUGH, HAVE FAITH ENOUGH, TO ACTUALLY DO WHAT WE ARE TOLD! Thus **FAITH ITSELF, AND THE ACT OF SIMPLE EMBRACEMENT OF SPECIFIC STATEMENTS BECOMES A SUBSTITUTE FOR REAL OBEDIENT FAITH, THE FAITH OF DOING**.

Now you might say all of this is OBVIOUS. If it is so obvious, then why do millions upon millions of Christians EMBRACE THE GASOLINE AS CHRIST HIMSELF? Why do they sit in New York City, CLAIMING THE PRIZE, CLAIMING THE VICTORY, WHEN THEY REFUSE TO MOVE ONE INCH IN SIMPLE OBEDIENCE? How is it they are able by AN ACT OF FAITH TO LITERALLY JUMP TO MINNEAPOLIS AND CLAIM A PRIZE BY FAITH ALONE, RATHER THAN THE WAY THE BOOK TELLS THEM? They are claiming a prize they do not have, they are claiming a victory they do not possess, and they REFUSE to do as commanded to OBTAIN IT, FOR THEY CLAIM THEY ALREADY HAVE IT! They are under RANK DECEPTION, AND IT COSTS THEM ETERNITY.

The “many” were idol worshippers and did not even know it. They had faith, they had belief, they had sincerity, and they had dedication. All of their faith, all of their belief, all of their dedication

was TO A BOOK OF PAPER AND INK. They were ever studying the book and never able to come to a knowledge of the truth because THEY REFUSED to comply with THE DEMANDS THE BOOK MADE. ALL OF WHAT THEY DID, THEY DID BY FAITH. BY FAITH THEY TRANSFORMED THE BOOK INTO THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST, BY FAITH THEY TRANSFORMED THE BOOK INTO REGENERATION AND ETERNAL LIFE. They were warned not to do it, but they did it anyway.

It is imperative you understand this, for this is precisely what the vast majority of Christians do not understand. Christ is the not the Bible, and the Bible is not Christ. Eternal life is NOT IN THE PROMISES OF GOD. Eternal life IS NOT IN THE TESTIMONY OF GOD. Eternal life resides in, and is only granted by THE LIVING SON OF GOD, JESUS CHRIST. THUS:



Notice in the graph the GULF BETWEEN THE BIBLE AND CHRIST. That which separates them is the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. That which separates them is OBEDIENCE TO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST AND THE FATHER TO KEEP THE SAYINGS. That which separated the many from the few was this little word OBEDIENCE TO THE HARD SAYINGS OF JESUS. Putting your faith in a bunch of promises and claiming them for your own is the mark of rank DISOBEDIENCE. Obedience to Christ means that YOU DO EXACTLY WHAT HE SAYS. He said to enter the strait gate, and He said to travel the narrow way. Either you do it, or you are lost forever, and it does not matter what your opinions might be on the matter, because God is sovereign, and God HAS DECREED IT SO. CASE CLOSED.

True faith always has a WORK. Faith without works is no faith at all. Love without action is no love at all. FAITH AND AGAPE LOVE ARE ACTIVE, THEY REQUIRE YOU TO DO SOMETHING, THEY REQUIRE YOU TO ACT, which we will see a bit later. If you refuse to go beyond the Bible to SEARCH OUT THE LIVING CHRIST, AND COME INTO CONTACT WITH HIM, AND ENTER INTO UNION WITH HIM, you are lost. It is that simple and that blunt.

But again we find there are two aspects to Christ. The bible records the SENSE KNOWLEDGE, THE WORLDLY KNOWLEDGE ABOUT THE MESSIAH. It gives us great detail into the place of salvation. All of this is DONE OPENLY AND IN THE WORLD, FOR ALL MANKIND TO SEE. IT IS SENSE KNOWLEDGE, CONSCIOUS KNOWLEDGE. We read the bible with our eyes; we then transform what we see into thought, which is then filed away in our computer

banks for future retrieval and comparative study. **ALL OF IT IS SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN, CARNAL MAN, FLESH MAN.**

Christ on the other hand is SPIRIT. When we meet Christ, we meet Him in the inner chambers. We always must go to the inner chamber, the Holy of Holies to meet the King. That is where the **INNER HEART IS, AND THAT IS WHERE JESUS IS.** The Holy Spirit works from the outside in, and then when we have walked through the inner court to the Holy of Holies, **we will hear Christ knocking at the door of our inner heart. He will speak to us ONLY IN THE CORE OF OUR HEART. SPIRIT TO SPIRIT, INNER HEART TO INNER HEART.** There is no other way, there are no options, for God has so decreed it.

***“All the King’s servants, and the people of the king’s provinces, do know,  
that whosoever, whether man or woman, shall COME UNTO THE KING INTO THE  
INNER COURT,***

***WHO IS NOT CALLED,  
there is one law of his to PUT HIM TO DEATH,  
EXCEPT  
SUCH TO WHOM THE KING SHALL HOLD OUT  
THE GODLEN SCEPTRE,  
THAT HE MAY LIVE:***

***but I have not been called to come in unto the king these THIRTY DAYS.”  
(Esther 4:11)***

This passage is fraught with deep meaning to us. Remember back when Moses was commanded by the Lord to **SET BOUNDS FOR THE PEOPLE, LEST THEY BREAK THROUGH AND GAZE UPON THE LORD AND PERISH?** Remember that they had to undergo THREE DAYS OF PREPARATION, AND THAT ON THE THIRD DAY THE LORD WOULD COME DOWN AND VISIT THE PEOPLE? That of course has tremendous PROPHETIC IMPLICATIONS, but let us look at this from a salvation standpoint.

The law says that anyone WHO GOES INTO THE INNER CHAMBER TO FIND THE KING, **IF HE BE NOT CALLED, SHALL BE PUT TO DEATH.** It is but another proof that the LORD OF LORDS, THE KING OF KINGS, **RESIDES IN THE INNER CHAMBER.** We must then travel through the outer court, the inner court, to the very center, the KING’S INNER CHAMBER. Notice also that the king can make an exception: HE CAN TAKE HIS SCEPTER AND hold out that scepter to the person who has entered, and they may live.

It is at the option of the sovereign. The word “scepter” is ‘sharbiyt’ and it means **ROD OF EMPIRE, STAFF OF SOVEREIGNTY.** Sovereign rulers generally had four items that signified to others of their position of rank and authority: **A CROWN, A RING, A SEAL AND A SCEPTER.** IT WAS A GRAVE THING TO VIOLATE THIS LAW, AND IF YOU WENT IN TO THE INNER CHAMBER WITHOUT BEING SUMMONED BY THE KING, DEATH WOULD RESULT.



*“Go, gather together all of the Jews that are present in Shu-shan, and FAST YE  
FOR ME,  
AND NEITHER EAT NOR DRINK*

**THREE DAYS,**  
*NIGHT OR DAY:*

*I ALSO AND MY MAIDENS WILL FAST LIKEWISE;*

*AND SO WILL I GO UNTO THE KING,  
WHICH IS NOT ACCORDING TO THE LAW:  
AND IF I PERISH, I PERISH.”*

**(Esther 4:16)**

Esther is going to violate the law. SHE IS GOING TO FAST FOR THREE DAYS. It is important to notice that **ON THE THIRD DAY SHE WILL ENTER INTO THE INNER CHAMBER TO MEET THE KING.** Is it not odd that Christ was buried for THREE DAYS, AND ON THE THIRD DAY HE ROSE TO NEW LIFE? Remember the THREE DAYS OF PREPARATION before God came down to the Mount? What is this fast, what are these THREE DAYS TRYING TO TELL US? Is the **STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY THE FAST OF THE LORD?** Is the narrow way a **WAY OF PREPARATION THAT WE MIGHT BE READY WHEN WE SEE THE KING?**

*“Now it came to pass ON THE THIRD DAY,  
that Esther put on her ROYAL APPAREL (MADE HERSELF READY),  
AND STOOD IN THE INNER COURT OF THE KING’S HOUSE,  
OVER AGAINST THE KING’S HOUSE;  
AND THE KING SAT UPON HIS ROYAL THRONE  
IN THE ROYAL HOUSE,  
OVER AGAINST THE GATE OF THE HOUSE.*

*AND IT WAS SO, WHEN THE KING SAW ESTHER THE QUEEN STANDING  
IN THE COURT, THAT*

***SHE OBTAINED FAVOUR IN HIS SIGHT:  
AND THE KING HELD OUT TO ESTHER THE GOLDEN SCEPTRE  
THAT WAS IN HIS HAND. SO ESTHER DREW NEAR, AND TOUCHED THE  
TOP OF THE SCEPTRE.”***

**(Esther 5:1-2)**

Esther drew near and TOUCHED THE SCEPTER. She had prepared herself for THREE DAYS by fasting and prayer, and then putting on her ROYAL CLOTHING. On the THIRD DAY she stood in the inner court, in the PRESENCE OF THE KING. He held out his scepter and she found favor, she would live. The believer must likewise undergo a preparation, a **FAST OF THE LORD,** which is called the **NARROW WAY.** When the believer comes into the presence of the Lord, in the Holy of Holies, the inner chamber. **CHRIST WILL THEN HOLD FORTH HIS**

**GOLDEN SCEPTER.** If you **KISS THE SON, YOU SHALL LIVE. IF YOU REFUSE, YOU SHALL DIE.**

By Christ ripping apart the veil, He made the way for us to enter the inner chamber. He made the way for us to enter the New Covenant. Anyone is invited into the inner court. You need not fear death by entering, but if you **ENTER UNPREPARED, IF YOU BURST UPON THE LORD, AND GAZE UPON THE LORD AND YOU ARE NOT READY, YOU WILL PERISH.** The “many” were not ready; they had refused to prepare themselves as Christ commanded.

We will return to the three days of the Lord in a later report, for they are a clue as to the length of time it takes to travel the narrow way to the inner court. We are now going to turn to more Scripture to prove out the TWO ASPECTS OF CHRIST:

*“Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily,  
I say unto you,  
EXCEPT YE  
EAT THE FLESH OF THE SON OF MAN,  
AND DRINK HIS BLOOD,  
YE HAVE  
NO LIFE IN YOU.”*  
(John 6:53)

This is a rather blunt statement. Some would say CRUDE. But there is a very important message embedded within it. This is not an idle statement, but it is instead a direct command. Does Christ want us to literally attempt to eat His flesh and drink His blood? Are we to become cannibals? It is one of these symbolic remarks that has a very literal meaning to it. We unravel the mystery of it by other Scripture.

Jesus relates His **FLESH AND BLOOD WITH LIFE.** He says that HIS FLESH AND BLOOD **ARE** LIFE. We must EAT IT, OR INGEST IT INTO OUR OWN SELVES. IT MUST BECOME A PART OF US. When we eat food, we take it in and digest it. That which is good flows throughout the entire body and brings life to it. We absorb it into our very cells, and it becomes a part of us, a literal part of us. We take a carrot, or a hamburger and we turn it into literal tissue, flesh and blood.

The skin hides the flesh and blood from our view. The only time we see blood is when we are wounded, and the blood flows out of the body because of blood pressure within. The point being that the blood is **INVISIBLE, BENEATH THE SURFACE.** We know that it is there, we are aware of it, yet we do not see it. The flesh is likewise. It lies beneath the skin, and is what is placed over the bones so we are not walking skeletons. BOTH ARE INVISIBLE TO OUR SIGHT.

Blood is the LIFE OF THE PHYSICAL BODY. Blood is the most important part of the body, as is the heart. Without the circulatory system, we could not live. The blood flows to every part of the body, picking up impurities and giving new life. It is the very substance of life itself. Is this why the Bible says:

*“For it (blood) is **THE LIFE OF ALL FLESH;**  
the blood of it **IS FOR THE LIFE THEREOF:**  
therefore I said unto the children of Israel,  
ye shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh:  
**FOR THE LIFE OF ALL FLESH IS THE BLOOD THEREOF:**  
Whosoever eateth it shall be cut off.”*  
(Leviticus 17:14)

We would then ask, what is the blood primarily composed of? The answer is WATER. That which is behind the blood is water. Without water there would be no blood, and without blood there would be no life. If blood and water are the **SOURCE OF ALL LIFE IN MAN**, that is, that which makes him ALIVE, what is the source of all life in the SPIRIT?

## **WATER AND BLOOD = PHYSICAL LIFE AGAPE LOVE = SPIRITUAL LIFE**

Therefore we will find that BLOOD and WATER are a code word for AGAPE LOVE. Without agape love, there is **NO SPIRITUAL LIFE**. Without AGAPE LOVE BLOOD WITHIN YOU, YOU HAVE NO SPIRITUAL LIFE. Just as a person would die without water and blood in the physical realm, so too does death prevail for those who do not have AGAPE LOVE. Just as blood is hidden from view by the veil of the skin, so too is agape love hidden by the veil of the skin. **BOTH LIE WITHIN, BEYOND THE SIGHT**.

It is interesting to note that Jesus just finished saying in John 6:31-51 that HE WAS THE BREAD OF LIFE, AND THEN HE COMPARED HIMSELF TO THE MANNA THAT CAME DOWN FROM HEAVEN. The bread, the manna that comes down from heaven is **THE AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**. It is granted **ONLY TO THE OVERCOMER, FOR IT IS THE OVERCOMER ONLY THAT IS GIVEN TO EAT OF THE HIDDEN MANNA:**

*“he that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches;*

*TO HIM THAT **OVERCOMETH***

*WILL I GIVE TO EAT OF THE HIDDEN MANNA...”*

(Revelation 2:17)

The word “hidden” is ‘krupto’ and it means **CONCEALED, COVERED, SECRET OR HIDDEN**. In other words, **NOT VISIBLE, NOT KNOWN BY THE SENSE MAN, THE SOUL MAN**. We have already proved to you that MANKIND LOST AGAPE LOVE AT THE FALL, he does not have it; he cannot know it. It is beyond him, beyond his nature. He cannot learn it; he cannot obtain it via any normal learning process. It is not granted to man in that manner.

*“Whoso EATETH MY FLESH, AND DRINKETH MY BLOOD,*

***HATH ETERNAL LIFE;***

*AND I WILL RAISE HIM UP AT THE LAST DAY.*

*for my flesh is meat indeed,*

*and my blood is drink indeed.*

*He that EATETH MY FLESH,*

*AND DRINKETH MY BLOOD,*

***DWELLETH IN ME, AND I IN HIM.”***

**(John 6:54-56)**

The flesh and blood of Christ is now directly connected to ETERNAL LIFE. THEY ARE **DIRECTLY CONNECTED TO UNION WITH CHRIST.** He also gives us the clues as to what He means by it all. He says that **HIS FLESH IS MEAT.** Meat is related to DOCTRINE, **DEEP DOCTRINE.** It relates back to the command of Christ to **CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINES.** This should not surprise us, because Jesus came to TEACH MANKIND WHAT HE MUST DO TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT. One of the commands is to **LEARN SOUND DOCTRINE.**

If the flesh is doctrine, and we are to eat and DIGEST IT, then obviously we HEAR WHAT HE SAYS, **UNDERSTAND WHAT HE SAYS, AND APPLY IT.** It then becomes A PART OF US. Could this have anything to do with the TRANSFORMATION OF OUR MINDS? Have we not been commanded to put on the mind of Christ? The mind is for thinking; the mind is the place for learning. The mind is the center for taking in DOCTRINE.

It was the promise of Christ that if we would **CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE,** we would find **THE TRUTH, AND THIS TRUTH WOULD SET US FREE.** We know that this truth we must find is **AGAPE LOVE, AND THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE BRINGS US ETERNAL LIFE (1 John 3:1; 3:14).** His blood is related to drink, and we have seen how blood relates also to the bestowment of agape love. We have come again full circle to the ONE ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD:

## ***THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE.***

What we have then is another proof of the TWO ASPECTS OF CHRIST. ONE IS VISIBLE, EASILY DISCERNED BY THE SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN. This is the Christ of history, the Christ of the cross, the founder and finisher of our faith. MANKIND COMES TO THIS CHRIST VIA THE PROCESS OF CONVERSION, because conversion is an act of the **will of man accepting the claims of Christ.** Conversion brings us into the BODY OF CHRIST. Regeneration has nothing to do with conversion; they are quite the opposite. **Regeneration has nothing to do with the will of man: IT IS ACCOMPLISHED BY THE WILL OF GOD.**

There are many more verses to prove the two aspects of Christ, but what we have shown you should prove it out. The fact that AGAPE LOVE was lost at the fall should be enough proof to anyone. It is not the Christ of the cross that saves us; it is **AGAPE LOVE LIFE BESTOWED THAT SAVES US.** It might shock you to learn that AGAPE LOVE IS NOT BESTOWED AT

CONVERSION. It will come only if the believer enters the strait gate and walks the narrow way to the finding of life, to the finding of the HIDDEN MANNA. We already know that the pot of manna was located in the Holy of Holies. You must go in to obtain it. To stand in the outer court, and to claim by faith you have it, is it to invite certain and complete disaster.

## CONVERSION VS REGENERATION

We are now going to investigate in brief the vital differences between conversion and regeneration, for the difference prove there are in fact TWO ASPECTS OF CHRIST. Conversion is something we do by an act of our will. Conversion is always to the HISTORICAL CHRIST, THE VISIBLE CHRIST. Regeneration is something God does to us, totally BY HIS WILL ALONE, and it never concerns the outer conscious heart. It is OF THE SPIRIT.

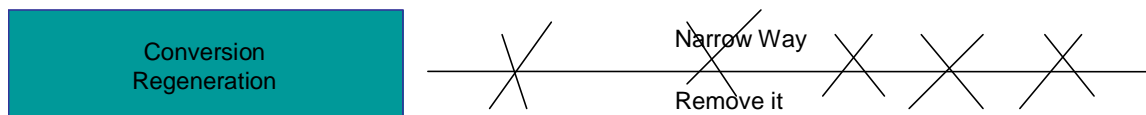
### CONVERSION = ACT OF MAN'S WILL REGENERATION = ACT OF GOD'S WILL

It will be proven that modern Christianity is wholly wrong in claiming that God regenerates a person the instant of conversion. Nothing could be further from the truth. The error of the vast majority of Christians was right here. They were told by their false pastors and false theologians that they were REGENERATED INSTANTLY AT CONVERSION. They not only were taught that, they bought into it hook, line and sinker. But when they died, when they stood before Christ, they found out the hard way that they had been lied to, that they had bought into a SATANIC LIE OF GIGANTIC PROPORTIONS.

There are vast differences between the words conversion and the words used to describe regeneration. They do not even mean the same thing. The false prophets HAD TO CHANGE THE DEFINITIONS OF CONVERSION AND REGENERATION, AND TO BRING THEM TOGETHER. Here is what they did:



Notice that LIFE is at the end of the narrow way. We already know that LIFE IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. Peter said the false prophets would cause the WAY OF THE TRUTH TO BE EVIL SPOKEN OF (2 Peter 2:1-3). In other words, a theology and doctrine would be developed that would CIRCUMVENT THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. If we remove the narrow way, then we BRING THE DESTINATION AND THE BEGINNING POINTS TOGETHER:



Bring Regeneration over to Conversion By Theology

As you can see, if the BEGINNING IS CONVERSION, AND THE ENDING IS REGENERATION, and we remove the NARROW WAY, by denial or by doctrine; we then have brought the two together, we have made them one. We have also removed all the time element that is implied and demanded by Scripture. The opposite of patience and continuing, abiding and remaining is INSTANT. How do we do something instantly, or immediately? We do it by an ACT OF FAITH, BY INSTANT 'DECISION'. We do it with our minds; we embrace a concept, a doctrine, a teaching as true, AND WE EMBRACE IT IMMEDIATELY AND ACCEPT IT IN OUR HEARTS AS TRUTH. Even if you do not like the idea, that is what the opposite of A LONG TIME IS. Jesus spoke of this in the parable of the sower. These people laid hold of the word INSTANTLY, IMMEDIATELY. The word was 'anon' and that is what it means. THAT CAN ONLY BE DONE BY THE CONSCIOUS MIND, THE CONSCIOUS HEART AND WILL.

It is a fact that all major denominations, and all major evangelists preach a gospel in which all one has to do is make a sincere decision for Jesus Christ, and WITH THAT DECISION YOU ARE INSTANTLY SAVED, AND YOU ARE GOING TO HEAVEN. They all teach that this act of CONVERSION BRINGS IMMEDIATE AND INSTANT REGENERATION WITHIN. They all teach that Christ AT THE MOMENT, VIA THE HOLY SPIRIT, COMES IN TO THE HEART OF THAT PERSON AND GRANTS THAT PERSON ETERNAL LIFE. It is in all of their printed material, it is so stated in all of their prayers when they ask people to come forward to receive Christ.

The issue is this: are they telling you and I the truth, and if so, does it match PRECISELY WHAT THE SCRIPTURES SAY, OR NOT? If you teach INSTANT OR IMMEDIATE REGENERATION, then where is the narrow way? The argument is often advanced that IT IS AFTER UNION WITH CHRIST. We come to Christ, we enter in to union with Christ, we obtain IMMEDIATE LIFE, AND THEN WE BEGIN our walk. I say unto you it is HOGWASH, UTTERLY FALSE, THAT PETER DECLARED WOULD SWEEP THE LATTER DAY CHURCH INTO ETERNAL RUIN. If you believe the gospel of modern Christianity, YOU WILL PERISH IN YOUR SINS, YOU WILL NEVER SEE HEAVEN.

No one, and I mean NO ONE, can mistake what Jesus Christ said. It is beyond all argument, it is beyond ALL INTERPRETATION, it is so simple a five year old could tell you where LIFE IS ON THE NARROW WAY. Whether you like it or not, whether you can accept it or not, LIFE IS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY. The narrow way LEADETH unto this 'life'. It is the mark of a false prophet, a false teacher TO CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST. THEREFORE, IF CHRIST DECLARES, AS HE DOES ADAMANTLY THAT NO ONE GETS LIFE UNTIL AFTER THEY HAVE WALKED THE NARROW WAY, WHAT THEN MUST THE FALSE TEACHERS CLAIM?

They must, because they have no options, EITHER REMOVE THE NARROW WAY AND DECLARE IT IS NOT EVEN THERE, OR THAT WE HAVE LIFE AT THE BEGINNING, WE HAVE UNION AT THE BEGINNING, AND THEN WE WALK IT. Both are utter falsehoods, both forms of doctrine are from the pits of hell itself. They are designed with complex theology to fool you and deceive you. They do in fact CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST.

I must add that Christ loves each human soul with a love we cannot even begin to fathom, even after you have seen it and know what it is. Do you think that HE WOULD THEN MAKE THIS ISSUE OF WHAT WE MUST DO DIFFICULT TO UNDERSTAND? It is EASY TO

**UNDERSTAND, BUT HARD TO ACCEPT.** It flies against the flesh, against carnality, against everything man likes and wants to hear.

## ***IT IS A HARD SAYING.***

By removing the narrow way, the false teachers then TEACH THAT CONVERSION AND REGENERATION ARE THE SAME, THEY BOTH OCCUR AT THE SAME TIME, AND THAT LIFE AND UNION WITH CHRIST IS A FACT, AND SHOULD BE ACCEPTED AS A TRUTH. Thus millions of Christians who go to these huge crusades are handed an UTTERLY FALSE DOCTRINE OF SALVATION, AND IT IS ACCOMPLISHED BY REDEFINITION OF CONVERSION AND REGENERATION, and by a clever redefinition of WHAT FAITH REALLY IS.

It is interesting to note that the FAITH GOSPEL OF MODERN CHRISTIANITY was essentially brought to the world OUT OF ENGLAND. Daniel the prophet said that ENGLAND (who has the symbol of the Lion) would produce MODERN BABYLON THE GREAT. Babylon the Great is a nation of RELIGIOUS CONFUSION AND UTTER AND TOTAL APOSTASY FROM THE REAL TRUTH. The modern faith movement began in the 1600s and 1700s and was ACCOMPANIED BY GREAT SIGNS AND WONDERS. Its founding fathers all preached an INSTANT CONVERSION/REGENERATION AND UNION AT A SIMPLE DECISION FOR CHRIST. It is EXACTLY THE GOSPEL THAT PETER AND CHRIST WARNED WAS COMING AS THE LATTER DAYS APPROACHED.

It will become crystal clear to you if it has not already. Only a diabolical mind of immense intelligence could come up with a gospel that sounds so close to the real thing that it literally is bought by almost the entire Body of Christ, which is precisely why Christ said they are swept into eternal ruin, and will never see heaven.

Exactly what is conversion? What does it mean? We will prove to you that CONVERSION applies only to the **CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL.** Conversion in all cases is something that **YOU DO WITH YOUR MIND, YOUR WILL.** It is an act of man **TURNING TO GOD,** and man does it after he hears the WORD OF GOD.

***“Then will I teach TRANSGRESSORS THY WAYS;  
and SINNERS shall be CONVERTED UNTO THEE.”  
(Psalm 51:13)***

Notice the progression of this verse. He will TEACH THE WAYS OF GOD TO THOSE WHO DO NOT KNOW THEM. It is then hoped that by this teaching, the SINNERS WILL, BY THEIR **FREE WILL CHOICE,** CONVERT TO GOD. In others words, they will leave THEIR WAYS, the WAYS OF THE WORLD behind them. They will turn AWAY FROM THE WORLD, **AND TURN TOWARD GOD.** All teaching of this manner is done by the SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN. God does this to attempt to find some **COMMON GROUND,** so that He can relate to the person involved.

God works through the sense man *first*. He approaches man where MAN IS. Man now lives in the sense world, the world of conscious thought. That is where he lives, dwells, works, feels and knows things. God will then use this sphere of human activity FIRST, BY WHICH HE CAN GAIN A 'FOOTHOLD'. Because the free will of man cannot be violated, God must then approach man, reason with him, show him, and then hope, through all of this, THAT A SOUL WILL, BY THEIR OWN FREE CHOICE CONVERT OVER TO HIM AND BEGIN TO FOLLOW AFTER GOD.

The word "converted" here is 'shuwb' and it means **TO TURN BACK, TO RETURN, TO TURN AGAIN**. In other words, to turn from whatever you are involved with and to turn WITH YOUR WHOLE CONSCIOUS HEART TOWARDS GOD. It is based upon the fact that God reasons with man, He pleads with man to listen. It is of course, up to man to EXERCISE HIS FREE WILL AND BY THAT CHOICE OF WILL TO CONVERT TO GOD. It means to leave whatever you are doing and to change over, to change directions, to shift gears, to turn over a NEW LEAF.

***"FOR THIS PEOPLE'S HEART IS WAXED GROSS, AND THEIR EARS  
ARE DULL OF HEARING,  
AND THEIR EYES THEY HAVE CLOSED;  
LEST AT ANY TIME THEY SHOULD SEE WITH THEIR EYES,  
AND HEAR WITH THEIR EARS,  
AND SHOULD UNDERSTAND WITH THEIR HEART,  
AND SHOULD BE CONVERTED, AND I SHOULD HEAL THEM."***  
(Matthew 13:15)

No one could say that Jesus did not get right to the point. Notice, however, what He says in relation to the word CONVERTED. He uses the words EARS, EYES, AND HEART. The ears are a SENSE ORGAN. We hear with OUR CONSCIOUS MIND. The eyes are also a SENSE ORGAN. We see with our CONSCIOUS MIND. Jesus is referring to THE SENSE MAN, THE SOUL MAN, THE CARNAL MAN, and THE FLESH MAN. OBVIOUSLY THEN THE HEART HE IS REFERRING TO IS THE CONSCIOUS HEART! They have decided in their own minds that Jesus is not who He claims, and that His message is not of God. They have closed their ears and eyes to all that He says and to all that He did. This is an exercise of the CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL.

So then Jesus is saying, if they would OPEN THEIR EYES AND EARS, AND LISTEN TO WHAT HE SAYS, then they would, by really listening, pick up on the fact that HE WAS TELLING THEM THE TRUTH. They would then, by THE EXERCISE OF THEIR CONSCIOUS WILL, CONVERT OVER TO HIM. They would leave Judaism behind, and follow after Jesus. Again we find that the word CONVERSION ALWAYS DEALS WITH THE SENSE MAN, THE CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL. The word "converted" here is 'episterpho' and it means **TO REVERT, TO COME AGAIN, TO TURN ABOUT, TO TURN AGAIN**. It means essentially what the Old Testament word meant. Mark 4:12; John 12:40 and Acts 28:27 are all repeat verses, and they all deal with EARS, EYES AND THE CONSCIOUS HEART, MIND AND WILL. THEY DEAL ONLY WITH THE SENSE MAN, THE SOUL MAN.



*“And said, Verily I say unto you,  
**EXCEPT YE BE CONVERTED,**  
AND become as little children,  
**YE SHALL NOT ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN.”**  
(Matthew 18:3)*

It is clear then that **CONVERSION TO CHRIST IS A NECESSARY STEP TO ENTER INTO HEAVEN**. WITHOUT it, you shall not. No one could mistake what this means. Notice the sequence **CONVERSION SO THAT ONE CAN BECOME AS A CHILD**. What are the hallmarks of children? One is **TRUST**. The other is THE EAGERNESS TO LEARN. Children want to learn. They love to listen to stories with wide eyes full of wonder. TRUST AND LEARNING, TRUST AND THE ABILITY TO LEARN, TO CHANGE, TO BE MOLDED OVER. A child might be rebellious, he might be stubborn, but in the end, HE COMPLIES, HE SUBMITS. Jesus is telling us that UNLESS WE CONVERT, AND BECOME AS LITTLE CHILDREN, WE CANNOT ENTER HEAVEN’S GATE. The word “converted” here is ‘strepho’ and it means **TO TWIST, TO TURN, TO REVERSE, TO TURN ABOUT, ABOUT FACE**.

The older you get, the more set in your ways you get. The more IN THE WORLD YOU GET. We become worldly, because we live in the world. We have worldly concerns, like eating, drinking, sleeping, working. We have fears; we want security. We all have dreams of this or that. THESE ARE WORLDLY. Because all man lives in the world, via his CONSCIOUS SENSES, AND WORKS IN THE WORLD VIA HIS CONSCIOUS HEART, MIND AND WILL, then JESUS IS SAYING THAT WE MUST CONVERT OVER TO HIM. We must TURN ABOUT, TWIST ABOUT, and make a **DECISION TO FOLLOW HIM**. This verse has a parallel in the verse about the rich young ruler. **GO AND SELL ALL THAT YOU HAVE. CONVERT**. After you have **DECIDED TO CONVERT, AND DO IT, THEN FOLLOW ME**. The follow me is “become as a child”. It is all done via the SENSE MAN, FLESH MAN.

*“And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you,  
that he may sift you as wheat:  
  
but I have prayed for thee,  
that thy FAITH FAIL NOT:  
  
and when thou art CONVERTED,  
STRENGTHEN THY BRETHREN.”  
(Luke 22:31-32)*

Why would Jesus say something like this to Peter? Was not Peter already FULLY CONVERTED? Had not Peter left it all and followed after Jesus? This remark comes just before Jesus informs Peter he will deny Christ three times. Peter said he would follow him anywhere, even unto the death. Peter was a liar, because Peter would do exactly as Christ said he would do. He denied the Lord. It says that Peter quit. He left. He went back to fishing. Peter suffered defeat. So we can prove that Peter LEFT IT all behind; he quit Christ, HE CONVERTED BACK TO THE WORLD. If you are back into the world, then how do you return UNTO THE LORD?

We might ask, how did Peter decide to quit Christ and leave? Why did Peter hang it all up? It says that Peter wept; he was in full inner turmoil. All of this IS SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN, FLESH MAN, CARNAL MAN. It is here that all of our emotions are. Peter used **HIS CONSCIOUS MIND TO DECIDE TO QUIT THE LORD**. Likewise he used his conscious mind and will to REPENT AND RETURN UNTO THE LORD. The word converted here means **TO RETURN, TO TURN AGAIN**. Peter would return again unto the Lord. It has nothing whatever to do with REGENERATION.

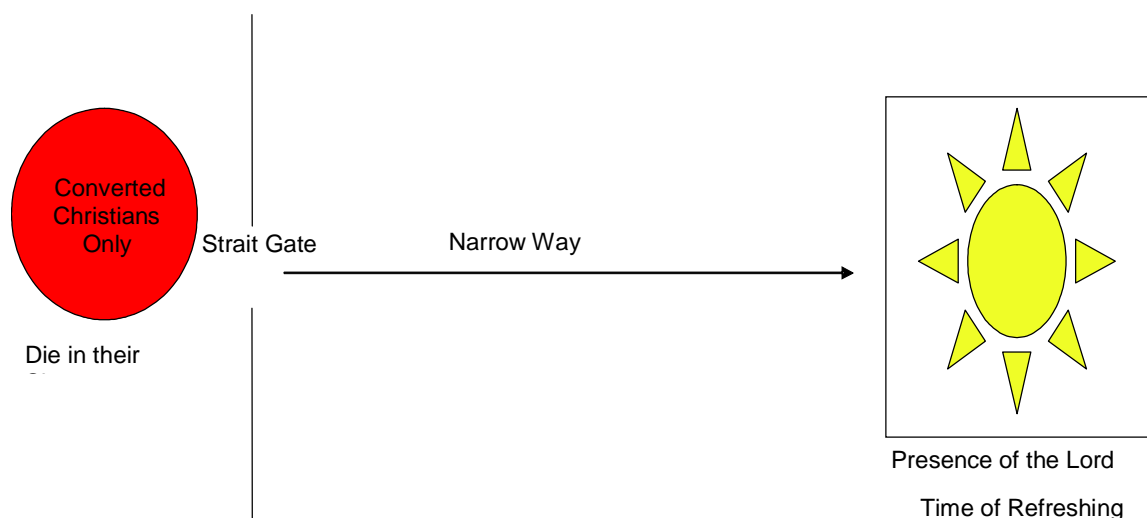
***“Repent ye therefore,  
AND BE CONVERTED,  
THAT YOUR SINS  
MAY BE  
BLOTTED OUT,  
WHEN  
THE TIMES OF REFRESHING SHALL COME  
FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD.”***  
(Acts 3:19)

Scripture will prove there are two types of repentance, two types of sorrow. One is of the world; the other is Godly. Worldly repentance is being sorry for the multitude of sins committed. Godly sorrow works a repentance unto the recognition of THE ONE SIN, **that we do not love, that we cannot love, that we will not love**. We can come to a mental agreement of that simply by facing the reality of our lives. Mental agreement has nothing to do with **INNER HEART AGREEMENT**. The work of God is that WE BELIEVE FROM OUR **HEART OF HEARTS**. That recognition is from the INNER HEART, FROM THE CORE. It is not mental, it is not intellectual, it is **SPIRITUAL, IT IS A KNOWING THAT TRANSCENDS ALL SENSE KNOWLEDGE**. When this recognition comes, TRUE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE CAN COME, and along with it, bestowment of agape love.

The narrow way is the WORK OF GOD. Jesus said that no man could come to Him, unless the FATHER DRAW HIM IN. We will cover this aspect in detail, for without the POWER OF GOD GRANTED AT CONVERSION, NO ONE COULD COME TO CHRIST. **The narrow way is the method that God employs to BRING CONVICTION TO THE INNER HEART**. It is a second work of the Holy Spirit, and a second work that the vast majority of Christians REFUSED TO ALLOW. They branded this second work, this much deeper work a SATANIC ATTACK. They went to their pastors and fellow believers when TRUE HOLY SPIRIT CONVICTION SET UPON THEM, and they claimed IT WAS SATANIC, AND THEY ‘cast out’ what they thought was an EVIL SPIRIT. They did what the Jews did to Jesus! They in fact BLASPHEMED THE HOLY SPIRIT.

It is the assumption of Scripture that the true seeker after Christ will SEE HIS MANY SINS, AND REPENT a worldly sorrow; that he will see his many sins, and turn to the Lord, and begin to follow after the Lord. This form of repentance LEADS TO BEING CONVERTED FROM THE WORLD OVER TO THE WAYS OF THE LORD. Notice how it is worded: THE CONVERSION WILL LEAD TO THE BLOTTING OUT OF SINS. When are the sins actually

blotted out? AT THE TIME OF REFRESHING, WHEN YOU ARE IN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD.



Notice in the drawing the sequence: conversion is always a worldly conversion, because God approaches man on the basis of what man knows and recognizes. He is then also given the **POWER** to enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way to the **PRESENCE OF THE LORD**, so that he may have his sins blotted out. The presence of the Lord is always found in the Holy of Holies. Many people claim this is a Second Advent verse of Scripture. It is a **DOUBLE REFERENCE VERSE**, for it applies to the believer who has come into the Holy of Holies for the forgiveness of sin. He will **SEE THE LORD**. The 'many' did not have their sins blotted out. They were set away because they refused to **EXERCISE THE POWER GOD HAD GIVEN THEM**. They refused to walk to the Holy of Holies and **MEET JESUS**. The question of their **AGAPE LOVE SIN WAS NEVER SETTLED**. It could not have been, for if it had been accomplished, **THEY COULD HAVE NEVER BEEN SENT AWAY**.

This verse is usually thought of as a verse concerning the second advent of Jesus Christ to planet earth. It is not, and is easily proved it is not. This verse, along with hundreds of others, is telling you that **YOUR SINS WILL BE BLOTTED OUT ONLY AND IF YOU GO INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES, AND FIND THE LORD**. The time of refreshing is the time of the granting of **NEW LIFE**. The word "refreshing" is another word used for **BEING BORN AGAIN**. Check it out! This **NEW LIFE IS FOUND IN AGAPE LOVE**. Agape love is **BESTOWED ONLY BY GOD THE FATHER AND JESUS CHRIST**.

Did the many have their sins blotted out? If so, then why are they rejected out of hand, and sent into eternal ruin? The answer is they did not have their sins blotted out. They were not under the grace of God, and they were not under the New Covenant. They refused the strait gate and narrow way, and because they refused it, they **NEVER TRAVELED THROUGH THE INNER COURT TO REACH THE HOLY OF HOLIES**. They never entered in to the Holy of Holies, they never went in to **MEET THE KING**. They were **NEVER IN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD**.

To meet the Lord, you must be in His presence. To have **UNION** with the Lord, you must be **IN HIS PRESENCE**. To know who the Lord is, you must be **IN HIS PRESENCE**. In as much as He resides in the Holy of Holies, and does not appear to be disposed to move anywhere else, then **IT**

IS US WHO MUST MOVE OURSELVES THROUGH TO THE HOLY OF HOLIES OR WE WILL NEVER BE IN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD.

The presence of the Lord is connected DIRECTLY to the TIMES OF REFRESHING. The word “refreshing” is ‘anapoxis’ and it means **RECOVERY OF BREATH**. The word breath is used many times for SPIRIT. The time of refreshing is when GOD AND CHRIST REVIVE THE SPIRIT VIA AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. It is a revival of the agape love spirit that man was created with. This is the breath of refreshing. Jesus referred to the Holy Spirit as like the wind, and the wind is a breath of fresh air. AGAPE LOVE IS A SPIRIT WIND, A BREATH OF FRESH AGAPE LOVE. Scripture proves it so.

Notice the sequence of events, for sequence is very important. **WORLDLY REPENTANCE LEADS TO CONVERSION**. Conversion IS SUPPOSED TO LEAD TO YOU BEING OBEDIENT. Being obedient leads to you entering the strait gate and walking the narrow way. This leads you to the Holy of Holies. Being in the Holy of Holies brings you into the presence of the Lord. Being in the presence of the Lord brings you to AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE REFRESHING. Refreshing is a code word for REGENERATION, for AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT.

We will now turn to the Vine’s Expanded Expository Dictionary of New Testament words to see if all of this is correct:

“2. EPISTREPHO – to turn about, turn towards (epim towards and No. 1) is used transitively, and so rendered “convert” (OR CAUSING A PERSON TO TURN) in Jas. 5:19,20” ... ‘EPISTROPHE’... a turning about, or around, conversion, is found in Acts 15:3. The word implies a turning from and a turning to; corresponding to these are repentance and faith; cp. “TURNED TO GOD FROM IDOLS” (1 Thess, 1:9)...”

I will now quote from a book written by Dr. Herbert Lockyer, called *ALL THE DOCTRINES OF THE BIBLE*, which I recommend one purchase, for it is well researched and well written. We can gain some important information here.

“In Christian circles CONVERSION and REGENERATION are treated as being one and the same experience. They are used as INTERCHANGEABLE TERMS. But although the two events are closely related and cannot exist apart from the other, **THERE IS YET A CLEARLY MARKED DOCTRINAL DISTINCTION BETWEEN THEM PROVING THAT A CLOSER STUDY SHOULD NOT BE IGNORED.**”

Dr. Lockyer has hit the nail right on the head. THERE IS A CLEARLY MARKED DOCTRINAL DISTINCTION BETWEEN THE TWO. Yet he says that in Christian circles, **THE TWO WOULD BE MERGED, BROUGHT TOGETHER, TREATED AS THE SAME THING**. Did not Peter warn us that a damnable heresy would sweep the entire Church **UNDETECTED**? Did he not say that this damnable heresy WOULD HAVE TO DO WITH SALVATION ITSELF? Did he not warn us that this DOCTRINAL POSITION would cause the WAY of the truth to be evil spoken of? Did Peter not warn us that they would CONTRADICT THE LORD JESUS CHRIST?

What is this WAY that the false teachers would cause to speak evil of? Jesus gave us ONLY ONE WAY TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT. All other ways were false. That way is the narrow way. The destination point, the end of our journey on the narrow way is LIFE. Life is REGENERATION. Regeneration has to do with the inner HEART. Conversion is the BEGINNING POINT. When a person is CONVERTED, **THEY HAVE NOT EVEN YET ENTERED THE STRAIT GATE.** They are on the broad road of general apostate Christianity. It is hoped by the Lord they will discover there is a strait gate and a narrow way.

If we remove the NARROW WAY VIA DOCTRINE, THEN WHAT HAVE WE DONE? WE HAVE MADE CONVERSION AND REGENERATION THE SAME THING, WE HAVE BROUGHT THE TWO TOGETHER. If the strait gate and narrow way ARE WHAT SEPARATES CONVERSION FROM REGENERATION, AND WE MOVE THEM, WE THEN MAKE CONVERSION REGENERATION, THEY BECOME IDENTICAL, AND WE MAY THEN USE THEM INTERCHANGEABLY. It is a total verification that Peter knew of what he spoke, because he spoke via the Holy Spirit. Dr. Lockyer continues:

“As evidence of the difference between CONVERSION and REGENERATION can be found in Christ’s forewarning of Peter. Our Lord predicted the denial by his disciples and also spoke of Peter’s repentance and return in the words, “when thou art CONVERTED, strengthen thy brethren” (Luke 22:32). In this declaration of future usefulness after Peter’s restoration, Jesus did not imply that Peter was not one of His. Peter had been a TRUE DISCIPLE FOR OVER THREE YEARS. **The word CONVERTED simply means TURNED AGAIN.**

Peter was about to shamefully deny his Master and reach the depth of despair. In effect, Jesus is saying, “Peter, you are about to grieve and fail Me, but when you realize your sin, and repent and return to me in humble surrender, I will make you a greater channel of blessing than you ever were in the past.” And Peter TURNED BACK and became the apostle to the Jews. Like Peter, a person may backslide and yet in penitence turn back to God.

Tracing the Biblical usage of CONVERSION, we find it mentioned five times in the Old Testament (Psalm 19:7; 51:13; Isaiah 1:27; 6:10; 60:5) and 10 times in the New Testament (Matthew 13:15; 18:3; Mark 4:12; Luke 22:32; John 12:40; Acts 3:10; 15:3; 28:27; James 5:19,20). Two ideas seem to underlie the employment of the term, namely

**1. THE ACT OF TURNING TO GOD**

**2. THE ACT IS A HUMAN ACT, RATHER THAN A DIVINE ONE. CONVERSION IS SET FORTH AS AN ACT OF AN INDIVIDUAL TURNING TO GOD.”**

In all cases conversion is shown as an act of the CONSCIOUS WILL, THE CONSCIOUS HEART TURNING TOWARDS GOD. It is an act of the HUMAN SENSE WILL. A person, upon hearing the gospel message, can elect to turn or not to turn. It is of the free will, it is of the CONSCIOUS MIND AND HEART. It is the conscious mind that determines whether or not to go forward at a crusade or in church when the call is made. It is TOTALLY OF THE WILL OF

MAN, IN THE CONSCIOUS AREA OF LIFE. It is the mind/intellect that reasons the whole thing through and decides to act or not act.

The word for “call” as in “all who call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved” is ‘epikaleomai’ and it means **TO INVOKE, TO APPEAL TO, TO INVOKE FOR A DECISION, ETC.** It is closely associated with CONVERSION, for the call comes, and the conscious mind elects to either heed it, or to disregard it.

**This is absolutely essential to be understood, for this is where the false prophets have laid their snare for the many.** A person born into the world walks in the world. When he/she hears the gospel message of Jesus Christ, that person can elect to LEAVE THE WORLD AND THE WAYS OF THE WORLD AND TURN TO THE WAYS OF CHRIST. If a person so elects, THAT PERSON IS THEN CONVERTED. They have undergone CONVERSIONS. If you are a ball player and I come to you and show you all the advantages of mountain climbing, and I convince you to drop your ball playing, THEN I HAVE CONVERTED YOU FROM BEING A BALL PLAYER TO BEING A MOUNTAIN CLIMBER.

If a person is a Hindu, and I convince him that Jesus Christ is the only TRUE WAY, and he/she decides in their CONSCIOUS HEART AND MIND TO FOLLOW AFTER CHRIST, then they have been CONVERTED FROM HINDUISM TO CHRISTIANITY. They will now leave the ways of the Hindu, and will begin to follow the ways of the Christian. That is what CONVERSION, CONVERT, AND CONVERTED MEAN. **THAT IS ALL THAT THEY MEAN.** To read into that word REBIRTH, REGENERATION, OR BORN AGAIN is utterly false doctrine, the very doctrine that Christ warned us would come.

Conversion, IF it is a true conversion, that is, sincere in the conscious mind and heart, will always lead to a **LIFE CHANGE**. Let us say that a half-hearted Christian suddenly becomes convinced that the Jewish faith is correct. He is positive that it is. HE WILL UNDERGO A CONVERSION AWAY FROM CHRIST AND EMBRACE THE JEWISH BELIEF SYSTEMS. If the conversion is a true one, **IT WILL EVIDENCE ITSELF BY LIFE CHANGES.** The converted person will no longer go to a Christian church. He will no longer study the New Testament. He will embrace all aspects of the Jewish faith. HE WILL HAVE A RADICAL LIFE CHANGE, WHICH WILL BE MANIFESTED BY BEING OBEDIENT TO THE COMMANDS OF HIS NEW BELIEF.

If a person is walking in the world, and hears the gospel call of Christ, and it is accepted by the conscious mind and heart, and a decision for Christ is made by the will, then that person will **EVIDENCE LIFE CHANGES.** A life CHANGE has nothing to do with REGENERATION. The two are whole worlds apart. Modern Christianity has taken the **EVIDENCES OF CONVERSION, AND MADE THEM INTO THE EVIDENCES OF REGENERATION.** They are not; they are totally different! Regeneration brings a LOVE CHANGE. Conversion brings only a LIFE CHANGE. Remember it:

**CONVERSION = LIFE CHANGE**  
**REGENERATION = LOVE CHANGE**

It is easy to prove that it is all correct. The ‘many’ provide all the proof we need. The ‘many’ all underwent CONVERSIONS. They were walking in the world and heard the gospel call at some point in their lives, and BY THEIR CONSCIOUS MIND AND HEART ACCEPTED IT. They exercised their will and they made a ‘decision’ for Jesus Christ. When they did that, THEY HAD A LIFE CHANGE. They left the ways of the world, and they began to follow after Christ. They began to study the Bible rather than some other book. They went to church rather than some sports event. They began to associate with other Christians, and found a WHOLE NEW SPHERE OF FRIENDS. They underwent a **RADICAL LIFE CHANGE**. They underwent an outward BEHAVIOR CHANGE. Others simply grew up in it, and never did experience a radical shift. **BUT ALL UNDERWENT CONVERSIONS.**

But of what did their CONVERSIONS TO CHRIST AVAIL THEM? **Nothing**. It was all vanity, it was all for naught. They were sent away. They bought into the doctrine that told them that CONVERSION, AND THE EVIDENCES OF CONVERSION WERE IN FACT THE EVIDENCES OF REGENERATION. Had they read the Scriptures, had they searched it out, they would have known it could not be true. They accepted a false doctrine that merged CONVERSION WITH REGENERATION; THAT TOLD THEM THEY WERE BOTH THE SAME. They forgot that the distance between CONVERSION AND REGENERATION WAS A STRAIT GATE AND A NARROW WAY.

The evidences of conversion are **NEVER** the evidences of regeneration. They are not even remotely the same, as you will see in the Chapter devoted to true regeneration and what it is. They do not even concern themselves with the same thing. In fact they are so far apart in their definitions that it is incredible that otherwise intelligent people could be duped into such a falsehood. CONVERSION IS THIS:

- 1. CONVERSION IS AN ACT OF THE HUMAN CONSCIOUS WILL TO TURN TO CHRIST AND TO FOLLOW CHRIST. We call it going forward and ‘getting saved’. Drop the “getting saved” part and you have it right.**
- 2. CONVERSION IS THE ACT OF THE HUMAN WILL TO ACCEPT THE CLAIMS OF THE LORDSHIP OF JESUS CHRIST.**
- 3. CONVERSION IS AN ACT OF THE CONSCIOUS HUMAN WILL AND MIND TO AGREE MENTALLY AND INTELLECTUALLY WITH THE CLAIMS OF JESUS CHRIST THAT WE ARE SINNERS AND IT IS USUALLY ACCOMPANIED BY CONSCIOUS MIND AND HEART WORLDLY REPENTANCE. It may be very emotional and experiential, for all forms of sins are brought out and released to the Lord. Conversions can be very experiential, with deep emotion, deep grief, and after it is over, a great peace of mind can flood the soul. It is the initial cleansing of the Holy Spirit. IT DEALS ONLY WITH SINS (PLURAL).**
- 4. CONVERSION WILL LEAD TO A FORM OF CONSCIOUS REPENTANCE, SOUL REPENTANCE, IN WHICH THE PERSON GENUINELY FEELS SORRY FOR HIS SINS COMMITTED and may lead to a vow to ‘clean up their act’, and ‘get right with God’. AGAIN, CONVERSION ALWAYS DEAL WITH SINS (PLURAL). They usually deal with such things as adultery, fornication, theft, drinking, cursing**

and such like. THESE ARE ONLY SURFACE MANIFESTATION OF A MUCH DEEPER PROBLEM. THIS FORM OF SORROW IS A SORROW OF THE WORLD, A SORROW OF THE SENSE MAN, THE SOUL MAN. Conversions are always mental/intellectual and they have nothing to do with the inner heart.

*“For GODLY SORROW worketh  
REPENTANCE TO SALVATION  
NOT TO BE REPENTED OF:  
**BUT THE SORROW OF THE WORLD WORKETH DEATH.**  
(2 Corinthians 7:10)*

Conversion to Christ brings a repentance brought about by WORLDLY SORROW. The sorrows of the world are brought about by murder, rape, theft, adultery, fornication, alcohol, drugs, etc. People are sorry after they either do or are the victims of these things. This is called SORROW OF THE WORLD. This type of sorrow, all of the tears, crying and wailing that we see so much of on TV news nowadays, WORKS DEATH. It is to no avail in THE SALVATION OF THE SOUL.

We are born sinners. Sinners can do nothing BUT SIN. To attempt to clean up the OUTSIDE WITHOUT GOING TO THE INSIDE IS FRUITLESS. You can vow never to commit a sin again but what does that have to do with YOUR INNER NATURE? You cannot, by any vow you make, CHANGE YOUR NATURE. You are a prisoner of your own nature, your own genetic code. You cannot change it; it is not changeable. Believe it or not, God is not interested in your many and varied sins at conversion. It is not that He does not care if you sin or not, He does, but that is not the POINT HE IS GETTING AT. God wants to go deeper, HE NEEDS A CONFESSION FROM THE INNERMOST HEART, THE HOLY OF HOLIES OF YOURSELF. He wants to corner that great “I AM”, and have a discussion with you about the REAL PROBLEM:

## NO AGAPE LOVE.

Regeneration has nothing to do with, nor does it concern itself with the many and varied sins of the soul. In the first phase of the salvation process God brings a person to the RECOGNITION OF SURFACE SINS TO MAKE THE BELIEVER AWARE THAT HE HAS A PROBLEM MUCH DEEPER. But God does not deal ONLY with these sins, for they are only the product of the deeper problem. A soul can give up smoking, drinking, cursing, adultery, fornication, stealing, lying and all the rest if it WANTS TO BAD ENOUGH. It can be done by SHEER CONSCIOUS HEART WILL POWER. But what does that do to change your inner heart? You cannot change the NATURE OF YOUR HEART BY ANY MEANS WHATSOEVER. You can choke off all the evil impulses, but they still are there. You are just not allowing them to surface, to manifest themselves. THEY ARE STILL THERE, FOR THE HEART IS WICKED, AND WHO CAN KNOW IT?



It should now be understandable why CONVERSIONS CANNOT BE, AND HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH REGENERATION. Here are all the evidences of genuine conversions:

- 1. A desire to please God and Christ.**
- 2. All known sins confessed and at least attempted to be dealt with.**
- 3. A hunger and a thirst for the Word of God.**
- 4. A desire to grow in knowledge of the Word.**
- 5. A desire to be with and associate with other Christians.**
- 6. Gifts of the Spirit may or may not be evidenced.**
- 7. Spiritual fruits, the desire to witness to others is usually evident.**

Conversion is **NOT** regeneration. Conversion does not even remotely GUARANTEE REGENERATION. You can fall away from conversions hundreds of times, repent, and CONVERT BACK AGAIN. They are called “rededications” by most Christians. First we “backslide” and then we REDEDICATE OURSELVES. They are in fact CONVERSIONS, OR TURNING AGAIN, BOTH TO CHRIST AND AWAY FROM CHRIST. ALL CONVERSIONS ARE AN ACT OF FAITH. They have to be made by faith, FOR THERE IS NOT EVIDENCE AS OF YET TO PROVE CHRIST WAS ALIVE, DIED, AND ROSE AGAIN. It is accepted as a matter of FAITH. **CONVERSIONS ARE INSTANT AND IMMEDIATE, WHEN THEY OCCUR.** The vast majority of Christians that Christ sent away had all the evidence of CONVERSION. They were told that it proved they were regenerated. Satan had moved into the Church and **CHANGED THE DEFINITION OF REGENERATION, AND MADE IT INTO CONVERSION.**

Conversion does not save anyone. It is done only by the CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL OF A PERSON. IT IS AN ACT OF FAITH; IT IS INSTANT AND IMMEDIATE. Regeneration has nothing to do with faith, it has nothing to do with an act of your will. Scripture proves that when AUTHENTIC REGENERATION OCCURS, YOU DON'T HAVE ANY FAITH LEFT. You don't have anything at all; you are destitute, alone, and dead. The evidences of regeneration will surprise you. THEY HAVE NOTHING WHATEVER TO DO WITH THE EVIDENCES OF CONVERSION. You will see why shortly. We will now go back to Dr. Lockyer and see what else he has to say:

“A good deal of what we know about “backsliding” is attributable to a **DEFICIENT UNDERSTANDING** of the DIFFERENCE BETWEEN CONVERSION AND REGENERATION. In many so called “revivals” **SCORES ARE CONVERTED** but not REGENERATED. A person cannot be regenerated without being converted, BUT HE CAN BE CONVERTED WITHOUT BEING REGENERATED. Under the impact of the preached Word, consciences are stirred but HAVE GOD AND THE SINNER ACUTALLY MET?...” (Page 177)

In truth the converted do **NOT MEET GOD AT THAT POINT.** They are still separated by a strait gate and a narrow way, the way of INNER HEART RECONCILIATION. God is not standing around with baited breath to hand out regeneration to every Tom, Dick and Mary that come along and want entrance to heaven. He is far wiser than that. He is going to see if they ARE

GOING TO **BE OBEDIENT TO HIS SON**. HE IS GOING TO SEE IF THEY '**KEEP THE SAYINGS OF JESUS**'. He is going to see if they are **CALLING UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD IN TRUTH**. He is going to **TEST THEM IN SEVERE TRIAL**. If they persist, if they do as commanded and do **NOT TURN BACK**, then, and only then, will **GOD PAY ANY ATTENTION TO THEM**. Psalm 145:18 **QUALIFIES WHO THE LORD IS GOING TO DRAW NIGH UNTO**. It is only those who call upon the name of the Lord

## **IN TRUTH.**

We are now going to return to a Scripture we looked at long ago, for it is very important to this discussion:

*“Verily, verily, I say unto you,  
HE THAT ENTERETH NOT BY THE DOOR INTO THE SHEEPFOLD,  
BUT CLIMBETH UP SOME OTHE WAY,  
THE SAME IS A THIEF AND A ROBBER.”*  
(John 10:1)

Remember we pointed out that there are two ways into the sheepfold, the **DOOR**, and **SOME OTHER WAY**. Both lead directly **INTO THE SHEEPFOLD, THE BODY OF CHRIST**. Those that come via the **DOOR** are the true shepherds of the sheep:

*“But he that entereth in **BY THE DOOR** is the shepherd of the sheep.  
To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own  
sheep by name, and leadeth them out.”*  
(John 10:2-3)

We know that Jesus is the **DOOR**. We know that anyone who comes in **VIA THE DOOR** has come into the sheepfold **VIA UNION WITH CHRIST**. If Christ is the door, and you go **THROUGH THE DOOR**, then you have eaten the flesh of Christ, you have drunk of His blood, you have **KISSED HIM**, and you have had **UNION WITH HIM**, and you **HAVE ETERNAL LIFE, VIA REGENERATION AND AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**. Jesus is the **TRUE SHEPHERD**, and that person is a true shepherd, and he will be heard by **THOSE WHO ARE WRITTEN IN THE LAMB'S BOOK OF LIFE**. They will hear the true shepherd's call, they will listen to him, they will pay attention to his voice, and **HE WILL LEAD THEM OUT OF DECEPTION, OUT OF ERROR AND INTO THE LIGHT OF CHRIST**. Likewise is Christ the true shepherd of the sheep. The sheep will hear His voice, and they will follow Him, and a stranger they will not follow. They will come to the light of agape love.

The others have come in **VIA SOME OTHER WAY**. Since we know that anyone walking in the world **MUST CONVERT OVER TO CHRIST** before he/she will call themselves Christians, then

the only other way into the sheepfold **IS CONVERSION**. Now we know why Peter warned us what the false teachers would do. They will attempt to bring a multitude into the body of Christ via **CONVERSION**, and will claim **THEY ARE REGENERATED WHEN THEY ARE NOT**. You cannot enter the sheepfold unless you undergo a conversion to Christ. There is NO OTHER WAY IN. Therefore Christ is clearly showing the DIFFERENCE BETWEEN CONVERSION AND REGENERATION. Therefore:

**SOME OTHER WAY = THE HISTORICAL CHRIST = CONVERSION  
THE DOOR = THE LIVING CHRIST = REGENERATION**

There are only two types of Christians among all of the many denominations: CONVERTED OR REGENERATED. LOST OR SAVED. Regeneration comes only by going to the LIVING CHRIST, and the only pathway open to find Him is the narrow way. As Christ is the door, then it becomes obvious that **THE DOOR REPRESENTS REGENERATION and some other way represents CONVERSION**.

Why does Christ levy the charge of thieves and robbers upon the sincere but only CONVERTED CHRISTIAN? He does it because they ROB HIM OF PEOPLE WHO MIGHT OTHERWISE HAVE DISCOVERED THE STRAIT GATE AND GONE ON TO REGENERATION. They are liars, hypocrites, frauds, who in turn, because they appear to the unwary seeker as GENUINE CHRISTIANS, TURN SEEKERS ASIDE AFTER THEM AND THEY ALL FALL INTO HELL AND RUIN. Indeed they are thieves and robbers, and the ENEMIES OF JESUS CHRIST.

***“I AM THE DOOR: BY ME IF ANY MAN ENTER IN,  
HE SHALL BE SAVED,  
AND SHALL GO IN AND OUT, AND FIND PASTURE.”***  
**(John 10:9)**

Salvation is only via the door. Salvation is only via the LIVING JESUS CHRIST. Salvation is not in embracing the Christ of 2000 years ago. That is all past history. It is the WORK OF CHRIST THAT ENABLED CHRIST TO SAVE YOU, IT IS THE LIVING CHRIST THAT SAVES YOU. His work was the preparation for His **being able to save**. It was done under the laws of ancient Israel, known as kinsman-redeemer law. When Christ died, and shed His blood for us, **HE PURCHASED THE ENTIRE HUMAN RACE**. The next report of this series goes into this in great depth, for it is necessary to understand **WHAT SALVATION REALLY IS, AND HOW IT REALLY WORKS**.

Now we are going to go to a Scripture that is totally taken out of context by modern Christianity, and is used every day to prove INSTANT REGENERATION. In point of fact, it proves the exact opposite:

***“But as many as RECEIVED HIM (CONVERSION),  
TO THEM GAVE HE POWER TO BECOME (FUTURE TENSE)  
THE SONS OF GOD,***

**EVEN TO THEM THAT BELIEVE UPON HIS NAME:  
which were born (THE SONS OF GOD),  
NOT OF BLOOD, NOR OF THE WILL OF THE FLESH, NOR OF THE WILL OF MAN,  
BUT OF GOD.”  
(John 1:12-13)**

Here we have all the elements of the difference between CONVERSION and REGENERATION. It says that as MANY AS RECEIVED CHRIST. That is an act of the HUMAN CONSCIOUS WILL. That is the act of **CONVERSION TO CHRIST. IN OTHER WORDS, THESE PEOPLE HEARD THE GOSPEL CALL, RESPONDED TO IT BY RECEIVING HIM.** Then it says that Christ gave them THE POWER TO BECOME (FUTURE TENSE, IF THEY MEET THE OTHER CONDITIONS LAID DOWN) the SONS OF GOD. What makes one a Son of God? We know it is AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. In other words, the CONVERTED ARE GIVEN THE POWER BY CHRIST TO BECOME SONS OF GOD IF THEY WILL OBEY HIM, AND ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY.

That is the condition. If they refuse, they will not become the Sons of God. The ‘many’ refused, and they were not the Sons of God, but were instead **BASTARD SONS, SONS OF LAWLESSNESS.** Then notice what it says: THE SONS OF GOD ARE NOT BORN OF THE WILL OF MAN. They are born only of the WILL OF GOD. Man’s will is totally excluded. You can make all the decisions for Christ you want, and it will not make you a Son of God. That is because it is done under GOD’S WILL ALONE. God has EXCLUDED TOTALLY MAN’S PREROGATIVE IN THE MATTER. He had to, for the Word would become perverted, and even the most rank of people would be demanding entrance to heaven. PLEASE GET THE DRIFT; REGENERATION IS DONE ONLY BY GOD, WHEN HE WILLS IT, WHEN HE DECIDES, WHERE HE DECIDES. You are UTTERLY AND WHOLY EXCLUDED FROM THAT DECISION. It is not something you do, or will to do, or decide to do. It is something God does to you, and when He does, YOU WILL BE FULLY AWARE OF IT.

The current concept that God does it as soon as a soul decides for Christ is pure foolishness. It is **THE LIE OF THE GRAND DELUSION, LAID DOWN BY GOD FOR THE DISOBEDIENT CHRISTIAN.** It is a pure satanic fabrication based upon false interpretations of Scripture. That means if you go forward to ‘make a decision’ for Christ, you do it by your own will. **YOU DECIDED** WHEN TO DO IT, WHERE TO DO IT, AND HOW TO DO IT. That’s great, but to claim that GOD MADE YOU DO IT, AND THAT IT WAS THE HOLY SPIRIT IS ONLY A HALF-TRUTH. One has to START SOMEWHERE. That ‘decision’ is ONLY **STEP ONE** IN A LONG PROCESS, AS WILL BE PROVED.

Regeneration will not occur UNTIL AND UNLESS YOU WALK THE NARROW WAY. Because this is an operation of the Spirit, and because the INNER HEART OF MAN IS SO WICKED THAT NO ONE CAN KNOW IT, then ONLY GOD HIMSELF KNOWS IT, AND ONLY GOD HIMSELF KNOWS WHEN YOU HAVE MET THE PARAMETERS OF SOUL DEATH. When you have met the requirements, when you have **KEPT THE SAYINGS OF JESUS, and WHEN YOU HAVE DONE THE WILL OF THE FATHER,** THEN, AND ONLY THEN, WILL YOU BE BORN AGAIN, REGENERATED. The Bible is clear that IT IS THE WILL OF GOD ONLY THAT REGENERATES THE HUMAN HEART. That means:

**1. You cannot arrange to be born again by appointment.**

- 2. You are not born again because you went forward.**
- 3. You are not born again simply because you get immersed in water.**
- 4. You are not born again because you decided to be.**
- 5. You are not born again because some pastor tells you that you are.**
- 6. You are not born again because some church theology says you are.**
- 7. You are not born again because some ‘prophet’ discerns you are.**
- 8. You are not born again because you are CONVERTED.**
- 9. You are not born again because you have FAITH.**
- 10. You are not born again because you BELIEVE.**

It will be proven to you, if it has not been already, that **GOD ALONE IS SOVEREIGN, GOD ALONE WILL DECIDE, HE WILL NOT ALLOW MAN TO CHANGE IT BY THEOLOGY, BY DOCTRINE, BY WISH, BY ANY MEANS WHATEVER. YOU WILL NOT BE BORN AGAIN; YOU WILL NOT BE REGENERATED UNTIL EVERY SINGLE REQUIREMENT OF THE WORD OF GOD IS MET.**

**To claim otherwise is to assign yourself certain eternal ruin.**

All of this brings us back to the TWO aspects of Christ. The historical Christ, the Christ of the Bible; the Christ of the cross is the Christ of modern Christianity. He is the Christ of the OUTER COURT. HE IS THE CHRIST OF THE VISIBLE CHURCH. This is the Christ in all the denominations of Christianity. They claim they worship the risen savior, but in reality they do not. THEY APPROPRIATE THIS CHRIST BY FAITH ALONE. THEY APPROPRIATE THE PROMISES OF SALVATION BY FAITH ALONE. Their Christianity, while it is deeply felt and very sincere, is a Christianity of the SOUL MAN, SENSE MAN. IT IS A CHRISTIANITY OF THE MIND, OF THE CONSCIOUS WILL AND HEART.

They each embrace and worship a different Christ. If I walk into a Baptist church, I will be baptized in a BAPTIST BODY OF CHRIST. I will be taught the Baptist version of who Jesus Christ is. I will bow down and worship this BAPTIST CHRIST. If I go down the street and walk into an Assembly of God church, I will be baptized into an Assembly of God body of Christ. I will be taught the Assembly of God version of who Jesus Christ really is. The two versions will be radically different. If I go further down the street, I can walk into a Catholic church. I would then be baptized in the Catholic body of Christ, and would have removed myself from the “separated brethren”. I would then learn the Catholic version of Jesus Christ and all about His mother Mary. This Christ would be a different version yet.

I can continue this walk through a thousand different denominations, and come out with a thousand different versions of who Jesus Christ really is. All of them are sincere. All of them are dedicated. Most of them are very nice, decent people. All of them believe, all of them have faith;

all of them are dedicated servants of the Lord. Yet, I ask you, is Jesus Christ a Baptist? Is He a Nazarene? Is He a Pentecostal? Is He a Catholic? A Lutheran? A Methodist? Is He so confused that He does not know what He is? Is He so mental? Should we shut Him up in a padded cell and throw away the key? Why does He contradict Himself so much? Why do His doctrines contradict each other?

Brethren, these things ought not to be. The unity of Christ, the UNION of Christ is not a unity of doctrine; it is a unity in AGAPE LOVE. **IT IS A UNION OF DIVINE LOVE KNOWN ONLY BY THOSE WHO HAVE BEEN OBEDIENT TO THE CALL, WHO HAVE ENTERED THE SHEEPFOLD VIA THE DOOR, THE LIVING CHRIST.**

All of this is of the sense man, soul man. All of this is mind/intellect reasoning as to who Christ is. People have argued over the millennia as to who Christ was. Man has debated over God since the Garden of Eden. Debates will not save you. Arguments for or against will not avail you of salvation. There is only one thing that will: DO EXACTLY AS CHRIST COMMANDED. If you will, you WILL MEET IN PERSON THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST. YOU WILL THEN KNOW WHO HE REALLY IS. You will realize that THE LOVE OF GOD IS ALIEN TO YOU AND TO THE HUMAN RACE. You will then REALIZE THE SIMPLICITY OF CHRIST CRUCIFIED. You will then realize the foolishness of denominations. You will then KNOW what the mystery of God is. You will gaze upon the Lord and look deep into the width, the height, and the breadth of AGAPE LOVE. You will never be the same after. You will have left denomination Christianity far behind, you will have left the rituals and the solemn assemblies of the outer court behind, and you will journey by a WAY that you knew not. You will meet the King, and He will lower the Golden Scepter upon your head, and you will become a SON OF GOD.

Will you do it? Will you humble yourself; will you seek out and kiss the Son?

***“KISS THE SON,  
lest he be angry,  
and YE PERISH FROM THE WAY,  
when his wrath is kindled but a little.  
Blessed are they that put their trust in Him.”  
(Psalm 2:12)***

The word “kiss” here is ‘nashaq’ and it means **TO TOUCH, TO ATTACH, TO FASTEN TO**. In short, it is a code word for **UNION**. It is the direct command of the Lord God Almighty that you **KISS THE SON. THAT YOU TOUCH THE SON, THAT YOU COME INTO CONTACT WITH THE SON, THAT YOU SEE THE SON, THAT YOU GAZE UPON THE SON OF GOD:**

***“And this is THE WILL OF HIM THAT SENT ME,  
THAT  
EVERY ONE WHICH SEETH THE SON,  
AND BELIEVETH ON HIM,***

**MAY HAVE EVERLASTING LIFE;  
And I will RAISE HIM UP ON THE LAST DAY.”  
(John 6:40)**

It is the WILL OF THE FATHER that you **SEE THE SON**. The false teachers have changed the meanings of the word SEE, KNOW, REVEAL, MANIFEST, OPEN, FIND AND OTHERS so that the UNWARY CHRISTIAN will NOT KNOW HE CAN HAVE ABSOLUTE EVIDENCE OF WHO CHRIST REALLY IS. Not only is the concept of DIVINE REVELATION DENIED, IT IS BRANDED AS SATANIC BY THE FALSE TEACHERS. We are going to cover all of this in the report on regeneration, for Scripture proves BEYOND ANY DOUBT WHATSOEVER, that your EVIDENCE OF REGENERATION INVOLVES **‘SEEING’ THE SON OF GOD.**

The word “seeth” here is ‘theoreo’ and it means **TO LITERALLY BE A SPECTATOR OF, TO EXPERIENCE THE SIGHT OF, TO BEHOLD, TO LOOK ON, TO LOOK UPON, TO GAZE UPON.** It means EXACTLY what it says, and GOD MEANS EXACTLY WHAT HE SAYS. There are many such verses of Scripture. It is the WILL OF GOD that you SEE THE SON OF GOD. He wants you to literally EXPERIENCE WHO JESUS CHRIST REALLY IS. He wants you to **UNLOCK THE MYSTERY OF CHRIST.**

This will be covered in depth later, but remember that the SHEKINAH GLORY resided in the Holy of Holies? It was the literal and very real presence of God. When a person walks the narrow way, and comes in to the Holy of Holies of his/her own soul, AND CONFESSES the real sin that separates man from God, and admits depravity from the core of being, then does CHRIST COME. HE APPEARS OUT OF NOWHERE, INSTANTLY DOES HE COME. This is the FIRST ADVENT OF CHRIST TO THE BELIEVER. He will then SEE THE SON. HE WILL GAZE UPON THE SON. HE WILL GAZE UPON THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD AND CHRIST. He will KNOW **ABSOLUTELY** who Jesus Christ really is.

You cannot KISS the Son of God unless YOU CAN SEE HIM. You cannot see Him unless and until you are obedient and enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way. The false teachers of today claim there is no revelation because they themselves **ARE UTTERLY FALSE TEACHERS, IMPOSTORS, WHO ARE THIEVES AND ROBBERS, AND WHO HAVE NEVER BEEN OBEDIENT TO GOD OR TO CHRIST, AND THEREFORE THEY THEMSELVES HAVE NEVER MET CHRIST FACE TO FACE.** Because they claim they are regenerated when they are not, **THEY HAVE NO OPTION BUT TO DENY THAT CHRIST IS KNOWABLE, EXPERIENTIAL, REAL, LITERAL AND LIVES!**

It will be proven to you by Scripture alone that you do not APPROPRIATE SALVATION BY AN ACT OF FAITH. You do not get saved by simply ACCEPTING SOME SCRIPTURE AS A PROMISE BY FAITH. Faith is merely a DYNAMIC, A FORCE THAT PROPELS YOU **THROUGH THE LONG JOURNEY OF THE NARROW WAY.** At the end of that journey, your faith is gone, your life is gone, and you have nothing left. You are dead, alone, and very much in need of help. It is AT THE END OF YOUR FAITH THAT SALVATION COMES. Salvation has nothing to do with faith, it is the very OPPOSITE OF FAITH, and Scripture proves it.

You are to ‘keep the sayings of Jesus’, and you are to do THE WILL OF THE FATHER. It is the Father’s will that you SEE THE SON. You are to gaze upon Christ just as Peter gazed upon the burial clothes (John 20:6) and those who saw the angels of the Lord (John 20:12). The same word

is used and a word study will prove that YOU MUST SEE THE SON. You cannot in truth believe upon Jesus Christ UNTIL YOU KNOW WHO HE IS.

Have you seen the Son? Can you testify that Jesus Christ has come to you in a literal and real way and shown you what AGAPE LOVE IS? It is one of your evidences of AUTHENTIC REGENERATION. When He comes, you will be in awe. I know; I have SEEN THE SON.



**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**EIGHT**  
**KINSMEN-REDEEMER**  
**THE PURCHASE OF THE HUMAN RACE**

We are going to now search out the very visible and historical Christ, to find out exactly what He did, and why He did it. That will then answer many questions we might have as to the true nature of regeneration, and how we may obtain it. Modern Christian theology claims that Christ destroyed all the barriers between man and God, and that Christ brought about a total reconciliation between man and God by the work of the Cross, and that all man must do is **RECOGNIZE IT, AND ACCEPT IT AS AN ACT OF FAITH, AND HE IS THEN SWEEP INTO HEAVEN.**

If this is true, then what happened to the *many*? They certainly accepted the work of Christ on the cross, and they put all of their faith and belief in that work. Yet it availed them nothing. When they arrived in heaven they found out that **THEY WERE NOT RECONCILED TO CHRIST WHATEVER.** The Christ they thought they knew, this gentle meek Lamb full of love, mercy, grace and compassion turned into something quite different. He turned upon them and with the sweep of His hand He forces them to eternal ruin **WITH NO LOVE, NO HOPE, NO MERCY OR COMPASSION.** Wherein, then, is **THIS SO CALLED COMPLETE RECONCILIATION?** It is a pipe dream of apostates, of false prophets and teachers who have invaded the Body of Christ to deceive the elect and sweep them away into ruin.

The claim of modern Christian theology is that there is ONE BARRIER BETWEEN MAN AND GOD. It looks like this:



The one barrier of modern Christian theology is called the SIN BARRIER. According to this theology it was SWEEP AWAY BY THE WORK OF CHRIST UPON THE CROSS. Therefore all we need to do is ACCEPT THAT FACT BY AN ACT OF FAITH, ALONG WITH CHRIST, WE ARE THEN HEAVEN BOUND.

In truth, there are two barriers, and **Christ destroyed one,** and **we must, by walking the narrow way, destroy the other.** The first barrier was destroyed by the work of Christ upon the cross, and that **RECONCILES GOD UNTO MAN.** The remaining barrier is the hostility barrier that natural man has within his own heart. No amount of religious theology, no amount of philosophy, no amount of works, no amount of righteousness upon earth is going to break down this barrier. There is only one way through it: **STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.**

The Bible is very clear that God reconciled Himself to the world, via accepting the work that Christ did upon the cross. What about us? Are we RECONCILED?

***“And, having made peace through the blood of his cross,  
BY HIM TO RECONCILE ALL THINGS UNTO HIMSELF;  
BY HIM, I SAY,  
WHETHER THEY BE THINGS IN EARTH, OR THINGS IN HEAVEN.***

***And you, that were sometime ALIENATED AND ENEMIES  
IN YOUR MIND BY WICKED WORKS, YET NOW HATH HE RECONCILED***

***IN THE BODY OF HIS FLESH THROUGH DEATH,  
TO PRESENT YOU HOLY AND UNBLAMEABLE AND  
UNREPROVEABLE IN HIS SIGHT:***

**IF (THE HUGE CONDITIONAL IF)**

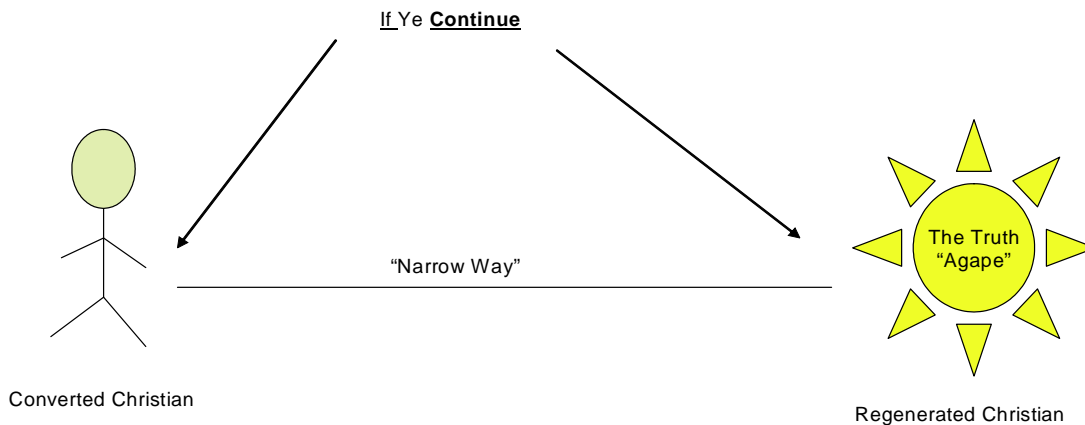
**YE CONTINUE**  
***IN THE FAITH GROUNDED AND SETTLED,  
AND BE NOT MOVED AWAY FROM THE HOPE OF THE GOSPEL,  
WHICH YE HAVE HEARD, AND WHICH WAS PREACHED  
TO EVERY CREATURE WHICH IS UNDER HEAVEN...”***  
**(Colossians 1:20-23)**

Please pay close attention to the **HUGE CONDITIONAL “IF”**. False prophets and false teachers **DROP OFF ALL THE QUALIFIERS TO SOFTEN THE GOSPEL, TO MAKE IT POPULAR TO CARNAL MAN**. This conditional **if** sounds very much like the **CONDITIONAL IF OF CHRIST THAT WE CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE**, or the huge conditional **CALLING UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD IN TRUTH** (Psalm 145:18).

This verse alone should prove to anyone that **MAN MUST, IF HE IS TO RECONCILE HIMSELF TO GOD, DO AS COMMANDED**. Jesus only gave us one way to accomplish our reconciliation to God. There is no other way. Thus:

**CONTINUE IN THE DOCTRINE = FINDING THE TRUTH**  
**CONTINUE IN THE FAITH = BEING RECONCILED**

In graphic form, we could lay out this verse of Scripture like this:



The reconciliation does not TAKE PLACE until we find Christ, **KISS THE SON**, and enter into **UNION WITH HIM**. You cannot enter into UNION unless you are reconciled. Obviously, then, the process of reconciliation **IS THE WALK OF THE NARROW WAY**. Because we can prove that God has reconciled Himself to man, there is only one reconciliation left, and that must be, has to be **MAN TO GOD**. That means that the strait gate and the narrow way is the reconciliation process, and it is the only way by which we may **BREAK DOWN THE BARRIERS THAT OUR INNER HEARTS HAVE ERECTED TOWARDS GOD**. That is why the Bible says that our carnal minds, our carnal hearts are **HOSTILE TOWARDS GOD**. Natural man does not perceive this to be the case, and he is UNAWARE of the true nature of his inner heart. That was the deception of the many; they refused to face the REAL REALITY OF THE AWFULNESS OF HUMAN NATURE.

They would not face the BLACKNESS OF DEPRAVITY. You see, this is the **REPROOF OF GOD; THIS IS THE REBUKE OF GOD**. Ever notice how a little child will confess he did something wrong, but it is almost impossible to get him to tell you what HE DID? He will wail and cry and carry on and confess he was naughty, and yell that he was sorry, but NEVER WILL TELL YOU FOR WHAT! You have to drag it out of them. Likewise does God have to **DRAG IT OUT OF US**.

Mankind will CONFESS his multitude of sins. He knows he rapes, steals, murders and commits gross violence. All the primary religions of the world focus on the multitude of sins, and most of them claim that if man would JUST CLEAN UP HIS ACT, AND GET RIGHT WITH GOD, he would be in fine shape. Modern Christianity is no different, for the 'many' **DUTIFULLY CONFESS TO GOD THEIR MULTITUDE OF SINS**. Our altars are stained with the tears of sincere and dedicated people who have admitted to God their deepest and darkest secrets. **BUT NEVER WILL THEY ADMIT TO THEIR ONE SIN**. They simply refuse to face the issue, they refuse to be exposed to the REAL DARKNESS, THE REAL PROBLEM WITH MAN: **NO AGAPE LOVE**.

The multitudinous sins of mankind were forever settled by Christ upon the cross. He took the sins of mankind into Himself and that work was accepted by God because Christ was innocent of all charges. The only hitch in this transaction is that mankind can only avail himself of this work by **WALKING THE NARROW WAY**. If he refused, the sins remain. If he accepts, the sins are blotted out forever. To settle the sin issue, after a soul has come to the living Christ, Jesus now sits upon the throne of God as our HIGH PRIEST, AND **EVER LIVES TO MAKE INTERCESSION FOR US**. That part of His intercession IS ONLY AVAILABLE TO THE REGENERATED. It does not cover anyone else. We will cover this in detail.

The work of Christ on earth was accomplished by Christ being a substitute for us under what is known as **KINSMAN-REDEEMER LAW**. Under kinsman-redeemer law, CHRIST CAME TO EARTH AND PURCHASED THE ENTIRE HUMAN RACE BY HIS BLOOD ATONEMENT. He now owns everyone, lock, stock and barrel. By this act of purchase, **ALL THE BARRIERS ERECTED BY GOD AGAINST MAN WERE TOTALLY DESTROYED. EVEN THOSE SUPERNATURAL POWERS AND THE DOMINION OF SATAN WAS UTTERLY DESTROYED**. Satan's power and dominion over the minds of man is a dominion of fraud and deception. He was totally dethroned by Christ and has no real claims over anyone. He gets his power by **DEFAULT, BY DECEPTION, BY SECRECY, BY CUNNING**.

***“And HAVING SPOILED PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS,  
he made a shew of them OPENLY,  
TRIUMPHING OVER THEM IN IT.”  
(Colossians 2:15)***

The word “spoiled” is ‘apekduomai’ and it means **TO DIVEST WHOLLY, TO DETHRONE, TO REMOVE TOTALLY, TO ELIMINATE COMPLETELY**. The root is ‘ekduo’ and it means **TO DIVEST, TO STRIP**. Christ utterly destroyed Satan’s power and his dominion, yet Satan still retains it by default. It is the self on the throne of the great “I AM”, aided and abetted by Satan and his demons that raise up a formidable barrier that EVERY SOUL MUST FIRST OF ALL REALIZE IS THERE, and second of all, FIGHT A MAJOR BATTLE TO PENETRATE IT. The narrow way is the only way we can penetrate it, and then only with God’s power.

Modern Christian theology ignores this barrier, and most evangelists today claim there is no barrier at all, that all we need to do is accept Christ by a simple act of faith, and PRESTO! We become INSTANT CHRISTIANS, FULLY REGENERATED, WRITTEN IN THE LAMB’S BOOK OF LIFE, AND HEAVEN IS AN ASSURED VICTORY. They ignore such words as **STRIVE, LABOR, FIGHT AND THE WORD OVERCOME**. They smoothly tuck them away, fold them into their false theology and keep them out of sight. If what they say is true, then why did Christ say the opposite? Who are you going to believe, JESUS CHRIST OR A CARNAL THEOLOGY?

Why did Paul say in Colossians that we HAD TO CONTINUE IF WE WANTED TO BE RECONCILED. Why does He insist that there is a **CONTINUANCE OF FAITH, AND THAT WE MUST BE GROUNDED AND SETTLED?** If we are saved by an instant decision, regenerated, and heaven is assured, as all major evangelists and most denominations tell us, **THEN WHY SHOULD WE CONTINUE?** If heaven is such an established fact, we might as well enjoy ourselves! And what is it we hope to find by this CONSTANT CONTINUOUS FAITH? If we be saved immediately, we are reconciled immediately. Yet Paul says we are to continue in the faith, or we WILL NOT BE RECONCILED.

How long must we CONTINUE? Until we be reconciled. How do we know we have been reconciled? When God and Christ come, and when they show us AGAPE LOVE. When they show us by **SUPERNATURAL REVELATION WHAT THE MYSTERY OF GOD IS, AND WE KNOW AND ACCEPT THE CONDITION OF AGAPE LOVE.**

***“To whom (the saints that continue grounded and settled)  
GOD WOULD MAKE  
KNOWN  
WHAT IS THE RICHES OF THE GLORY OF  
THIS MYSTERY  
AMONG THE GENTILES;  
WHICH IS CHRIST IN YOU,  
THE HOPE OF GLORY.”***

The riches of His glory is AGAPE LOVE AND ITS BESTOWMENT. The MYSTERY OF CHRIST is the HIDDEN ESSENCE OF CHRIST, HIS AGAPE LOVE. And please notice how Paul words it: CHRIST IN YOU. Remember that, IT IS CHRIST IN YOU. He did not say YOU IN CHRIST, BUT RATHER CHRIST IN YOU. The many were in the BODY OF CHRIST. We have proved that Christ considered them a part of HIS CHURCH, HIS BODY ON EARTH. Yet the many did not have CHRIST IN THEM. SO THEN:

## YOU IN CHRIST vs. CHRIST IN YOU

So then:

- 1. YOU IN CHRIST = CONVERSION – IN THE SHEEPFOLD/CHURCH**
- 2. CHRIST IN YOU = REGENERATION – AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED**

The distance between conversion and regeneration is the narrow way. That is why Paul said WE MUST CONTINUE. CHRIST IN YOU IS RECONCILIATION TO GOD, IS UNION, IS SALVATION. If Christ is IN YOU, then Christ can say of a truth, I KNOW THEM. If Christ is NOT IN THEM, BECAUSE THEY FAILED TO BECOME REGENERATED, THEN CHRIST CAN SAY IN TRUTH, I NEVER KNEW YOU. We have come full circle. This is why Christ said His sheep knew His voice.

### KINSMAN-REDEEMER

God has a plan worked out from eternity past in which He was going to rescue men from the deceptions of Satan and bring man back into fellowship and union with Him again. This plan is flawless in detail, in every respect. HE HIMSELF WOULD STEP DOWN INTO TIME SPACE FROM ETERNITY, LEAVE HIS THRONE IN HEAVEN AND BECOME A HUMAN BEING, TAKE THE SINS OF THE WORLD UNTO HIMSELF, AND BY SO DOING FULFILL ALL THE REQUIREMENTS OF UNIVERSE LAW. His right to do so is under a little known Mosaic Law known as “kinsman-redeemer”.

When you understand “kinsman-redeemer” requirements, you will understand why GOD PLACED ALL OF THE SIN NATURE UPON THE SPERM OF THE MALE. IT WILL BECOME CRYSTAL CLEAR WHY CHRIST HAD TO BE BORN OF A REAL LITERAL VIRGIN, BORN OF A SUPERNATURAL MIRACLE, BORN OF GOD HIMSELF. IT PUTS THE LIE TO ALL FORMS OF FALSE DOCTRINE THAT DENY THE VIRGIN BIRTH.

The penalty for sin is death, first spiritual and then physical, then complete and eternal separation from God for all eternity, which happens at the second death. Because of the fall, we are born

spiritually dead to God. We are born without divine agape love; it is utterly missing. This makes us spiritually dead to God but very much alive unto Satan. At the fall, we were transferred over to the dominion of Satan. He won the human race:

***“Again, the devil taketh him up to an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him***

***ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD, AND THE GLORY OF THEM;***

***And saith unto him***

***ALL THESE THINGS WILL I GIVE THEE,  
IF THOU WILT FALL DOWN AND WORSHIP ME.”***

***(Matthew 4:8-9)***

Jesus never refuted Satan’s claim to the world. He did not refute it because Satan had a legal claim to it. In Luke, Satan claims it is his to give to whomever he wishes:

***“And the devil said unto him, ALL THIS POWER WILL I GIVE THEE,  
AND THE GLORY OF THEM:***

***FOR THAT IS DELIVERED UNTO ME;  
AND TO WHOMSOEVER I WILL I GIVE IT.”***

***(Luke 4:6)***

Christ’s silence on the matter and the fall of man, prove that SATAN TOOK DOMINION OVER MAN, AND HAD THE POWER OF DEATH OVER THEM AS WELL. All unregenerate men upon earth ARE UNDER THE DOMINION OF SATAN, EVEN IF THEY ARE OWNED NOW BY JESUS CHRIST. Because all men are under the dominion of Satan, they are slaves to Satan, held in bondage and chains. What is worse, they are not aware of it. Man is born into the condition of spiritual darkness; he knows nothing different. To him, darkness is light! To him, slavery is freedom. Good is evil, and evil is good. Because of this, Satan can work his work in the background, undetected.

It is only when a person enters the strait gate and walks the narrow way that the dominion of Satan and his demons become manifested to the believer. It is only near the end of the narrow way that the soul ***knows that it is dead unto God***. It is only then that the ***inner nature of man is revealed***. Because the vast majority of men refuse to enter in, they do not know where they are going when they die. They have no concept of the horrible fate that awaits them. Such is the nature of deception.

It is like a killer who first becomes your friend. He moves right in and you learn to trust him. Then, when you least expect it, HE TURNS, and in those awful last moments of your life, you RECOGNIZE your terrible mistake. BUT IT IS TOO LATE. You let your guard down and you will now die. As you slip into death the awfulness of life and the deceptions of life BECOME MANIFEST. But it is too late to change anything, for your fate is now sealed for eternity. If you

die LOST, you remain FOREVER LOST. If you die REGENERATED, you are forever safe in the arms of Christ.

Because man was sold into slavery to Satan, and has no way to extricate himself from his bondage, man is totally lost forever unless some way can be found to extricate him from the clutches of eternal death. This is done via kinsman-redeemer law. Christ enters the human race through the kinsman-redeemer laws of ancient Israel. Under this law, the kinsman-redeemer must be **READY, WILLING AND ABLE TO PAY FULL PRICE REQUIRED BY THE LAW**. He must pay it by **BEING A 'DOER' OF THE WORD, AND NOT A HEARER ONLY**. The price has to be paid for in full, **TOTALLY**, or the transaction will fail.

***“After that he is sold, HE MAY BE REDEEMED AGAIN;  
ONE OF HIS BRETHREN MAY REDEEM HIM:***

***Either his uncles, or his uncle’s son, may redeem him, OR ANY THAT  
IS NIGH OF KIN UNTO HIM  
OF HIS FAMILY MAY REDEEM HIM;  
OR IF HE IS ABLE, HE MAY REDEEM HIMSELF.”  
(Leviticus 25:48-49)***

Under the law, **THE REDEEMER MUST BE A KINSMAN, A BROTHER, A MEMBER OF THE FAMILY**. It also says that a person could redeem himself if he was able. The human race is not able to redeem itself. It cannot shed innocent blood. It cannot die an innocent death. The entire race of man could sign a suicide pact and exterminate itself to no avail. It would not solve anything. **THE HUMAN RACE IS FOREVER TRAPPED, SAVE FOR THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**. Notice what it says:

- 1. A CLOSE RELATIVE.**
- 2. ANYONE 'NIGH OF KIN'.**
- 3. ANYONE IN THE FAMILY.**
- 4. HIMSELF IF ABLE.**

The word “redeem” is ‘ga’al’ and it means **TO BUY BACK, TO PURCHASE BACK, TO REDEEM**. There is always a price involved in the act of redemption. Therefore the redeemer must be able to **PAY THE PRICE IN FULL, OTHERWISE HE CANNOT REDEEM**. I would suggest you read the entire subject on redemption to grasp the essentials of the transaction. The first requirement is that the redeemer be **NIGH OF KIN, A BROTHER, A MEMBER OF THE FAMILY**. In order to accomplish that aspect of the law, **AND THE LAW MUST BE TOTALLY FULFILLED**. If any portion of the law is not kept totally, the entire mission will fail. We are not speaking of the laws of man, but the laws of God.

Now it may seem obvious, but mankind is human. He has human blood and human flesh. He is of the Homo-Sapien race. If Christ is going to purchase the human race, then **HE MUST BECOME A HUMAN BEING IN ORDER TO BE A NEAR KINSMAN**. He must be a member of the family, with human blood running through His veins. Because all people are **BORN INTO THE**

HUMAN RACE VIA THE WOMAN, then it becomes obvious that Christ must USE THE WOMB OF THE WOMAN TO BECOME A MEMBER OF THE HUMAN FAMILY. He is then a NEAR KINSMAN, A BROTHER, FLESH OF OUR FLESH, BONE OF OUR BONE, AND BLOOD OF OUR BLOOD.

*“Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood,  
HE ALSO HIMSELF LIKEWISE TOOK PART OF THE SAME;  
THAT THROUGH DEATH HE MIGHT DESTROY HIM THAT HAD  
THE POWER OF DEATH, THAT IS, THE DEVIL.”*

(Hebrews 2:14)

*“But when the fullness of the time was come, GOD SENT FORTH  
HIS SON, MADE OF A WOMAN, MADE UNDER THE LAW,*

*TO REDEEM THEM THAT WERE UNDER THE LAW,  
THAT WE MIGHT RECEIVE THE ADOPTION OF SONS.”*

(Galatians 4:4-5)

Jesus Christ must pay the IDENTICAL PRICE THAT MANKIND HAS TO PAY. He must shed human blood; He must suffer a spiritual death just as we suffered a spiritual death. He must face physical death and the second death. All of this is required of the human race under the law. Jesus must first of all BE WILLING, THEN BE ABLE, AND THEN ACTUALLY DO IT. The arrival of Christ upon earth through Mary proves HE WAS WILLING, AND THAT HE PLANNED TO DO IT. The arrival of Christ through the womb of Mary makes him a NEAR KINSMAN, A BROTHER, A MEMBER OF THE FAMILY. This fulfills that aspect of the law. But what about the ability to pay all of the prices? What about that? What are the prices?

## 1. SPIRITUAL DEATH

*“But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the  
day that thou eatest thereof  
THOU SHALT SURE DIE.”*

(Genesis 2:17)

## 2. PHYSICAL DEATH

*“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, AND DEATH BY SIN; AND SO  
DEATH  
PASSED UPON ALL MEN, FOR THAT ALL HAVE SINNED.”*

(Romans 5:12)



### 3. THE SHEDDING OF HUMAN BLOOD

**“AND ALMOST ALL THINGS ARE BY THE LAW PURGED WITH BLOOD:  
AND WITHOUT SHEDDING OF BLOOD IS NO REMISSION.”**  
(Hebrews 9:22)

### 4. FACING THE SECOND DEATH, ENTERING THE PLACE OF THE DEAD.

**“Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such  
THE SECOND DEATH HATH NO POWER...”**  
(Revelation 20:6)

These are the four penalties that man faces, that man must pay because of the fall, because of the loss of AGAPE LOVE. All men are born into spiritual death, and because of that, they die a physical death, and then they must await the judgment and go into the second death. **MANKIND MUST PAY THESE PRICES.** Under kinsman-redeemer law, **MESSIAH MUST PAY THESE PRICES TO COMPLETE THE PURCHASE.** He must be innocent of all charges, He must be **ABLE** TO PAY ALL PRICES, and therefore must have the following:

1. He must have a **LIVE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT THAT CAN BE REMOVED FROM HIM AND BRING HIM INTO SPIRITUAL DEATH,** for that is what the price of spiritual death is: LOSS OF AGAPE LOVE, LOSS OF COMMUNION AND UNION WITH GOD.

2. He must have human blood in his veins so that he can shed **HUMAN BLOOD IN FULFILLMENT OF THE LAWS OF REMISSION OF SIN.**

3. He must face physical death as a human being, in order to pay the price of a HUMAN DEATH. If He was not fully human, he could not shed HUMAN BLOOD, NOR DIE A HUMAN DEATH.

4. He must descend into the place of the wicked dead and face the second death of fire to pay the whole ransom price. It should be made clear that Christ does not have to actually go through the second death, but only descend into the place of the wicked dead, because that is where we all have to go.

Many claim it a total heresy to claim that Christ suffered a spiritual death, or that He went into hellfire to pay that price as well. They claim there is no Scripture anywhere to prove such a thing. They are utterly wrong on all counts, and it comes from a lack of understanding as to how kinsman-redeemer actually works. There is much Scripture to prove it, and I will present it to prove it to you. It is the requirements of kinsman-redeemer that the **TOTAL PRICE BE PAID, NOT PART OF IT.** Either Christ paid it all, to the last penny, or **WE ARE NOT REDEEMED, AND HIS MISSION FAILED.** I can assure you it did not fail; His resurrection proves it!

Scripture proves that Christ paid each and every penalty in full. There is no such thing as a partial payment. His sweating literal blood in the garden was not because of the cross, it was because of what lay beyond it. He knew he was going to **be CUT OFF FROM GOD, SEPARATED,**

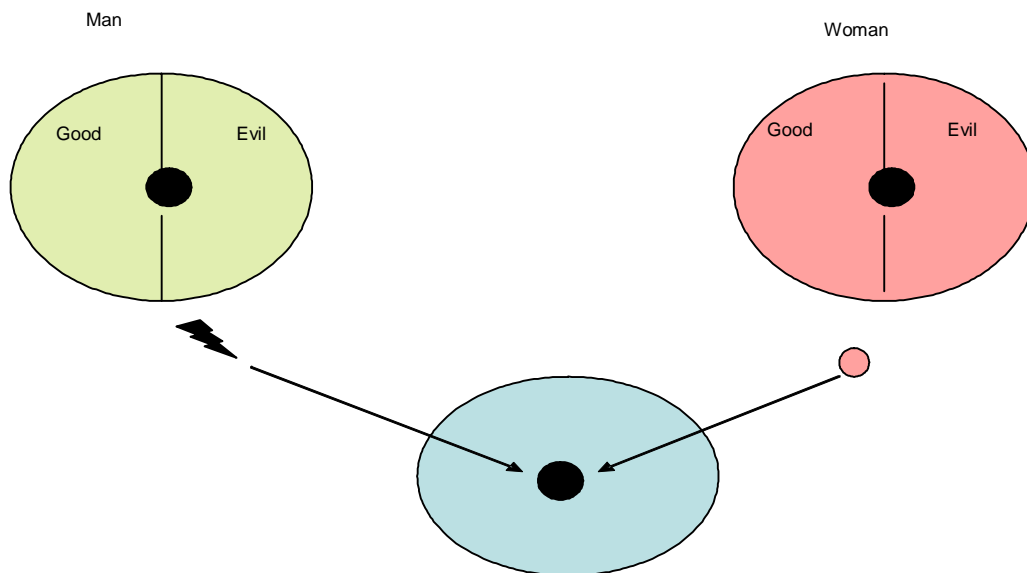
**ALONE AND KNEW HE HAD TO RELY FULLY UPON GOD THE FATHER TO GET HIM OUT.** He was going to go to the place of torments, and the Psalms prove it.

These are the requirements of kinsman-redeemer. We can fully appreciate why Jesus had to come through the womb of a woman, which made Him a human being. But how is He able to pay? It becomes obvious that Jesus will not be able to pay some of those prices unless something very special is done. JESUS MUST BE INNOCENT OF ALL CHARGES. HE MUST BE GUILTLESS. If what caused the problem is the knowledge of good and evil, then Jesus must not be guilty of that. **HOW CAN GOD DO THIS? HOW CAN HE BRING INTO THE WORLD A HUMAN BEING AND YET STILL HAVE THAT HUMAN BEING NOT POSSESS THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL?** If Jesus did possess the knowledge of good and evil, He would be as guilty as we are, and could not redeem anyone!

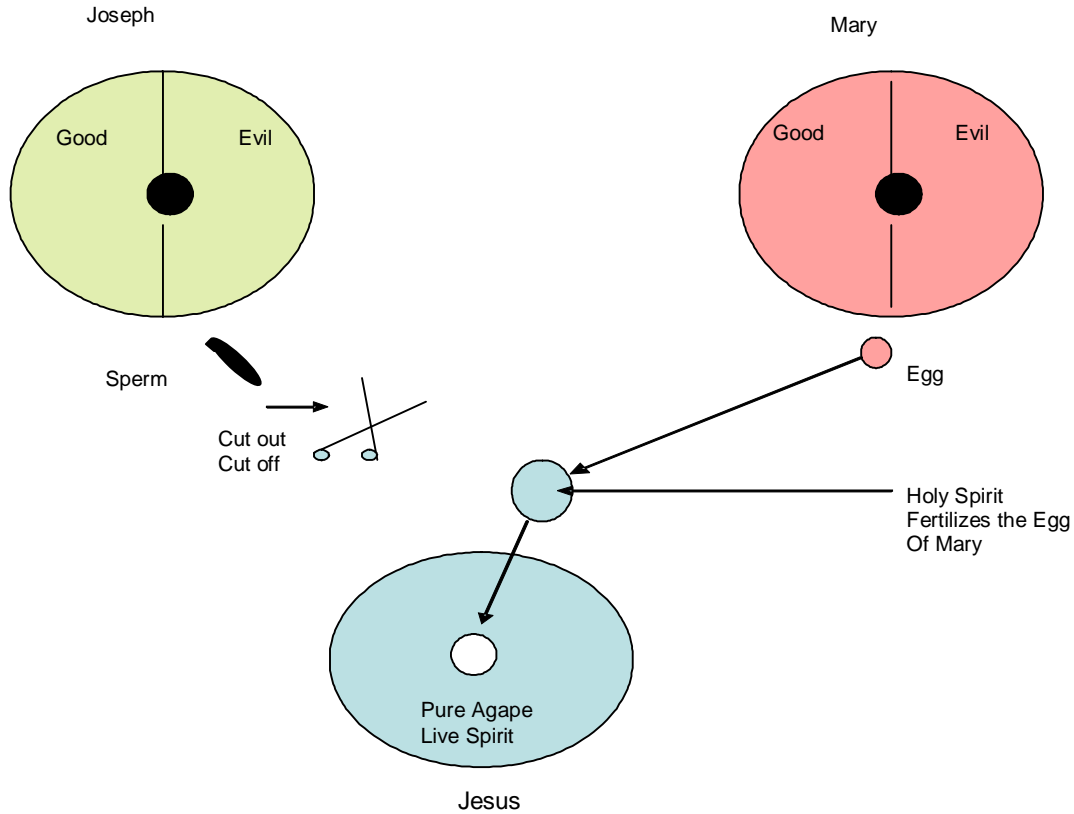
We proved earlier that God placed the knowledge of good and evil upon the male sperm, and left the egg of the woman free of that trait. He did it for a real good reason: HE WOULD LATER ENTER THE HUMAN RACE VIA THE EGG OF THE WOMAN, AND BYPASS THE MALE SPERM. He would cut off the male altogether. He had to, for the sperm carries with it the deadly knowledge.

*“And I will put enmity between **THEE (SATAN)** and the **WOMAN**,  
AND BETWEEN **THY SEED (THE MALE SPERM)**  
and **HER SEED (THE EGG)**;  
*it shall bruise thy head,  
and thou shalt bruise his heel.”*  
(Genesis 3:15)*

Here is the first reference to Messiah and to the VIRGIN BIRTH. It is a promise to Satan and to the human race that there is coming, in the fullness of time, A MESSIAH, BORN FROM THE SEED OF THE WOMAN. Please take note of the division between her seed and his seed. The seed of man is the sperm. The seed of the woman is the egg. Because all human procreate by breeding, and because the male sperm is required to fertilize the egg, then **THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL IS PASSED UPON ALL MEN.** God then must place this knowledge upon the man if He plans to later enter the human race, for He has no other options. If the woman carries this knowledge as well, NO ONE BORN THROUGH A WOMAN WOULD BE INNOCENT, BUT A TRANSGRESSOR. It looks like this in graphic form:



Notice how union of sperm and egg produce a child that has the same knowledge of good and evil, regardless of whether male or female. Now what happens if we cut off the male sperm and fertilize the egg by the supernatural miracle of God Himself causing fertilization of the egg of Mary:



You now know why the Scripture is so adamant that Jesus was born of a VIRGIN. It was prophesied long before, back in Genesis, and again in Isaiah:

*“Therefore the LORD HIMSELF SHALL GIVE YOU A SIGN;  
BEHOLD,  
A VIRGIN SHALL CONCEIVE,  
  
AND BEAR A SON,  
AND SHALL CALL HIS NAME IMMANUEL.”  
(Isaiah 7:14)*

*“But when the fulness of time was come,  
GOD SENT FORTH HIS SON,  
MADE OF A WOMAN,*

**MADE UNDER THE LAW.”**

(Galatians 4:4)

This is pretty blunt, and pretty clear, is it not? Christ was born of a real virgin, and the male sperm was bypassed because Joseph was a fallen creature, he had the knowledge of good and evil, and his sperm carried that knowledge. That is why Joseph was commanded to stay away from Mary for the duration. Joseph had no role to play in this MIRACLE EVENT:

***“Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, BEFORE THEY CAME TOGETHER (SEXUAL UNION), SHE WAS FOUND WITH CHILD***  
**OF THE HOLY GHOST.”**

(Matthew 1:18)

***“...Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife:  
FOR THAT WHICH IS CONCEIVED IN HER***  
**IS OF THE HOLY GHOST.**

***And she shall bring forth a SON, AND THOU SHALT CALL HIS NAME JESUS:  
FOR HE SHALL SAVE HIS PEOPLE FROM THEIR SINS.”***

(Matthew 1:20-21)

She was found with child BEFORE THE MARRIAGE WAS CONSUMMATED. Back in those days that was bad news. The Scripture blatantly says that the Holy Ghost was responsible, and that **GOD HAD FERTILIZED THE EGG OF MARY AND WOULD BRING FORTH A SON.** God is going to BYPASS THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL, AND BRING FORTH A NEW CREATION, MADE BY HIM, BY THE WOMAN, AND UNDER THE LAW TO BE A KINSMAN-REDEEMER. Notice also that Joseph was told not to fear Mary, for she was pure, she was a VIRGIN. Do you think God knew if Mary “fooled around” or not?

***“And the angel answered and said unto her (Mary),***  
**THE HOLY GHOST SHALL COME UPON THEE,**  
***AND THE POWER OF THE HIGHEST SHALL OVERSHADOW THEE:  
THEREFORE ALSO THAT***  
**HOLY THING WHICH SHALL BE BORN OF**  
**THEE**  
**SHALL BE CALLED THE SON OF GOD.”**

(Luke 1:35)

This verse totally supports Isaiah and Genesis. THE MALE SPERM WAS BYPASSED AND THE RESULTS OF THAT BYPASSING OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL BROUGHT INTO BEING A “SON OF GOD” AND THAT “HOLY THING”. Whenever you read the term “son of God”, it means a being CREATED DIRECT FROM THE HAND OF GOD, **A SUPERNATURAL ACT OF CREATION**. There are no exceptions to this in Scripture. Even the FALLEN ANGELS OF GENESIS SIX ARE CALLED THE “SONS OF GOD”, because they were CREATED **DIRECT FROM THE HAND OF GOD**. The regenerated Christian is called a Son of God because God supernaturally intervenes into human affairs and REGENERATES THE DEAD HUMAN SPIRIT INTO A SPIRIT OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. Remember that John said that **REGENERATION IS AN ACT OF GOD, UNDER THE WILL OF GOD. THEREFORE WE CAN PROVE TWO THINGS:**

- 1. JESUS WAS BORN OF A WOMAN, HE IS THE SON OF MAN.**
- 2. JESUS WAS BORN OF GOD, HE IS THE SON OF GOD.**

Jesus Christ is literally the **GODMAN**. By bypassing the male sperm, He bypassed the knowledge of good and evil, and therefore **CHRIST WAS BORN WITH A PURE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE**. Therefore Christ had a **LIVE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT FROM CONCEPTION, AND HAD UNION WITH GOD FROM CONCEPTION**. His inner essence, His inner nature was totally hidden from the view of man, who looks upon the OUTWARD APPEARANCE. Even His disciples could not understand Jesus, and He was always calling them up short for their inability to comprehend the most basic of concepts. He was not like other men, but radically different. Now you know why.

With His pure agape love essence, Christ was in total union with God the Father. They were in each other; they knew each other, **THEY WERE ONE**. The point of all of this is this: **KINSMAN-REDEEMER LAW REQUIRES THE PAYMENT OF SPIRITUAL DEATH**. In order to pay that price, our redeemer **MUST HAVE A LIVE SPIRIT**. You cannot pay the price of a dead spirit unless you have a live one to DIE. You must have it within you in order to give it up as a price to pay. Again, some of the top Christian writers claim it is a heresy to say that Christ died a spiritual death. **HE EITHER DID OR WE ARE STILL LOST**. They claim that anyone who claims He did are heretics, and I suppose, fit only for the fires of hell and damnation. But what saith the Scripture?

We can prove that man lost his agape love essence at the fall, and that he lies in spiritual darkness as a result. He has no agape love within him. He went from divine agape love to a self centered, self serving form of phileo love. He went from submission to God to full rebellion against God. The price was spiritual death. Christ must, under kinsman-redeemer law, pay THAT PRICE. He also must be ABLE TO PAY IT. THE VIRGIN BIRTH OF CHRIST IS WHAT ENABLES HIM TO PAY. I suggest we accept what the Scriptures have to say as our final authority:

*“For HE HATH MADE HIM (CHRIST)  
**TO BE SIN FOR US,**  
WHO KNEW NO SIN;  
*that we might be made THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD IN HIM.”*  
(2 Corinthians 5:21)*

You would have to deny a whole lot of Scripture to claim that Christ was not made SIN FOR US. The question is this: did Christ in a literal way have the SINS OF THE WORLD DUMPED INTO HIS SOUL BY A SUPERNATURAL ACT OF GOD? WAS IT JUST SYMBOLIC OF SOMETHING ELSE? It is a crucial question, for under kinsman-redeemer law, Christ **HAS TO BE MADE IN A MOST LITERAL MANNER, THE SINNER OF ALL SINNERS.** If we say that kinsman-redeemer law does not require full payment in all aspects, then which aspects have to be paid, and which do not? And who decides? Man or God? God has already decided. CHRIST BECAME SIN FOR US. He was MADE SIN. The word “made” here is ‘poieo’ and it means **TO MAKE, TO DO, TO EXECUTE OR TO CAUSE.** In other words, God made **CHRIST INTO SIN.** I do not propose to know how He did it; the fact is **HE DID DO IT.**

God cannot reside where sin is. Where sin resides, no AGAPE LOVE RESIDES, FOR THERE IS NO SIN IN AGAPE LOVE. If Christ was literally made sin for us, as the Bible claims He was, then **CHRIST LOST HIS AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE AS SOON AS SIN ENTERED THE PICTURE.** If agape love goes, **UNION WITH GOD GOES. THERE IS NO LONGER ANY COMMUNION, NO LONGER ANY UNION, BUT INSTEAD, A SEVERANCE, A ‘CUTTING OFF’.** To fulfill the requirements of kinsman-redeemer law, to fulfill the requirements of taking the Scripture at their most literal meaning, I conclude Christ lost His agape love essence on the cross, suffered spiritual death, and was cut off from God. If this is true, we should find some Scripture to prove it:

***“And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a LOUD VOICE, SAYING,  
EL’I, EL’I, LA’MA SA-BACH’THA-NI? That is to say,  
MY GOD, MY GOD,  
WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?”  
(Matthew 27:46)***

Why would Jesus cry with a loud voice that God has **FORSAKEN HIM?** Was Jesus a liar, or are we liars? The word “forsaken” is ‘egkatalaipo’ and it means **TO LEAVE BEHIND, TO DESERT, TO SEPARATE FROM.** The root of the word is ‘kataleipo’ and it means **TO ABANDON, TO LEAVE, TO LEAVE BEHIND, TO SEPARATE OR CUT OFF.** It conveys the idea of a total severance, of a total **CUTTING OFF FROM.** If this is true, then what is the opposite of being cut off? **UNION.** If Christ had union with God the Father through His agape love essence, and then God pours sin into Christ, **HIS AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE WAS INSTANTLY SEVERED, AND THAT SEVERED ALL UNION WITH GOD THE FATHER.**

The question we must ask is then simple: WHY WOULD CHRIST HAVE UTTERED SUCH A CRY IF GOD THE FATHER WAS STILL IN UNION WITH HIM? Jesus cried out with a loud voice asking why had **GOD SEVERED HIMSELF FROM CHRIST.** We cannot imagine the awfulness of this moment, for we have never had union with God in this manner. Christ sounded very confused, very bewildered by it. He asked God a question, a question that rumbles yet down the corridors of time and space. **WHY DID GOD CUT HIMSELF OFF FROM CHRIST? What is SPIRITUAL DEATH?**

We know the answers to these questions. Spiritual death is the loss of agape love essence, and the loss of agape love essence brings with it instant severance from union with God:

*“And at the ninth hour Jesus CRIED WITH A LOUD VOICE, SAYING,  
E-LO’I, E-LO’I, LA’MA SA-BACH’THA-NI? Which is, being interpreted,  
MY GOD, MY GOD,*

**WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?”**

**(Mark 15:34)**

If union with Christ had remained, if Christ and God the Father were in total communion as is claimed by these popular modern teachers, then **WHY WOULD CHRIST UTTER SUCH A CRY?** For the fun of it? To mock? This cry is interpreted for us TWO TIMES, BY TWO PEOPLE, MATTHEW AND MARK. **By two or more witnesses is a thing ESTABLISHED.** For you modern teachers to claim that teaching Christ died a spiritual death is a heresy, you have to deny Scripture, you must cheapen the price Christ paid for us, it utterly negates the concept of kinsman-redeemer, and it calls Christ a liar to boot. I WOULD SUGGEST YOU STRONGLY REVIEW YOUR BIBLE, AND FURTHER YOUR TEACHINGS ON HOW ONE GETS SAVED. BOTH ARE IN GRAVE ERROR.

The argument that Christ could not have fallen under the dominion of Satan is a mute argument. **GOD IS SOVEREIGN, HE CAN DO WHAT HE WANTS. HE CAN AND WILL DO WHATEVER IS NECESSARY TO HELP HIS SON PAY THE FULL PRICE.** If it is not paid in full, the mission fails; Christ loses everything, including heaven itself. A Holy God cannot fellowship with sin, and to say He could violates every precept laid down in Scripture. If sin entered into Christ, as Scripture clearly states, then **GOD WOULD HAVE NO OPTION BUT TO SEVER HIMSELF FROM CHRIST.** That is SPIRITUAL DEATH. Christ hung on that cross utterly alone. He was rejected of God, rejected of man, and Satan was dancing with glee.

A literal translation of the word “forsaken” forces the above conclusion, for if God had still be in Christ, in union and in communion with Him, no such cry would have or could have been uttered. The Old Testament prophecies about Christ confirm that CHRIST SUFFERED A COMPLETE AND TOTAL SPIRITUAL DEATH. HE WAS SEVERED FROM HIS GOD.

*“My God, my God, why hast thou **FORSAKEN ME?**  
**WHY ART THOU SO FAR FROM HELPING ME, AND FROM THE**  
**WORDS OF MY ROARING?***

***O MY GOD, I CRY IN THE DAYTIME, BUT THOU HEAREST NOT;**  
**AND IN THE NIGHT SEASON, AND AM NOT SILENT.”***

**(Psalm 22:1-2)**

The word for “forsaken” in Hebrew is ‘azab’ and it means **TO RELINQUISH, TO FORSAKE, TO LEAVE BEHIND, TO LOOSEN OR TO SEPARATE.** It means to cut off all fellowship, all communion, all UNION. Because the ingredient of union with God is AGAPE LOVE, then we know that Christ lost it, and suffered as we suffer. It is confirmed by verse two. “THOU HEAREST NOT”. Indeed, Christ did suffer spiritual death, and He was alone, utterly rejected by His father. Satan was positive that he had destroyed his worst enemy.

# ***BUT THEN SUNDAY CAME!***

***“Our fathers TRUSTED IN THEE: THEY TRUSTED, AND THOU  
DIDST DELIVER THEM.***

***THEY CRIED UNTO THEE,  
AND WERE DELIVERED:  
THEY TRUSTED IN THEE, AND WERE NOT CONFOUNDED.  
BUT I AM A WORM, AND NO MAN; A REPROACH OF MEN,  
AND DESPISED OF THE PEOPLE.”***

***(Psalm 22:4-6)***

Psalm 22 describes in intimate detail the death of Christ upon the cross. After severance of Christ from God BECAUSE of *spiritual death*, the only thing Christ has left *IS FAITH AND TRUST IN GOD*. He must place all of His faith, all of His trust in the promises that God will deliver His own. Christ went from a union that requires no faith, because faith is for that which is not known, not seen. Union does not require faith, *because union is based upon an experiential knowing, a seeing.*

***“Be not far from me, for trouble is near;  
FOR THERE IS NONE TO HELP.”***

***(Psalm 22:11)***

Again I would ask why Christ would make such a statement if God were in fact still in union with Him. This is a statement of aloneness, of separation, or hope that God, while now severed, is still near. If union were still a fact, God would *BE IN CHRIST, AND CHRIST WOULD KNOW IT*. The statement to be not far away is a statement that God is gone, and Christ is pleading that He not move FAR, FAR AWAY. There are many such proofs in Scripture, all which prove that Christ did indeed die a spiritual death upon the cross, and payment number one in the *most awesome purchase ever made in the history of the Universe.*

## **PHYSICAL DEATH**

The sequence that Christ went through on the cross follows exactly the sequence laid down in Genesis, for the creation and fall of man:



1. CREATION WITH A LIVE SPIRIT.
2. SIN ENTERS IN, AND SPIRITUAL DEATH FOLLOWS INSTANTLY.
3. PHYSICAL DEATH WILL NOW FOLLOW BECAUSE OF SPIRITUAL DEATH.
4. AFTER PHYSICAL DEATH, DESCENT TO THE PIT TO AWAIT THE SECOND DEATH.

To the unbeliever and the scoffer, no amount of evidence will be accepted, because the HEART IS NOT RIGHT TO ACCEPT ANY EVIDENCE. You could transport the mocker and scoffer back through time and let him watch the entire event and he would come up with some reason to reject it. The next payment due from Jesus Christ is physical death, because man must die a physical death.

*“Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice,  
**YIELDED UP THE GHOST.**”*  
(Matthew 27:50)

*“And Jesus cried with a loud voice, AND  
**GAVE UP THE GHOST.**”*  
(Mark 15:37)

*“And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said,  
FATHER, INTO THY HANDS I COMMEND MY SPIRIT:  
and having said thus, HE  
**GAVE UP THE GHOST.**”*  
(Luke 23:46)

*“When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said,  
IT IS FINISHED: AND HE BOWED HIS HEAD,  
AND  
**GAVE UP THE GHOST.**”*  
(John 19:30)

All of the Gospels claim that Jesus died. Even Pilate was astounded at how fast Christ had died, this is **IN SIX HOURS**. He was the Son of Man. Man has 6000 years of probation upon planet Earth. Does the six hours on the cross represent the span of man on Earth? Pilate sent centurions over to **VERIFY THAT CHRIST WAS DEAD, AND TO FINISH HIM IF HE WASN'T**. Pilate knew all about the RESURRECTION PROPHECY:

*“But when they came to Jesus, and saw that*

**HE WAS DEAD ALREADY,**  
*they brake not his legs:*

*But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side,  
and forthwith there came out*  
**BLOOD AND WATER.**  
(John 19:33-34)

We then have verification of the actual death of Christ, and we have the gainsaying Jews who had this thrown in their faces:

*“Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel,  
that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth,*  
**WHOM YE CRUCIFIED,**  
*WHOM GOD RAISED*  
**FROM THE DEAD,**  
*EVEN BY HIM DOTH THIS MAN STAND HERE BEFORE YOU WHOLE.”*  
(Acts 4:10)

Peter was under the impression that Christ had died. He was also under the impression that God has raised him from the dead; **PROOF POSITIVE THAT ALL ASPECTS OF THE KINSMAN-REDEEMER LAW WERE FULFILLED AND ACCEPTED AS FULL RANSOM PRICE.** We should also note that Christ was also under the impression that He had died, and He ought to know, being the primary witness to it all:

*“I am he that liveth, **AND WAS DEAD;** and, behold, I am  
ALIVE FOR EVERMORE, Amen; and have the keys of hell  
and of death.”*  
(Revelation 1:18)

*“And unto the angel of the Church in Smyrna write: these things saith the  
first and the last,  
**WHICH WAS DEAD, AND IS ALIVE...**”*  
(Revelation 2:8)

The evidence is conclusive, and if you need more proof than this, your problem is not the evidence; it is with your heart.

## DID CHRIST SHED BLOOD?

It is the requirement of the law that for the remission of sins there has to be the shedding of innocent blood. This is not a SYMBOLIC SHEDDING, as some apostates suggest, but a REAL AND LITERAL SHEDDING OF REAL AND LITERAL BLOOD. By the virgin birth Christ is innocent of the knowledge of good and evil. By His life, He remained sinless. Thus He is guiltless, and is able to pay all prices. Did He actually shed His own blood, the blood of a human being, a near kinsman, in this transaction?

*“But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out BLOOD AND WATER.”  
(John 19:34)*

We must not forget that the act of SCOURGING, WHICH PILATE ORDERED BE DONE UPON CHRIST, RIPS THE SKIN ASUNDER AND CAUSES VAST AMOUNTS OF BLEEDING (Matthew 27:26). The act of spiking Christ to the cross would also draw blood. We can thus conclude that CHRIST FULFILLED THAT REQUIREMENT IN FULL.

## DID CHRIST FACE THE SECOND DEATH?

It is a requirement for sinners that they face the second death, and must be assigned their place in Hades to await this event. The question to ask is this: did Christ descend into the holding place for sinners, and taste of the torments and the agony of hell in our place? Based upon the completion of all other requirements, the evidence would suggest that He did, and that He was active in that region while His body was in the tomb awaiting the resurrection.

*“(Now that he ascended, what is it but that he ALSO DESCENDED FIRST INTO THE LOWER PARTS OF THE EARTH?”*

*HE THAT DESCENDED is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might FILL ALL THINGS.”  
(Ephesians 4:9-10)*

We might ask why would Christ descend to the pits of Hades itself unless, as the Scripture plainly states, it was TO FILL ALL THINGS? What requirement could there be that Christ has to fulfill unless it is the requirement of kinsman-redeemer? What other reason could there be? We know that Christ did in fact descend to the lower regions of the earth, which is the holding place of all

souls that do not come to a knowledge of agape love. We also know that Christ termed it a place of torments and real, literal fire. There was, at that point in time, another compartment called paradise, which, when Christ ascended, took all those there up to heaven with him. The only ones in the lower regions of the earth are the wicked dead, those that did not come to Christ as He commanded.

The question becomes this: did Christ actually go into the holding place for the wicked spirits, and was He actually taken there, as a wicked person to PAY THE FINAL PAYMENT THAT MANKIND MUST PAY? I believe He did, and I base it upon PSALM 88. I believe that this is the cry of Christ in the place of torments while He is totally severed from God, while He is cut off, and is alone and under torment that the living cannot even begin to comprehend.

It should be noted that there are 66 books in the bible. These 66 books are the testimony and the witness of Jesus Christ to man. The number of man in Scripture is 6. The number of the antichrist is 666. Christ is our INTERMEDIARY, OUR GO BETWEEN. As a Son of Man is His number 66? It is interesting to note that THE DEATH of Christ is recorded in Psalm 22. 66 chapters later we find HIS RESURRECTION. Psalm 88 is about the place of torments and **THE RESURRECTION TO NEW LIFE**. 66 chapters later we find His FINAL PAYMENT PAID IN FULL. Is it all coincidence? I think not. Many of the same phrases are used over again as were used in Psalm 22. It is clearly the cry of Messiah in torment. Verses 1-5 are Christ again on the cross, in the process of death. We pick up with verse six:

*“Thou HAST LAID ME IN  
**THE LOWEST PIT, IN DARKNESS,  
IN THE DEEP.**  
THY WRATH  
**LIETH HARD UPON ME, AND THOU HAST  
AFFLICTED ME WITH ALL THY WAVES.**  
**SELAH.”**  
(Psalm 88:6-7)*

These verses verify those in Ephesians. Christ is **AFFLICTED, IS TAKING THE FULL SPECTRUM PAYMENTS THAT ARE DUE TO ALL THE WICKED THAT DESCEND INTO THIS PLACE OF TORMENTS. HE IS SHUT UP, AND CANNOT COME FORTH. HE HAS BEEN MADE AN ABOMINATION TO HIS FRIENDS AND TO ISRAEL.**

*“Thou hast put away mine acquaintance far from me; thou  
hast made me an abomination unto them:  
**I AM SHUT UP,**  
**AND I CANNOT COME FORTH.***

**MINE EYE MOURNETH BY REASON OF AFFLICTION: LORD,  
I HAVE CALLED DAILY UPON THEE,  
I HAVE STRETCHED OUT MY HANDS UNTO THEE.”**

(Psalm 88:8-9)

God has removed Him from His disciples, from Israel, from His family, and from LIFE ITSELF. He is in the place of afflictions and torments and He cannot come forth. God has severed all contact, and Christ is suffering the full brunt of what we all deserve. He is crying out to God for mercy, as do all the prisoners of this place cry out, but no mercy comes forth. **Will God answer His cry? Will God allow His Son to go free?**

It is right after this that Christ begins to speak of being RESURRECTED! He is the **FIRST FRUITS OF THIS PROCESS**. Faith and trust are all that Christ has, and that is all we have! Verses 10-13 are the questions that Christ has. Will it happen? WE GO BACK TO PSALM 22: THE FATHERS OF ISRAEL TRUSTED, AND THEY WERE DELIVERED. I believe the evidence is strong indeed that Christ did go down and taste of the place of torments so that **NO ONE COULD SAY HE HAD NOT PURCHASED THE HUMAN RACE WITH A FULL RANSOM PRICE**.

Satan was not going to be allowed to stand before the throne of God and make up some technical argument that Christ had failed to pay all the requirements in full. The Church has a tendency to forget that this was **A LEGAL TRANSACTION, DONE UNDER THE LAW**. No stone was left unturned; no part of the law was not fully paid for.

## WAS CHRIST WILLING TO PAY THE PRICE?

This question is a crucial question, because under kinsman-redeemer law, the near kinsman had to be **WILLING AND ABLE**. We have proved Christ was able; we have proved that HE DID EXECUTE THE PLAN IN FLAWLESS DETAIL. But was He in reality WILLING? To force Him into it would undo the whole process. To force Him to pay would be high treason in the heavenly courts.

*“Then saith he to them, MY SOUL IS EXCEEDING  
SORROWFUL, EVEN UNTO DEATH: TARRY YE HERE,  
AND WATCH WITH ME.”*

(Matthew 26:38)

*“And he went a little farther, and fell upon his face, and prayed, saying,  
O MY FATHER,  
IF IT BE POSSIBLE,  
LET THIS CUP PASS FROM ME...”*

(Matthew 26:39)

Christ is in agony that we cannot begin to comprehend. He knows what is coming, for He knows from the law what is required to purchase the human race. He knows what must be done, and now the time has arrived. He will leave behind His mother, His father, His brothers, His friends, and the world. He is at the end of His life in a mere 33 years. He has a friend in heaven whom He has known from the time He had conscious thought. He has never experienced a moment when they were not in full union, with one another. He knows that now that union will be broken, but He does not know what it means, for He has never experienced it.

He knows that He must face the full wrath of God. He faces total severance from God the Father. He knows that AGAPE LOVE WILL DO WHATEVER MUST BE DONE TO FULFILL ITS REQUIREMENTS. He does not want to face the torments of the damned. He can turn back. He can call the whole thing off. He could go to the Jews and seek forgiveness. He could smooth the whole thing over. He could make a bargain with Satan now and decide the human race was simply not worth the price. His torment is so great that He sweats literal blood. Is He going to be willing? There is a last moment it seems when we must decide to either go through with our plan, or call it off. It is the moment of decision, the moment of final reassessment.

What is Jesus going to do? He does have options open to Him. What will He decide?

**“NEVERTHELESS  
NOT AS I WILL,  
BUT AS THOU WILT.”  
(Matthew 26:39)**

Yes, Christ is willing. He decided to submit to His Father’s will. The die is cast; the plan will be finally completed. It is His submission to the will of the Father that makes Christ willing. The very presentation of it in Scripture proves Christ DID NOT HAVE TO SUBMIT. HE COULD HAVE SAID NO. He elects to go on, in spite of what is coming. He sets His face as flint, and looks beyond the cross, beyond the suffering, to the final result. His soul is now calm. The greatest purchase ever made in the history of the universe is about to go down on a lonely hill outside of Jerusalem. The greatest demonstration of true agape love is going to be witnessed by a world that lay in utter darkness. Light has come into the world, but the world loved darkness rather than the light. The flames of AGAPE LOVE IN ACTION WERE ABOUT TO BE EXTINGUISHED, KILLED BY THE VERY OBJECTS OF THAT LOVE.

The execution by crucifixion is a most painful way to die. It is also one of full humiliation, as the victim is stripped naked and hung for all to see. The mockers and the gainsayers gather around for their final licks. THE TRANSACTION MUST GO DOWN. The ransom price must be paid. Some claim that the ransom price was paid to Satan, for after all, the human race was under his dominion, and therefore Satan himself collected the payment. We need only ask where the blood of Christ was deposited to answer the question. THE RANSOM PRICE WAS PAID TO GOD, BECAUSE IT WAS GOD’S LAW THAT WAS VIOLATED. If you break state law, you pay the State. If you break Federal law, you pay the Feds. If you break God’s law, you pay God.

Satan is beside himself with joy. At last his enemy is going to die, and good riddance to bad rubbish. The demons of hell are throwing a big bash. They did not realize that they had stumbled into a trap that they themselves had set. If you lay a snare for someone, you will be caught in the same trap you set for them, and you will yourself fall into it. It is a law of God.

His disciples are beside themselves. Their master is put to death in front of their eyes. The Jews are angry, and they flee in confusion and fear. **BUT THEN SUNDAY CAME.** A cry was heard: **HE IS RISEN, HE IS RISEN, HE IS RISEN!** In stunned disbelief the world heard that cry, and still hears that cry. **FROM THE DEPTHS OF OUTER SPACE, TO THE DEPTH OF INNER SPACE THAT CRY WAS HEARD.** It has echoed down the corridors of time for almost 2000 years. More books have been written about Jesus Christ than any other figure in human history. His doctrines have been analyzed, taught, dissected and argued more than any other teachings in human history. This solitary figure, this lonely itinerant preacher who went about doing good divided the calendar of man. This solitary figure is loved and hated by more people than any other personage of history. **Who was Jesus?**

## **WHAT IS TRUTH?**

Can we know? Is He really alive in the heavens? Did He really come to help man to jump the gulf of silence between Himself and His Creator? If we do what He says, will we know for sure? Can we find God? Can we come to a resting place? Did He purchase the human race like He claimed that He did? Is the Bible the **LAST WORD AGAINST MAN?**

All of these questions can be answered if we would but do what Jesus commands we do, **I can vouch for the authenticity of the Words.** So can hundreds, thousands and millions of people down through the ages that have walked the solitary walk of Jesus Christ. Jesus did not live in the mainstream of life. His walk was in the wilderness, preaching His best and most famous sermons far from the hue and cry of the city. When He went to be with His Father, He often went off alone, in the deep of the wilderness, in solitude. Thus He calls us to do the same. He calls you and I to leave the religion of the outer court, and to go deeper, much deeper, and to pick up thy cross, and to follow Him. If you will do it, then you will know **THE STRANGEST SECRET OF THE UNIVERSE.**

All of the requirements of the kinsman-redeemer law were met and paid for in full by the Lord Jesus Christ. THE FOUNDATION FOR THE REDEMPTION OF MAN WAS LAID DOWN AND COMPLETED IN FULL. The resurrection of Christ proved that it was a total success. PAYMENT WAS ACCEPTED IN FULL BY GOD THE FATHER. **THE BLOOD OF CHRIST WAS SPRINKLED UPON THE MERCY SEAT IN THE ARK OF THE COVENANT IN HEAVEN.**

**“Neither by the blood of goats and calves, BUT BY HIS OWN BLOOD HE ENTERED IN ONCE INTO THE HOLY PLACE, HAVING OBTAINED ETERNAL REDEMPTION FOR US.**

**For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer SPRINKLING THE UNCLEAN, SANCTIFIETH TO THE PURIFYING OF THE FLESH:**

**HOW MUCH MORE SHALL THE BLOOD OF CHRIST, WHO THROUGH THE ETERNAL SPIRIT OFFERED**

**HIMSELF WITHOUT SPOT TO GOD,  
PURGE YOUR CONSCIENCE FROM DEAD WORKS TO  
SERVE THE  
LIVING GOD?**

**AND FOR THIS CAUSE HE IS  
THE MEDIATOR OF THE NEW TESTAMENT,  
THAT BY MEANS OF DEATH,  
FOR THE REDEMPTION OF THE TRANSGRESSIONS  
THAT WERE UNDER THE FIRST TESTAMENT,  
THEY WHICH ARE CALLED MIGHT RECEIVE THE  
PROMISE OF ETERNAL INHERITANCE.**

**FOR WHERE A TESTAMENT IS, THERE MUST ALSO OF  
NECESSITY BE THE DEATH OF THE TESTATOR.**

**FOR A TESTAMENT IS OF FORCE AFTER MEN ARE  
DEAD:  
OTHERWISE IT IS OF NO STRENGTH AT ALL WHILE  
THE TESTATOR LIVETH.”**

**(Hebrews 9:12-17)**

The work of Jesus was sealed by His blood. That blood was taken into heaven and sprinkled upon the MERCY SEAT OF THE ARK OF THE COVENANT. The Ark of the Covenant fully represents THE NEW TESTAMENT BECAUSE WITHIN IT ARE ALL OF THE ITEMS RELATING TO AGAPE LOVE, AND AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED IS THE NEW HEART GIVEN BY GOD HIMSELF.

The HISTORICAL JESUS LAID THE FOUNDATIONS FOR US TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT. His work was the PREPARATION WORK TO ALLOW HIM TO BEGIN THE NEXT PHASE OF HIS MINISTRY! The next phase of the ministry is the ACTUAL BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE UPON THE OBEDIENT BELIEVER. If you embrace only the HISTORICAL JESUS, and only embrace by faith the FOUNDATION AND PREPARATION WORK OF CHRIST, you have missed the entire point of the WORK OF CHRIST. It is the WORK OF CHRIST COMPLETE ON EARTH THAT ALLOWS HIM TO DO THE SECOND WORK FROM HEAVEN. The second work is the ACTUAL REGENERATION OF HUMAN HEARTS.

Had Christ not completed the first work, had He not actually PURCHASED THE HUMAN RACE BY HIS BLOOD, HAD THAT WORK NOT BEEN ACCEPTED BY GOD AS A PERFECT WORK, AND HIS BLOOD NOT ACCEPTED AT THE MERCY SEAT, THEN CHRIST COULD NOT HAVE BEGUN THE SECOND WORK OF THE HOLY SPIRIT:

***“Nevertheless I tell you the truth;***



***IT IS EXPEDIENT FOR YOU THAT I GO AWAY:  
FOR IF I GO NOT AWAY,  
THE COMFORTER WILL NOT COME UNTO YOU;  
BUT IF I DEPART, I WILL SEND HIM UNTO YOU.”***  
(John 16:7)

It is essential that you understand that CHRIST HAD TO LEAVE THE EARTH TO BEGIN HIS SECOND WORK. He could not have done that HAD HE NOT BEEN RESURRECTED. His second work is an active work, and that work cannot be done upon the human heart unless one allows it to be done. **TO EMBRACE THE FIRST WORK OF CHRIST, THE HISTORICAL WORK OF CHRIST, AND REFUSE THE SECOND WORK OF CHRIST IS TO INVITE CERTAIN ETERNAL RUIN.** That is what the vast majority of Christians do! They embrace all of the tenants of the faith, they hold them in the deepest of respect, they embrace them with whole hearted sincerity and dedication, but their theology PREVENTS THEM FROM GOING TO THE NEXT PHASE, AND THEY ACTUALLY REFUSE IT.

***‘And when HE (THE COMFORTER) IS COME,  
HE WILL REPROVE THE WORLD (THAT’S YOU AND I)  
OF SIN, AND OF RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
AND OF JUDGMENT.’***  
(John 16:8)

It is this reproof, this rebuke that is refused. The many Christians allow the Holy Spirit to reprove them **IN THEIR CONSCIOUS MINDS AND HEARTS.** They allow Him to convict them of their **SURFACE SINS,** but they refuse to allow it to go deeper. They refuse to allow the Spirit to **CONVICT THEM TO THEIR HEART OF HEARTS.** They refuse the awfulness of being JUDGED BY THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. As Jesus said, LIGHT HAD COME INTO THE WORLD, BUT THE PEOPLE LOVED DARKNESS RATHER THAN LIGHT, AND THEY WOULD NOT COME TO THE LIGHT TO HAVE THEIR DEEDS REPROVED.

It is the SECOND WORK OF CHRIST FROM HEAVEN that is the real, authentic **REPROVING WORK.** It is found only by entering the strait gate, and walking the narrow way. If you refuse it, FOR WHATEVER REASON, your faith, your religion, your works are all in vain. They will avail you nothing whatever. They will cost you eternity.

***“AND BEING MADE PERFECT, HE BECAME THE AUTHOR OF  
ETERNAL SALVATION UNTO ALL THEM***  
**THAT OBEY HIM.”**  
(Hebrews 5:9)

It was the **FIRST WORK OF CHRIST ON EARTH THAT MADE HIM PERFECT.** That makes Him the author of ETERNAL SALVATION FOR MAN. That allows Him to PROCEED WITH THE WORKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT. That is why the historical Jesus cannot save you. The historical Jesus cannot save anyone, for that work was only a **FOUNDATION FROM WHICH THE WORK OF SALVATION COMES FROM.** Modern Christianity does not realize that they EMBRACE ONLY THE HISTORICAL JESUS. THEY EMBRACE BY FAITH THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE FAITH. Their religion is the religion of the outer court, and one must PASS THROUGH THE OUTER COURT BEFORE ONE CAN ENTER THE MIDDLE COURT. In other words, you have to **GO BEYOND THE HISTORICAL JESUS CHRIST.**

Salvation is never taught in Scripture as you embracing by faith **CERTAIN FACTS ABOUT JESUS CHRIST.** It is not based upon you embracing the PROMISES OF SCRIPTURE AS FACTS FOR YOU BY AN ACT OF FAITH. All of these facts of Scripture are the **MERE FOUNDATIONS UPON WHICH THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST DOES HIS WORK.**

An illustration of what I mean is this: you want to build a house. You pour the foundation of the house and do a wonderful job. It is a perfect foundation. You then go around telling everyone YOU HAVE A COMPLETED HOUSE. All you have is a cement slab. The winds blow, the rains come, and because you neglected to put up the NEXT PHASE OF HOUSE BUILDING, THE HOUSE ITSELF, YOU ARE IN THE COLD. The foundation is only that which allows you to CONTINUE YOUR WORK. If you do not CONTINUE YOUR WORK, YOU DO NOT HAVE A HOUSE, YOU HAVE ONLY THE FOUNDATION OF A HOUSE.

Jesus gave the same illustration about building a house upon a firm foundation. One of rock, the other was of sand. IF WE BUILD OUR FOUNDATION UPON THE ROCK OF CHRIST, WE HAVE A FIRM FOUNDATION. But what about the rest of the house? A house that is not built by the Lord will not stand! A house that THE LORD DID NOT BUILD HIMSELF WILL NOT STAND:

**“EXCEPT THE LORD BUILD THE HOUSE,**  
*they labour IN VAIN that build it:*  
**EXCEPT THE LORD KEEP THE CITY,**  
**THE WATCHMAN WAKETH BUT IN VAIN.”**  
**(Psalm 127:1)**

Jesus Christ laid the foundation of His work here on earth. THAT FOUNDATION IS BUILT UPON SOLID ROCK. Now the SECOND PHASE OF THE WORK BEGINS, THAT OF BUILDING THE HOUSE. By what means does God build the house on earth? The body is called the **TEMPLE OF THE LORD, THE HOUSE OF GOD.** How dare we claim that God has built our house when we have failed to become **REGENERATED?** If we believe in the essential facts of Christianity, if we believe that GOD AND CHRIST ARE, and that Christ did in fact purchase the human race, that He did in fact die for our sins, WE HAVE A FOUNDATION, WE CAN REST UPON. THIS FOUNDATION IS THE ROCK.

What about the house? YOU MUST CONTINUE ON AND ALLOW GOD TO BUILD THE HOUSE. YOU MUST CONTINUE ON TO BE REGENERATED. YOU MUST LEAVE THE

HISTORICAL CHRIST BEHIND, YOU MUST LEAVE THE OUTER COURT BEHIND, AND YOU MUST JOURNEY ON TO FIND THE LIVING CHRIST. Jesus is ONLY the author of eternal salvation to those that **OBEY HIM**. He is not going to offer the New Covenant to those who DISOBEY. You are in rank deception and delusion if you think you are saved by embracing the HISTORICAL CHRIST, OR ONLY THE WORKS OF CHRIST ON EARTH.

The word “obey” is ‘hupakouo’ and it means **TO HEED OR TO CONFORM TO AUTHORITY, TO BE OBEDIENT TO, TO COMPLY WITH THE WISHES OF A SUPERIOR**. It should be now be evident to you that Christ is not going to allow ANYONE WHO DOES NOT KEEP HIS SAYINGS AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO ENTER HEAVEN. There are many books out on the market right now by apostates that claim you do not have to be obedient to Christ. They claim all you need to do is have FAITH. You simply BY FAITH ACCEPT THE WORK OF CHRIST AS ALL SUFFICIENT FOR YOUR EVERY NEED. It is A HALF TRUTH, AND A HALF TRUTH IS A WHOLE LIE OUT OF THE PITS OF HELL. It is the lie of Satan; it is Satan speaking through these men saying, “Yea, hath God said?”

INDEED GOD HAS SAID, AND THESE MEN ARE GOING TO GO INTO ETERNAL RUIN BECAUSE OF WHAT GOD HAS SAID, IF THEY DO NOT REPENT AND COME TO A KNOWLEDGE OF THE MYSTERY OF CHRIST. These same false teachers also totally redefine FAITH, CONVERSION, REGENERATION, WORKS, ETC. What did Christ say to you?

## **HE SAID OBEY HIM.**

You cannot misinterpret these commands. A five year old child can correctly get the drift of what Christ is saying. Why cannot these apostates that have now utterly defiled the Church of Christ? They cannot because they are wicked, evil men, bent upon stealing from Christ that which belongs to Him. They are false shepherds, liars, impostors, **ANGELS OF DARKNESS POSING AS ANGELS OF LIGHT**.

Who will you obey? Who will you listen to? Why do Christians insist that the precious Word of God be filtered through the minds of utter apostates before they will accept it? Would you take crystal clear spring water and filter it through dirty and rotting garbage before you drank it? Then why do Christians insist upon DRINKING THE ROTTING GARBAGE WATER OF THESE APOSTATES? Get ye away from them, come out from among them, and leave them to their ruin. Do not allow the eye to deceive you; do not allow their popularity to sway you. CHRIST, PAUL, JUDE AND JOHN ALL WARNED YOU OF A SLICK, EASY GOSPEL THAT WOULD COME.

**“STRIVE**  
***TO ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:***  
**FOR MANY,**  
***I SAY UNTO YOU,***  
***WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, AND***

**SHALL NOT BE ABLE.”**

**(Luke 13:24)**

The number 13 in Scripture is the number of REBELLION. The number 24 is 12 x 2, or DOUBLE THE NUMBER OF GOD’S GOVERNMENT. Is it coincidental that this remark about the STRAIT GATE APPEARS IN THE THIRD GOSPEL, IN THE 13<sup>TH</sup> CHAPTER, AND THE 24<sup>TH</sup> VERSE? Do you suppose this is just an idle comment of our Lord or do you think it rather a direct command and a direct warning? Do you suppose He could be telling you that those who only seek heaven will **NOT FIND IT?**

***“When once the master of the house is RISEN UP,  
AND HATH SHUT TO THE DOOR,  
AND YE BEGIN TO STAND WITHOUT,  
AND TO KNOCK AT THE DOOR, SAYING,  
LORD, LORD, OPEN TO US;***

***And he shall answer and say unto you,  
I KNOW YOU NOT WHENCE YE ARE:***

***Then shall ye begin to say,  
WE HAVE EATEN AND DRUNK IN THY PRESENCE,  
AND THOU HAST TAUGHT IN OUR STREETS.***

***BUT HE SHALL SAY, I TELL YOU,  
I KNOW YOU NOT WHENCE YE ARE;  
DEPART FROM ME, ALL YE WORKERS OF INIQUITY.”***

**(Luke 13:25-27)**

According to Christ, one must **STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE**. We are not speaking of walking the narrow way; we are speaking of only **ENTERING THE STRAIT GATE**. Then He says that ‘many’ or **THE VAST MAJORITY WILL ONLY SEEK TO ENTER IN, BUT THEY WILL NOT BE ABLE**. Who are the many?

The clue as to who the many are resides in what they say: LORD, LORD. They are Christians. They claim they have eaten and drunk in His presence. That means they **PARTOOK OF THE LORD’S SUPPER**. Only Christians partake of the Lord’s Supper, and **ONLY AT THE LORD’S SUPPER WOULD ANYONE DARE SUGGEST THAT CHRIST WAS PRESENT**. This is the ESTABLISHED CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST, WITH ALL OF ITS DENOMINATIONS, FROM THE BAPTISTS TO THE CATHOLICS. Indeed, the Lord’s Supper is served as a routine ritual in every Christian church.

They next say that Jesus taught in their streets. Indeed, Jesus did teach in their streets and communities all over the world. They read His word; they studied the Scriptures, for in them they thought they had eternal life. They all went to Sunday school, their leaders went to seminary, and

the Church flourished in the streets of earth. **INDEED JESUS DID TEACH IN THEIR STREETS. BUT IT WAS ALL FOR NAUGHT.**

His reply is the same reply to the many of Matthew Seven. He says **HE DOES NOT KNOW THEM.** The word know is an 'experiential' know. They were never REGENERATED. THEY WERE NEVER IN UNION. They had a huge religious system built, which they called Christianity. They performed all of the rituals and the traditions of their fathers. They served the Lord's Supper and they thought by it they were drawing nigh unto God, and that God was drawing nigh unto them. They read their Scriptures daily, and from their pulpits they preached mighty sermons of holiness that moved people to tears. **BUT IT NEVER MOVED THEM TO BE OBEDIENT. IT NEVER MOVED THEM FROM THEIR OUTER COURT RITUAL. IT NEVER MOVED THEM TO STRIVE.** They served and worshipped the HISTORICAL CHRIST OF THE CROSS. THEY LOVED THEIR JESUS OF THE CROSS. THEY WORSHIPPED HIM, THEY PRAISED HIM, AND THEY GLORIFIED THIS ANCIENT JESUS.

They sung their songs of an empty tomb, and they claimed that He was in heaven, but they never went forth to **MEET HIM TO FIND OUT. THEY NEVER MADE CONTACT WITH THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST.** They parked at the Bible, they parked at the foundation of their faith, and they never once **ALLOWED THE WORD OF GOD TO ENTER IN TO THEIR HEART OF HEARTS.** Because they refused, because they were disobedient, because they would not accept the word STRIVE, but instead substituted another word which they called FAITH, and because everything was accomplished by simply believing, they are lost forever.

Is your religion the religion of the outer court? Are you stuck in the ritual and form? Have you ever heard of a strait gate and narrow way? Has anyone ever showed to you that Jesus said we **MUST STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE?** Does that not sound like a form of works? What must we do? What does Christ mean by all of this? If you will **CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE, YOU WILL FIND OUT, AND THE TRUTH WILL SET YOU FREE.**

## IN CONCLUSION

1. We all must start at some point on this incredible journey that Christ has laid out before us. Where we must start is where God starts. We start at the conscious mind, heart and soul. We start with our conscious will, and we BY FAITH ALONE ACCEPT THE HISTORICAL CHRIST, AND WE ACCEPT THE WORK ON EARTH THAT HE HAS DONE FOR US. We must accept this work in our conscious minds, for it was A WORK IN THE PHYSICAL REALM, WHICH SENSE MAN AND SOUL MAN COULD SEE AND UNDERSTAND.

2. When we have elected to embrace the work of Christ in history, we do so BY CONVERSION. Conversion is always done by the WILL OF THE CONSCIOUS MIND AND HEART. We leave the ways of the world, and we CONVERT TO JESUS CHRIST. We then move our tents by the TABERNACLE IN THE WILDERNESS. We then go in to the OUTER COURT and we carry out our duties and obligations, our rituals and our traditions. We bring our tithes and offerings to the Lord, we sing our hymns of worship and praise, and then go back into the world. ALL OF IT IS WITH OUR CONSCIOUS HEART, SOUL, MIND AND WILL.

3. Beyond us, hidden by a veil, lies the INNER COURT AND THE HOLY OF HOLIES. If we become obedient Christians and **OBEY THE COMMAND TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY WE WILL FIND LIFE**. If we refuse to do it, for whatever reason we may offer up, we will not find life, and we will perish and be sent away. We have the option of leaving the outer court and surface religion behind and to follow on to find the **SECOND WORK OF THE LIVING CHRIST**. The choice is ours. If we prefer the company of the vast majority of Christians, the Lord says we will perish. There is no misinterpretation here. WE WILL PERISH.

4. The SECOND WORK OF CHRIST, THE SECOND ASPECT OF CHRIST, is found only in the living Christ Himself. He alone holds the authority to grant AGAPE LOVE, AND WITH IT, ETERNAL LIFE. He promises that if we will leave the outer court, and go into the middle court, and allow the Holy Spirit to work His work of convicting of sin, righteousness and judgment, that at the end, when we are dead, and yet we live, that HE WILL COME, AND SUP WITH US, AND WE WITH HIM. HE WILL REVEAL TO US THE SECRET BEHIND ALL OF LIFE, AND HE WILL GIVE TO US **HIS AGAPE LOVE. It is done by the WILL OF GOD**, WHEN AND WHERE GOD DETERMINES. It is called REGENERATION.

God has clearly laid out the plan in front of us. None have any excuse whatever. We can lay down on the foundation and claim we are in the house of the Lord, or we can go on to regeneration and **KNOW THAT THE LORD BUILT THE HOUSE**. What will you do?

# DARK LIGHT SERIES

## NINE

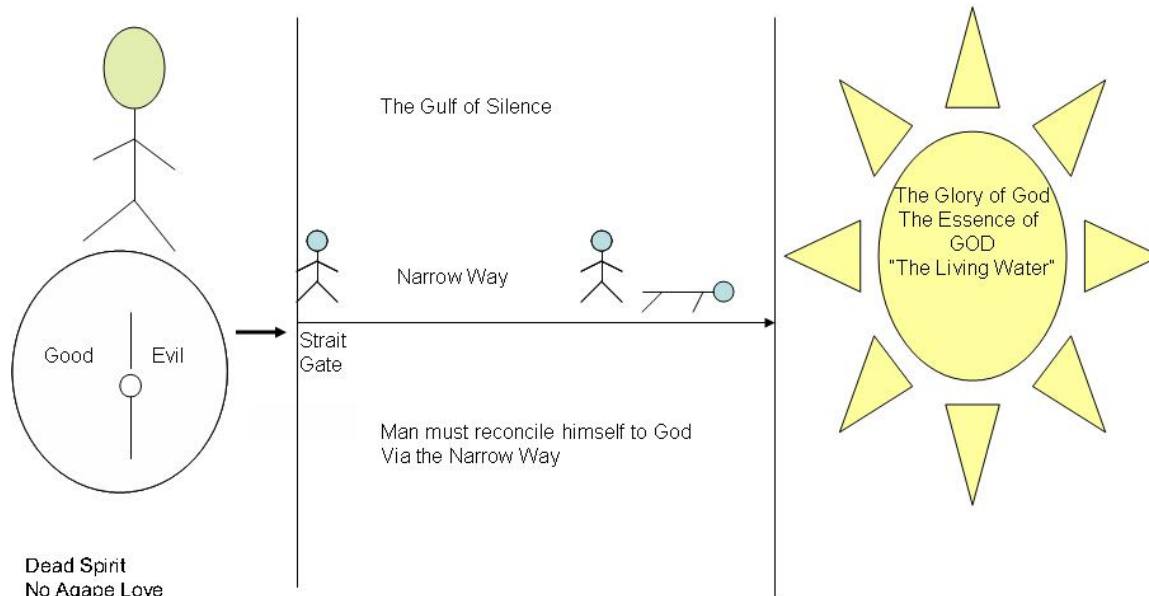
### THE FIRST JOURNEY OF FAITH

#### PART ONE – ENTER YE IN

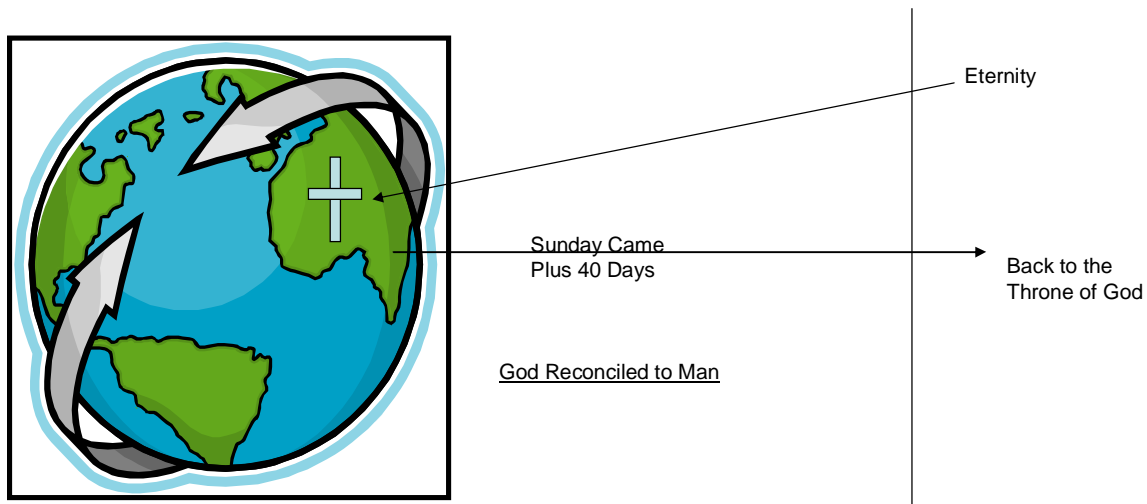
We have now proven beyond question in this DARK LIGHT series that AGAPE LOVE is the issue between man and God, and that there are two aspects to the Lord Jesus Christ. We have shown how the historical Christ laid the foundation for what was to come, and that CONVERSION is the first step in the process that is supposed to lead to a true union with Jesus at regeneration. It is the hidden aspect of Christ that we must lay hold of, *if we are to be saved.*

We have proven that mankind does not know anything about agape love, because he lost that essence at the fall, and is therefore shut off from God. Agape love not being a part of his nature, he does not know it, *it is hidden, a secret, a mystery.* Man walks in darkness, and is blind to the light of agape love. We have shown you that agape love, because it is hidden, cannot be known by the natural man, or by sense knowledge.

The gulf which exists between man and God has created a destitution within, a vacuum deep inside the heart. The gulf is created by the vast differences between the phileo loves of man and the agape love of God. We must somehow JUMP OVER THE GULF, IF WE ARE TO SECURE THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, and THE UNION WITH CHRIST THAT WE NEED. Without it, we remain lost and dead in our trespasses and sins. THE HOLDER OF THE MYSTERY OF GOD, THE HOLDER OF AGAPE LOVE, HAS JUMPED THE GULF:



When Jesus came into the world, He penetrated the time/space continuum and introduced man, who lives in the physical sense world, to the realities of the Spirit world. He introduced to the world AGAPE LOVE AND THE SPIRIT ESSENCE OF THAT TYPE OF LOVE.



The process of RECONCILIATION BEGAN WITH THE WORK OF CHRIST UPON THE CROSS. It was man-ward:

*“Glory to God in the highest, and on earth  
peace, good will **TOWARD MEN.**”  
(Luke 2:14)*

As previously discussed, the work of Christ upon the cross was a work which **RECONCILED GOD TO MAN**. God became the friend of man. The question becomes: How do we become the friend of God? Is modern Christian theology correct in that all we need to do is ACCEPT IT AND EMBRACE IT IN AN ACT OF FAITH? Or is there more to it than that? This book is not inferring that the work of Christ was not a finished work, a complete and total work. What we are warning you about is that THE NATURE OF MAN, HIS HOSTILE INNER HEART IS WHAT PREVENTS HIM FROM RECONCILING HIMSELF TO GOD, BY A SIMPLE ACT OF FAITH. What we are exploring in this book and in particular these next four chapters, IS WHAT MAN MUST DO, IF ANYTHING, TO ‘ENTER IN’, to the New Covenant.

The vast majority of Christians failed to enter in to the New Covenant, they were not protected by the grace of God, and there was no mercy to them at their rejection. The vast majority of Christians therefore held a totally erroneous view of what **FAITH AND GRACE MEANT, WHAT CONVERSION AND REGENERATION WERE, AND WHAT WORKS AND LEGALISM REALLY MEAN**. They had totally underestimated the SEVERITY OF GOD. This should be enough warning to all Christians to take heed to the Scriptural parameters laid down for us by the Lord Jesus Christ and **OBEY THEM**.

Christ and Peter warned us that a false gospel, a gospel so deceptive, and so close to the real thing, would sweep the Church and damn millions of Christians who bought into it. These false teachers would ADVANCE A NEW ‘METHOD’ FOR ENTERING IN TO THE FINISHED WORK OF CHRIST, AND WOULD CLAIM A NEW HEART, A NEW SPIRIT, A NEW UNION WHICH WAS UTTERLY FALSE AND UNTRUE. They would claim by their theology that the commands of Christ to enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way were for Israel, and did not apply to the Church, or that Christ did it for them, and all they had to do was appropriate His work by a simple act of faith. They would quote a multitude of verses that claim we are saved by faith; we are justified by faith and so on. They would turn faith itself into salvation. Whereas



the Scripture makes it very clear that the words 'by faith' mean IT IS THE DYNAMIC OF FAITH THAT PROPELS YOU THROUGH TO BEING SAVED, THEY WOULD CLAIM THAT IT WAS FAITH ITSELF THAT SAVED YOU, THAT FAITH ITSELF WAS SALVATION ITSELF.

Could it be a twist on words, a subtle doublespeak, in which the object of salvation is discarded, while the vehicle used to get to the object becomes the object itself? Let's say you want a car, a bright shiny sports car, to be exact. That is the object. The vehicle that gets you to the object so that you can POSSESS IT is \$20,000.00. Is the \$20,000 THE CAR, OR IS THE \$20,000 only the means to get you to the car, so you can HAVE THE CAR FOR YOUR VERY OWN? Is the \$20,000 the car itself? Can you ride in it? Can you put gas in it and drive to town? A stack of money is a stack of money! Unless and until you pick it up, and USE IT, SPEND IT, IT WILL NOT AVAIL YOU OF YOUR CAR. If you take your money, and spend it, YOU THEN POSSESS THE OBJECT, WHICH IS THE CAR.

Another example would be that you wish to drive to a city. The city is your objective. The car is your method of getting there. The car is THE DYNAMIC THAT PROPELS YOU OVER THE HIGHWAYS UNTIL YOU REACH THE DESTINATION. Is the car the city? Does the car ever become the city? A car is a car, and a city is a city.

Would the false teachers have you believe that FAITH (which is in reality the dynamic) IS SALVATION ITSELF? Did they turn the money into the sports car and the car into the city? IS FAITH ITSELF EVER SALVATION? Is FAITH ITSELF EVER TAUGHT IN SCRIPTURE AS SALVATION? Or is THE DYNAMIC OF FAITH THAT WHICH GETS US TO SALVATION? Is not salvation the OBJECT, and faith the POWER that GETS YOU THE OBJECT, WHICH IS SALVATION?

Salvation is defined in Scripture as UNION WITH CHRIST. Salvation in Scripture is defined as **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**. Salvation, it will be proved, is MEETING THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST, AND JOINING TOGETHER WITH HIM IN UNION. If you allow faith itself to take the place of LITERAL AND REAL UNION WITH CHRIST, HE WILL BE FORCED TO SAY, "I NEVER KNEW YOU". You become an idol worshipper, and faith itself is your idol. You become an adulterer, and faith is your partner in adultery. We will go into this in depth as we proceed, for it is essential FAITH BE UNDERSTOOD FROM THE BIBLICAL PERSPECTIVE.

It will become clear to you that Jesus Christ defines faith exactly the opposite than modern Christianity does. The two concepts are direct opposites; they are alien to each other. Saving faith as defined by Christ is a faith that has been **PROVEN TRUE BY THE SEVERE TRIAL OF THE NARROW WAY**. Your faith is proven GENUINE BY YOUR COMPLETION OF THE JOURNEY TO THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE. It is your faith that brings you the victory, but faith itself is **NOT THE VICTORY**. The victory is **PERSONAL UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST**. We are JUSTIFIED BY FAITH, because OUR FAITH TOOK US THROUGH THE NARROW WAY TO UNION, AND **IT IS THE UNION WITH CHRIST ITSELF THAT JUSTIFIES YOU**. Faith never justified BY ITSELF, ANYONE. That is why Paul told you that you could have FAITH TO REMOVE MOUNTAINS AND YOU WOULD STILL BE DAMNED, BECAUSE YOU DID NOT HAVE **AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS**. Faith in all cases is a dynamic, never the object.

The vast majority of Christians would buy into this new type of faith gospel, in which faith itself would take the place of all the commands of Christ. If Jesus said to pick up your cross, they would say, "Jesus did it for me, all I need is faith". If Jesus said walk the narrow way, they would

say, “Jesus did it for me, I appropriate His work by faith”. If you told them that union with Christ was needed for salvation, they would answer that they have union, it is done by faith. They would make faith the ‘be all and end all’ of Christianity. **FAITH WOULD BE MADE INTO GOD HIMSELF, CHRIST HIMSELF, THE ULTIMATE DECEPTION, THE ULTIMATE HERESY.** In other words, BY FAITH THEY BELIEVE THAT REGENERATION HAS OCCURRED. The Bible does NOT tell you that, it tells you just THE OPPOSITE.

Instead of wearing the white robes of AGAPE LOVE, they wore the **ROBES OF FAITH, AND IT COST THEM ETERNITY.** The destiny of human souls is at stake here, which is no light matter. Charges of legalism, works or a perversion of grace must be substantiated wholly by Scripture. This book is not a challenge to the finished work of Christ, OR the all sufficiency of His blood shed on behalf of sinners. THE ISSUE OF THIS BOOK IS HOW WE

## **APPROPRIATE**

### **THE FINISHED WORK OF CHRIST.**

The ‘many’ did not appropriate His work. The non-overcomers did not. The many who followed after the false teachers did not. They did not enter in. No amount of argument can deny that fact. The vast majority of Christians **FAILED UTTERLY TO ENTER IN TO THE NEW COVENANT.** They face eternal ruin **WITHOUT RECOURSE AS A RESULT.** It does you not one wit of good for you to claim you have ‘entered in’ when the reality is YOU HAVE NOT. You nor I can afford to make a mistake here. A mistake will cost us eternity for we cannot extricate ourselves from eternal ruin if we are wrong. **WE CANNOT AFFORD TO MISS THE MARK. WE CANNOT AFFORD TO BE WRONG. NOTHING COULD BE MORE SERIOUS, NOTHING MORE GRAVE.**

The only thing that will save us is FULL OBEDIENCE TO THE COMMANDS OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. We must keep His sayings; we must do the will of the Father. If we wish to avoid deception, WE MUST STUDY ENOUGH TO SPOT ERROR. At the core of every **FALSE TEACHER, PREACHER OR EVANGELIST IS A TOTAL AND COMPLETE CONTRADICTION TO THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.** They always will and must

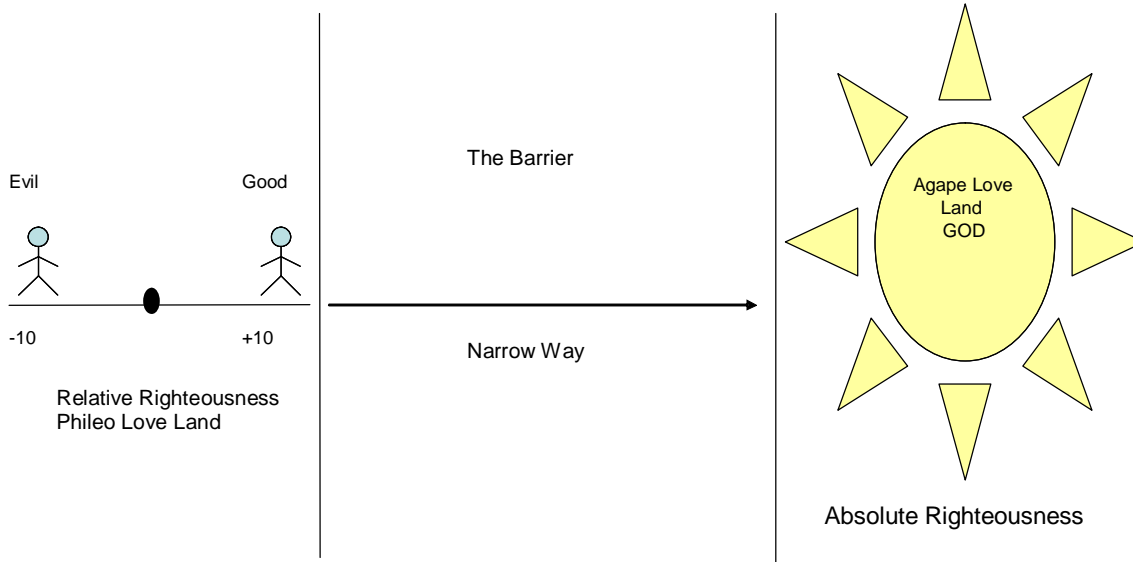
**DENY THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY OR**

**CLAIM UNION WITH CHRIST AT THE BEGINNING AND WALK THE NARROW WAY AFTER UNION HAS OCCURRED.**

Both cases are a complete and total contradiction to the Lord. It does not matter how they deny it, only that THEY DO DENY IT. Faith and grace are the usual ways of denial, with charges of ‘works’ or ‘legalism’ involved. If the narrow way is not denied, as it is not in some of the more fundamental camps, it is REDEFINED. It is defined as THE WAY OF HOLINESS, AS A HOLINESS WALK. IT IS NOT. IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH HOLINESS. IT IS A WALK OF JUDGMENT TO THE DEATH. Far being a holiness walk, it is a walk to show you HOW UNHOLY YOU ARE. IT IS THE REVERSE OF A HOLINESS WALK. Jesus Christ and Peter warned you they would contradict and deny

# THE WAY.

Modern Christianity in every single denomination DENIES THE WAY. Their theology may differ on HOW THEY DENY IT, DISAVOW IT, OR CONTRADICT IT, but THE POINT IS THEY DO. Even the holiness people deny it. They deny it because they APPROPRIATE A UNION THEY DO NOT HAVE AT THE BEGINNING, THEY CLAIM AN AGAPE LOVE THEY DO NOT HAVE AT THE BEGINNING, AND THEN THEY SEEK TO PERFECT AN AGAPE LOVE THEY DO NOT EVEN POSSESS, AND CLAIM THAT IS THE NARROW WAY, AS I WILL NOW PROVE.



The graphic shows us the problem. Man is over in phileo love land, working on the scale of relative righteousness. Between him and God is a very powerful barrier, which for simplicities sake is called the SIN BARRIER. Jesus said that we must enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way to find life, or LIGHT. This is the process of THE RECONCILIATION OF MAN TOWARDS GOD. Because man RESIDES IN UTTER DARKNESS, HE MUST BE FIRST PREPARED AND SANCTIFIED BEFORE HE MAY COME TO THE LIGHT. If he does not prepare himself, and he breaks forth upon God, he will die. The many broke forth unto the Lord, and they perished. All of this was proved out in the previous DARK LIGHT series.

The reconciliation process was initiated by God towards man. This side of the reconciliation process was total and complete. It is now up to every human soul to RECONCILE THEMSELVES TO GOD. GOD PROVIDED THE METHOD BY WHICH THIS PROCESS COULD BE ACCOMPLISHED. It is simply called the NARROW WAY. At the END of the narrow way lies the entrance to the New Covenant, the DOOR OR JESUS CHRIST. Jesus warned us repeatedly that there was only ONE WAY to this new heart. If we refuse to be obedient to these commands, because of bias, theology, deceptions, delusions, pride, arrogance, stupidity, or whatever other reason you wish to conjure up, you will have a BIG UNPLEASANT AND NASTY SHOCK AWAITING YOU.

If we refuse the strait gate and narrow way, and claim by our theology we have a union we do not have, we have come into the sheepfold SOME OTHER WAY. We are then termed BASTARDS

by the Lord, and are **REJECTED OUT OF HAND**. It is the barrier of the mind itself, of the inner darkness of our human hearts, that plant within our minds ALL OF THE REASONS, BIASES, DELUSIONS, AND DECEPTIONS THAT KEEP US FROM UNDERTAKING THE NARROW WAY. These are the obstacles in the parable of the sower: Satan and his demons, false Christian theology or the cares and pleasures of this world.

There is a real and literal satanic dominion over the minds of mankind. It is a lethal barrier of great strength, and it is the barrier, coupled to the darkness of the human heart, that our CONSCIOUS MINDS, HEARTS AND WILLS MUST COME AGAINST. When Jesus used the terms STRAIT AND NARROW He picked His terms carefully.

The chains of your bondage must be broken, and your weapons to break them are **FAITH, THE WORD OF GOD, THE POWER OF GOD, PATIENCE AND ENDURANCE UNDER TRIAL**. You will be entering TRUE SPIRITUAL WARFARE UPON A MASSIVE SCALE. You have not one thing to fear, for THE HOLY SPIRIT WILL BE WITH YOU ALL THE WAY, LIGHTING YOUR PATH, GUIDING YOU THROUGH. It will not seem it. It will seem that you are utterly alone. When your friends reject you, when your church rejects you, when the world turns its back upon you, **REJOICE, FOR YOURS IS THE KINGDOM OF GOD**.

Jesus said very bluntly and adamantly that you either enter in via the strait gate, or you don't come in at all. There are no other gates that lead to the narrow way. This is the WAY OF RECONCILIATION. IT IS THE PROCESS BY WHICH GOD WILL UNMASK THE DELUSIONS AND DECEPTIONS THAT YOU ARE IN, THE ONE WAY HE USES TO CONVICT YOU OF ONE SIN: YOU DO NOT AGAPE LOVE.

## **PICK UP THY CROSS – STRIVE TO ENTER IN**

Just what did Jesus mean when He said we must ENTER IN? What does He mean when He says we must PICK UP OUR CROSS AND FOLLOW HIM? Are these commands, or are they mere suggestions? It is imperative that we find out EXACTLY what He means, for we are given no other place by which we can enter the narrow way. We either enter here, or we do not enter.

**“ENTER YE IN AT THE STRAIT GATE...”**

**(Matthew 7:13)**

**“STRIVE**

**TO ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:**

**FOR MANY,**

**I SAY UNTO YOU, WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, AND SHALL NOT BE ABLE.”**

**(Luke 13:24)**

Remember the “many” on the BROAD ROAD? The “many” who followed after the FALSE TEACHERS? The “many” who stood before Christ rejected? The “many” called but only the few chosen from them? Now we have “many” who seek to enter into heaven via Christ, but will not be able. Why were they not able? Could it be that they simply refused to TAKE UP THEIR OWN CROSS? That their theology **PREVENTED THEM FROM REALIZING JESUS MEANT EXACTLY WHAT HE SAID**? How else could nice, decent folks get themselves cast into eternal ruin? It has to be deception. Does this imply that they could not because of some genetic problem, or is it a problem of the heart, of deception? God is not willing that any should perish, therefore FOR HIS WORD TO BE TRUE, ALL WOULD HAVE TO BE ABLE IF THEY WANTED. We also have proved that God gives them power to BECOME A SON OF GOD, if they will EXERCISE THAT POWER.

If they are given the power by God Himself at their CONVERSION to Christ, then why were they not able? The answer must be DECEPTION BY THEOLOGY. Their theology told them that anything other than FAITH ITSELF was a heresy, a form of “works” or of “legalism” of some type. Jesus commanded that we STRIVE to even ENTER THE STRAIT GATE. Their theology would not allow them to “strive” because it would be in violation of grace and faith. Thus, via their theology, they CONTRADICT JESUS CHRIST, THEY DISAVOW WHAT JESUS COMMANDED. “WHY DO YOU CALL ME LORD, LORD, AND DO NOT THE THINGS THAT I SAY?” It is a warning to us all.

The word “strive” as you know means to **AGONIZE IN HARD LABOR**. It carries with it the connotation of a **SEVERE STRUGGLE**. It carries with it the implication that a soul **MUST BE ALL STIRRED UP TO ACCOMPLISH SOMETHING, ONE THAT IS EAGER, HOT, FULL OF ZEAL OR ZEST, ONE WITH A PURPOSE, A SINGLE MINDED DETERMINATION TO ACCOMPLISH**. There is no question here that a DECISION TO COMMIT oneself to DO SOMETHING is commanded by the Lord. Is entering the strait gate in reality THE DECISION TO ACT? It is one thing to say I will pick up my cross; it is quite another TO ACTUALLY PICK IT UP!

**“He that TAKETH NOT HIS CROSS,  
AND FOLLOWETH AFTER ME,  
IS NOT WORTHY OF ME.”**  
(Matthew 10:38)

The word “taketh” here is ‘labano’ which means **TO LAY HOLD OF, TO TAKE, TO ACT**. The very act of picking up your cross then REQUIRES A DECISION OF THE CONSCIOUS WILL TO DO SOMETHING. What are we supposed to do? How do I pick up my cross? Modern theology would say by and large this means acts of self-denial. In reality it is the ultimate self-denial, as will be shown you. Notice that Jesus said ANYONE WHO DOES NOT IS NOT WORTHY. In plain English it means IF YOU WON’T, YOU DON’T ENTER HEAVEN. Thus a direct COMMAND, which **MUST BE FOLLOWED**, or heaven is an eternity away. The word “worthy” is ‘axios’ which means **DESERVING, SUITABLE, COMPARABLE**.

**“And WHOSOEVER DOTH NOT  
BEAR HIS CROSS,  
AND COME AFTER ME,**

**CANNOT**

**BE MY DISCIPLE.”**  
**(Luke 14:27)**

The word “bear” is ‘bastazo’ and it means **TO ENDURE, TO SUSTAIN, TO CARRY**. The word for “come” is ‘erchomai’ which means **TO ACCOMPANY, TO ENTER**. Read what Jesus says here very carefully. **IT IS A DIRECT COMMAND FROM JESUS CHRIST**. This is not an optional issue; this is a direct REQUIREMENT FOR SALVATION. Jesus is blunt: **IF YOU REFUSE, YOU CANNOT BE HIS DISCIPLE**. It is not possible. In other words, Christ is laying down PARAMETERS, HE IS LAYING DOWN CONDITIONS. There are **NO EXCEPTIONS**. There are no exceptions. **EVERYONE MUST COME IN THE SAME WAY**.

There are other verses that we will examine later, but for now it should be perfectly clear to you that **JESUS IS ISSUING A COMMAND THAT MUST BE COMPLIED WITH**. It is not optional; it is not canceled because your theology does not allow it. **EITHER DO IT OR PERISH FOR ETERNITY**. But again, we ask, what does Jesus mean by this **TAKING UP, OR LIFTING UP THE CROSS**? We will study the **CROSS ITSELF A LITTLE LATER**, BUT FOR NOW WE NEED A PRACTICAL AND USEFUL KNOWLEDGE SO THAT WE KNOW WHAT JESUS MEANS BY ENTERING IN, OR LIFTING UP OUR CROSS.

**“And there IS NONE**

**THAT CALLETH UPON THY NAME,**

**THAT STIRRETH UP HIMSELF**

**TO TAKE HOLD OF THEE:  
FOR THOU HAST HID THY FACE FROM US,  
AND HAST CONSUMED US, BECAUSE OF OUR INIQUITIES.”**  
**(Isaiah 64:7)**

The word “calleth” is ‘qara’, which means **TO ACCOST, TO CRY OUT, TO CALL OUT TO**. It implies a great urgency, a great NEED. The word for “stirreth” is ‘uwr’ and it means **TO WAKE UP, TO OPEN YOUR EYES, TO STIR YOURSELF UP, TO RISE UP**. The implication here is **TO ROUSE YOURSELF FROM YOUR SLUMBER, BECAUSE YOU ARE IN DEEP TROUBLE**. It carries with it the implication of **AUTHENTIC REVIVAL, OF A GREAT STIRRING OF THE SOUL, OF A TOTAL AND COMPLETE CHANGE OF PRIORITIES!**

*“Whom shall he **TEACH KNOWLEDGE**? And whom shall he  
MAKE TO **UNDERSTAND DOCTRINE**?  
THEM THAT are WEANED FROM THE MILK, AND DRAWN FROM THE BREASTS.*

*FOR PRECEPT MUST BE UPON PRECEPT,  
PRECEPT UPON PRECEPT;  
LINE UPON LINE, LINE UPON LINE;  
HERE A LITTLE, AND THERE A LITTLE.”  
(Isaiah 28:9-10)*

Jesus said we are to LABOR FOR THE MEAT that endures unto everlasting life (John 6:27). **MEAT IS DOCTRINE**. In order for doctrine to be effective, it first of all has to be UNDERSTOOD, and secondly OBEYED. Doctrine in the mind that is not ALLOWED TO WORK ITS WORK, AND NOT APPLIED TO THE SELF, IS WORTHLESS. **We must DILIGENTLY SEEK HIM OUT**. If doctrine is built line upon line, precept on precept, here a little and there a little, **THIS INDICATES THAT IT TAKES TIME AND EFFORT TO COME TO A SAVING KNOWLEDGE OF THE LORD**.

*“My son,*

***IF*** *(THE HUGE CONDITIONAL IF)*

*THOU WILT RECEIVE MY WORDS, AND HIDE MY COMMANDMENTS  
WITH THEE;  
SO THAT THOU INCLINE THINE EAR UNTO WISDOM,  
AND APPLY THINE HEART TO UNDERSTANDING;*

*YEA, IF THOU  
CRIEST AFTER KNOWLEDGE,  
AND LIFTEST UP THY VOICE FOR UNDERSTANDING;*

*IF THOU SEEKEST HER AS SILVER,  
AND SEARCHEST FOR HER AS FOR HID TREASURES;*

***THEN*** *(THE HUGE QUALIFIER, THEN)*

*SHALT THOU UNDERSTAND THE FEAR OF THE LORD,  
AND FIND THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD.”*

*(Proverbs 2:1-5)*

The words CRIEST, SEEKEST, SEARCHEST, INCLINE AND APPLY should tell you something of the nature of the search to find THE KNOWLEDGE OF AGAPE LOVE. Notice the **TREASURE IS HIDDEN**. AGAPE LOVE IS HIDDEN. IT IS THE GULF BETWEEN MAN AND GOD, A GREAT GULF OF SILENCE. The conditions listed are very clear: **THE SEARCHING, THE SEEKING, THE CRYING AFTER, ARE DONE BEFORE THE FINDING**. Do not put the cart before the horse. Do not get the sequence IN REVERSE. The CONDITION that God puts on the finding of His SECRET AGAPE LOVE IS THAT YOU **SEEK, SEARCH, AND CRY AFTER IT**.

You do not FIND IT FIRST, AND SEEK IT OUT SECOND. Modern Christian theology puts the cart before the horse. There is an IMPERATIVE STIRRING OF THE SOUL IMPLIED HERE. The word “incline” is ‘qashab’, and it means **TO PRICK UP THE EARS, TO HEARKEN, TO GIVE HEED, TO MARK WELL, TO REGARD**. The word “apply” is ‘natah’ and it means **TO STRETCH OUT, TO REACH OUT FOR, TO ACCOST, TO CRY OUT FOR**. The word “seeketh” is ‘baquash’ and it means **TO SEARCH OUT BY ANY METHOD, TO STRIVE AFTER, TO BEG FOR, TO BESEECH, TO MAKE INQUISITION**. The word for “searchest” is ‘chahas’, and it means to **DILIGENTLY SEARCH, TO SEEK AFTER, TO SEARCH A MATTER OUT**. All of these words imply much more than we think. IT WILL BE VERIFIED THAT GOD HAS WARNED HIS PEOPLE IN MANY PLACES THAT THE TRUTH THAT SETS US FREE, THIS MYSTERIOUS AGAPE LOVE, **IS SO WELL HIDDEN THAT UNLESS YOU PUT YOUR WHOLE HEART INTO IT, YOU WILL NOT FIND IT**.

The word for “find” is ‘matas’ and it means **TO COME FORTH, TO APPEAR, TO ACQUIRE, TO MEET, OR TO BE PRESENT**. At the end of your search, you ARE TO **FIND** SOMETHING, AND YOU ARE TO KNOW IN THE ABSOLUTE SENSE YOU HAVE FOUND IT. If you could not know if you had found it, then you would search forever. There is a **FINDING AT THE END OF THE JOURNEY**. There is an END to your **first** journey of faith. The finding is the **finding of AGAPE LOVE**. The finding is the finding of Jesus Christ.

*“Happy is the man THAT **FINDETH** WISDOM,  
AND THE MAN WHO **GETTETH** UNDERSTANDING.*

*FOR THE MERCHANDISE OF IT IS BETTER THAN  
THE MERCHANDISE OF SILVER,  
AND THE GAIN THEREOF THAN FINE GOLD.*

*SHE IS MORE PRECIOUS THAN RUBIES:  
AND ALL THE THINGS THOU CANST DESIRE  
ARE NOT COMPARED TO HER.*

*Length of days is in her right hand;  
and in her left hand riches and honour.*

*Her ways are ways of pleasantness, and all her  
paths are peace.*

***SHE IS A TREE OF LIFE**  
TO THEM THAT LAY HOLD UPON HER:  
AND HAPPY IS EVERY ONE THAT RETAINETH HER.”*



(Proverbs 3:13-18)

The obtaining of this “wisdom” is called the **TREE OF LIFE**. Could God be speaking of **AGAPE LOVE LIFE**? Compare this verse to 1 John 3:1 and 3:14. It is agape love that brings eternal life, which is **LENGTH OF DAYS**. There is a direct tie between wisdom, knowledge and **ETERNAL LIFE**. Notice also the **VALUE OF THIS WISDOM**. It is more precious than **LIFE ITSELF, FOR WE ALL DESIRE THAT WE LIVE, AND THIS IS MORE PRECIOUS THAN THAT**. Notice that in her is found the **pathway of peace**. Peace is the opposite of hostility. When two parties **RECONCILE, THERE IS PEACE**. Is this the **peace with God**?

**“WISDOM IS THE PRINCIPAL THING;**  
**THEREFORE GET WISDOM:**  
**AND WITH ALL THY GETTING,**  
**GET UNDERSTANDING.**

**EXHALT HER, AND SHE SHALL PROMOTE THEE:**

**SHE SHALL BRING THEE TO HONOUR,**  
**WHEN THOU DOST EMBRACE HER.**

**SHE SHALL GIVE TO THINE HEAD AN ORNAMENT OF GRACE:**  
**A CROWN OF GLORY SHALL SHE DELIVER TO THEE.”**

(Proverbs 4:7-9)

Wisdom is called the **PRINCIPAL THING**. The word “principal” is ‘reshiyth’, and it means **FIRST IN TIME, PLACE, RANK OR ORDER**. It means the

**TOP, UPPERMOST IN PRIORITY,**  
**NOTHING CAN BE ALLOWED TO SUPERSEDE IT.**

With all thy getting, get wisdom. This is an all out **SEARCH**. This means that we are to put everything we have into it, every last bit of effort we can muster. **WITH ALL THY GETTING.**

The word “all” is ‘kol’ which means **THE WHOLE, EVERY PART**. In other words, you are to apply **EVERY FIBER OF YOUR BEING, YOUR HEART, SOUL AND MIND TO THIS SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH**. God is commanding you to **EXERCISE YOUR WHOLE BEING, AND TO THROW ALL OF YOUR EFFORTS INTO IT**. He must consider it an imperative, ***for Christ verified it, as you will see***. If you will change your priorities and make this **SEARCH FOR WISDOM THE NUMBER ONE PRIORITY OF LIFE ABOVE ALL THINGS (EXHALT HER)**, THEN SHE WILL BRING TO YOU THE **ORNAMENT OF GRACE**. What is the ornament of grace? The “many” stood before Christ rejected. They were not under **THE GRACE OF GOD**. They only **THOUGHT** they were under the grace of God, and their theology is what made them think it. Who is under the **ORNAMENT OF GRACE**? Only the overcomers, only the **REGENERATED, ONLY THOSE WHO HAVE FOUND THE SECRET OF GOD: AGAPE LOVE**.

This wisdom brings not only GRACE, BUT A CROWN OF GLORY. The only ones who are given crowns in the Scripture **ARE THE OVERCOMERS, THE REGENERATED**. No one else can enter heaven, because Christ made it perfectly clear **YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN TO ENTER HEAVEN**. Therefore this wisdom has got to be AGAPE LOVE WISDOM, and it verifies the other statements of God: **IT IS HIDDEN, SECRET, AND UNLESS AND UNTIL YOU DECIDE TO FIND IT WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART, ALL OF YOUR SOUL AND ALL OF YOUR MIND YOU WILL NOT FIND IT.**

**“But SEEK YE  
FIRST**

***the KINGDOM OF GOD,  
AND HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS;***

***and all these things shall be added unto you.”  
(Matthew 6:33)***

This command of the Lord’s is included in the Sermon on the Mount, which you will recall, from our previous DARK LIGHT series, is a sermon on **HOW TO GET SAVED**. What Jesus is saying here is exactly what God said in Proverbs. The word “first” is ‘proton’ and it means **FIRST IN TIME, ORDER OR PLACE OF IMPORTANCE**. Jesus demands that the search for the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD BE PLACED AS THE NUMBER ONE PRIORITY OF YOUR LIFE. He must feel it essential for salvation to occur, because if not, He would not have said it, nor would it be in the Sermon on the Mount.

**“STUDY**

***TO SHEW THYSELF APPROVED***

***UNTO GOD, A WORKMAN  
THAT NEEDETH NOT TO BE ASHAMED,  
RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE WORD OF TRUTH.”***

**(2 Timothy 2:15)**

This verse of Scripture means far more than most Christians are aware. The word “study” is ‘spoudazo’ and it means **TO MAKE EFFORT, TO BE EARNEST, TO GIVE DILIGENCE, TO ENDURE, TO LABOR, TO STUDY**. It is a command of God and Christ that **WE DILIGENTLY SEEK OUT THE TRUTH OF SCRIPTURE**. The only reason you would have to do that would be if THERE WAS SOMETHING **VERY WELL HIDDEN** WITHIN THE WORDS OF GOD THAT REQUIRES EXTENSIVE SEARCH. The word “workman” is ‘ergates’ and it means **TO BE LABORER, A WORKER**. The command here is that we study so that we ARE APPROVED. Therefore if we refuse to study, we will **NOT BE APPROVED**. What does it mean to be approved by God? The word “approved” is ‘dokimos’ which means

**ACCEPTED, APPROVED.** Who does God approve of? The only ones that get to heaven are the **overcomers** or the **REGENERATED**. The many were not approved, they were sent away.

If we are to study, then the object of our study is to **LEARN SOMETHING, TO UNCOVER SOME TRUTH THAT GOD WANTS US TO FIND**. If we find it, then we will become **APPROVED AND ACCEPTED OF THE LORD**. If we fail to find it, then we will not be accepted. Is that why Jesus said we must **CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE TO FIND ‘THE TRUTH’**? Is this truth of **AGAPE LOVE** so well hidden from man that **A VERY DIFFICULT SEARCH MUST BE MADE TO UNCOVER WHAT IT IS?**

*“Take my yoke upon you,*

**AND LEARN OF ME;**

*for I am meek and lowly in heart:*

*and ye shall find **REST** for your souls.”*

**(Matthew 11:29)**

The command of Christ is that we learn from Him. It is not an optional statement; it is an imperative statement or command. The word “learn” is ‘manthano’, to **LEARN TO UNDERSTAND, TO COMPREHEND**. It is a fact then that God ties salvation to learning and this learning is to bring us into a knowledge we must have:

*“Let favour be shewed to the wicked, **YET***

***WILL HE NOT LEARN RIGHTEOUSNESS:***

*In the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly,*

***AND WILL NOT BEHOLD***

***THE MAJESTY OF THE LORD.”***

**(Isaiah 26:10)**

The wicked to the Lord are not the same thing as we would call wicked people. The wicked of the Lord are all those **WHO DID NOT LAY HOLD OF REGENERATION, OFFERED THROUGH HIS SON**. Righteousness in many cases is a code word for **AGAPE LOVE**. The “many” were sent away as “wicked” servants, they did not come to a knowledge of **AGAPE LOVE**. They will never behold the **DIVINE LOVE OF GOD**. The word “learn” here is ‘lamad’ which means **TO GOAD ON, TO DILIGENTLY SEARCH, TO BECOME EXPERT**.

*“Now it came to pass, as they went, that he (Jesus) entered into a certain village: and a certain woman name Martha received him into her house.*

*And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus’ feet, and **HEARD HIS WORD.***

*But Martha was CUMBERED ABOUT MUCH SERVING, AND CAME TO HIM, AND SAID, LORD, DOST THOU NOT CARE THAT MY SISTER HATH LEFT ME TO SERVE ALONE?*

*BID HER THEREFORE TO HELP ME.*

*And Jesus answered and said unto her, MARTHA, MARTHA, THOU ART CAREFUL AND TROUBLED ABOUT MANY THINGS:*

*BUT ONE THING IS NEEDFUL:*

*AND MARY HATH CHOSEN THAT GOOD PART,  
WHICH SHALL NOT BE TAKEN AWAY FROM HER.”  
(Luke 10:38-42)*

Martha was concerned about many worldly things. She was a very careful, thoughtful woman. She was not lazy but instead a dedicated woman. Jesus said her PRIORITIES were all messed up. They were wrong. Instead of fussing over minor worldly concerns, she was to **SIT AT HIS FEET AS DID MARY**. She needed to “leave the world” and get wisdom and understanding that would save her soul. The word “needful” is ‘chreia’, which means **A REQUIREMENT, A DEMAND, A COMMAND, A DESTITUTION, A LACK, A WANT THAT NEEDS TO BE FILLED**. Martha, by worldly standards, was a good, upright woman. Her works and her RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS was not going to help her in the end. All of that would be taken away. But unto Mary, her wisdom and knowledge, found by HEARING THE MASTER’S WORDS, would never be taken away.

Mary dropped everything and sat at the feet of Jesus. She heard every word with keen interest. She left the cares of this world behind, and in spite of the anger it caused within her immediate family, she refused to be **MOVED FROM HER OBJECTIVE; WHICH WAS TO LEARN FROM CHRIST**. Martha could get as mad as she wanted, she could fuss and fume and carry on, but Mary was not moved by any of it. **SHE PERSISTED IN HER STUDY**. Did Jesus rebuke Mary for her intent interest? Did Jesus rebuke her for putting all of the work upon Martha? NO. He not only did not rebuke her, He **STEADFASTLY DEFENDED WHAT SHE WAS DOING**. There is not one word of REBUKE TO MARY. Instead, He rebukes MARTHA!

There is a very deep lesson here in the selection of **PRIORITIES**, and the bottom line here in all of this is the **MASSIVE REALIGNMENT OF PRIORITIES THAT IS NECESSARY IN FINDING THE KINGDOM OF GOD**. If we will not make this rearrangement, **WE WILL NOT FIND IT**. This is why Jesus said for us to STRIVE just to ENTER THE GATE, let alone walk the narrow way.

It is evident then, that a **STIRRING UP OF THE SLUMBERING AND DELUDED SOUL IS A REQUIREMENT**. We must then **STIR OURSELVES UP** and remove ourselves FROM THE DECEPTION AND DELUSION AND BRING US INTO SALVATION. Why would all of this be necessary? And what does Jesus mean when He says we must place this **SEARCH FOR AGAPE LOVE AS A TOP PRIORITY**? Just how much a TOP PRIORITY IS IT, AND WHAT WILL IT COST US TO DO AS HE DEMANDS?

## THE PRIORITY OF THE CALL

Scripture proves that the priority of the call of Jesus Christ is above EVERYTHING ELSE IN LIFE. It is above family, wives, husbands, children, employment, country, and life itself. THIS PRIORITY CALL IS SEVERE INDEED, and that is one of the reasons why the “many” were rejected, THEY DID NOT UNDERSTAND OR BELIEVE THAT JESUS MEANT EXACTLY WHAT HE SAID. If you do not adhere to this demand, YOUR RELIGION, YOUR WORKS, YOUR LIFE WILL BE IN VAIN.

*“If any man COME TO ME, and HATE NOT HIS FATHER,  
AND MOTHER, AND WIFE,  
AND CHILDREN, AND BRETHREN AND SISTERS, YEA,  
  
AND HIS OWN LIFE ALSO,  
  
HE CANNOT BE MY DISCIPLE.”  
(Luke 14:26)*

This is a very severe call. The word “hate” is ‘miseo’ and it means **TO LOVE LESS, OR TO DETEST IN RELATIONSHIP OF ONE THING TO ANOTHER.** In other words, Jesus is telling you that **UNLESS AND UNTIL YOU ARE WILLING TO PLACE THE SEARCH FOR HIM AND THE TRUTH HE HOLDS ABOVE AND BEYOND ALL OTHERS, YOU CANNOT BE HIS DISCIPLE.**

This call is above ALL FAMILY, ALL SPOUSES, and EVEN YOUR OWN LIFE. You cannot spiritualize this away. Jesus said what He said. He said it in many ways and terms so that no one can misinterpret what He said. ALL EARTHLY TIES MUST TAKE A SECOND PLACE TO THIS SEARCH. And please note what Jesus said and how He worded it, because it VERIFIES THE NARROW WAY TOTALLY. He said: “IF ANY MAN COME TO ME.” You will remember that Jesus said you could search the Scripture daily and STILL NOT COME TO HIM. This call then is TO GET TO CHRIST, TO GET TO UNION, TO GET TO REGENERATION. It is IN THE COMING TO CHRIST THAT THIS CALL IS MADE.

This is totally confirmed because He said we could search the Scriptures all we wanted, BUT UNLESS AND UNTIL WE CAME TO HIM, IT WOULD NOT DO US ANY GOOD. As Christ is the holder of agape love, which is LIFE, then it all comes together in undeniable harmony. This is a call to come to Christ or die trying. IT IS IMPERATIVE YOU UNDERSTAND THIS

## IS A COMMAND.

It is not optional. It is not something you decide to take or leave. IT IS A COMMAND THAT MUST BE OBEYED OR YOU WILL NEVER SEE HEAVEN. He said that unless this attitude

was developed, unless a soul stirred itself up in a MIGHTY WAY, AND KEPT BEING STIRRED UP, YOU COULD NOT BE HIS DISCIPLE. The word “cannot” is ‘ouk’ or ‘ouch’ and it means **NAY, NEVER, NOT EVER, NO, NOT**. Do you get the drift? This is not an optional statement, this is a direct command, and if you refuse to do it for whatever reasons you advance, **YOU ARE NOT A TRUE DISCIPLE OF THE LORD**. You will never FIND CHRIST, **YOU WILL NEVER UNLOCK THE MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE**. In short:

## **TOTAL COMMITMENT OR YOU CANNOT ENTER.**

Today such a one would be called a fanatic, or obsessed. It would probably be considered a form of mental illness, if one were to do as Christ commands. That is because our society has become so soft, so apostate, that true dedication is very abnormal. Several books have appeared on the market such as TOXIC FAITH. This call of Christ would be called TOXIC. The command **STILL STANDS, HOWEVER, NO MATTER WHAT WE WISH TO SAY ABOUT IT.**

***“Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace,  
BUT A SWORD.***

***For I am come to set a man AT VARIANCE against his father,  
And the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.***

***AND A MAN’S FOES SHALL BE THEY OF HIS OWN HOUSEHOLD.***

***HE THAT LOVETH FATHER OR MOTHER MORE THAN ME  
IS NOT WORTHY OF ME:***

***AND HE THAT LOVETH SON OR DAUGHTER MORE THAN ME  
IS NOT WORTHY OF ME.***

***AND HE THAT TAKETH UP NOT HIS CROSS,  
AND FOLLOWETH AFTER ME,  
IS NOT WORTHY OF ME.”***

***(Matthew 10:34-38)***

Jesus did not come to bring peace to earth. The peace that came with the arrival of the Christ child was PEACE FROM GOD TOWARD MEN. That reconciliation was from GOD TO MAN. NOW JESUS HAS A DIFFERENT MESSAGE, ONE THIS IN REALITY OPPOSED: Because of the dedication required to FIND THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE, a man will find that **IT WILL CAUSE GREAT DIVISION AMONG THE FAMILY**. Modern Christian theology attempts to claim that this refers only to those homes that were Jewish or some other religion that would consider Christ the enemy. Christ is also the enemy of all lukewarm apostate Christians, and that would mean great division, it extends to far more than that. In the modern Christian home, if ANYONE did as Christ herein commands, WOULD RUN INTO A WALL OF OPPOSITION. This is true because **MANY ARE CALLED, BUT FEW ARE CHOSEN**. The

many in reality hate the few. They hate them because their dedication and their labor show the others WHAT THEY ARE WITHOUT A WORD BEING SAID.

Jesus brought a sword, because the Word of God is a sword, and that sword **WILL CALL OUT THE FEW IN SPITE OF ALL THE PROTESTS AND FITS OF RAGE THE MANY THROW TO PREVENT IT.** This is a commitment issue from the conscious heart. Now we begin to understand why Jesus said we **MUST STRIVE** to even enter the gate. We are going to have **TO AGONIZE OVER MAKING THIS DECISION.** It is not going to be an easy choice, in fact, the most difficult choice you will ever make.

*“Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, NAY; BUT RATHER  
**DIVISION:***

*For FROM HENCEFORTH there shall be five IN ONE HOUSE DIVIDED,  
three against two, and two against three.*

*The father shall be DIVIDED AGAINST THE SON,  
AND THE SON AGAINST THE FATHER;  
THE MOTHER AGAINST THE DAUGHTER,  
AND THE DAUGHTER AGAINST THE MOTHER;  
THE MOTHER IN LAW AGAINST THE DAUGHTER IN LAW,  
AND THE DAUGHTER IN LAW AGAINST HER MOTHER IN LAW.  
(Luke 12:51-53)*

There is no question that Jesus MEANT WHAT HE SAID. It cannot be construed or spiritualized away. This is beginning to sound like a **WHOLE HEART, WHOLE MIND, WHOLE SOUL SEARCH TO FIND THE HIDDEN TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE.** There can be nothing held back, it MUST be undertaken. If this is true, then it sounds like we must be ready **TO FORSAKE EVERYTHING WE ARE, EVERYTHING WE HAVE, EVERYTHING WE WANT TO BE:**

*“So likewise, WHOSOEVER HE BE OF YOU THAT **FORSAKETH NOT**  
**ALL THAT HE HATH,***

*HE **CANNOT** BE MY DISCIPLE.”  
(Luke 14:33)*

The word “forsaketh” is ‘apotassomai’ and it means **TO SAY GOOD-BY, TO RENOUNCE, TO BID FAREWELL, TO LEAVE BEHIND, TO SEND AWAY.** The word “all” is ‘pas’, which means **ALL, EVERYTHING, EVERY PART.** The word “cannot” means **NOT ABLE, IMPOSSIBLE.** How does one misinterpret this? Jesus clearly states that **UNLESS ONE IS WILLING TO TURN THEIR BACK UPON EVERYTHING THAT HE HAS, AND DOES SO, HE CANNOT BE HIS DISCIPLE.** The many obviously did not do this, they wanted Christ, and they wanted the world. Jesus says you cannot have both, make up your mind, and make a choice. We are beginning to find out what Jesus means when He says **HE COMES FIRST, ABOVE**

**ALL THINGS**. It is obvious that the “many” did not understand this aspect of the Gospel. Is this how Jesus determines our faith, if it be genuine or not? Is this what Jesus meant when He said disciples or “DISCIPLE INDEED”?

Is the disciple just the ordinary person who studies the Scripture, but is never able to come to a knowledge of the truth? Is the disciple the nominal Christian who wants Christ and heaven, but is not willing to turn his back upon the world? Is the disciple the nominal Christian who simply studies, but gives very little time and effort to it? How much time do you give to the actual study of God’s Word?

The average Christian attends Church only Sunday morning, most do not go to the evening services, and fewer still turn out for Wednesday night prayer service. We will give the benefit of the doubt, and we will say that one attends ALL SERVICES. We will say that in those three services per week, that the average time spent IN STUDY is as follows:

1. Sunday morning – 1.5 hours
2. Sunday night - .5 hours
3. Wednesday night - .5 hours

Therefore we have a total of 2.5 hours a week. We will then give the benefit of the doubt and say you spend 1.5 hours each remaining day in the Scriptures, or 7.5 hours for a total of 10 hours per week, for 52 weeks each year. That is a grand total of 520 hours of study in the Word over a year. We will say that the average person has a 16-hour waking day or a total of 5844 hours in a year. If he spends 520 hours of that year in study he has spent about 9% of his time with the Lord. Do you suppose that is why the many never made it? Do you suppose that when Jesus says this is an ALL OUT effort He means more like 80% rather than 8%, or almost 100%? What do you suppose the world ALL means? Are we not told to MEDITATE UPON THE WORD OF THE LORD ALL THE DAY LONG? Could it be there is a reason?

Does Jesus mean what He says, and are we to turn our backs upon the world in order to obtain the secret of AGAPE LOVE? This is a crucial question, because if AGAPE LOVE is so well hidden, and if God is going to test our faith, and its resolve to find the truth, and we do not become obedient to it, then we would be in the greatest of danger.

*“And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good master,  
what shall I do to INHERIT ETERNAL LIFE?”*

*And Jesus said to Him, why callest thou me good? None is good, save one,  
that is, God.*

***THOU KNOWEST THE COMMANDMENTS, DO NOT COMMIT ADULTERY,  
DO NOT KILL, DO NOT STEAL, DO NOT BEAR FALSE WITNESS.  
HONOUR THY FATHER AND THY MOTHER.***

*And he said, ALL THESE HAVE I KEPT FROM MY YOUTH UP.*

*Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him,*

***YET LACKEST THOU ONE THING:***



**SELL ALL THAT THOU HAST,**  
**AND DISTRIBUTE UNTO THE POOR,**  
**AND THOU SHALT HAVE TREASURE IN HEAVEN:**

**AND**  
**COME, AND FOLLOW ME.”**  
**(Luke 18:18-23)**

The rich young ruler was a leader in his community. He was an honest, sincere and dedicated man. He was respected and probably a leader in his synagogue. This man told Jesus that HE HAD KEPT THE LAW FROM HIS YOUTH UP. Jesus accepted that statement as a matter of fact, and did not in the least suggest it was not true. For all of this Jesus says: YOU LACK ONE THING. The word “lackest” is ‘leipo’ which means **TO BE DESTITUTE OF, TO BE WANTING, TO BE DEVOID OF THE ITEM IN QUESTION.** It means for all of his law keeping and good works, for all of his sincerity and dedication he was still DESTITUTE OF THIS ONE THING. What was it? HE HAD RELIGION, HE HAD RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS, HE WAS MORALLY UPRIGHT, HE WAS ETHICAL, HE WAS HONEST.

Remember Peter? Poor Peter was only a fisherman, but Peter was ETHICAL, UPRIGHT, HONEST, SINCERE OF HEART. Peter loved the Lord, and PETER HAD LEFT EVERYTHING BEHIND TO FOLLOW JESUS. One cannot claim that PETER WAS NOT A TRUE FOLLOWER OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. One cannot claim that Peter did NOT DO WHAT JESUS REQUIRED THE RICH YOUNG RULER TO DO. Yet PETER LACKED ONE THING: **AGAPE LOVE.**

## **1. THE RULER MUST SELL EVERYTHING HE HAS**

This was a DIRECT COMMAND FROM CHRIST. He did not tell the young ruler to go hire someone to take over the business while he followed Jesus. He did not suggest he put it in “trust” while he went off following Jesus. His command is direct and to the point: GO SELL EVERYTHING YOU HAVE, AND GIVE IT TO THE POOR. Is this simply another way to say **LEAVE THE WORLD BEHIND, PUT ME FIRST, ABOVE ALL OTHER THINGS, ABOVE LIFE ITSELF?** Is Jesus trying to give us a HINT as to the actual and real dedication that is **REQUIRED TO FIND AGAPE LOVE?** The ruler was a LAW KEEPER. Jesus came down from heaven with a NEW COVENANT. He converted the **LAW INTO AGAPE LOVE.** Indeed, there was ONLY ONE THING the ruler lacked. **IT WAS A NEW HEART, A HEART OF AGAPE LOVE.**

In short, we could say that the young ruler LACKED JUST ONE THING: REGENERATION. **HE NEEDED TO BE REGENERATED IN AGAPE LOVE.** That was ALL he lacked. Jesus did not say you lack two things, or four things; he was very careful what He said: **YOU LACK ONE THING.** The word for “one” is ‘heis’ and it means **ONLY ONE, THE ONLY THING.** The word “go” is ‘hupago’ and it means **TO DEPART, TO GET HENCE, TO DEPART NOW.** The word “sell” is ‘poleo’ and it means **TO SELL, TO BARTER, TO TRADE.** He is to sell everything that he has, ALL THAT HE HAS. He is to **TOTALLY REARRANGE HIS PRIORITIES.** He is to LEAVE THE WORLD BEHIND. This is the FIRST COMMAND OF TWO.

## **2. HE MUST FOLLOW JESUS**

This means far more than we suspect. AFTER HAVING TURNED HIS BACK UPON THE WORLD, the young ruler is now **COMMANDED TO RETURN TO CHRIST, AND FOLLOW HIM**. The word “follow” is ‘akoloutheo’ and it means **TO BE IN THE SAME WAY WITH, TO ACCOMPANY**. What does Jesus mean, BE IN THE SAME WAY WITH? What does Jesus mean by the remark that we are **TO PICK UP OUR CROSS**? This was not an optional command, this is a direct imperative command, do it or else you **CANNOT INHERIT ETERNAL LIFE**.

We should not forget the original question: **WHAT MUST I DO TO INHERIT ETERNAL LIFE**? The reply of Jesus is very blunt. He first of all **SAYS THE RULER LACKS ONLY ONE THING TO INHERIT ETERNAL LIFE**. There is only **ONE THING MISSING**. We can easily prove the one thing **MISSING IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, A NEW HEART**. It is the **NEW HEART OF AGAPE LOVE THAT BRINGS ONE ETERNAL LIFE**. The issue becomes once again, **THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE**. That is why Christ reduced the **COMMANDMENTS DOWN TO AGAPE LOVE**.

Now to **OBTAIN AGAPE LOVE**, to **ACTUALLY LAY HANDS UPON IT**, Jesus gave two very distinct and very clear **DIRECT COMMANDS: BOTH OF THEM HAD TO BE FULFILLED, OR ETERNAL LIFE, VIA AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, WOULD NOT BE GRANTED**.

### **1. GO SELL EVERYTHING YOU HAVE**

### **2. COME, FOLLOW ME.**

If you do only one of them, you will not inherit eternal life. Peter had left everything behind, and he **LACKED ONLY ONE THING**. He did not have **AGAPE LOVE**. He still had to do something, **HE HAD TO FOLLOW JESUS CHRIST BEYOND CALVARY, HE DIED, HE WAS BURIED, AND HE WENT INTO THE LAND OF THE DEAD BEFORE HE WAS RESURRECTED TO A NEW LIFE**. The rich young ruler had to do what Peter **WOULD BE CALLED UPON TO DO**; he had to leave the world behind. Then he had to follow Jesus, and Jesus went to **CALVARY** and beyond to the resurrection to **NEW LIFE**.

It cannot be denied that Jesus commanded that **WE FOLLOW HIM**. But what does it mean? If we relate all of this back to the **STRAIT GATE, AND NARROW WAY, WE WILL BEGIN TO FIND THE ANSWER**:

- 1. ENTER YE IN = SELL ALL THAT YOU HATH.**
- 2. FOR NARROW IS THE WAY = AND COME, FOLLOW ME.**
- 3. THAT LEADEST UNTO LIFE = DEATH AND RESURRECTION IN AGAPE LOVE, A NEW LIFE.**
- 4. FEW THERE BE THAT FIND IT = HE WAS VERY SORROWFUL.**

Do you see the harmony of it all? The command to enter the strait gate must be, has to be, the **DECISION TO LEAVE THE ENTIRE WORLD BEHIND, PROPERTY, POSSESSIONS, LOVED ONES, THE WHOLE WORLD, AND FOLLOW JESUS**. It is then **THE DEGREE OF COMMITMENT THAT DETERMINES WHETHER WE FIND ETERNAL LIFE OR NOT**.

Will one make the REQUIRED COMMITMENT? Will one ACTUALLY DO IT? It is one thing to say that you would if Christ commanded you to. Could it be that He did and He is waiting for you to comply?

There is much more here than meets the eye. The call of Christ is SEVERE INDEED. IT PUTS YOU TO THE TEST. HE IS SAYING PUT YOUR MONEY WHERE YOUR MOUTH IS. HE IS SAYING PROVE IT. Is this why Christ commanded us to STRIVE to enter in? Is this decision to follow SO VERY DIFFICULT THAT IT LITERALLY IS AGONIZING TO COME TO A DECISION? That to separate ourselves from the world, and ALL THAT IS IN IT, is a decision that ONLY A FEW WILL MAKE? And do not forget that this decision IS ONLY THE FIRST COMMAND. THIS IS SIMPLY TO ENTER IN TO THE NARROW WAY.

Everyone wants to go to heaven, but no one wants to die. Everyone wants Jesus, but few will leave the world long enough to FIND HIM. To confirm that Jesus did in fact mean EXACTLY WHAT HE SAID, SO THAT NO ONE COULD MISTAKE WHAT HE SAID, He repeated Himself elsewhere, and it ties together to form a harmony of intent:

**“NO MAN CAN SERVE TWO MASTERS:**  
**FOR EITHER HE WILL HATE THE ONE,**  
**AND LOVE THE OTHER; OR ELSE HE WILL HOLD TO THE ONE,**  
**AND DESPISE THE OTHER.**

**YE CANNOT SERVE GOD AND MAMMON.**

**Therefore (BECAUSE YOU CANNOT SERVE BOTH MAMMON AND GOD),**

**I say unto you, TAKE NO THOUGHT FOR YOUR LIFE,**  
**WHAT YE SHALL EAT, OR WHAT YE SHALL DRINK;**  
**NOR YET FOR YOUR BODY, WHAT YE SHALL PUT ON.**

**IS NOT THE LIFE MORE THAN MEAT, AND THE BODY THAN RAIMENT?**

**BEHOLD THE FOWLS OF THE AIR: FOR THEY SOW NOT, NEITHER DO THEY**  
**REAP,**  
**NOR GATHER INTO BARNES;**  
**YET YOUR HEAVENLY FATHER FEEDETH THEM.**

**ARE YE NOT MUCH BETTER THAN THEY?**

**(Matthew 6:24-26)**

Please read very carefully what Christ commanded IN THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT, A SERMON OF HOW TO GET SAVED. He says you cannot serve both GOD AND MAMMON. The word “cannot” means YOU ARE NOT ABLE TO DO IT. You will either serve one, or you will serve the other. The call of God is such an urgent call that the world and the spirit of mammon that controls it has to be left behind. The word “mammon” is ‘mammonas’ and it means **CONFIDENCE IN MONEY, A SPIRIT OF WEALTH.** It is the spirit behind the LOVE OF MONEY. Jesus is bluntly saying here that WE CANNOT SERVE THE CONCEPT OF

CAREERS AND RICHES AND SERVE THAT AND SERVE GOD ALSO. WE HAVE TO MAKE A CHOICE. We must decide WHICH WE WANT MORE.

This is confirmed by the rich young ruler. He had within his heart the **SPIRIT OF MAMMON, AN EVIL SPIRIT, AN UNRIGHTEOUS SPIRIT.** Jesus even referred to it as UNRIGHTEOUS MAMMON. This spirit of mammon drives the world, and drives Babylon to utter ruin. This is a warning that all Christians ought to take heed of. Jesus then declares very bluntly, so that no one could misinterpret Him, that **WE ARE TO LEAVE IT ALL BEHIND, AND TRUST GOD TO PROVIDE FOR US WHILE WE WALK THE NARROW WAY. HE SAYS THAT WE ARE NOT TO TAKE ANY THOUGHT ABOUT FOOD, CLOTHING, CAREER, AND SHELTER.** God will provide it all. He does not say how or where, He only says **GOD WILL SEE TO IT THAT YOU WILL HAVE THE BASIC NECESSITIES OF LIFE.**

So Jesus gives us a confirmation that He means exactly what He says. He says to LEAVE THE WORLD BEHIND, FOLLOW HIM THROUGH CALVARY AND BEYOND, AND THAT GOD WILL PROVIDE FOR ALL YOUR NEEDS. God does not tell us how. He does tell us what He will do to accomplish it, or who He will use. He only says HE WILL. How many would trust that? Would you? Do you think God is as good as His word? Now we have come to another reason why the vast majority of Christians did not enter heaven: **THEY WOULD NOT TRUST GOD, THEY WOULD NOT LEAVE THE WORLD.** They wanted heaven, Christ, prosperity and all of the good things of life. Jesus categorically states

### **YOU CANNOT SERVE BOTH GOD AND MAMMON.**

If you cannot serve them both, then you must make a decision. It is this decision that is so agonizing to make. I can tell you I made it, and I trusted God, and God provided everything to fill the needs. His word can be trusted.

***“Therefore (BECAUSE GOD CAN AND WILL PROVIDE FOR YOU)  
take NO THOUGHT, SAYING, WHAT SHALL WE EAT? OR, WHAT SHALL WE  
DRINK? OR WHEREWITHAL SHALL WE BE CLOTHED?***

***(FOR AFTER ALL THESE THINGS DO THE GENTILES SEEK) FOR  
YOUR HEAVENLY FATHER KNOWETH THAT YE HAVE NEED OF ALL THESE  
THINGS.***

***BUT SEEK YE FIRST THE KINGDOM OF GOD,***

***AND HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS (AGAPE LOVE);***

***AND ALL THESE THINGS SHALL BE ADDED UNTO YOU.”***

***(Matthew 6:31-33)***

Can we mistake what is being said here? GOD WILL SUPPLY YOUR EVERY NEED. YOUR EVERY REAL REQUIREMENT WILL BE MET IF YOU ARE IN TRUTH SEEKING FOR THE LORD. If you are not in truth seeking, you will starve to death. Nor does it mean that you do not work. It simply means that **YOU RE-PRIORITIZE EVERYTHING OVER THE**

**SEARCH FOR JESUS CHRIST, AND HE WILL SEE TO IT THAT YOU SURVIVE.** This is not an invitation to idleness; this is an invitation to work harder than you ever worked in your life. Does Jesus mean what He says? Is that why He says we are to **SEEK THE KINGDOM FIRST, ABOVE ALL OTHER THINGS?** How does that fit into your personal life?

We cannot deny that Jesus said these things. We can only attempt to claim He did not mean it. But what if He did? **What if AGAPE LOVE IS SO WELL HIDDEN THAT IT REQUIRES AN ALL OUT SEARCH?** What if this search is so extensive and so difficult that it requires ALL OF YOUR TIME, EFFORT AND BEING? Obviously the “many” did not think Jesus meant any of this, nor the non-overcomers, nor the many who followed after the false teachers, because they most certainly read about it. If you read something such as the Sermon on the Mount, and you preach from it, then WHY WAS IT NOT OBEYED? There is only one answer: THEY ALL CLAIMED IT DID NOT APPLY TO THEM. They said, “If Jesus tells me to, I will”. “If the Lord so MOVES ME TO, then I will.”

It would appear then, from all of this, that there is a CONSIDERABLE COST INVOLVED. A cost of EVERYTHING WE HAVE, EVERYTHING WE ARE, EVERYTHING WE HOPED TO BE. The cost is high, in fact so high that Jesus said only THE FEW WERE WILLING TO PAY THE PRICE.

*“For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first,*

***AND COUNTETH THE COST,***

***WHETHER HE HAVE SUFFICIENT TO FINISH IT?***

***Lest haply, AFTER HE HATH LAID THE FOUNDATION,  
AND IS NOT ABLE TO FINISH IT,  
ALL THAT BEHOLD IT BEGIN TO MOCK HIM.***

***SAYING, THIS MAN BEGAN TO BUILD,  
AND WAS NOT ABLE TO FINISH.”***

***(Luke 14:28-30)***

This remark of Christ came right after He said we had to BEAR OUR CROSS. There is, therefore, according to the mind of Christ, A HEAVY COST INVOLVED, AND IF WE BE INTELLIGENT, WE HAD BETTER SIT DOWN AND COUNT THAT COST. Notice how He says that we FINISH THE FOUNDATION, BUT ARE NOT ABLE TO BUILD THE REST OF IT. This has a far deeper meaning than we suspect. THE FOUNDATION IS THE HISTORICAL CHRIST. HE IS THE OUTER COURT CHRIST. They could not, however, go on to FINISH THE TOWER ITSELF. THE COST WAS TOO GREAT. They refused the strait gate and narrow way. THEY COULD NOT DO IT. They fell away into ruin.

*“Or what King, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first,  
and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him  
that cometh against him with twenty thousand?”*

*Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an  
embassage, and desireth conditions of peace.*

**SO LIKEWISE,  
WHOSOEVER HE BE OF YOU THAT FORSAKETH NOT  
ALL THAT HE HATH,  
HE CANNOT BE MY DISCIPLE.”  
(Luke 14:31-33)**

Do you suppose that all of this is simply idle chitchat from Jesus? Just a way to pass the time of day, a way to hear Himself speak? Anyone who examines the life of Christ will find out He was one of FEW WORDS. The words that He chose, He chose carefully, deliberately, for **THEY WERE THE WORDS OF ALMIGHTY GOD.** So then, we must say that the WORD OF GOD claims there is a **COST, A HEAVY COST, AND FEW WOULD PAY THE PRICE.**

How anyone could read all of this and claim that all we need to do is make a simple decision for Jesus and continue in the world is beyond imagination. One would have to be under a complete deception to not **SEE THE VERY OBVIOUS CONTRAST.** We are then to shift our priorities **IN TOTAL,** we are to **LEAVE THE WORLD BEHIND US, WE ARE TO ENTER IN TO THE INNER COURT AND LEAVE THE CARES OF THIS WORLD BEHIND US.** If we will, God promises support and power over to you. It is part of the supernatural power of God to PULL YOU THROUGH THE NARROW WAY. You cannot do it by yourself, YOU HAVE TO TRUST GOD.

We are being told then that the WAY OF THE LORD IS NOT A HALF HEARTED WAY. It is so intense, so difficult, that we must not have extra BAGGAGE. The word strait, as you know, means NARROW BECAUSE OF OBSTACLES. It is so narrow you just barely squeeze through it, and that means THERE CAN BE NO EXTRA BAGGAGE WHATEVER. We will learn as we continue this study that indeed, the Lord strips one TOTALLY NAKED. There is then a great cost to obtain AGAPE LOVE, BUT THAT, WHEN FINALLY BESTOWED IS FREE!

***“And ye shall SEEK ME, AND FIND ME,***

***WHEN (THE HUGE CONDITIONAL WHEN)***

***YE SHALL SEARCH FOR ME WITH ALL YOUR HEART.”***

***(Jeremiah 29:13)***

Here we have a total verification of what Jesus Himself said. You can seek the Lord, and you can seek to enter in, but you will not be able, for it is a conditional seeking. THE SEEKING THAT FINDS THE LORD IS **A SEARCH WITH THE WHOLE HEART, WITH NOTHING HELD BACK, A TOTAL COMMITMENT.** If you refuse for whatever reason you offer up, YOU WILL NOT FIND HIM. A whole heart search for the Lord is exactly that. It does not give you time for

ANYTHING ELSE. The entire, whole CONSCIOUS MIND, SOUL, HEART AND WILL must be tied up in this search for the Lord. Notice that the WHOLE HEARTED SEARCH COMES BEFORE THE FINDING. The word 'all' means EVERY PART OF YOUR CONSCIOUS HEART.

*“Blessed are they that KEEP HIS TESTIMONIES (OBEDIENCE),  
AND (ALSO)*

*THAT SEEK HIM WITH A WHOLE HEART.”*  
(Psalm 119:2)

We find another reference to BEING OBEDIENT, OF KEEPING THE SAYINGS OF JESUS. That is the FIRST OF TWO REQUIREMENTS. The second requirement is that WE SEEK THE LORD WITH ALL OF OUR HEART. These are the ones who will meet the Lord, those that KISS THE SON. There is no question that the command of the Lord is to SEEK OUT THE SON OF GOD. THAT WE ARE TO SEEK OUT AND FIND HIS FACE, TO BEHOLD HIM, TO KNOW HIM, AND TO KNOW WHAT HE REQUIRES OF US. There are several words used in the following verses for the word “seek”. They are ‘darash’ which means **TO MAKE INQUIRY, INQUISITION, TO QUESTION, TO REQUIRE, TO SEARCH FOR, OR SEARCH OUT, TO SEEK OUT, OR DILIGENCE**. The second is ‘baqash’ which means **TO STRIVE AFTER, BESEECH, DESIRE GREATLY, TO INQUIRE, TO SEARCH OUT, DILIGENT SEARCH**. The next is ‘shachar’ which means **TO BE UP EARLY, TO RISE EARLY IN DILIGENT SEARCH, TO SEARCH IN EARNESTNESS**. All of them imply a GREAT HUNGER AND THIRST FOR THE THINGS OF GOD, A WHOLE HEARTED APPLICATION, WITH NOTHING HELD BACK, AND NOTHING TO IMPEDE.

*“And they THAT KNOW THY NAME*

*WILL PUT THEIR TRUST IN THEE:  
FOR THOU, LORD,  
HAST NOT FORSAKEN THEM THAT  
SEEK THEE.”*  
(Psalm 9:10)

*“The MEEK SHALL EAT AND BE SATISFIED:  
THEY SHALL PRAISE THE LORD  
THAT SEEK HIM:  
YOUR HEART SHALL LIVE FOREVER.”*  
(Psalm 22:26)

*“One thing have I DESIRED OF THE LORD,  
THAT I WILL SEEK AFTER;*

*THAT I MAY DWELL IN THE HOUSE OF THE LORD  
ALL THE DAYS OF MY LIFE,  
TO BEHOLD THE BEAUTY OF THE LORD,  
AND TO INQUIRE IN HIS TEMPLE.”*

*(Psalm 27:4)*

This verse requires comment. Modern theology denies that we may behold the Lord, but there are many verses of Scripture that prove totally we ARE TO BEHOLD HIM. The beauty of the Lord is His ESSENCE, HIS INNER BEING, HIS AGAPE LOVE. That we are not only to behold, we are to have given to us. Have you beheld the GLORY AND THE BEAUTY OF THE LORD?

*“When THOU SAYEST, SEEK YE MY FACE;  
MY HEART SAID UNTO THEE,  
THY FACE, LORD, WILL I SEEK.”*

*(Psalm 27:8)*

*“Let all those that SEEK THEE REJOICE AND BE GLAD IN THEE:  
LET SUCH AS LOVE THY SALVATION SAY CONTINUALLY,  
THE LORD BE MAGNIFIED.”*

*(Psalm 40:16)*

*“O GOD, THOU ART MY GOD;  
EARLY WILL I SEEK THEE;  
MY SOUL THIRSTETH FOR THEE,  
MY FLESH LONGETH FOR THEE IN A DRY AND THIRSTY LAND,  
WHERE NO WATER IS.”*

*(Psalm 63:1)*

The term early means that we rise up and give diligent search. Notice that the soul is in a state of THIRST, FOR IT IS A DRY AND THIRSTY LAND, IN WHICH THERE IS NO WATER. It is a reference to planet earth, and those that dwell upon it. One of the many code words for AGAPE LOVE IS WATER. There is no agape love on the earth; it is a dry and thirsty land.

*“The HUMBLE SHALL SEE THIS,  
AND BE GLAD:  
AND YOUR HEART SHALL LIVE  
THAT SEEK GOD.”*

*(Psalm 69:32)*



*“Glory ye in his holy name:  
LET THE HEART OF THEM REJOICE  
THAT SEEK THE LORD.*

*SEEK THE LORD, AND HIS STRENGTH:  
SEEK HIS FACE EVERMORE.”  
(Psalm 105:3-4)*

*“Blessed are they that KEEP HIS TESTIMONIES,  
AND THAT SEEK HIM WITH THE WHOLE HEART.”  
(Psalm 119:2)*

*“And I will WALK AT LIBERTY:  
FOR I SEEK THY PRECEPTS.”  
(Psalm 119:45)*

Do you remember when Christ made the comment that if we would CONTINUE in His word (doctrine) that we would be set free? This is the companion verse to that. If we find the truth of AGAPE LOVE, AND ACCEPT IT, AND HAVE IT BESTOWED UPON US, we are then FREE, AND WE WALK IN LIBERTY. But notice who will walk in liberty? ONLY THOSE WHO SEEK.

*“SALVATION IS FAR FROM THE WICKED:  
FOR THEY SEEK NOT THY STATUTES.”  
(Psalm 119:155)*

This is what I call a NEGATIVE CONFIRMATION VERSE. It states plainly that those WHO REFUSE TO SEEK AFTER THE LORD, WILL NOT BE SAVED. Remember that the “many” are sent away as those that do iniquity or evil. They are classified as WICKED PEOPLE by the Lord. It is not a reference to their moral or ethical behavior; it is a reference to their lack of REGENERATION IN AGAPE LOVE.

*“Therefore came I FORTH TO MEET THEE,  
DILIGENTLY TO SEEK THY FACE,  
AND I HAVE FOUND THEE.”  
(Proverbs 7:15)*

You will find many references in which the Lord states that those that **SEEK THE LORD SHALL ALSO FIND THE LORD**. In other words, there is a **POSITIVE EVIDENCE AND A PROOF THAT YOU HAVE FOUND THE LORD**. It is not FAITH. It is not BELIEF. It has nothing to do with FAITH OR BELIEF. The many had great faith and great belief. The believers had faith and belief, were even baptized in the Holy Spirit and yet IF THEY HAD NOT AGAPE LOVE, it would profit them nothing. THERE IS AN EVIDENCE, A PROOF.

**“I LOVE THEM THAT LOVE ME;  
AND THOSE THAT SEEK ME EARLY  
SHALL FIND ME.”**  
(Proverbs 8:17)

**“Evil men understand NOT JUDGMENT (the narrow way):  
BUT THEY THAT SEEK THE LORD  
UNDERSTAND ALL THINGS.”**  
(Proverbs 28:5)

**“SEEK YE OUT THE BOOK OF THE LORD,  
AND READ:  
NO ONE OF THESE SHALL FAIL...”**  
(Isaiah 34:16)

**“HEARKEN TO ME,  
YE THAT FOLLOW AFTER RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
YE THAT SEEK THE LORD:  
LOOK UNTO THE ROCK WHENCE YE ARE HEWN,  
AND TO THE HOLE OF THE PIT WHENCE YE ARE DIGGED.”**  
(Isaiah 51:1)

**“SEEK YE THE LORD WHILE HE MAY BE FOUND,  
CALL YE UPON HIM WHILE HE IS NEAR:  
  
LET THE WICKED FORSAKE HIS WAY,  
AND THE UNRIGHTEOUS MAN HIS THOUGHTS:  
AND LET HIM RETURN UNTO THE LORD,  
AND HE WILL HAVE MERCY UPON HIM;  
AND TO OUR GOD FOR HE WILL ABUNDANTLY PARDON.”**  
(Isaiah 55:6-7)

**“I will go and RETURN TO MY PLACE,**

**TILL THEY ACKNOWLEDGE THEIR OFFENCE,  
AND SEEK MY FACE:  
IN THEIR AFFLICTION THEY WILL SEEK ME EARLY.”**  
(Hosea 5:15)

This is what is known as a double reference verse. It has two meanings, two applications. It is for Israel, it is also for the believer. Jesus died upon Calvary and was resurrected and now is **HIDDEN IN HEAVEN. THE DOOR OF HEAVEN IS SHUT.** IT CANNOT BE SEEN. Notice what it says. HE WILL REMAIN IN HEAVEN UNTIL THERE IS AN ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF THEIR OFFENCE. What is the offence of man? THE OFFENCE OF MAN **IS HIS LACK OF AGAPE LOVE.** BECAUSE HE DOES NOT AGAPE LOVE, HE DOES NOT LOVE AS GOD COMMANDS. We must then FIRST OF ALL, COME TO A RECOGNITION THAT WE DO NOT LOVE AS WE OUGHT. We are then to **SEEK THE LORD WITH A WHOLE HEART, WE ARE TO SEEK HIS FACE, AND TRY TO UNRAVEL THE MYSTERY OF THE GODHEAD.**

It says that IN THEIR AFFLICTION (which we will undergo if we walk the narrow way) **WE WILL SEEK THE LORD WITH ALL DILIGENCE.** He said that HE WOULD NOT COME UNTIL THE **INNER HEART ACKNOWLEDGED THE TRUTH.** Then will He come. Then will He grant the gift of agape love. Always you will find a TOTAL HARMONY OF SCRIPTURE.

**“Sow to yourselves in RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
REAP IN MERCY; BREAK UP YOUR FALLOW GROUND:  
FOR IT IS TIME TO SEEK THE LORD,  
TILL HE COME AND REIGN RIGHTEOUSNESS UPON  
YOU.”**  
(Hosea 10:12)

This is a cry of the Lord to BEGIN THE SLOW PROCESS OF PLOWING UP OUR STONY HEARTS, TO ACKNOWLEDGE OUR LACK, OUR NEED, AND THEN TO TURN TO THE LORD WITH OUR WHOLE HEARTS AND BEGIN THE LONG HARD SEARCH TO FIND HIM. Notice it says that we are **TO SEEK THE LORD UNTIL HE COMES. We do not SURRENDER IN OUR BATTLE.**

There is a doctrine in some of the fundamentalist churches, and in the Pentecostal type churches called the **DOCTRINE OF SURRENDER.** The word “surrender” is defined in Webster’s as “...to GIVE UP COMPLETELY...TO GIVE UP TO THE POWER OF ANOTHER.” It means to QUIT, TO STOP, TO LAY DOWN YOUR ARMS, TO QUIT THE BATTLE YOU ARE IN. In short, to STOP THE FIGHT. It might interest you to know that the word “surrender” is not found in the Bible. It is an **ALIEN TERM TO THE MINDSET OF GOD.**

The doctrine of surrender as used in the Church is that we are to QUIT FIGHTING CHRIST, LET GO, LET CHRIST. It is an incorrect DOCTRINE, AND IT COMES FROM A TOTAL MISUNDERSTANDING AND REDEFINING OF WHAT THE PROCESS OF SALVATION

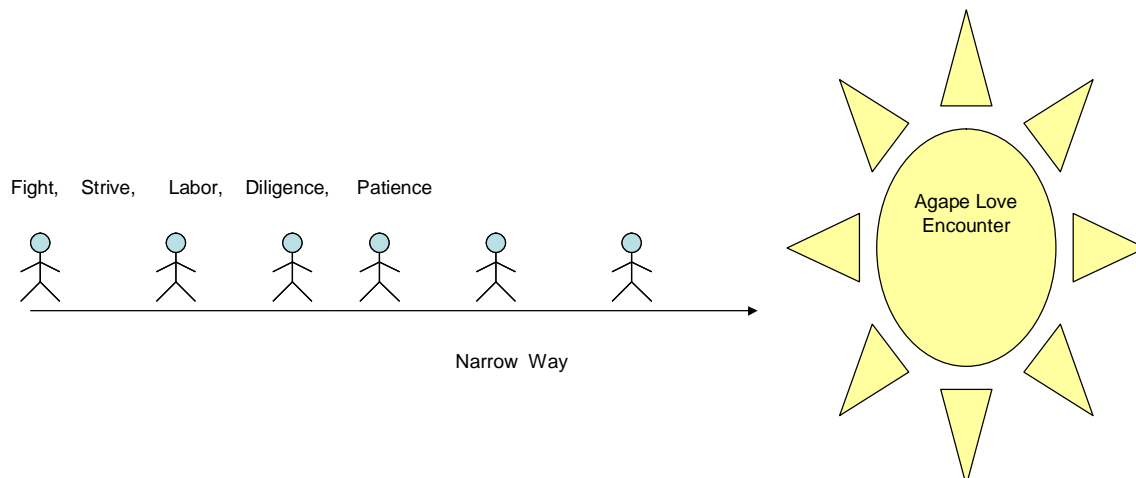
IS. The process of the narrow way is a process of **SEEKING, STRIVING AND SEARCHING WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART THE FACE OF THE LORD**. I have shown you, and will show you many more verses that PROVE you are **TO NEVER GIVE UP THE FIGHT UNTIL THE LORD COMES TO YOU**.

Please read that again. **YOU ARE TO NEVER GIVE UP THE FIGHT, WE ARE TO NEVER QUIT SEEKING, SEARCHING, STRIVING UNTIL THE LORD COMES TO YOU**. That is why the word 'surrender' is not in the bible. You must understand that SURRENDER IS SOMETHING THAT ONLY YOU CAN DO. It is something that ONLY YOU CAN DECIDE. IT IS AN ACT OF YOUR WILL, AN ACT OF YOUR CHOICE. True and authentic REGENERATION is something that GOD DOES TO YOU WHEN HE COMES TO YOU. It is not something YOU DECIDE. IT IS SOMETHING HE DECIDES. There is no such thing as **SURRENDER AS IT IS PRESENTLY TAUGHT**. It is, in fact, the **SATANIC COUNTERFEIT OF REGENERATION for the UNWARY**.

The believer is to FIGHT, STRIVE, LABOR, SEEK AND SEARCH WITH ALL OF HIS HEART UNTIL CHRIST COMES. When He comes, HE PRESENTS THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE, THE TRUTH OF THE NEW COVENANT. He has to, because agape love is hidden from man, and is beyond his knowledge of comprehension. The New Covenant, which is a new heart of agape love, is also beyond his comprehension. In order to enter it, Christ has to show the believer what it means, **so that THE TWO ARE IN AGREEMENT, AND THE TWO CAN WALK TOGETHER**. There cannot be union any other way.

Someone is going to say the word 'yield' IS in the bible. Are you saying we are not to YIELD TO THE LORD? Not at all. WHEN THE LORD FINALLY COMES, AND SHOWS YOU WHAT THE NEW COVENANT IS, **THEN YOU EITHER YIELD TO IT, OR REJECT IT**. After the encounter with Christ, AFTER regeneration the believer IS TO YIELD TO CHRIST IN ALL THINGS. That is part of the purging process and the holiness walk process. That walk will bring him into full maturity before the Lord.

To surrender prior to the Lord coming to visit you is deadly, for it is to **GIVE UP WHILE ON THE NARROW WAY**. It is to give up and surrender to **SATAN AND HIS DEMONS**. It is to **DRAW BACK TO PERDITION**. The surrender doctrine is an offshoot of the **INSTANT FAITH, INSTANT SALVATION DOCTRINE**. It is based upon the fact that UNION WITH CHRIST OCCURRED AT THE BEGINNING, AT CONVERSION. Because you are already in union with Him, you are to quit fighting and just simply 'give up, let go, and let Christ'. In reality, Christ is not in union with them, and so when they stop the fight they quit the battle altogether. They remain prisoners of war, deep behind enemy lines, with no chance of survival.



In the illustration you will see that the FIGHT, LABOR, STRIVING AND SEEKING is to continue right to the **TIME OF THE ENCOUNTER**. From that point on, a believer is to **YIELD TO CHRIST IN ALL ASPECTS, WHICH MEANS TO YIELD TO AGAPE LOVE**.

I will present a MULTITUDE of verses to prove categorically that CHRIST WILL COME TO YOU WHEN HE IS READY, AND NOT WHEN YOU THINK YOU ARE READY. Because He is the only one that can read your heart (that excludes you), then ONLY HE KNOWS WHEN THE JOB OF THE NARROW WAY HAS BEEN COMPLETED.

***“For thus saith the Lord unto THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL,  
SEEK YE ME, AND YE SHALL LIVE.”***

***(Amos 5:4)***

***“SEEK YE THE LORD, ALL YE MEEK OF THE EARTH,  
WHICH HAVE WROUGHT HIS JUDGMENT;  
SEEK RIGHTEOUSNESS, SEEK MEEKNESS:  
IT MAY BE YE SHALL BE HID IN THE DAY OF THE LORD’S ANGER.”***

***(Zephaniah 2:3)***

***“BEHOLD, I WILL SEND MY MESSENGER,  
AND HE SHALL PREPARE THE WAY BEFORE ME:  
AND THE LORD, WHOM YE SEEK,  
SHALL SUDDENLY COME TO HIS TEMPLE,  
EVEN THE MESSENGER OF THE COVENANT,  
WHOM YE DELIGHT IN:  
BEHOLD, HE SHALL COME, SAITH THE LORD OF HOSTS.”***

***(Malachi 3:1)***

This verse is always attributed to the second advent of the Lord Jesus Christ, but it is also a double reference verse that applies to the process of salvation. The messenger is the HOLY SPIRIT, who through the process of convicting of sin, righteousness and judgment prepares the **WAY FOR THE LORD**. The Lord, whom you are seeking with all of your heart, **SHALL SUDDENLY COME TO HIS TEMPLE, WHICH IS YOUR INNER HEART OF HEARTS**. Suddenly and without warning HE IS THERE. Jesus Christ is the messenger of the **NEW COVENANT**, which He presents to the believer via the agape love revelation.

***“And hath made of one blood ALL NATIONS OF MEN  
FOR TO DWELL ON ALL THE FACE OF THE EARTH,  
AND HATH DETERMINED THE TIMES BEFORE APPOINTED,  
AND THE BOUNDS OF THEIR HABITATION;***

**THAT THEY SHOULD SEEK THE LORD,**  
**IF HAPLY THEY MIGHT FEEL AFTER HIM,**  
**AND FIND HIM,**  
**THOUGH HE BE NOT FAR FROM EVERY ONE OF US.”**  
(Acts 17:26-27)

**“But if, WHILE**  
**WE SEEK**  
**TO BE JUSTIFIED BY CHRIST,**  
**WE OURSELVES ALSO ARE FOUND SINNERS,**  
**IS THEREFORE CHRIST THE MINISTER OF SIN? GOD FORBID.**  
(Galatians 2:17)

**“Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? BY TAKING HEED THERETO**  
**ACCORDING TO THY WORD.**  
**WITH MY**  
**WHOLE HEART**  
**HAVE I SOUGHT THEE:**  
**O LET ME NOT WANDER FROM THY COMMANDMENTS.”**  
(Psalm 119:9-10)

What can we say then? How could anyone misinterpret what is so boldly and plainly stated? The word **SEEK MEANS AN INTENSIVE SEARCH, CONDUCTED OVER A LONG PERIOD OF TIME.** Has modern Christianity SUBSTITUTED THE WORDS FAITH AND BELIEF FOR THE WORD SEEK? Has faith itself BECOME THE SEEKING? Do we simply ignore the commands of God and sit in our chairs, close our eyes and say, “I have faith” or “I believe?” Does the faith gospel of today replace **SEEKING, STRIVING, SEARCHING, KNOWING, REVELATION, MANIFESTATION, SEEING, AND ALL THE REST?** Is that why the “many” perish? How can all of this be overlooked? There is a perfect harmony between the Old and New Testaments. God does not change; His doctrines do not change. Christ came and SHOWED TO US THE WAY, AND **IF WE REFUSE THE WAY, WE SHALL NEVER SEE HEAVEN.**

**“ASK, and it shall be GIVEN YOU;**  
**SEEK, and ye SHALL FIND;**  
**KNOCK, and it SHALL BE OPENED unto you:**  
**For every one that ASKETH RECEIVETH;**  
**AND HE THAT SEEKETH FINDETH;**

**AND TO HIM THAT KNOCKETH IT SHALL BE OPENED.”**

**(Matthew 7:7-8)**

Modern Christians think that if they ask of God, they automatically receive it. The problem with that is that THE WORDS DON'T MEAN WHAT YOU THINK THEY MEAN. There are two major things wrong with modern theology:

**1. They put the cart before the horse, and ALWAYS CLAIM A SALVATION FIRST, AND ALWAYS PLACE WHATEVER WALK THERE IS SECOND, WHICH DIAMETRICALLY OPPOSES CHRIST.**

**2. ALL OF THE HUGE CONDITIONAL QUALIFIERS ARE LEFT OFF, AND THEY NEVER DO ACCEPT ANY NEGATIVE DEFINITIONS OF THE WORDS USED.**

I want you to comprehend something here that is obvious, but again, it is the obvious that trip us up, we overlook it. YOU ASK FIRST, YOU RECEIVE SECOND. YOU SEEK FIRST, YOU FIND SECOND. YOU KNOCK FIRST; THE DOOR IS OPENED SECOND. DO NOT PUT THE CART BEFORE THE HORSE:

**DO NOT CLAIM THE GIFT FIRST**

**DO NOT CLAIM THE FINDING FIRST**

**DO NOT CLAIM THE OPEN DOOR FIRST.**

To do so is to be in **TOTAL OPPOSITION TO THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**. You may say this is obvious, but modern Christian theology CLAIMS A UNION, A FINDING, A SALVATION, A REGENERATION **AT THE VERY BEGINNING, AT THE MOMENT OF CONVERSION, AND THE INSTANT OF SINCERE “DECISION”**. It is to claim eternal life and union with Jesus Christ BEFORE you have entered the strait gate and walked the narrow way. It is to claim an open door, without you doing any knocking. It is to claim a finding before you have done any seeking.

The sequence is **ALWAYS CONDITIONAL**. THE RECEIVING IS CONDITIONAL UPON THE ASKING. THE FINDING IS CONDITIONAL UPON THE SEEKING. THE OPEN DOOR IS CONDITIONAL UPON THE KNOCKING. The “many” claimed a salvation, a regeneration and a union they did not possess, because they HAD NOT ASKED, THEY DID NOT SEEK DILIGENTLY, NOR DID THEY KNOCK. Their theology told them they did not have to; it would be a ‘work’ and a violation of grace to ever do such a thing.

The words involved here do not mean what you think they mean. They carry with them an urgency unknown in American life, but it soon will be as God destroys this nation. It should also be pointed out that **THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS TO THE RULES. ZERO. ALL MUST COME IN THE SAME WAY**. To say, “My salvation was not like that”, is to admit your salvation does not adhere to **SOUND BIBLICAL DOCTRINE**. If it does not, you are not saved,

for the Word of God is very explicit as to what salvation is, and exactly what happens to the searching soul.

The word “ask” is ‘aiteo’ and it means **TO BEG, TO CRAVE, TO CALL OUT FOR, TO DESIRE MUCH**. It does not mean at all what the word “ask” does in our modern English. It means to **DESIRE WITH THE WHOLE HEART, TO BEG GOD, TO CRAVE AFTER GOD, TO DESIRE GOD WITH ALL THE HEART, SOUL AND MIND**. You DO NOT simply walk up to Christ and ask for salvation. Scripture proves you must BEG, CRAVE AND DESIRE SALVATION AND THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD ABOVE EVERYTHING ELSE IN LIFE. If you will not stir yourself up to that fever pitch, then according to the Word, you will not be saved. The word “ask” then is a **PRECONDITION TO THE GRANTING OF AGAPE LOVE**.

The word “seek” is ‘zeto’ which means **TO DESIRE, TO INQUIRE AFTER, TO ENDEAVOR, TO REQUIRE**. Both words ask and seek give the implication of a SEVERE NEED, A GREAT DESIRE TO FIND SOMETHING. THEY IMPLY A VERY DILIGENT AND LONG SEARCH FOR “TRUTH”. It is another proof that AGAPE LOVE IS WELL HIDDEN, A SECRET, AND ONLY THE FEW WILLING TO PAY THE PRICE WILL EVER FIND IT.

The word “knock” is ‘krouo’ and it means **TO RAP, TO KNOCK CONSTANTLY, TO KNOCK OR RAP WITHOUT CEASING**. It implies a strong desire to be let in, and the knocker will not leave the door until the owner of the house answers. It implies a **TENACITY OF FAITH, A PERSISTENCE, A PERSEVERANCE**. Notice that all of this BEGGING, CRAVING, SEARCHING AND SEEKING WITH A WHOLE HEART **PRECEDE** THE FINDING!

Jesus said the search for Him had to be, must be **THE TOP PRIORITY OF HUMAN LIFE, ABOVE ALL ELSE, ABOVE EVERYTHING WHATEVER**. This only goes to verify that Christ was not fooling around; He meant what He said. Implied here is an ATTITUDE OF MIND, HEART AND WILL THAT WE WOULD SAY BORDERS ON FANATICISM. However, if you wish to be a Doctor, do you go through an intense period of learning first to prove your worth? IS THE DEGREE AWARDED BEFORE THE TRIAL OR AFTER IT? Do you not have to prove yourself first before the board will issue you your certificate of proficiency? What makes you think God is going to allow you into heaven without approval? And if God requires approval, which is easily proved, then how does He test us? **ENTER THE NARROW WAY AND FIND OUT**.

The words ask, seek and knock then imply a desire to find the truth above all other things in life, and by implication that mean an **INTENSE and PROLONGED STRUGGLE, WHICH REQUIRES A CONTINUOUS SEEKING, A CONTINUOUS KNOCKING OVER A SUBSTANTIAL PERIOD OF TIME**. To say otherwise is to utterly contradict Christ, who is attempting to show us the way. All of this utterly opposes anything INSTANT, IMMEDIATE, FAST OR A CASUAL APPROACH TO THE LORD.

**“STRIVE TO ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:  
FOR MANY,  
I SAY UNTO YOU,  
WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, AND SHALL NOT BE ABLE.”**



The word “strive” is ‘agonizomai’ and it means **TO STRUGGLE, TO FIGHT, TO AGONIZE, TO CONTEND WITH AN ADVERSARY, TO LABOR FERVENTLY**. This, to enter the strait gate, let alone walk the narrow way. Jesus is warning you that the word STRIVE MEANS WHAT IT SAYS, and that anyone who thinks he can casually walk up to the Lord and ask to be saved is a fool. **A CASUAL APPROACH TO THE KING IS NOT ACCEPTED**. This word is a QUALIFIER TO ASK, SEEK AND KNOCK. It utterly verifies everything we have found to date. When you couple the words ask, seek, knock, and strive, a portrait begins to emerge that is **UTTERLY OPPOSITE OF MODERN CHRISTIAN SALVATION THEOLOGY**.

Notice that Jesus says the VAST MAJORITY WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, AND NOT BE ABLE. Why not? The word seek is contrasted here to the word strive. Those that only mildly seek will not enter in. Those that STRIVE WILL ENTER IN. In context, the word seek would describe the more casual seeker, while the word strive describes the **ONE WITH A WHOLE HEART AFTER GOD**. Jesus is informing us THAT THERE IS GOING TO BE A VERY SEVERE STRUGGLE AGAINST OUR ADVERSARY (SATAN AND SELF) INVOLVED. THERE IS GOING TO BE MENTAL AGONY, ANGUISH, PRESSURE AND A BATTLE TO THE DEATH. There is going to be real warfare involved. The many seek; the few strive. The difference is heaven or hell. YOU DECIDE.

The word “able” is ‘ischuo’ and it means **TO HAVE FORCE ENOUGH, TO PREVAIL IN BATTLE, TO BE OF ENOUGH STRENGTH, TO BE A VICTOR**. The many who are sent away simply did not have the **MENTAL FORTITUDE TO PREVAIL OVER SELF AND SATAN**. They refused to stir themselves up the degree necessary to lay hold of eternal life. I believe their refusal was based upon their acceptance of a false theology that told them all of this was a violation of faith and grace.

They were not able to overcome the barriers that self and Satan had erected against God. They were not able to reconcile themselves to God, even though He was totally reconciled to them. Salvation, Scripture proves, is **A TWO WAY OPERATION, A TWO WAY STREET, GOD DOES HIS PART, BUT YOU MUST DO YOURS**. One must respond to the call in the manner the Bible says you are to respond. A refusal to do so is a refusal of the call, and a refusal of Jesus Christ. The consequences are indeed more severe than anyone on earth can imagine. **STIR THYSELF UP, AWAKE O SLEEPING SOUL, ARISE FROM YOUR SLUMBER**.

**“LABOUR NOT for the meat which PERISHETH, BUT FOR THAT MEAT WHICH ENDURETH UNTO EVERLASTING LIFE, WHICH THE SON OF MAN SHALL GIVE UNTO YOU: FOR HIM HATH GOD THE FATHER SEALED.”**  
(John 6:27)

Jesus said we are **TO LABOR FOR THE MEAT THAT ENDURES UNTO EVERLASTING LIFE**. There are two key words here: LABOUR and ENDURE. The word “labour” is ‘ergazomai’ which means **TO TOIL, TO WORK FOR, TO BE ENGAGED IN A TASK**. The

root is 'ergon' and it means **EFFORT, TOIL, TO DO, DOING, LABOR, WORK**. The word "endureth" is 'meno' and it means **CONTINUE, ABIDE IN, REMAIN IN, TO STAND STEADFAST IN, TO STAY IN**. The words labor and endure then imply a **CONTINUANCE OVER TIME, OR AN IMPLIED LONG PERIOD, NOT SHORT**. If we combine labor, endure, strive, ask, and knock, we find a perfect harmony.

*"As many as I love, I **REBUKE AND CHASTEN:**  
**BE ZEALOUS THEREFORE, AND REPENT."**  
(Revelation 3:19)*

This is the warning Christ gave to our church age, our churches. They have obviously not undergone the rebuke and chastening of the Lord, because **HE LAYS IT DOWN AS A REQUIREMENT**. He is calling them to become **ZEALOUS**. They are a lost, lukewarm church. They were not cold, or the overt enemies of Christ, nor were they "hot". They were **LUKEWARM**. The word for "lukewarm" is 'chilaros' and it means **TEPID, LUKEWARM**. In the spiritual sense, **NOMINALLY INTERESTED, A PASSING INTEREST, NOT FULL OF ZEAL, NOR COLD, BUT IN THE MIDDLE**. THEY HAVE GREAT WORKS; THEY ARE A SOCIAL CHURCH WITH GREAT SOCIAL WORKS AND PROGRAMS.

Their works are not the works that Christ wants out of them. He wants them to go from **LUKEWARM TO HOT**.

*"I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or **HOT**."  
(Revelation 3:15)*

The word "hot" is 'zestos' and it means **TO BOIL, TO BE CALID, TO BE RED HOT, TO BE FERVENT**. The root of the word is 'zeo' which means **TO GLOW, TO BE ON FIRE FOR, TO BE TOTALLY EARNEST, FERVENT**. In other words Christ is telling them that **IF THEY WANT SALVATION, THEY HAD BETTER BECOME RED HOT ON HIS TRAIL**. They are to be **ZEALOUS AND REPENT**. Modern Christian theology teaches that **REPENTANCE** is simply a change of mind, a change of heart. What they do not tell you is that there are **TWO FORMS OF REPENTANCE; CONSCIOUS MIND, HEART AND WILL, and the INNER CORE HEART AND WILL**. If one is going to change the inner heart, **ONE MUST BECOME HOT, AND ONE MUST BECOME ZEALOUS**.

The word for "zealous" is 'zeloo' and it means **TO COVET EARNESTLY, TO DESIRE, TO BE JEALOUS FOR, TO HAVE GREAT ZEAL, OR TO BE HOT**. Jesus is then very blunt and to the point: **REAL, AUTHENTIC SALVATION, THE FINDING OF AGAPE LOVE, A WHOLE HEART, PURPOSE**. He is then telling us this **IS NOT SOMETHING INSTANT, IMMEDIATE OR SOON**. It is anything but easy; it is very difficult.

*"Blessed are they **WHICH DO HUNGER AND THIRST**  
**AFTER RIGHTEOUSNESS: for they SHALL BE FILLED."***

(Matthew 5:6)

Please notice that the HUNGERING AND THIRSTING ARE A PRECONDITION TO BEING FILLED. You **DO NOT** get filled prior to being hungry; you do not get to drink until after you are thirsty. Again, it is imperative you understand the SEQUENCE, and not put the cart before the horse. The hunger and the thirst **ARE THE CONDITIONS REQUIRED OF THE LORD BEFORE HE WILL EVEN CONSIDER FILLING YOU.** The word for “hunger” is ‘peinao’ which means **TO BE FAMISHED, TO BE STARVED, TO CRAVE FOR FOOD, TO TOIL FOR, TO PINE FOR.** Is that not the meaning of the word ask, strive, labor, be hot, be zealous? Does it not imply a soul that is STARVED AND FAMISHED FOR THE TRUTHS OF GOD?

What will a soul do that is starving to death? ANYTHING IT MUST TO STAY ALIVE! If you do not believe it, go on a fast for a week or two, and see what happens! This is what Christ is telling you in the beatitudes, which are a step by step story of TRUE AND AUTHENTIC REGENERATION, as will be shown you. ONLY WHEN A SOUL GETS INTO THAT CONDITION will it even consider THE OFFER OF **TRUE** SALVATION. It is the condition of an impoverished soul. The word “thirst” is ‘dipsao’, which means **TO THIRST FOR, TO BE PARCHED, TO BE THIRSTY.** The implication is the same as for hunger. **A CONDITION OF NEED, OF DISPARATE WANT.**

Jesus ordered us to take up the cross. The cross was AT CALVARY. You don’t walk to CALVARY, you **BEGIN AT CALVARY.** The STRAIT GATE IS CALVARY. CALVARY IS DEATH. BEYOND DEATH IS HADES; BEYOND HADES IS THE RESURRECTION TO NEW LIFE. What did Jesus say upon the cross? “I THIRST”, He said, and SO WILL YOU. Again the thirst comes before the blessing. Just as Christ was in the ground three days, so will you be in the ground three days, and on the third day you will rise to NEW LIFE, AGAPE LOVE.

Did Jesus mean it or not? Was it a mistake on His part? Idle chatter to wile away the hot hours of the desert? Was He touched by the sun? YOU DECIDE. If He meant it, perhaps He would have said it again, in another place, another time, to be sure people got the drift:

*“In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood*

**AND CRIED, SAYING,  
IF ANY MAN THIRST,  
LET HIM COME UNTO ME,  
AND DRINK.”  
(John 7:37)**

It would appear that Christ meant exactly what He said in the Sermon on the Mount. He did not simply say it, HE CRIED IT OUT, IN A WAIL OF ANGUISH MIXED WITH HOPE. This was it; His ministry was closing. Was it all for naught? Would any respond? Would any REALIZE THE VERY REAL DANGER THEY WERE IN? Would the prospects of eternal ruin register upon their minds and hearts? What man is to thirst for is the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, AND ONLY CHRIST CAN GIVE IT TO HIM. HE MUST COME TO CHRIST IF HE IS TO DRINK FROM THE WELL OF AGAPE LOVE, THE WELL OF SALVATION.

Notice that the CONDITION OF THIRSTING occurs PRIOR TO COMING TO CHRIST. It is an important thing to note, and to remember. ONE WILL NOT IN TRUTH COME TO THE LIVING CHRIST UNTIL ONE DEVELOPS A REAL THIRST, A REAL NEED. The average person never develops the need; they never embark upon this most incredible journey, the journey of the NARROW WAY. You see, this is one of THE QUALIFIERS THAT THE FALSE PROPHETS LEAVE OUT OF THEIR SALVATION MESSAGE. This thirst is not a deep interest in the affairs of God; this is A DISPARATE NEED FROM DEEP, DEEP WITHIN. Again we find a direct reference to an ALL OR NOTHING APPROACH TO FINDING THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE. No salvation is offered to a soul that does not have this condition.

The soul will not come to CHRIST IN TRUTH, until there is a real THIRST FOR TRUTH. The soul will not CALL UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD IN TRUTH, until there is a REAL HUNGER AND A THIRST. A soul will not BEG, CRAVE, CRY OUT FOR TRUTH, until there is a real HUNGER AND THIRST FOR TRUTH. It all fits; it is all perfect in harmony. If you do not believe it, Jesus also uses the NEGATIVE MESSAGE TO PROVE AND CONFIRM HIS POSITIVE COMMANDS TO DO SOMETHING:

***“WOE unto you THAT ARE FULL!  
FOR YE SHALL HUNGER.***

***WOE unto you THAT LAUGH NOW!  
FOR YE SHALL MOURN AND WEEP.”***  
(Luke 6:25)

The word “woe” is ‘ouai’ and it means **GRIEF**. Grief is coming. The word “full” is ‘empilemi’ and it means **TO BE FILLED UP, TO BE SATISFIED, TO BE CONTENT**. In other words, content and satisfied with life as it is. Those people, who sail through life happy and content, are in for a RUDE SHOCK. They never stopped to search out life, to find the meaning behind it all. Had they done so, they would have HAD THEIR SATISFACTION TURNED INTO A CRAVING. THEY WILL HUNGER. It is not a probability, it is an absolute fact: **THEY WILL HUNGER.** The word “laugh” is ‘gelao’ and it means **TO LAUGH, A SIGN OF JOY OR SATISFACTION**. Remember the ANON WITH GREAT JOY CROWD? How Jesus said they had NO ROOT? Their joy will be turned into mourning. When life is over, and they die, the angels of God must and will escort them to the place of torments, for they REFUSED TO COMPLY WITH THE ONLY ENTRANCE TO HEAVEN THERE WAS: THE NARROW WAY. THERE THEY SHALL HUNGER AND MOURN AND WEEP, AND IT WILL BE FOR EVER.

The word for “mourn” is ‘pentheo’ and it means **TO GRIEVE**. The word for “weep” is ‘klaio’ and it means **TO WAIL ALOUD, TO BEWAIL, TO CRY OUT**. It is the cry of the damned who are chained in eternal torment. It is real; I have heard their cries. Do not be deceived, ALL OF THIS IS REAL, HELL IS REAL, AND IT AWAITS EVERYONE WHO IS NOT OBEDIENT TO THE SAYINGS OF JESUS. So now we have a direct contrast:

**ANON WITH GREAT JOY vs. YE SHALL MOURN AND WEEP**

This is in perfect harmony with the parable of the sower, where we contrasted immediate joy and happiness to the good ground people who with PATIENCE produced fruit to perfection. Jesus must have felt this issue of such importance that IF PEOPLE WOULD BUT LISTEN AND UNDERSTAND, THEY COULD NOT MISINTERPRET WHAT HE WAS SAYING. The soul that REFUSES TO SUBMIT TO GOD, THAT REFUSES TO BE BROUGHT DOWN TO REAL JUDGMENT OF THE INNER HEART, THAT REFUSES TO BE BROUGHT DOWN TO THE LEVEL OF A BEGGAR, A PAUPER, to that of MOURNING AND WEEPING AND CRAVING WILL NOT SEE HEAVEN.

Jesus said the same thing when He said that He had not come to save the RIGHTEOUS, but only sinners who would repent. Jesus cannot save the soul of a so-called righteous person. He cannot save the soul of anyone who will not come to a recognition that they are in fact sinners. The so-called righteous here are in reality THE RELIGIOUS. Jesus was dealing with the religious Jews of His day. They refused Him. The “many” were RELIGIOUS CHRISTIANS. They also refused Him. Religious people tend to be self righteous, and that is exactly what the many were, SELF RIGHTEOUS. They had a SURFACE OR CONSCIOUS HEART CONVERSION, but they never allowed the Holy Spirit to work His work on the INNER CORE HEART. Thus they are in reality, WITHOUT REALIZING IT, HYPOCRITES, STAGE ACTORS, PLAYING A ROLE, PRETENDING TO BE SOMETHING THEY ARE NOT.

The narrow way is the way of EXPOSURE TO THE INNER HEART, THE INNER NATURE, THE INNER REAL SIN: THE LACK OF AGAPE LOVE. The many stopped at the surface sins, they focused only on the MANIFESTATION OF SIN, and never went to the ROOT of their sin. John the Baptist said that the time had come to TAKE THE AX TO THE ROOT OF THE TREE. God was all done fooling around with SURFACE FIX-UPS, which is what the Jewish temple services portrayed in their outer court activities. Now God was going to deal with the human race, THROUGH THE WORK OF CHRIST, VIA GOING TO THE ROOT, VIA GOING RIGHT IN TO THE HOLY OF HOLIES. Christ ripped the veil to SHOW US THE WAY IN. He presented the strait gate and narrow way, THE WAY INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES. Become obedient and do it and you shall have eternal life. Refuse to do it, and you shall perish forever.

*“Blessed are ye THAT HUNGER NOW: FOR YE SHALL BE FILLED.  
Blessed are ye THAT WEEP NOW: FOR YE SHALL LAUGH.”  
(Luke 6:21)*

*“BLESSED are they THAT MOURN: for they shall be COMFORTED.”  
(Matthew 5:4)*

When one venture down the narrow way the hungering and thirsting grow, and as they do, the weeping and mourning grow. It must, because that is how God deals with the inner heart, first by exposure, and that exposure to what and who we really are brings sorrow, and then comes more hunger and more thirsting because the VOID BETWEEN YOU AND YOUR GOD BECOMES VERY EVIDENT. GOD MUST SHOW YOU HOW ALONE YOU ARE, HOW SEPARATE YOU ARE, HOW LOST YOU ARE BEFORE HE CAN DEAL WITH THE INNER MAN. IT IS THIS INNER DESTITUTION OF THE SOUL THAT IS MADE EVIDENT TO THE CONSCIOUS HEART, MIND AND SOUL. It is very experiential, as Scripture proves.

*“Draw nigh unto God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands,  
**YE SINNERS; and PURIFY YOUR HEARTS, YE DOUBLE MINDED.***

***BE AFFLICTED,***

***AND MOURN, AND WEEP:***

***LET YOUR LAUGHTER BE TURNED TO MOURNING,***

***AND YOUR JOY TO HEAVINESS.***

***HUMBLE YOURSELVES IN THE SIGHT OF THE LORD,***

***AND HE SHALL LIFT YOU UP.”***

***(James 4:8-10)***

We must look very carefully at this verse, because it contains many keys to unravel the mystery of the strait gate and narrow way. First of all, it is addressed to the Church, and to believers in Jesus Christ. Obviously then, it is addressed to **CONVERTED CHRISTIANS**. The subject is **HOW TO DRAW NIGH UNTO GOD**. It is borrowed from Psalm 145:18, which tells us to draw nigh unto God **IN TRUTH**. James first tells us to **DRAW NIGH UNTO GOD, AND THEN TELLS US HOW TO DO IT**.

Notice the condition of the people James is addressing. He says that they are full of **LAUGHTER AND JOY**. These then are **CONVERTED CHRISTIANS WHO HAVE ANON WITH GREAT JOY LAID HOLD OF JESUS CHRIST**. It reminds us of John where it says that **AS MANY AS RECEIVED HIM**. These people, these believers, followers or disciples of the Lord Jesus Christ are in a state of exceeding great joy. The word for “joy” is ‘chara’, which means **CALM DELIGHT, GLADNESS, EXCEEDING JOYFULNESS, DELIGHT**. It is the mark of a **HAPPY SOUL, CONTENTED SOUL**. The word for “laughter” is ‘gelos’ and it means **LAUGHTER OR MARK OF GRATIFICATION**. These then are well content and happy Christians.

The Holy Spirit refers to them as **SINNERS AND DOUBLE MINDED**. As you will recall, the Lord claims there are **two hearts and two minds within a person**, the **OUTER, THE INNER**. Obviously the outer conscious mind, heart and soul have **FULLY ACCEPTED CHRIST**, and they are full of joy and laughter as they lay hold of all the promises God has given to them. But there is something these content and happy Christians have yet to do:

**THEY HAVE YET TO DRAW NIGH UNTO GOD.**

These are they who worship Jesus Christ **WITH THEIR LIPS, WHICH ARE CONTROLLED BY THEIR CONSCIOUS HEART, MIND AND WILL**, while their **INNER HEART IS FAR REMOVED FROM GOD**. If we bring this together, they form a portrait, for Psalm 145:18 says we must **DRAW NIGH IN TRUTH**. Jesus said that **LIFE** was at the **END** of the **NARROW WAY**. Because **LIFE IS IN CHRIST, THEN CHRIST IS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY**. BECAUSE **CHRIST IS GOD, THEN DRAWING NIGH UNTO GOD MUST BE, HAS**

TO BE WALKING THE NARROW WAY. These people have not done it. They have stopped at the CROSS, AND THEY WORSHIP THE HISTORICAL JESUS AT THE HISTORICAL CROSS.

Neither will they PICK UP THE CROSS THEY WORSHIP. They are the people of the outer court religion. They honor the Christ who died upon that cross. They worship the Christ of that cross. They DO HONOR WITH THEIR LIPS BUT THEIR HEARTS ARE FAR FROM HIM. They sing their songs of praises; they are full of laughter and joy, BUT THEY REFUSE TO COMPLY WITH THE REQUIREMENTS OF FAITH. Their faith is a PSEUDO-FAITH. Jesus commanded them to pick up THE CROSS. This they refuse to do. Their theology of SUBSTITUTION CLAIMS THAT JESUS DID ALL OF THAT FOR THEM. If He did it for them, then why did Jesus demand they do it for themselves? There seems to be a direct CONTRADICTION, VIA THEOLOGY, TO WHAT CHRIST COMMANDS THEY DO.

These people have not even entered the strait gate. They are not even aware there is a strait gate. What are the marks of DRAWING NIGH UNTO GOD? Is it positive or negative? Does it harmonize with everything we have learned so far, or will it contradict what we have learned?

James lists six conditions that will occur as we draw nigh unto God: AFFLICTION, MOURN, WEEP, MOURNING, HEAVINESS, HUMBLE. Hardly sounds like the positive faith movements of today! The word “afflicted” is ‘talaiporeo’ and it means **TO BE WRETCHED, TO REALIZE ONES OWN MISERY**. That is a very interesting word, for it has been implied that the narrow way is a way OF HEART RECOGNITION OF SOMETHING. If we are to realize our own misery then obviously prior to that WE DO NOT! If we do not REALIZE OUR STATE BEFORE GOD, THEN WE ARE UNDER A DELUSION, UNDER A DECEPTION.

We therefore have a CONFIRMATION THAT INDEED THE NARROW WAY IS THE ONLY WAY TO COME TO RECOGNIZE OUR REAL STANDING BEFORE A HOLY GOD. If we refuse it, we remain under a delusion, a deception of a wicked heart that secretly hates God, hates Christ, and wants nothing to do with either one. What our OUTER CONSCIOUS HEART, MIND AND SOUL DO IS OF NO CONSEQUENCE. The worship of the outer heart is VANITY. Now we have our answer as to why the vast majority of Christians are IN A STATE OF UTTER SHOCK AT THEIR REJECTION BY JESUS CHRIST. They were in fact UNDER A TOTAL DELUSION, A TOTAL DECEPTION, AND THEY ‘KNOWEST NOT’ THAT THEY ARE POOR, BLIND, MISERABLE AND NAKED.

Make no mistake about it; these people are all CONVERTED CHRISTIANS WHO HAVE LAID HOLD OF JESUS CHRIST, HAVE RECEIVED HIM, HAVE GONE FORWARD AND ARE UNDER THE IMPRESSION THAT THEY ARE HEAVEN BOUND. They are not. They are bound for the eternal fires of damnation unless they REPENT. They must turn their laughter and joy into sorrow and grief; they must walk the narrow way to death. The word “mourn” is ‘pentheo’ which means **TO GRIEVE**. The word for “mourning” is ‘penthos’ which means **MOURNING AND SORROW**. The word for “weep” is ‘klaio’ and it means **TO SOB, TO WAIL ALOUD, TO CRY ALOUD**. The word for “heaviness” is ‘katepheia’ which means **TO BE DOWNCAST, DEPRESSED, UNDER A HEAVY DEPRESSION, SADNESS, HEAVINESS OF SPIRIT**. These are identical to the word NARROW. It is in perfect harmony with the words of Christ.

What is to be the result of this narrow way walk, James? What is to be the end of it for me? His reply is beautiful in its simplicity: HUMBLENESS. We are to be brought to a state of TRUE, AUTHENTIC HUMBLENESS. There is humbleness of the outer heart, mind and soul. There are

what appear to be meek and mild souls. **THAT IS NOT THE HUMBLENESS OF SCRIPTURE.** That sort of humbleness is part of the DECEPTION, THE DELUSION. The word “humble” here is ‘tapeinoo’ and it means **DEBASE, HUMILIATE, ABASE, BRING LOW.**

There are plenty of Christians who walk around pretending to be humble. They are meek and mild; they have a quiet gentle spirit. **IN THE SIGHT OF MEN.** That is how you and I would perceive them if we met them face to face. They would be kind, gentle, gracious souls, who profess and sincerely love the Lord Jesus Christ. But deep down inside them, **TOTALLY UNKNOWN TO THEM,** lies a heart that is **UTTERLY WICKED, EVIL, DEPRAVED, AND WHO HATES JESUS CHRIST WITH A PASSION.**

Please notice carefully how James words this, it is CRUCIAL: “HUMBLE YOURSELVES IN THE **SIGHT OF GOD.**” The word “sight” here is ‘enopion’ and it means **IN THE FACE OF, IN THE PRESENCE OF, STANDING BEFORE GOD.** This has nothing to do with **any one’s so called humbleness or meekness that man discerns.** This has nothing to do with man whatever. This is a **DIVINE HUMBLENESS THAT CAN ONLY BE ACCOMPLISHED BY WALKING THE NARROW WAY.** To all others, it is a hidden thing, and their so-called humbleness is a fraud, a lie, and a deception. In the end they can be sure their sin **will** find them out.

We know from previous study that GOD IS AGAPE LOVE. We know that the essence of God and Christ is pure AGAPE LOVE. If we are to humble ourselves, if we are to be brought **DOWN BEFORE THE LORD, THEN WE MUST BE BROUGHT DOWN IN THE SIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE.** It is the job of the Holy Spirit to BRING THE SOUL DOWN **UNTO JUDGMENT.** The word judgment means **TO DAMNATION.** Why are human souls damned? **BECAUSE THEY HAVE NOT ANY AGAPE LOVE.** The issue between man and God, THE ONLY ISSUE, is the AGAPE LOVE ISSUE.

Scripture proves that the narrow way is in reality **A FORM OF THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT** done to the human soul while YET ALIVE. All the works of a soul are going to be brought before God and judged upon the basis of AGAPE LOVE. **AGAPE LOVE IS THE STANDARD OF THE UNIVERSE.** Because it IS THE STANDARD, then all works, of whatsoever kind, are going to BE JUDGED AGAINST THAT STANDARD, FOR IT IS THE ONLY STANDARD GOD HAS.

The Bible says that **ALL MEN MUST DIE, AND THEN FACE THE JUDGMENT.** It does not **EXCLUDE ANYONE, INCLUDING CHRISTIANS.** The concept that all converted Christians are exempt simply because they profess Christ can be easily proven in grave error.

**“And as it is APPOINTED unto men  
ONCE TO DIE, but AFTER THIS THE JUDGMENT.”**  
(Hebrews 9:27)

There are no listed exceptions. It is a **DIVINE APPOINTMENT THAT EVERY SINGLE HUMAN BEING FACES.** It is a JUDGMENT. The word “judgment” is ‘krisis’ and it means **TO BE BROUGHT BEFORE A TRIBUNAL, TO BE JUDGED BY DIVINE LAW, DIVINE JUSTICE, CONDEMNATION OR DAMNATION.** The word “appointed” is ‘apokeimai’ and it means **RESERVED, TO AWAIT, APPOINTED, LAID UP.** In other words,



**SET.** The word “once” is ‘hapax’ and it means **A SINGLE TIME**. There is then **ONE DEATH, ONE JUDGMENT**.

The claim of modern Christian theology is that **ALL CHRISTIANS ARE EXEMPT FROM THIS JUDGMENT**. This viewpoint is the wresting of Scripture to their own damnation.

## **THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS.**

The judgment seat of Christ as will be proven has two functions: **TO SEPARATE ALL PEOPLE, WHO PROFESS CHRIST, INTO TWO CAMPS. TO SEPARATE THE WHEAT FROM THE CHAFF, THE WHEAT FROM THE TARES, THE UNREGENERATE FROM THE REGENERATE.** It is based upon one fact: **DID THAT HUMAN SOUL THAT PROFESSED CHRIST IN FRONT OF MEN WALK THE NARROW WAY, WHICH IS A FORM OF THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT AND FIND CHRIST OR NOT?** If they have not gone through the form of the **GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT WHILE ALIVE, THAT IS, IF THEY HAVE NOT BEEN JUDGED BY THE STANDARD OF AGAPE LOVE,** they are not of Christ, they are none of His. He separates **THOSE CLAIMING TO BE HIS, TO THOSE THAT ARE HIS**. Paul in Romans makes the vital distinction:

*“But ye are not in the flesh, **BUT IN THE SPIRIT,**  
**IF SO BE THAT THE SPIRIT OF GOD DWELL IN YOU.**  
**NOW IF ANY MAN HAVE NOT THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST,**  
**HE IS NONE OF HIS.***

***AND IF CHRIST BE IN YOU,**  
**THE BODY IS DEAD BECAUSE OF SIN;**  
**BUT THE SPIRIT IS LIFE BECAUSE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.”**  
(Romans 8:9-10)*

**The SPIRIT OF CHRIST IN YOU; CHRIST IN YOU. One does not receive the spirit of Christ at conversion. CHRIST IS NOT IN THE BELIEVER; THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST IS NOT IN THE BELIEVER UNTIL THAT BELIEVER IS REGENERATED. NO BELIEVER HAS THE LIFE OF CHRIST WITHIN UNTIL THEY HAVE WALKED THE NARROW WAY TO OBTAIN IT, FOR LIFE IS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY.** Notice it does not say you in Christ. The “many” were in the Body of Christ. The lukewarm church was in the Body of Christ. All professors of Christ are in the Body of Christ. They are all in the sheepfold. They all came in **SOME OTHER WAY**. Simply because you are in the sheepfold does not determine salvation. You come into the Body of Christ **VIA CONVERSION**. Christ comes in to you, and **ACCEPTS YOU AT REGENERATION**. The two are a strait gate and narrow way apart.

It should be pointed out that Christ is returning for His **BRIDE**. Christ is **MARRIED TO HIS BRIDE**. Do you marry your own body? Will Christ marry His own body? Of course not. The **BRIDE OF CHRIST IS TAKEN OUT OF THE BODY, AND FASHIONED INTO A BRIDE**.

Just as Eve was taken from the RIB of ADAM, so also is the Bride of Christ going to be taken FROM HIS OWN RIB. The rib is near the heart, and those near the heart of Christ HAVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST. The RIB IS A VERY SMALL PART OF THE BODY. Like 1/1000 of it? So Christ is building HIS BRIDE, AND HIS BRIDE IS SEVERED FROM HIS BODY. Think about it.

The issue here IS NOT WHETHER YOU CLAIM TO KNOW JESUS CHRIST, **THE ISSUE IS THIS:**

## **DOES CHRIST KNOW YOU?**

Salvation is determined upon **CHRIST KNOWING YOU, CHRIST IN YOU, THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST IN YOU.** The spirit of Christ is the **SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE. CHRIST IS AGAPE LOVE. WHEN A PERSON IS BESTOWED THE GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE, HE IS GIVEN CHRIST.**

It is wholly different than the Holy Spirit's function of guiding one to THE TRUTH, WHICH IS THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, WHICH IS CHRIST IN YOU. The judgment seat of Christ concerns itself FIRST with this issue: WAS CHRIST IN THEM, DID HE KNOW THEM? DID THEY HAVE THE SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE WITHIN? WAS CHRIST IN UNION? If not, they are taken away. That is the FIRST FUNCTION.

Those that failed to become regenerated failed to settle the ONE ISSUE BETWEEN THEMSELVES AND GOD. THEY FAILED TO APPROPRIATE THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST TO COVER THEM. Their robe of covering is missing, and they stand NAKED BEFORE THE THRONE OF JUDGMENT. They are sent away to **AWAIT THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT, WHERE THEIR WORKS WILL BE REVIEWED, AND HELD UP AGAINST THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD.** Because they WERE NOT OBEDIENT, AND DID NOT OBEY CHRIST, THEY MUST STAND ON THEIR OWN MERITS. All of their works are going to be judged against the AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. Because no human being can measure up to this standard, they are lost for eternity.

The REGENERATE CHRISTIAN has walked the NARROW WAY. The narrow way is the way of UNMASKING THE TRUTH OF THE INNER HEART. At the end, when the soul is BROUGHT DOWN INTO JUDGMENT, IS BROUGHT DOWN UNTO DAMNATION, the **TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE, AND THE STANDARD OF AGAPE LOVE IS REVEALED TO THE BELIEVER.** God is not a respecter of persons. EVERYONE IS JUDGED THE SAME WAY. EVERYONE IS JUDGED BY THE SAME STANDARD.

The difference is, is that the BELIEVER IS STILL ALIVE. He still has physical life within him. When Christ REVEALS TRUTH BY REVEALING AGAPE LOVE, AND WHAT IT REALLY IS. IT IS A JUDGMENT:

The soul has walked the narrow way unto DEATH. The soul is now shown the HIDDEN, SECRET AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. He looks into it and UNDERSTANDS IT. His deeds are then COMPARED TO THIS AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. The soul does not MEASURE UP. You then stand guilty before God, condemned to eternal ruin. THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE IS THE FINAL STEP IN THE CONDEMNATION PROCESS. It is the method God uses

to JUDGE YOU BY HIS STANDARD: AGAPE LOVE. This is what the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT IS: it is what the NARROW WAY IS ABOUT, DYING. We die because we have no AGAPE LOVE WITHIN. We are dead because we have no agape love within. BUT NOW WE KNOW IT EXPERIENTIALLY, FOR WE HAVE UNDERGONE A LITERAL, EXPERIENTIAL WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT. WE ARE FOUND GUILTY.

Christ then steps forward and SAVES THAT SOUL BY AN OFFER TO ENTER INTO THE NEW COVENANT OF A NEW HEART. He will say something like: "WILL YOU AGAPE LOVE?" That is the INVITATION TO THE NEW COVENANT. THE BELIEVER NOW HAS A CHOICE:

1. He can ACCEPT JESUS CHRIST AND THE AGAPE LOVE HE BRINGS WITH HIM. The believer NOW KNOWS THE ABSOLUTE TRUTH, HAS MET THE LIVING CHRIST, HAS MADE CONTACT WITH THE LIVING CHRIST, AND NOW MUST DECIDE FROM THE INNER HEART TO ACCEPT OR REJECT. If the believer ACCEPTS, Christ immediately enters the Holy of Holies of that person, and ascends to HIS RIGHTFUL PLACE UPON THE THRONE OF SELF. When Christ comes in, He brings with him AGAPE LOVE. It is BESTOWED UPON THE BELIEVER AT THAT INSTANT OF TIME (1 John 3:1). The believer then instantly pass from DEATH UNTO LIFE (1 John 3:14).

The believer is now COVERED and ACQUITTED OF ALL CHARGES. It is not done on the basis of the believer's righteousness, but on the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF JESUS CHRIST. It is the agape love robes of Christ that COVERS THE BELIEVER, AND THE BELIEVER IS HIDDEN IN CHRIST. The believer has now been judged and declared INNOCENT BY VIRTUE OF JESUS CHRIST. This is the WHITE STONE OF ACQUITTAL GIVEN TO ALL OVERCOMERS.

You cannot be brought up on the same charges twice, that is known as double jeopardy. THE BIBLE SAYS THERE IS ONLY ONE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT, NOT TWO. IF THERE IS ONLY ONE, and the believer is found GUILTY, but ACCEPTS THE OFFER OF CHRIST, AND IS THEREBY ACQUITTED, THEN HOW CAN HE COME UNDER CONDEMNATION AGAIN? The truth is he cannot. The reason he cannot is because CHRIST EVER LIVETH TO MAKE INTERCESSION FOR THE REGENERATE CHRISTIANS. THEIR PROTECTION IS BASED UPON THEIR UNION WITH CHRIST. It is Christ that is the AUTHOR AND FINISHER OF THEIR SALVATION. It is done purely out of the GRACE OF GOD, THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. That is why you cannot earn salvation.

The regenerate Christian then faces the BEMA SEAT JUDGMENT OF CHRIST. This is phase two of the JUDGMENT SEAT ACTIVITY. The frauds, the impostors, the bastard sons, the tares, the chaff have been judged and sent away. The regenerate Christian is now judged ONLY FOR THEIR WORKS DONE SINCE REGENERATION, WHETHER THEY WERE OF ANY USE TO CHRIST OR NOT. Were the works done in AGAPE LOVE? WERE THEY OF SOME GOOD, OR WERE THEY WORTHLESS? Whatever good was accomplished, A REWARD IS GRANTED. If no good was accomplished, REWARDS ARE LOST. The bema seat is not a judgment as to whether one remains in heaven or not. That is determined STRICTLY BY AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT.

2. The other option is that a soul can REFUSE CHRIST AT THE LAST MINUTE, AND SIMPLY TURN AWAY. This is true because Christ will not violate the INNER HEART AND WILL OF A SOUL ANY MORE THAN HE WILL THE OUTER HEART, SOUL AND MIND. He will not violate the free will of anyone. You might ask, why in the world would anyone reject

Christ at this point, after having gone through all of this to find Him? The answer is that the INNER HEART IS INVOLVED AND IT CAN REFUSE TO BE UNSEATED.

If the soul who has gone the full distance REFUSES TO ALLOW CHRIST ENTRANCE, *there is no longer any sacrifice available to him.* He has met the LIVING CHRIST. There is no other name under heaven by which we may be saved. That believer embraced the historical Christ, found the strait gate, walked the narrow way and came face to face with the living Jesus. If the LIVING CHRIST IS REJECTED, BECAUSE THE INNER HEART REFUSES TO BUDGE, *there is no pardon.* There is no chance of ever coming back to a Biblical repentance. *It is over, done for ever, sealed.* YOU GET ONE SHOT AT IT. You then await the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT. You must stand on your own merits.

This will all be proven true by Scripture as we proceed. The one who accepts THE LIVING CHRIST, the one who has been BROUGHT TO JUDGMENT, AND WHO ADMITS TO THE ONE SIN OF MAN, *THAT HE DOES NOT AGAPE LOVE, CANNOT AGAPE LOVE, WILL NOT AGAPE LOVE HAS BEEN JUDGED BY THE SAME STANDARD OF THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT.* His previous deeds have all been held up to the DIVINE STANDARD, and the believer has admitted HE DOES NOT LOVE, AND STANDS GUILTY BEFORE GOD. Because he is guilty, and has no agape love, he is damned.

It is here that Jesus Christ steps forward and offers AGAPE LOVE. He may do so, because *THE BELIEVER IS ALIVE ON EARTH.* HE PURCHASED THE ENTIRE HUMAN RACE WITH HIS BLOOD. THEY ARE HIS. HE HAS EVERY RIGHT TO STEP FORWARD, FOR HE IS KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. Jesus has invaded the house, bound the strongman, and now spoils his house. The strong man is Satan. Satan and his demons are bound while Christ deals with the inner heart of a soul. Nothing is going to be allowed to influence the believer one way or the other. This is a choice of FREE WILL, THAT IS TRULY BEEN SET FREE. The entire truth behind the universe has been shown the believer. HE KNOWS THE FACTS, HE KNOWS THE ISSUES. He can then enter in to a *LEGAL CONTRACT WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE NOW KNOWS THE BASIS FOR THE NEW COVENANT.* The New Covenant is a legally binding contract. There is nothing hidden, nothing held back. The issues are made perfectly clear.

If the believer OPENS THE DOOR TO HIS INNER HEART, TO ALLOW CHRIST TO REPLACE IT WITH A NEW HEART, A HEART OF AGAPE LOVE, by saying YES TO THE LIVING CHRIST AND TO HIS AGAPE LOVE, CHRIST INSTANTLY ENTERS IN AND UNION IS ACCOMPLISHED. That believer has gone through the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT, BUT HIS/HER NAME IS ALSO NOW IN THE LAMB'S BOOK OF LIFE. That soul has been found guilty, admitted it, and Christ rescued that soul from eternal ruin.

Returning to James, and his claim that we are to be humbled in the SIGHT OF GOD, IT MEANS *WE ARE TO BE BROUGHT DOWN TO JUDGMENT IN FRONT OF AGAPE LOVE, THE STANDARD OF GOD.* God sees out of the eyes of AGAPE LOVE. I would ask you if AGAPE LOVE IS HIDDEN FROM VIEW, HIDDEN FROM MANKIND, AND IS A SECRET, AND UNKNOWN AS CHRIST ADAMANTLY INSISTS IT IS,

## **THEN HOW ARE WE TO BE BROUGHT DOWN IN THE SIGHT OF IT?**

There is only one way this could ever happen: *IT MUST BE DIVINELY REVEALED TO US WHAT AGAPE LOVE IS. WE MUST BE SHOWN IT. WE MUST LOOK INTO IT AND SEE THE DEPTH, WIDTH, HEIGHT AND BREADTH OF GOD'S LOVE.* Scripture proves it with

hundreds of verses, as you will see. After you have been shown it, and know what it is, THEN YOUR OWN LOVE CAN BE HELD UP AS A COMPARISON. Your love will be shown to be NO LOVE AT ALL, DEVOID, DESTITUTE, CONDITIONAL, WORTHLESS. All of this is DONE IN THE PRESENCE OF GOD.

Where does God dwell? He dwells in the Holy of Holies. If God dwells there, and He has refused to move from there, then who must draw nigh unto whom? As you draw nigh to the Holy of Holies, God is drawing closer to you. It is **YOU WHO MUST RECONCILE YOURSELF UNTO GOD**, for through Christ God did reconcile Himself unto you. The torn veil represents that RECONCILIATION. You may now enter; you may walk boldly to the THRONE OF GRACE. But you must walk through the inner court to get there; otherwise grace does not apply to you.

TO BE HUMBLLED IN THE SIGHT OF THE LORD IS TO BE HUMBLLED IN THE SIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. It is only done in the PRESENCE OF THE LORD, AS YOU STAND BEFORE HIM. Your final humbling is the **ADMISSION OF ONE SIN: NO AGAPE LOVE**. This admission is not made from your conscious mind and heart; it is made from the MOST INNER CORE OF YOUR BEING. God goes right to the ROOTS, AND HE WILL LAY THE AX TO THE ROOTS AND CUT YOUR STONY HEART OUT AND REPLACE IT WITH A HEART OF AGAPE LOVE. You cannot be humbled in the SIGHT OF GOD, until you **COME TO THE PLACE WHERE GOD DWELLS**. HE DWELLS IN PURE AGAPE LOVE. YOU MUST GO THERE, AND PARTAKE OF IT IF YOU WANT IT. If you refuse, your religion is sheer vanity, and your destination is assured.

James then says that IF WE WILL DRAW NIGH UNTO GOD, AND IF WE WILL BE HUMBLLED IN HIS PRESENCE, **WE WILL BE LIFTED UP**. We shall fly on the wings of eagles. What does all of this mean, that we shall be lifted up? 1 JOHN 3:1 TELLS YOU, **YOU WILL BE GRANTED THE GIFT OF PURE AGAPE LOVE, AND YOUR SPIRIT WILL BE REGENERATED!** This is not a reference to the rapture, resurrection or a future event; this is to happen to EVERY SINGLE, REAL, AUTHENTIC BELIEVER WHO IS OBEDIENT. He will be brought before the PRESENCE OF THE LORD. HE WILL SEE THE GLORY OF CHRIST, THE GLORY OF GOD, THE MYSTERY, THE SECRET. He will feed upon the HIDDEN MANNA.

The Lord will lean forward and touch you with His golden scepter, and HIS LOVE WILL COME IN TO YOU, AND INTO YOUR HEART OF HEARTS. You will find favor in the sight of the King, as did Esther. You will in fact be lifted up. The word for “lift” is ‘hupsoo’ and it means **TO ELEVATE, TO EXHAULT, TO BE LIFTED HIGHER**. You have then found the Lord and KNOW THE SECRET, THE MYSTERY BEHIND THE UNIVERSE, BEHIND LIFE ITSELF.

This is a total confirmation of everything we have found before. The narrow way is the way of coming in to the presence of the Lord, of entering in to the New Covenant. You cannot enter into the presence of a DEAD PERSON. You cannot go backwards 2000 years and enter into the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ upon the cross at Calvary. The historical Jesus cannot help you. His work is forever trapped in time and space, and that **WORK IS ONLY THE FOUNDATION UPON WHICH OUR FAITH RESTS**. Those who worship the historical Christ never enter into union with THE LIVING CHRIST, WHO DOES THE LITERAL AND ACTUAL SAVING. To meet the LITERAL AND REAL LIVING CHRIST, YOU MUST DO AS HE COMMANDS. If you will, you will COME INTO HIS PRESENCE. Scripture proves it.

# THERE IS AN EVIDENCE

*“Come unto me, all ye that **LABOUR AND ARE HEAVY LADEN**,  
and I will give you **REST**.”*  
(Matthew 11:28)

It was a living Jesus Christ that spoke these words, and it is the **RESURRECTED LIVING JESUS CHRIST WE MUST COME TO BEFORE WE CAN OBTAIN THE REST OF AGAPE LOVE**. If we come unto Him, may we say we are in His presence? And if we be in His presence, then WE WILL SEE AND BEHOLD AGAPE LOVE. That is why the Scriptures says that the **TIME OF REFRESHING COMES ONLY IN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD**. Most people claim that is a reference to the SECOND ADVENT. It is not, it is a reference to CHRIST COMING TO THE BELIEVER WHO HAS BEEN OBEDIENT. That is the time of the REFRESHING.

HERE AGAIN WE FIND THE WORD LABOR, AND THE WORD HEAVY LADEN. The word for “heavy” is ‘barus’ and it means **GRAVE, GRIEVOUS, HEAVY LOAD, WEIGHTY**. The word “laden” is ‘phortizo’ which means **TO LOAD UP, TO BURDEN**. The word for “come” is ‘deute’ and it means **TO COME HITHER, COME TO, TO FOLLOW**. One is therefore to become laden down with sorrow and grief as they walk the narrow way. The load becomes very heavy, too heavy to be carried. If we persist, and do as we are told, we will MEET THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST. HE WILL TAKE OUR LOAD, AND HE WILL GIVE US THE REST OF AGAPE LOVE.

*“And he lifted up his eyes on HIS DISCIPLES, AND SAID,  
**BLESSED BE YE POOR;**  
FOR YOURS IS THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”*  
(Luke 6:20)

*“Blessed are the **POOR IN SPIRIT**: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.”*  
(Matthew 5:3)

The word “poor” is ‘ptoclos’ and it means **TO BE A BEGGAR, TO BE PAUPER, TO BE REDUCED TO MENDICANCY**. It does not mean what you think it means. THE GOSPEL IS ONLY PREACHED TO THE POOR, FOR NO OTHERS WILL HEAR IT. Do you understand the impact of this: **THE GOSPEL IS ONLY PREACHED TO THOSE WHO WILL COME IN VIA THE NARROW WAY**. There is a reason for this. Jesus Christ was alive on earth when He preached the Gospel. Likewise it is the RESURRECTED JESUS CHRIST THAT COMES TO THE OBEDIENT BELIEVER AND ALSO PRESENTS THE

## REAL GOSPEL

The real gospel is a gospel of the **INNER HEART**. It does not concern itself with the outer conscious heart, soul and mind of man. It is a gospel **DIRECTED TO THE ROOTS**. If it is a gospel message to THE INNER HEART, THEN ONLY THE INNER HEART CAN IN REALITY HEAR IT. It is in the inner heart that Christ comes to dwell. It is in the heart that the TRUE GOSPEL OF SALVATION THROUGH AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT IS KNOWN. It is not mental, it is SPIRITUAL. It is beyond ALL KNOWLEDGE, IT PASSES ALL HUMAN UNDERSTANDING. That is why Jesus said the TRUTH IS ONLY KNOWN TO THEM THAT HAVE IT SUPERNATURALLY REVEALED. Scripture proves it, as you will see.

It is at the door of the INNER HEART that Jesus knocks upon. It is only in the INNER CHAMBER, THE CHAMBER OF THE SPIRIT, THAT YOU WILL HEAR THE LITERAL VOICE OF JESUS CHRIST. He will come to you, He will present the REAL GOSPEL TO YOU, and it is then up to your INNER WILL, YOUR INNER HEART, IF YOU WILL ACCEPT IT OR REJECT IT. If you reject it, it will never be offered again. You will be forever damned, for you have rejected the LIVING CHRIST, THE ONLY WAY BY WHICH WE MAY BE SAVED.

***“THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME,  
BECAUSE HE HATH ANOINTED ME TO PREACH  
THE GOSPEL TO THE POOR...”***  
**(Luke 4:18)**

The gospel is preached to every creature under heaven. Are we all poor? Yes, we are, but ONLY THE FEW EVER COME TO REALIZE IT, AND THEY COME TO KNOW IT FOR A FACT VIA THE NARROW WAY. The rest ARE **NOT AWARE** OF HOW POOR AND DESTITUTE THEY REALLY ARE. The latter day Laodicean church is a primary example of this utter IGNORANCE OF THEIR TRUE POSITION BEFORE THE LORD. They are **UTTERLY LOST, HEADED FOR TOTAL RUIN**, and yet they are POSITIVE their works are all accepted, and that they are going to heaven. Such is the nature of deception. Jesus said unto them that they **KNEW NOT** THEY WERE POOR, BLIND, MISERABLE AND NAKED. The key word there is poor.

Had they been obedient, and picked up the cross, they would have found out the INNER REALITY OF THEIR TRUE CONDITION. It cannot be discovered any other way; it remains hidden until the day of the judgment. That is why Jesus waits until the very end to inform them. **They deserve it, for they took His name, they took His authority, they took His gospel and they perverted it, twisted it, destroyed it, and swept millions in to eternal loss.**

Does the Old Testament agree? Are there any references that tie in to the salvation message that use the word poor? That it is indeed ONLY THE POOR IN SPIRIT THAT SHALL BE SAVED?

***“This POOR MAN CRIED, and the LORD HEARD HIM,  
AND SAVED HIM OUT OF  
ALL HIS TROUBLES.”***  
**(Psalm 34:6)**

***“For HE SHALL DELIVER THE NEEDY WHEN HE CRIETH;  
THE POOR ALSO,  
AND HIM THAT HATH NO HELPER.  
HE SHALL SPARE THE POOR AND NEEDY,  
AND SHALL SAVE THE SOULS OF THE NEEDY.”***  
(Psalm 72:12-13)

There are many other references to the POOR AND NEEDY SOULS. This is not the POOR OF THE EARTH IN TERMS OF MONEY OR MATERIAL WANT. This is the SPIRITUALLY POOR AND NEEDY, THOSE THAT WILL WALK THE NARROW WALK TO DISCOVER JUST HOW POOR AND NEEDY THEY ARE! It is this they refuse, for it is this revelation of the TRUTH THAT IS THE REPROOF AND THE REBUKE OF THE LORD. The word “poor” is ‘ebyown’ and it means **DESTITUTE, IN DIRE WANT, NEEDY, A BEGGAR**. Do you now begin to see why Jesus said it was almost impossible for a RICH MAN TO ENTER HEAVEN?

The rich man is CONTENT WITH HIS LIFE. He has a business that is prosperous. He has money for toys, so he can play. He has money to take time off, for vacations, for sports, for anything he wants. IT MUST ALL BE GIVEN UP. He must totally rearrange his priorities so that Jesus is REALLY FIRST IN THE LIFE.

None of this sounds very pleasant, and appears to be the very OPPOSITE of the ANON WITH GREAT JOY THEOLOGY OF TODAY. Jesus is then warning them to LET THEIR IMMEDIATE JOY BE TURNED INTO THE WALK OF THE NARROW WAY. The strait gate and narrow way are before them. WILL THEY ENTER IN? The vast majority will not.

If we now bring all of this together, we find something that the false gospel of today has well hidden, and we have only begun to venture a look at the STRAIT GATE. Let us now bring all of this together and look at it in consolidated form:

STRIVE – (TO STRUGGLE, TO FIGHT, TO AGONIZE, TO CONTEND WITH AN ENEMY)  
STIRRETH – (TO WAKE UP, TO OPEN ONES EYES, ARISE FROM SLUMBER)  
CALLETH – (TO ACCOST, TO CRY OUT FOR)  
INCLINE – (TO PRICK UP THE EARS, TO HEARKEN, TO GIVE HEED TO, TO MARK WELL)  
APPLY – (TO STRETCH OUT FOR SOMETHING, TO REACH FOR)  
CRIEST – (TO ACCOST, TO CRY OUT FOR, TO CRY TO)  
SEEKETH – (TO SEARCH OUT, TO STRIVE AFTER, TO BEG FOR, TO BESEECH TO CRAVE AFTER, TO LABOR HARD FOR)  
SEARCHEST – (TO DILIGENTLY SEARCH A MATTER OUT, TO INQUIRE AFTER, TO SEEK AFTER, TO FIND A MATTER OUT)  
DESIRE – (TO WANT BADLY, TO CONSIDER VALUABLE, TO LIKE)  
LABOUR – (TO TOIL, TO WORK, EFFORT, TO WORK FOR, TO DO, A DOING)  
ASK – (TO BEG, TO CRAVE, TO BESEECH)  
SEEK – (TO DESIRE, TO SEEK AFTER, A DILIGENT SEARCH FOR)  
KNOCK – (A PERSISTENT RAPPING, A CONTINUOUS KNOCKING, A TENACITY)  
ZEALOUS – (TO COVET EARNESTLY, TO DESIRE GREATLY, TO HAVE GREAT ZEAL FOR, TO BE WHOLLY GOING AFTER)



HOT – (TO BOIL, TO BE RED HOT, TO GLOW, TO BE FERVENT)  
HUNGER – (TO BE FAMISHED, STARVED, TO CRAVE FOR, TO TOIL AFTER)  
THIRST (TO BE PARCHED, TO THIRST, TO BE THIRSTY)  
MOURN – (TO GRIEVE, TO WAIL ALOUD, TO CRY ALOUD, SORROWFUL)  
POOR – (TO BE REDUCED TO A BEGGAR, A PAUPER, TO BEG, IN DISTRESS)  
WEEP – (TO WAIL ALOUD, TO BEWAIL, TO CRY ALOUD, TO WEEP)  
HUMBLE – (TO BE BROUGHT DOWN, MADE LOW, HUMILIATED)

We cannot deny these words of Scripture. We cannot deny the harmony that they show in their implication. Is the warning of Scripture designed in such a way that **IF WE WILL STIR OURSELVES UP TO A WHOLE HEART SEARCH THAT GOD WILL SHOW US OUR GREAT NEED**? Is the revelation of the **NEED** designed to INCREASE OUR FAITH, AND INCREASE OUR DESIRE, BRINGING IT TO A NEAR FEVER PITCH? Has the Lord hidden all of this so that THOSE WHO REFUSE TO DO AS CHRIST COMMANDED NEVER DISCOVER THEIR REAL NEED? That the real deception, the real delusion sustains itself by HIDING THE REAL NEED OF THE HUMAN HEART?

If this is true and it would appear that it is, THEN WHERE DOES GOD TAKE OVER IN THIS PROCESS, AND WHEN DOES GOD PLACE THE DESIRE TO FULFILL THE NEED? How far must we travel of **our own volition** before SUPERNATURAL DESIRE OF THE HEART IS PLANTED THERE BY GOD? We have no answers. It would appear that there is a **TRANSMUTATION SOMEWHERE IN THE JOURNEY TO FIND CHRIST**. There is no question that the commands to **CONTINUE, TO FIGHT, TO STRIVE, TO SEEK WISDOM AND UNDERSTANDING ARE SOMETHING THE HUMAN BEING MUST DO HIMSELF**.

It should be made very clear that this NEED may be in many different forms, and that the search for truth may take many different avenues. God deals with us as individuals, and the methods He uses to reach us are many and varied. There will be, however, **some common denominators**, for God is also not a respecter of people.

All of these signify that a very great need in all human souls lies hidden beneath the surface, but they are not aware of it. There is **A VERY GREAT DESTITUTION DEEP WITHIN THE HUMAN HEART**. This need lies deep within, and IS NOT REVEALED UNTIL ONE BECOMES OBEDIENT TO CHRIST AND DOES AS HE IS TOLD. If we pick up the cross, we have then left the world behind, we have left the outer court behind, and we have begun the journey through the inner court. The closer we come to the Holy of Holies, the greater we recognize our need and destitution. It is for this reason that the altar of incense is placed just outside the Holy of Holies. It signifies the **TRUE CRIES OF THE TRUE SAINTS AS THEY WALK THE NARROW WAY AND ARE SHOWN WHO AND WHAT THEY ARE**.

The gulf, the gigantic chasm of silence that divides man from God can only be bridged by taking the NARROW WAY. The invitation of Christ is that we pick up the cross, which is entering the strait gate. If we will continue on our sojourn we will meet the LIVING JESUS CHRIST IN PERSON. It will be the most awesome show and tell you have ever witnessed. But when the confrontation is over, and you have met the King of Kings, and the Lord of Lords, your life will forever change.

How then are we to reconcile all of these words, all of these verses of Scripture with the modern faith theology? They are diametrically opposed. They contradict each other, they disavow each other. Either Jesus Christ is right or the modern Christian faith gospel is right. They are not both

right. One gospel is of Christ, the other gospel is a Satanic counterfeit. You have to make a choice, and what you chose determines your eternal destiny.

The gospel of instant faith and immediate salvation speaks volumes as the NEED that the modern Christians really feel. This need, when compared to the NEED CHRIST SAYS MUST BE DEVELOPED TO GO THROUGH THE NARROW WAY, PROVES WHY THERE IS NO REVIVAL. The modern Christian IS CONVINCED HIS THEOLOGY IS CORRECT AND THAT HE IS SECURE IN THE LORD. The need created by modern Christian preaching pales to nothing when compared to the need that Christ claims we must have within to complete the journey. The differences in the URGENCY OF THE CALL IS IMMENSE, AS GREAT AS THE GULF THAT SEPARATES MAN FROM GOD. IS THIS WHY MODERN CHRISTIANITY IS SO POWERLESS IN THE WORLD?

We have now only scratched the surface, and will now take the next step. We have picked up our cross; we are entering the strait gate. What lies before us? Of what must I do to be saved? Will I know for sure when I meet Jesus? Can I know for sure it is Jesus, and not some deception? What is the Biblical record of all this?

The Scriptures for entering in have been laid before you. They have been laid out in a clear manner to show you the harmony of Scripture. They all concern themselves with ENTERING IN. You will have to decide in your own souls the validity of the message. I can personally assure you that Christ meant every word He said. He not only meant it, He proved it by repeating them in many different ways, so you could not, if you really wanted to know the truth, mistake it. Jesus died a death we cannot begin to fathom. If you were the only soul in all of 2000 years to come to Him, HE WOULD HAVE DONE IT JUST FOR YOU.

HE WOULD HAVE DONE IT TO PREVENT YOU FROM FACING A REALITY OF HELLFIRE THAT THE HUMAN MIND CANNOT BEGIN TO COMPREHEND. He would have done it because the AGAPE LOVE WITHIN HIM REQUIRES IT. He would have done it because HE LOVES YOU. I can personally attest that He loves with a love you cannot begin to fathom, because it is so pure, so beautiful and so awesome there are no words to describe it. I know because I have seen it, because I have looked into it, and stared with awe as Jesus unfolded the secret behind the entire universe to me. It is simple really, and the scientist who search in the deepest regions of outer space, and probe the depth of inner space will never find it. That which holds us together, that which is the force, the power behind the universe is AGAPE LOVE.

This lowly itinerant preacher man who wandered down the dusty roads of Judea so very long ago held in the palms of His hands the secret of the entire universe. How odd that as the dust settled, and the view of the cross has dimmed that we have perverted His message to the point of non-recognition. Oh to walk with Jesus in the sands of time, to have spent time at His feet, to have looked into the gentle yet burning eyes, and to have been brought down by the hands of the Creator. Will you do it? Will you allow this solitary figure in all of human history to touch you now? Will you open your heart as never before? Will you let the tears flow and be melted by the force of agape love? It is up to you.

**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**TEN**  
**FOR NARROW IS THE WAY**  
**ON THE CROSS WITH JESUS**

*“AND WHEN HE (THE HOLY SPIRIT) IS COME,  
HE WILL **REPROVE** THE WORLD  
OF SIN, AND OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND OF JUDGMENT.”*  
(John 16:8)

*“Because **STRAIT IS THE GATE,**  
AND **NARROW IS THE WAY,**  
which **LEADETH UNTO LIFE,**  
AND FEW THERE BE THAT FIND IT.”*  
(Matthew 7:14)

We have agonized over the decision to follow Jesus, and have made a whole heart decision that we shall do it, no matter what the cost. We have in obedience ***SHIFTED OUR PRIORITIES*** and we have made the search for THE TRUTH our first priority. We have determined in our hearts that whatsoever God requires us to do personally, we will do it. ***But what are we to do? What is the narrow way? Does the Bible define it? How long does it take? Why do we need patience?***

We have now picked up the cross of Christ, we have left the outer court behind, and we now enter through the veil and find ourselves in the INNER COURT. We notice immediately the ***only light source is the seven lamps that burn with the Holy Spirit.*** We have now left the sense man, soul man, and we are on a journey in the inner realms of the spirit. We notice the walls of the inner court are of solid gold plate, and they shine in the glow of the 7 lamps. We are reminded that THE TRIAL OF OUR FAITH HAS NOW BEGUN. We are resolute. We have determined that WE WILL FIND THE FACE OF CHRIST OR PERISH TRYING. We must now taste the bitter taste of the NARROW WAY.

## **THE OBJECTIVES OF THE NARROW WAY**

God never does anything without a very clear objective in mind. It helps us to understand what God is doing, but it helps more if we can understand WHY HE IS DOING IT. We will be studying these objectives, and how they are accomplished, in this chapter.

PRIMARY OBJECTIVE

### ***1. TO DIE THE DEATH ON THE CROSS WITH CHRIST.***

This is the PRIMARY OBJECTIVE OF THE NARROW WAY. It is to die the death so that God's AGAPE love can replace the SELF CENTERED phileo loves within your heart. You must be readjusted back to the AGAPE LOVE STANDARD OF GOD.

### ***2. TO REVEAL TO THE BELIEVER THE TRUE DESTITUTION OF THE INNER MAN.***

This is a secondary objective, which is one of UNMASKING THE ANTICHRIST SPIRIT WITHIN the hidden inner heart. The narrow way is a way of REVELATION of the evil, of the darkness, of the selfishness of the human spirit. It is an unmasking of the true nature of the soul.

### ***3. IT IS A FORM OF THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT.***

The narrow way is God's way of applying the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT to the believer while yet alive upon planet earth. The believer obtains his judgment now, while alive, so that Christ can come and save that soul for eternity future. Those that refuse to undergo this judgment must wait in the future, after death, where they remain alone, for Christ cannot come and help them at that point.

### ***4. IT IS THE WAY OF TRUE REPENTANCE.***

The narrow way is the way of TRUE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE. Biblical repentance concerns itself with the ONE primary sin of man: HIS UTTER INABILITY TO LOVE AS GOD COMMANDS. The soul must be brought down to the point of death so that IT WILL ADMIT THE REAL TRUTH BEFORE GOD, AND IN HIS SIGHT. The sight of God is AGAPE LOVE. The believer then is to be brought TO A POINT where the REAL TRUTH CAN BE ADMITTED FROM THE INNER MAN, the ANTICHRIST SPIRIT WITHIN. God forces that ADMISSION in order to gain access to the Holy of Holies of that soul.

The narrow way is OUR RESPONSE TO THE CALL OF GOD. It is here that Christ focused all of His attention when He spoke of being OBEDIENT. It was here that Christ said that if WE WERE NOT OBEDIENT, AND WOULD NOT KEEP HIS SAYINGS, AND WE WOULD NOT ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY, THAT WE WERE FOOLISH PEOPLE WHO BUILT OUR HOUSE OF FAITH UPON THE SAND.

There is a faith that is a faith IN. it is the faith of modern Christianity. It is not a SAVING faith whatsoever. It has nothing to do with Biblical SAVING faith. It is a satanic counterfeit to REAL FAITH, designed to fool people into eternal ruin. The Scripture speaks of two types of faith: FAITH IN CHRIST, AND THE FAITH OF CHRIST. The two are a strait gate and narrow way apart. The many had a faith IN CHRIST. Faith IN Christ does not save anyone. The reason it cannot save anyone is that FAITH IN CHRIST IS A FAITH IN THE HISTORICAL CHRIST, A FAITH IN THE FOUNDATIONS OF OUR FAITH. It is AN INACTIVE TYPE OF FAITH. It is a mental or CONSCIOUS FAITH. It is a "decision" type of faith, an "acceptance" type of

belief/faith. There is nothing wrong with it; in fact it is totally necessary. BUT IT IS ONLY PHASE ONE OF FAITH. You must go on to develop SAVING FAITH.

Remember when Jesus said that we search the Scriptures daily, for in them we think we will find eternal life? Then He said they were only a TESTIMONY OF HIM, BUT THEY WERE NOT HIM? Then added that no one would come to Him for life? One of the aspects to this is the differences in FAITH. When a person reads and accepts the Scriptures for what they say and are, they are **DEMONSTRATING FAITH IN CHRIST. FAITH IN CHRIST IS A SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN FAITH.** It is a type of SIMPLE ACCEPTANCE FAITH. It is an ARMCHAIR FAITH. It is a type of faith that sits in the chair, or on the couch, or in a church pew that says "AMEN, BROTHER, I BELIEVE THAT". It is **FAITH IN CHRIST THAT LEADS THE SOUL TO CONVERSION.** It is this type of faith that brings the soul to make a **DECISION FOR CHRIST.** James said of this type of faith and belief:

*"Thou believest that there is ONE GOD; thou doest well:  
the DEVILS ALSO BELIEVE, AND TREMBLE."  
(James 2:19)*

You may BELIEVE all you want there is ONE GOD. You may believe all you want that Christ is the Son of God. You may believe all you want that Christ died upon the cross to save you. You may BELIEVE ALL YOU WANT IN THE PROMISES OF THE BIBLE. You do well, **BUT SATAN AND HIS DEMONS ALSO BELIEVE, AND THEY TREMBLE.** The words faith and belief are with rare exception INTERCHANGEABLE. We will study this later. The point being that THIS TYPE OF FAITH/BELIEF IS NOT THE FAITH AND BELIEF THAT SAVES THE SOUL.

*"But wilt thou KNOW, O VAIN MAN,  
THAT FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS  
DEAD?"  
(James 2:20)*

The FAITH **OF** CHRIST is wholly different. The FAITH OF CHRIST is an ACTION, DOING FAITH. Christ set His face as FLINT. He set it, He did as He was commanded, He was **OBEDIENT IN THE DOING.** He had a faith IN God, but He also had a faith that's strong enough to BECOME A DOER OF THE WORD, AND NOT A HEARER ONLY. TRUE BIBLICAL FAITH IS A FAITH THAT BRINGS WITH IT **OBEDIENCE TO DO** AS GOD COMMANDS. It has a little to do with ACCEPTANCE OF SCRIPTURES IN THAT SENSE OF THE WORD. It has to do with STIRRING THE SOUL UP AND LITERALLY DOING WHAT GOD COMMANDED BE DONE. It is a faith, a belief, that **PROMPTS ONE TO ACTION.** It is a whole conscious and deep faith that **ABIDES, CONTINUES, REMAINS, AND IS STEADFAST.** It is the faith that allows you to set your face as FLINT, and never flinch, never look back.

*“For the LORD GOD WILL HELP ME (FAITH IN GOD);  
therefore shall I not be confounded:  
**THEREFORE HAVE I SET MY FACE LIKE A FLINT**  
**(THE FAITH OF CHRIST)**  
**AND I KNOW THAT I SHALL NOT BE ASHAMED.”**  
(Isaiah 50:7)*

It might surprise you that God gave everyone of us the same amount of faith. We are all born with **SUFFICIENT FAITH TO WALK THE NARROW WAY**. Faith, however, is like a muscle, it has to be USED, IT HAS TO BE DEVELOPED OVER TIME. If you saw the Indiana Jones movie called the LAST CRUSADE, there was a scene in which Indiana had to BY FAITH ALONE, STEP OUT OFF A ROCK LEDGE. As soon as he did, a very NARROW WAY or BRIDGE APPEARED TO CARRY HIM OVER THE GIGANTIC GULF, THE GIGANTIC DEEP THAT SEPARATED HIM FROM THE GRAIL. It was a very poor portrayal of faith in some ways, but it demonstrates how FAITH ACTUALLY WORKS. God WILL NOT, AND DOES NOT MOVE UNTIL YOU MOVE. You must **MOVE FIRST**.

Indiana Jones stood on the ledge and looked at the gigantic deep and gulf that separated Him from the Grail. Standing on the ledge is the equivalent of BELIEVING IN JESUS. You must come to the **BREACH BEFORE YOU CAN STEP ACROSS IT**. Indiana closed his eyes, and in FAITH STEPS OUT. AS SOON AS HE MOVED, THE NARROW WAY APPEARED. The narrow way is waiting for you. It is invisible, beyond the veil of the inner court. **YOU MUST STEP OUT IN FAITH THAT IF YOU WALK IT, YOU WILL BE SUPPORTED AND BROUGHT OVER THE GULF AND INTO THE ARMS OF JESUS**. However, this type of faith is NOT INSTANT. It is a deep, abiding faith, that as you SEARCH FOR GOD AND CHRIST, that they will respond to you.

## **PICK UP THY CROSS AND FOLLOW ME**

Jesus demanded that we pick up our crosses and follow Him. Modern Christian holiness doctrine within the more fundamental movements teaches that this means **SELF DENIAL, OR DENIAL OF SELF**. This is further defined as the denial of our selves in order to do the work of Christ on earth, as well as Holy living. In short, it means **GOOD WORKS**. It is a reference to HOLY LIVES, CHRISTIAN MISSIONS, WORKS, TO PRESENT YOURSELF AS A LIVING SACRIFICE, WHICH IS YOUR REASONABLE SERVICE. The narrow way does not concern itself with any of this. It is not the point of the narrow way. It has nothing to do with what normally is called HOLINESS, OR A HOLINESS WALK. **IT IS A WALK OF TOTAL JUDGMENT**.

The fundamentalist concepts of a holy walk before the Lord is a walk in which all known sin is put away, and the soul walks a holy walk before the Lord. This deals with surface or conscious sin in the life. **It is not the point of the narrow way**. It is not that Jesus does not demand Holiness. He must assuredly does, and it is a command. **It is a holiness in thought, word and deed**. But all of that COMES AFTER THE NARROW WAY OF DEATH AND

RESURRECTION IN AGAPE LOVE. The narrow way does not deal whatsoever with the *surface sins of the soul*, for the unregenerate soul can do nothing but sin in the first place. Even if by sheer willpower and force a person were to clean up their act, and GET HOLY BEFORE THE LORD, they would still be sent away into damnation, **FOR THEY HAVE NOT SETTLED THE ROOT ISSUE, THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE.**

The cleaning up of surface sins does not do anything to solve the problem of the INNER HEART. It is the INNER HEART AGAPE LOVE ISSUE THAT MUST BE SOLVED, NOT A MULTITUDE OF SINS. That is why John the Baptist said the **AX WAS GOING TO BE LAID UPON THE ROOTS**. The narrow way is God's method of laying the ax to the roots. **THE NARROW WAY BYPASSES SINS (PLURAL) AND GOES FOR THE REASON FOR SINS.** As usual modern Christian denominations put the cart before the horse, and attempt to clean up their multitude of sins, WHILE TOTALLY IGNORING THE REASON FOR IT ALL. That is why they stand before the Lord utterly rejected.

### **THE PRIMARY ISSUE WAS NEVER SETTLED.**

God is not going to fool around with secondary issues, which in this case are the multitude of sins in the lives of His people. He will deal with this issue LATER, **AFTER THE FIRST ISSUE OF AGAPE LOVE IS RESOLVED**. After that is taken care of, God deals with the multitude of sins in the life, and PURGES THE BELIEVER FROM THEM. This is where the holiness doctrine comes into play. Then the believer begins to realize what God means by HOLINESS.

**THE NARROW WAY HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH A HOLINESS WALK.** The narrow way deals in death. The CROSS WAS AN INSTRUMENT OF DEATH. The word for "cross" is 'stauros', which means **STAKE, POLE, CROSS, INSTRUMENT OF DEATH, EXPOSURE TO DEATH, UNION WITH.** The soul must be exposed to its own death; it must undergo a complete death while it is still very much alive. It is supernatural, but quite real, quite literal in what it does, for it exposes the conscious mind, heart and soul to the truth of its separateness from its Creator. The knowledge will come from deep within, and that knowledge is the knowledge of DEATH. The 'way' of Jesus is the only way God has to BREAK THE HUMAN SOUL AND SPIRIT.

***“And he that taketh NOT HIS CROSS,  
AND FOLLOWETH AFTER ME,  
IS NOT WORTHY OF ME.***

***He that FINDETH HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT:  
AND HE THAT LOSETH HIS LIFE FOR MY SAKE  
SHALL FIND IT.”  
(Matthew 10:38-39)***

Jesus is very blunt. If you DO NOT TAKE UP YOUR CROSS AND FOLLOW JESUS INTO DEATH, YOU ARE NOT WORTHY OF HIM, AND YOU WILL LOSE THE LIFE YOU NOW HAVE. It is important that you notice that Jesus **LINKS TOGETHER THE CROSS AND**

**DEATH.** There are several commands here: take up the cross, and FOLLOW HIM. We have said the cross of Christ was at Calvary. We begin **AT CALVARY.**

The word “taketh” is ‘lambano’ and it means **TO GET A HOLD OF.** The word “followeth” is ‘akoloutheo’ and it means **TO BE IN THE SAME WAY WITH, OR TO ACCOMPANY ONE, TO BE WITH ONE, TO BE A PARTAKER.** This is an ACTION COMMAND, A DOING COMMAND. This is where the FAITH OF CHRIST comes into play. This is where we separate FAITH **IN** CHRIST AND ADD FAITH **OF** CHRIST. If you refuse to do it, Jesus says you are not worthy. We know what worthy means, **DESERVING OR SUITABLE.**

Christ died on the cross of Calvary. If we are to follow Him on our own cross, then we too must die with Him at Calvary. One cannot misinterpret these words that are blunt, very clear, very direct. The taking up of the cross will lead directly to **THE BELIEVER LOSING HIS LIFE.** What does Jesus mean, **LOSE YOUR LIFE?** Is this a literal death? The word “life” here is ‘psuche’ and it means **SPIRIT, BREATH, SOUL.** In short, **SOUL DEATH, SPIRIT DEATH.** Remember the Word of God is sharper than any two edged sword, diving asunder the **SOUL AND SPIRIT?** The cross is the instrument God uses to accomplish this.

Your spirit is dead to God, but alive to Satan. It must be **BROUGHT DOWN TO THE DEATH, SO IT CAN BE RESURRECTED TO A NEW LIFE.** It works this way:

## **THE CROSS = THE NARROW WAY**

The narrow way **IS THE CROSS OF JESUS CHRIST.** When you walk it, you are undergoing a soul death, for the spirit and soul are tied together and under the dominion of Satan. All of that has to die; it must be **PUT TO DEATH.** It is not something that **YOU CAN DO BY YOURSELF; IT IS SUPERNATURAL, DONE BY THE POWER OF GOD.** You do not set out to die. Your part of this is to **SEARCH** for the **TRUTH BEHIND IT ALL.** God’s part is to **BRING YOU DOWN TO DIE.** It is very literal, very experiential, and FAITH is the dynamic that keeps you going **when the going gets rough.** That is why they had to **EXHORT THE DISCIPLES TO CONTINUE IN THE FAITH.** It is a lengthy process.

Was Jesus kidding, or was He speaking symbolically in some way? No, He was not kidding one bit. Your spirit and inner heart are **WHOLLY ALIVE UNTO SATAN AND THIS WORLD.** You run your life from your Holy of Holies, where you reign in regal splendor, dressed in the robes of Solomon. The only Shekinah glory in your Holy of Holies is your own. You float above your own mercy seat, excusing or accusing your deeds daily. **THIS INNER SPIRIT SOURCE IS GOING TO DIE. THE SELF UPON THE THRONE IS GOING TO DIE.**

The reason it has to die is quite simple. **NATURAL HUMAN LOVE, PHILEO LOVE IS VERY CONDITIONAL.** It is a love that manipulates to get its own way. It is a type of love that **FLOWS INWARD, NOT OUTWARD.** It sends out signals of love only to be loved in return. If it is not loved in return, the self becomes angry, incensed at this spurned advance. **CONDITIONAL LOVE IS THE LOVE OF ALL HUMAN BEINGS. CONDITIONAL LOVE ALWAYS FLOWS INWARD.**

Agape love, on the other hand, is the **DIRECT OPPOSITE. IT IS WHOLLY UNCONDITIONAL, AND LOVES FOR LOVE’S SAKE.** It is not manipulative, and it seeks only the good of others, and never its own good. It forgives all matter of offense, and it continually looks for the good and the positive, never the negative. When we draw **AGAPE**





**THEY WILL HAVE AN ETERNITY IN HELLFIRE TO REGRET IT. THEY HAVE COUNTED THEIR OWN SOULS UNWORTHY OF CHRIST! DON'T YOU DO THE SAME?**

To be sure that Christ was not fooling here, and that He means exactly what He says, we will examine every command He made to pick up the cross, and He relates it to the DEATH OF THE SOUL/SPIRIT.

*“Then said Jesus unto HIS DISCIPLES,  
IF ANY MAN WILL COME AFTER ME,  
LET HIM DENY HIMSELF,  
AND TAKE UP HIS CROSS, AND  
FOLLOW ME.*

*For whosoever will SAVE HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT;  
and WHOSOEVER WILL  
LOSE HIS LIFE  
FOR MY SAKE, SHALL FIND IT.”  
(Matthew 16:24-25)*

Do you think He was kidding? The word “deny” is ‘aparneomai’ and it means **TO DENY UTTERLY, TO DISOWN, TO ABSTAIN, TO RENOUNCE FULLY**. Look at the sequence of this verse: it shows you the STRAIT GATE, THE NARROW WAY, THE DEATH OF THE SOUL, AND GRANTING OF NEW LIFE. It is a perfect parallel to Matthew Seven, the SERMON ON HOW TO GET SAVED.

1. **DENY YOURSELF = GO SELL EVERYTHING YOU HAVE = ENTER THE STRAIT GATE.**
2. **TAKE UP THE CROSS = ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, DO IT.**
3. **FOLLOW ME = WALK THE NARROW WAY**
4. **LOSE YOUR LIFE = FOLLOW ME INTO DEATH**
5. **FIND A NEW LIFE = LEADETH UNTO ‘LIFE’ OR AGAPE LOVE GRANTED.**

The sequence is perfect; there is total harmony in everything Christ says. There ought to be, HE GOT IT DIRECT FROM GOD THE FATHER, AND GOD THE FATHER KNOWS WHAT HE IS ABOUT. There is no mistake here at all. DO WE KEEP THE SAYINGS OF JESUS AND BUILD OUR HOUSE ON A ROCK, OR DO WE MAKE UP SOME FOOLISH THEOLOGY AND BUILD OUR HOUSE ON THE SAND? The choice is yours, the WAY OF THE TRUTH HAS BEEN SET BEFORE YOU.

*“And when he had called **THE PEOPLE UNTO HIM***

**WITH HIS DISCIPLES ALSO,**  
**HE SAID UNTO THEM,**  
**WHOSOEVER WILL COME AFTER ME,**  
**LET HIM DENY HIMSELF,**  
**AND TAKE UP HIS CROSS,**  
**AND FOLLOW ME.**

***For whosoever will save HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT;  
BUT WHOSOEVER SHALL  
LOSE HIS LIFE FOR MY SAKE  
AND THE GOSPEL'S,  
THE SAME SHALL SAVE IT.”***  
**(Mark 8:34-35)**

We have some additions here we must take note of. There are those that claim that all of this sort of thing is only for DISCIPLES, and not just the ordinary believer. In other words, only those who are really going in to full time service have to follow all of this, not the general everyday person who believes. WRONG. **JESUS CALLED ALL THE PEOPLE, INCLUDING HIS DISCIPLES AND HE TOLD THEM ALL THAT WHOSOEVER OF THEM WAS GOING TO FOLLOW AFTER HIM HAD TO DENY HIMSELF AND DO IT.** The word “lose” is ‘apollumi’ which means **TO DESTROY FULLY, TO UTTER RUIN, TOTAL LOSS.** They had to pick up their cross, they had to die on that cross, or they were not going to find NEW LIFE.

This has nothing to do with martyrdom. Paul said you could lose your life for the FAITH AND STILL END UP IN DAMNATION. Christ is not speaking of martyrdom at all. He is speaking of a very real, literal LOSS OF THE SOUL AND SPIRIT LIFE WITHIN A PERSON. EVERYONE MUST DO IT, FOR THERE IS ONLY ONE WAY: NARROW. Ignore it and you perish.

***“Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him,  
ONE THING THOU LACKEST:  
GO THY WAY, SELL WHATSOEVER THOU HAST,  
AND GIVE TO THE POOR,  
AND THOU SHALT HAVE TREASURE IN HEAVEN:  
AND COME, TAKE UP THE CROSS,  
AND FOLLOW ME.”***  
**(Mark 10:21)**

Again we find a confirmation of the sequence. **GO SELL ALL THAT YOU HAVE = DENY YOURSELF.** It is an UTTER AND COMPLETE REARRANGEMENT OF YOUR PRIORITIES, of what you value. Many people say, “Well, when God tells me to do this, then I’ll do it. I’ll pray about it, and when God answers, then I’ll move”. I have news for you. God gave you a Bible. He expects you to read it, understand it, and comply with it. He will not answer those

types of prayers, nor will He move at all for them. He won't because HE ALREADY TOLD YOU, AND **YOUR DISOBEDIENCE TO AN OVERT WRITTEN COMMAND PLACES YOU IN REBELLION.** He does not fool around with rebellious people, HE REJECTS THEM. You can rationalize all of this however you wish to, God said it, and it's up to you to figure out what He means by it.

***“And he said to THEM ALL,  
IF ANY MAN WILL COME AFTER ME,  
LET HIM DENY HIMSELF,  
AND TAKE UP HIS CROSS DAILY,  
AND FOLLOW ME.***

***FOR WHOSOEVER WILL SAVE HIS LIFE  
SHALL LOSE IT:  
BUT WHOSOEVER WILL LOSE HIS LIFE FOR MY SAKE,  
THE SAME SHALL SAVE IT.***

***FOR WHAT IS A MAN ADVANTAGED,  
IF HE GAIN THE WHOLE WORLD, AND LOSE HIMSELF,  
OR BE CAST AWAY?  
(Luke 9:23-25)***

Here a little and there a little. Line by line, precept by precept. It all starts to come together. We know the word deny means to **DISAVOW OR DENY UTTERLY**. It means to turn your back ON YOUR WORLDLY PURSUITS, PICK UP YOUR CROSS AND FOLLOW CHRIST TO SOUL DEATH. We have an additional word here we need to notice: PICK UP THY CROSS DAILY. The word daily comes from two words. The first is 'kata' which means **INTENSITY**. The second is 'hemtra' which means **THE WHOLE DAY, 24 HOURS**. In other words, Jesus is saying that the follower of Him IS TO TAKE UP HIS CROSS AND FOLLOW HIM FOR THE WHOLE DAY, EVERY DAY. That is an INTENSE SEARCH. It wholly confirms EVERYTHING ELSE WE HAVE FOUND. It is in total harmony with **SEARCH, SEEK, ASK, BEG, CRAVE, HUNGER, THIRST**.

This is not, as most Christians think, a call to daily service with good works. This has nothing to do with good works. **THIS IS THE WALK OF THE NARROW WAY**, AND JESUS IS TELLING YOU THAT THIS WALK REQUIRES YOU TO FOLLOW HIM 24 HOURS A DAY. You wake up with it, you walk with it, and you lie down with it. It follows you wherever you go. To say this is not true is to deny the obvious words and commands of Christ, He said it. It is there, and you can look up the words if you do not like it. The only question we have is this: DID HE MEAN IT?

If the walk of the narrow way is so intense, and we have to spend a large part of our day involved in this search for THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE, then it should begin to dawn upon us that PERHAPS THIS IS WHY CHRIST SAID WE SHOULD TAKE NO THOUGHT WHATEVER FOR TOMORROW, FOOD, CLOTHING, DRINK OR SHELTER. GOD WILL PROVIDE IT. Now the rationale is this, IF EVERYBODY DID IT, THERE WOULD BE NO JOBS, NO

MONEY, NO GOVERNMENT, NO NOTHING. God knows that ONLY A FEW WILL DO IT. He knew that from the very beginning. That rationale is just that, a foolish rationale.

To prove that Christ is IN FACT REFERRING TO BUSINESS AND CAREER PURSUITS, AND THE GAINING OF WEALTH IN THIS WORLD, HE ESPECIALLY MENTIONS IT IN RELATION TO THIS SUBJECT. He says to what advantage is it for a person to PURSUE THE THINGS OF THIS WORLD, THE WEALTH OF THIS WORLD, AND LOSE HIS SOUL? Just before this, He says that it will cause great division in the home. When you add all of this together, it does paint a portrait that IS CONSISTENT IN MEANING.

How does one pursue the goods of this world? HE SPENDS HIS TIME IN BUSINESS. HE WORKS ALL DAY. HE WORKS AT NIGHT. HE WORKS WHEN HE PLAYS. He spends HIS TIME AT WORK. He plays up a business, a practice, a pursuit, a career. He goes into training, goes to school, and learns a trade. He gets good at it. He makes many contacts, and he begins to become a WEALTHY MAN. His business thrives, he makes a good profit, and he is able to enjoy the good things of life, which are THE PLEASURES OF THIS WORLD. The Christian businessman says that GOD HAS BLESSED HIM. But was it God? Satan can bless as well, TO KEEP ONE FROM THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. So before the rich man, stands the strait gate, the narrow way. Will he leave his blessings behind, count them as naught, and find THE LIVING CHRIST?

There are many businessmen who claim that if Jesus told them to, they would sell their business tomorrow and take up the search. Jesus already told them to. He will not tell them again. The clues as to if a man WOULD IN FACT SELL HIS BUSINESS IS BASED UPON THE TIME HE WILL GIVE THE LORD. If he spends all of his time in business, and comes home tired, he will not give any time to the Lord, or only a passing nod. He is in deception; he is in a delusion. He is simply rationalizing his refusal to comply with the plain and direct commands of the Lord. He will say, "I have to, I cannot leave my business, I have to earn money for my family". He is the rich young ruler. How hard it is for a rich man to enter into heaven.

We then have to ask if God or Christ ever contradict themselves. Jesus gave the warning in different ways to not pursue the things of this world. Here are some VERY DIRECT WARNINGS:

- 1. The first warning is in the Sermon on the Mount (Matthew 6:19-34)**
- 2. His second warning is in Matthew 16:26.**
- 3. His third warning is in Mark 8:36-37.**
- 4. His fourth warning is in Mark 10:21-25.**
- 5. His fifth warning is in Luke 9:25.**
- 6. His sixth warning is in Luke 14:16-24.**
- 7. His seventh warning is in Luke 14:25-33.**
- 8. His eighth warning is in John 12:24-26.**
- 9. His ninth warning is in 1 John 2:15-17.**

Is it coincidence that THREE STRIKES AND YOU'RE OUT, AND THERE ARE NINE INNINGS BEFORE THE GAME IS OVER? What Jesus is getting at here IS THE TIME SPENT IN THE PURSUIT OF THE LORD. The proof of the SINCERITY OF ANY PERSON IS THE TIME OR MONEY HE SPENDS ON THAT ITEM. Where your treasure is, your heart is also. Where is your concern? Where do you spend most of your money? What takes up the vast majority of your time? If he spends all of his time in business, and virtually none in his search for

THE TRUTH, then the Lord knows perfectly well this man's religion is vanity. The call is for a total and complete rearrangement of priorities.

If on the other hand, if the man will REARRANGE TOTALLY HIS PRIORITIES, SO THAT HE CAN SPEND THE LARGEST AMOUNT OF TIME WITH THE SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH, then God counts that as proof of real FAITH. IT IS A MATTER OF PRIORITIES. The word daily shows us that Jesus expects this all day, every day, and the implication is for a long time. God said He would supply the needs of the man, and will also the man's family. God however is AUSTERE, and He does not say He will support you in the MANNER TO WHICH YOU HAVE GROWN ACCUSTOMED.

The point being that Jesus Christ always relates the PICKING UP THE CROSS TO TWO THINGS: (1) TURNING YOUR BACK UPON THE WORLD AND (2) DYING A VERY LITERAL AND EXPERIENTIAL SOUL DEATH WHILE YOU ARE ALIVE. It sounds like a mystery. It sounds like utter foolishness. The vast majority of Christians thought it was utter foolishness, for they refused to do it. Jesus said IF YOU DO NOT, YOU CANNOT BE HIS DISCIPLE. It is not optional; it is mandatory.

## FURTHER PROOF WE ARE TO DIE

*“Verily, verily, I say unto you,*

*EXCEPT A CORN OF WHEAT*

*FALL INTO THE GROUND AND DIE,*

*IT ABIDETH ALONE:*

***BUT IF IT DIE, IT BRINGETH FORTH MUCH FRUIT.***

*He that LOVETH HIS LIFE SHALL LOSE IT;  
AND HE THAT HATETH HIS LIFE IN THIS WORLD  
SHALL KEEP IT UNTO LIFE ETERNAL.*

*IF ANY MAN SERVE ME,  
LET HIM FOLLOW ME;  
AND WHERE I AM, THERE SHALL ALSO MY SERVANT BE:*

*IF ANY MAN SERVE ME, HIM WILL MY FATHER HONOUR.”*

*(John 12:24-26)*

This verse is a total confirmation of all that has gone before, and gives us even more insight as to what Jesus means when He says pick up the cross and follow Him. It confirms He means there is a death of the soul involved. When Jesus uses the term VERILY, VERILY, He is attempting to warn you of the absolute necessity of something. The word “verily” is ‘amen’ and it means

**FIRM, TRUSTWORTHY, SURE, OR ABSOLUTELY POSITIVE.** When it is used twice, it is FOR A REASON.

“EXCEPT A CORN OF WHEAT...” The word “except” is ‘ean me’ which means **UNLESS OR EXCEPT**. It is a **CONDITIONAL PHRASE**. In other words, what ever follows **MUST BE DONE**. The use of the word CORN OF WHEAT is importantly singular. A **SINGLE CORN OF WHEAT**. Wheat is a code word for **CHRISTIAN**. Except that an **INDIVIDUAL CHRISTIAN, OR UNLESS AN INDIVIDUAL CHRISTIAN**. And notice what part of the wheat it is: **THE CORN, THE KERNEL, THE SEED, THE CENTER OF, THE SOURCE OF LIFE WITHIN THE GRAIN**. Again we have a positive proof that Jesus is referring to the **INNERMOST WELLSPRING OF LIFE, THE INNER HEART, THE INNER WILL, THE GREAT HOLY OF HOLIES**.

What must this corn of wheat do? It must **FALL INTO THE GROUND AND DIE**. The word “fall” means to **FALL DOWN, FAIL, TO BE BROUGHT DOWN**. As the ground is the lowest part we can fall down to while alive, it is symbolic of being brought down to the lowest level. If it falls down to the ground and dies. The word “die” is ‘apothnesko’ which means **DIE OFF, BE DEAD, DEATH, OR SLAIN**. A **LONG TERM PROCESS OF BEING PUT TO DEATH**.

Now we come back to the word except. Jesus says **EXCEPT YOU DIE AN INNER DEATH, WHICH I CALL SOUL DEATH FOR LACK OF A BETTER TERM, YOU WILL “ABIDE ALONE”**. This is a very important clue to what Scripture means by **SATANIC DOMINION, BEING SLAVES, PRISONERS, BOUND IN CHAINS**. We are captives. We are held in bondage, held in chains. What does it all mean? The word “abideth” is ‘meno’ which means **CONTINUE, DWELL, ENDURE, REMAINS, STANDS, TARRIES**. The word “alone” is ‘monos’ which means **SOLE, SINGLE, BY ITSELF, ALONE, ALONENESS, SEPARATE UNTO ITSELF**. This is crucial for us to understand.

The death that Christ requires of us **IS TO BRING US INTO TRUE LIFE**. If we refuse to do it, He says **WE REMAIN ALONE**. That means our whole lives **HAVE BEEN LIVED ALONE**. **WE ARE ALL BY OURSELVES**. **WE ARE SEPARATE, ALONE, UTTERLY ALONE**. If we refuse the strait gate and the narrow way, **WE WILL REMAIN, OR CONTINUE IN OUR ALONENESS**. The human soul is like a “black hole” discovered in outer space. A black hole is a place in which all light, all energy, all of everything is simply sucked into it and vanishes. It devours everything in its path. The human soul is like that, for it devours all of the **LOVE AND ATTENTION IT CAN OBTAIN, AND IT VANISHES WITHIN**. The human soul **WANTS TO BE LOVED MORE THAN ANYTHING ELSE. IT WANTS TO BE ACCEPTED, AND RESPECTED. IT WANTS TO BE RECOGNIZED. IT WANTS TO BE IMPORTANT**.

Everything is **INWARD FLOWING**. **ALL OF THE LOVE IS BROUGHT INTO THE SOUL. ALL OF THE ATTENTION IS BROUGHT INTO THE SOUL. ALL OF THE ADMIRATION OF OTHERS IS BROUGHT INTO THE SOUL**. The soul becomes like a balloon that sucks in all of the love, admiration, attention, respect and prestige it can find, and **IT GETS PUFFED UP WITH PRIDE AND ARROGANCE**. “Look at me”, and the soul struts and shows off by whatever means it can do so. **IT IS AS A BLACK HOLE, ALWAYS CONSUMING, CONSUMING, ALWAYS LOOKING, LOOKING, LOOKING**. It will never find what it is looking for. **IT WILL ABIDE ALONE**.

What the soul is looking for, and does not recognize is **JESUS CHRIST, WHO IS AGAPE LOVE**. Phileo loves, in all of their forms, and all human agape love is **ALWAYS CONDITIONAL**. It is conditional because the fall of man **MADE IT CONDITIONAL**. We can

say all we want that we love others, but Jesus says it is a lie. It is a deception, a delusion. **WE LOVE ONLY OURSELVES, AND WHEN WE LOVE OTHERS, WE LOVE THEM TO GET SOMETHING BACK.** IT IS ALWAYS CONDITIONAL. AT THE CENTER OF OUR BEING IS A STARVED, LOVE CRAVED, ATTENTION CRAVED HOLIER THAN THOU KING, UPON THE THRONE OF DEATH AND ALONENESS. It must be, and HAS TO BE EXTERMINATED.

WHETHER YOU BELIEVE IT OR NOT. LIKE IT OR NOT, YOU ARE utterly alone. YOU CAN HOLD YOUR WIFE, HUSBAND OR BELOVED BUT YOU ARE ALONE. You can pour out your soul to others, but you are still alone. IN THE END YOU ARE A PRISONER OF YOUR NATURE. You were born alone, you live alone, and you die alone. You were born in darkness, you live in darkness, and you die in darkness. You are a prisoner, a captive, held there in absolute chains by Satan. You cannot get outside of yourself no matter how hard you try. You can work charity, do for others all of your life and your NATURE STILL REMAINS THE SAME. YOU ARE ALONE. You will forever be alone.

The conscious mind is not aware of how utterly alone it really is. Everyone senses in their solitude that something is wrong, something is missing, something is just not right. We crowd our minds with thoughts, things to do, places to go, people to visit. It only hides the problem; it only masks the problem. The need for being busy, the need to socialize, the need to keep active is in some measure a way of escape. But we cannot escape. In the end, **OUR SIN FINDS US OUT. IN THE END WE WILL REALIZE THE AWFULNESS OF THE HUMAN CONDITION.** By then it is too late.

Jesus warns us to CONFRONT HEAD ON OUR CONDITION. He tells us to LEAVE THE WORLD OF BUSINESS AND ACTIVITY AND FIND SOLITUDE. There, in our solitude, in our aloneness, Christ, via the Scriptures, begins to show us what the problem is. If we will continue IN HIS DOCTRINE, WE WILL EVENTUALLY FIND THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE, AND THAT TRUTH WILL SET US FREE. It is a long, arduous journey, full of pitfalls, full of deceptions. But if we honestly seek, God will pull us through it all.

Jesus offers us a way out. It is the way to freedom. THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD FILLS THE VACUUM, **AND THE LOVE OF CHRIST BEGINS TO FLOW OUTWARDS, LIKE A RIVER OF WATER.** The more you give, the more love you have to give. When agape love comes, when it is fully realized in the soul, FREEDOM FROM THE CHAINS BREAKS FORTH.

Inside every soul is a VACUUM CREATED BY THE LOSS OF AGAPE LOVE. That inner vacuum IS LIKE A VACUUM CLEANER, THAT SUCKS EVERYTHING AROUND IT UP AND INGESTS IT INTO ITSELF. That vacuum will not be filled until or unless the SOUL PICKS UP HIS/HER CROSS AND WALKS THE NARROW WAY TO SOUL DEATH. THAT SOUL MUST EXPERIENCE HIS/HER UTTER ALONENESS, UTTER DESTITUTION BECAUSE IT IS THIS EXPERIENCE THAT IS ENTERING THE DEATH. THE DEATH IS REAL, IT IS EXPERIENTIAL, AND THE WALK OF THE NARROW WAY IS TO SHOW YOU HOW DEAD YOU ARE. It is from this destitution that the soul becomes DESPERATE. It is from this REVEALED NEED, THAT THE HUNGER AND THE THIRST COME FROM. Thus hunger and thirst after truth feeds your faith, and they act together to propel you through.

The void created in the human soul by the lack of agape love can only be filled by the **GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE.** It is agape love that gives us NEW LIFE. It is the agape love of Christ that



resurrects us into new creatures! It is agape love that is the SPIRIT OF CHRIST, THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD.

It is the VOID OR LACK OF AGAPE LOVE THAT MAKES US WHAT WE ARE. We cannot escape ourselves, it is beyond our ability. Man cannot change his inner heart. He cannot change his essential nature. He can dabble around in the outer parameters of the mind, but the INNER HEART IS UTTERLY AND TOTALLY OFF LIMITS. God made it that way. THE EMPTINESS, THE VACUUM is not recognized by the conscious mind/intellect for what it is. It is hidden, deep within. It is up to the individual to BEGIN THE SEARCH. It is up to the individual to LEAVE THE WORLD, TO REARRANGE THE PRIORITIES. The “way” is clearly defined. You may enter in or not.

Man is not aware of the KINGDOM OF SATAN, nor is he aware of the KINGDOM OF GOD. Both are HIDDEN, BOTH ARE SECRET, BOTH ARE MYSTERIES. The occult, and those in the new Age, that refuse the way of Jesus Christ, if they search, will be INITIATED INTO THE KINGDOM OF SATAN. It is called illumination. Satan always poses as LUCIFER, THE LIGHT BEARER TO THESE PEOPLE. That is his disguise for the SO CALLED RIGHTEOUS SOULS. For the unrighteous, the more base, the evil people, HE COMES AS SATAN. He does not mask himself, for he does not need to. For everyone in between, he has a deception, and a delusion to match their needs.

Jesus gave us only ONE WAY to UNMASK ALL OF THE DELUSIONS, ALL OF THE DECEPTIONS. IT IS CALLED STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. It is most unpleasant because it involves FIRST OF ALL, A DECISION TO LEAVE THE WORLD BEHIND, AND SECOND OF ALL, A TENACITY OF PURPOSE, AN ABIDING FAITH. It is the exact opposite of the immediate, instant joy and laughter of modern Christianity.

***“For the preaching OF THE CROSS IS TO THEM***  
***THAT PERISH***  
***FOOLISHNESS;***  
***BUT UNTO US WHICH ARE SAVED IT IS THE POWER OF GOD.”***  
***(1 Corinthians 1:18)***

Modern Christianity counts their own CROSS UTTER FOOLISHNESS. They do not count the CROSS OF CHRIST FOOLISHNESS, WHAT THEY COUNT FOOLISH IS THAT THEY THEMSELVES MUST PICK IT UP AND DIE THE DEATH. Their theology claims Christ did that for them. They carry the doctrine of the SUBSTITUTIONARY ATONEMENT BEYOND THAT WHICH IT COVERS. Faith hath a work, and that work is that YOU pick up YOUR CROSS and that YOU die a SOUL DEATH. The preaching of the cross carries with it both the cross of Christ and YOUR CROSS. To them that have picked it up, and walked it, TO THEM THAT ARE SAVED, IT IS THE POWER OF GOD. To all others foolishness.

The vast majority of Christians PERISH. THE PREACHING OF THE CROSS OF CHRIST WAS FOOLISHNESS UNTO THEM. They did not understand THEY HAD TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE (PICK UP THEIR OWN CROSS) AND WALK THE NARROW WAY (DIE

THE SOUL DEATH). They had a form of GODLINESS, but they **DENIED THE POWER OF GOD**. The power of God is IN THE CROSS. The power of God is THROUGH DEATH. We must die before we may be given new life.

*“But God forbid that I should glory,  
SAVE IN THE **CROSS OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST**,  
BY WHOM THE WORLD IS CRUCIFIED UNTO ME,  
AND I UNTO THE WORLD.”  
(Galatians 6:14)*

It is the CROSS OF JESUS CHRIST THAT THE WORLD IS CRUCIFIED UNTO ME, AND I UNTO THE WORLD. What is Paul saying? We know we have been commanded to pick up our cross. We know that the cross is an instrument of soul death. We know we have been commanded to die to our life IN THIS WORLD. We know that AGAPE LOVE IS WHAT WE NEED FOR LIFE. By walking the narrow way, WHICH IS THE CROSS OF CHRIST, we CRUCIFY OURSELVES AND OUR NATURAL LOVES, **AND PUT ON AGAPE LOVE, AND THIS BESTOWMENT CRUCIFIES ME TO THE WORLD.** We are now alien one to another. The world is no longer a friend of mine, but my enemy. I am a stranger, a traveler.

It is this PUTTING ON OF AGAPE LOVE THAT CRUCIFIES ME TO THE WORLD, FOR I AM NO LONGER OF THE WORLD. I am a **NEW CREATURE** IN CHRIST JESUS.

*“For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision  
availeth any thing, nor  
uncircumcision,  
**BUT A NEW CREATURE.**”  
(Galatians 6:15)*

Paul is telling us that neither law keeping or not keeping the law matter not. They do not **AVAIL US OF ANYTHING**. It is not the point. All your good works, all of your efforts, all of your offerings, good thoughts, good deeds and all of it are WORTHLESS, FIT ONLY FOR THE DUNG HILL! They do not have anything to do with SALVATION. What saves a person is AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, FOR WHEN IT OCCURS, YOU ARE A NEW CREATURE, BORN AGAIN, RESURRECTED OUT OF DEATH TO A NEW LIFE. That is the only thing that **DOES AVAIL YOU SOMETHING**. To get it, THE CROSS OF JESUS CHRIST MUST BE BORNE BY YOU.

## **THE NATURE OF THE NARROW WAY**

The strait gate appears to be the **DECISION TO PICK UP THE CROSS**. It is switching from faith IN JESUS, TO THE FAITH **OF** JESUS. Jesus had the CROSS SET BEFORE HIM. He prayed that the cup pass from Him. YET HE DID IT ANYHOW. You have YOUR CROSS SET BEFORE YOU. YOU DO NOT WANT TO DO IT, BUT DO IT YOU MUST IF YOU ARE TO COME TO THE LIVING JESUS CHRIST! That is why Jesus called the ‘way’ NARROW. The word “narrow” is ‘thlibo’ and it means **TO AFFLICT, TO SUFFER TRIBULATION, TO HAVE TROUBLE, TO HAVE AGONY OR ANGUISH OF SOUL, TO APPLY PRESSURE, TO PLACE UNDER PRESSURE**. From God’s point of view, it means TO TRY, TO PLACE UNDER TRIAL, TO INSPECT AND SEE IF THE FAITH PROFESSED IS GENUINE OR NOT.

*“Confirming the souls of*

*THE DISCIPLES (CONVERTED BELIEVERS, FOLLOWERS),  
AND EXHORTING THEM TO CONTINUE IN THE FAITH,*

*AND THAT*

*WE MUST*

*THROUGH MUCH TRIBULATION*

*ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”*

*(Acts 14:22)*

This verse is loaded with information for us. Jesus said we must be born again to enter the Kingdom of God. We have discovered that being born again means to have a new heart, and a new love within. Being born again means to have NEW LIFE GRANTED. We also know that Jesus claimed LIFE was at the end of the narrow way, which means we must walk it to obtain it.

We have here a complete confirmation that CONVERSION IS NOT REGENERATION. These believers have not yet ENTERED THE KINGDOM OF GOD. A person enters the Kingdom upon earth **THROUGH REGENERATION**. The Kingdom of God includes an EARTHLY KINGDOM, A KINGDOM WITHIN THE HEARTS OF MEN AND WOMEN.

The **regenerate** soul enters the earthly Kingdom of God. It is not visible to the world, for it lies deep within, buried to the world at large. Jesus said the Kingdom of God was within us. God resides in the **tabernacle of the invisible man**, in the center of his being, in the Holy of Holies, the **SEAT OF LIFE**. He does not reside in the unregenerate soul, but only in those that are REGENERATED. The Kingdom of God on earth, in the GOSPEL AGE is a spiritual Kingdom. It lies within the regenerated spirits of born again believers. It is not of this world. It has nothing to do with this world.

We have a group of dedicated, sincere disciples here that are **fully converted** to the Lord Jesus Christ. We have to examine what is said:

1. They are to be confirmed. The word “confirming” is ‘episterizo’ and it means **TO SUPPORT FURTHER, TO RE-ESTABLISH, TO STRENGTHEN, TO SUPPORT**. We might say to UPLIFT AND GIVE ENCOURAGEMENT. Why is this necessary if the modern faith gospel is correct? This sound like the disciples are going through a severe trial and they need MUCH UPLIFTING, MUCH SUPPORT, MUCH ENCOURAGEMENT TO CONTINUE.

2. There is to be exhorting. The word “exhorting” is ‘parakaleo’ which means **INVOKE, IMPLORE, BESEECH, ENTREAT**. It means to **BEG THEM TO CONTINUE IN THEIR COURSE, TO NOT BE DISCOURAGED, TO KEEP ON PRESSING ON**. Again, if the modern faith gospel is correct, then why is this necessary? This implies that indeed the disciples are in deep trial, for otherwise they would not need this sort of preaching to. This seems diametrically opposed to the **ANON WITH GREAT JOY AND LAUGHTER CROWD**.

3. They must continue. The word “continue” is ‘emmeno’ and it means **TO STAY IN, TO PERSEVERE, TO CONTINUE**. In short, **TO STICK IT OUT TO THE END**.

4. They **MUST**. The word “must” is ‘dei’ and it means **BINDING, NECESSARY, MUST, ABSOLUTE REQUIREMENT**. It means that no one is exempt, **ALL MUST UNDERGO IT**. Jesus said there was only **ONE WAY**. He said it was **NARROW**. The word narrow means full of trouble. There is **NO SALVATION APART FROM IT. WE MUST GO THROUGH MUCH TRIBULATION IF WE ARE TO ENTER THE KINGDOM OF GOD**. No exceptions. If you say, “my salvation was not like that”, then you are not saved, for **EVERYONE COMES IN UNDER THE SAME ROPE, THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS TO THE COMMON TESTIMONY**.

5. The word “through” is ‘dia’ which means **CHANNEL, PASSAGE, A WAY**. It is quite the same thing as **WAY**. There is a way through which we enter heaven: **IT IS NARROW**.

They are exhorted to **CONTINUE IN THE FAITH**. We know that the word continue means to **ABIDE IN, REMAIN IN, BE STEADFAST IN**. These souls are real converted believers, but they must **REMAIN IN THE FAITH**. Why? Because to **ACTUALLY ENTER IN TO THE NEW COVENANT, WHICH GAINS US ENTRANCE TO THE KINGDOM OF GOD, WE MUST SUFFER MUCH TRIBULATION**. These people are walking the narrow way, and they are under much **TRIBULATION**. The unregenerate Christian theology of today attempts to claim this means they are under persecution, and that the Kingdom comes after they die.

It is the usual reversing of Scripture, the usual perverting of Scripture, the usual twisting of Scripture to prove something false. Jesus was adamant in His claim: **THE NARROW WAY IS A WAY OF MUCH TRIBULATION**. It has nothing to do with worldly persecutions. It has nothing to do with pressure applied by others. Those things will happen, but that is not the tribulation spoken of here. **THE NARROW WAY IS A WAY IN WHICH GOD HIMSELF APPLIES THE PRESSURE, THE ANGUISH, THE AGONY OF A SOUL GOING DOWN TO THE DEATH.** Scripture proves it.

These believers have not yet been regenerated. They are to continue in the faith; they are to suffer much tribulation as God brings them down to judgment. They are undergoing a form of the great White Throne Judgment right here on earth, while they live. They are going to be exposed to their **ugly, nasty, evil and destitute inner heart**.

The word “much” is ‘polus’ (the same as many) and it means **A GREAT AMOUNT, MUCHLY, LARGELY, ABUNDANT, A GREAT AMOUNT**. The word for “tribulation” is ‘thilipsis’ and it means **ANGUISH, AFFLICTION, AGONY, TROUBLE, GREAT**

**PRESSURE.** In other words, the soul embarked upon the narrow way is going to SUFFER MUCH DISTRESS OF SOUL, AGONY OF SOUL, ANGUISH AND PRESSURE. It is exactly the same meaning as Jesus said when He used the term NARROW. This verse is explaining to you and me a little more about the NARROW WAY.

If you underwent this over a period of time, would you not think you might MOURN AND WEEP? Would you not think you might at times come UNGLUED AND BESIDE YOURSELF? Do you suppose that God chose the words mourning and weeping for a reason? Just as the NARROW WAY LEADS TO THE KINGDOM OF GOD, SO DOES THIS MUCH TRIBULATION LEAD TO THE KINGDOM OF GOD. Coincidence? You decide. It should be pointed out that the word **CONTINUE, ABIDE IN, AND REMAIN UNDER, IMPLY PATIENCE IS REQUIRED.** Patience is the opposite of immediate, instant.

This all sounds very difficult, that only a FEW might be willing to pay the price:

*“And if the **RIGHTEOUS**  
**SCARCELY BE SAVED,**  
where shall the **UNGODLY AND SINNER APPEAR?”***  
(1 Peter 4:18)

The word “scarcely” as you know is ‘molis’, which means **WITH DIFFICULTY, HARDLY ABLE, WITH MUCH WORK, WITH MUCH TOIL, WITH MUCH LABOR.** The root is ‘mogis’ which means **TO TOIL WITH DIFFICULTY.** It is the opposite of easy; it is the opposite of the wide gate and broad way. It confirms totally the strait gate and narrow way and why Christ said only a few would undergo it. Jesus said the others will **NOT HAVE POWER ENOUGH TO ACCOMPLISH IT.** This certainly sounds like a SEVERE TRIAL. How do we reconcile this with INSTANT SALVATION, IMMEDIATE UNION, FINDING A LIFE AT CONVERSION?

The New Testament writers all confirm that there is a **MAJOR FIGHT, STRUGGLE AND BATTLE BEFORE VICTORY IS OBTAINED.** The victory is to OVERCOME THE BARRIERS ERECTED BY THE SELF AND SATAN, THE BARRIERS OF HOSTILITY AND HATRED TOWARDS GOD. Few will even admit they are there, let alone attempt to destroy them.

*“**FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH,**  
**LAY HOLD ON ETERNAL LIFE,**  
**WHEREUNTO THOU ART ALSO CALLED,**  
**AND HAST PROFESSED A GOOD PROFESSION**  
**BEFORE MANY WITNESSES.”**  
(1 Timothy 6:12)*

Notice that FAITH IS USED DURING THIS WHOLE FIGHT. It requires an ABIDING, CONTINUING FAITH, THE FAITH OF CHRIST, TO FIGHT THIS FIGHT. It is just the opposite of a DECISION FOR CHRIST, OR THE ACCEPTANCE OF CHRIST AND HIS CLAIMS TO BEING YOUR LORD AND SAVIOR. This is a BATTLE, A FIGHT OVER A LONG PERIOD OF TIME. The end of the fight is the granting of ETERNAL LIFE, WHICH IS IN AGAPE LOVE:

*“And this is the RECORD, THAT GOD*

**HATH GIVEN TO US ETERNAL LIFE,**

**AND THIS LIFE IS IN THE SON.”**

**(1 John 5:11)**

Notice the PRESENT/PAST TENSE APPLICATION: “HATH GIVEN TO US”. If eternal life HAS BEEN GRANTED TO US, THEN WE POSSESS IT ALREADY. It is not something we shall obtain to, it is something that IS ALREADY PRESENT IN THE REGENERATED SON OF GOD! That is why the **REGENERATE SOUL ENTERS INTO REST**. He is under the rest of AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. The issue between Him and God is settled.

The word “fight” is ‘agonizomai’ and it means **TO STRUGGLE, TO FIGHT AN ADVERSARY, TO LABOR FERVENTLY**. It is identical to the word for NARROW. Jesus said we must STRIVE TO ENTER, now we are being told to FIGHT THE FIGHT TO THE LAYING HOLD OF ETERNAL LIFE.

If we are to “lay hold of” eternal life, then obviously there is **AN END OR DESTINATION WE ARE TO ACHIEVE, TO ARRIVE AT**. Jesus said we should seek until we **FIND**. He said we should knock until the door was **OPENED**. There is an EVIDENCE WE WILL OBTAIN TO PROVE WE HAVE FOUND IT. IT IS FULLY EXPERIENTIAL, IT IS FULLY SUPERNATURALLY REVEALED, AND IT IS FULLY CONFIRMED IN THE SCRIPTURE. By two or more witnesses is anything established.

We find again the differences between conversion and regeneration here. We can prove, and will do so, that eternal life is granted the believer **AT REGENERATION**. The issue between God and the believer is **forever settled** in the heavenly places, **WHEN AGAPE LOVE IS REVEALED, ACCEPTED AND BESTOWED**. The regenerated soul is **HIDDEN IN CHRIST**. He has ETERNAL LIFE. It is the FIGHT OF FAITH TO LAY HOLD OF ETERNAL LIFE. When AGAPE LOVE IS FOUND, AND ACCEPTED, ETERNAL LIFE IS GRANTED. This will be examined fully in the final report of this DARK LIGHT series.

We are called, and we make a profession of faith. We then, if we are obedient to Christ, enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way to LIFE. That life is ETERNAL, FOR CHRIST IS ETERNAL. Christ has no other type of life, for His life’s essence is DIVINE AGAPE LOVE. Timothy is being urged on by Paul to CONTINUE THE FIGHT UNTIL HE LAYS HOLD OF ETERNAL LIFE. Paul knew he would have, as long as HE CONTINUED TO FIGHT ON, TO PRESS ON TO THE END OF HIS FAITH. How did Paul know? Because the Scripture

**GUARANTEES SALVATION TO ALL THOSE THAT OBEY.** It us a sure thing. Paul said he had FOUGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH. He had KEPT THE COURSE. Nothing else mattered to Paul.

Notice that the fighting of THE FIGHT OF FAITH PRECEDES the laying hold of agape love. You do not get agape love first, and then fight the fight of faith! THE FIGHTING COMES PRIOR TO THE LAYING HOLD OF. Do not put the cart before the horse. Thus:

***“I have FOUGHT A GOOD FIGHT,*  
***I HAVE FINISHED MY COURSE,***  
***I HAVE KEPT THE FAITH.”***  
**(2 Timothy 4:7)****

The word for “fought” and “fight” here also is ‘agonizomai’ which means **TO HAVE LABORED, A FERVENT STRUGGLE.** The word “kept” is ‘tereo’ which means **PREVENT FROM ESCAPING, HELD ON TO, KEPT.** This implies an ALL DAY, EVERY DAY FIGHT, FOR THE FIGHT LASTED RIGHT TO THE END. It was time for Paul to be killed, and he knew his ministry was over. Paul was certainly under the impression that there was a **REAL BATTLE INVOLVED, AND A VERY EXPERIENTIAL ONE AT THAT, FOR HE KNEW HE HAD WON IT.** Paul knew he won the victory. It was not done by an instant decision some time in the ancient past, but by a constant and abiding FAITH, WITH MILLIONS OF DECISIONS DAILY TO KEEP THE BATTLE LINES STRONG, and THE DEFENSES SUPPLIED.

This seems a bit removed from the ANON WITH GREAT JOY CHRISTIANITY BEING SOLD ON THE MARKET TODAY. Could that be why there is no power in the Church today? Is it because they do not understand the cross, and what it means? That they have to pick it up, and die with Christ? Is that why the ‘many’ are rejected?

***“And THIS IS THE CONDEMNATION,***  
***THAT LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE) IS COME INTO THE WORLD,***  
***AND MEN LOVED DARKNESS (THEIR OWN PHILEO LOVES)***  
***RATHER THAN LIGHT,***  
***BECAUSE THEIR DEEDS WERE EVIL (DONE IN PHILEO LOVE).***  
***FOR EVERY ONE THAT DOETH EVIL (ALL OF MANKIND)***  
***HATETH THE LIGHT (OF AGAPE LOVE),***  
***NEITHER COMETH TO THE LIGHT,***  
***LEST HIS DEEDS SHOULD BE REPROVED.”***  
**(John 3:19-20)**

Although we have seen this verse before, it is a very important part of our study, for it again verifies the **NARROW WAY**. There is only ONE CONDEMNATION. There are not two, three or four. ONLY ONE CONDEMNATION. The issue is **THE AGAPE LOVE LIGHT OF GOD. THERE IS NO OTHER ISSUE**. MAN MUST WALK THE NARROW WAY AND BE JUDGED BY THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE WHILE STILL ALIVE. It confirms that the narrow way is **INDEED A FORM OF THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT**. The light of God is His pure agape love essence. That is the STANDARD BY WHICH HIS MORAL AND ETHICAL UNIVERSE ARE MEASURED BY. God sent that light to the world THROUGH JESUS CHRIST, who WALKED THE WALK OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. God gave Him power to verify who Christ was. The world HATED CHRIST, BECAUSE HE EXPOSED THEIR SIN. By contrasting their behavior, morals, and ethics with God's standard, THEY UTTERLY CONDEMNED THEMSELVES.

Notice how Jesus words it. **AGAPE LOVE (LIGHT) HAS COME INTO THE WORLD, AND MEN HATED AGAPE LOVE**. They could not bear to have their deeds HELD UP TO THE **AGAPE LOVE STANDARD** TO HAVE THEIR DEED REPROVED BY IT. The reproof STINGS WITH REBUKE, SMARTS FROM REPROOF, THE SCOURGING IS NOT PLEASANT. It exposes the believer to everything that **the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE CANNOT APPROVE OF**. It proves totally that the narrow way is a method that God uses to CONVINCe, CONVICT AND REPROVE ANYONE WHO WILL COME OF:

***“And when he is come, he will REPROVE THE WORLD  
OF SIN,  
AND OF RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
AND OF JUDGMENT.”  
(John 16:8)***

**1. SIN** – The primary sin of man is that he does not AGAPE LOVE. He does not have it in his soul. He is destitute of this form of love. Whatever love man does have is a shallow and conditional love, totally manipulative, totally conditional. Those loves, called phileo loves in their many and varied forms, CANNOT STAND THE REBUKE OF DIVINE AGAPE LOVE. Because man will not FACE THE TRUTH, HE IS CONDEMNED BY THE TRUTH. When a soul dies, and this AGAPE LOVE QUESTION HAS NOT BEEN SETTLED, HE FACES IT AT **THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT**. Because the soul is dead, **CHRIST CANNOT SAVE THAT SOUL**.

The offer of salvation in Christ is made **ONLY TO THE LIVING**. If a person will respond to the COMMANDS OF CHRIST, and enter in to the strait gate, and walk the narrow way to have his deeds REPROVED BY THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE, and if that soul will CONFESS HIS SIN OF AGAPE LOVE DESTITUTION, FROM HIS HEART OF HEARTS, AND CRY OUT TO GOD FOR MERCY, THEN CHRIST WILL COME. He will step forward out of nowhere and offer **HIS CLOAK OF AGAPE LOVE TO THAT SOUL**. That soul went through his own **GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT WHILE ALIVE**. Because he is alive while this judgment takes place, CHRIST CAN SAVE THAT SOUL. The STANDARD OF JUDGMENT IN BOTH CASES IS IDENTICAL: AGAPE LOVE.



**2. RIGHTEOUSNESS** – the word “righteousness” is ‘dikaiosune’ which means **EQUITY, JUSTIFICATION**. It comes from ‘dikaios’, which means **INNOCENT, HOLY, JUST**. I would ask, what is it that makes God JUST? Is it just because He is God? Satan is a God, a lesser God, but is he JUST? That which is the **MEASURE TO PROVE JUSTIFICATION IS AGAPE LOVE, PURE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE IS THE STANDARD**. It is the agape love essence of God and Christ that make them **JUSTIFIED, JUST, RIGHTEOUS**.

We have proven that the **AGAPE LOVE ISSUE IS THE ONLY ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD**. Why? Because **THE STANDARD, THE MEASURE OF GOD IS THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. HE HAS IT, WE DO NOT**. We were created with it, our mother and father Adam and Eve **LOST IT FOR US**, and we are **DESTITUTE AND LOST WITHOUT IT**.

If we do not have **AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE ESSENCE OF ALL RIGHTEOUSNESS, THE ESSENCE OF EQUITY AND JUST ACTIONS, THE ESSENCE OF ALL TRUE MORALITY AND ETHICAL STANDARDS, THEN WHAT IS MAN?** The answer is obvious: man is considered **UNJUST, UNHOLY, AND GUILTY**. We have come full circle; we are back to the original claim of God: **YOU ARE GUILTY BEFORE THE STANDARD OF AGAPE LOVE**.

It is the job of the Holy Spirit to **CONVICT US** of this fact. It is a time consuming and very nasty job. It is not an outer heart, conscious conviction. **THE AX IS LAID TO THE ROOT, TO THE CORE, THE INNER HEART**. The conscious mind knows something is very wrong, but it will not know what it is until the **MOMENT OF THE REVELATION**. The soul will only know that it is alone, separated, and disparate. It will know that it is dead inside. It will know that there is a major problem, a void, but all of it comes **FROM A MUCH DEEPER PLACE THAN THE MIND. THE MIND IS USED BY THE LORD TO STIR UP THE SOUL TO FIND THE TRUTH**. God uses the mind to **ESTABLISH A FOOT HOLD**. The mind is used to **CONVICT THE CONSCIOUS MIND AND HEART OF THE REALITY OF CHRIST, THE REALITY OF HIS DOCTRINES, THE TRUTH OF IT ALL**.

The conscious mind is the instrument of **CONVERSION**. A whole heart conversion will lead, **IF THEY CONTINUE ON THE DOCTRINES OF CHRIST, IF THEY CONTINUE IN THEIR SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH, TO A FINDING OF AGAPE LOVE**. It is a lie of modern Christianity that it is non-experiential and you simply accept it **BY FAITH**. It will be proven that **AGAPE LOVE DOES NOT COME BY FAITH. FAITH HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH IT. FAITH IS ONLY THE DYNAMIC FORCE that PROPELS YOU THROUGH THE NARROW WAY TO MAKE CONTACT**. The contact itself does not employ faith whatever, you move from faith to an **ABSOLUTE KNOWING**.

To be convicted and convinced of righteousness, the Holy Spirit must bring you to the point of **INNER RECOGNITION OF THE DESTITUTION OF HUMAN LOVE**. It is an **EXPOSURE TO THE TRUTH OF THE HUMAN INNER HEART. IT BRINGS YOU FACE TO FACE WITH YOUR “NEED” FOR CHRIST**.

**3. OF JUDGMENT** – The word “judgment” is ‘krisis’ which means **CONDEMNATION, DAMNATION, JUDGED BY TRIBUNAL, BROUGHT TO JUSTICE, JUDGED**. It is the job of the Holy Spirit to bring the soul down **TO A FULL AND COMPLETE JUDGMENT**. We will study that shortly. The soul is going to be brought into a position where **THE INNER CORE HEART IS GOING TO BE JUDGED BY GOD AND FOUND GUILTY**. That soul is going to be **CONDEMNED AND WILL KNOW EXPERIENTIALLY THAT IT IS DAMNED AND GOING TO ETERNAL RUIN**. It is part of the process to bring **THE SOUL TO UTTER**

DESTITUTION BEFORE A HOLY GOD. As agape love is the standard, and the soul does not have it, that soul is going to eternal ruin.

There is no mercy shown here to anyone. It is very matter of fact. Either you enter in and go through it, or you will never be acquitted. It must be done while you are alive, so that Christ can cover you with His robes of AGAPE LOVE. Christ gives you HIS AGAPE LOVE AS A GIFT, TO COVER YOU TOTALLY, TO ACQUIT YOU OF ALL CHARGES. By coming in to the human race, and purchasing the human race, HE OWNS IT. He is the only LEGAL OWNER OF PLANET EARTH. If the soul will go through the judgment while still alive on planet earth, then Christ can save that soul, because He has the right to STEP FORWARD AND SAY I WILL COVER THIS SOUL. You going through the process is you being OBEDIENT TO THE SAYINGS OF JESUS, AND YOU DOING THE WILL OF THE FATHER. It is that act of obedience that makes you ACCEPTABLE TO BOTH GOD AND CHRIST. True faith has an ABIDING WORK, THE WORK OF THE NARROW WAY. Otherwise your faith is a dead faith, inoperative, useless.

The many had FAITH, BUT IT WAS A DEAD FAITH. IT WAS AN ARMCHAIR FAITH, A DECISION FAITH, A SURFACE NON-FAITH, A PERVERTED FAITH, UNKNOWN TO THE EARLY CHRISTIANS.

*“Beloved, **THINK IT NOT STRANGE**  
**CONCERNING THE FIERY TRIAL WHICH IS TO TRY YOU,**  
**AS THOUGH SOME STRANGE THING HAPPENED TO YOU.”**  
(1 Peter 4:12)*

The word “fiery” is ‘purosis’ and it means **SMELTING, CONFLAGRATION BURNING, CALAMITY, TESTING**. It means a time of SEVERE TRIAL, OF A SEVERE TESTING WHICH YOU WILL BE PUT THROUGH. The word try is made up from two words, the first being “pas”, which means **MOTION TOWARDS, PROGRESS FORWARDS, A MOVING TOWARDS A DESTINATION**. It confirms the word “hodos” which means **WAY, PATHWAY, PROGRESS OR JOURNEY**. The trial of your faith then MUST BE, HAS TO BE THE WALK OF THE NARROW WAY. The other word is ‘peirasmos’ and it means **PUTTING TO THE PROOF, A PROVING, THE EXPERIENCE OF EVIL SOLICITATION, A DISCIPLINE, ADVERSITY**.

Could all of this have to do with the CHASTENING AND SCOURGING OF THE LORD? Remember that those who do not undergo it are considered BASTARDS AND NOT SONS? This does not sound like a pleasant journey, but a journey that is long, arduous and quite nasty, running against the grain of our CARNAL NATURE. There is no joy and laughter here, but instead sorrow and grief. IT IS A TRIAL, A PROVING. IS YOUR FAITH REAL? What is to be the end of all this Peter?

*“But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are **PARTAKERS OF CHRIST’S**  
**SUFFERINGS;**  
**THAT,**  
**WHEN HIS GLORY IS REVEALED,***

***YE MAY BE GLAD ALSO WITH EXCEEDING JOY.”  
(1 Peter 4:13)***

Jesus said we must pick up our cross. The cross was AT CALVARY. We BEGIN AT CALVARY. We must there follow Christ through His death, burial and resurrection. We will follow Christ through the THREE DAYS UNTO THE RESURRECTION OF A NEW LIFE. It will be proven a bit later. We are to be made a PARTAKER of that SUFFERING. The word for “sufferings” is ‘pathema’, and it means **HARDSHIP, PAIN, AFFLICTION, SUFFERING**. We are to die with Christ. We are to suffer with Christ. At the end, when we have undergone the experience of dying HIS GLORY WILL BE REVEALED. It will be proven later that this is not a Second Advent verse. It is the REVELATION OF CHRIST AND HIS GLORY TO THE BELIEVER, AND THE GLORY OF CHRIST IS HIS AGAPE LOVE.

Apostate Christianity denies any revelation. They claim it is satanic, seeking after a sign, or a whole host of rationales. Scripture proves that there is a revelation that YOU MUST HAVE, FOR IT IS YOUR EVIDENCE OF SALVATION. When Jesus said you could FIND THE TRUTH, he meant exactly that. It is not based upon FAITH. Faith is merely the dynamic to propel you through to FINDING THE EVIDENCE. It will all become clear shortly.

The call of God was to REPENT. TRUE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE IS WALKING THE NARROW WAY. THERE IS NO SAVING REPENTANCE OTHER THAN THE NARROW WAY. In the process of the walk, the soul is brought down to a FULL AND COMPLETE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE. That is something MAN MUST DO. MAN MUST MOVE FIRST BEFORE GOD WILL MOVE TO SAVE. Man must MOVE FIRST DOWN THE NARROW WAY BEFORE GOD WILL MOVE UPON MAN. The narrow way accomplishes many things, and one of them IS A TRIAL OF YOUR FAITH, TO SEE IF IT IS THE FAITH OF CHRIST. Christ DID NOT TURN BACK. HE SET HIS FACE, HE DID IT. God wants to know if you WILL DO IT, NOT THINK:

**DO IT.**

The nature of the narrow way, as you have guessed, is not of joy and cheerfulness. However it does have a goal beyond the death of soul, and that goal is THE SALVATION OF YOUR SOUL. In between the start and the finish, we find out what the Lord really has in mind, and what the difference is between the many and the few:

***“For whom the Lord loveth he CHASTENETH, AND  
SCOURGETH  
EVERY SON***

**WHOM *HE* RECEIVETH.”**  
**(Hebrews 12:6)**

We have seen this verse before, but now we are going to examine it and the related verses very closely, for they show us what the Lord has in mind. The word “chasteneth” is ‘paideuo’ and it means **TO PUNISH, TO DISCIPLINE, TO TEACH, TO TRAIN UP, TO INSTRUCT**. The word “scourgeth” is ‘mastigoo’ which means **TO FLOG, TO WHIP, TO SCOURGE**. The root is ‘mastrix’, which means **TO WHIP WITH A ROMAN FLAGELLUM**. It was a whip with at least 12 long leather straps in which were embedded pieces of metal and glass. When applied to the flesh with force, it would strip off the flesh. Many people died during the process.

Notice that is GOD WHO IS DOING THE RECEIVING. This is not you receiving God, this is God receiving you. You receive God at CONVERSION, God receives you at REGENERATION. The word “receiveth” means **TO ACCEPT NEAR, TO ADMIT, TO DELIGHT IN, TO RECEIVE**. GOD IS NOT GOING TO RECEIVE ANYONE WHO DOES NOT WALK THE NARROW WAY, for it is the way of scourging. The word “every” is ‘pas’ and it means **ALL, THE WHOLE, EVERY ONE, ANY ONE, WHOSOEVER**. In short, it means **THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS, ALL MUST COME IN THE SAME WAY**.

## **NO EXCEPTIONS, NONE, ZERO!**

*“...My Son, **DESPISE NOT** thou  
the **CHASTENING** OF THE LORD, NOR FAINT  
WHEN THOU ART **REBUKED** OF HIM.”*  
**(Hebrew 12:5)**

The word “despise” is ‘gligoreo’ and it means **TO HAVE LITTLE REGARD FOR**. In other words, count your afflictions from scourging as extremely valuable. The word “faint” is ‘ekluo’ which means **TO FAINT, TO RELAX, TO FAIL**. We would say **OVERCOME, PASSED OUT**. The word “rebuke” is ‘elegcho’ and it means to **CONFUTE, TO ADMONISH, TO CONVINC**.

***“IF (THE HUGE CONDITIONAL QUALIFIER)***

***YE ENDURE CHASTENING,***

***GOD DEALETH WITH YOU AS WITH SONS;  
FOR WHAT SON IS HE WHOM THE FATHER***

**CHASTENETH NOT?"**  
(Hebrews 12:7)

Again we find positive affirmation that this scourging, this chastening is an **ABSOLUTE REQUIREMENT FOR EVERY SINGLE BELIEVER**. The conditional qualifier that determines if you are a Son of God is that you **ENDURE THIS REBUKE AND REPROOF OF THE LORD**. This is in fact one of the evidences of **authentic salvation**. It is fully experiential as you may have already guessed. The word "endure" is 'hupomeno' and it means **TO REMAIN UNDER, TO UNDERGO, TO BEAR UP, TO HAVE FORTITUDE, TO PERSEVERE, TO TAKE PATIENTLY, TO SUFFER**. Is this why Jesus said those of the good ground **BEAR FRUIT ONLY WITH PATIENCE?** Is it because they have to undergo the **NARROW WAY BEFORE THEY CAN BEAR ANY FRUIT?**

***"But IF (THE HUGE CONDITIONAL QUALIFIER)***

***YE BE WITHOUT CHASTISEMENT,***

***WHEREOF ALL ARE PARTAKERS,***

***THEN ARE YE BASTARDS, AND NOT SONS."***

(Hebrews 12:8)

We have seen this verse before also, but take a good look at it. **HOW COULD ANYONE MISTAKE OR MISINTERPRET WHAT IT SAYS**. Nothing could be more plainly stated, nothing more clear, nothing simpler and direct. The word "without" is 'choris' which means **SEPARATELY, APART FROM**. If you are without the **REBUKE OF THE LORD, AND YOU HAVE NOT UNDERGONE THIS PROCESS, YOU ARE A BASTARD, YOU ARE NOT A TRUE SON OF GOD.**

Dear Christian, let this sink into your soul. If you say "My salvation was not like this", then by the Word of **ALMIGHTY GOD, YOU ARE NOT SAVED**. THIS IS AN **ABSOLUTE REQUIREMENT**. IT IS ALSO A WARNING TO ALL THOSE THAT PROFESS CHRIST. SCRIPTURE IS TELLING YOU THAT THIS PROCESS MUST BE ACCOMPLISHED, AND IF IT HAS NOT, **NO MATTER WHAT YOUR OTHER TESTIMONY, YOU ARE IN DECEPTION**. THE SCOURGING AND REBUKE MUST, **MUST BE DONE** UPON EVERYONE THAT JESUS CHRIST IS GOING TO FIND ACCEPTABLE. If you do not have this testimony, **you are not saved**. This is not car accidents, illness, money loss, career setback, and any of those types of things, THIS IS AN INTERNAL CHASTISEMENT AND SCOURGING **TO CORRECT, TO TEACH, TO ADMONISH**. Obviously some need more than others, but ALL ARE GOING TO UNDERGO THE SAME PROCESS.

***"Now NO CHASTENING for the moment SEEMETH TO BE JOYOUS  
(COMPARE WITH THE ANON WITH GREAT JOY CROWD),***

**BUT GRIEVOUS:**

**NEVERTHELESS AFTERWARD**

**IT YIELDETH THE PEACEABLE FRUIT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS**

**UNTO THEM WHICH ARE EXERCISED THEREBY.**

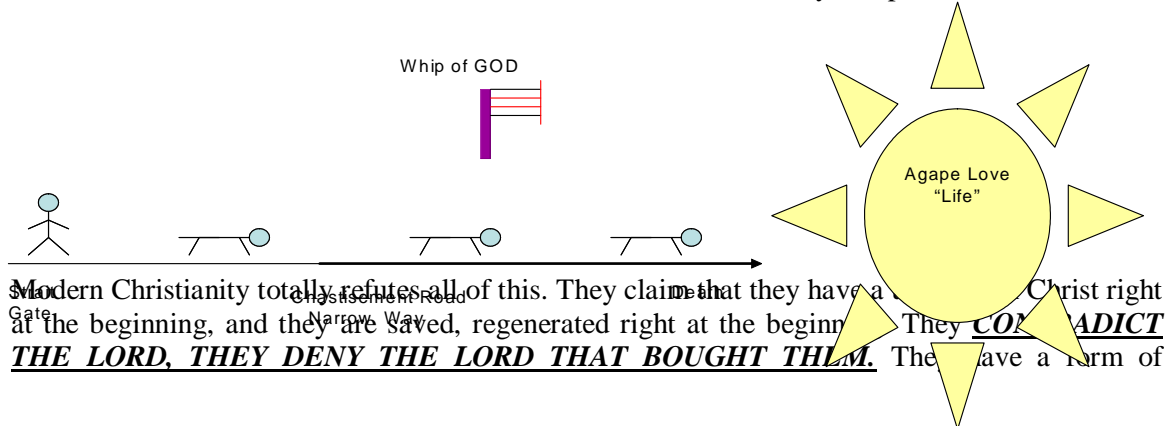
**(Hebrews 12:11)**

Here we have proof positive why Jesus Christ said the ANON WITH GREAT JOY CROWD OF INSTANT FAITH, IMMEDIATE SALVATION AND JOY TO THE LORD CROWD ARE DAMNED FOR ALL ETERNITY. That which brings us to the FRUIT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS (AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT) IS GRIEVOUS, NOT JOYFUL. The word "grievous" is 'lupe' and it means **SADNESS, DEPRESSION, HEAVINESS, GRIEF, SORROW**. It is contrasted with the word "joyous" which is 'chara' which means **DELIGHT, CHEERFULNESS, JOYFUL, HAPPY**. Thus we have diametric opposites:

## GRIEVOUS vs. JOYFUL

Are you going to believe the Holy Spirit, or are you going to believe the false prophets with their phony INSTANT SALVATION AND JOY CROWD? The implication is that this takes a long period of time, for **GREAT PATIENCE IS REQUIRED TO UNDERGO IT**, IT MUST BE 'ENDURED'. We will prove that it is a long process soon. Notice the sequence given here, to be sure you do not get the cart before the horse:

AFTER THE SCOURGING, AFTER THE CHASTENING, THE FRUIT OF AGAPE LOVE RIGHTEOUSNESS COMES. The word "afterward" is 'husteron' which means **EVENTUALLY, IN DUE TIME**. It means that over a period of time, a period long enough that it must be endured with patience, it will YIELD THE FRUIT OF AGAPE LOVE. Notice it says to "them which are EXERCISED THEREBY". The word "exercise" is 'gumnazo', and it means **TO PRACTICE NAKED, TO TRAIN**. The root of the word is 'gumnos' which means **NUDE OR NAKED**. It is interesting that the Lord **STRIPS THE BELIEVER NAKED, RIGHT DOWN TO THE CORE, AND SHOWS THE SOUL JUST WHAT AND WHO WE REALLY ARE**. Do you think the meaning of the word is coincidental? NOW DO YOU UNDERSTAND WHY JESUS SAID THE NARROW WAY LEADETH UNTO LIFE? They compare:



**GODLINESS, BUT THEY DENY THE POWER OF GOD.** They contradict and oppose what Christ commands. They deny it. Their religion is one of FORM AND NOT SUBSTANCE. They are **IMPOSTORS, BASTARD SONS.** There is no hope for them short of **FULL AND TOTAL BIBLICAL REPENTANCE. THEY ARE THE FULFILLMENT OF THE PROPHECIES OF CHRIST AND PETER. THEY ARE THE FALSE PROPHETS.**

## **TO FORGE A BROKEN HEART IN THE HEAT OF FIRE**

It is the opinion of God that the human heart is ARROGANT AND PROUD. It is the opinion of God that THIS ARROGANCE AND PRIDE, THIS HAUGHTINESS OF THE HUMAN SPIRIT MUST BE BROKEN. No one likes to be called these things, which is one of the REPROOFS OF GOD. In order to bring you in to account, God has to levy the charges against you. This is one of the primary charges. It applies to every single person, **whether they realize it or not.** There are many people WHO APPEAR to be very meek and humble, but in the eyes of God, WHO READETH THE INNER HEART, it is all a sham, a front, an illusion, a deception, a delusion of the mind. One does not become **HUMBLE, OR CONTRITE, OR BROKEN IN THE BIBLICAL SENSE** by mental decision. It has nothing to do with what you decide in that sense. It has to do with ALLOWING GOD TO DO IT, VIA WALKING THE NARROW WAY TO BE BROUGHT DOWN LOW.

If you have not the testimony of the soul death, then you still have, in spite of all your protests to the contrary, a **VERY HAUGHTY HEART, AN ARROGANT HEART AND A HEART FULL OF PRIDE.** Pride goeth before the fall, saith the Lord.

***“The Lord of hosts hath PURPOSED it,  
TO STAIN THE PRIDE OF ALL GLORY,  
AND TO BRING INTO CONTEMPT ALL THE HONOURABLE OF THE  
EARTH.”***  
(Isaiah 23:9)

This verse of Scripture is not simply directed at the rich, famous or powerful. It is directed straight at the HUMAN INNER HEART, WHERE THE PRIDE OF ALL GLORY SITS, THE GREAT “I AM” OF SELF. God has proposed that He will STAIN THAT GLORY. One can either have it stained by walking the narrow way, or one can wait to the Judgment. Either way, IT WILL BE DONE. The word “purposed” is ‘ya’ats’ which means **DELIBERATE CHOICE, RESOLVE TO ACCOMPLISH, OR DETERMINED COUNSEL.** In our language, IT WILL BE DONE. The word “stain” is ‘chalah’ which means **WOUND, DISSOLVE, PROFANE, BREAK OR DEFILE.**

We begin then to see what the narrow way is all about, and what God proposes to do to us during it. **HE WILL DEFILE OUR GLORY, OUR HOLY OF HOLIES.** The ax is going to be laid directly to the root of the problem, an EVIL HEART, SO DESPARATELY WICKED, WHO CAN KNOW IT?

The word “glory” is ‘tsebiy’ which means **SPLENDOR, PLEASANT, GLORIOUS, REGAL**. Every UNREGENERATE HUMAN HEART has this problem. We are not CONSCIOUS OF IT BECAUSE IT IS HIDDEN DEEP WITHIN. This is what the narrow way does, it EXPOSES IT TO OURSELVES. IT UNMASKS IT SO WE CAN SEE IT AND KNOW IT.

God will bring this INNER HEART DOWN IN UTTER CONTEMPT. That is the work of the Holy Spirit when the judgment of sin, righteousness and judgment is done. It brings the heart low, smashes it, destroys it. The word “contempt” is ‘qalal’, which means **CURSE, DESPISE, AFFLICT**. The pride and the arrogance of the inner heart is going to be laid out for you to see, bring you to detest it, and destroy it. The word “earth” is ‘ereto’, which means **WORLD**. The Holy Spirit was sent to convict the world. John 16:8 and Isaiah 23:9 are companion verses. There is always a total harmony in the Word of God.

*“And the **AFFLICTED PEOPLE THOU WILT SAVE:***

***BUT THINE EYES ARE UPON THE HAUGHTY,  
THAT THOU MAYEST BRING THEM DOWN.”***

*(2 Samuel 22:28)*

The word “afflicted” is ‘an’y’ which means **DEPRESSED, HUMBLE, LOWLY, NEEDY, POOR**. Is that why Christ said we must hunger and thirst after righteousness? That we are to become **BEGGARS, NEEDY AND POOR**? Is that why the soul must stir ITSELF UP? Did the many go to eternal ruin because they sat around thinking the LORD WAS TO STIR THEM UP? Why would He stir you up, if He commanded you to STIR YOURSELF UP TO LAY HOLD OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF AGAPE LOVE? It is only the AFFLICTED THAT GOD SAVES. This is not a worldly affliction; this is a SOUL AFFLICTION, A SOUL AGONY, A SOUL THAT IS DESPARATE TO FIND THE TRUTH BEHIND ALL OF LIFE.

The rest of men, the entire lot, have an **INNER HEART OF HAUGHTINESS**. They REFUSE TO COME TO THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE, THEY REFUSE TO BE BROUGHT DOWN. They have an eternity in hellfire to regret it. The word “save” here is ‘yasha’ and it means **TO SET FREE, TO BE SAFE, SALVATION, TO OBTAIN THE VICTORY**. It means essentially what Christ said when He said IF you will CONTINUE in His doctrine, you will FIND THE TRUTH, AND THAT TRUTH SHALL SET YOU FREE! The setting free is SALVATION, IS REGENERATION, IS BEING BORN AGAIN. It is AGAPE LOVE THAT SETS YOU FREE. It is a total confirmation of all that we have learned so far. This is directly related to salvation and the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. The very next verse says:

*“For thou ART MY **LAMP**, O LORD:*

*AND THE LORD WILL **LIGHTEN MY DARKNESS.**”*

*(2 Samuel 22:29)*

Compare to the comments of Christ when He said man will not COME TO THE LIGHT, HE WILL NOT FACE THE REBUKE OF THE LORD. The vast majority of Christians will not face



the **REAL AND AUTHENTIC REBUKE OF THE LORD**. They refuse it, they claim that their twinge of guilt that sent them to the altar for **CONVERSION** WAS THE REBUKE OF THE LORD. It was not; it has nothing to do with the **SECRETS OF THE INNER HEART**.

**“THE FEAR OF THE LORD**

**IS TO HATE EVIL:**

**PRIDE, AND ARROGANCY,**  
**AND THE EVIL WAY,**  
**AND THE FROWARD MOUTH,**  
**DO I HATE.”**  
**(Proverbs 8:13)**

God must bring every single human soul down to the judgment. There is no other way. NO OTHER WAY. IF YOU WANT TO TAKE THE EVIL WAY OF THE BROAD ROAD, YOU WILL PERISH FOR ALL ETERNITY. Please reconsider. Please do as Christ commands. The same agape love that loves you with a love so awesome it cannot be told is the same love that will send you away without so much as a blink of the eye. **BEHOLD THE GOODNESS AND THE SEVERITY OF GOD**. GOODNESS SHALL FALL UPON YOU AS RAIN IF YOU CONTINUE IN HIS GOODNESS BY DOING AS HE HAS COMMANDED OF YOU. OTHERWISE YOU WILL FACE THE SEVERITY OF GOD, HIS DIVINE WRATH.

The word “fear” is ‘yir’ah’ and it means **DREADFUL, FEARFUL, EXCEEDINGLY FEARFUL OR REVERENCE**. The word “hate” is ‘sane’ and it means to **HATE UTTERLY**. “Pride” is ‘ge’ah’ which means **ARROGANCE**, while “arrogancy” is ‘ge’own’ which means **MAJESTY, POMP, PRIDE, SWELLING, PROUD**. The word “froward” is ‘tahpukah’ and it means **PERVERSE OR FRAUDULENT**. Now do you know why God hates mankind’s religions, including **THE CHURCH**? They all come to praise and sing songs, **BUT IT IS NOT IN TRUTH, IT IS A FRAUDULENT WORSHIP**. They draw nigh unto Him with their lips, but they refuse to walk the narrow way to draw nigh unto Him with their **INNER HEARTS**.

**“The ear that HEARETH THE REPROOF OF LIFE**  
**ABIDETH AMONG THE WISE.**

**HE THAT REFUSETH INSTRUCTION DESPISETH HIS OWN SOUL:**  
**BUT HE THAT HEARETH REPROOF GETTETH UNDERSTANDING.**

**THE FEAR OF THE LORD**  
**IS THE INSTRUCTION OF WISDOM;**  
**AND BEFORE HONOUR IS HUMILITY.”**  
**(Proverbs 15:31-33)**

The reproof of life is THE AGAPE LOVE LIFE OF CHRIST. This verse is also a companion to Jesus and His comments that man would not come to the AGAPE LOVE LIGHT AND LIFE OF GOD. The reproof of AGAPE LOVE is the reproof of life, and IF YOU WILL HEART IT, YOU WILL OBTAIN UNDERSTANDING. If you will not, you despise your own soul, for you will end up in eternal ruin. Notice that BEFORE THE HONOR OF REGENERATION, THERE COMES HUMILITY.

***“BEFORE DESTRUCTION the heart of man IS HAUGHTY, AND***

***BEFORE HONOUR is HUMILITY.”***

**(Proverbs 18:12)**

The word “before” here is ‘paniyim’ which means **BEFORE HAND, BEFORE TIME**. In other words, from the time of birth until the POINT OF DESTRUCTION, THE HEART OF ALL MANKIND IS VERY HAUGHTY. This inner haughtiness, this inner pride and arrogance is masked, and is not known by the person. It is subconscious, of the very inner wellspring of existence. The word “heart” is ‘leb’ which means **THE VERY CENTER, THE CORE**. This verse agrees with Jeremiah who claims the heart of man is desperately wicked, and who can know it? All of this lies buried beneath a façade of seeming meekness, humbleness and goodness. It also proves that Jesus is not going to **GIVE THE HONOR OF AN AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT UPON ANYONE BEFORE THEY WALK THE NARROW WAY**. Modern Christian theology CLAIMS THE HONOR OF UNION WITH CHRIST WHEN IN FACT THEY REFUSE TO BE BROKEN. The word “destruction” is ‘sheber’ which means **RUIN, AFFLICTION, BREAKING, CRUSHING**.

This then explains why the vast majority of Christians stand in utter shock at their rejection by the Lord Jesus Christ. It further substantiates the fact that all of them WERE UNDER A DELUSION, A DECEPTION. They were not aware that their inner hearts were still full of pride and pomp. They were not aware that they HAD NOT TAKEN CARE OF THEIR INNER HEART. Remember Jesus waits to the very end to tell them, for they were in total disobedience. THEY COULD HAVE KNOWN. God provided them the means by which they could have known; it is the NARROW WAY. The crushing, the breaking of the INNER HEART, THE CENTER OF BEING, can be accomplished while you are alive, or it WILL BE accomplished after death. The point is, IT WILL BE ACCOMPLISHED BY ALL WHO DWELL UPON THE EARTH.

***“And I will PUNISH THE WORLD FOR THEIR EVIL,***

***AND THE WICKED FOR THEIR INIQUITY;***

***AND I WILL CAUSE THE ARROGANCY OF THE PROUD TO CEASE,  
AND WILL LAY LOW THE HAUGHTINESS OF THE TERRIBLE.”***

**(Isaiah 13:11)**

The word “punish” is ‘pagad’, which means to **DO JUDGMENT, TO AVENGE, TO GIVE A CHANGE**. As all souls born in the human race have within their hearts this **ARROGANCY, THIS HAUGHTINESS**, and because they lack **AGAPE LOVE**, they are **WICKED, AND THEY DO EVIL**, then God is going to **BRING THEM DOWN, LAY THEM LOW, AND UTTERLY DESTROY THEM**. We begin to perceive then, why the Lord hates religious congregations, and any religion of whatever name, including Judaism and Christianity, **THAT DOES NOT TAKE CARE OF THIS INNER CORE HEART PROBLEM**.

It does not matter what your **FORM OR PRETENSE IS**. It does not matter how many theological degrees one hangs after their name. It does not matter how great and wonderful your service to the Lord is. He wants **ONE THING; HE WANTS TO BRING YOUR INNER HEART DOWN TO JUDGMENT**. It is the only way He can save you. It will be done one way or the other, why not bow the knee now and allow the Lord to do His work?

It is apparent then that God consider the human heart a very wicked thing. If He is to take this heart, which is made of **STONE**, and turn it into a heart of flesh, then obviously **GOD MUST PERFORM SOME FORM OF SURGERY UPON IT TO MAKE IT FIT**. He has told you what He is going to do: **BRING IT DOWN IN THE FIRES OF JUDGMENT**. This then would require **TRUE CONVICTION, TRUE REPROOF, TRUE REBUKE, TRUE SCOURGING**. The end result would be **CRUSHED, BROKEN AND CONTRITE INNER HEART**:

*“The **SACRIFICES OF GOD ARE***

*A **BROKEN SPIRIT**:*

*A **BROKEN AND A CONTRITE HEART**,*

*O GOD, THOU WILT **NOT DESPISE**.”*

*(Psalm 51:17)*

The word “broken” is ‘shabar’ which means **TO CRUSH UTTERLY, TO DESTROY, TO TEAR APART, TO BREAK DOWN, TO SHATTER, TO QUENCH UTTERLY**. God has to take this core inner heart and utterly destroy it. **AGAPE LOVE** and **PHILEO LOVES** are direct opposites, and one has to go. Because God is **SOVEREIGN**, guess which one has to be destroyed? The word “contrite” is ‘dakah’ which means **TO COLLAPSE MENTALLY, TO GO INTO BROKENNESS**. The root is ‘daka’ which means **TO CRUMBLE, TO BRUISE, TO CRUSH, TO DESTROY, TO HUMBLE, TO DEPRESS**. Notice how God ties together **SPIRIT AND HEART**. The word “heart” is again ‘leb’ which means **THE VERY CENTER OF EXISTENCE, the INNER HEART, THE INNER SPIRIT MAN**.

The center of ourselves, the great “I AM” that sits upon your Holy of Holies is going to undergo a very painful process of **BEING DESTROYED, BROUGHT DOWN, BROKEN AND CRUSHED**. It has to die. Now it must be pointed out that this is not some **BIG GUILT TRIP** that one embarks upon. Your guilt is a forewarn conclusion insofar as God is concerned. Working up a whole lot of guilt feelings is not what this is about. This is not a mental process; this is a process by which **GOD REVEALS THE INNER HEART TO THE CONSCIOUS MIND**. It is not a case of the conscious mind beating upon the inner heart. It is wholly supernatural, done of the spirit,

over a long period of time, which is why PATIENCE, ENDURANCE AND LONG-SUFFERING IS REQUIRED. The only thing YOU DO is to stir yourself up to **FIND THE TRUTH BEHIND ALL OF LIFE.**

If you will stir YOURSELF UP and embark upon a journey in which FINDING THE TRUTH BEHIND ALL OF LIFE, and if you will develop the attitude that NOTHING ELSE MATTERS IN LIFE WHATEVER THAN FINDING THAT TRUTH, then by the WORD OF GOD, **YOU WILL FIND IT.** In the process OF THE SEARCH, God will **SUPERNATURALLY BRING YOU DOWN LOW.** Your job is TO CONTINUE TO BEG GOD UNTIL YOU FIND THE TRUTH, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE. If you will **ONLY SEEK WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART, MIND AND SOUL, GOD WILL DO ALL THE REST.** That is the ONLY COMMAND OF GOD; SEEK GOD WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART. There is no other command. The NARROW WAY IS THE WAY OF SEEKING, ASKING, KNOCKING, CRYING UNTIL GOD RESPONDS.

Guilt trips and the like, feeling bad about your multitude of sins and all of the rest of it are SATANIC SNARES. What else could you be BUT A SINNER? What else could you do BUT SIN? What good does GUILT DO? God deals in FACTS, NOT EMOTIONS. Guilt trips and the like are EMOTIONAL IN NATURE. God does not deal with you on an emotional basis. Of what good would it be to God to show you HOW GUILTY YOU ARE? He is not going to focus on something already PREDETERMINED. HE WILL INSTEAD FOCUS ON **WHY** YOU ARE GUILTY. He bypasses your emotions, which come from the FLESH, THE CARNAL NATURE, THE SENSE NATURE. He is not interested in that. HE LAYS THE AX **TO THE ROOT.** To find God, you PUT BEHIND YOU ALL OF THAT RUBBISH AND YOU **DEDICATE YOURSELF TO ONE THING: FINDING THE FACE OF GOD. SEARCH OUT THE TRUTH, AND THE TRUTH WILL BE MADE KNOWN TO YOU.**

**YOUR PART IS TO UNDERTAKE A WHOLE HEARTED SEARCH FOR GOD.  
GOD'S PART IS TO BRING YOUR INNER CORE DOWN TO JUDGMENT.**

We will cover this later, but it is vital you understand this is NOT a gigantic GUILT TRIP, OR ANYTHING LIKE IT. I am not saying that you will not cry. I am not saying that waves of deep loss and emptiness will not come. I am not saying that you will not be aware of something very wrong. I am saying that IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH GUILT. IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH YOUR MIND. What comes upon one walking the narrow way **COMES FROM DEEPER THAN ANYTHING YOU WILL HAVE EVER EXPERIENCED.** If there is emotional response it is this: **SORROW, ALONENESS, EMPTINESS, DEADNESS, NOTHINGNESS.**

God must show the seeking soul how utterly alone they are. How utterly separated they are from EVERYONE INCLUDING THEIR CREATOR. Natural man tends to fill this void by others, by pursuits of various types, by keeping busy. The one on the narrow way must and will face the utter aloneness of his/her soul. It is not pleasant; it is almost indescribable, as God deflates the inner heart. Some say they simply run "out of gas". There is nothing in their life at all. **There is no meaning, no life, no death, no nothing at all. They are VOID, DEAD, ALONE, LOST.**

Remember when Jesus said that unless a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it would ABIDE ALONE? Hell is a place where YOU ABIDE UTTERLY AND TOTALLY ALONE. The human soul is constructed in such a way that IT CAN IMplode UPON ITSELF. It is like a star universe. It radiates outward, burns itself up, and then IMPLodes, OR COLLAPSES IN UPON ITSELF. It becomes a prisoner of its own gravitational forces, and cannot escape itself. God is

going to IMplode YOU, BRING YOU DOWN TO THE POINT WHERE YOU KNOW YOU ARE ALONE, DEAD, AND UNDER JUDGMENT. It is the nature of the beast.

Notice that God says that **THE SACRIFICES** OF GOD ARE A BROKEN HEART. The word “sacrifice” is ‘zebach’, which means **SLAUGHTER, TO KILL, TO OFFER UP**. What is it we are to offer up? OUR INNER HEART. We are to place IT on the ALTAR OF GOD AS A LIVING SACRIFICE. You are to take your heart of STONE, and offer it UP TO BE KILLED. This is the ONLY SACRIFICE GOD WILL ACCEPT UNDER THE NEW COVENANT. The narrow way is the WAY OF THE SACRIFICE. The vast majority of Christians have the RELIGION OF CAIN. They offer up EVERYTHING to the Lord. They will offer up PRAISE, WORSHIP, ADORATION, WORKS OF MIGHTY WORKS, MIRACLES OF MIGHTY MIRACLES, TITHES AND OFFERINGS THAT SPILL OVER. But there is ONE THING THEY WILL NOT DO:

**THEY WILL NOT, THEY REFUSE TO SACRIFICE THEIR INNER HEART. THEY WILL NOT DIE TO FIND LIFE.**

And so we come full circle once again. We find out why the vast majority of Christians are totally rejected. Sincere, dedicated, hard working, nice and good people from our perspective, but WHO UTTERLY REFUSE TO OFFER UP THEIR INNER HEART TO BE DESTROYED AND CONSUMED BY THE FIRES OF GOD. Their theology told them that was all barbaric, and that Christ took all of that upon Himself so we did not have to do it. THEY CARRIED THE DOCTRINE OF THE SUBSTITUTIONARY ATONEMENT TO THE OUTER LIMITS. It cost them eternity for doing so.

*“The Lord is NIGH UNTO THEM*

*THAT ARE OF A BROKEN HEART;*

*AND SAVETH SUCH AS BE OF  
A CONTRITE HEART.”*

*(Psalm 34:18)*

Please read that over again, for it is of extreme importance. **GOD SAVES ONLY THOSE WITH A BROKEN AND CONTRITE HEART**. Obviously then He does not save those WHO DO NOT OBTAIN TO THIS POSITION. The only way a soul can OBTAIN THE PRIZE OF A CRUSHED AND UTTERLY DESTROYED HEART IS TO WALK THE NARROW WAY. There is no other way offered by God. That is PRECISELY WHY JESUS COMMANDED YOU **ENTER IN AND WALK IT**. He knew that if you refused, YOU WOULD FACE ETERNAL DAMNATION. We have more confirmation that none of this is OPTIONAL.

Do you then understand the SEVERITY OF THIS? The Lord is **ONLY NIGH TO THOSE WHO HAVE A BROKEN AND CRUSHED INNER SPIRIT OR HEART**. Is this not in complete agreement with James? Did James not tell us to change our laughter and our joy into WEEPING AND TEARS OF SORROW? Did he not tell us to HUMBLE OURSELVES AND DRAW NIGH UNTO GOD? There is a portrait emerging here that proves **UTTERLY THAT MODERN**

**CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY IS A LIE RIGHT OUT OF THE PITS OF HELL.** It is a SATANIC DOCTRINE AND THE WORKINGS OF DEMONS.

The word “saveth” here is ‘yasha’ which means **SALVATION, TO BE SET FREE, OR TO GET THE VICTORY.** It is identical to what Christ means when He said if you would continue in His doctrine, you would find the TRUTH. That truth, which is AGAPE LOVE, will set you free. Until that time, you remain under the BONDAGE OF SATAN, UNDER THE DELUSIONS OF SATAN. Your only way of extricating yourself is via THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY.

*“For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity,  
whose name is Holy;  
I dwell in the high and holy place,  
with him also  
THAT IS OF A CONTRITE AND HUMBLE SPIRIT,  
  
TO REVIVE THE SPIRIT OF THE HUMBLE,  
  
AND TO REVIVE THE HEART OF THE CONTRITE ONES.”  
(Isaiah 57:15)*

The word “revive” is ‘chayah’ and it means **TO MAKE ALIVE, TO QUICKEN, TO GIVE LIFE, TO RECOVER, TO MAKE WHOLE.** It is the same as LIFE, REGENERATE, BORN AND QUICKEN in the New Testament. We have confirmation that the Lord **ONLY REGENERATES OR GIVES NEW LIFE TO THE HUMBLE AND THE CONTRITE ONES.** If we are born with a haughty, arrogant and pride filled heart, then obviously WE MUST GO THROUGH A PROCESS OF BEING BROUGHT DOWN LOW TO A HUMBLE AND CONTRITE HEART.

In other words, **YOU FIRST MUST BE BROUGHT TO THE POSITION OF BEING HUMBLE BEFORE THE LORD GRANTS REGENERATION.** We ought never get the sequence out of order. We ought never claim that which has not been granted. The word “humble” is ‘shaphal’ which means **DEPRESSED.** The root is ‘shaphel’ which means **TO DEPRESS, TO SINK, TO HUMILIATE, TO ABASE, TO PUT DOWN, TO LAY LOW THE SELF.** It is not anything we do; it is done by the Lord. It is a **supernatural work** of God; it is THE POWER OF GOD. That is why Paul said that the CROSS IS THE POWER OF GOD UNTO THEM THAT ARE SAVED.

*“Thus saith the Lord, the heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool:  
where is the house that ye build unto me? And where is the place OF MY REST?”*

*For all those things hath my hand made, and all those things have been,  
saith the Lord:*

***BUT TO THIS MAN WILL I LOOK,***

*EVEN TO HIM THAT IS*

**POOR AND OF A CONTRITE SPIRIT,**  
**AND TREMBLETH AT MY WORD.”**  
(Isaiah 66:1-2)

Over and over we find confirmation that God is ONLY GOING TO SAVE THOSE WHO COME VIA THE NARROW WAY TO HAVE THEIR HEARTS DESTROYED. The word for “poor” is ‘aniy’ which means **AFFLICTED, HUMBLE, LOWLY, NEEDY, POOR, A BEGGAR**. There is a direct tie between HUMBLE, POOR, BROKEN AND CONTRITE. They all speak of the inner heart, the SPIRIT THAT RESIDES IN THE HOLY OF HOLIES UPON THE THRONE OF GOD. It is here that we meet and deal with the Lord, just as Israel met the Lord in the Holy of Holies of the tabernacle.

**“He HEALETH THE BROKEN IN HEART,**  
**AND BINDETH UP THEIR WOUNDS.”**  
(Psalm 147:3)

Another confirmation that ONLY THE BROKEN IN HEART GETS HEALED. The others, the vast majority of Christians ARE NEVER HEALED. The word “wound” is ‘atstsbeth’ which means **PAIN, SORROW, WOUND**. Do you suppose God means what He says? If you think all of this is just Old Testament stuff, and has nothing to do with us, then try this one on for size:

**“And WHOSOEVER SHALL FALL ON THIS STONE (CHRIST)**  
**SHALL BE BROKEN:**  
**BUT ON WHOMSOEVER IT SHALL FALL,**  
**IT WILL GRIND HIM TO POWDER.”**  
(Matthew 21:44)

The companion verse is Luke 20:18. This is a double reference saying. The stone is Christ. If we fall upon Christ, HE WILL BREAK US. The word for “broken” here is ‘sunthlao’ which means **TO CRUSH, TO SHATTER, TO DASH TOGETHER**. There’s something more than meets the eye. If we fall upon Christ, then He will fall upon us, for He has a job to do. **PURGE US**. The word “grind” is ‘likmao’ which means **TO WINNOW, TO THRESH, TO TRITURATE**. Webster’s defines triturate as “...**TO CRUSH, GRIND, TO PULVERIZE**”. Remember the Table of Shewbread in the inner court? Remember how the 12 loaves of shewbread represent Israel? How was the bread made? The WHEAT was WINNOWER, then GROUND TO A FINE POWDER. It was then BAKED IN A HOT OVEN. The fire it was in cooks it, it is the fire that PURGES IT:

*“Behold, thou desirest **TRUTH IN THE INWARD PARTS**  
(**THE INNER HEART, THE INNER SPIRIT MAN**):  
And in the **HIDDEN PART** THOU SHALT MAKE ME TO **KNOW**  
**WISDOM.***

***PURGE ME WITH HYSSOP,**  
**AND I SHALL BE CLEAN,**  
**WASH ME, AND I SHALL BE WHITER THAN SNOW.”**  
(Psalm 51:6-7)*

Agape love is THE TRUTH. This truth must be bestowed to the INNER HEART, THE SPIRIT MAN. It is in the HIDDEN MAN, DEEP IN THE SUBCONSCIOUS that Christ comes. Notice who MAKES US TO KNOW WISDOM: GOD. We cannot know it apart from a supernatural revelation from God. We cannot know it because it is BEYOND US, TOTALLY BEYOND ALL KNOWLEDGE AND UNDERSTANDING. The wisdom we are to know is AGAPE LOVE WISDOM. It is that which is NOT KNOWN that we MUST COME TO KNOW AT REGENERATION: AGAPE LOVE.

Notice how this wisdom we must have in our inner hearts is DIRECTLY TIED TO PURGING, WASHING, AND WHITE SNOW. Notice the sequence: PURGE FIRST, CLEAN SECOND, PURGE FIRST, WHITE SECOND. The word “purge” here is ‘chata’ which means **TO CLEANSE, TO PURIFY, TO MAKE RECONCILIATION**. If the work of Christ reconciled God unto the world, and modern theology claims man to God, then why do we need any purging? The answer is obvious: WE ARE NOT RECONCILED TO GOD, AND WE MUST UNDERGO A PURGING BEFORE RECONCILIATION WILL BECOME AN ESTABLISHED FACT.

*“And **I WILL TURN MY HAND** UPON THEE,  
AND **PURELY PURGE AWAY THY DROSS,** AND **TAKE AWAY**  
**THY TIN.”**  
(Isaiah 1:25)*

Israel is for an example to us. We are part of Israel; we are part of God’s chosen. What is good for Israel will be good for us. What God does to Israel He will do for us. The dross must be taken away; it must be purged. The word “purge” here means **TO MELT, TO PURGE AWAY, TO REFINE, TO FUSE, TO TRY**. We might say FIERY TRIAL OF OUR FAITH. The word ‘dross’ is ‘ciyg’ which means **REFUSE, SCORIA, GARBAGE**. To take away the tin means to REMOVE BY SMELTING.

*“And he shall sit as a **REFINER AND PURIFIER OF SILVER:**  
AND HE **SHALL PURIFY THE SONS OF LEVI,**  
AND **PURGE THEM** AS GOLD AND SILVER,  
THAT THEY MAY OFFER UNTO THE LORD AN*



## **OFFERING IN RIGHTEOUSNESS.”**

(Malachi 3:3)

Again we find the sequence identical to all other sequences. Christ is going to sit as a REFINER, and as a PURGE, as one PURGES GOLD AND SILVER. It is done by FIRE, BY MELTING THE GOLD AND THE SILVER, AND ALLOWING ALL OF THE IMPURITIES TO COME TO THE SURFACE WHERE THEY CAN BE SCOOPED OFF. Notice what the intended purpose is for: **THAT THEY MAY OFFER THE LORD AN OFFERING OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.** This goes back to Cain and his offerings. He offered up everything EXCEPT HIS OWN INNER HEART AND SPIRIT MAN. He would not offer his OWN HEART UNTO THE LORD AS A SACRIFICE. In short, he was a religious man, but an UNREGENERATE MAN. The object of regeneration is to allow us to OFFER UP TO GOD WORSHIP IN SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH. If you have a dead spirit unto God, and you have no agape love bestowment, how can you offer up anything to the Lord that He will ACCEPT?

That is why the Christian religion, and the religious services of today ARE TOTAL VANITY. There is NOTHING in them that God will accept. It is all sheer vanity, worthless. It does nothing to please God, and as a matter of fact HE HATES IT:

***“To what PURPOSE is the MULTITUDE OF YOUR SACRIFICES UNTO ME?***

***Saith the Lord: I am full of burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he goats.***

***When YE COME TO APPEAR BEFORE ME,  
WHO HATH REQUIRED THIS AT YOUR HAND,  
TO TREAD MY COURTS?***

***Bring no more VAIN OBLATIONS;  
INCENSE IS AN ABOMINATION UNTO ME;  
THE NEW MOONS AND SABBATHS,  
THE CALLING OF ASSEMBLIES,***

***I CANNOT AWAY WITH;  
IT  
IS INIQUITY, EVEN THE SOLEMN MEETING.***

***Your new moons and your APPOINTED FEASTS  
MY SOUL HATETH: THEY ARE A TROUBLE UNTO ME;  
I AM WEARY TO BEAR THEM.***

***And when ye spread forth your hands,  
I WILL HIDE MINE EYES FROM YOU:  
yea, WHEN YE MAKE MANY PRAYERS,  
I WILL NOT HEAR:  
YOUR HANDS ARE FULL OF BLOOD.***

**WASH YOU, MAKE YOU CLEAN (GET REGENERATED)**

*put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes  
cease to do evil.”  
(Isaiah 1:11-16)*

Now some are going to say what has this got do with us? Everything. Our bullocks, rams and he goats are **OUR TITHES AND OFFERINGS**. Our sacrifices unto the Lord are **ALL OF GOOD CHRISTIAN WORKS**. What good is it? God is asking you of what GOOD IS IT? IS IT NOT VANITY? IS IT NOT IN VAIN? God says He is FULL OF OUR BURNT OFFERINGS. He then says HE DOES NOT WANT ANY MORE VAIN OFFERINGS. He hates the assemblies; He hates the solemn meetings. He cannot stand the Christian assemblies, and all of their offerings because THEY ARE ALL DONE WITHOUT ANYONE DOING WHAT THEY WERE COMMANDED TO DO. **PICK UP THY CROSS AND BE PURGED OF YOUR SIN**. This is a charge against the modern Christian Church and their super **POWER MAD PREACHER BOYS**.

The people of the modern Christian Church can gather by the thousands. They can raise up their hands in solemn prayer. They can praise and worship the Lord all they want. They can jump in the isles and scream out “praise the Lord” all they want. IT IS ALL VANITY, IT IS ALL WORTHLESS; IT MEANS NOT ONE THING. As matter of fact God says **HE DOES NOT HEAR THEM**. He does not even **LISTEN TO IT**. It is like a radio full of static, or a TV full of snow. **HE SHUTS IT OFF** and goes somewhere else. He hides His face. God is not in these places. He is wholly absent.

He says the Christians are **full of sin, full of iniquity, full of blood**. The Easter services, the Christmas services, Lent, Passover, all of it **ARE AN ABOMINATION UNTO HIM**. Why? He tells you why: **WASH YOU, MAKE YOU CLEAN**. He is ordering that the Christian **PICK UP THE CROSS, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO THE WASHING OF REGENERATION, TO THE WASHING IN THE WATER OF AGAPE LOVE**.

Do you think Christ applauded the vast majority of Christians HE REJECTED? Did all of their SOLEMN ASSEMBLIES, ALL OF THEIR GREAT MEETINGS, ALL OF THEIR WORSHIP, ALL OF THEIR PRAISE, ALL OF THEIR SACRIFICES, ALL OF THEIR HOLY DAYS, ALL OF THEIR RITUALS PLEASED HIM? Did He hear their prayers? He says not. He sent them away **WITHOUT MERCY, WITHOUT COMPASSION, WITHOUT EVEN SO MUCH AS A ‘THANK YOU’**. He loved them, but HATED WHAT THEY DID. He loved them, BUT HATED THEIR DISOBEDIENCE. It cost them eternity. **The same AGAPE LOVE THAT SAVES YOU, IS THE SAME AGAPE LOVE THAT WILL CONDEMN YOU WITHOUT HESITATION**.

These people did everything BUT ONE THING: they refused to pick up their OWN CROSS. They said Christ did it for them. “We have no need”. They died in their sins. They refused to be PURGED OF THEIR DROSS.

*“Whose fan is in his (Christ’s) hand, and he  
**WILL THOROUGHLY PURGE HIS FLOOR,**  
**AND GATHER HIS WHEAT INTO THE GARNER;**  
**BUT HE WILL BURN UP THE CHAFF WITH UNQUENCHABLE FIRE.”***

(Matthew 3:12)

Christ is going to **PURGE HIS OWN FLOOR**. His floor is the BODY OF CHRIST. He is going to **UTTERLY PURGE IT**, AND GATHER ONLY THE WHEAT (THE REGENERATED ONES) INTO HIS GARNER. The others He will burn in the fire. The real believer, the real CHOSEN ONE, will undergo a purging unlike anything he/she has ever known before. In this case, the word “purge” is ‘diakatharizo’, which means **TO WINNOW, TO PURGE THOROUGHLY, TO CLEANSE PERFECTLY**. We already know that agape love is what **CLEANSSES US FROM ALL SIN**. WE KNOW THAT AGAPE LOVE IS THE ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD. He therefore will purge us, that WE MIGHT OBTAIN AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT; THAT WE MIGHT LAY OUR HANDS ON THE PEARL OF GREAT PRICE, and after having done that, TO PERFECT IT INTO A PERFECT LOVE.

*“If a man therefore  
**PURGE HIMSELF FROM THESE,**  
**HE SHALL BE A VESSEL UNTO HONOUR,**  
**SANCTIFIED,**  
**AND MEET FOR THE MASTER’S USE,**  
**AND PREPARED UNTO EVERY GOOD WORK.”**  
(2 Timothy 2:21)*

Notice that it says IF A MAN WILL PURGE HIMSELF. We already know what makes a man sanctified, and that is **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**. I thought that we just read where God says HE WILL PURGE US. Is this not a total contradiction? No, here a little and there a little. **IF A MAN WILL PICK UP HIS CROSS, AND IF HE WILL WALK THE NARROW WAY, HE WILL BE PURGED BY GOD**. God does the purging; **YOU DO THE WALKING**. By walking, you accomplish the PURGING THAT GOD DOES. And so you see, we have come full circle again. We are back to agape love, and we are back to a condition GOD REQUIRES BEFORE AGAPE LOVE IS BESTOWED. To claim it before you have it is to condemn yourself for all eternity. We must be brought down, we must be humbled, and we must be purged of all pride and arrogance in the INNER HEART.

*“Let the REDEEMED OF THE LORD SAY SO,  
WHOM HE HATH REDEEMED FROM THE HAND OF THE ENEMY;*

***HUNGRY AND THIRSTY,**  
**THEIR SOUL FAINTED IN THEM.***

***THEN THEY CRIED UNTO THE LORD**  
**IN THEIR TROUBLE, AND HE DELIVERED THEM OUT**  
**OF THEIR DISTRESSES.***

***FOR HE SATISFIETH THE LONGING SOUL, AND***

***FILLETH THE HUNGRY SOUL WITH GOODNESS.”***  
**(Psalm 107:2,5)**

Let's look at the words HUNGRY, THIRSTY, FAINTED, CRIED, TROUBLE, DISTRESSES, AND LONGING. They add further confirmation to the narrow way. Notice also that these are a pre-condition to the actual granting of salvation. No salvation is offered until ONE IS BROUGHT LOW AND CRIES OUT UNTO THE LORD. Do you remember in the Tabernacle, in the inner court? The word “cried” is ‘zaaq’, which means **TO SHRIEK FROM ANGUISH**. Do you remember that the table of incense, which represents the PRAYERS OF THE TRUE SAINTS, is located just outside the Holy of Holies? These are the CRIES OF THE REAL SAINTS OF GOD. THESE ARE THE CRIES THAT GOD HEARS, FOR THEY ARE CRIES OF THE OBEDIENT. The word “fainted” is ‘ataph’ which means **TO LANGUISH, TO FAIL, TO BE OVERWHELMED, TO SWOON**. The word for “trouble” is ‘tsar’ and it means **AFFLICTED, ANGUISH, TROUBLE, TRIBULATION, SORROW, TO BE IN A STRAIT, TO CROWD OR TO PRESS**. It is the identical meaning to the word NARROW. The word “distresses” is ‘metsuwqah’ and it means **ANGUISH AND TROUBLE**.

The word for “longing” is ‘taqqiyph’ which means **MIGHTY, STRONG, POWERFUL**. It means a very powerful longing, a great need. The word for “hungry” is ‘raeb’ which means **TO BE FAMISHED, TO SUFFER HUNGER**. The word for “thirsty” is ‘tsame’, and it means **TO SUFFER FROM THIRST, TO BE THIRSTY, TO BE DRY, PARCHED, IN NEED OF WATER**.

***“Therefore HE BROUGHT DOWN THEIR HEART WITH***  
***LABOUR;***  
***THEY FELL DOWN, AND THERE WAS NONE TO HELP.***  
  
***THEN THEY CRIED UNTO THE LORD IN THEIR TROUBLE,***  
***AND HE SAVED THEM OUT OF THEIR DISTRESSES.”***  
**(Psalm 107:12-13)**

God say He brings down the inner hearts of man with LABOR. The word for “brought down” is ‘kana’ which means **TO HUMILIATE, VANQUISH, BRING INTO SUBJECTION, BEND THE KNEE, HUMBLE ONESELF**. The word for “heart” here is ‘leb’ which refers to the **INNER HEART, THE INNER MAN**. The word “labour” is ‘amal’ which means **TOIL, WEARING EFFORT, LABOR, MISERY, SORROW, TRAVAIL**. It is a total confirmation of everything to date. The word for “fell down” is ‘kashel’ which means **TO STUMBLE, TO FALL, TO BE OVER THROWN**. Notice who does this to us: GOD HIMSELF DOES IT. This is not something that we do; it is something God does to us. We cannot dethrone self. We can only SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH WITH ALL OF OUR HEART, SOUL AND MIND. God does the rest.

All of these words are in perfect harmony with what Jesus Christ said about the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. Did not Christ use the same implications when He announced His ministry?

*“The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,  
because He hath anointed me to PREACH THE GOSPEL  
TO THE POOR;  
HE HATH SENT ME TO HEAL THE BROKENHEARTED,  
TO PREACH DELIVERANCE TO THE CAPTIVES,  
AND RECOVERING OF SIGHT TO THE BLIND,  
TO SET AT LIBERTY THEM THAT ARE BRUISED.”  
(Luke 4:18)*

Who does Christ preach the REAL GOSPEL TO? The “poor” is ‘ptochos’ which means **A BEGGAR, A PAUPER**. This has ramifications we have to inspect closely. Did the vast majority of Christians HEAR AND UNDERSTAND THE GOSPEL? No, they did not. Had they truly heard the REAL GOSPEL, THEY WOULD HAVE BEEN SAVED, NOT REJECTED. How can you PREACH A GOSPEL THAT YOU DO NOT HEAR OR UNDERSTAND? The answer is that HEARING, THEY DO NOT HEAR, SEEING THEY DO NOT SEE. It is totally possible, and THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WHO PREACH THE GOSPEL TO OTHERS DO NOT HEAR IT OR UNDERSTAND IT THEMSELVES. There is only ONE GROUP that IN TRUTH HEAR THE GOSPEL. **THEY ARE THE FEW.**

There is a gospel OF the world. That is the gospel of the Historical Christ, who came to redeem. That is the gospel of the soul man, sense man, the gospel of the SENSE WORLD, THE PHYSICAL WORLD. There is **ANOTHER GOSPEL**. It is the TRUE GOSPEL, AND **IT IS PREACHED ONLY TO THOSE WHO BECOME POOR**. It is heard only by those who have walked the narrow way to soul death. THEY HEAR THE GOSPEL DIRECT FROM THE MOUTH OF CHRIST (REV. 3:20 – HEAR MY VOICE). IT IS THE GOSPEL OF REAL SALVATION, OF REGENERATION, OF AGAPE LOVE FOUND AND BESTOWED. This is the GOSPEL THAT SAVES. This is the gospel that **TRANSFORMS STONY HEARTS INTO HEARTS OF FLESH, HEARTS OF AGAPE LOVE.**

Who are those that Jesus HEALS? ONLY THE BROKENHEARTED. The word “brokenhearted” is made from two words. The first is ‘suntribo’ which means **TO CRUSH COMPLETELY, TO SHATTER, TO BREAK IN PIECES, TO BE BROKEN IN SHIVERS, TO BRUISE**. Have you heard that before? Is it not amazing the perfect harmony between the Old and New Testaments? The other word is ‘kardia’ which as you know means **HEART**. So we have a perfect harmony which we cannot deny, and together they tell us that **ONLY THE REAL SPIRITUALLY DESTITUTE, THE SPIRITUALLY HUNGRY, THE SPIRITUALLY THIRSTY, THE SPIRITUALLY POOR, WHICH HAVE HAD THEIR SPIRITS CRUSHED TOTALLY BY THE NARROW WAY ARE GOING TO BE HEALED.** All others REFUSED the method God ordained. They had a better way, and it brought them eternal ruin.

Jesus came to preach deliverance to the CAPTIVES. The word “captives” is ‘aichmalotos’ and it means **PRISONER OF WAR, A PRISONER, A CAPTIVE, ONE IN BONDS**. The only ones who ever FULLY REALIZE THEY ARE IN BONDS, AND THAT ARE IN A STRAIT WAY ARE THOSE THAT WALK THE NARROW WAY. They fully experience it; they KNOW IT FOR A FACT. There is nothing quite like being a dead person while you walk around alive. There is nothing quite like asking Jesus into your heart a thousand times daily and He does not

come. There is nothing quite like **KNOWING YOU ARE DAMNED AND THERE IS NOTHING YOU CAN DO ABOUT IT.** There is nothing quite like being a prisoner tasting of death and hell, or of hearing the screams of the damned. Then you know you are a captive. Then can Christ deal with the human heart.

Who then gets RECOVERY OF SIGHT? The blind. The word “recovery” is ‘anablepsis’ which means **TO RESTORE THE SIGHT.** Adam and Eve had eyes that saw AGAPE LOVE. THEY KNEW IT, THEY EXPERIENCED IT, THEY LIVED IT. It was all lost at the fall. THE BLIND SOULS, THOSE WHO HAVE HUNGERED AND WHO THIRST AFTER AGAPE LOVE SHALL HAVE THEIR SIGHT RECOVERED. They shall once again see through the eyes of pure agape love.

Who does Christ set at liberty? Those that are bruised. The word “bruised” is ‘thrauo’ and it means **CRUSHED, TO HAVE CRUSHED, TO BRUISE.** There is ONLY ONE ‘WAY’ BY WHICH ANYONE CAN BE SO BRUISED AND CRUSHED: THE NARROW WAY. It is an exclusive, folks! You either enter in and do it, or you remain dead in the trespasses and sins of phileo love. The word “liberty” is ‘aphesis’ which means **TO BE SET FREE, TO BE PARDONED, TO HAVE FORGIVENESS.**

Do you need more evidence? There are many more verses to prove all of this out. Do a word study of the words POOR, CONTRITE, HUMBLE, BROKEN, BRUISED. You will find a total harmony between the Old and New Testament. Jesus Christ means every word He said. Do not let the false prophets of a dead and dying apostate church sway you away from the simple and direct words of Jesus. Let’s review all of these words and see where we are with them:

1. **CROSS – (INSTRUMENT OF DEATH, EXPOSURE TO DEATH).**
2. **DIE – (DIE OFF, TO BE DEAD, DEATH, SLAIN).**
3. **DENY – (TO DENY UTTERLY, TO DISOWN, TO RENOUNCE FULLY).**
4. **LOSE – (TO DESTROY FULLY, TO GO INTO TOTAL RUIN).**
5. **FOLLOWETH – (TO ACCOMPANY, TO BE IN THE SAME WAY WITH).**
6. **NARROW – (TO AFFLICT, TO SUFFER TRIBULATION, TROUBLE, AGONY, ANGUISH, PRESSURE).**
7. **TRIBULATION – (ANGUISH, AFFLICTION, AGONY, TROUBLE, PRESSURE).**
8. **FIGHT – (TO STRUGGLE, TO FIGHT AN ADVERSARY, TO LABOR FERVENTLY).**
9. **FIERY – (SMELTING, CONFLAGRATION, BURNING, CALAMITY, TESTING, TRIAL).**
10. **SUFFERING – (HARDSHIP, PAIN, AFFLICTION, SUFFER).**
11. **GRIEVOUS – (SADNESS, DEPRESSION, HEAVINESS, GRIEF, SORROW).**
12. **AFFLICTED – (DEPRESSED, LOWLY, NEEDY, POOR).**
13. **BROKEN – (TO CRUSH UTTERLY, TO DESTROY, TO TEAR APART, TO QUENCH UTTERLY).**
14. **CONTRITE – (TO COLLAPSE MENTALLY, TO CRUMBLE, TO CRUSH, TO DESTROY).**
15. **HUMBLE – (DEPRESSED, TO SINK, TO HUMILIATE, TO ABASE, TO LAY LOW).**
16. **POOR – (AFFLICTED, HUMBLE, LOWLY, NEEDY, POOR, BEGGAR).**

17. WOUNDS – (PAIN, SORROW, WOUND).
18. HUNGRY – (FAMISHED, TO SUFFER HUNGER, IN GREAT NEED OF FOOD, STARVING).
19. THIRSTY – (TO SUFFER THIRST, PARCHED, DRY, IN GREAT NEED OF WATER).
20. CRIED – (TO SHRIEK FROM ANGUISH).
21. TROUBLE – (AFFLICTED, ANGUISH, TROUBLE, TRIBULATION, SORROW, TO BE IN A STRAIT, TO CROWD, TO PRESS IN ON ONE).
22. DISTRESSES – (ANGUISH, SORROW).
23. BRUISED – (TO CRUSH, TO HAVE CRUSHED).
24. BROKENHEARTED – (TO CRUSH THE CENTER OF THE HEART UTTERLY, TO DESTROY, TO SHATTER, TO BREAK IN SHIVERS, TO BRUISE).
25. FAINTED – (TO LANGUISH, TO FAIL, TO BE OVERWHELMED, TO SWOON).
26. LONGING – (MIGHTY, STRONG, POWERFUL NEED).
27. CHASTENETH – (TO PUNISH, TO DISCIPLINE, TO TEACH TO, TO TRAIN UP).
28. SCOURGETH – (TO FLOG, TO WHIP, TO WHIP WITH A ROMAN FLAGELLUM).
29. REBUKE – (TO CONFUTE, TO ADMONISH, TO CONVICT, TO CONVINCED).
30. DESTRUCTION – (TO RUIN, TO AFFLICT, TO BREAK, TO CRUSH).
31. PUNISH – (TO DO JUDGMENT, TO AVENGE, TO BRING TO JUDGMENT).
32. SACRIFICE – (TO SLAUGHTER, TO KILL, TO PUT TO DEATH).
33. EXERCISED – (TO STRIP NAKED, TO TRAIN).
34. TO STAIN – (TO WOUND, TO PROFANE, TO BREAK, TO DEFILE).
35. CONTEMPT – (TO CURSE, TO DESPISE, TO AFFLICT).
36. ENDURE – (TO REMAIN UNDER, TO UNDERGO, TO BEAR UP, TO HAVE FORTITUDE, TO PERSEVERE, TO TAKE PATIENTLY, TO SUFFER).

If we combine all of this with our previous list of words, we have a portrait beginning to emerge that is *diametrically opposed to all of modern Christianity*. It would be one thing if it were confined to the Old Testament. It is not, it is confirmed in the Old, restated in the New by Christ and every single writer of the epistles, and *RECONFIRMED TOTALLY IN THE BOOK OF REVELATION*. We are warned of the consequences of TAKING AWAY FROM THE WORDS OF “THE BOOK”.

We can now begin to understand why Jesus called the true way to SALVATION NARROW, and why He said only a FEW WOULD MAKE IT. They simply will NOT FACE THE REPROOF OF ALMIGHTY GOD. They will not come to the light of love. They prefer to remain in darkness and spend an eternity in utter ruin. How do we compare all of this to the EASY FAITH GOSPEL OF TODAY? How do we compare all of this for what is being preached by every major evangelist today? Who are you going to believe, CHRIST OR THEM? Your answer will forever determine your eternal destiny. I urge you to believe Jesus Christ. I beg of you to believe the

LORD GOD. I beseech you to believe what the Scriptures plainly and clearly tell you. **COME OUT FROM HER, MY PEOPLE, LEST YOU BE PARTAKERS OF HER SINS.**

All of this describes a lengthy period of time in which we MUST ENDURE THE SCOURGING AND CHASTENING OF THE LORD. It implies a time of mourning and sorrow, of anguish and agony, of pressure and tribulation as the Lord presses in upon us, hunts us down, and drags us to the Messiah. Indeed, we are to SUFFER WITH THE MESSIAH. He led the way, opened the pathway, tore the veil so we may journey boldly before the throne of grace in our time of need.

*“For as the SUFFERINGS OF CHRIST ABOUND IN US,  
so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.”  
(2 Corinthians 1:5)*

*“And our hope of you is steadfast, KNOWING,  
THAT AS YE ARE PARTAKERS OF THE SUFFERINGS,  
SO SHALL ALSO YE BE OF THE CONSOLATION.”  
(2 Corinthians 1:7)*

*“That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection,  
and the FELLOWSHIP OF HIS SUFFERINGS,  
being made COMFORMABLE UNTO HIS DEATH.”  
(Philippians 3:10)*

The word “sufferings” in all cases is ‘pathema’ which means to **SUFFER HARDSHIP, PAIN, AND AFFLICTION.**

## **OVER AN EXTENDED PERIOD OF TIME.**

We would have to admit that all of this is the direct opposite of the ANON WITH GREAT JOY CROWD OF BELIEVERS FILLING THE CHURCH PEWS OF TODAY IN EVERY MAJOR DENOMINATION. We would have to agree that the writers of the New Testament epistles thought we were to **PICK UP OUR CROSS, AND SUFFER ALONG WITH CHRIST, TO BE IN THE SAME WAY WITH HIM, AND TO FOLLOW HIM.** There is no way this can be misconstrued or taken out of context. Jesus laid it all out before us, verified it in the Old Testament, and sealed it in Revelation:

**“HE THAT OVERCOMETH  
SHALL INHERIT ALL THINGS;**



**AND I WILL BE HIS GOD,  
AND HE SHALL BE MY SON.**  
(Revelation 21:7)

The word “overcometh” is ‘nikao’ and it means **TO SUBDUE, TO CONQUER, TO PREVAIL, TO OBTAIN THE VICTORY, TO HAVE FOUGHT AND WON.** The root is ‘nike’ which means **CONQUEST, VICTORY.** Why does Jesus use such a word in relationship to REGENERATION unless it is directly connected to the NARROW WAY? Does not all of this CONFIRM IN TOTAL EVERYTHING WE HAVE LEARNED THUS FAR?

**“For WHATSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD OVERCOMETH THE WORLD.”**  
(1 John 5:4)

Now anyone born of God would have to be a SON OF GOD, WOULD THEY NOT? And what makes us a SON OF GOD?

**“BEHOLD, WHAT MANNER OF (AGAPE) LOVE THE FATHER HATH  
BESTOWED UPON US, THAT WE SHOULD BE CALLED  
THE SONS OF GOD.”**  
(1 John 3:1)

We have seen all of this, we have confirmed all of it, and it all ties directly back to the process of THE NARROW WAY, WHICH LEADETH UNTO LIFE, AND LIFE IS AGAPE LOVE, AND AGAPE LOVE IS FOUND IN THE SON OF GOD:

**“He that HATH THE SON HATH LIFE;  
AND HE THAT HATH NOT THE SON OF GOD  
HATH NOT LIFE.”**  
(1 John 5:12)

If life is at THE END OF THE NARROW WAY, WHICH CHRIST CLEARLY STATED IT WAS, then obviously Christ stands at the end of the narrow way, waiting for any and all who will walk it TO FIND HIM, AND TO FIND THE MYSTERY OF GOD, AGAPE LOVE. We also know that Christ will not bestow agape love on anyone that is NOT BROUGHT DOWN TO A FULL AND COMPLETE JUDGMENT OF THE INNER HEART, THE SPIRIT THAT SITS UPON THE THRONE OF SELF.

## THE JUDGMENT OF GOD

All of this verifies that we are to undergo the equivalent of a GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT while we are alive and on earth. The concept that Christians do not undergo any such judgment is wholly untrue, a wresting of the Scripture to eternal ruin. We will now look at those verses that claim there is a judgment. Common sense alone would tell us that such a vile heart as God claims man has would have to be totally destroyed before God could take up residence. How can CONDITIONAL SELF LOVE RESIDE WITH PURE UNCONDITIONAL AGAPE LOVE? How then could Christ take up residence within us if He has not FIRST DESTROYED UTTERLY THE INNER HEART. That is the process of bringing us low, of abasing us, of humiliating us. It has a purpose, for the essence of God is A LOWLY AND CONTRITE SPIRIT.

***“For the DAY OF THE LORD OF HOSTS (JUDGMENT DAY)  
shall be upon  
EVERY ONE (NO EXCEPTIONS)  
that IS PROUD AND LOFTY,  
AND UPON EVERY ONE THAT IS LIFTED UP;  
and he shall be brought low.”  
(Isaiah 2:12)***

Because every single soul born into the human race is PROUD AND LOFTY in their heart of hearts, then **GOD MUST BRING US ALL DOWN IN JUDGMENT**. If you do not believe this is true, then walk the narrow way and I guarantee to you with a 100% guarantee that **YOU WILL DISCOVER YOUR PROUD AND LOFTY HEART OF HEARTS**. If you have walked the narrow way, YOU ALREADY KNOW IT FOR A FACT.

***“And when he (the Holy Spirit) is come, HE WILL  
REPROVE THE WORLD OF SIN, AND OF RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
AND OF JUDGMENT.”  
(John 16:8)***

It is the work of the Holy Spirit to BRING THE BELIEVER INTO A SEVERE TRIAL TO JUDGMENT. We know already that the primary sin of man is his conditional and manipulative SELF LOVE. The first problem that confronts the Holy Spirit is TO CONVICT THE INNER HEART TO THE POINT OF CRUSHING IT. TO CONVICT THE INNER HEART THAT IT DOES NOT LOVE. TO CONVICT THE INNER HEART THAT IT STANDS DEAD IN TRESPASSES AND SINS BEFORE A GOD OF DIVINE LOVE. It must convince this inner heart of STONE that it is wrong; that the so called love it claims for others is a FRAUD, A DECEPTION, A DELUSION.

*“For if we would JUDGE OURSELVES (WALK THE NARROW WAY),*

*WE SHOULD NOT BE JUDGED.*

*BUT WHEN WE ARE JUDGED,*

*WE ARE CHASTENED OF THE LORD,*

*THAT WE SHOULD NOT BE CONDEMNED*

*WITH THE WORLD.”*

*(1 Corinthians 11:31-32)*

Here we have a direct link between JUDGMENT AND CHASTISEMENT. It is we that must walk the narrow way to complete and utter judgment upon our inner heart. If we would do this, WE COULD NOT BE CONDEMNED WITH THE WORLD OF UNBELIEVERS AND CHRIST REJECTERS. We would escape the wrath of God, and we would find refuge in Christ. The vast majority of Christians DID NOT AVAIL THEMSELVES OF THE REFUGE THAT WAS IN CHRST. They rejected His commands, therefore they WERE JUDGED RIGHT ALONG WITH THE WORLD OF UNBELIEVERS.

*“COME NOW, AND  
LET US REASON TOGETHER,*

*SAITH THE LORD:  
THOUGH YOUR SINS BE AS SCARLET,  
THEY SHALL BE AS WHITE AS SNOW;  
THOUGH THEY BE RED AS CRIMSON,  
THEY SHALL BE AS WOOL.”*

*(Isaiah 1:18)*

The word “reason” is ‘yakach’ which means TO ARGUE, TO CONVICT, TO CHASTEN, TO REBUKE, TO CORRECT, TO JUDGE, TO REBUKE AND TO REPROVE. The Lord is telling you right here what IS REQUIRED IF YOUR SIN IS TO BE FORGIVEN. You must come to a knowledge of AGAPE LOVE.

*“TURN YOU AT MY REPROOF:*

*behold,*

*I WILL POUR OUT MY SPIRIT UNTO YOU,  
I WILL MAKE KNOWN MY WORDS UNTO YOU.*

***Because I have called, AND YE REFUSED  
(you would not walk the narrow way):  
I have stretched out my hand, AND NO MAN REGARDED;  
  
BUT YE HAVE SET AT NOUGHT ALL MY COUNSEL  
(which was to enter the strait gate),  
AND WOULD NONE OF MY REPROOF.”***  
(Proverbs 1:23-25)

This is the identical thing that Jesus said when He said people would not come to the light of agape love. Rather than face the rebuke of God, they remain in their sins, keeping busy in the world so they need not think of the coming judgment. But come it will, and when it does, WHERE THE TREE FALLS, IT FALLS. IT FALLS SAVED OR DAMNED. **There is NO CHANGING IT LATER, THERE IS NO SECOND CHANCE, THERE IS NO REPRIEVE.** When you fall without having settled the agape love issue, God CANNOT GRANT YOU GRACE, MERCY, COMPASSION OR REPRIEVE. It is forever settled and you are forever lost. God called. His counsel through Christ was that we all STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, and walk the narrow way to soul death. He stretched out His hand to the whole human race, and no one regarded WHAT GREAT SACRIFICE HE MADE. The race as a whole SET AT NAUGHT ALL OF HIS COUNSEL.

When dealing with God, you do not PICK AND CHOOSE, that which you will comply with. YOU EITHER ACCEPT IT ALL AND DO IT ALL, OR YOU HAVE REFUSED IT ALL. The method God sent with Christ has been UTTERLY REJECTED BY MODERN CHRISTIANITY OF ANY DENOMINATION YOU WISH TO CHOOSE. With one accord they PERVERT or TWIST or DENY the truth of the strait gate and narrow way. If they acknowledge it, they claim a union with Christ at the beginning. THEY HAVE SET AT NAUGHT THE COUNSEL OF GOD, AND UNLESS THERE IS A COMPLETE AND TOTAL BIBLICAL REPENTANCE, THEY ARE LOST.

***“MY PEOPLE  
ARE DESTROYED FOR LACK OF KNOWLEDGE  
(THEY DO NOT UNDERSTAND THE NARROW WAY):  
  
BECAUSE THOU HAST REJECTED KNOWLEDGE (OF AGAPE LOVE),  
I WILL ALSO REJECT THEE,  
THAT THOU SHALT BE NO PRIEST TO ME:  
SEEING THAT THOU HAST  
FORGOTTEN THE LAW OF THY GOD (AGAPE LOVE),  
I WILL ALSO FORGET THY CHILDREN.”***  
(Hosea 4:6)

To develop a theology that SPEAKS EVIL OF THE WAY OF THE TRUTH, is to reject the essential knowledge one must have to be saved. It is to reject the counsel of God; it is to reject the law of God. Because HIS OWN PEOPLE (CHRISTIANS) have rejected the knowledge of the STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY, and cannot ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE, but have instead EMBRACED FALSE PROPHETS WHO TELL THEM WHAT THEY WANT TO HEAR, INSTEAD OF THE WHOLE TRUTH OF GOD, INSTEAD OF THE WHOLE COUNSEL OF GOD, then God says to them:

## **“YOU SHALL BE NO PRIEST TO ME.”**

This is a very important comment from the lips of the Lord. The ONLY ONES TO LIVE AND REIGN WITH CHRIST ARE **THE KINGS AND PRIESTS**. The only ones to enter HEAVEN are the PRIESTHOOD. Regeneration is THE ONLY ENTRANCE TO THE KINGDOM OF GOD, WHICH ALSO IS YOUR TICKET TO ENTER HEAVEN. The “many” of Matthew Seven were EXCLUDED FROM THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN, because they had never been REGENERATED. They never became part of the PRIESTHOOD. The Bride of Christ is made up of KINGS AND PRIESTS; there are no converted LEPERS. This is true because the issue between them and God was never faced, never settled: THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE.

This confirms and is in total harmony with everything we have learned. If you forget the LAW OF GOD, WHICH CHRIST REDUCED DOWN TO AGAPE LOVE, and if you forget the NARROW WAY, which is the ONLY LEGAL METHOD FOR ENTERING THE NEW COVENANT, then you WILL NEVER BE A PRIEST, NEVER BECOME A KING. If the issue between man and God is agape love, and you FORGET THE ISSUE, then your religion is vanity, it avails you nothing.

The people who follow after the false prophets, false teachers and preacher boys who preach a gospel of INSTANT REGENERATION AND INSTANT UNION AT CONVERSION DAMN THEMSELVES FOR ONE REASON: they REJECTED the Word of God, and they embraced the WORD OF UNREGENERATE MEN. Because they rejected the counsel of God, they rejected the only WAY there was to enter the New Covenant.

Satan handed them the gospel of the broad way, and they bought into it, embraced it hook, line and sinker, and called anyone who tried to warn them an apostate, a heretic, a liar and worse. So the choice is simple, as it has always been simple: **FIND OUT WHAT THE WORD OF GOD ACTUALLY SAYS AND BECOME OBEDIENT TO IT, SO THAT YOU MAY BE SAVED, OR REJECT IT AND BE DAMNED**. Satan does not care how he deceives you, as long as he does. God does not care if you are deceived, for He gave you ample knowledge to know the truth of it all. REJECTED KNOWLEDGE IS A VERY DANGEROUS THING.

You and I are going to be brought down; we are going to be humbled:

***“And whosoever shall EXALT HIMSELF SHALL BE ABASED;  
and he that shall HUMBLE HIMSELF  
SHALL BE EXALTED.”***

(Matthew 23:12)

The word “abase” is ‘tapeinoo’ and it means **TO HUMILIATE, TO BRING LOW, TO HUMBLE**. This is a serious verse, for the vast majority of Christian leaders **EXALTED THEMSELVES WHILE ON EARTH**. They paraded around as the **BIG SHOTS OF THE FAITH, THE BIG GUNS**, and they strutted around like peacocks waving their Bibles and gained thousands if not millions of followers. They lived lifestyles of luxury, had beautiful mansions, large salaries and a multitude of hidden ‘perks’ to satisfy their every want. They became arrogant, proud and haughty. They exalted themselves **IN THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST**. When they come before the judgment seat of Christ, they face a **PUBLIC ANNOUNCEMENT OF THEIR FRAUDULENT MINISTRIES; THEY SHALL BE ABASED PUBLICLY:**

**“...AND THEN I WILL DECLARE IN A PUBLIC ANNOUNCEMENT  
TO THEM,  
I NEVER CAME TO KNOW YOU EXPERIENTIALLY.  
BE GOING AWAY FROM ME,  
YOU WHO ARE WORKING THE LAWLESSNESS.”**  
(Matthew 7:23 – Kenneth S. Wuest Translation)

In truth, they refused the narrow way, and because that is the only way to **TRUE ABASEMENT**, they never understood the gospel, or what it meant. Their false instant salvation gospel condemned them to an eternity in the lake of fire. That is why Peter said that their **DAMNATION SLUMBERETH NOT**. Woe unto them, for they **ABUSE THE NAME OF CHRIST, AND PUT HIM TO AN OPEN SHAME**.

***“But when thou ART BIDDEN,  
GO AND SIT DOWN IN THE LOWEST ROOM;  
THAT WHEN HE THAT BADE THEE COMETH  
(THE REVELATION OF CHRIST),  
he may say unto thee, FRIEND,  
GO UP HIGHER (BE EXALTED):  
then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them  
that sit at meat with thee.”***  
(Luke 14:10)

We will close this portion of our study with this verse, for it summarizes perfectly the entire concept of what we have been studying:

**1. WHEN THOU ART BIDDEN.** The word “bidden” is ‘kaleo’ and it means **CALLED**. Jesus said that **MANY ARE CALLED**, but **FEW** are chosen. The Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ is the call. In one sense the entire world **IS CALLED**. Christ died in a very prominent time in history, in high visibility. The Holy Spirit will then call **MANY OUT OF THE WORLD**. These are they who **RESPOND VIA CONVERSION TO THE HISTORICAL CHRIST, AND WHO EMBRACE THE MAIN TENENTS OF THE FAITH**. This calling is what Jesus is referring to here, for the parable is about a **WEDDING FEAST**. Jesus is about to issue a **COMMAND**.

**2. GO AND SIT DOWN IN THE LOWEST ROOM.** There are several key words here of vital importance. The first is “go” which is ‘poreuomai’, which means to **TRAVERSE, TRAVEL, TAKE A JOURNEY, TAKE A TRIP**. It is essentially the same implication as the word “way” which also means **HIGHWAY, PATHWAY, JOURNEY**. You see, you **TRAVEL DOWN A HIGHWAY, YOU TRAVERSE A PATHWAY**. You take a trip along the “way”. It confirms totally that **THERE IS A PROGRESS, A REAL JOURNEY TO BE MADE**. Because there **IS A JOURNEY, A TRIP**, then it will take **TIME TO ACCOMPLISH**. There will be a **PROGRESS MADE** as we journey along our “way”. Jesus is **COMMANDING YOU AND I TO EMBARK UPON THIS JOURNEY**. It is not optional; it is a direct command.

Notice where the journey leads: **DOWNWARD TO THE LOWEST ROOM**. You are told to journey until you reach the lowest room, and there you are to **SIT DOWN**. The word “lowest” is ‘eschatos’, which means **FARTHEST, UTTERMOST, LAST, END, OR LOWEST**. In other words, it is the **EXTREME LOWEST ROOM ONE CAN FIND**. The word “room” is ‘topos’, which means **LOCATION, SPOT, PLACE OR CONDITION**. We know from previous study that **JESUS COMMANDED US TO DIE**. He ordered us to pick up our cross and follow Him from Calvary to the lowest regions. The lowest region recorded in the Bible is called the **PIT**. It is the pit of remorse, of hopelessness, of death, of ruin, of judgment. It is the pit **FOR THE DAMNED**.

There is no other furthestmost condition to be in. There is no other uttermost place to find. This is an open **COMMAND TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO SOUL DEATH**. It is obvious what Jesus is speaking of here. We are to **BROUGHT DOWN LOW, HUMBLED, HUMILIATED AND OUR HEARTS OF ARROGANCY, PRIDE AND HAUGHTINESS ARE TO BE CAST DOWN TO THE RUINS OF HELL ITSELF**. We are to be crushed, and our inner hearts **UTTERLY SMASHED**.

We are to **SIT DOWN** in this **LOWEST ROOM**. The word for “sit” is ‘anapipto’ which means **LIE DOWN, RECLINE, FALL BACK**. The implication is **TO STAY, ABIDE, TO REMAIN, TO CONTINUE** sitting until a specific event occurs. There is no time place here, but the implication is a long time. This is where the **CRIES TO THE LORD ARE MADE**. This is where the seeker of Christ is put into a **STRAIT**. He cannot move. He cannot go back, he cannot go ahead. He is dead in his trespasses and sins, but his cries for mercy are answered with cold silence. You can ask Jesus into your heart a million times while in this condition, yet He will not answer. **‘MY GOD, MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?’** This is the cry of the seeking soul, for now, in the lowest pit, in the pit of death, he cannot find God. He cannot find anything. **THE SOUL IS UTTERLY ALONE**.

**3. AND WHEN HE THAT BADE THEE COMETH.** Who has called us unto salvation? Is it not the Lord Jesus Christ? Is He not the one that **HAS BIDDEN US TO THE WEDDING FEAST**? We find here one of a multitude of proofs that there is to be an experiential **ENCOUNTER WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**. We will cover them all, for there **IS TO BE**

**AN EVIDENCE FOR THE BELIEVER TO KNOW HIS POSITION BEFORE THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.** How else could you know you had BEEN GIVEN SOMETHING? How else could you KNOW you had FOUND something? How else could you KNOW that the door had been opened? How else could you KNOW that you had LIFE?

Jesus Christ called you, and He that called you **WILL COME TO YOU**. The one common denominator we have found throughout this study is that the many were NOT REGENERATED; THEY HAD NO UNION. Their union was accomplished BY FAITH IN A DOCTRINE, FAITH IN PROMISES, FAITH IN THE BIBLE. They did not know they MUST HAVE AN ENCOUNTER, **TO HAVE THE MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE REVEALED**. It is refused, and instead of facing the hundreds of verses of Scripture which PROVE CONCLUSIVELY THAT CHRIST WILL APPEAR TO THE BELIEVER, IT IS ALL REJECTED, AND **THE EVIDENCES OF CONVERSION ARE BROUGHT FORWARD AND CLAIMED AS THE EVIDENCE OF REGENERATION**.

The mystery of God, that is the mystery of AGAPE LOVE is hidden from mankind. It is beyond ALL SENSE KNOWLEDGE. It is NOT learned by mental absorption of Scriptural facts, it does not come BY MENTAL ILLUMINATION. All of that is DOCTRINE. Agape love revelation **is NOT DOCTRINE, it is the focus point of ALL DOCTRINE**. AGAPE LOVE IS THE TRUTH. There is a difference between DOCTRINE and AGAPE LOVE.

DOCTRINE IS SOMETHING YOU LEARN. You study it, you pour over it, and you put it all together to begin to understand what THE WORD IS ATTEMPTING TO SAY. THIS IS ALL MENTAL CONSCIOUS MIND ACTIVITY. IT IS DONE BY THE MIND. That is why Jesus said to CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE, FOR IT WOULD LEAD US TO “THE TRUTH”.

AGAPE LOVE is not something you LEARN. It cannot be learned BECAUSE THE HUMAN BEING IN HIS UNREGENERATE STATE CANNOT KNOW IT. It is not part of his nature, not a part of his essence. That is why the Bible calls it a MYSTERY, A SECRET, A HIDDEN THING. It lies beyond the veil of our minds. AGAPE LOVE IS SOMETHING THAT YOU MUST BE GIVEN, IT IS SOMETHING YOU CAN POSSESS, A CHANGE IN YOUR NATURE, A CHANGE IN YOUR HEART, A LOVE CHANGE. It has nothing to do with LEARNING. IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH DOCTRINE. All doctrine is to LEAD YOU TO CHRIST. It has no other function. The Word of God equips you IN THE SENSE REALM, THE FLESH REALM, THE CARNAL REALM, SO THAT YOU ARE ABLE TO SERVE GOD ON EARTH; SO THAT YOU MAY BE THOROUGHLY FURNISHED FOR ALL GOOD WORKS. THE OBJECT OF ALL DOCTRINE IS TO BRING YOU TO THE ENCOUNTER WITH CHRIST, THE TRUTH OF WHO HE REALLY IS, AGAPE LOVE PERSONIFIED. The truth itself is not a doctrine. It is not learned by the senses whatever. It is of the SPIRIT, AND THE SPIRIT EITHER POSSESS AGAPE LOVE OR IT DOES NOT. **One is either regenerate or unregenerate. One either POSSESSES AGAPE LOVE OR DOES NOT.**

This is why the ‘many’ Christians were rejected. They remained in DOCTRINE. They claimed that there was no more REVELATION (something the Scripture categorically denies) and that all truth now comes FROM HOLY SPIRIT ILLUMINATION. Their knowledge of Christ was **SCRIPTURALLY ILLUMINATED KNOWLEDGE**. Their knowledge of Christ had to do with THE FACTS OF CHRIST. They read the Scriptures daily, thinking that in them they WOULD FIND JESUS CHRIST. They poured over the facts of His life, they studied intently His words, and they learned EVERY FACT ABOUT HIM THEY COULD FIND. By the **KNOWING OF THESE FACTS, THEY CLAIMED THEY KNEW HIM**. By the knowing of the facts, and by the embracing of the promises of Scripture, they **CLAIMED A UNION WITH HIM**. THEY



LOCKED ONTO SOME PROMISES OF REGENERATION, AND BY PLACING THEIR FAITH IN THE PROMISES; THEY CLAIMED REGENERATION AND AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT.

But never did it dawn upon them that they **HAD TO COME TO THE LIVING CHRIST**. Never did it dawn upon them that **THE LIVING CHRIST WAS NOT THE BIBLE, NOT THE SCRIPTURE**. Jesus said “AND YOU WILL NOT COME TO ME THAT YOU MIGHT HAVE LIFE”. I say to you that Jesus Christ is ALIVE. HE IS A PERSON, HE IS LIVING, AND HE SPEAKS, AND MOVES, AND ACTS. HE RUNS THE AFFAIRS OF HEAVEN AND THE UNIVERSE. It is the LIVING CHRIST YOU HAVE TO DEAL WITH, not the FACTUAL CHRIST OF THE BIBLE.

The Bible is clear: **THE MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE PASSETH ALL UNDERSTANDING**. It does so because it is a SPIRITUAL ENCOUNTER. It is also **VERY EXPERIENTIAL**. The entire believer, HIS INNER HEART, HIS OUTER CONSCIOUSNESS, HIS INNER AND OUTER MINDS ARE HELD IN AWE AS CHRIST REVEALS THE SECRET OF GOD. Christ MUST, and WILL COME TO EVERY OBEDIENT BELIEVER, AND I WILL PROVE IT DIRECT FROM SCRIPTURE. This is one of the reasons the ‘many’ were rejected. **THEY NEVER MET CHRIST, THEY NEVER ENCOUNTERED THE LIVING CHRIST, THEY NEVER KISSED THE LIVING SON**.

The word “cometh” is ‘erchomai’ and it means **TO COME TO, TO APPEAR, TO ACCOMPANY** and it means that CHRIST WILL COME. This encounter will be fully covered in the next several reports.

**4. HE MAY SAY TO THEE, FRIEND, GO UP HIGHER.** The word “say” is ‘epo’ and it means **TO SPEAK, TO SAY**. If Jesus speaks to you, then YOU WILL HEAR HIS VOICE (Rev. 3:20, which is also confirmed by John 10:3-5, 16, 27).

When Christ comes, He has only one mission. **TO REVEAL THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE, AND TO PREACH THE GOSPEL OF SALVATION, TO REVEAL WHAT IS THE NEW COVENANT**. Because agape love is hidden from man because of the fall and his knowledge of good and evil, **CHRIST MUST SUPERNATURALLY REVEAL IT TO THE BELIEVER**. None of this has anything to do with YOUR FAITH. Your faith is totally inoperative during this exchange. Notice it is not SOMETHING YOU DO, IT IS SOMETHING HE DOES TO YOU. It says YOU SIT UNTIL HE COMES. He decides when He will come. You have nothing whatever to say about it. It is utterly removed from mankind. IT IS THE SOVEREIGNTY OF GOD THAT DETERMINES WHEN AND WHERE CHRIST WILL COME. Because this is a move OF GOD UPON YOU, then your faith, your beliefs, your ideas MEAN NOTHING.

You are now **THE FRIEND OF JESUS**. You have walked with Him from Calvary through His death and you have gone down to complete and utter debasement. You have been obedient, you have done as commanded, and you waited as He ordered you to do. **TWO WAY RECONCILIATION HAS BEEN ACCOMPLISHED**. Jesus, after revealing agape love to the believer, can now BESTOW IT UPON THE BELIEVER WHO WISHES TO PARTAKE OF IT. That is why Jesus used the word MAY. It is up to the inner heart of the seeker if this FINAL MERGER IS TO TAKE PLACE, IF THE NEW COVENANT IS GOING TO BE ENTERED.

Neither God nor Christ can offer you a legal contract that is binding upon both parties **UNTIL BOTH PARTIES KNOW THE ESSENCE OF THE CONTRACT**. The essence of the contract

is AGAPE LOVE. That means that the conditional self love, the great I AM has to get off the throne, and allow Christ His rightful position upon it. This is not a decision of the OUTER HEART, MIND AND WILL, IT IS A DECISION OF THE INNER HEART, AND WILL. The job of severing the SOUL FROM THE SPIRIT IS COMPLETE. Christ is speaking to the SPIRIT MAN, THE INNER MAN. That will HAS TO CONSENT BEFORE THE CONTRACT CAN BE RATIFIED.

The reason why agape love **MUST BE SUPERNATURALLY SHOWN** is because **MANKIND CANNOT KNOW IT ANY OTHER WAY**. Christ is not going to enter into any agreement, or contract with you until YOU KNOW WHAT IT MEANS. He cannot, because that would be FRAUD. Many people on this world get out of contracts they made because THEY DID NOT UNDERSTAND THAT CONTRACT. Parts of it were hidden, concealed, or worded in such a way as to DECEIVE. The Godhead does not operate in that manner. **EVERYTHING IS SHOWN TO THE BELIEVER**. The simplicity of Christ is AGAPE LOVE. The POWER of Christ is **HIS CROSS**.

If the believer refuses, he is damned for all eternity (Hebrews 6:4-7). One can go all the way TO COMPLETE AGAPE LOVE REVELATION and STILL REFUSE CHRIST, AND FALL AWAY. Because there is no other name by which we may be saved under the heavens, if we **REJECT THE LIVING CHRIST, WE HAVE REJECTED THE ONLY METHOD HE GAVE TO US TO ESCAPE ETERNAL LOSS**. We have then tasted of the Word of God, we have been baptized in the Holy Ghost, we have tasted of the power in the world to come, we have known Christ is the only Son of God, we have been enlightened and KNOW AGAPE LOVE. If we then REFUSE (FALL AWAY) the process will never be done again. There would be no point in it.

Jesus then bestows agape love upon the believer, and comes into that believer at the instant TRUE REGENERATION TAKES PLACE. He comes direct into the heart, and takes up residence upon the throne in the Holy of Holies. FAITH HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH IT. Faith is only the dynamic that moves one to the **POINT OF CONTACT**. The contact itself is the **EXACT OPPOSITE OF FAITH, AS WILL BE PROVEN**. It is a fabrication of the false prophets that there is **NO EXPERIENTIAL UNION**. I assure you they ARE FALSE PROPHETS IF THEY TELL YOU THERE IS NO EXPERIENTIAL ENCOUNTER WITH THE LIVING CHRIST. It is your ABSOLUTE ASSURANCE TO HEAVEN. WITHOUT IT, YOU ARE A LOST SOUL, AND ALL OF YOUR PROTESTS TO THE CONTRARY WILL NOT SAVE YOU. **You are not seeking after a sign**. You are doing as Christ commanded; you are seeking after the **FACE OF GOD**.

After agape love is bestowed, you are now a genuine SON OF GOD. You may now worship God in **SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH**. You have now been born of water (agape love) and of the Spirit. The Holy Spirit seals you for the final day of the Lord.

All of this is true, and will be verified totally by many verses of Scripture. It cannot be misinterpreted. The “many” had only an act of faith as their evidence. They took some verse of Scripture, **BELIEVED IN THEM AND CLAIMED THEY WERE SAVED**. Scripture demands in a multitude of places that you have **THE REVELATION OF CHRIST AS YOUR EVIDENCE**. It is the revelation that enables you to **KNOW YOU HAVE FOUND THE TRUTH**. Jesus said to seek until you **FIND**. He said to KNOCK UNTIL THE DOOR IS **OPENED**. The seeking is done by faith. The finding is the opposite of faith. The knocking is done by faith; the door being opened by God is the opposite of faith. Do not let the false teachers tell you that all of this is done by FAITH. They have perverted and twisted the definition of faith beyond recognition, which is why Christ asked if He would find FAITH on the earth when HE

RETURNED. THE ANSWER IS NO; HE WOULD NOT. **THE FALSE TEACHERS, PREACHERS AND EVANGELISTS WOULD HAVE ALTERED IT BEYOND ANY BIBLICAL RECOGNITION.**

The Bible warned that in the latter days a whole group (the many) would rise up with a false gospel of salvation. If the real gospel of salvation INCLUDES AN EXPERIENTIAL ENCOUNTER WITH CHRIST, then the false gospel MUST DENY IT. In the place of an **EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING, OF A TRUE PERSONAL RELATIONSHIP WITH CHRIST**; will rise up the **FAITH AND BELIEF GOSPEL**, IN WHICH FAITH AND BELIEF ITSELF **BECOME** THE KNOWING. In other words we ARE SAVED because we put our FAITH IN THE SALVATION VERSES OF SCRIPTURE. “I am saved, because the Bible tells me I am saved.” Let us return to Scripture itself:

*“Behold, what manner of **GREAT FAITH AND BELIEF**  
the Father hath bestowed upon us,  
that we should be called the sons of God.”  
(1 John 3:1)*

Does it say that? Wherein does it say that? I have over 30 Bibles in my collection of research Bibles and **NONE OF THEM EVEN HINT THAT IS WHAT IT SAYS**. That is a MAN MADE THEOLOGY, **A THEOLOGY OUT OF THE PITS OF HELL**; IT IS THE METHOD USED TO DESTROY MILLIONS OF SOULS. If the above verse WERE TRUE, then Paul is a liar, because he said you could HAVE FAITH TO REMOVE MOUNTAINS, and yet, IF YOU DID NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE (CHARITY) YOU WOULD PERISH. And that is PRECISELY WHY THE BIBLE SAYS EXACTLY WHAT IT SAYS:

*“Behold, what manner of  
**AGAPE LOVE**  
the Father hath **BESTOWED UPON US**,  
**THAT WE SHOULD BE CALLED THE SONS OF GOD.**”  
(1 John 3:1)*

Please believe what it says. Please accept it at face value. It is **NOT FAITH AND BELIEF THAT MAKE YOU A SON OF GOD**. It is the **REVELATION, ACCEPTANCE AND BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE THAT MAKE YOU A SON OF GOD**. It is the settlement of the ISSUE between you and God that allows God to regenerate you. Faith and belief are **ONLY THE DYNAMIC, THE POWER, THE FORCE**, THAT PROPELS YOU THROUGH THE NARROW WAY **TO THE CONTACT, TO THE REVELATION**. Do not make faith and belief what it is not. FAITH **GAINS US THE VICTORY**. BUT FAITH ITSELF IS NOT **THE VICTORY**.

The many found out the hard way that faith itself was NOT the victory, for they had faith to do mighty works, and faith to move mountains, and faith to cast out demons. But it DID NOT GET

THEM THE VICTORY. We are now going to study faith in our next report on DARK LIGHT and find out exactly what it is, and more importantly, what it is not, to find out yet another aspect of why the vast majority of Christians are rejected of Christ.

## **DILIGENCE, FORCE AND PATIENCE THE DEFINITION OF BIBLICAL FAITH?**

If all of the words that Jesus said to us mean what they say, then it would stand to reason that this is far from any instant or immediate regeneration, but is instead a drawn out process, a process of testing, trial, and crushing. It would confirm that indeed there is a TRIAL OF YOUR FAITH, a trial by fire that PRECEDES ANY GRANTING OF AGAPE LOVE. The words like chastening, scourging, broken, contrite, bring low, rebuke, reproof and the like all seem to harmonize with the real meaning of the word narrow.

This all being true, then we should also find some verses in Scripture that would confirm all of this IS IN FACT A JOURNEY, ALL OF IT TAKES TIME, ALL OF IT REQUIRES A PERSISTENCE, A TENACITY OF PURPOSE. Could all of this be the TRUE definition of BIBLICAL FAITH? It would also AMPLY prove that there is a large difference between CONVERSION and REGENERATION.

*“And he said unto them, which of you shall have a FRIEND,  
and shall go unto him AT MIDNIGHT, AND SAY UNTO HIM,*

*FRIEND, LEND ME THREE LOAVES;*

*For a friend of mine IN HIS JOURNEY IS COME TO ME,  
AND I HAVE NOTHING TO SET BEFORE HIM?*

*And He from within shall answer and say,  
**TROUBLE ME NOT: THE DOOR IS NOW SHUT,  
AND MY CHILDREN ARE WITH ME IN BED;  
I CANNOT RISE AND GIVE THEE.***

*I say unto you, THOUGH HE WILL NOT RISE  
AND GIVE HIM BECAUSE HE IS HIS FRIEND,*

*YET BECAUSE OF HIS IMPORTUNITY*

*HE WILL RISE AND GIVE HIM AS MANY AS HE NEEDETH.*

*AND I SAY UNTO YOU, ASK, AND IT SHALL BE GIVEN YOU;*

**SEEK, AND YE SHALL FIND;  
KNOCK, AND IT SHALL BE OPENED UNTO YOU.”  
(Luke 11:5-9)**

This parable contains a treasure chest of information for those who wish to dig into it for a close examination. It proves everything that has gone before. The characters in this parable are very important. God is the friend in the house with the door shut. God is the **FRIEND** of the believer because of the work of Christ upon the cross. It is the work of **RECONCILIATION**. You are the believer. The friend that you have that is on the long journey is YOUR INNER HEART. The “you” represents your conscious mind, heart and will. The loaves of bread represent THE GODHEAD, who is the BREAD OF LIFE. There are THREE LOAVES OF BREAD, REPRESENTING THE HOLY TRINITY, AND THEIR VARIOUS WORKS UPON THE BELIEVER. The believer is to have the FULLNESS OF THE GODHEAD.

The journey represents the NARROW WAY. During this journey through the INNER COURT you cry out to God. This is your **MIDNIGHT CRY, YOUR MIDNIGHT WALK. YOU ARE KNOCKING UPON THE DOOR OF HEAVEN**. Jesus said KNOCK and the door would be opened. Now the parable gets very interesting. The believer is knocking upon the door. God says, **TROUBLE ME NOT, FOR THE DOOR IS NOW SHUT**. It is a statement of actual fact. The last time the heavens opened was to receive Christ. Heaven’s DOOR IS SHUT.

Is there a way to open heaven’s door? Jesus said that if we would enter the strait gate and travel the distance of the narrow way we would FIND LIFE. **THAT IF WE WOULD CONTINUE, AND ABIDE, AND REMAIN, AND GIVE ALL DILIGENCE, AND BEG AND CRAVE, THAT GOD WOULD FINALLY OPEN THE DOOR**. He would at first REFUSE TO GIVE. He would not get up simply because He was YOUR FRIEND. He would not rise because of RECONCILIATION.

“Though he will not rise and give him because HE IS A FRIEND.” That is a direct remark to prove that RECONCILIATION IS FROM GOD TOWARDS MAN, AND NOT THE OTHER WAY AROUND. You can knock for a long time on heaven’s door, and the cold winds of absolute silence will blow upon your head. That is God’s answer to you: SILENCE. “TROUBLE ME NOT, THE DOOR IS NOW SHUT.” It is a test. It is a test of your faith. It is a test of your **INTENT**. It is a test of your tenacity and patience. It is the TEST OF SEPARATION. God is going to separate the WHEAT FROM THE CHAFF BY THIS SEVERE TESTING AND TRIAL.

## **GOD WILL NOT RISE UP BECAUSE OF FRIENDSHIP**

## **GOD WILL NOT RISE UP BECAUSE OF RECONCILIATION**

It proves that God IS NOT STANDING AROUND WITH BAITED BREATH TO SEE WHO IS GOING TO ANSWER HIS CALL. This verse totally destroys the instant faith and instant belief gospel. It proves that what Christ said, Christ meant. False theology and biases to the contrary will only earn you eternal ruin. **GOD IS NOT GOING TO OPEN THE DOOR AND GIVE YOU THE BREAD OF LIFE BECAUSE OF FRIENDSHIP OR RECONCILIATION**. Do you

realize the impact of this? God is NOT going to give you REGENERATION SIMPLY BECAUSE YOU ARE CONVERTED! Under modern Christian evangelism all one needs to do is ask Christ into your heart with a simple and sincere prayer. God is simply waiting for you; He can hardly wait to give you all of His treasure chest.

It is all wishful thinking, and flies in the face of everything we have learned, and is confirmed totally by this parable. IF GOD WILL NOT RISE UP BECAUSE OF FRIENDSHIP OR RECONCILIATION, WHAT CAUSES HIM TO RISE UP?

***“YET BECAUSE OF IMPORTUNITY HE WILL RISE AND GIVE...”***

The word “importunity” is a very important and crucial word that Christ used to prove out the ***NATURE OF THE NARROW WAY***. It proves why most people refuse it. The word “importunity” is ‘anaideia’ and it means **IMPUDENCE, IMPORTUNITY**. The word “importunity” is defined in the Random House Dictionary as **“THE STATE OR QUALITY OF BEING IMPORTUNATE:**

## **PERSISTENCE IN SOLICITATION”.**

The word importunate is defined as: **“...URGENT OR PERSISTENT IN SOLICITATION. 2. PERTINACIOUS, AS SOLICITATIONS OR DEMANDS. 3. TROUBLESOME; ANNOYING.”** The meaning of importune is defined as: **“TO BESET WITH SOLICITATIONS; DEMAND WITH URGENCY OR PERSISTENCE... 3. TO BEG FOR SOMETHING URGENTLY OR PERSISTENTLY...”** The word “pertinacious” is defined as **“adhering RESOLUTELY TO AN OPINION, PURPOSE OR DESIGN. B) PERVERSELY PERSISTENT 2. STUBBORNLY UNYIELDING OR TENACIOUS.”** The meaning of the word TENACIOUS IS **“PERSISTENT, STUBBORN.”**

Jesus Christ is very blunt here: **GOD WILL NOT RISE UP BECAUSE OF RECONCILIATION, HE WILL RISE ONLY BECAUSE A BELIEVER SETS HIS FACE AS FLINT AND STUBBORNLY REFUSES TO TAKE NO FOR AN ANSWER.** If he will PERSIST IN HIS BEGGING, CRAVING, HUNGERING AND THIRSTING, GOD WILL OPEN THE DOOR. This utterly opposes the modern faith gospel, and that is one of the marks that Peter gave us for identification of the false gospel, for it **UPHOLDS CHRIST, YET TOTALLY CONTRADICTS HIM.**

Indeed, agape love is so well hidden that only the **FEW WITH GREAT TENACITY EVER LAY HOLD OF IT.** It was there for EVERYONE, but only the FEW would be obedient and rearrange their priorities to find it. Is this why Christ said we MUST STRIVE TO ENTER IN? Is this why He said we MUST LABOR FOR THE MEAT? Is this why we must FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH? It would seem then that a rare diligence, a rare tenacity, a rare persistence and a rare patience must be brought to bear, or we will not find AGAPE LOVE.

The concept of RELATIONSHIP is important in understanding the agape love bestowment and what that does to the believer's relationship to the Lord Jesus Christ. In the parable YOU KNOCK ON THE DOOR TO GET SOME BREAD. BREAD IS SYMBOLIC OF JESUS CHRIST; IT IS A CODE WORD FOR AGAPE LOVE.

**"I am the BREAD OF LIFE.**

*Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.*

**THIS IS THE BREAD WHICH COMETH DOWN FROM HEAVEN,  
THAT A MAN MAY EAT THEREOF, AND NOT DIE.**

**I AM THE LIVING BREAD**

**WHICH CAME DOWN FROM HEAVEN:  
IF ANY MAN EAT OF THIS BREAD,  
HE SHALL LIVE FOREVER:  
AND THE BREAD THAT I WILL GIVE IS MY FLESH,  
WHICH I WILL GIVE FOR THE LIFE OF THE WORLD."  
(John 6:48-51)**

In the parable, you go to God looking for BREAD. You come at MIDNIGHT, and are in **GREAT NEED**. You are looking for Jesus Christ who **IS THE BREAD**. It becomes clear then that God does not rise up to open the door to give YOU JESUS CHRIST simply because of the WORK OF CHRIST UPON THE CROSS. He will only rise BECAUSE OF **PERSISTENCE, TENACITY AND STUBBINESS**. The believer WILL NOT FIND CHRIST BECAUSE OF A MERE DECISION FOR CHRIST, but only IF THE BELIEVER **SEARCHES FOR CHRIST WITH ALL OF HIS HEART, SOUL AND MIND**. Now Jesus said in John 15 that His followers would not be called servants, but FRIENDS, IF (CONDITIONAL) THEY DID SOMETHING:

*"Greater (agape) love hath no man than this,  
that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

**YE ARE MY FRIENDS,**

**IF (THE HUGE CONDITIONAL IF)**

**YE DO WHATSOEVER I COMMAND YOU  
(ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, WALK THE NARROW WAY UNTO SOUL DEATH).  
Henceforth I call you not servants: for the servant KNOWETH NOT  
WHAT HIS LORD DOETH:**

**BUT I HAVE CALLED YOU FRIENDS;**

*for all things that I have heard of my Father  
I have made known unto you.”*

*These things I command you,*

***THAT YE (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER.”***  
**(John 15:13-15, 17)**

This is a condition that Jesus lays down in order to be called HIS FRIEND. It has to do with OBEDIENCE to His commands, and also it has to do with the word AGAPE. The command to enter in at the strait gate is a requirement for the SECOND COMMAND TO BECOME A REALITY. It is impossible to love with a divine agape love UNLESS AND UNTIL IT IS BESTOWED UPON YOU. It is essential to understand that Jesus does NOT consider you a friend until you have walked the narrow way to soul death. In the parable of the wedding feast Christ said to go to the LOWEST ROOM, AND THERE WAIT FOR HIM. When He arrives, He calls you FRIEND.

Notice what Jesus says about a TRUE FRIEND. He will LAY DOWN HIS LIFE. HE WILL PICK UP HIS CROSS AND DIE THE DEATH. HE WILL LAY DOWN HIS LIFE FOR JESUS CHRIST. If he will not do it, he will not be a friend. He not only is not a friend; he is an ENEMY. He is an enemy of the cross; he is an enemy of the true gospel. He is an impostor, a bastard son, and one who claims a friendship with Christ that is not based upon AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. The ‘many’ stood before Jesus Christ certain they were His friends.

Does Jesus call any of them FRIEND? Hardly. He calls them WORKERS OF INIQUITY, LAWLESS IMPOSTORS. With a wave of the hand He sends them away INTO ETERNAL RUIN FROM WHICH THEY CAN NEVER EXTRICATE THEMSELVES. Is that how one treats FRIENDS?

***“STRIVE TO ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:  
FOR MANY, I SAY UNTO YOU,  
WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, AND NOT BE ABLE.”***  
**(Luke 13:24)**

The word we want to look at here is STRAIT. The word “strait” is ‘stenos’ which means **NARROW FROM OBSTACLES IN THE WAY**. The root of the word is ‘histemi’ which comes from ‘stao’ and it means **TO STAND, TO ABIDE, TO CONTINUE, TO ESTABLISH**. The root of the word strait then means **THAT WE NEED PERSISTENCE, TENACITY, IMPORTUNITY, PATIENCE AND DILIGENCE TO OVERCOME THE OBSTACLES**. Why do we need all of this? Because the **OBSTACLES ARE MANY, AND THEY ALL MUST BE OVERCOME**. The parable of the sower gives us the obstacles in their order of power and strength: there is a barrier between you and your God. It consists primarily of our fallen nature, which concerns itself with itself, and the things of this world. Aided by Satan and demons and the multitude of their deceptions, it is a formidable barrier that must be overcome.



The obstacles as listed:

1. SATAN AND HIS DEMONS take THE WORD AWAY (NOT UNDERSTANDING IT)
2. FALSE CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY – INSTANT SALVATION (THE ANON CROWD)
3. THE WORLD AND WORLD SYSTEMS

These obstacles do not oppose you only once, they are a CONSTANT OPPOSITION. The whole concept of the world and world systems that are satanic in their origin is to **DECEIVE OR DIVERT YOU**. They have no other purpose insofar as Satan is concerned. He does not care how long you live or die, as long as he has you under his control and dominion. Challenge that dominion, and **HE CARES**. Challenge that dominion, and you will rapidly find out just how real **SATAN AND HIS DEMONS ARE**.

The obstacles in the pathway must be overcome over a period of time, it is a process that is just the opposite of instant or immediate or soon. If there are obstacles, then **IMPORTANTLY AND DILIGENCE WOULD BE REQUIRED, WOULD THEY NOT?** The word “obstacle” is defined by Webster’s as “...to stand in the way...something that STANDS IN THE WAY OR OPPOSES: OBSTRUCTIONS.” The word “obstruct” means “...TO BLOCK OR CLOSE UP BY AN OBSTACLE. TO HINDER FROM PASSAGE, ACTION OR OPERATION, IMPEDE.” In other words, you CANNOT GET TO WHERE YOU WANT TO GO WITHOUT SURMOUNTING THE OBSTACLE IN SOME WAY.

The word “obstruction” means “...an act of obstructing; the state of being obstructed. a: the condition OF BEING CLOGGED OR BLOCKED. b: DELAY OR ATTEMPTED DELAY OF BUSINESS IN A DELIBERATIVE BODY 2. SOMETHING THAT OBSTRUCTS: HINDRANCE. The barrier IS REAL. The barrier is SO REAL THAT ONLY A FEW ARE ABLE TO SURMOUNT THE OBSTACLES IN THE WAY.

Jesus compares the word STRIVE with SEEK. He is therefore putting an additional condition upon **ASK, SEEK, AND KNOCK**, and it is in fact REDEFINING WHAT THEY MEAN, **HE IS ESCALATING THE INTENSITY OF THEM**. Why are the few NOT ABLE? The word “able” is ‘ischuo’ and it means **TO HAVE FORCE OR POWER, TO BE ABLE TO OVERCOME, TO BE ABLE TO FIGHT AND WIN, TO GET THE VICTORY**. We are getting closer to the truth. The vast majority of people, in their fallen state, HAVE NOT ENOUGH FORCE OR POWER WITHIN THEM TO WIN THE BATTLE. They have not enough **FORTITUDE, STRENGTH, OR POWER**. They are not strong enough.

I ask you, does this sound like an INSTANT, IMMEDIATE OR QUICK, OR SOON VICTORY? Does this sound like going forward at a prayer service and simply asking Jesus into your heart? That all you need to do is feel sad and sorry for a few sins you may have committed, confess them and you’re HOME FREE? Either Jesus is totally wrong, or modern Christianity is totally wrong, for they do in fact stand OPPOSED TO ONE ANOTHER.

*“And from the days of John the Baptist until now  
the kingdom of heaven **SUFFERETH VIOLENCE,**  
**AND THE VIOLENT TAKE IT BY FORCE.”**  
(Matthew 11:12)*

This is a key statement we must look at closely. John the Baptist in many ways represents the Old Testament. Jesus represents the New Testament. All the way through, there is a common denominator, says Jesus, and this is it: **THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS ONLY TAKEN BY THE VIOLENT ONES.** The word “violent” is ‘biastes’ and it means **A FORCE, ENERGETIC.** The root is ‘biazo’ which means **TO FORCE, TO CROWD IN, TO PRESS IN, TO SEIZE, TO LAY HOLD OF.** The root of that word is ‘bia’, which means **VITAL ACTIVITY.** The word “energetic” is defined in Webster’s as “...**marked BY ENERGY, STRENUOUS, 2. OPERATING WITH VIGOR OR EFFECT.**” The word “vigorous” is defined as “...**FULL OF PHYSICAL OR MENTAL STRENGTH OR ACTIVE FORCE, STRONG...CARRIED OUT FORCEFULLY.**”

It would appear that this is the **OPPOSITE OF LUKEWARM**, but very close to the definition of **HOT.** It is verified by Christ in that He connects this **STRAIT GATE** to the word **STRIVE.** The word “able” means to **HAVE ENOUGH POWER, ENERGY OR STRENGTH.** The word “force” is ‘harpazo’ and it means **TO SEIZE, TO CATCH, TO TAKE BY FORCE.** All of these words and their definitions totally support the concept of a **VERY LONG AND FIERCE STRUGGLE AGAINST AN ADVERSARY, A BATTLE OVER A LONG PERIOD OF TIME, AND THAT DILIGENCE AND PATIENCE ARE REQUIRED TO WIN THE VICTORY, TO BE AN OVERCOMER.**

*“He that **OVERCOMETH** shall inherit all things; and I will be his God,  
and he shall be my son.*

***BUT THE FEARFUL, AND UNBELIEVING....SHALL HAVE THEIR  
PART IN THE LAKE  
WHICH BURNETH WITH FIRE AND BRIMSTONE: WHICH IS THE  
SECOND DEATH.”**  
(Revelation 21:7-8)*

The word for “overcometh” is ‘nikao’ which means **TO SUBDUE, TO CONQUER, TO OVERCOME, TO PREVAIL, TO GET THE VICTORY.** The root is ‘nike’, which means **CONQUEST, SUCCESS, VICTORY.** Do you suppose Paul was not fooling when he said we **MUST FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH IN ORDER TO LAY HOLD OF ETERNAL LIFE?** The very opposite of **OVERCOMING, FORCE, VIOLENCE, POWER, IMPORTUNITY, TENACITY, PERSISTENCE, DILIGENCE AND PATIENCE** WOULD BE **FEARFUL.** The word “fearful” is ‘deilos’ which means **FILLED WITH DREAD, TIMID, FEARFUL, SCARED OR FAITHLESS.** Faith in fact is defined as having **CONFIDENCE** among other things, or a lack of fear in pressing in for the battle. The fearful timid soul need not apply. There is in reality **NOTHING TO FEAR: SATAN HAS NO POWER. IT WAS DESTROYED.**

*“He staggered **NOT** at the **PROMISE OF GOD THROUGH UNBELIEF**;*

***BUT WAS STRONG IN THE FAITH,  
GIVING GLORY TO GOD.”***

(Romans 4:20)

Abraham was a man of ACTION. He did not have an ARMCHAIR FAITH OR BELIEF. He put his faith to work, and DID what was commanded of him to do. The word “strong” is ‘endunamoo’ which means **EMPOWERED, ENABLEMENT, INCREASED STRENGTH, TO BE MADE STRONG**. We might use the word **POWER, POWERFUL**. Abraham was a man of RESOLUTE FAITH. He founded it upon the ROCK OF GOD. Once he had determined that God was true, once he was fully persuaded God could and would deliver, then ABRAHAM MOVED.

A person will not go into action on something unless they are persuaded that it is the correct course. Once they are convinced they are right, THEY MOVE IN ACTION. THEY PICK UP THEIR CROSS, THEY ENTER IN. There is a huge difference between having faith in something, and DOING SOMETHING. All the faith IN CHRIST will avail you nothing. Until you DO WHAT IS COMMANDED, UNTIL YOU PICK UP YOUR CROSS and WALK THE NARROW WAY, it is NOT IMPUTED UNTO YOU FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS.

*“Finally, my brethren,  
BE STRONG IN THE LORD,  
AND IN THE POWER OF HIS MIGHT.”  
(Ephesians 6:10)*

We are commanded to be **STRONG IN THE LORD**. The faith that is a real Biblical faith is a faith that GOD WILL PERFORM IT. **HE HAS THE POWER, THE MIGHT, THE CAPACITY TO PERFORM**. Notice that the strength and the power come from God, not ourselves. This might seem like a contradiction, but it is not. IT IS OUR FAITH IN CHRIST, THAT GIVES US THE FAITH OF CHRIST, WHICH ENABLES US TO PICK UP OUR CROSS AND PROCEED. It is a CONVICTION, A DETERMINED PURPOSE that allows OBEDIENCE TO THE COMMANDS.

An example of this would be a military leader. He has won many battles in war. His expertise in strategy has overcome all odds. He fights with his men on the lines of battle. He is up front, in charge, on the line. His men love him. THEY HAVE TERRIFIC FAITH IN HIM. It is their FAITH **IN HIM**, THAT GIVES THEM THE FAITH TO ACT UPON HIS COMMANDS. Whatsoever command He gives them, they do it without question. The point is THEY ARE IN THE BATTLE, THEY ARE DOING SOMETHING. THEY ACT ON THEIR BELIEFS. They do not simply sit on the ground saying, “I believe, I have faith”. THEIR FAITH IS GREAT ENOUGH TO ACTUALLY DO AS COMMANDED. That is TRUE FAITH. **True faith has a work**. The faith of modern Christianity has no power because it places all of its emphasis IN CHRIST, but not any of DOING AS CHRIST COMMANDED, **IT IS A DEAD FAITH, A FAITH WITH NO WORK**.

If we be STRONG in the Lord, and be stirred up enough TO ACT UPON THE COMMANDS OF THE LORD, then we will pick up our cross, and we will begin the journey of the narrow way.

Until that time, remain in total disobedience, claiming all the while how much we love the Lord. True love is defined by Christ as this:

*“Greater love hath no man than this,  
that a man LAY DOWN HIS LIFE for his friends.”  
(John 15:13)*

The narrow way is the way in which you lay down your life for Jesus. Laying down one’s life is an ACT. IT REQUIRES US TO MAKE DECISIONS, AND THEN TO DO SOMETHING. If we refuse to pick up our own cross, then we in truth DO NOT HAVE FAITH IN JESUS, NOR HIS COMMANDS. We also have proved that we do not LOVE HIM. We find here a direct LINK between death and the agape love of Christ and God. To be a TRUE FRIEND, WE WILL LAY DOWN OUR LIFE FOR HIM. The modern Christian will not commit to this. He neither has faith nor love. He wants heaven, but he wants the world. You cannot have both. CHOOSE YOU THIS DAY WHO YOU WILL SERVE, COMMIT. DO IT, ACT.

*“But as many as received him,  
to them gave he POWER TO BECOME SONS OF GOD...”  
(John 1:12)*

*“Behold, I GIVE UNTO YOU POWER  
TO TREAD ON SERPENTS AND SCORPIONS,  
AND OVER ALL THE POWER OF THE ENEMY:  
AND NOTHING SHALL BY ANY MEANS HURT YOU.”  
(Luke 10:19)*

Christ gave to us POWER. The word “power” is ‘exousia’, which means **FORCE, CAPACITY, ABILITY, POWER**. If you have been given the POWER, THEN YOU ARE ABLE. The other word for “power” is ‘dunamis’ which is **FORCE, MIRACULOUS POWER, ABILITY, STRENGTH**. That power is derived FROM A FAITH that is an ACTION FAITH. You have the power to WALK THE NARROW WAY UNTO SOUL DEATH. You have been granted the POWER to OVERCOME ALL OF THE BARRIERS IN THE WAY. Further, NOTHING CAN HURT YOU, FOR YOU ARE PROTECTED BY THE POWER OF GOD. At the base of all power is AGAPE LOVE COMMITMENT and from that comes TRUE FAITH. We must find the answer to what FAITH REALLY IS. It is the dynamic that moves us to ACTION. To develop a theology that denies the narrow way, denies that we have to pick up our own cross and walk it with Christ is to deny LOVE, FAITH AND POWER. The power of God is THROUGH THE CROSS. It is not IN the cross, but THROUGH THE CROSS.

It is through THE DEATH UPON THE CROSS THAT AGAPE LOVE COMES INTO YOUR LIFE. It is via the POWER OF AGAPE LOVE THAT WE DEVELOP A FAITH UNFEIGNED. The “many” did not have agape love, they were not regenerated, and their so called faith was a mockery of Christ. God will not be mocked. THE FAITH OF THE BIBLE IS A FAITH THAT

ALLOWS YOU TO PICK UP YOUR CROSS AND WALK THE NARROW WAY UNTO DEATH. If you refuse it for whatsoever reason, YOU WILL NOT FIND CHRIST, YOU WILL NOT ENTER HEAVEN. If you claim you love Christ so much, THEN DO AS HE COMMANDED.

Having thus established that God is not going to respond to anyone that does not STIR THEMSELVES UP TO LAY HOLD OF HIM, or who will not AWAKE FROM THEIR SLUMBER, AND WHO WILL NOT STRIVE TO LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE, then we should be able to verify all of this through verses of Scripture that would support all of this in a total harmony. It is this STIRRING OURSELVES UP IN THE FAITH, THAT WE LAY HOLD OF THE PROMISE. It is like a man who hid a million dollars on his land. He gives you clues as to where it is. **DO YOU HAVE FAITH ENOUGH IN THE HONESTY AND INTEGRITY OF THE MAN TO ACT?** Would you dare quit your job and spend all of your time searching for THE PEARL OF GREAT PRICE? FOR THE DIAMOND BURIED IN THE GROUND?

The one who BELIEVES IN THE INTEGRITY OF THE MAN is the one who will SEARCH FOR THE BURIED TREASURE. They will become ACTIVELY ENGAGED IN THE SEARCH. They will ask questions, seek answers, strive to find it. Agape love is a buried treasure. It is hidden in the field, and **IT IS A PEARL OF GREAT PRICE.** The Bible is YOUR CLUE BOOK. It gives you all the clues. It even tells you how to find it. What good is all of it, **IF YOU REFUSE TO COMPLY WITH THE COMMANDS?** How on earth could you find the million dollars if you refuse to GO ON THE LAND AND HUNT FOR IT? IF YOU REFUSE TO READ THE BOOK OF CLUES PROVIDED? Modern Christian theology claims they have the million dollars BY FAITH, and they never left their chair to find it. Are there any verses that apply themselves to diligence, persistence, steadfastness, endurance and the like?

*“Wherefore the rather, brethren, **GIVE DILIGENCE***

**TO MAKE YOUR CALLING AND ELECTION SURE:**

*FOR **IF** (THE HUGE CONDITIONAL IF)*

***YE DO THESE THINGS,***

***YE SHALL NEVER FALL.***

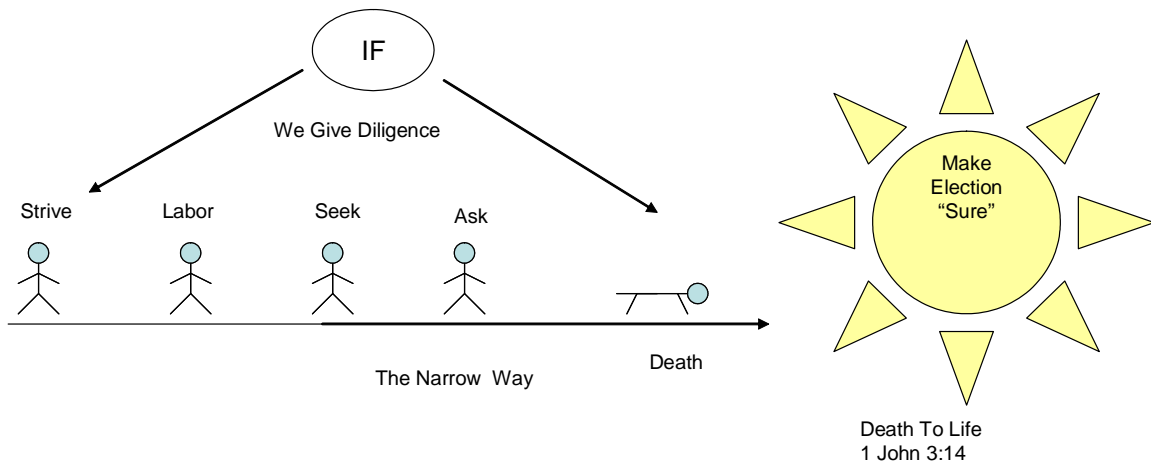
**(2 Peter 1:10)**

When ever you see the word **IF**, you know that it is totally conditional. Jesus used the word **IF** in a multitude of places. The false prophets always leave off all of the IFS, ANDS OR BUTS. THEY LEAVE OFF “WHEN” and other conditions that the Lord made. By so doing they can actually use the definitions of the words involved, but by dropping off all of the qualifiers, they very subtly **RADICALLY CHANGE THE MEANING, THE ACTUAL DEFINITION.** If you see a word like ‘if’, or ‘and’ or ‘when’, mark it in RED, it is a warning. It means also that the very **OPPOSITE OF WHAT IS SAID IS ALSO TRUE.** In other words, IF YOU DO NOT GIVE DILIGENCE, YOU WILL FALL. There are two sides to every statement, and you must learn to

read the **OPPOSITE STATEMENT IN AS YOU READ.** Many times Jesus used **NEGATIVE CONFIRMATION** in that way.

We are being told here to GIVE DILIGENCE TO MAKE OUR CALLING AND ELECTION SURE. The word “diligence” is ‘spoude’ and it means **EAGERNESS, EARNESTNESS, CAREFUL, DILIGENCE, FORWARDNESS.** Why should I do all of this if all I have to do is embrace Christ by a simple decision and act of faith? Does not the doctrine of eternal security protect me? Don’t I just say a simple prayer and ask Jesus into my heart? Does it not say that all who call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved?

You had better check things out with **DILIGENCE.** You had better not REJECT KNOWLEDGE. How does one make their calling and election sure? BY DILIGENCE. The word “sure” is ‘bebaios’ and it means **FIRM, STEADFAST, POSITIVE, SURE.** It is very close to the word KNOW. There is **AN EVIDENCE THAT MAKES YOUR CALLING AND ELECTION SURE.** It is the use of ALL DILIGENCE THAT BRINGS YOU TO THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH MAKES YOUR ELECTION SURE. In graph form it looks like this:



Notice that **THE DILIGENCE COMES PRIOR TO THE ‘SURE’ ELECTION.** Always keep your sequence straight and you will never get in trouble.

*“And we desire that **EVERY ONE OF YOU DO SHEW***

*THE SAME **DILIGENCE TO THE FULL ASSURANCE OF HOPE***

*UNTO THE END:*

*THAT YE BE NOT SLOTHFUL,*

*BUT FOLLOWERS OF THEM **WHO THROUGH FAITH AND***

***PATIENCE***

*INHERIT THE PROMISES.”*

*(Hebrews 6:11-12)*

Here we find yet ANOTHER CONFIRMATION that this journey is anything but INSTANT, IMMEDIATE, OR SOON. The promises are NOT INHERITED FIRST; they are INHERITED IN A **PROGRESSION OF STAGES**. So we find here proof that there is to be a FULL ASSURANCE OF HOPE. We are told that ONLY those with TRUE BIBLICAL FAITH AND PATIENCE are going to inherit the promises. One of the promises God made to us was that of **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, WHICH IS THE EVIDENCE YOU ARE A SON OF GOD**. It is agape love that gives us OUR ASSURANCE, AND MAKES OUR ELECTION SURE. Every believer is to have **AN EVIDENCE, A WITNESS, A SEAL, A FULL ASSURANCE OF SALVATION**.

The word “desire” is ‘epithumea’, which means **TO SET YOUR HEART UPON, TO LONG FOR, TO COVET, TO DESIRE GREATLY**. Obviously then the apostles DESIRED GREATLY that EVERY BELIEVER would SHOW DILIGENCE until they obtained something, until they FOUND SOMETHING. What was it they were to find? **FULL ASSURANCE**. The word for “full assurance” is ‘plerophoria’, which means **ENTIRE CONFIDENCE, ABSOLUTE ASSURANCE, TO KNOW ABSOLUTELY**. THEY ARE TO KNOW SOMETHING IN AN ABSOLUTE SENSE, AND THEY ARE TO HAVE AN ABSOLUTE ASSURANCE. How does one obtain that? By a simple act of faith, by a simple decision, or is there MORE TO THIS THAN MEETS THE EYE?

To reinforce the concept that DILIGENCE IS NEEDED TO OBTAIN THE FULL ASSURANCE, the word “slothful” is used. BE NOT SLOTHFUL, means what it says. The word “slothful” is ‘nothros’ which means **SLUGGISH, LAZY, STUPID, DULL**. We could add **LUKEWARM**. So here we have a negative confirmation that diligence does in fact mean diligence! If someone is stupid, they have no knowledge. We all like to think of ourselves as smart, and point at STUPID PEOPLE. Perhaps we all need to look in the mirror, and gaze into our own **STUPID EYES**. In place of being lazy and stupid, we are told to have diligence, faith and patience.

The word “patience” is ‘makrothumai’ and it means **LONGANIMITY, FORBEARANCE, FORTITUDE, LONG-SUFFERING**. The root is ‘makrothumos’ and ‘makros’, which means **LONG IN TIME, FAR, LONG OFF, AWAY IN TIME, DISTANT IN TIME**. The journey of the WAY is then a JOURNEY OF A LONG TIME. The word “longanimity” is defined by Webster’s as “...a **DISPOSITION TO BEAR INJURIES PATIENTLY; FORBEARANCE**”.

Why do I need all of this if all I need to do is make a decision for Christ? I am told by almost every evangelist today, and by ALL POPULAR ONES that all I need to do is to make a sincere decision for Christ in my heart, and that when I do, He instantly comes in and regenerates me, and that I am then born again and written in the Lamb’s Book of Life. They assure me that I have security in Christ, and that my destination is heaven. What is the OPPOSITE OF PATIENCE? OF LONG-SUFFERING? Obviously INSTANT, IMMEDIATE, QUICK OR SOON. What would be the opposite of a LONG DISTANCE? A LONG JOURNEY? What does the word narrow convey? Is it not long-suffering, long in time, agony and anguish of the soul over a JOURNEY OF LENGTH?

What happens IF I REMOVE THE NARROW WAY? What happens if I speak “evil of the way”? What do I come up with? I COME UP WITH A THEOLOGY THAT OFFERS **INSTANT SALVATION, INSTANT FAITH, INSTANT BELIEF, INSTANT REGENERATION**. I have removed EVERY SINGLE CONDITIONAL VERSE IN SCRIPTURE THAT DOES NOT APPEAL TO THE FLESH, THE CARNAL MIND. I have removed EVERY OBSTACLE, EVERY WARNING, EVERYTHING! I have also removed ALL CHANGES OF EVER

FINDING THE LIVING CHRIST. I have become a FALSE PROPHET, A FALSE TEACHER, AND MY DAMNATION SLUMBERS NOT.

*“In YOUR PATIENCE POSSESS YE YOUR SOULS.”*  
(Luke 21:19)

This is a direct comment from the Lord Jesus. Do you suppose He was speaking to hear Himself speak, or do you think He might have meant EXACTLY WHAT HE SAID?

*“For ye HAVE NEED OF PATIENCE,  
THAT, AFTER  
YE HAVE DONE THE WILL OF GOD,  
YE MIGHT RECEIVE THE PROMISE.”*  
(Hebrews 10:36)

Notice that it is AFTER YOU HAVE DONE THE WILL OF GOD THAT YOU RECEIVE THE PROMISE. You do not receive the promise first, and then do the will of God. God is not stupid, and He knows all too well the human heart. THE REWARDS ALWAYS COME AFTER THE WILL OF GOD HAS BEEN DONE. There will be no rewards UNTIL AND UNLESS ONE IS OBEDIENT TO THE WILL OF GOD.

It says that we are in “need” of something. The word “need” here is ‘chreia’ which means **A REQUIREMENT OR A DESTITUTION, LACK, NECESSITY, WANT**. That which we need is “patience” which in this case is ‘hupomone’, which means **ENDURANCE, CONSTANCY, PATIENCE, CONTINUING OR WAITING**. The word for “done” is ‘poier’ which means **TO COMMIT, TO CONTINUE TO DO, TO DO**. What is it we are to do? IT IS TO KEEP THE WILL OF GOD. What is the WILL OF GOD? To enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way is part of the will of God. There is another part, which is directly tied to the walk of the ‘way’:

*“And THIS IS THE WILL  
OF HIM THAT SENT ME (GOD THE FATHER),  
THAT EVERY ONE THAT SEETH THE SON,  
AND BELIEVETH ON HIM,  
MAY HAVE EVERLASTING LIFE:*



**AND I WILL RAISE HIM UP AT THE LAST DAY.”**  
**(John 6:40)**

There are two things listed here as being part of the WILL OF GOD. The first part is that WE “SEE” THE SON. The word “seeth” is ‘theoreo’ and it means **TO BE A SPECTATOR OF, TO DISCERN, TO LOOK UPON, TO PERCEIVE, TO BEHOLD, TO ACKNOWLEDGE**. Could this have anything to do with out going through the INNER COURT RIGHT INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES? Are we to behold the very PRESENCE OF GOD? Are we to see a New Testament version of the SHEKINAH GLORY, AGAPE LOVE?

If agape love be hidden, a secret, veiled from me, then how can I know it, EXCEPT IT BE SHOWN TO ME, REVEALED TO ME BY A SUPERNATURAL ACT OF GOD? How can I look upon THE ESSENCE OF JESUS, and KNOW WHO HE IS unless He comes to me and shows me? How can I know who Christ really is unless He reveals Himself to me? Do I not “see” Jesus in the Holy of Holies? It is the WILL OF THE FATHER THAT I SEE THE SON. It is the WILL OF THE FATHER THAT CHRIST BE REVEALED TO ME, SO THAT I MYSELF CAN KNOW THE MYSTERY OF GOD, THE HIDDEN SECRET, THE HIDDEN MANNA. It is a fact easily proved by a multitude of Scripture which will be shown to you in the next reports.

One of the biggest promises of God is that of AGAPE LVOE BESTOWMENT, OR REGENERATION. It is this that passes us from DEATH UNTO LIFE. Notice, however, how John actually words it, for it is a companion verse to John 6:40 and the word ‘see’.

**“BEHOLD,**

**WHAT MANNER OF (AGAPE) LOVE**

**THE FATHER HATH BESTOWED UPON US...”**

**(1 John 3:1)**

The word “behold” is ‘eido’ and it means **TO SEE, TO BEHOLD, TO LOOK ON, TO LOOK UPON, TO PERCEIVE, TO BE SURE OF**. The false prophets of today who have a form of Christian godliness deny TWO THINGS: THE POWER OF GOD, WHICH IS THE CROSS, WHICH IS THE NARROW WAY, AND THEY DENY THERE IS ANY SUPERNATURAL REVELATION FROM GOD. The claim is that there is no more revelation, that the Bible is the only revelation there is. We have only the Word today. That is a true statement of fact, BUT WITHIN THE BIBLE, WITHIN THE WORDS OF THE BIBLE, IS THE COMMAND THAT WE SEEK UNTIL WE FIND, KNOCK UNTIL WE OPEN, ASK UNTIL WE RECEIVE.

The false prophets uphold the Bible in one breath, and deny it with the other. All of the words that mean REVELATION are reduced to ILLUMINATION OF THE MIND, OF THE SENSE MAN, OF THE CONSCIOUS MAN. All of the ‘mysteries’ of God are reduced down to SENSE KNOWLEDGE. As we study, the Holy Spirit ILLUMINATES THE MIND. It is via this method that we obtain all of knowledge. The problem with that is that AGAPE LOVE PASSETH ALL KNOWLEDGE. You cannot obtain it THROUGH THE MIND. You can be ‘illuminated’ all you

want, AND YOU STILL DO NOT HAVE AGAPE LOVE. You might KNOW A LOT ABOUT IT, but the question here is not KNOWING ABOUT IT,

## **IT IS POSSESSING IT.**

The object of all of Scripture is for you TO FIRST OF ALL OBTAIN THE GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE. It is not obtained by **LEARNING IT**. You do not get it by learning about it. It is granted ONLY BY GOD, ONLY WHEN GOD DETERMINES THE TRUE SEEKER HAS FULFILLED THE REQUIREMENTS OF SOUL DEATH. WHEN THE BELIEVER HAS FULFILLED ALL THE REQUIREMENTS, **AND HAS KEPT THE SAYINGS OF JESUS, AND HAS DONE THE WILL OF THE FATHER**, GOD SUPERNATURALLY REVEALS AND THEN BESTOWS AGAPE LOVE TO THE INNER SPIRIT MAN. He radically ALTERS THE NATURE OF THE INNER HEART.

This ALTERATION **OF THE NATURE** OF THE INNER HEART, **THE VERY NATURE ITSELF**, IS WHAT BRINGS US THE TRUE WISDOM AND KNOWLEDGE OF AGAPE LOVE. To reduce all of this down to just **mental 'illumination'**, is utterly wrong, FOR IT **DENIES THE POWER OF GOD TO CHANGE THE NATURE OF OUR HEART**, TO TAKE OUT OUR HEART OF STONE, AND PUT IN A HEART OF AGAPE LOVE. What has that got to do with the MIND? What has that got to do with the BRAIN? With THOUGHT? With illumination? When a seeker after God finds Christ and the truth of the MYSTERY, he then is **ABLE TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT, WHICH IS VIA A NEW HEART**. This cannot be reduced down to mere illumination, which is what caused the **MANY CHRISTIANS, THE VAST MAJORITY, TO BE SENT AWAY REJECTED**.

It is patently a lie right out of hell itself. IT IS THE LIE OF SATAN, THE LIE THAT HE NEEDS TO GET ACROSS IN ORDER TO DESTROY THE SEEKING SOUL. He will say one is "**seeking after a sign**". This is not seeking after a sign; this is seeking after the **FACE OF CHRIST, TO KISS THE SON, TO BE BROUGHT INTO UNION WITH HIM SO WE MIGHT KNOW THE POWER OF AGAPE LOVE**. This lie goes hand in hand with the UTTER DENIAL OF THE NARROW WAY. The reason it is denied today is that THE FALSE TEACHERS, THE BASTARD SONS, THE IMPOSTORS, THE ANGELS OF SATAN THAT POSE AS ANGELS OF LIGHT HAVE NEVER WALKED THE NARROW WAY TO THEIR DEATH, AND THEY HAVE NEVER FOUND THE LIVING CHRIST, AND THEY DO **NOT KNOW WHO HE IS**. They know all ABOUT HIM, but they do not know WHO Jesus is.

THEY ARE NOT NEW CREATURES. THEY ARE NOT NEW CREATIONS. They have not had their inner heart of hearts changed by God, because they refuse to comply with the narrow way to obtain it. Rather than do it IN TRUTH, they only CLAIM THEY ARE NEW CREATURES, WITH A NEW NATURE. Their behavior alone, their claims alone, their fruit alone, their ethics, their morality ought to give everyone a clue. JESUS, JOHN, PETER, PAUL AND JUDE GAVE YOU ALL OF THE PARAMETERS! Read them and heed them.

They do not have the **NATURE OF CHRIST**. The nature of Christ is His inner essence, which is AGAPE LOVE NATURE. Man cannot alter his NATURE. The absorption of knowledge is exactly that, the **ABSORPTION OF KNOWLEDGE**. It does not change the NATURE OF THE BEAST. Your nature is what you are born with. Regeneration is a supernatural act of God

designed for only one thing: **TO CHANGE YOUR NATURE**. IT IS TO MAKE YOU INTO A WHOLE NEW CREATION, A NEW CREATURE, WITH A NEW NATURE, A NEW HEART. This has NOTHING TO DO WITH THE MIND or “ILLUMINATION”. That is why AGAPE LOVE IS NOT NATURAL TO MAN. IT IS SUPERNATURAL, DIVINE, UNKNOWN TO MAN.

Jesus is LIFE. Jesus stands **AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY**. If you do not walk it, you WILL NEVER MEET HIM. You will never gaze into the HEIGHT, WIDTH, BREADTH AND DEPTH OF HIS AGAPE LOVE NATURE. You will never understand what it is, and it will never be given to you, YOUR LOVE NATURE WILL NEVER BE CHANGED. You will die in your trespasses and sins. We have no alternatives here, there IS ONLY ONE WAY TO LIFE. Modern Christian theology DENIES UTTERLY THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. They have therefore SHUT THEMSELVES OUT OF HEAVEN FOREVER IF THEY DO NOT REPENT AND COMPLY WITH THE DEMANDS OF CHRIST.

In order to maintain the **FABRICATION** that they are **TRUE CHRISTIANS**, even when they refuse to comply with the demands of Christ, THE FALSE PROPHETS MUST **REDEFINE REGENERATION**. They must redefine it because they themselves ARE NOT REGENERATED. Do you think they will admit to that? Do you think they have it within them to stand before their millions of followers and **ADMIT THEY DO NOT EVEN KNOW JESUS CHRIST? THAT THEY ARE IN FACT IMPOSTORS?** Of course not! They will **DENY WITH GREAT VEHEMENCE** that they are liars, bastards, and impostors. Part of the FALSE THEOLOGY IS TO TOTALLY REDEFINE WHAT REGENERATION IS. If regeneration is what takes us out of the hands of Satan, and into the arms of Christ, then SATAN WILL BRING ALL OF HIS EFFORTS, ALL OF HIS EXPERTISE, KNOWLEDGE AND DECEPTIONS UPON THIS ONE ISSUE. He has no choice but to UTTERLY REDEFINE IT.

It is going to be proved **CONCLUSIVELY AND TOTALLY THAT YOU ARE TO LITERALLY SEE, BEHOLD, GAZE UPON AND KNOW AGAPE LOVE DIRECT FROM GOD HIMSELF**. It is a REVELATION THAT IS **FULLY EXPERIENTIAL**. It has nothing to do with ‘*illumination*’ of the mind. IT IS A SUPERNATURAL ACT DONE BY GOD UPON THE BELIEVER. The Bible categorically proves it, and if you do not have it, YOU ARE NOT SAVED, YOU ARE STILL IN YOUR SINS. It does not matter if you hang 50,000 PhD’s after your name to impress everyone. It does not matter if you have 25 million followers who hang on your every word. It does not matter ONE WIT. This issue of **AGAPE LOVE MUST BE, HAS TO BE SETTLED**. Do not shut yourself off by embracing the **LUKEWARM, SICKENING, DAMNABLE THEOLOGY OF MODERN CHRISTENDOM. THEY ARE THE MANY; THEY ARE THE ENEMY OF CHRIST**.

They deny the very **ESSENCE AND THE POWER OF THE GODHEAD**. They DENY CHRIST AND HIS NATURE WHILE THEY UPHOLD HIM! They contradict Him at every turn, they deny Him at every turn, they betray Him at every turn, yet with their lips they cast out honor and praise. **THEY ARE UNDER A DELUSION, A DECEPTION**. They “knowest not” because they have refused to walk the narrow way to agape love revelation SO THEY COULD KNOW, AND WOULD KNOW THE TRUTH. The Word of God is not going to be altered simply because a group of men parading around in long robes have REDEFINED IT. The Word of God is not going to be altered because MILLIONS OF PEOPLE FAILED TO COMPLY WITH ITS DEMANDS. The Word of God is not going to be altered because the false prophets have declared what it says NULL AND VOID. The Word of God will stand, and it will judge you and I in the end.

It is the will of God that you SEE THE SON. It means exactly what it says, and it is NOT referring to the historical Christ, but to the LIVING CHRIST, THE CHRIST THAT SAVES YOU. After you have seen Him, **AND HAD YOUR NATURE CHANGED SO THAT YOU ARE A NEW CREATURE, A NEW CREATION**, A CREATION DIRECT FROM THE HAND OF GOD, THEN, AND ONLY THEN can you understand the mystery of agape love! Then YOU ARE TO **BELIEVE UPON HIS NAME**. What we have today is THE MANY, WHO HAVE NOT EVER SEEN THE SON, BUT WHO BELIEVE UPON HIM. It is not enough to believe. **YOU MUST ALSO MAKE CONTACT, YOU MUST SEE, AND BEHOLD.**

The concept of patience and diligence leads us to endurance. We should find some verses of Scripture to verify what we have already found to be true:

**“IF (CONDITIONAL)**  
**YE ENDURE CHASTENING,**  
**GOD DEALETH WITH YOU AS WITH SONS.”**  
**(Hebrews 12:7)**

Notice the conditional IF. If you endure the chastening, then you will be a Son of God. It is in the process of receiving you that God chastens you. It is part of the acceptance process. It is a process THAT MUST BE ENDURED.

**“LABOUR NOT for the meat which perisheth, but (LABOUR) for the MEAT**  
**WHICH ENDURETH UNTO EVERLASTING LIFE,**  
**WHICH THE SON OF MAN SHALL GIVE UNTO YOU.”**  
**(John 6:27)**

Why do I not have eternal life at the moment that I embrace Christ? Why do I not have eternal life when I ask Christ into my heart? Modern theology claims that I have union, regeneration and eternal life at the moment I embrace Christ. Jesus says I am to labor so that I might ENDURE UNTO FINDING IT. And what is it that passes from death unto eternal life? WHAT IS THE ESSENCE OF ETERNAL LIFE? Is it not AGAPE LOVE? So then what am I to labor for? I am to labor for AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, AND IF I WILL NOT DO IT, I WILL NOT OBTAIN IT. Notice also who it is that GIVES YOU ETERNAL LIFE, CHRIST HIMSELF. He does not leave that to the Holy Spirit; that is HIS JOY.

**“Moreover, BRETHREN (OBVIOUSLY CONVERTED BELIEVERS),**  
**I declare unto you THE GOSPEL**  
**WHICH I HAVE PREACHED UNTO YOU,**  
**WHICH ALSO YE HAVE RECEIVED (PROOF OF CONVERSION),**

**AND WHEREIN YE STAND (PROOF THEY ARE STEADFAST);**

**BY WHICH ALSO YE ARE SAVED,**

**IF (THE HUGE CONDITIONAL IF)**

**YE KEEP IN MEMORY WHAT I HAVE PREACHED UNTO YOU,**

**UNLESS YE HAVE BELIEVED IN VAIN.**”

**(1 Corinthians 15:1-2)**

Please read that very carefully. It proves there is a great difference between CONVERSION AND REGENERATION. These people are CONVERTED WHOLLY TO CHRIST. They are also remaining STEADFAST IN IT. They are not yet REGENERATED. They must CONTINUE TO REMAIN STEADFAST IN THE GOSPEL. They must CONTINUE, ABIDE, AND REMAIN IN IT, OR IT WILL ALL HAVE BEEN IN VAIN. It is possible to BELIEVE, and have it all IN VAIN. That is what Christ meant when He said WHEN THOU ART BIDDEN, GO TO THE LOWEST ROOM. If you refuse to go to the lowest room, **YOUR BELIEF WAS IN VAIN, IT DID NOT AVAIL YOU SALVATION.** The “many” believed in VAIN. It was of no profit to them whatever. All of their works, all of their faith, all of their trust and belief was IN VAIN.

It is also very important to note that Paul was addressing HOLY GHOST BAPTIZED BELIEVERS WHO HAD THE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT. They had already received the gifts of tongues, interpretations, healing, etc. Paul is admonishing them that there IS MORE, MUCH MORE, THAT THERE IS A PRIZE THEY NEED TO SEEK EVEN MORE: THE PRIZE OF **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT.** The Holy Spirit does not reveal agape love. His job is to CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT. His job is TO BAPTIZE INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST. His job is to GUIDE YOU INTO ALL TRUTH. But what is the ULTIMATE TRUTH WE ALL NEED TO LAY OUR HANDS ON? AGAPE LOVE.

It is interesting to know that THE HOLY SPIRIT IS NEVER MENTIONED WHEN IT COMES TO THE **REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE.** There is a reason. It is not HIS JOB TO REVEAL IT, IT IS THE **JOB OF GOD THE FATHER AND JESUS CHRIST TO REVEAL IT.** You see, nowhere does the Bible tell you that UNION WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT SAVES YOU. It is UNION WITH CHRIST THAT SAVES YOU. Christ IS AGAPE LOVE, AND WHEN CHRIST COMES, THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE COMES, BECAUSE YOU ARE TO KNOW CHRIST, KISS CHRIST, SEE CHRIST AND ENTER INTO UNION WITH CHRIST.

Do not forget that the “many” had all of the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Paul said categorically that you could have all of the gifts of the Spirit, but that if you did not have **AGAPE LOVE (CHARITY), IT WOULD PROFIT YOU NOTHING.** It is a total confirmation of the warning. It is not the JOB OF THE HOLY SPIRIT TO REVEAL TO YOU AGAPE LOVE. His job is like that of John the Baptist; His job is to MAKE STRAIGHT THE PATHWAY FOR THE LORD. He CONVICTS, JUDGES AND BRINGS DOWN THE SOUL TO DEATH. Then Jesus comes with the **GIFT OF SALVATION, THE GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE.** Scripture proves categorically that the Holy Spirit DOES NOT GRANT AGAPE LOVE. We will study that later.

*“In whom (Jesus Christ) YE ALSO TRUSTED (CONVERSION),*

**AFTER**

*THAT YE HEARD THE WORD OF TRUTH,  
THE GOSPEL OF YOUR SALVATION: in whom also*

**AFTER**

*THAT YE BELIEVED (FROM THE INNER HEART-REGENERATION),  
YE WERE SEALED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT OF PROMISE.*

*WHICH IS THE EARNEST OF OUR INHERITANCE  
UNTIL THE REDEMPTION OF THE PURCHASED POSSESSION,  
UNTO THE PRAISE OF HIS GLORY.”*

*(Ephesians 1:13-14)*

There is a sequence here that you must grasp, for it confirms everything so far:

1. YOU HEAR THE GOSPEL OF SALVATION.
2. YOU TRUSTED JESUS CHRIST (CONVERSION).
3. YOU WALK THE “WAY” TO BELIEVING WITH THE HEART (REGENERATION).
4. YOU ARE SEALED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT OF THE PROMISE (AGAPE LOVE).
5. IT IS AN EARNEST PAYMENT OF OUR INHERITANCE.

It will be proven that the Holy Spirit of the promise is **AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT, THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST**, and it’s not the POWER BAPTISM of the Holy Ghost. The Holy Spirit of the promise is the SPIRIT OF GOD, THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST WITHIN. That is why Paul said in Romans that **IF YE HAVE NOT THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST YE ARE NONE OF HIS**. Paul is not referring to the HOLY SPIRIT HIMSELF, BUT TO THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST. We have a literal TRINITY. They each have a function in the job of salvation. The modern evangelical church attempts to claim that if you have the Holy Spirit, you have it all. It is simply not true. The Holy Spirit is only ONE MEMBER of the Trinity. There are two more: GOD THE FATHER and JESUS CHRIST. Leave them out of it and you will never see heaven. The “many” found that out the hard way.

**“IF**

*YE CONTINUE IN MY WORD,*

**THEN** *ARE YE MY DISCIPLES INDEED;*

*AND YE SHALL KNOW THE TRUTH,*

***AND THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE.***  
**(John 8:31-32)**

We have looked at this before, but it is an important verse to prove all of this. The condition is **THAT YOU CONTINUE**. The opposite is then true: **IF YOU DO NOT CONTINUE, YOU WILL NOT KNOW THE TRUTH, AND YOU WILL NOT BE SET FREE.**

The “many” did not KNOW the “truth”. ***They were not set free.*** We know that the truth is agape love and that only God grants it. Because it is the only issue between man and God, when God grants it, you have been SET FREE. This is the promise of God, the PRIMARY PROMISE OF GOD! It is the promise of A NEW HEART, A HEART OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH SETS YOU FREE. The whole concept of Christ was to institute THE NEW COVENANT.

The word for “Word” is ‘logos’ which means **SAID, THOUGHT, TOPIC, REASONING, COMMUNICATION, DOCTRINE**. The word for “know” is ‘ginosko’ which means **TO KNOW IN THE ABSOLUTE, TO PERCEIVE, TO KNOW WITH CERTAINTY**. The word “free” is ‘eleutheroo’ and it means **TO LIBERATE, TO EXEMPT, TO DELIVER, TO MAKE FREE**. Regeneration via agape love bestowment is the only way that happens.

***“If THE SON therefore***  
***SHALL MAKE YOU FREE,***  
***YE SHALL BE FREE INDEED.***  
**(John 8:36)**

Notice the emphasis that Christ puts upon Himself as being the **ONLY ONE WHO CAN SET FREE THE CAPTIVE**. The Holy Spirit is not mentioned. God the Father is not mentioned. Why? Because it was **JESUS CHRIST WHO REDEEMED YOU, NOT GOD THE FATHER, AND NOT THE HOLY SPIRIT**. This proves that **REGENERATION** is what Christ is speaking of, for the living Christ is the only one that can set you free. The word “free” is ‘eleutheros’ and it means **UNRESTRAINED, NOT A SLAVE, AT LIBERTY, A FREEBORN**. In order to be a FREEBORN, you **MUST BE, HAVE TO BE, BORN AGAIN**. You cannot enter the Kingdom of God except by **REBIRTH**. When you undergo rebirth into the Kingdom of God, **YOU ARE A FREEBORN**. It ties directly to **AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT**.

This further confirms that **REGENERATION** is not **CONVERSION**, and that they are indeed a **STRAIT GATE AND A NARROW WAY APART**. It always comes back to the agape love issue. The freedom that Christ offers is an unearthly freedom. It sets the believer free from all judgment, **ALL WRATH, ALL CONDEMNATION**. This is true because the believer has already gone through the **GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT AND BEEN FOUND GUILTY**. Christ then comes and takes the place of that believer. **THE BELIEVER IS THEN ACQUITTED**.

When one enters the New Covenant, he can only enter it via regeneration. There is no other way. The New Covenant is **BEING SET FREE**. We pass from **DEATH UNTO LIFE, FROM DARKNESS UNTO THE LIGHT, FROM PHILEO LOVE UNTO AGAPE LOVE**. We are

transferred into the Kingdom of Christ; we are INDEED SET FREE. Now let's return to a verse we looked at, and bring in more the full context:

*“For ye have need of PATIENCE,  
THAT, AFTER YE HAVE DONE THE WILL OF GOD,  
YE MIGHT RECEIVE THE PROMISE (AGAPE LOVE).  
FOR YET A LITTLE WHILE,  
AND HE THAT SHALL COME WILL COME, AND WILL NOT TARRY.  
  
Now the JUST SHALL LIVE BY FAITH:  
BUT IF ANY MAN DRAW BACK,  
MY SOUL SHALL HAVE NO PLEASURE IN HIM.  
  
BUT WE ARE NOT OF THEM (THE MANY)  
WHO DRAW BACK UNTO PERDITION (ETERNAL RUIN);  
  
BUT OF THEM THAT BELIEVE TO THE SAVING OF THE SOUL.”  
(Hebrews 10:36-39)*

If modern theology is correct, and all we need to do is to invite Christ into our hearts by a simple but sincere decision, how could we draw back? The very nature of the word “draw” indicates you are on a journey, and you elect to turn back, because you do not think you will be able to make it, to hold up. Likewise there is a BELIEVING ‘UNTO’ the SAVING OF THE SOUL (REGENERATION).

I will show you a multitude of verses that PROVE that Jesus Christ IS THE BEARER OF AGAPE LOVE. It is Jesus Christ that takes up residence in the heart of hearts. It is His Spirit, HIS SEED OF AGAPE LOVE that brings REGENERATION. This IS THE PROMISE. The promise is connected directly to the COMING OF THE LORD JESUS. Modern theology would claim this is a verse concerning the SECOND ADVENT. It is not; it has nothing to do with the Second Advent. It has to do WITH CHRIST COMING TO THE BELIEVER, JUST AS HE PROMISED TO DO IN A MULTITUDE OF PLACES!

This verse is telling you that JESUS CHRIST WILL COME. It may seem like an eternity, it may seem like He never will come, BUT THOUGH HE TARRY, HE WILL COME. He will come just before dawn, when everything is as dark as dark can be. Have you ever wondered why it is DARKEST JUST BEFORE SUNRISE? Does that not go against what we would normally think? Would it not be darkest when the sun is on the very opposite side of the world, say at MIDNIGHT? In reality the darkest point is immediately before sunrise. It is true of spiritual things as well. THE DAWNING OF THE NEW LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE FROM THE SON OF GOD OCCURS JUST AFTER THE MOMENT OF SEVERE DARKNESS. He comes when the soul utters its last cry for help, the cry of death.



The walk of the narrow way is a walk of CONSTANT, ABIDING FAITH. It is a faith that God and Christ will do as they promised. It is a faith that believes that if God said DO IT, then I will do it, no matter what I must go through. It is a faith that DOES NOT TURN BACK. It is a faith that is DEEP, CONTINUOUS, A FAITH WITH PATIENCE, FORBEARANCE. It is a FAITH AND A BELIEF THAT BELIEVE UNTO THE

## **SAVING OF THE SOUL, WHICH IS REGENERATION, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, WHICH IS UNION WITH CHRIST.**

It will be absolutely proven that when agape love is bestowed, **THE ENTIRE PERSON IS SET FREE, AND THE SOUL, SPIRIT AND MIND OF THE BELIEVER ARE SAVED.** There is a FEIGNED FAITH, A FEIGNED BELIEF, AND A REAL FAITH AND A REAL BELIEF. The real belief is a belief that IS PERSISTENT, TENACIOUS AND WILL NOT TURN BACK UNTIL THE TRUTH IS FOUND. That is exactly what Christ said: CONTINUE UNTIL YOU FIND THE TRUTH THAT SETS YOU FREE. BELIEVING TO THE SAVING OF THE SOUL IS JUST ANOTHER WAY OF SAYING THE SAME THING. If the only issue between you and God is the agape love issue, then when you have it, YOU ARE SAVED, FREE, AND HAVE MOVED FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE.

*“Blessed is the man that **ENDURETH** TEMPTATION:  
FOR WHEN HE IS **TRIED**,  
HE SHALL RECEIVE **THE CROWN OF LIFE**,  
WHICH THE LORD HATH **PROMISED** TO THEM THAT LOVE HIM.”*  
(James 1:12)

If we ENDURE THE TRIAL OF THE NARROW WAY, we shall be given the CROWN OF LIFE. THIS IS THE PROMISE OF GOD. What is the **CROWN OF LIFE? AGAPE LOVE!** Notice the sequence here: TRIAL, TRIED, THEN YOU RECEIVE THE PROMISE. If you refuse the trial, if you refuse to allow the Lord to try you, there is no crown of life, there is no agape love, and you remain lost.

*“To them who **BY PATIENT CONTINUANCE**  
**IN WELL DOING**  
**SEEK FOR GLORY AND HONOUR AND IMMORTALITY,**  
**ETERNAL LIFE.**”*  
(Romans 2:7)

Notice the words **PATIENT CONTINUANCE**. It is the OPPOSITE of the instant and immediate faith Gospel of today.

*“And the Lord direct your hearts*

**INTO THE (AGAPE) LOVE OF GOD,**  
**AND INTO THE PATIENT WAITING FOR CHRIST.”**  
**(2 Thessalonians 3:5)**

The whole purpose of THE FAITH of Christianity, the entire purpose of DOCTRINE is to have our INNERMOST HEART OF HEARTS TO BE BROUGHT INTO THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. Because that IS the issue between man and God, and because CHRIST IS THE HOLDER OF THIS LOVE, THEN CHRIST WILL COME, HE WILL NOT TARRY. The directive is for us to WAIT WITH PATIENCE UNTIL HE ARRIVES TO GRANT US THE GIFT OF ETERNAL LOVE.

***“Be PATIENT therefore, brethren,***  
***UNTO THE COMING OF THE LORD.***  
***BEHOLD, THE HUSBANDMAN WAITETH FOR THE PRECIOUS FRUIT OF THE***  
***EARTH,***  
***AND HATH LONG PATIENCE FOR IT,***  
***UNTIL HE RECEIVE THE EARLY AND LATTER RAIN.”***  
**(James 5:7)**

This verse is what is called a double reference verse. It applies to the Second Advent of Christ, but it also applies to the walk of the believer. Christ promised to come to the believer, to sup with Him, and to enter in to Him. It is this ARRIVAL we must be patient for. IT WILL COME, AND HE THAT SHALL COME WILL COME, THOUGH HE TARRY. The soul must be brought down, destroyed, utterly laid waste. It takes time. **THE EARLY RAIN IS CONVERSION. THE LATTER RAIN IS REGENERATION.** Both you and the Lord must be patient. BOTH ARE NECESSARY FOR THE FRUIT TO COME TO PERFECTION.

***“Behold, we count them happy WHICH ENDURE.***  
***YE HAVE HEARD OF THE PATIENCE OF JOB,***  
***AND HAVE SEEN THE END OF THE LORD;***  
***THAT THE LORD IS VERY PITIFUL, AND OF TENDER MERCY.”***  
**(James 5:11)**

Those that are counted happy are those THAT ENDURE. Job is mentioned because Job is a perfect portrayal of PICKING UP THE CROSS. He lost everything, and at the bottom of his despair, the LORD CAME IN A WHIRLWIND! Job went through a lot BEFORE THE LORD CAME UNTO HIM.

***“REST IN THE LORD,***  
***AND WAIT PATIENTLY FOR HIM:***

***FRET NOT THYSELF BECAUSE OF HIM WHO PROSPERETH IN HIS WAY...***  
**(Psalm 37:7)**

While we seek and search for the Lord, we are **TO REST IN HIS PROMISE**. We are to be SURE in the promises of the Lord. We are to wait PATIENTLY FOR HIM. He will come. He will **BESTOW THE PROMISES UPON ALL WHO DILIGENTLY SEEK HIS FACE**. As I said previously, many of the references to the Second Advent ALSO APPLY to the advent of Christ to the believer, as well as the Second Advent itself. Because the Church denies any revelations or advents of Christ to the believer on a personal basis, they of course place all such phrases or verses into the earthly SECOND ADVENT. This will be proven out as we proceed.

***“Watch ye,  
STAND FAST IN THE FAITH,  
QUIT YOU LIKE MEN, BE STRONG.”***  
**(1 Corinthians 16:13)**

Here we are to STAND FAST in the faith. The word for “stand fast” is ‘steko’ which means to **BE STATIONARY, TO BE SET, TO ABIDE IN, TO CONTINUE IN**. we could say, not to be moved from, not to be moved away from our determination. We are to stand fast and see this through to the end of our faith, and there is an END to our faith, and it is not the Second Advent.

***“Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ:  
that whether I come and see you or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs.  
THAT YE STAND FAST IN ONE SPIRIT,  
WITH ONE MIND STRIVING together  
FOR the faith OF the gospel.”***  
**(Philippians 1:27)**

The believers are to STAND FAST, AND TOGETHER TO STRIVE FOR THE FAITH OF THE GOSPEL. There is a faith, and there is a TRUE FAITH. We are to STRIVE FOR THE TRUE FAITH OF THE GOSPEL, TO A FAITH UNFEIGNED, **A FAITH FROM KNOWING THE MYSTERY OF GOD, AGAPE LOVE**. The word for “striving” is ‘sunathleo’ which means **TO SEEK JOINTLY, TO LABOR WITH, TO STRIVE FOR, TO WRESTLE**. Obviously this is a faith that REQUIRES A STRIVING TO OBTAIN. It therefore could not be immediate, instant, soon or quickly arriving. Another confirmation that Scripture does not lie:

***“...IF that which ye have heard FROM THE BEGINNING  
SHALL REMAIN IN YOU,  
YE ALSO SHALL CONTINUE IN THE SON,***

**AND IN THE FATHER.”**  
**(1 John 2:24)**

Again we find a **REMAINING, AN ABIDING THAT IS TO BE DONE BY OURSELVES**. The word is always **IF**. It is always a CONDITION UPON YOUR DECISION TO REMAIN. The word “remain” is ‘meno’, which means **TO CONTINUE, TO ABIDE, TO ENDURE, TO STAND**. The word “if” here is ‘ean’ which is a **CONDITIONAL** word. You **MUST** remain STEADFAST.

*“I am the vine, ye are the branches:  
**HE THAT ABIDETH IN ME, AND I IN HIM,**  
**THE SAME BRINGETH FORTH MUCH FRUIT:**  
**FOR WITHOUT ME YE CAN DO NOTHING.”***  
**(John 15:5)**

Christ commands that WE ABIDE. The word “abide” is also ‘meno’ which is the same as **continue, persevere, stand, be steadfast in**. It is all there, and it is stated in so many ways that no one could miss it unless they simply did not really want to know the truth of it. The ‘many’ in reality did not wish to KNOW the truth of it all. They rejected the counsel of the Lord. They rejected knowledge, which is truth. They rejected His commands; they would not keep the sayings of Jesus.

If we now bring together the words we have just studied, we find the following:

**IMPORTUNITY – (PERSISTENT, URGENT SOLICITATION, CONSTANT, STEADFAST).**  
**STRAIT – (NARROW FROM OBSTACLES, REQUIRING STRENGTH AND TENACITY TO OVERCOME THEM).**  
**VIOLENCE – (A FORCER, ENERGETIC, TO CROWD, TO PRESS IN, TO SEIZE).**  
**FORCE – (TO SEIZE, TO CATCH, TO TAKE BY FORCE).**  
**STRONG – (TO BE EMPOWERED, TO MAKE STRONG, TO BE ENABLED).**  
**OVERCOMETH – (TO SUBDUE, TO CONQUER, TO PREVAIL, TO GET THE VICTORY).**  
**FEARFUL – (FILLED WITH DREAD, TIMID, SCARED, FAITHLESS).**  
**DILIGENCE – (EAGERNESS, EARNESTNESS, CAREFUL, DILIGENCE).**  
**DESIRE – (TO SET YOUR HEART UPON, TO LONG FOR, TO COVET, TO PINE FOR).**  
**SLOTHFUL – (SLUGGISH, LAZY, STUPID).**  
**PATIENCE – (LONGAMINITY, FORBEARANCE, FORTITUDE).**  
**STAND – (TO BE STATIONARY, SET, TO PERSEVERE).**  
**LONG-SUFFERING – (FORBEARANCE, FORTITUDE).**  
**ABIDE – (TO CONTINUE, REMAIN IN, ABIDE IN, STEADFAST).**  
**REMAIN – (TO CONTINUE, TO BE STEADFAST IN, TO BE STATIONARY IN, TO ABIDE).**

There is no question whatever that all of this shows a perfect harmony throughout the Old and New Testaments. One cannot interpret the New without the Old, and one cannot interpret the Old without the New. They combine, they merge, and forge an entire document ON THE WAY OF SALVATION. The modern concept that the Old Testament has nothing to do with us is a heresy that will damn the multitudes. God does not change; His laws do not change. ARE THESE THE CLUES WE NEED TO FIND THE HIDDEN TREASURE OF AGAPE LOVE? If we bring all of this together, we find:

**CROSS – (INSTRUMENT OF DEATH, EXPOSURE TO DEATH).**  
**DIE – (DIE OFF, TO BE DEAD, DEATH, SLAIN.)**  
**DENY – (TO DENY UTTERLY, TO DISOWN, TO RENOUNCE FULLY).**  
**LOSE – (TO DESTROY FULLY, TO GO INTO TOTAL RUIN).**  
**FOLLOWETH – (TO ACCOMPANY, TO BE IN THE SAME WAY WITH).**  
**NARROW – (TO AFFLICT, TO SUFFER TRIBULATION, TROUBLE, AGONY, ANGUISH, PRESSURE).**  
**TRIBULATION – (ANGUISH, AFFLICTION, AGONY, TROUBLE, PRESSURE).**  
**FIGHT – (TO STRUGGLE, TO FIGHT AN ADVERSARY, TO LABOR FERVENTLY).**  
**FIERY – (SMELTING, CONFLAGRATION, BURNING, CALAMITY, TESTING, TRIAL.)**  
**SUFFERING – (HARDSHIP, PAIN, AFFLICTION, SUFFER).**  
**GRIEVOUS – (SADNESS, DEPRESSION, HEAVINESS, GRIEF, SORROW).**  
**AFFLICTED – (DEPRESSED, LOWLY, NEEDY, POOR).**  
**BROKEN – (TO CRUSH UTTERLY, TO DESTROY, TO TEAR APART, TO QUENCH UTTERLY).**  
**CONTRITE – (TO COLLAPSE MENTALLY, TO CRUMBLE, TO CRUSH, TO DESTROY).**  
**HUMBLE – (DEPRESSED, TO SINK, TO HUMILIATE, TO ABASE, TO LAY LOW).**  
**POOR – (AFFLICTED, HUMBLE, LOWLY, NEEDY, POOR, BEGGAR).**  
**WOUNDS – (PAIN, SORROW, WOUND).**  
**HUNGRY – (FAMISHED, TO SUFFER HUNGER, IN GREAT NEED OF FOOD, STARVING).**  
**THIRSTY – (TO SUFFER THIRST, PARCHED, DRY, IN GREAT NEED OF WATER).**  
**CRIED – (TO SHRIEK FROM ANGUISH).**  
**TROUBLE – (AFFLICTED, ANGUISH, TROUBLE, TRIBULATION, SORROW, TO BE IN A STRAIT, TO CROWD, TO PRESS IN ON ONE).**  
**DISTRESSES – (ANGUISH, SORROW).**  
**BRUISED – (TO CRUSH, TO HAVE CRUSHED).**  
**BROKENHEARTED – (TO CRUSH THE CENTER OF THE HEART UTTERLY, TO DESTROY, TO SHATTER, TO BREAK IN SHIVERS, TO BRUISE).**  
**FAINTED – (TO LANGUISH, TO FAIL, TO BE OVERWHELMED, TO SWOON).**  
**LONGING – (MIGHTY, STRONG, POWERFUL NEED).**  
**CHASTENETH – (TO PUNISH, TO DISCIPLINE, TO TEACH TO, TO TRAIN UP).**  
**SCOURGETH – (TO FLOG, TO WHIP, TO WHIP WITH A ROMAN FLAGELLUM).**  
**REBUKE – (TO CONFUTE, TO ADMONISH, TO CONVICT, TO CONVINC).**  
**DESTRUCTION – (TO RUIN, TO AFFLICT, TO BREAK, TO CRUSH).**  
**PUNISH – (TO DO JUDGMENT, TO AVENGE, TO BRING TO JUDGMENT).**  
**SACRIFICE – (TO SLAUGHTER, TO KILL, TO PUT TO DEATH).**  
**EXERCISED – (TO STRIP NAKED, TO TRAIN).**

**TO STAIN – (TO WOUND, TO PROFANE, TO BREAK, TO DEFILE).**  
**CONTEMPT – (TO CURSE, TO DESPISE, TO AFFLICT).**  
**ENDURE – (TO REMAIN UNDER, TO UNDERGO, TO BEAR UP, TO HAVE FORTITUDE, TO PERSEVERE, TO TAKE PATIENTLY, TO SUFFER).**

**STRIVE – (TO STRUGGLE, TO FIGHT, TO AGONIZE, TO CONTEND WITH AN ENEMY).**  
**STIRRETH – (TO WAKE UP, TO OPEN ONE’S EYES, ARISE FROM SLUMBER).**  
**CALLETH – (TO ACCOST, TO CRY OUT FOR).**  
**INCLINE – (TO PRICK UP THE EARS, TO HEARKEN, TO GIVE HEED TO, TO MARK WELL).**  
**APPLY – (TO STRETCH OUT FOR SOMETHING, TO REACH FOR).**  
**CRIEST – (TO ACCOST, TO CRY OUT FOR, TO CRY TO).**  
**SEEKETH – (TO SEARCH OUT, TO STRIVE AFTER, TO BEG FOR, TO BESEECH, TO CRAVE AFTER, TO LABOR HARD FOR).**  
**SEARCHEST – (TO DILIGENTLY SEARCH A MATTER OUT, TO INQUIRE AFTER, TO SEEK AFTER, TO FIND A MATTER OUT).**  
**DESIRE – (TO WANT BADLY, TO CONSIDER VALUABLE, TO LIKE).**  
**LABOUR – (TO TOIL, TO WORK, EFFORT, TO WORK FOR, TO DO, A DOING).**  
**ASK – (TO BEG, TO CRAVE, TO BESEECH).**  
**SEEK – (TO DESIRE, TO SEEK AFTER, A DILIGENT SEARCH FOR).**  
**KNOCK – (A PERSISTENT RAPPING, A CONTINUOUS KNOCKING, A TENACITY).**  
**ZEALOUS – (TO COVET EARNESTLY, TO DESIRE GREATLY, TO HAVE GREAT ZEAL FOR, TO BE WHOLLY GOING AFTER).**  
**HOT – (TO BOIL, TO BE RED HOT, TO GLOW, TO BE FERVENT).**  
**HUNGER – (TO BE FAMISHED, STARVED, TO CRAVE FOR, TO TOIL AFTER).**  
**THIRST – (TO BE PARCHED, TO THIRST, TO BE THIRSTY).**  
**MOURN – (TO GRIEVE, TO WAIL ALOUD, TO CRY ALOUD, SORROWFUL).**  
**POOR – (TO BE REDUCED TO A BEGGAR, A PAUPER, TO BEG, IN DISTRESS).**  
**WEEP – (TO WAIL ALOUD, TO BEWAIL, TO CRY ALOUD, TO WEEP).**  
**HUMBLE – (TO BE BROUGHT DOWN, MADE LOW, HUMILIATED).**

**IMPORTUNITY – (PERSISTENT, URGENT SOLICITATION, CONSTANT, STEADFAST).**  
**STRAIT – (NARROW FROM OBSTACLES, REQUIRING STRENGTH AND TENACITY TO OVERCOME THEM).**  
**VIOLENCE – (A FORCER, ENERGETIC, TO CROWD, TO PRESS IN, TO SEIZE).**  
**FORCE – (TO SEIZE, TO CATCH, TO TAKE BY FORCE).**  
**OVERCOMETH – (TO SUBDUE, TO CONQUER, TO PREVAIL, TO GET THE VICTORY).**  
**FEARFUL – (FILLED WITH DREAD, TIMID, SCARED, FAITHLESS).**  
**DILIGENCE – (EAGERNESS, EARNESTNESS, CAREFUL, DILIGENCE).**  
**DESIRE – (TO SET YOUR HEART UPON, TO LONG FOR, TO COVET, TO PINE FOR).**  
**SLOTHFUL – (SLUGGISH, LAZY, STUPID).**  
**PATIENCE – (LONGAMINITY, FORBEARANCE, FORTITUDE).**

**STAND – (TO BE STATIONARY, SET, TO PERSEVERE).**  
**LONG-SUFFERING – (FORBEARANCE, FORTITUDE).**  
**ABIDE – (TO CONTINUE, REMAIN IN, ABIDE IN, STEADFAST).**  
**REMAIN – (TO CONTINUE, TO BE STEADFAST IN, TO BE STATIONARY IN, TO ABIDE).**

We have found a complete and total confirmation in both Old and New Testaments that when Jesus used the terms STRAIT AND NARROW that He was not in any way exaggerating the truth or the nature of what He has called upon us to do. He has given to us the entrance to the New Covenant. He has told us what we must do to enter, and has given us many different words to describe it to us. No one with an honest heart could possibly misconstrue what has been said. The human soul is far too important to Jesus to allow any form of miscalculation to the honest seeker of truth.

What are we then to do with all of this? How can we see such a harmony, such a beautiful but awful simplicity here, that **NO ONE COULD MISTAKE**, and yet **SAY IT IS NOT FOR US**? Is it possible that **HEREIN IS DEFINED TRUE BIBLICAL SAVING FAITH**? That all of these are the very definition of what Christ means when He says have faith and believe? Are we staring into the eyes of **TRUE FAITH HERE**? Is this the **FAITH OF CHRIST**? Is this the faith we must develop, and that **WE MUST STRIVE TO DEVELOP IT**? Is this how **FAITH IS FORGED IN THE CRUCIBLE OF CRUCIFIXION**? Is this what Christ meant when He said if we fell upon Him we would be broken, and He would then grind us to a powder? That if we refuse to follow Christ, if we refuse to be crucified with Him, **WE ARE NOT PARTAKERS OF HIS SUFFERINGS**? That we are then bastard sons, fit only for the fire of eternal torment? I urge you to consider carefully. I beseech you to give all diligence to either prove it out, or disprove it. I can fully guarantee that you cannot disprove it, for the simple reason that **TRUTH IS TRUTH, AND IT LIES NOT, NOR DOES IT CONTRADICT ITSELF EVER**.

The choice is now yours to make. Before you, stands the continuing broad way of general Christianity that has been infiltrated and subverted from the simplicity of the cross. The call is not for the broad way people, nor for the broad way false prophets who with great pomp and circumstance proclaim they are the messengers of Jesus Christ. Signs and wonders follow them to trap the unwary traveler in their web of deception and rebellion against Christ. Off to the side, veiled from you is the strait gate and narrow way. It is the way of literal death of the self, so that Jesus can make a **LOVE EXCHANGE**. I can assure with you a 100% guarantee that if you refuse the narrow way for **ANY REASON WHATSOEVER, YOU WILL PERISH IN YOUR TRESPASSES AND SINS**. There are no alternatives, there is no other way given for us to enter in the New Covenant. It must be done by a **HEART CHANGE; A LOVE CHANGE**.

If your theology does not allow you to accept it because in your mind it is a violation of grace or faith, or is some form of legalism or works, you will perish in your sins. **YOU HAVE NO EXCUSE. THE SCRIPTURES WERE GIVEN UNTO YOU FOR ONE PURPOSE: SO THAT YOU COULD EXTRICATE YOURSELF FROM DECEPTION**. If you sit there and say, “well, when God tells me to move, I’ll move”; you are in great danger. The “many” waited for God to move them, and move them He did: **INTO ETERNAL DAMNATION**. The choice is yours. God will not make that choice for you. You must decide, you must check it out; you must do as Christ commanded.

## **BIBLICAL REPENTANCE**

The narrow way is the way of TRUE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE. All that you have read is what the Bible calls GODLY SORROW. There is a worldly sorrow or repentance, and there is a GODLY SORROW AND REPENTANCE. They are wholly different, and concern themselves with different areas of human activity, as we have seen. For a review, because true repentance is a function of the narrow way, we will review several key verses to prove it out. There are many leaders in the Christian world who will tell you that OBEDIENCE AND REPENTANCE ARE NO LONGER NECESSARY, FOR WE ARE UNDER A NEW SYSTEM; FAITH AND GRACE. What does the Bible actually say? Can we prove that repentance is tied DIRECTLY TO THE SALVATION PROCESS?

*“For GODLY SORROW*

*WORKETH REPENTANCE TO SALVATION*

*NOT TO BE REPENTED OF:*

***BUT THE SORROW OF THE WORLD WORKETH DEATH...***

*(2 Corinthians 7:10)*

This verse proves out there is a difference between the types of sorrow, which lead to two different forms of repentance. WORLDLY SORROW IS COMPARED TO GODLY SORROW. The word “worldly” is ‘ksomos’, which means **THE WORLD, THE INHABITANTS, THE WORLD SYSTEM OF MAN**. It deals with the **PHYSICAL WORLD, THE SENSE WORLD, THE SOUL WORLD**. The inhabitants of the sense world, all operate via the conscious mind, heart and will. There is a worldly sorrow. That form of sorrow concerns itself with **THE SINS OF MAN, WAR, RAPE, MURDER, THEFT, DRUGS AND ALL THE REST**. Man can feel sorrow over all of these things. It is an **EMOTIONAL SORROW**. It is a **SENSE MAN SORROW**. Man feels great **GUILT** when confronted with his sins. He can repent of them, and stop doing them. He can extricate himself from them, if he chooses to do so. This form of repentance is found **AT CONVERSION**. IT DEALS WITH THE MULTITUDE OF SINS IN THE LIFE.

True **CONVERSION** should always have with it a **WORLDLY SORROW, A WORLDLY REPENTANCE, A CONSCIOUS MIND REPENTANCE, A CONSCIOUS RENUNCIATION OF SINS**. If left at that, **IT WORKS DEATH**. The reason it works death is because it never reaches the **INNER HEART OF MAN**, it **NEVER DEALS WITH THE REAL ISSUE BETWEEN MAN AND GOD: AGAPE LOVE**. The word “death” is ‘thanatos’ which means **DEATH, TO BE DEAD**. It reminds us of the comment Christ made to the followers; **“LET THE DEAD BURY THEIR OWN DEAD”**.



GODLY SORROW is wholly different. It is an **UTTER RENUNCIATION OF THE WORLD, THE WORLD SYSTEMS AND THE WORLD'S SINS**. It is a **SEVERANCE, A SEPARATION, A WHOLE HEARTED SEARCH FOR TRUTH**. It does not deal with the multitude of sins that we by nature have within, it **WORKETH TO THE INNER HEART, TO THE INNER MAN, TO THE GREAT "I AM" of the inner heart**. This form of sorrow is not necessarily emotional at all; it is a **PATHWAY CHOSEN TO EXTRICATE ONESELF FROM THE WORLD**. It leads to God putting the **AX TO THE ROOT**.

Godly sorrow is in fact **THE ACT OF PICKING UP YOUR OWN CROSS, ENTERING THE STRAIT GATE AND WALKING THE NARROW WAY**. That walk **LEADS TO GODLY REPENTANCE**. There is no other way to **GODLY REPENTANCE**. The 'many' **NEVER UNDERWENT TRUE GODLY REPENTANCE**. They all underwent a **WORLDLY SORROW THAT LED THEM TO A WORLDLY REPENTANCE**. With great sincerity they **ATTEMPTED TO DEAL WITH THEIR MULTITUDE OF SURFACE SINS**. They did not understand the vital difference between **WORLDLY SORROW AND GODLY SORROW**. It worked in them death, for they **NEVER ENTERED INTO UNION WITH CHRIST, WHO ALONE HAS ETERNAL LIFE**.

The word "sorrow" is 'lupe' and it means **GRIEVOUS, GRIEF, HEAVINESS, SORROW**. It sounds very much like other words we have studied that deal with the **NARROW WAY**. The word "worketh" is interesting. It is 'katergazomai' and it means **TO WORK FULLY, TO ACCOMPLISH, TO CAUSE TO COME TO PASS, TO FASHION, TO WORK OUT**. In other words, **IT TAKES TIME TO FASHION, TO BRING TO PASS, TO WORK IT OUT**. It totally confirms the word "WAY" which is 'hodos'. It is a **JOURNEY, A PROGRESS, A WALK THAT TAKES TIME**. If it is indeed instant, as all modern theology claims, there is nothing to work out; there is nothing to fashion! **PRESTO, INSTANT CHRISTIAN**. Jesus condemned this very process of **ANON WITH GREAT JOY**.

The word "repentance" here is 'methnoia' which means **REFORMATION, REVERSAL, COMPUNCTION**. The implication here confirms everything we have studied; godly sorrow will lead to a **REVERSAL, A REFORMATION, A LOVE CHANGE, FROM NATURAL LOVE TO AGAPE LOVE, FROM SELF LOVE TO GENUINE AND UNFEIGNED AGAPE LOVE**.

### **THE ISSUE ALWAYS COMES BACK TO THE ROOT:** **AGAPE LOVE CHANGE.**

Godly sorrow is a sorrow that is worked over time as **ONE WALKS THE NARROW WAY TO DEATH ON THE CROSS WITH CHRIST**. If your theology does not allow you to pick up your own cross, and to walk with Christ **THROUGH DEATH AND BEYOND**, there **IS NO BIBLICAL REPENTANCE, AND YOU WILL NEVER SEE LIFE, YOU WILL ABIDE ALONE**. This is true because the issue between God and man is **AGAPE LOVE**, and man must repent of **HIS CONDITIONAL SELFISH LOVE AND HAVE IT EXCHANGED FOR AGAPE**. As we have shown, the two types of love are mutually **EXCLUSIVE OF EACH OTHER, THEY CANNOT RESIDE TOGETHER**. True **GODLY SORROW WORKS YOU TO A POINT OF TRUE BIBLICAL REPENTANCE – THE RECOGNITION AND RENUNCIATION OF CONDITIONAL LOVE, FROM THE INNER HEART, A SUPERNATURAL PROCESS THAT MAN HIMSELF CANNOT DO VIA ANY MENTAL PROCESS**.

Notice how Paul words this: THE REPENTANCE OF CONDITIONAL LOVE FROM THE INNER HEART LEADS TO THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE. Once bestowed, agape love is eternal, it is forever. **IT IS NOT TO BE REPENTED OF.** The words “not to be repented of” is ‘ametameletos’ which means

**IRREVOCABLE, NOT CHANGEABLE, ETERNAL.**

In other words, we could say “GODLY SORROW WORKETH A LOVE CHANGE TO AGAPE, THAT IS IRREVOCABLE”. When God bestows ANY GIFT, IT IS ALWAYS WITHOUT REPENTANCE, IT IS ALWAYS IRREVOCABLE. This has to do with ETERNAL SECURITY IN CHRIST, ONCE AGAPE LOVE IS BESTOWED. God does not fool around. Only the serious believer who leaves everything behind to find the truth is ever given the gift. We have amply demonstrated that fact through a multitude of Scripture.

*“For the **GIFTS** AND CALLING OF GOD ARE  
**WITHOUT REPENTANCE.**”  
(Romans 11:29)*

Again the word for “repentance” is ‘ametamaletos’, which means **IRREVOCABLE**. God knows THOSE THAT ARE HIS. He grants the GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE ONLY TO THOSE WHO HAVE BEEN OBEDIENT. The narrow way is the way of JUDGMENT, RECONCILIATION AND REPENTANCE. If you refuse it, you have neither been JUDGED, RECONCILED OR UNDERGONE REPENTANCE. All of which are absolutely necessary before the gift of agape love will be granted you. The call to repentance has always been necessary before God deals with man. It is not God that needs to repent, it is man, and man needs to repent because of HIS VERY NATURE. That call started back in the Old Testament:

*“Yet, if they shall bethink themselves in the land whither they were carried captives,*

**AND REPENT,**

*AND **MAKE SUPPLICATION** UNTO THEE in the land of them that  
carried them captives, saying,*

**WE HAVE SINNED, AND HAVE DONE PERVERSELY, WE  
HAVE COMMITTED WICKEDNESS;**

*AND SO RETURN UNTO THEE WITH ALL THEIR HEART,  
AND WITH ALL THEIR SOUL...”*

*(1 Kings 8:47-48)*

The word “repent” here is ‘shuwb’ which means **TO TURN BACK, TO CHANGE ONES MIND, TO THINK DIFFERENTLY**. And notice that they are to return to God with **ALL OF THEIR HEART, AND ALL OF THEIR SOUL**. This is not a call to PARTIAL REPENTANCE, BUT OF A WHOLE HEART CHANGE. The nature of man is such, that unless he will turn to God with a **TOTAL COMMITMENT TO FINDING THE TRUTH, HE WILL NEVER FIND IT**. He will perish forever. The bible is clear: THERE IS NOTHING MORE IMPORTANT IN THIS LIFE THAN OBTAINING SALVATION. NOTHING WHATEVER. If you do not come to that RECOGNITION, the odds are you will not ever come to the truth. Man is in DIRE STRAITS BEFORE A HOLY GOD. HE IS IN SUCH SERIOUS TROUBLE THAT IF GOD SHOWED IT TO THEM, THEY WOULD PERISH FROM TOTAL HEART FAILURE. It is God’s hope, and His prayer that man discover this through the evidences provided.

*“Therefore say UNTO THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL (THAT’S BELIEVERS),*

*THUS SAITH THE LORD GOD:*

**REPENT,**

*AND TURN YOURSELVES AWAY FROM YOUR IDOLS;  
AND TURN AWAY YOUR FACES FROM ALL YOUR ABOMINATIONS.”*

*(Ezekiel 14:6)*

How can anyone misinterpret that one? Paul says in Romans that we Christians are PART OF THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL. Modern Christian theology is an IDOL UNTO ITSELF. It leads to death. REPENT OF IT, AND ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY THAT YOU MIGHT FIND LIFE, AND CHRIST, AND BE HID IN HIM IN THE DAY OF TROUBLE SOON COMING.

*“I tell you, Nay:*

***BUT, EXCEPT YE REPENT,***  
***YE SHALL ALL LIKEWISE PERISH.”***

*(Luke 13:3)*

Jesus commands that **WE ALL REPENT**. Obviously Jesus is speaking of a GODLY SORROW THAT LEADS TO A REPENTANCE THAT IS IRREVOCABLE. The word “repent” is ‘metanoeo’ which means **TO RECONSIDER, TO THINK DIFFERENTLY**. Reconsider what? How are we to think DIFFERENTLY? The answer of course is to RECONSIDER OUR LOVE NATURE, AND WE THINK DIFFERENTLY WHEN AGAPE LOVE IS GRANTED. But that is hidden from soul man, sense man, and so A WORLDLY CONCEPT OF REPENTANCE WOULD BE DEVELOPED, AND IT WOULD POSE AS GODLY REPENTANCE. The “many” claimed a repentance they had not undergone. They SUBSTITUTED WORLD SORROW FOR GODLY SORROW, WORLDLY REPENTANCE FOR GODLY REPENTANCE.

Because they claimed they HAD REPENTED, they also claimed they had AGAPE LOVE WITHIN. It was a classic case of **BAIT AND SWITCH, DONE BY THE MASTER OF DECEPTION: SATAN HIMSELF**. Man should give honor where honor is due. Satan is to be honored for what he is: **THE MASTER DECEIVER, THE MASTER OF ALL DECEPTIONS, THE FATHER OF LIES**. To underestimate the intelligence of this remarkable creature is to assure yourself certain ruin. **NEVER UNDERESTIMATE YOUR ENEMY**.

It must be pointed out that these two types of repentance form an alliance, if the believer will be obedient and walk the narrow way. The outer heart, mind and will undergo A CONVERSION only when it becomes convinced or convicted of SINS PLURAL. The pointing out of these sins is how God gains ACCESS TO THE CONSCIOUS HEART TO BEGIN THE MUCH DEEPER PROCESS OF A INNER HEART CONVICTION. In other words, GOD WORKS FROM THE OUTER PART INWARD. He starts with the outer mind and heart, and from that foothold, through the power of the Holy Spirit, He begins to convict the INNER HEART OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT.

Outer heart conviction of sin brings sorrow and remorse. It is supposed to lead one to CONVERSION TO CHRIST AS MESSIAH. This is one aspect of the CALLING OF GOD. God sent Christ into the world, and by that act HE CALLED ALL MEN UNTO CHRIST. Only some of the world will respond to that call. They respond by hearing the Gospel preached, by hearing the Word. They then CONFESS THE FACT THAT THEY DO SIN, THAT THEY DO HAVE IDOLS, THAT ARE PERVERSE. This is the BEGINNING PROCESS. Out of that group called "MANY ARE CALLED" come the FEW, who will FIND the strait gate, and walk the narrow way UNTO A GODLY SORROW, A GODLY REPENTANCE, TO THE LOVE CHANGE: NATURAL PHILEO TO AGAPE. When properly understood, the meaning of this verse then becomes very clear:

***"REPENT YE THEREFORE, AND BE CONVERTED  
(STEP ONE),***

***THAT YOUR SINS MAY BE BLOTTED OUT,***

***WHEN (THE CONDITIONAL WHEN)***

***THE TIMES OF REFRESHING SHALL COME  
(STEP TWO),***

***FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD."***  
***(Acts 3:19)***

This is not a SECOND ADVENT VERSE. It has nothing to do with the Second Advent. It shows us in a precise manner what THE STEPS TO HAVING OUR SINS BLOTTED OUT ACTUALLY ARE. First we are to REPENT FROM OUR CONSCIOUS MIND, SOUL AND HEART, AND RECOGNIZE FROM OUR CONSCIOUS MIND WE ARE IN FACT SINNERS. Why would anyone turn to Christ if they did not at least get this far? This repentance is SUPPOSED TO LEAD TO GENUINE CONVERSION. It leads to a LIFE CHANGE.

If the believer who has undergone this CONVERSION CONTINUES IN THE FAITH GROUNDED AND SETTLED, AND IS NOT MOVED AWAY FROM THE NARROW WAY, AND UNDERGOES SOUL DEATH, then he/she will find the LIVING CHRIST, and enter into the Holy of Holies, and THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD. The believer will step into the ACTUAL AND LITERAL PRESENCE OF THE LORD. He will step into the presence of AGAPE LOVE. HE WILL BE SHOWN THE MYSTERY, THE SECRET OF GOD. This is when the TIME OF REFRESHING COMES. The refreshing is AGAPE LOVE LIFE. It can only come by MEETING CHRIST, BY COMING TO CHRIST, AS HE COMMANDED WE DO.

The many READ THE SCRIPTURES, THINKING THAT IN THEM THEY WILL FIND ETERNAL LIFE. It never dawns upon them that the SCRIPTURE IS ONLY A TESTIMONY OF CHRIST, IT IS NOT JESUS CHRIST THE PERSON. Jesus Christ is alive, He walks, He talks, He lives, He acts, He moves, He does, He runs the affairs of the Church. Jesus said that WE MUST COME TO HIM PERSONALLY TO OBTAIN LIFE. You can develop any theology you wish to CIRCUMVENT IT, BUT YOU WILL NOT ALTER THE TRUTH. YOU MUST COME INTO THE PRESENCE OF THE LIVING CHRIST TO OBTAIN AGAPE LOVE.

Notice how it is worded, go back and study it out. THE SINS ARE NOT BLOTTED OUT UNTIL THE TIME OF REFRESHING. The refreshing does not occur until you come into the presence of the LORD JESUS CHRIST. He is the holder of the key of life, AGAPE LOVE. The sins are not blotted out before this because ALL SINS CAN ONLY BE BLOTTED OUT BY THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE. There is no other way, for the NEW COVENANT IS A COVENANT OF A NEW HEART MADE OUT OF AGAPE LOVE. Modern theology attempts to REWRITE A DIVINE COVENANT WRITTEN BY THE HAND OF GOD. It is no different than if Moses took the stone tablets and rewrote them to suit himself! YOU DO NOT REWRITE WHAT GOD HAS WRITTEN.

The long robes of clergy; their POMP AND THEIR CIRCUMSTANCE, THEIR ARROGANCE AND PRIDE, THEIR HUGE MINISTRIES OF DECEPTION, DO NOT ALTER EVEN ONE JOT, NOR ONE TITTLE FROM THE WORD OF GOD. The conditions for entering the New Covenant CANNOT BE ALTERED BY MANKIND. Collectively, the world's religions, philosophies, governments, and all of the people UNITED cannot alter WHAT GOD HAS DECREED. God is SOVEREIGN. He does what HE WANTS. You either come into a RECOGNITION OF THE SOVEREIGNTY OF GOD, AND BECOME OBEDIENT TO WHAT HE COMMANDS, OR YOU WILL DIE IN YOUR SINS, AND YOU WILL PERISH FOR ALL ETERNITY IN THE FIRES OF HELL. The beginning of ALL WISDOM is to have a FEAR OF GOD, BECAUSE GOD IS GOD, KING OF KINGS, LORD OF ALL LORDS, SOVEREIGN OF ALL SOVEREIGNS.

You had better understand that THE SEVERITY OF GOD IS SHOWN TO THE MANY OR VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS. How severe AGAPE LOVE IS COMES TO LIGHT IN **THE DISMISSAL INTO ETERNAL RUIN MILLIONS UPON MILLIONS OF BELIEVERS, OF HIS OWN PEOPLE.** We are not speaking of HIS OWN PEOPLE, HIS VERY OWN BELIEVERS. God's Word CANNOT BE ALTERED. IT CANNOT BE CIRCUMVENTED BY RELIGIOUS BIAS, BY THEOLOGY, BY DOCTRINE, BY OPINIONS, BY REFUSING TO FACE IT, BY ANY MEANS UNDER THE SUN. GOD'S WORD IS SOVEREIGN; IT WILL BE DONE. BELIEVE IT, AND DO SOMETHING ABOUT IT. FEAR GOD AND LIVE. MOCK GOD AND DIE. IT IS THAT SIMPLE, THAT BLUNT.

*“AND THE TIMES OF THIS ignorance God winked at;  
BUT NOW COMMANDETH ALL MEN EVERY WHERE TO  
REPENT.”  
(Acts 17:30)*

When God commands that ALL MEN EVERYWHERE TO REPENT, it means EXACTLY THAT. It is NOT OPTIONAL. It is not something you THINK ABOUT. It is something that MUST BE DONE NOW, OVER THE WHOLE WORLD, BECAUSE THE NEW COVENANT IS A COVENANT OF A NEW HEART. Without GODLY SORROW UNTO INNER HEART REPENTANCE OF CONDITIONAL LOVE, THERE IS NO SALVATION, NOT ANYWHERE IN THE ENTIRE WORLD. It confirms totally everything we have studied. For those who claim that repentance is passé, then why is repentance mentioned in Revelation 2:5; 2:16; 2:21, 22; 3:3 and 3:19? These are letters to THE CHURCHES. Only a fool develops a theology that MOCKS GOD AND THE WORDS OF CHRIST.

## GRACE AND FAITH REVISITED

The first objection usually raised against the strait gate and narrow way is that this is a *violent perversion of grace and faith*. Because it violates the modern Christian concepts of grace and faith, it is portrayed as a form of works or legalism. In reality, it is the direct OPPOSITE of works or legalism, and as to faith, the narrow way *DEFINES FAITH FROM A SCRIPTURAL POSITION*. The concept that faith is merely some form of “believing” was developed in the 1600 – 1700’s by the founding fathers of the modern *FAITH ALONE CONCEPT*. We could go back as far as the reformation, when Luther discovered that Roman Catholicism was indeed a perversion of faith and grace, but out of the reformation came an even more dangerous form of perversion: *THE DOCTRINE OF INSTANT FAITH, IMMEDIATE REGENERATION BY AN ACT OF THE HUMAN WILL*.

The first place to begin is by properly understanding the Biblical definition of GRACE. Remember that Jude warned that GRACE WOULD BE PERVERTED AND SOLD OUT, TRANSFORMED INTO SOMETHING IT WAS NOT.

*“For there are CERTAIN MEN CREPT IN UNAWARES,  
who were before of old ordained to this condemnation,  
UNGODLY MEN, TURNING THE GRACE OF OUR GOD  
INTO LASCIVIOUSNESS,  
AND DENYING THE ONLY LORD GOD, AND OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST.”  
(Jude 4)*

We have studied this previously when we studied the false prophets, but again it should be pointed out that THESE ARE CHRISTIAN CLERGY OF GREAT POPULARITY (2 Peter 2:1-3) who creep into the sheepfold AS CHRISTIANS, BUT THEY ARE NOT AUTHENTIC CHRISTIANS. They are branded as UNGODLY MEN, and that means they ARE NOT REGENERATED, THEY DO NOT HAVE THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD WITHIN THEM. They have a form of GODLINESS, BUT THEY DENY THE POWER (CROSS) THEREOF.

As stated early on, Satan must strike at the very heart of the salvation message, and he must therefore **REDEFINE THE PRIMARY TERMS**. Satan is the author of DOUBLESPEAK, which means that although he uses the same words, their meanings are not what they are supposed to be. These men, who have all the appearances of GODLY CHRISTIANS, introduce **DAMNABLE HERESIES, AND ONE OF THEM IS THE TOTAL PROSTITUTION OF GRACE**. They introduce a concept of grace that becomes the springboard for all types of behavior, for after all, WE ARE UNDER GRACE, AND NOT OF WORKS.

The “many” of Matthew 7 were under the impression during their lifetimes in the Christian faith that they were under **THE GRACE OF GOD**. The non-overcomers ALL THOUGHT THEY WERE UNDER THE GRACE OF GOD. The “many” who follow the damnable heresies of the false prophets ALL THOUGHT THEY WERE UNDER THE GRACE OF GOD. In all cases, they were wrong, for they found out that the grace of God DID NOT AVAIL THEM ANYTHING WHATEVER, **FOR THEY WERE NOT UNDER HIS GRACE**.

Had they been in truth under the grace of God, they could never have been sent into the eternal flames of hellfire and torment. Remember also that the word “many” means THE VAST MAJORITY, THAT MAY EVEN EXTEND TO ONE IN A THOUSAND, as we proved out in previous reports. Only the CHOSEN FEW ARE UNDER THE GRACE OF GOD. ONLY THE BRIDE OF CHRIST IS UNDER GRACE, ALL OTHERS ARE UNDER THE WRATH OF GOD. These are the facts of the matter, and the facts do no change because your theological bias will not allow you to accept it. The grace of God is wholly misunderstood, and by the definition of Jesus Christ, it is **NARROW IN APPLICATION**.

The proper definition of grace is this:

**IT IS THE UNMERITED FAVOR OF GOD THAT SPRINGS FROM HIS ESSENCE OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH SENT JESUS CHRIST INTO THE WORLD, WHO GAVE US A STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY BY WHICH WE COULD ENTER THE NEW COVENANT.**

That is the extent of the grace of God. If you do not enter the strait gate, and you refuse the narrow way, you are not availing yourself of the grace of God. When you die, you face WRATH, NOT GRACE AND MERCY. Grace has no other definition whatever.

The modern false prophets of the modern grace movement have done exactly what Jude said they would do. They all define grace as being ABSOLUTE, AND BECAUSE IT IS ABSOLUTE, THEN WE ARE **FREE TO BE OURSELVES**. We are free to be ALL WE CAN BE. In other words, **GRACE IS TURNED INTO LICENSE, INTO FREEDOM OF EXPRESSION, FREEDOM TO "BE ME"**. That is a totally unscriptural definition of grace. The believer in Christ is under grace only as long as he/she is under OBEDIENCE, AND IS DOING WHAT CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER COMMANDED BE DONE. To claim otherwise is to totally distort Scripture.

The only believers availing themselves of the grace of God are OBEDIENT BELIEVERS. They are not free to be "themselves". They are only free to walk the narrow way unto death; they are only free to be brought down to total and complete humiliation in the sight of God and His agape love. Once they have found the mystery of God and the secret of AGAPE LOVE, AND BECOME REGENERATED, they are still not free to be "ALL THEY CAN BE". Paul was quite blunt that it was not HE THAT LIVED, BUT CHRIST IN HIM THAT LIVED. If indeed Christ lives within the believer, and the believer has in truth been **CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST**, then wherein is the believer FREE TO BE HIMSELF/HERSELF? **THE SELF IS SUPPOSED TO BE DEAD**. The position now being advanced about grace **CONFIRMS TOTALLY THEY HAVE NEVER DIED, THEY HAVE NEVER WALKED THE NARROW WAY, THEY HAVE NEVER MET CHRIST, AND CHRIST IS NOT IN THEM**.

The answer is obvious. It is just one of the "little Gods" concept sweeping Christianity under the guise of GRACE. The real Christian walks a literal tightrope between his carnal OLD MAN, and **THE REGENERATED NEW MAN**, made in the image of Christ. Indeed, the real Christian KNOWS THAT CHRIST LIVES IN HIM, AND HE HAS DIED. If he has died, then he is no longer he, but Christ liveth in and through him. This being easily proved from Scripture, then it should be obvious that the modern grace movement is a lie, a satanic doctrine, designed to take believers further and further from the WAY OF THE TRUTH. YOU ARE NOT FREE TO BE YOU. **GRACE NEVER HAD ANY SUCH MEANING**.

Grace brought Christ, and Christ brought the narrow way. Grace is therefore confined to those who value Christ enough to lay down their lives for Him on the altar of the NARROW WAY. These are they of **PRECIOUS LIKE FAITH, THAT HAVE THE FAITH OF CHRIST**, who have offered up THEMSELVES AS A LIVING SACRIFICE.

## **GOD WILL ACCEPT NOTHING LESS**

Snub God and you will find your so called grace turned in terrible WRATH. Nothing could be worse than to be assigned eternal ruin. You cannot ever extricate yourself from eternal ruin once it has come your way. Your screams for mercy, for compassion, for help will forever remain unanswered. I can only tell you what I know for a truth. I can testify to the screams of the damned, for I heard their wails and their cries. It is more frightening than the worst horror movies that could ever be conjured up by the mind of man. It is worse than your worst nightmare.

What man does to man on earth in torture, rape, murder, beatings, burning or whatever you wish to name are NOTHING compared to the agony that awaits the **UNREGENERATE SOUL**. They spit upon the Son of God; they REFUSED HIM AND HIS COMMANDS. They counted His sacrifice nothing. They were given the chance. It is not the will of God that any perish, BUT



THAT ALL COME TO BIBLICAL REPENTANCE. Man has a free will. He can CHOOSE TO STIR HIMSELF UP AND LAY HOLD OF GOD. He can also choose not to, he can choose to remain in the world and lay hold of eternal death. The two are placed before us, WHICH THEN WILL WE CHOOSE?

A beautiful outline of what grace is, and how it works, is found in EXODUS. God does not change, nor do His concepts change. As we read this, keep in mind all that we have studied so far. Remember that GRACE APPLIES ONLY TO THOSE WHO ARE OBEDIENT, THOSE WHO HAVE COME INTO THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD, OR TO THOSE THAT ARE WALKING THE WAY TO FIND THE LORD.

*“And Moses said unto the Lord, See, thou sayest unto me,  
Bring up this people: and thou hast not let me know whom thou wilt send with  
me.  
Yet thou hast said,  
**I KNOW THEE BY NAME,  
AND THOU HAST ALSO FOUND GRACE IN MY SIGHT.”**  
(Exodus 33:12)*

This was an exchange that Moses had with the Lord FACE TO FACE. The Lord had told Moses that HE KNEW MOSES BY NAME. Compare to John 10 and the sheep, which Christ knows by name. Moses had found GRACE from the Lord, enough to cover a multitude of sins.

*“Now therefore, I pray thee,  
**IF I HAVE FOUND GRACE IN THY SIGHT,  
SHEW ME NOW THY WAY,  
THAT I MAY KNOW THEE,  
THAT I MAY FIND GRACE IN THY SIGHT:  
AND CONSIDER THAT THIS NATION IS THY PEOPLE.”**  
(Exodus 33:13)*

Moses says to the Lord, “OK, if I have grace as you say, **SHEW ME THEN THY WAY, THAT I MAY KNOW THEE**”. This is most interesting. It compares to Matthew 7 and THE WAY. The word “way” here is ‘derek’ which means **A ROAD, A COURSE, A JOURNEY, A MODE OF ACTION**. Notice how it is worded: SHOW ME THE “WAY” SO THAT I MAY KNOW THEE. The word “know” is ‘yada’ which means **TO ASCERTAIN BY SEEING, TO SEE, OR TO KNOW**. Compare this to John 17 and the prayer of Christ. It was His prayer that we come to

KNOW GOD AND CHRIST, THAT WE COME TO KNOW ‘AGAPE’ LOVE (John 17:3; 25,26).

Notice that it is AFTER THE KNOWING THAT THE FINAL GRACE IN THE SIGHT OF GOD IS GIVEN. THERE IS A **GRACE UNTO GRACE**. In other words, GOD’S FIRST GRACE GAVE MAN JESUS CHRIST AND THE NARROW WAY. It is offered free of charge. THAT IS GRACE, FOR MAN DOES NOT DESERVE IT. IT IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD THAT BROUGHT IT TO US. BECAUSE OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST, HE DIED TO MAKE THE WAY FOR US. THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY ARE SEALED IN ETERNITY BY THE BLOOD OF CHRIST. It is a contract signed in blood. **THAT IS THE FIRST GRACE**. It is a worldly grace, a grace that allows ALL MAN TO ENTER IN IF THEY WILL.

There is ANOTHER GRACE. IT IS THE GRACE THAT IS IN THE SIGHT OF GOD HIMSELF. This is the grace of AGAPE LOVE IN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD. GRACE UNTO GRACE. When you read in the SIGHT OF GOD, read IN THE SIGHT OF THE AGAPE LOVE LORD. God sees through the eyes of PURE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE. Moses was giving us a clue: HE WAS SEEKING GRACE IN THE SIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. It only comes via the narrow way and death of self. Now God replies:

*“And he said, **MY PRESENCE** SHALL GO WITH THEE,*

*AND I WILL **GIVE THEE REST**.”*

*(Exodus 33:14)*

This compares with Jesus who said that He would **NEVER LEAVE US, NEVER CAST US OUT, BUT THAT HE WOULD ABIDE WITH US FOREVER**. The word “presence” is ‘panim’ which means **IN THE FACE OF, OR BEFORE**. In other words, IN THE PRESENCE OF GOD HIMSELF. John tells us that THE SEED OF CHRIST REMAINS IN US, THAT THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD, VIA AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT REMAINS IN US. It is Christ that liveth, not I, was the cry of Paul. MY PRESENCE SHALL GO WITH THEE. Then He adds, “I WILL GIVE THEE REST.” The rest of God comes in two stages. The first is AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, THE SECOND AT MATURITY.

Now we skip to verse 16, which is of major importance, for it ties in directly with the New Testament version of SALVATION. Read it carefully:

*“For wherein **SHALL IT BE KNOWN HERE**  
**THAT I AND THY PEOPLE HAVE FOUND GRACE IN THY SIGHT?***

***IS IT NOT IN THAT THOU GOEST WITH US?**  
**SO SHALL WE BE SEPARATED, I AND THY PEOPLE,***

***FROM ALL THE PEOPLE THAT ARE UPON THE FACE OF THE EARTH.”***

*(Exodus 33:16)*

Moses asks God what PROVES WE HAVE FOUND GRACE IN THY SIGHT? WHAT IS THE PROOF OF IT? HOW DO WE KNOW IT FOR A FACT? How shall it be known here? How can I know for positive fact that I HAVE FOUND THE GRACE OF GOD? The reply confirms everything we have studied. FIRST, THAT THE LORD GOES WITH US. This is referred to in the New Testament of the **WITNESS OF THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT WITHIN, THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST IS THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT.**

If God goes with us, then IT IS THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT WITHIN THE REGENERATED BELIEVER THAT SETS HIM APART FROM ALL WHO DWELL UPON THE FACE OF THE EARTH. Is that not what John told us? Is that not EXACTLY what we have proved from the very beginning? THAT THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD IS WHOLLY DIFFERENT THAN THE LOVE OF MAN? Now do you realize why John said:

**“BEHOLD,**  
  
**WHAT MANNER OF (AGAPE) LOVE**  
**THE FATHER HATH BESTOWED UPON US,**  
**THAT WE SHOULD BE CALLED THE SONS OF GOD:**  
  
**THEREFORE**  
  
**THE WORLD KNOWETH US NOT,**  
**BECAUSE IT KNEW HIM NOT.”**  
**(1 John 3:1)**

It is the AGAPE LOVE DIFFERENCE that sets the true and authentic believer apart from the entire WORLD. It is the bestowment of agape love that moves one from the DOMINION AND KINGDOM OF SATAN INTO THE KINGDOM OF CHRIST. John reaffirms what Moses knew: IT SEPARATES GOD’S PEOPLE FROM THE ENTIRE WORLD, BECAUSE THE WORLD DOES NOT KNOW, NOR HAVE AGAPE LOVE WITHIN. The world cannot know agape love. It cannot know it because the world LIVES IN THE SENSE REALM. The world lives in the conscious mind. SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN, FLESH MAN OR CARNAL MAN CANNOT KNOW SPIRITUAL THINGS. Even believers in Christ do not know or understand SPIRITUAL THINGS until they have walked the narrow way to discover the truth behind all of LIFE: AGAPE LOVE.

Moses said that we should be SEPARATED. The word “separated” is ‘palah’ which means **TO PUT A DIFFERENCE, TO SET APART, TO SEVER, TO MAKE WONDERFULLY, TO SHOW MARVELOUS.** What is it that severs the TRUE BELIEVER FROM THE WORLD? What is it that SETS APART THE BELIEVER FROM THE WORLD? What is it that GOD DOES WHEN REGENERATION TAKES PLACE? Is it not to make a NEW CREATURE IN AGAPE LOVE?

**“Then she (Ruth) fell on her face,**

***AND BOWED HERSELF TO THE GROUND,***  
***AND SAID UNTO HIM,***

***WHY HAVE I FOUND GRACE IN THINE EYES,***

***THAT THOU SHOULDEST TAKE KNOWLEDGE OF ME,***  
***SEEING I AM A STRANGER?***

***(Ruth 2:10)***

The story of Ruth is the story of the BRIDE OF CHRIST. It is the story of the KINSMEN REDEEMER. It is the story of the acceptance of THE STRANGER INTO THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL. Ruth was an alien to Israel. Ruth had gone in the FIELD TO WORK, AND TO LABOR FOR GLEANINGS, left by the reapers. She TOILED IN THE FIELDS ALL THE DAY LONG. Boaz represents Christ. Every believer is to ***FALL UPON THEIR FACE BEFORE CHRIST. EVERY BELIEVER IS TO BOW THEMSELVES DOWN TO THE GROUND.*** That is what the strait gate and narrow way are all about: THE HUMBLING OF THE SOUL. Once the soul has been humbled in the sight of the Lord, then THE BELIEVER ASKS, “WHY HAVE I FOUND GRACE IN THY SIGHT?” We might word it, “why me, Lord?” Why have you taken knowledge of me? I am but a stranger, an alien to all that you are. Why have you CHOSEN ME?

The answer is beautiful. Boaz says:

***“And Boaz (Christ) answered and said unto her (The Bride of Christ),***

***It hath fully been shewed me,***

***ALL THAT THOU HAST DONE UNTO THY MOTHER IN LAW***  
***SINCE THE DEATH OF THINE HUSBAND: And HOW***

***THOU HAST LEFT THY FATHER AND THY MOTHER,***  
***AND THE LAND OF THY NATIVITY,***  
***AND ART COME UNTO A PEOPLE***  
***WHICH THOU KNEWEST NOT HERETOFORE.”***

***(Ruth 2:11)***

Remember the rich young ruler? Remember what he was told to do? Was he not told to go sell all that he had, return and follow the Lord? What would that entail? Leaving behind EVERYTHING: MOTHER, FATHER, SISTERS, BROTHERS, WIVES, CHILDREN, HOMES, BUSINESS. Did not Christ command that IF WE HATED NOT OUR WIVES, MOTHERS, FATHERS, BROTHERS AND SISTERS, WE WERE NOT HIS DISCIPLES? We are then to LEAVE THE LAND OF OUR NATIVITY, AND COME UNTO A PEOPLE WHICH WE KNOW NOT. How do we do it? WE LABOR IN THE FIELD OF THE SEARCH, WE SEEK AFTER GLEANINGS, WE SEEK AFTER KERNELS OF CORN (TRUTH) and they will lead us to CHRIST, WHO IS BOAZ.

Do not forget the question: WHY HAVE I FOUND GRACE IN THINE EYES? The answer is simple: **BECAUSE YOU WERE OBEDIENT AND DID THAT WHICH WAS RIGHT IN THE SIGHT OF THE LORD.** Because you OBEYED THE COMMAND TO LEAVE BEHIND THE WORLD, AND RISKED IT ALL TO FIND CHRIST. The “many” did not FIND GRACE. The “many” were NOT OBEDIENT.

## **GRACE IS CONFINED ONLY TO THE OBEDIENT.**

Boaz was a NEAR-KINSMEN (Ruth 2:20). He purchased by REDEMPTION RUTH (Ruth 4:1-13) and took her to WIFE. Is that not exactly what Christ does to HIS BRIDE? DOES HE NOT TAKE HER TO BE HIS WIFE? The story of Ruth is well worth your study, for it will confirm everything we have studied.

*“And now for a **LITTLE SPACE (THE CHURCH AGE)**  
**GRACE HATH BEEN SHEWED FROM THE LORD OUR GOD,**  
**TO LEAVE US A REMNANT (THE FEW) TO ESCAPE,**  
**AND TO GIVE US A NAIL IN HIS HOLY PLACE (A PLACE IN THE PLAN OF  
REDEMPTION),**  
**THAT OUR GOD MAY LIGHTEN OUR EYES,**  
**AND GIVE US A LITTLE REVIVING IN OUR BONDAGE.”**  
(Ezra 9:8)*

This verse also ties together the exact sequence of things, and show where and how grace is to be applied, and from these lessons of the Old Testament, we will find total verification in the New. Indeed, God does **NOT** change. Spoken to Israel, yet it applies totally and exactly to the Church. The word for “now” is ‘attah’ which means **AT THIS TIME, FROM HENCEFORTH, AND THIS TIME.** The word “little” is ‘me’at’ which means **VERY SMALL, LITTLE.** The word “space” is ‘rega’ which means **VERY SHORT SPACE OF TIME.** Sounds very much like **NOW IS THE DAY OF SALVATION. NOW IS THE TIME FOR SALVATION.** To God the 2000 years of **GRACE UNDER CHRIST IS INDEED A SHORT PERIOD OF TIME. TWO DAYS TO BE EXACT.**

The word “grace” is ‘techinnah’ which means **ENTREATY, GRACE, GRACIOUSNESS.** In this so called **SHORT TIME OF GRACE, A REMNANT WILL ESCAPE.** Because we know that only **THE FEW WILL ACTUALLY ESCAPE BY THE NARROW WAY,** and it has always been a remnant, which also means **FEW OUT OF MANY.** The word “nail” is ‘yathed’ which means **TO PIN THROUGH OR FAST, TO FASTEN, A PEG OR A STAKE BY WHICH TO HOLD SOMETHING.** The **NAIL WE HAVE IS THE NAIL THAT HELD CHRIST TO THE CROSS.** The nail we have, our fastening to the Holy Place is via the **STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY, THE ONLY ENTRANCE GIVEN TO ENTER THE NEW COVENANT.**

If we will enter the strait gate, and walk the narrow way ALL UNDER GRACE, ALL UNDER A SHORT PERIOD OF TIME, SOMETHING WILL HAPPEN. God will “LIGHTEN OUR EYES”. The word “lighten” is ‘owr’ and it means **LUMINOUS, TO GIVE LIGHT, TO SHOW LIGHT, TO SHINE, TO MAKE LUMINOUS**. In other words, TO SEE LIGHT, TO BE ABLE TO DISCERN THE TRUTH OF THE LIGHT OF GOD. He will SHOW TO US the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE, WE WILL SEE IT, DISCERN IT, UNDERSTAND IT. Notice who it is that gives us THIS LIGHT: GOD HIMSELF. Is that not what 1 John 3:1 says? Did not John say ‘BEHOLD WHAT MANNER OF AGAPE LOVE THE FATHER HATH BESTOWED UPON US?’ Is agape love not THE LIGHT OF GOD? Is light not a code word for AGAPE LOVE?

Is it not this AGAPE LOVE LIGHT THAT GIVES US A TIME OF REFRESHING, A REVIVING? Is it not the AGAPE love of Christ that REVIVES US, THAT GIVES US A NEW LIFE FROM AN OLD LIFE WE DIED TO? It is also God that GIVES THE REVIVING. The word “give” is ‘nathan’ which means **TO BESTOW**. The word “reviving” is ‘michyah’, which means **TO QUICKEN, LIFE, TO RECOVER**. And what are we to recover from? BONDAGE. The word “bondage” here is ‘abduwth’ which means **SERVITUDE, BONDAGE, SLAVERY**. It utterly confirms the sequence. Nothing in Scripture is coincidental. Everything that happened to Israel is for our learning.

*“And the king LOVED ESTHER above ALL THE WOMEN,  
AND SHE OBTAINED GRACE AND FAVOUR IN HIS SIGHT  
MORE THAN ALL THE VIRGINS:  
SO THAT HE SET THE ROYAL CROWN UPON HER HEAD,  
AND MADE HER QUEEN INSTEAD OF VASHTI.”  
(Esther 2:17)*

Esther is a type of Bride, and the King is a type of Christ. It says that the KING LOVED ESTHER MORE THAN ALL THE OTHER VIRGINS. It reminds us of the parable of the virgins that Christ told us about. It reminds of Revelation 3:19: “as many as I LOVE, I REBUKE AND CHASTEN.”

The king loved Esther MORE THAN ALL OTHERS. Christ loves THOSE THAT ARE OBEDIENT ABOVE ALL OTHERS. He loves those that have LAID DOWN THEIR LIVES ON THE NARROW WAY MORE THAN ALL OTHERS. It is these that OBTAIN THE GRACE OF THE KING. The word “grace” means **FAVOR, PRECIOUS, KINDNESS**. Notice the words IN HIS SIGHT. And who was it that RECEIVED THE CROWN? The one that found FAVOR; the one that found GRACE.

The crown is a ROYAL CROWN. The word “royal” is ‘malkuwth’ which means **DOMINION, EMPIRE, KINGDOM**. The word “crown” is ‘kether’ which means **DIADEM**. Who in the New Testament receives the CROWN OF LIFE, THE CROWN OF AGAPE LOVE? Only those who OBEY THE LORD, AND DO AS HE COMMANDS THEY DO. THOSE THAT KEEP HIS SAYINGS AND DO THE WILL OF THE FATHER. Do not all REGENERATED BELIEVERS

OBTAIN A CROWN OF ROYALTY? Do they not cast those crowns at the feet of Jesus? IT WAS THE QUEEN THAT OBTAINED GRACE, FAVOR AND A CROWN.

Surely we can see a remarkable parallel here that is worth looking into in depth. The point being that wherever we look, we FIND GRACE ALWAYS INTERTWINED WITH SALVATION, WITH SEEING THE LORD, WITH BEING IN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD, AND GRACE IS ALWAYS GIVEN IN THE SIGHT OF THE LORD. We remind you once again that the vast majority of so called “Christians” did not AVAIL THEMSELVES OF THE GRACE OF GOD. They encountered HIS WRATH INSTEAD. We will find the same sequence in the New Testament. GRACE ONLY APPLIES TO THOSE WHO ARE OBEDIENT. It is as NARROW as the WAY IS NARROW. If you fall off the WAY, you are OUTSIDE OF GOD’S GRACE.

In the New Testament, the word for “grace” is ‘charis’ which means **GRACIOUSNESS, FAVOR, GIFT, LIBERALITY**. An example of grace is when Christ asked us to give a dinner for those who could never repay you in any way. It demonstrates AGAPE LOVE, and it demonstrates TRUE GRACE.

*“Then said he also to him that bade him,  
WHEN THOU MAKEST A DINNER OR A SUPPER,  
CALL NOT THY FRIENDS,  
NOR THY BRETHREN, NEITHER THY KINSMEN,  
NOR THY RICH NEIGHBOURS;  
LEST THEY ALSO BID THEE AGAIN, AND A RECOMPENCE BE MADE THEE,  
  
BUT WHEN THOU MAKEST A FEAST,  
CALL THE POOR, THE MAIMED, THE LAME, THE BLIND:  
  
AND THOU SHALT BE BLESSED;  
**FOR THEY CANNOT RECOMPENCE THEE:**  
**FOR THOU SHALT BE RECOMPENCED AT THE RESURRECTION OF THE JUST.”**  
(Luke 14:12-14)*

There is no better *illustration of grace* than this command of the Lord Jesus. It demonstrates for us the **WORKING AND MEANING OF GRACE**. Grace is UNMERITED FAVOR. It is granted out of the AGAPE LOVE of the HEART. It is bestowed upon those **WHO CANNOT REPAY, WHO ARE BLIND, POOR, MAIMED AND LAME**. How strange we find these words often applied to the real believer in desperate search of the Lord and His righteousness. How strange that we be called BLIND AND POOR. What a beautiful parable to illustrate the meaning of GRACE AND AGAPE LOVE.

Behind the grace of God is AGAPE LOVE. It is the agape love essence that bestows the favor upon those unworthy. **The problem with modern man is that he is so arrogant he thinks he is worthy of salvation.** He claims his worth is so much that Christ came and died just for him. That is in reality the perversion of grace. It places the value on the object of grace rather on the GRACE GIVER, the act of grace, or grace itself. GRACE IS ALWAYS UNMERITED FAVOR. MANKIND HAS NO MERIT. HIS PRIDE AND ARROGANCE ONLY BETRAY HIM INTO ETERNAL RUIN. Man attempts to claim a value, and modern Christian theology attempts to

place a high value upon man. God does not. Most of what He does, He does to protect HIS NAME, HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS. It for the sake of mercy, of agape love, for THE GOOD NAME OF THE LORD, that HE ACTS. Do a word study on the word SAKE, and you will find it is true. A few examples of this would be 1 Samuel 23:10; Psalm 23:3; 25:11; 31:3; 79:9; 106:8; Isaiah 43:2; 48:11 and Ezekiel 20:14.

In all of these God acts for **HIS NAME'S SAKE ALONE**. It has nothing to do with the value of man. It is only when the **SOVEREIGNTY AND THE MAJESTY OF THE LORD IS UNDERSTOOD CAN GRACE HAVE THE IMPACT IT IS SUPPOSED TO HAVE**. We have no value before the Lord. NONE, ZERO. Man attempts to bring God down to his level, to deal with Him as an equal, or if higher, only by a small degree. This blindness as to the true nature and position of the Lord negates all fear of the Lord. When fear of the Lord departs, all sorts of perversions enter in to the Gospel of salvation. Modern theology has been written in an era of **NO FEAR OF GOD, IT IS PRESUMPTUOUS, ARROGANT, IGNORANT, DANGEROUS AND THE HEIGHT OF STUPIDITY**. It comes from a blindness of one's true POSITION BEFORE GOD. It ends up in eternal ruin.

The entire planet of earth lives because of the grace of God. Every breath you take is because of the grace of God. If God turned His face away, the universe would instantly dissolve. It is sustained and nourished only by the agape love of God, and from that essence flows GRACE. If man has no value, then who does? **CHRIST ALONE, GOD ALONE, THE HOLY SPIRIT ALONE**. The act of bringing Christ into the world to redeem man was the supreme act of GRACE. It was done simply and only because God AGAPE LOVED US. Grace and agape love cannot be separated; they are essentially different faces of the same essence. Agape love calls for action, for deeds, for works that DEMONSTRATE IT. **GRACE THEN BECOMES GRACIOUS**. Christ coming here and dying is a demonstration of an unfathomable LOVE AND GRACE. IT WAS THE SUPREME ACT OF GRACIOUSNESS. Christ was GOD. CHRIST LEFT HIS POSITION ON THE THRONE FOR US, NOT FOR OUR VALUE, BUT TO DEMONSTRATE THE VALUE OF HIS LOVE.

It is then easy for us to say, SEE THE VALUE WE HAVE IN THE EYES OF THE LORD. WE MUST BE OF EXTREME VALUE FOR CHRIST TO HAVE DONE THAT. That is the rationale of man; **it is not the rationale of God**. It is not man that has the value; it is the **AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, AND THE GRACE OF GOD THAT HAS THE VALUE**. It acted where **THERE WAS NO VALUE, NO ABILITY TO REPAY, NO ABILITY TO DO ANYTHING IN RETURN**. Only when you begin to grasp this essential fact of grace and agape love can you begin to discern what transpired at the cross of Christ. The so called "Grace Explosion" is in accordance to the final apostasy away from the real truth. IT PROVES THAT THE MODERN CHRISTIAN TEACHERS AND PREACHERS DO NOT AT ALL UNDERSTAND GOD, HIS GRACE OR AGAPE LOVE. They have lost all fear of the Lord, even though they proclaim Him with their lips.

It is utter arrogance to "play" with the Word of God as the false prophets play with it. They parade around and pose as the ONLY EXPERTS ON THE WORD, AND HOW THE WORD IS TO BE INTERPRETED. Their claim to fame is that they have "degrees" and that they attended divinity schools. THAT MAKES THEM THE EXPERTS. They have studied Greek and they have studied Hebrew. They KNOW and no one else does. The atmosphere within the Protestant denominations is no different than that held by the Roman Catholic hierarchy. It is an ARROGANCE THAT CHRIST HATED AND CONDEMNED. There is ONLY ONE SCHOOL FOR THE TRUE BELIEVER IN CHRIST. It is not seminary. It is not in high Church office. **It is called the NARROW WAY**. It is **called DYING ON THE CROSS WITH CHRIST**. It is called



the school of death and finding that out of that death, COMES LIFE. We are commanded by Christ to walk the gauntlet of the narrow way.

The arrogance of denominational Christianity displays itself because of a REFUSAL TO WALK THE NARROW WAY. THEY ARROGANTLY PUFF UP AND SAY GOD DOES NOT MEAN WHAT HE SAYS. CHRIST DOES NOT MEAN WHAT HE SAYS. THEY THEN DEVELOP A NEW THEOLOGY TO NEGATE WHAT HE SAID, CLAIMING CHRIST MEANT TO SAY THIS OR THAT. No, they will not do it, but they WILL CLAIM THEIR RIGHTS AS THE CHILDREN OF GOD, AND DEMAND TO BE TREATED AS THE CHILDREN OF GOD.

I have personally spoken to pastors who have told me that they came to Christ in 10 minutes, and that they never did EVER walk the NARROW WAY AS DESCRIBED. Rather than **FACE THE REALITY OF WHAT THAT MEANS, THEY REFUSE IT, AND GO ON THEIR WAY PROCLAIMING THEMSELVES THAT WHICH THEY ARE NOT.** Their behavior gives them away. Their utter lack of understanding of what AGAPE LOVE IS BETRAYS THEM.

It is the PERVERSION OF GRACE that lays the groundwork for what Jude speaks of. It is the concept that GRACE GRANTS FREEDOM OR LICENSE. Grace does no such thing. Grace FLOWS FROM AGAPE LOVE, and is limited as we have amply proven, TO THE NARROW WAY. Grace only provided the strait gate and the narrow way, as evidenced by the “many” who had a very maligned definition of what true Biblical grace is. They thought that grace was grace, and it was ABSOLUTE. In other words, grace allowed them a freedom.

*“For by **GRACE** ARE YE SAVED*

***THROUGH FAITH;***

*AND THAT NOT OF YOURSELVES:*

*IT IS THE GIFT OF GOD:*

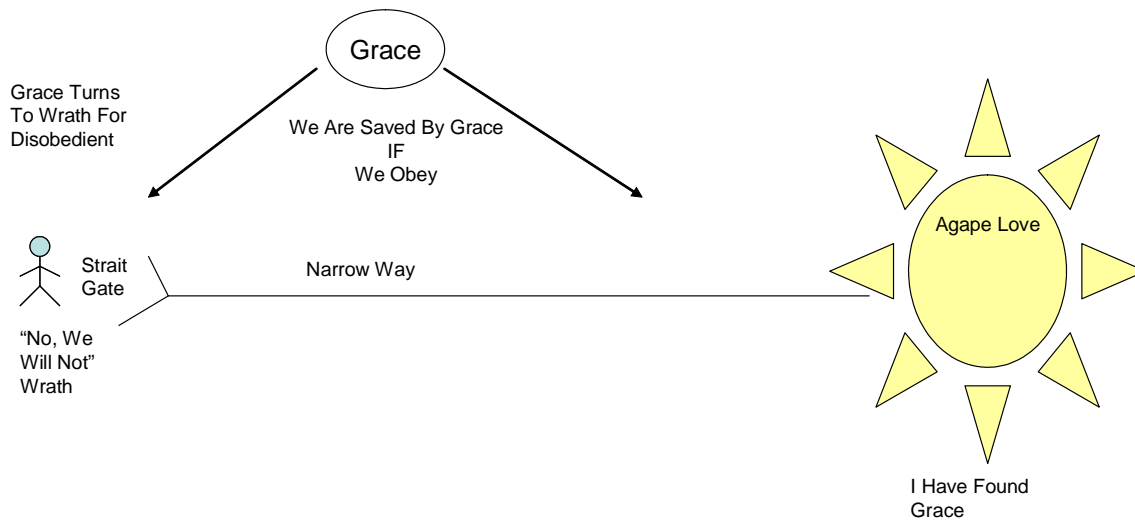
***NOT OF WORKS, LEST ANY MAN SHOULD BOAST.”***

*(Ephesians 2:8-9)*

This verse is ripped out of its context by the false prophets who yell and scream that we are saved by grace, and therefore GRACE IS ABSOLUTE. That is not what this verse is saying at all. This verse has to be coupled with all of the others to form the DOCTRINE OF GRACE. We are saved by grace. It was the grace of God that sent Christ into the world. It was the grace of God that brought with Christ the PLAN OF SALVATION, THAT IS, THE STRAIT GATE AND THE NARROW WAY. All of it was done under GRACE. If there were no Christ, and there were no strait gate or narrow way NO ONE WOULD EVER BE SAVED. Therefore it is a correct statement to say we are SAVED BY GRACE, IF WE ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND IF WE WALK THE NARROW WAY. GRACE IS CONDITIONAL. IT IS NOT BLANKET, NOR ABSOLUTE. GRACE IS CONDITIONAL UPON OBEDIENCE.

It is THE GRACE OF GOD THAT IS THE UNDERPINNING OF THE ENTIRE PLAN OF SALVATION. It is via the grace of God that WE HAVE A PLAN TO BEGIN WITH. We are

saved by GRACE. I ask you, HOW DOES THAT NEGATE THE REQUIREMENTS OF OBEDIENCE TO THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY? IT IS THE GRACE OF GOD THAT COMMANDS WE ENTER IT. IT IS THE GRACE OF CHRIST THAT REQUIRES EXPLICIT OBEDIENCE. The ‘many’ refused to comply, and they found GRACE TURNED TO WRATH. Thus:



As you see from the graphic, GRACE covers the entire program. Thus it is a true statement that we are **SAVED** by grace. We are also **JUSTIFIED** by grace. It is grace that brought the plan, it is faith that walks the plan, and if we walk it we will become JUSTIFIED. Therefore it is a true statement that we are justified by GRACE. But is grace itself SALVATION? Is grace ITSELF justification? NO. Is faith itself SALVATION? Is faith itself UNION WITH CHRIST? NO!

Now we move to the next part of the remark Paul makes. We are saved THROUGH FAITH. The word “through” is ‘dia’ and it means **CHANNEL, OR PASSAGE**. Faith is a DYNAMIC, the ACTIVE FORCE, THE AGENT that enables the believer to walk the narrow way. There are, as you recall, TWO TYPES OF FAITH, FAITH IN CHRIST, AND THE FAITH OF CHRIST. We place our faith IN CHRIST as the Messiah, Redeemer, Lord of Lords. We place our faith IN CHRIST for His work on the cross. That is faith IN the HISTORICAL, VISIBLE CHRIST. It is the same type of faith that the Jews placed in their OUTER COURT RELIGIOUS RITUALS.

This type of faith has an OBJECT. We simply BELIEVE OR PLACE OUR TRUST IN THAT OBJECT. That is what modern Christianity does. It places all of its faith IN CHRIST. This theology then turns around and claims that THIS FAITH IN CHRIST IS THE FAITH REQUIRED FOR REGENERATION. It claims that THIS TYPE OF FAITH IS THE FAITH THAT SAVES. It goes further and claims that the moment a person BELIEVES OR TRUSTS CHRIST THAT REGENERATION OCCURS. That is the lie of the false prophets. FAITH IN CHRIST IS THE FAITH OF CONVERSION. One would not CONVERT TO CHRIST UNLESS ONE HAD FAITH IN HIM. This type of faith is a DECISION TYPE OF FAITH. We simply decide to place our trust in THE OBJECT OF OUR FAITH.

This type of faith is like a faith in YOUR CAR. You trust your car. It has always run well. You know it is TRUSTWORTHY. THE CAR IS THE OBJECT. You place your trust in a friend, who has always come through for you. THE OBJECT OF YOUR FAITH IS YOUR FRIEND. You place your trust in many things in this life. THIS IS ONLY ONE ASPECT OF FAITH. THERE

IS ANOTHER ASPECT, FAR MORE IMPORTANT. We have proved via a multitude of Scripture that OBEDIENCE TO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST, TO ‘KEEPING HIS SAYINGS’ AND DOING THE WILL OF THE FATHER IS WHAT DIVIDES THE REAL BELIEVER FROM THE FALSE BELIEVER.

The FAITH OF CHRIST was an OBEDIENT FAITH, a faith that was obedient, even unto DEATH UPON THE CROSS. THIS TYPE OF FAITH DOES NOT HAVE AN OBJECT.

## **BUT AN OBJECTIVE, A GOAL.**

IT HAS A MEANING, A DESTINATION, A PURPOSE, A DOING, AND AN END RESULT, OR THE OBJECTIVE IS IN MIND. The objective for you and I is to obtain UNION WITH THE LIVING CHRIST, which is wholly different than faith IN Christ. Christ had a VISION. His mission to earth was to SAVE AS MANY AS WOULD COME. His passion was TO ACCOMPLISH THE MISSION. To go 80% or 90% would not do. To go 97% or even 99.99% would not do. The mission was to be fulfilled 100%. THE VISION, THE OBJECTIVE WAS TO ACCOMPLISH REDEMPTION UNDER KINSMAN REDEEMER LAW. A people without a vision PERISH. The Christian is supposed to have a VISION, AN OBJECTIVE; IT IS TO FIND “THE TRUTH” THAT SETS YOU FREE. It is real and literal UNION with the living Christ.

The first type of faith, FAITH IN, is a STATIC FAITH. The second type of faith, which is OBEDIENCE, is ACTIVE, A DOING FAITH, A FAITH WITH A WORK, and WITH AN OBJECTIVE ALWAYS HELD IN MIND. THERE IS GOING TO BE A FINISH TO THE WORK. The first type of faith is what causes us to undergo a CONVERSION TO CHRIST. That is why CONVERSION is not ever regeneration. The vast majority of Christians rejected by Christ were all CONVERTED. THEY HAD PLACED THEIR FAITH AND THEIR BELIEF IN CHRIST. There is no question about that. Christ did not ever contradict them, or deny them on that basis. It was not the point. FAITH IN CHRIST BY ITSELF DOES NOT SAVE ANYONE. IT IS ONLY THE FIRST STEP IN A PROCESS.

God will acknowledge ANYONE who places their faith IN Christ. The Holy Spirit will BAPTIZE THAT BELIEVER INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST. That believer now enters the SHEEPFOLD. All come in VIA CONVERSION. As you recall, conversion is what Christ called “SOME OTHER WAY”. We are now in the Body of Christ. That is wonderful, but now we face a much more serious issue: ARE WE GOING TO BE OBEDIENT TO CHRIST AND DO AS HE COMMANDED OR NOT? In other words, we BELIEVE IN CHRIST, WE HAVE FAITH IN CHRIST, but is our FAITH STRONG ENOUGH TO BECOME OBEDIENT, and to carry out the objective God and Christ have in mind, which is AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT OR REGENERATION? Are we going to STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE OR NOT? Are we going to WALK THE NARROW WAY OR NOT? Are we going to turn our FAITH IN CHRIST into an OBEDIENCE, to reach the OBJECTIVE, THE GOAL, WHICH IS ‘LIFE’?

Now that we have discovered that Christ is indeed the Messiah, are we going to become OBEDIENT to His commands? The vast majority of Christians perish because they were not OBEDIENT. They had the first aspect of faith down cold. They believed, they had faith, BUT NOT ENOUGH TO BECOME OBEDIENT. An example of this would be this: A strange man comes to your door and knocks. You open the door, “Hello”, he says, “There is a fire in your house, you have five minutes to get out or you will die in the explosion”. You have seen no such fire, nor have you smelled any smoke. You protest. He grows impatient, “Verily, verily, I say unto you, you now have four minutes to leave your house or perish”. You protest that you see

nothing, hear nothing, and smell nothing. He pulls out his badge, and he is the fire Marshall. Because you TRUST AN EXPERT, you now have a choice. YOU CAN BECOME OBEDIENT AND TAKE YOUR FAITH IN THE FIRE MARSHALL, AND CONVERT IT INTO THE FAITH OF THE FIRE MARSHALL. The fire Marshall has an OBJECTIVE. He has a GOAL. His goal is to save your LIFE. His goal is to wake you up TO YOUR DANGER.

But can the fire Marshall get into your head and force you to come out? No. He could try to get you out by physical force, but you might resist. You might bop him over the head and then he would perish too. The job of the fire Marshall is to CONVINCED YOU HE IS TELLING YOU THE TRUTH. He does not have a lot of time to accomplish it. Your faith IN the fire Marshall will not save you. You must be CONVINCED to the same point the fire Marshall is convinced, that your house IS INDEED BURNING, AND YOU INDEED ARE GOING TO DIE. When that happens, **YOU HAVE THE FAITH OF THE FIRE MARSHALL, AND THE FAITH OF THE MARSHALL INSTILLS IN YOU THE SAME GOAL HE HAS. IT PROPELS YOU TO ACT, TO LEAVE YOUR HOUSE.** His objective NOW BECOMES YOUR OBJECTIVE.

In other words, you APPROPRIATE FOR YOURSELF, THE SAME CONVICTION THE FIRE MARSHALL HAS, AND YOU LEAVE YOUR HOUSE. Sure enough, two minutes later your house explodes into a million pieces. The faith OF Christ is to appropriate the SAME CONVICTION CHRIST HAS OF YOUR DANGER OF BURNING IN THE ETERNAL FIRES OF HELL. IT WAS THIS TRUTH, THIS ABSOLUTE KNOWLEDGE OF HELLFIRE BEING REAL, AND ETERNAL, THAT BROUGHT HIM HERE. IT WAS WHAT CAUSED HIM TO DO THE WORK, A WORK OF PURE LOVE. Only when your FAITH IN CHRIST IS TUNED INTO THE FAITH OF CHRIST will you pick up your cross and do as He commanded, NOT BECAUSE YOU UNDERSTAND IT, BUT BECAUSE HE TOLD YOU TO DO IT, AND YOU REALLY BELIEVE HIM. People claim they believe all types of things, but in reality they do not. WHAT A PERSON REALLY BELIEVES WILL GOVERN HIS ACTIONS.

True faith is not FAITH IN, BUT IS INSTEAD A COMBINATION OF FAITH IN AND FAITH OF. Modern Christian theology places all the emphasis on the FAITH IN CHRIST, and denies utterly the requirement of having the FAITH OF CHRIST. Now we get back to our verse study. It says that WE ARE SAVED BY GRACE “THROUGH” FAITH. The channel, the passage, the **MODUS OPERANDI, THE DYNAMIC, THE FORCE** that will PROPEL YOU TO BECOME OBEDIENT IS THE FAITH **OF** CHRIST. You first of all DISCOVER CHRIST THE MESSIAH. Secondly, YOU DEVELOP ENOUGH CONVICTION OR FAITH THAT HE WAS CORRECT THAT YOU ACTUALLY DO WHAT HE COMMANDS. True Biblical faith is BOTH TYPES OF FAITH COMBINED. They forge together, they unite, they work as one to enable you to OVERCOME. You will not move until and unless YOU STIR YOURSELF UP TO ACTUALLY DO AS COMMANDED.

This is the faith that saves. No other type of faith will save you. We will examine this more in the next report, which deals in FAITH. So we are saved BY THE GRACE OF GOD, WHO BROUGHT JESUS CHRIST INTO THE WORLD. Jesus brought with Him SPECIFIC COMMANDS. His very specific command was that WE STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY. His specific command was that we are to BEG, CRAVE, STRIVE, LABOR, GIVE DILIGENCE, SEEK AND SEARCH UNTIL WE FIND THE TRUTH. Now then, we can either START DOING THAT, WHICH IS THE FAITH OF CHRIST IN ACTION, or we can sit back and say, “Jesus did not mean that”, and we will PERISH FOREVER. The choice is yours. You have a free will and Christ expects you to use it. Your choice determines your eternal destination.

Both grace and faith are a gift from God. Every person born into the human race has FAITH. The question is, WILL THEY EXERCISE IT ENOUGH TO BECOME OBEDIENT UNTO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST? The vast majority of Christians only exercise enough faith to place a **TRUST IN CHRIST**, but never enough to BECOME OBEDIENT. Because they are not obedient they never actually even come close to entering the New Covenant. They die in their trespasses and sins. The entry way stood before them, but they refused it. The false prophets told them that FAITH IN CHRIST ALONE WAS ALL THEY NEEDED.

The next thing that Paul says is that GRACE AND FAITH OPPOSE WORKS. When you read works in the Scripture, it is ANY TYPE OF WORK THAT ATTEMPTS TO “JUSTIFY” ONE’S POSITION BEFORE GOD. Paul refers to them as WORKS OF THE LAW, OR WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. For example, in Ephesians Chapter Two, immediately after saying we are saved by grace and faith, and NOT OF WORKS, he mentions circumcision (v. 11), ordinances (v. 15) and clearly is referring to LAW KEEPING. The same is true in Romans 9:32; 11:6; Galatians 2:16; 3:2,5,10; Ephesians 2:9, 5:11; 2 Timothy 1:9; Titus 3:5; Hebrews 4:10, 6:1 and 9:14. There are many other references to these types of works. You have to understand the context in which all of this takes place. The early Church was born out of the Jewish faith. It was a “works” oriented religion. It was based upon law keeping.

All the religions in the world are religions of legalism or some form of law keeping, or doing good works, thinking right thoughts, etc. By doing these things, we become GOOD PEOPLE. By doing these things, we prove how righteous we are. We know by nature that good is preferred over evil. We know that right is better than wrong. Thus the human race assumes that if we stay on the GOOD AND LOVE AND RIGHT SIDE OF THE RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE, WE WILL BE APPROVED OF GOD AND HE WILL LET US ENTER HEAVEN. All of these attempts are based upon WORKS. This is what works are. Paul is referring to these attempts to please God or to find acceptance as works. In his day it was law keeping, Jewish rules, regulations, ordinances. They are of no effect. They are in fact, worthless.

The false prophets within Christianity then attempt to make **ANY FORM OF WORKS OF WHATEVER KIND, INCLUDING MENTAL SEARCHING A WORK**. They oppose the concept of strive, labor, seeking, searching by advancing a false concept of GRACE AND FAITH. The false prophets attempt to brand the NARROW WAY AS A FORM OF WORKS. It is not. It is the exact opposite of works. The narrow way is in no way an attempt to JUSTIFY OURSELVES BEFORE GOD, IT IS THE METHOD GOD USES TO EXPOSE OUR INNER NATURE, OUR INNER ANTICHRIST SPIRIT TO US. It is the way of UNMASKING THE EVIL WITHIN. It is in short, **THE ONLY WAY WE HAVE TO AGREE WITH GOD**.

The narrow way SHOWS US, REVEALS TO US WHO WE REALLY ARE DEEP WITHIN. By this method God can then gain THE AGREEMENT OF THE INNER HEART THAT IT IS LOST, DESTITUTE, DEAD IN SINS. Only by agreement, CAN TWO WALK TOGETHER. You see, the problem is the INNER HEART, THE CORE BEING OF YOU AND I. Christ cannot gain entrance to the THRONE ROOM OF THE GREAT “I AM”, until and unless **THERE IS AN AGREEMENT BY THE INNER HEART**. In Revelation 3:20, Christ stands at the door and knocks. But it is YOU that must open the door. Christ will not smash down the door. HE MUST GAIN ADMISSION BY YOUR FREE WILL. YOU MUST COME INTO AGREEMENT WITH GOD THERE IS A REAL PROBLEM, A REAL LOSS, A REAL DESTITUTION DEEP WITHIN.

Works, on the other hand, always attempt to JUSTIFY that soul’s value before God. It attempts to place a VALUE ON THE WORKS PERFORMED. Thus it places GOD IN DEBT. GOD WILL

SAVE ME BECAUSE HE OWES ME IS THE COMMON REASONING OF MAN. If this were true, then we would not NEED GRACE. Grace is REQUIRED because man HAS NO VALUE, AND THEREFORE HIS WORKS HAVE NO VALUE. THEY ARE WORTHLESS, OF NO VALUE WHATSOEVER. Because man is of no value and his works are of no value, then **GRACE IS REQUIRED TO SAVE MAN.** GRACE COMES FROM GOD. Man has essentially reversed it, and now offers GRACE TO GOD. He who sits in the heavens shall laugh, and vex them in His sore displeasure.

Mankind refuses the grace and the offense of the cross because **IT IS OF PURE GRACE.** That offends mankind, because PURE GRACE PROVES THE WORTHLESSNESS OF MAN. IT NEGATES ALL ATTEMPTS BY MAN TO JUSTIFY HIMSELF BEFORE GOD. **GRACE UTTERLY DESTROYS ALL WORLD RELIGIONS.** Because man will not face the REPROOF OF WHAT PURE GRACE MEANS, they deny BOTH CHRIST AND GOD. That is why all religions, including modern Christianity are WORK RELIGIONS. As long as man can cling to any form of JUSTIFICATION WHATEVER, he can retain PRIDE. He can hold his head up. Grace denies ALL WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. They are forever and totally EXCLUDED. Either we have GRACE AND NO MORE WORKS, OR WE HAVE WORKS AND NO MORE GRACE.

*“Even so then at this present time also **THERE IS A REMNANT ACCORDING TO THE ELECTION OF GRACE.**”*

*And **IF BY GRACE, THEN IS IT NO MORE OF WORKS:**  
**OTHERWISE GRACE IS NO MORE GRACE.***

***BUT IF IT BE OF WORKS, THEN IS IT NO MORE GRACE:**  
**OTHERWISE WORK IS NO MORE WORK.”***

**(Romans 11:5-6)**

There is a REMNANT (THE FEW) that is saved by the ELECTION OF GRACE. By sending Christ into the world, THE VERY ACT ITSELF, PREDESTINATES SOME TO ETERNAL RUIN AND SOME TO ETERNAL LIFE. **It is the act itself** that predestinates, not God choosing on an individual basis each fate. By sending Christ into the world, **HE FORCES ALL MEN EVERYWHERE TO MAKE A CHOICE: YEA OR NAY.** It is this CHOICE BEFORE THEM **THAT PREDESTINATES THEM.** God foreknows ALL who will CHOOSE YEA, AND OBEY, as well as all those who will REFUSE IT. It is the free will of man that PREDESTINATES THEM TO HELL OR HEAVEN. The doctrine of FIVE POINT CALVINISM is foolishness. Man may hate God, but man can **STILL EXERCISE HIS WILL AND BECOME OBEDIENT.** He can MAKE A CHOICE TO OBEY REGARDLESS OF HIS FEELINGS. It might surprise you to know that God counts OBEDIENCE TO HIS COMMANDS as TRUE FAITH.

God does not say that HE WILL STIR UP man to lay hold of Him. Hundreds of verses of Scripture prove it is **UP TO YOU TO STIR YOURSELF UP.** Once accomplished, REVIVAL BEGINS, and then God uses YOUR WILL, AND HIS POWER TO DRAG YOU TO CHRIST. That is why all of the warnings NOT TO TURN BACK, BUT TO GO ON, TO CONTINUE. It is UP TO YOU TO CONTINUE. There is a concept within the faith that says that GOD ALONE does it all, and that all we need to do is “wait” for God to tell us what to do. We must look at that

one closely. If that was indeed the truth, then we can prove that **GOD DID NOT MOVE THE VAST MAJORITY OF HIS OWN PEOPLE TO SALVATION.** If God does it all, and God puts all of this hunger and thirst within the human soul, and **HE MOVES THEM THROUGH BY HIMSELF,** and they have essentially NO PART OR NO DECISION IN IT, then God **DAMNED MILLIONS OF PEOPLE.** He did so deliberately, because **HE DID NOT PUT IN THEIR HEART TO RESPOND.**

If God does all of it, the many were damned before they were born, **NOT BY ANY CHOICE OF THEIR OWN, BUT BY GOD HIMSELF,** and God supernaturally blinded them to the truth. That really casts a grave shadow over the integrity of God, His own Word. What kind of a God would do that? God gave you HIS WORD. He said it was NOT HIS WILL **THAT ANY** PERISH. If it is not His will that any perish, THEN HE WOULD HAVE TO SUPERNATURALLY PLANT WITHIN THE HUMAN HEART SUCH A DESIRE THAT THEY **COULD NOT RESIST THE SPIRIT.** But He does not do that. He told you to **STIR YOURSELF UP.** He told you that IF YOU WOULD STIR YOURSELF UP, AND KEEP YOURSELF STIRRED UP, THAT HE WOULD DO HIS PART. The narrow way is briefly comprehended as this:

YOU STIR YOURSELF UP TO the point of striving, seeking, knocking, laboring and searching for God with ALL OF YOUR HEART, SOUL, MIND AND STRENGTH. That is the command of Christ. You cannot take these verses and say that God does it all. YOU ARE TO DO IT, THAT IS THE COMMAND. Now either you will be OBEDIENT AND DO IT, or you will be disobedient and ‘wait on God’ to tell you to do it. Why would God tell you to do something via a supernatural method when you have **REJECTED HIS PLAIN PRINTED COMMAND THAT ANYONE CAN READ?** You are already in rebellion. The command was there. The Bible was there. You elected NOT TO READ IT, NOT TO HEED IT. That was your free will choice. If you stand before Christ rejected, it is not His fault, nor God’s fault, IT IS YOUR FAULT.

This must be true because the New Covenant is open **TO ANY HUMAN SOUL WHO WILL CHOOSE TO RESPOND TO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST.** That is a FREE WILL CHOICE THAT YOU CAN MAKE. God does not care one wit if you hate Him, if you despise Him, or if you cannot stand the thought. YOU CAN STILL CHOOSE TO OBEY. You can still MAKE A CHOICE EVEN AGAINST YOUR OWN FEELINGS. Many people CHOOSE TO PAY THEIR TAXES. They hate the IRS with a bitter passion. Many of them would kill an IRS agent if there was no law stopping them from doing it. IT IS THEIR CHOICE TO OBEY THE LAW OF THE LAND. The IRS could care less if you think they are a bunch of criminals, commie rats, or whatever other insult you wish to hurl their way. **THEY ONLY CARE ABOUT ONE THING: THAT YOU CHOOSE TO COMPLY WITH THE LAW.**

It does not matter if you think the law is UNJUST. It does not matter if you think the law does not have any legal STANDING. It does not matter what you think, feel or scream about the INCOME TAX. Likewise God does not care if you think the STRAIT GATE is unfair. He does not care if you think the NARROW WAY is something you would not enjoy. He does not seek your agreement to any of it. HE SEEKS ONLY YOUR COMPLIANCE TO THE DEMANDS. You can choose compliance. You can hate every step of the way, and STILL COMPLY. It is **OBEDIENCE THAT BRINGS SALVATION.** It is not based upon feelings or emotions. It is not based on works. It is based upon one thing: COMPLIANCE. It is open to all man. Man can respond or not. If he does not, IS IT GOD’S FAULT?

Does this negate the ABILITY OF GOD TO CALL ON A SUPERNATURAL BASIS? No, not at all. It is open to EVERYONE WHO WILL STIR THEMSELVES UP, but God does have the right to SUPERNATURALLY CALL ANYONE HE CHOOSES.

Paul is a good example of a SUPERNATURAL CALL TO CHRIST. Paul had some talents that God needed. It is like the military. The officer says “I need some volunteers, YOU, YOU, AND YOU.” You cannot NEGATE the ability of God to call anyone, for He must certainly can and does, FOR HIS OWN SAKE, FOR HIS OWN NAME, FOR HIS OWN PLAN. That does not NEGATE THE OFFER TO ALL OTHERS. The offer is there, in front of you. TO WAIT FOR THE CALL OF GOD VIA A SUPERNATURAL METHOD IS TO INVITE CERTAIN DESTRUCTION. The many are a good example of that.

THE CALL OF GOD IS NOT A “WORK”. OBEDIENCE IS NOT A “WORK”. The STRAIT GATE IS NOT A “WORK”. THE NARROW WAY IS NOT A “WORK”. Grace does not nullify OBEDIENCE that Christ or God commands. The very concept of GRACE DEMANDS IT. It is the only way you can avail yourself OF THE GRACE OF GOD. It is not a work of any kind to walk the narrow way.

Paul is here contrasting WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS OR LAW KEEPING with the principle of grace. Again we find MERIT VS. NO MERIT. All works of the law, all forms of law keeping or good works, all form of righteousness are automatically EXCLUDED by GRACE. They are diametric opposites, utterly opposed. We either remain under the law and take our chances before God based upon our works, or we GO UNDER GRACE AND THE FAITH OF CHRIST TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO LIFE. You cannot have it both ways. **GRACE BESTOWS THE PLAN, AND TRUE FAITH ALLOWS US TO WALK THE PLAN BESTOWED.** It is that simple.

The false prophets EXTEND GRACE TO INCLUDE ALL WORKS OF WHATEVER KIND, **INCLUDING MENTAL WORKS, SUCH AS SEARCHING FOR TRUTH.** In other words grace, in their definition, **FORBIDS ANY EFFORT, PHYSICAL OR MENTAL ON THE PART OF MAN.** That is a lie right out of hell itself. If we examine the term “works” and how Paul uses it, IN EACH AND EVERY CASE HE IS REFERRING TO LAW KEEPING, TO WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. It is true in all contexts that the words are used. The false prophets lift out the word “WORKS” AND TWIST THE MEANING TO MEAN THAT THERE IS NO HUMAN EFFORT WHATEVER, THAT GOD DOES IT ALL. In other words, HUMANS CAN DO NOTHING WHATEVER. NOTHING. NO WORKS, MENTAL OR OTHERWISE THAT SAVES HIM. That is an outrageous perversion of Scripture. It is to stand in UTTER CONTRADICTION AND DENIAL OF CHRIST.

The labor, striving, seeking, asking, knocking, searching with the objective of being an OVERCOMING VICTOR are a **LABOR OF FINDING TRUTH,** OF UNCOVERING THE DECEPTIONS OF SATAN, OF UNMASKING THE EVIL WITHIN THE HIDDEN INNER HEART. It is to UNMASK AND TO REVEAL THE ANTICHRIST SITTING IN THE TEMPLE OF GOD, SHOWING HIMSELF THAT HE IS GOD. Jesus Christ terms that LABOR, STRIVING, SEEKING. All the writers of the New Testament AGREE. The term OVERCOMER is consistent that there is a **FIERCE BATTLE, A STRIVING, A LABOR, A FIGHT.** If we include that as a “work” by extending the word ‘works’ to include that which it does not include at all, THEN WE HAVE DENIED CHRIST, WE HAVE DENIED THE NARROW WAY, AND WE HAVE FORFEITED HEAVEN. We will see the wrath of God and the fires of eternal ruin.

There is no way that the term works INCLUDES what Christ refers to as STRIVE, LABOR, SEEK, KNOCK, ASK, GIVE DILIGENCE. Works in all cases, ALWAYS AND FOREVER, IS LIMITED TO THOSE EFFORTS IN WHICH WE ATTEMPT TO JUSTIFY OUR POSITION BEFORE GOD. **You cannot justify yourself before God.** It is not possible, proven by the



GRACE OF GOD, which brought Christ into the world. You see, if we could justify ourselves before God, Christ need not have died. His death would have been in vain. No matter how much you pray, no matter how much you tithe, no matter how good your works, **THEY ARE VANITY, OF NO VALUE.** Entrance to heaven is not based upon that system. It is based upon a whole new concept: **A GRACE THAT BESTOWS A PLAN, AND A FAITH THAT ALLOWS US TO WALK THE PLAN.** Refuse either one and you perish.

Grace works only under the concept of FAITH. The doing of FAITH IS FIRST A SEEKING, KNOCKING, STRIVING UNTIL THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE IS DISCOVERED. This is the MYSTERY OF CHRIST. Once the mystery of Christ is unlocked, and the soul becomes in truth regenerated, a NEW OBJECTIVE comes into being: **TO BE PURGED AND TO BE MADE A PURE SON OF GOD.**

Modern Christian denominations are in fact under rank legalism, although they are unaware of that fact. They would claim adamantly they are under FAITH AND GRACE. By putting all of their FAITH AND BELIEF IN CHRIST, and by DENYING THE FAITH OF CHRIST, they are LEGALISTS, for they **deny the narrow way**, which is the only way OUT OF LEGALISM. All of their works are done in PHILEO LOVE, NATURAL LOVE, because they refuse to enter as Christ commanded to OBTAIN AGAPE LOVE.

Remember Peter? Peter was a legalist. He was not guilty of Judaistic legalism, but of another form. The issue between man and God is this AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. If you do not lay hold of agape love, ALL OF YOUR WORKS MUST BE DONE IN PHILEO LOVE, WHICH IS A “WORK”. This is so because God only keeps TWO SETS OF BOOKS: The AGAPE LOVE BOOK OF LIFE, and the BOOKS OF WORKS FOR ALL OTHERS. All good deeds done by UNREGENERATE MAN are done under his own natural love. He has no choice, for that is WHO HE IS BY NATURE. He is trapped by his nature into the RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE. He cannot get out of it. All his works, no matter how good, no matter how sincere, FOREVER REMAIN UNDER THE **RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS SCALE**, WHICH IS A “WORKS” SCALE, FOR GOD HAS NO OTHER BOOKS FOR IT.

The command of God was to **AGAPE LOVE THY NEIGHBOR**. You cannot AGAPE LOVE until you have walked the narrow way to death. Out of your death comes AGAPE LOVE, OR LIFE. In other words, God, via the supernatural act of regeneration, TRANSFERS YOU OUT OF THE **WORKS SCALE OF RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS (NATURAL LOVE)** OVER TO HIS SCALE OF ABSOLUTE RIGHTEOUSNESS IN CHRIST JESUS. When agape love is bestowed, **WHICH IS THE ROBE OF CHRIST, YOU ARE PROTECTED BY THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF CHRIST**. Man never has any righteousness himself, either before or after regeneration. THAT IS WHAT GRACE IS FOR, THAT IS WHAT GRACE IS ABOUT. It is the **GRACE OF GOD THAT ALLOWS ONE TO BE TRANSFERRED FROM THE RELATIVE SCALE TO THE ABSOLUTE SCALE OF GOD’S RIGHTEOUSNESS IN CHRIST**. The unregenerate, when they die, have all of their DEEDS OR “WORKS” JUDGED AGAINST THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. They all fail, they all perish.

That was the point that Christ was making to Peter. It was not that Peter did not love Christ; it was that the love was not the RIGHT TYPE OF LOVE, IT WAS A RELATIVE RIGHTEOUSNESS TYPE OF LOVE. Had peter continued with his love theology equating phileo love released as the agape love of God, Peter would have died **UNREGENERATE, AND HIS DEEDS WOULD HAVE BEEN CLASSIFIED AS A FORM OF “WORKS”**. Thus the vast majority of Christians are **ABSOLUTE PHILEO LOVE LEGALISTS THE ENTIRE TIME**

**THEY SCREAM THEY ARE UNDER FAITH AND GRACE.** They did not realize what faith or grace meant, or how they worked.

They perverted them both. It cost them eternity. It becomes obvious that grace is not freedom or license. It is instead a gift from God, which allows us the RIGHT to enter the New Covenant via Jesus Christ. To expand grace to EXCLUDE THE NARROW WAY because it is a works is to **SPIT UPON THE GIFT OF GRACE.** If grace brought us the narrow way, which it did, then if we refuse it, **WE HAVE DENIED GOD'S GRACE.** If we deny it, then we reject it, and we will not be under it at the judgment. Grace has been offered via THE WAY. The grace of God was offered **IN VAIN TO THE VAST MAJORITY OF MAN, AND ALSO TO THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS.** They refused to comply WITH THE CONDITIONS OF GRACE.

*“We then, as WORKERS TOGETHER WITH HIM,*

**BESEECH YOU ALSO**

**THAT YE RECEIVE NOT THE GRACE**

**OF GOD IN VAIN.”**

**(2 Corinthians 6:1)**

The grace of God was given in vain to the many rejected. Paul says that he “beseeches” them to **NOT ALLOW THAT TO HAPPEN.** The word “beseech” is ‘parakaleo’ and it means **TO INVOKE, TO IMPLORE, EXHORT, TO ENTREAT.** It connotes GREAT URGENCY, GREAT NEED. Why all the fuss if grace is so absolute and forgiving of everything as modern theology claims? Do not these two concepts appear to be opposites? Either Paul is right, and the vast majority of Christians never avail themselves of the grace of God, or modern theology is right. The word “vain” here is ‘kenos’ which means **IN VAIN, OF NO EFFECT, EMPTY.** God granted mankind the VERY PRECIOUS PRIVILEGE OF ENTERING THE STRAIT GATE AND WALKING THE NARROW WAY. It was refused. The grace of God was for them, VAIN.

**“I DO NOT FRUSTRATE THE GRACE OF GOD:**

***for if RIGHTEOUSNESS COME BY THE LAW,  
THEN CHRIST IS DEAD IN VAIN.”***

**(Galatians 2:21)**

The word “frustrate” is ‘atheteo’ which means **TO SET ASIDE, NEUTRALIZE, VIOLATE, CAST OFF, BRING TO NAUGHT OR REJECT.** Paul is saying THE WORKS OF THE LAW, OR WORKS OF LAW KEEPING OR RIGHTEOUSNESS frustrate grace. They set grace aside. The narrow way is NOT LAW KEEPING, IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH GOOD WORKS. It has to do with SEARCHING WITH ALL OF YOUR MIND, HEART, SOUL AND STRENGTH, until YOU FIND OUT THE REAL TRUTH. The modern Christian is involved in

WORKS, and thinks that by doing all of this so called “Christian” activity, they ARE being obedient to Christ. They are in fact in rebellious, *because their works are done under the relative righteousness of phileo love.*

The narrow way is often described as such by the more fundamentalist denominations as the WAY OF HOLINESS. In other words, it is a way in which we are to act a certain way, dress a certain way, think a certain way, and do certain things. All of these are law keeping; simply disguised as the Holiness walk or it is included under the doctrine of separation. The narrow way does not concern itself with any of that. As a matter of actual fact, the narrow way is the very reverse of what is now described as the HOLINESS WALK. God is not interested in your so called righteousness, or your good deeds. He has one interest at this point: **LAY THE AX TO THE ROOT.** If He is to cut out the root, He will use a very sharp two edged sword to accomplish it. He will cut away all of the lies, all of the deceptions, all of the BARRIERS we have erected AGAINST HIM AND THE REAL TRUTH, AND HE WILL GUT US OUT, LAY US BARE.

The antichrist “I AM” that sits upon your throne in your Holy of Holies is going to BE REVEALED FOR WHO AND WHAT IT IS. The destitution of that spirit is going to be made very clear. The deadness of the spirit without agape love is going to be made MANIFEST. The narrow way is then a WAY OF DISCOVERY, A WAY OF FINDING OUT WHO WE REALLY ARE, DEEP WITHIN. It is ugly, it is nasty, it is negative. That is why the sword of God has two edges. One is negative, and it cuts, rips, tears, destroys. The other side is positive, and it heals. THE NEGATIVE ALWAYS COME BEFORE THE POSITIVE. If you have a bad heart, the heart surgeon MUST go in and cut away that which is dead, that which is useless. He will then heal after he has cut. Likewise for God to take your bad and rotten heart, cut it out of you, expose it to you, and then give you another one, a better one, BASES UPON A NEW PRINCIPLE.

I ask you, where is any holiness here? There is none. GRACE BESTOWS, FAITH WALKS THE WALK, AND UGLINESS IS REVEALED. Such is the death that brings life. Will you do it? Will you avail yourself of the REAL GRACE OF GOD? Do it and live, refuse it and die. The choice is yours.

*“Not by WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS WHICH WE HAVE DONE,*

***BUT ACCORDING TO HIS MERCY (GRACE)***  
*HE SAVED US,*

***BY THE WASHING OF REGENERATION,***  
***AND RENEWING OF THE HOLY GHOST.”***

**(Titus 3:5)**

How is one saved? Is it FAITH ITSELF? Is it mercy itself? No, all of these play a part, but the ACTUAL SALVATION ITSELF IS VIA THE WASHING OF REGENERATION. As water is a code word for agape love, it is via the WASHING IN AGAPE LOVE THAT REGENERATES US. It is not of any works of righteousness, because our works of righteousness are always RELATIVE. WE NEED THE ABSOLUTE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF AGAPE LOVE TO BE GRANTED TO US. It is done because of GRACE, WHICH IS MERCY.

## SUMMARY CONCLUSIONS

The narrow way then is the following:

- 1. It is the way of the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT.**
- 2. It is the way of being judged by the AGAPE LOVE STANDARD OF GOD.**
- 3. It is the way of being judged of SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT.**
- 4. It is the way God judges the INNER CORE HEART OF MAN, THE HIDDEN MAN, THE SECRET MAN, THE DEEP INVISIBLE MAN, THE GREAT "I AM".**
- 5. It is the way of REPENTANCE, NOT OF SINS (PLURAL) BUT OF ONE SIN (SINGULAR) THE SIN OF CONDITIONAL PHILEO LOVE.**
- 6. It is the way of TRUE RECONCILIATION. Except two be agreed, they cannot walk together.**
- 7. It is the way to true spiritual wisdom, the wisdom of agape love.**
- 8. It is the way to true knowledge, the knowing of agape love.**
- 9. It is the way of TRUE humbleness in the sight of God.**
- 10. It is the way of humiliation, of being brought down before agape love.**
- 11. It is the way of the cross, of dying a true death, a supernatural soul death while you are alive and walking around.**
- 12. It is the way of revelation of the antichrist within.**
- 13. It is the way of revelation of complete rebellion in the inner heart.**
- 14. It is the way of death that we might find life.**
- 15. It is the only way to find TRUE UNION WITH THE LIVING CHRIST.**
- 16. It is the only way into the New Covenant.**
- 17. It is the only way offered BY GRACE.**
- 18. It is the only way offered BY MERCY.**
- 19. It is the only way offered by COMPASSION.**

Here is what the narrow way IS NOT:

- 1. It is NOT a way of 'works'.**
- 2. It is NOT a way of 'legalism'.**
- 3. It is not a way of 'righteous deeds'.**
- 4. It is NOT a HOLINESS WALK.**

We will now examine FAITH. We are in for some rude shocks. It is not what you think it is. So you think you know Jesus? Does HE KNOW YOU? The type of faith you have DETERMINES IF YOU WILL LIVE OR DIE FOREVER. The type of faith you have determines if Jesus knows you or not.

**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**ELEVEN**  
**FAITH VS. KNOWING**  
**THE CRUCIAL DIFFERENCE THAT KILLS**

We have now described the narrow way, which appears to be at odds with the modern concept of faith. We have bluntly said the narrow way is NOT A WORK OF ANY KIND. We have said that the **NARROW WAY IS THE WORK OF TRUE FAITH**. James said that faith without works is a dead faith, an unworthy faith. True faith has a work, and it will produce a work, otherwise that faith is a vain faith, a faith of no effect.

There is a difference between a faith **IN** Christ, and having the faith **OF** Christ. Faith in Christ has Christ as the object, while the faith OF Christ has an objective: walking the narrow way unto REGENERATION, THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE, AND LATER PURGING FOR BETTER and PERFECT WORKS. It has been overly stated that faith IN Christ does not save you by itself, but that when combined with the faith OF Christ, AN OBEDIENT FAITH IS DEVELOPED THAT WILL SAVE THE SOUL. The faith of Christ is an OBEDIENT FAITH, A FAITH UNTO DEATH, EVEN THE DEATH OF THE CROSS. Jesus told us to FOLLOW HIM. He commanded that we pick up OUR CROSS. No where did Christ tell us to PICK UP HIS CROSS. No where does it say we merely APPROPRIATE HIS CROSS BY AN ACT OF FAITH. You won't find it.

We then find that faith in God, or faith in Christ is a static form of faith, the ability to simply believe IN Christ. It could be called our 'armchair faith'. The faith of Christ was the obedient form of faith, that is, a faith with works that actually accomplishes something, that actually DOES SOMETHING. There are many facets to faith, some active, some passive. It is a tragic mistake to simply lump faith into one all inclusive definition.

*“But WITHOUT FAITH it is IMPOSSIBLE to please HIM:*

*for he that COMETH TO GOD*

*MUST (FIRST) BELIEVE THAT HE IS (FAITH IN GOD, OR CHRIST),*

*AND THAT HE (GOD) IS A REWARDER OF THEM*

*THAT DILIGENTLY SEEK HIM (FAITH OF CHRIST).”*

*(Hebrews 11:6)*

This verse shows us the two concepts side by side. Faith and belief are for all practical purposes, the same thing. That will become clear as we proceed. The first step is to be convinced that GOD IS, OR THAT CHRIST IS. In other words, you WILL NOT COME TO GOD UNTIL YOU ARE CONVINCED THAT GOD REALLY IS THERE. You must BELIEVE THAT HE IS. The first step is to convince man that GOD REALLY DOES EXIST. He is there; He is real. ***Christianity has a stepping stone of faith.*** The first step is that there is A GOD. The second step is to figure out what kind of a God that God is, PERSONAL OR IMPERSONAL. Obviously if you arrive at the conclusion that God is an impersonal IT, you will seek no further, because you cannot know an impersonal IT. You cannot go out and communicate or interrelate with a STONE. It has no ability to communicate. It has nothing to say whatever. IT MERELY IS. Many people believe in this sort of God, they call it a COSMIC GOD, A COSMIC IT, A FORCE, A POWER.

If on the other hand, you are convinced that God IS PERSONAL, then the next problem is to figure out what kind of a PERSONALITY DOES GOD HAVE? What are His traits? What is His character? Is He good only, love only, or is He good and evil, like man? If we arrive at the conclusion that He is good and evil, we need not proceed any further, because He could turn upon us at any time, and destroy us for whatever whim He felt like. This type of God would be like a raving lunatic at times, and at others calm and collected. He would be a CHANGEABLE GOD, AND WE COULD NEVER KNOW FROM ONE INSTANT TO THE NEXT WHAT HE WOULD DO. He might decide to DISSOLVE THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE AND BEGIN OVER. How could you worship a God like that? You would live in constant fear and constant turmoil, trying to second guess a God who changes from hour to hour.

We then in our search for answers usually stumble across the concept of a GOD OF ABSOLUTE GOODNESS, ABSOLUTE LOVE, ABSOLUTE ORDER. If we examine nature, the universe, the laws that operate it, and we dig deep enough, we will discover that the universe is run with total mathematical precision. The laws of physics seem to always act the same way in a specific environment. We call it CAUSE AND EFFECT. If we dig deeper, we will soon discover a certain APPARENT RANDOMNESS. Things do not always appear to react the same way. A fire or an explosion is an example of apparent randomness or chaos. The problem is that there are billions of causes, and billions of effects all occurring in a very short period of time. IT IS APPARENT CHAOS, BUT IN REALITY IT IS PERFECT ORDER IN A HIGH SPEED SITUATION. The deeper we probe, we find out the universe is run BY CONSTANT, PERFECT AND UNCHANGING LAW. It is contained by BILLIONS OF LAWS. We call them laws of physics; laws of nature, laws of this, laws of that.

An example of this is the LAWS OF MAN. We have laws to attempt to BRING ORDER OUT OF CHAOS. The opposite of law is anarchy. The purpose of law is to bring an ORDERLY STRUCTURE TO SOCIETY, TO BRING PEACE. The purpose of God's laws is to KEEP THE UNIVERSE UNDER CONTROL. The laws keep a chair a chair, and a bed a bed. Imagine what it would be like if your chair could randomly change its shape at will? All matter is nothing but atoms. All atoms are bound by their own laws. All the laws of matter interact and intertwine. Steel remains steel, and wood remains wood, and flesh remains flesh, and so on. NO MATTER WHERE WE LOOK, WE FIND LAWS IN FULL FORCE AND EFFECT.

The Bible says only a fool will say there is no God. It also says that everyone born dies without any excuse, for the ***UNIVERSE ITSELF TESTIFIES TO THE FACT THAT GOD IS, AND FURTHER, WHAT KIND OF A GOD HE IS.*** If you have laws that hold the universe together, and they form harmonious patterns, then we can begin to draw conclusions about the LAW GIVER. You see, if there is LAW, then there has to be a force behind the law to ***UPHOLD THE LAW.*** Law by itself is meaningless.

There is a POWER BEHIND THE LAW. GOD DOES NOT FALL ASLEEP. He is TOTALLY AWARE, TOTALLY AWAKE, TOTALLY IN CONTROL AT ALL TIMES. Nothing happens that He

is not aware of, and that there is not a law or power to control it. The explosion of a star appears to us as random, chaotic, but it is not. Every billionth of a second, every action and every reaction are under the laws of cause and effect. EVERYTHING IS UNDER CONSTANT CONTROL. This then is a reflection of the lawgiver. The reflection given to us in the universe is that of a **GOD OF ORDER, A PERFECT GOD, AN UNCHANGING GOD, A GOD OF LAW, OF ORDER, OF GOODNESS, OF RIGHT.**

If we move to the realm of the spirit, man knows that GOOD IS PREFERRED OVER EVIL, THAT RIGHT IS PREFERRED OVER WRONG, THAT LOVE IS PREFERRED OVER HATE. We watch THESE LAWS OF THE SPIRIT in the actions between people and nations. Anyone can observe these things, if they will but stop and look, and figure it out. **THEREFORE MAN DIES WITHOUT ANY EXCUSE.** He can observe there **MUST BE A GOD OF PERFECT LAW. HE MUST BE A GOD OF LOVE, RIGHT, AND GOOD.** Love, right and good, UPHOLD ORDER and BRING PEACE AND HARMONY. Chaos or anarchy in human affairs is EVIL, WRONG, HATE, and they bring VIOLENCE AND DISCORD. We then arrive at the LOGICAL conclusion that **GOD IS A PERFECT, PERSONAL BEING OF LOVE, RIGHT AND GOOD, WHO UPHOLDS EVERYTHING BY LAW AND ORDER.**

We can observe certain laws in nature, one being the *law of homogenesis*. It has never been disproved whatever, and there have never been any recorded exceptions to it. IT IS AN INVIOLEATE LAW OF NATURE, and it says that only like can beget like. It means people produce only people, and carrot plants only produce carrot plants. EACH AFTER ITS KIND. Mankind is a PERSONAL BEING. HE HAS A MIND, HE HAS A SPIRIT, HE HAS A SOUL. Where then did man come from? If like can only beget like, then MAN MUST HAVE BEEN CREATED, AND COULD NOT HAVE “EVOLVED” FROM MATTER. It is not possible. **THEREFORE MAN DIES WITHOUT EXCUSE.** He has proof that GOD IS THE CREATOR, AND HE HAS PROOF OF WHAT TYPE OF GOD HE IS. Only the fool says there is NO GOD.

If all of this is true, and the Bible says it is, then what on earth happened to man? We have now arrived at the point where we **HAVE FAITH THAT GOD IS, AND WE BELIEVE THAT GOD IS.** We have concluded He is a God of personality, a good God, a God of love. How does all of this relate to what we see daily? If God is so good, why does He not stop all of the evil? Why do good people suffer so terribly? Why is there a hell? Why does God punish man, who is born in to this world never asking to be born in the first place? Why do little babies die? Mother weep, father mourns silently for their lost ones. Why? Why? **The cries and tears of man would fill the oceans of the world many times over.** WHY, GOD, WHY? **Anger fills our hearts as we watch little ones suffer, and the innocent perish for no apparent reason.**

Faith now enters into its second phase. **Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.** The Word of God is the Bible. **It is God's attempt to answer man's innermost questions.** It is God's attempt to prove that He is personal, that He does care, that He does love man. The Bible, even though you may not believe it, **is a supernatural book, a book written by the finger of God, who jumped the silent gulf that separates us.** In that book, the most loved and hated of all books ever written, **ARE THE ANSWERS TO ALL OF THE QUESTIONS OF MANKIND.** The answers are not pleasant answers. They are harsh, and they point a finger to an **unseen power, a powerful, supernatural being with cunning and craftiness, called SATAN.**

SATAN is the cause of all the problems that mankind has. SATAN is the secret and silent instigator behind the scenes. He goes by many names, but **HE TOOK LITERAL CONTROL AND DOMINION OVER THE HUMAN RACE AT THE FALL OF MAN.** It was real; it was literal. The Bible is a story that makes STAR WARS PALE into NOTHINGNESS. If the collective talent of the movie industry would gather themselves and would put on screen the **LITERAL AND REAL STORY OF THE BIBLE,**

**WITHOUT PERVERTING IT, OR CHANGING IT**, no one would ever walk out of a movie theater the same as when they came in.

Rather than face the reality of Satan, demons, evil, hatred, strife and variance, and the REALITY OF MAN'S POSITION BEFORE GOD, mankind denies all of it. The secret evil nature of the fallen inner heart of man ERECTS AN INVISIBLE AND UNKNOWN BARRIER SO INTENSE, SO GREAT, SO HOSTILE TO GOD, that Jesus said FEW WOULD RECOGNIZE IT AND BE ABLE TO PENETRATE IT. It is not that they could not; it is that THEY WOULD NOT. Jesus Christ is the **ONLY RELIGIOUS LEADER IN THE WORLD THAT TOLD YOU TO CHECK OUT HIS DOCTRINE**. He said that if you would do the **WILL OF GOD, YOU WOULD KNOW EXPERIENTIALLY AND ABSOLUTELY THE TRUTH ABOUT GOD, AND THE UNIVERSE**.

***“It is written in the prophets, AND THEY SHALL BE ALL TAUGHT OF GOD.  
Every man therefore that HATH HEARD,  
AND HATH LEARNED OF THE FATHER,  
COMETH UNTO ME.***

***Not that any man HATH SEEN THE FATHER,  
SAVE HE  
WHICH IS OF GOD,  
HE HATH SEEN THE FATHER.”  
(John 6:45-46)***

This verse is filled with deep meaning for us. When a person, who observed life and the universe around them, begins to question, God begins to move. The deeper you will search, the deeper you probe, the more God reveals to you. He loves inquisitive people. He loves those that pound on heaven's door. **KNOCK ON HEAVEN'S DOOR, AND EVENTUALLY GOD WILL ANSWER YOU**. You begin the journey of faith by FIRST BELIEVING THAT GOD IS. God will then, if you will **CONTINUE THE SEARCH, LEAD YOU DIRECTLY TO HIS WORD**. If you will, with an HONEST HEART, begin to PROBE THE WORD OF GOD, here a little, and there a little, line by line, precept by precept, **GOD WILL LEAD YOU DIRECTLY TO HIS SON, JESUS CHRIST**. That is HOW THE WORD OF GOD IS SUPPOSED TO WORK, if man would ALLOW IT TO WORK.

Mankind, however, because of the secret and hidden INVISIBLE BARRIER OF HATRED in his INNER HEART TOWARDS GOD, usually cannot approach the Bible from an UNBIASED VIEWPOINT. He cannot approach God honestly, with an OPEN HEART, with a HEART THAT WANTS TO LEARN. Man wants to TEACH GOD a few things, and thus, when man opens the Bible, with his preconceived biases, prejudices and hidden hostility, he simply cannot UNDERSTAND THE BIBLE AT ALL. Thus he picks out verses here and there and builds up a million theologies OF THE FLESH. GOD WILL MIRROR BACK WHATEVER VIEWPOINT YOU WISH TO HOLD, AND WILL, IT SEEMS, PROVE IT TO THE FROWARD THAT GOD IS FROWARD. It is an INCREDIBLE BOOK.

It is the job of a real teacher, not to give you the answers, **BUT TO SHOW YOU HOW TO FIND THE ANSWERS FOR YOURSELF**. It is the job of the real teacher, NOT TO CONVINCING YOU THAT HE IS TRUE, **BUT THAT THE WORD OF GOD IS TRUE**, AND CAN BE TRUSTED. It is the job of the real teacher to **BUILD UP YOUR FAITH, TO EDIFY AND TO ENCOURAGE YOU ALONG YOUR JOURNEY**. It is GOD'S job to **REVEAL TO YOU PERSONALLY WHAT IT ALL MEANS**. The more



you KNOW ABOUT GOD, THE MORE YOU KNOW ABOUT THE FAITH OF THE BIBLE, the more FAITH YOU HAVE THAT THE BIBLE IS TRUE. Faith comes by hearing, and hearing comes by the Word of God.

***“So then, FAITH COMETH BY HEARING,  
AND HEARING BY THE WORD OF GOD.”***  
(Romans 10:17)

It is a stepping stone process. Here a little and there a little, line by line, precept upon precept. We are to be BUILT UP IN OUR FAITH BY REAL KNOWLEDGE OF DOCTRINE. We are not to be blown about by every wind of doctrine, but ARE TO KNOW why we believe what we believe. The average Christian has no idea why he/she believes what they believe. If faith comes by hearing and understanding the Word, and by patience and diligent study, then we have proven as well that if you do not read, study, listen or apply the Scripture you really do not have even the BEGINNINGS OF BIBLICAL FAITH. You have instead a faith in faith, a belief in belief. Faith is built up over time, and this type of faith is a CONSCIOUS FAITH, A CONSCIOUS KNOWLEDGE, OF THE SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN. It is an earthly faith. It is to start small, but it will grow into a solid, complete and total knowledge of what God means.

***“Another parable put he forth unto them, saying,  
THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN IS LIKE TO A GRAIN OF MUSTARD SEED,  
WHICH A MAN TOOK, AND SOWED IN HIS FIELD:***

***Which INDEED IS THE LEAST OF ALL THE SEEDS:***

***BUT WHEN IT IS GROWN,  
IT IS THE GREATEST AMONG HERBS,  
AND BECOMETH A TREE,  
SO THAT THE BIRDS OF THE AIR COME  
AND LODGE IN THE BRANCHES THEREOF.”***

(Matthew 13:31-32)

From the smallest of the seeds, OVER TIME, COMES A GREAT TREE. Jesus referred to Christians as like trees, and so did John the Baptist. Just before this verse, Jesus said: “IF (THE CONDITIONAL IF) YE HAVE FAITH AS A GRAIN OF MUSTARD SEED.” A mustard seed takes a long time to grow into a tree. Notice how Jesus words it: “BUT WHEN IT IS GROWN.” Faith takes time to grow. The parable of the sower is about TRUE FAITH, AND HOW IT RELATES TO SALVATION. The one who HEARS THE WORDS, that is, the one who studies it diligently, AND WHO UNDERSTANDS THE WORDS, WITH PATIENCE BRINGS FORTH FRUIT. The concept of faith today is to just “believe” something INSTANTLY OR IMMEDIATELY. That is not FAITH, THAT IS NOT BIBLICAL BELIEF.

It should also be pointed out that one can read the word, memorize the word, understand the word, and still not become regenerated, (the many evangelists, preachers and teachers) because they MISINTERPRET the Word and REFUSE TO COMPLY WITH THE COMMANDS OF THE WORD.

You must be OBEДИENT TO THE WORD. You must do what it tells you to do. It is active, and true faith is also active, not passive, not an armchair belief system.

Notice what Hebrews said. It said that **WE MUST FIRST BELIEVE THAT GOD IS**. That is our first step of faith. WE PUT FAITH IN GOD. Then it says that **GOD REWARDS THOSE THAT DILIGENTLY SEEK HIM**. This is a different type of faith. We become convinced that GOD IS, and then we take that faith, and we BECOME OBEДИENT TO HIS COMMAND TO **SEEK HIM OUT**. We begin to STIR OURSELVES UP TO THE CHALLENGE GOD HAS MADE TO US. If we WILL RISE TO THE CHALLENGE, then God will reveal more and more to us, and we will come to the point where we **KNOW FOR A FACT IN OUR CONSCIOUS MINDS AND HEARTS THAT CHRIST IS REALLY MESSIAH. GOD WILL PROVE IT TO BE TRUE**. There will be no question whatever that Christ was exactly who He said He was, and that He came to do EXACTLY what He said He did.

This type of faith and knowing is different than just BELIEVING SOMETHING. The vast majority of Christians today just “believe” that Christ is the Messiah, but if you pressed them to prove it, they could not do it, they could not answer. This type of faith or belief is not Scriptural. It is in reality UNBELIEF. It is FAITHLESS. Real faith has facts to substantiate the claims, and the believer has reasoned it out, has searched it out with diligence. **That TRUE believer KNOWS WHY HE BELIEVES**.

As we probe even deeper, after becoming convinced that God IS, and we have placed our FAITH IN GOD, He leads us to Christ, **the historical Christ**. Then we begin to discern that is not enough, that there is more, something deeper, something missing, something is NOT QUITE RIGHT. This yearning, this deeper need is the **REVELATION TO US THAT WE DO NOT YET KNOW THE ‘TRUTH’**. It is God’s method of telling you THERE IS A VACANCY SIGN IN YOUR HEART OF HEARTS. It reads **“AGAPE LOVE HAS GONE TO LUNCH, WILL NOT BE BACK”**. Jesus said that if we WOULD CONTINUE IN HIS DOCTRINE, we would ultimately find THE REAL TRUTH BEHIND THE TRUTH OF CHRIST and it was THIS TRUTH that **set us free**. The truth Christ was speaking of was of course AGAPE LOVE.

The narrow way IS THE SEARCH FOR CHRIST, FOR AGAPE LOVE. It is a search that IS WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART, SOUL, MIND AND STRENGTH. That is your response to the challenge of God. **DILIGENTLY SEEK HIM**. It does not mean you memorize Scripture. It does not mean that you simply analyze the Bible. IT MEANS THAT YOU SEARCH FOR THE PERSONAL MEANING BEHIND ALL OF IT. WHAT IS THE MYSTERY BEHIND ALL OF LIFE, BEHIND ALL OF THE UNIVERSE? If you will SEARCH FOR MYSTERY BEHIND EVERYTHING YOU READ AND STUDY, AND SEARCH WITH DILIGENCE, YOU WILL FIND CHRIST. That is all the narrow way is FROM YOUR PERSPECTIVE. There is nothing else you need to do. It is not a way of guilt trips, confessions of a multitude of sins, or anything else. IT IS AN INTENSE, PERSONAL SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH BEHIND ALL OF LIFE. God does all the rest. You search, GOD CONVICTS. You continue, GOD BRINGS YOU DOWN. You keep on keeping on, GOD EXPOSES TO YOU WHO YOU ARE. He will bring you down to death. You will walk around and KNOW you are dead within. You will KNOW THERE IS SOMETHING TERRIBLY WRONG WITHIN YOU.

The search for truth is the equivalent of the FAITH OF CHRIST. Christ had a mission. It was to FINISH THE WORK OF THE FATHER. Your work is to diligently seek God out. Jesus came to FINISH HIS WORK. He set His face as flint, did not budge, did not compromise, did not allow anything to get in His way, and when He was on the cross, dying for you and I, He then said “It IS finished”. Jesus said we are to FOLLOW HIM. We are to set our faces like flint, and we are to ACCOMPLISH THE OBJECTIVE OF THE FAITH OF CHRIST. We are to be able to say, with Christ ‘IT IS FINISHED’. There are two aspects to the Christian walk. We are only dealing with the first aspect. It also has a FINISH. If you

WILL CONTINUE, ABIDE, REMAIN AND BE DILIGENT, YOU WILL FIND AGAPE LOVE, THE MYSTERY OF GOD.

God's work is to bring you into the GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT, TO JUDGE YOU BY AGAPE LOVE, TO SHOW YOU, TO PROVE YOU DON'T LOVE AS GOD COMMANDS. You will know something is terribly wrong, but you will not know what it is. You may know all ABOUT agape love, but you do not KNOW WHAT AGAPE LOVE REALLY IS. It is not part of your nature; it is not part of your make-up. Agape love cannot be learned. Agape love is beyond all learning, all knowledge. All one could do was to learn about agape love, and then go out and mimic it, but you still would NOT HAVE IT WITHIN YOU.

Remember when Christ said you could search the Scriptures daily, thinking that in them you would find eternal life? That we would think that in the pages of the Bible we could find it? But then He added we would not come to Him to obtain it? The Scriptures ARE ONLY A TESTIMONY. The verses of Scripture DO NOT IN THEMSELVES CONTAIN ETERNAL LIFE. They are only the PROMISES OF ETERNAL LIFE FOR THOSE WHO WILL WALK THE NARROW WAY TO MEET THE LIVING CHRIST. Putting your faith IN THE PROMISES of the Bible will not save you. They are the 'ANON WITH GREAT JOY CROWD'. They receive the WORD OF GOD, THE PROMISES OF THE BIBLE WITH INSTANT FAITH AND IMMEDIATE BELIEF. Jesus said they had no root. You see, the AX OF GOD, THE SWORD OF GOD, IS TO GO TO THE ROOT, TO THE INNER HEART.

Your outer heart, mind and will are of the sense man, soul man. They take in SENSE KNOWLEDGE, SOUL KNOWLEDGE. Sense knowledge is THE WORD OF GOD. The Holy Spirit guides you and ***ILLUMINATES YOUR MIND*** as to what the WORDS MEAN IN THE SENSE REALM. You can learn all about the MYSTERIES OF GOD, ISRAEL, THE CHURCH. You can learn all about the DOCTRINES, AND HAVE ALL KNOWLEDGE. This gives you great depth of SENSE KNOWLEDGE, SOUL KNOWLEDGE. From this input of KNOWLEDGE, YOUR SENSE FAITH, YOUR SOUL FAITH GROWS. Modern Christianity has a GREAT SENSE KNOWLEDGE, SOUL KNOWLEDGE OF THE THINGS OF GOD. It is an INTELLECTUAL FAITH ONLY.

You must probe deeper, beyond the Word, to find the INNER MEANING OF IT ALL. You must probe to find out what Christ meant by His many STRANGE SAYINGS. In short, you are not to be satisfied with KNOWING THE FACTS ***ABOUT*** CHRIST. We have many "experts" who know ALL ABOUT CHRIST. The sad thing is, they HAVE NEVER MET CHRIST, HAVE NEVER ENTERED INTO UNION, AND DO NOT KNOW ***WHO*** CHRIST IS. The journey of the narrow way is to FIND THE LIVING CHRIST, MEET HIM, AND ENTER INTO UNION WITH HIM. It is, in short, the search for ***AGAPE LOVE PERSONIFIED, CHRIST HIMSELF, KING OF KINGS, LORD OF ALL LORDS.*** The narrow way LEADETH UNTO LIFE, AND LIFE IS IN THE SON. Therefore Christ is waiting for you AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY. You walk the narrow way BY THE FAITH OF CHRIST, BECAUSE YOU HAVE FAITH IN CHRIST.

You are to take your knowledge, and then PICK UP YOUR OWN CROSS, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO DEATH. Knowing about something is NOT THE SAME AS DOING IT. The Bible is your schoolbook of instructions. The real search for God begins when you decide that you MUST find Him irrespective of all cost to you. That is where the FIELD TRAINING BEGINS.

Faith is active, if it is real. Faith has a work. The first work of real faith is the WALK OF THE NARROW WAY. It is a doing, not a talking about doing. It is ACTIVE, NOT PASSIVE. Hebrews Chapter 11 is the faith chapter. It tells us a lot about faith we need to know to unmask the deception of the modern faith movement. We will begin where the Bible begins:

**“Now FAITH is the SUBSTANCE OF THINGS HOPED FOR,  
THE EVIDENCE OF THINGS NOT SEEN.”  
(Hebrews 11:1)**

The word “faith” is ‘pistis’ which means **PERSUASION, CONVICTION, CREDESCENCE OR BELIEF.** The word for “substance” is ‘hupostasis’ which means **A SETTING UNDER, A SUPPORT, A SUBSTANCE THAT HOLD SOMETHING UP.** The word “evidence” is ‘elegchos’ which means **PROOF, CONVICTION.** The word “seen” is ‘blepo’ which means **TO LOOK UPON, TO BEHOLD, TO PERCEIVE, TO REGARD, TO SEE.** In other words, **FAITH IS REQUIRED, AND FAITH IS THE CONVICTION THAT THE INVISIBLE THINGS ARE REAL.** God is not visible to the SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN. You cannot see God. We can find **EVIDENCE** that God exists, and that He is a God of intelligence by the THINGS MADE, THE THINGS WE SEE.

We look at a flower, a bumblebee, a ladybug, a bird, a tree and we come away IN AWE IF WE IN FACT SEE THE BEAUTY AND INTELLIGENCE BEHIND EACH THING. Man in all of his intelligence is unable to PRODUCE FROM NOTHING, SOMETHING. Man always starts with something, and can produce from that something. But he cannot out of nothing CALL INTO BEING. He cannot design a bumblebee. In fact, science cannot fathom why a bumblebee can fly. It defies all known laws of science. His wings are not big enough to support his body. Take the common housefly, and examine closely his wings. Marvel at the INTRICATE DESIGN. Look at a butterfly, and marvel at the wonderful colors and design. ALL DONE BY AN INTELLIGENCE. The butterfly is much more intricate than the most intricate of machines. **THAT IS WHY MAN DIES WITHOUT EXCUSE.** The universe around him TELLS HIM A GOD OF INTELLIGENCE CREATED IT.

God Himself is INVISIBLE, NOT SEEN. Therefore we deduce from REASON AND LOGIC ALONE THAT GOD IS. The more we examine, the more we look, the STRONGER OUR CONVICTION THAT GOD IS. That is the beginning of faith. FAITH GROWS AS OUR SEARCH GROWS WIDER. Faith is based upon LOGIC and REASON. It is not a leap of blind faith. It is based upon certain observable laws. For example there is the law of HOMOGENESIS. It is a well-known law, and we have never uncovered any proof or evidence that it is not ABSOLUTE. The law of homogenesis is laid down in GENESIS. “Each after its kind”. Science has never found an exception to the rule.

If this is true, then WHERE DID BEINGS OF PERSONALITY COME FROM? Living things with no minds, like carrots and beets and trees never seem to produce LIVING THINGS THAT HAVE MINDS, THAT HAVE ANIMATION. This has grave implications for man. If like beings produce like beings, THEN WHO PRODUCED MAN? The evolutionists would have us believe that we EVOLVED OUT OF THE MUCK AND SLIME OF INANIMATE NATURE. In other words, out of something with no personality sprang a being with personality. The Law of Homogenesis DENIES THAT. We have no known evidence to disprove this SCIENTIFIC LAW. So man is then forced to TAKE THE EVIDENCE, AND DENY IT, PUT IT INTO A BOX, COVER IT UP, AND GET RID OF IT, FOR TO ADMIT IT IS TO THEN FORCE RADICAL CHANGE. **THEREFORE HE DIES WITHOUT EXCUSE.**

The Word of God declares quite the opposite, for “each after its kind” is the opposite. The evolutionist would tell us we are evolving **UPWARDS TOWARDS PERFECTION AND GODHOOD,** but Christ says we **ARE DEGENERATING DOWNWARDS TO CHAOS AND DEATH.** Christ stands in direct opposition to modern science and the doctrine of evolution. Christ does not deny there is an ADAPTATION PROCESS WITHIN SPECIES, OR AN APPARENT EVOLUTIONARY PROCESS

WITHIN EACH SPECIES, **BUT HE DOES ADAMANTLY DENY THE DIRECTION WHICH IT IS GOING.**

Christ tells us that MAN WAS CREATED FROM A BEING OF PERSONALITY. That man was created in the image and likeness of God. **HE WAS CREATED PERFECT BY A PERFECT GOD.** It was the fall of man that BROUGHT ALL THE TROUBLE. Adam was given dominion. He sold that dominion to Satan, and Satan becomes the owner of man. The entire Bible is devoted to **HOW GOD IS REDEEMING MAN BACK TO HIS ORIGINAL STATUS!** It is all abstract, and it is all INVISIBLE, SO FAITH IS REQUIRED. You and I were not in the Garden of Eden. We did not see it happen. But we do have evidence all over that it did happen!

So faith is required **FOR ALL THINGS NOT SEEN.** By faith alone then, WE BELIEVE THAT GOD IS, AND THEN BY AN ACTIVE FAITH, THE FAITH OF CHRIST, we begin the diligent search for THE TRUTH. That leads us to the **HISTORICAL CHRIST,** the Christ of the Bible, the testimony or **RECORD.** This is where the vast majority of Christians stop. They enter the OUTER COURT RITUAL, THEY BRING THEIR TITHES AND OFFERINGS, THEY WASH THEIR HANDS IN THE LAVER AND CLAIM 1 John 1:9 for their forgiveness of sins. Their faith is a FAITH **IN** CHRIST. It places all of its value IN THE WORK OF CHRIST, which is an excellent thing to do, but there IT STOPS. There IS MORE TO DO.

Before them stands the STRAIT GATE, AND THE NARROW WAY. It is the inner court, veiled but there. Their claim is that Christ tore the veil, and therefore BY FAITH WE MERELY APPROPRIATE EVERYTHING. BY FAITH WE HAVE UNION, BY FAITH WE MEET CHRIST, BY FAITH WE CLAIM THE PROMISES. We have to examine that closely to find out if it is true or not. Just what is this faith, and just what are we to do with it?

***“By faith Noah, BEING WARNED OF GOD OF THINGS NOT SEEN AS YET,***  
***MOVED WITH FEAR,***  
***PREPARED AN ARK TO THE SAVING OF HIS HOUSE;***  
***BY THE WHICH HE CONDEMNED THE WORLD, AND BECAME HEIR OF THE***  
***RIGHTEOUSNESS WHICH IS BY FAITH.”***  
***(Hebrews 11:7)***

Noah had not seen rain, because it did not rain prior to the flood, the ground was watered by DEW. Noah was told that a FLOOD WAS COMING. He had no proof whatsoever that a flood was in the offering. It was UNSEEN. The first step of Noah was to **BELIEVE IN GOD.** Noah had to be convinced that GOD WAS, AND THAT GOD’S WORD WAS GOOD, AND THAT **GOD MEANT EXACTLY WHAT HE SAID.** That is faith IN GOD. By placing COMPLETE TRUST IN GOD, AND COMING TO THE CONCLUSION THAT GOD MEANS WHAT HE SAYS, NOAH WAS MOVED BY FEAR.

We see here a TRANSFORMATION OF A PASSIVE FAITH **IN,** TO THE FAITH **OF** GOD. God was positive a flood was coming. God was not going to be turned back from what He said He would do. God’s problem was to **INSTILL HIS OWN FAITH, HIS OWN KNOWLEDGE INTO NOAH, TO MOVE NOAH TO ACTION.** It is one thing to sit in your pew and believe that God is, it is quite another to be MOVED WITH FEAR INTO ACTION. The modern faith movement is a passive faith movement, a

belief in, but not a belief strong enough to move the people with FEAR TO WALK THE NARROW WAY AND ESCAPE THE COMING JUDGMENT.

Noah needed FAITH because the definition of faith is for things NOT SEEN. So Noah BELIEVED GOD, AND BELIEVED ENOUGH TO ACTUALLY MOVE WITH FEAR. What did Noah do? **HE PREPARED AN ARK**. He actually DID SOMETHING. He went from passive faith to an active faith. He went from sitting around saying, "I believe, I believe", to **DOING SOMETHING ABOUT WHAT HE BELIEVED!** Did Noah sit on the ground and by AN ACT OF FAITH APPROPRIATE HIS ARK? Did Noah pray: "Dear God, O great Lord of heaven, I thank thee for such tremendous knowledge. Thank you, God! Thank you, God. Now Lord, you know that FAITH ALONE *does not allow for me to do any works*. You know that my definition of faith DOES NOT ALLOW ME TO DO ANY WORKS, **FOR THAT WOULD BE LAW KEEPING, LEGALISM, OR A WORK**. And you know that WORK is the opposite of faith. 'Therefore, Lord, I ask you to BUILD ME THE ARK. I will pray here, and I will anoint myself with oil, and I will pray here night and day, until you BUILD ME THE ARK. Thank you, Lord. Thank you! O, what a great God thou art! Thank you, Lord. I know you will do it. My faith is great! Thank you!'

Well, you and I know that Noah would have died in the flood if that was what he did. **NOAH DID NOT SIT AROUND WAITING FOR GOD TO BUILD HIM THE ARK**. The command of God was rather pointed. God said, "Make *thee* an ark..." God did not say He would make the ark, He told Noah to make it. Likewise Christ did not say He would enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way FOR YOU, He pointedly told you **TO DO IT YOURSELF**. Did not Christ say 'ENTER YE IN'? Noah did not appropriate the ark by an act of faith, and you do not appropriate the narrow way by an act of faith.

Noah SET ABOUT TO DO AS GOD COMMANDED. HE ACTUALLY SPENT 120 YEARS PREPARING AN ARK. He would get up early in the morning and face the jeering crowd and little by little, board by board, line by line, HE BUILT HIS OWN ARK. Each morning Noah got up and WENT TO WORK. HE LABORED, AND HE STROVE, **HE FOUGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH**. How would you like to build a boat FULL TIME for 120 years? That is REAL FAITH IN ACTION. That is REAL BELIEF. You see, Noah BELIEVED GOD, AND NOAH WAS SCARED TO DEATH. Christ came into the world and told us about HELLFIRE. HE TOLD US THAT HELL WAS REAL. IT WAS A PLACE WHERE YOUR FLESH LITERALLY BURNS, WHERE THE WORMS LITERALLY CRAWL IN AND OUT OF YOUR BODY. HE SAID IT WAS A PLACE OF TORMENTS THAT WAS REAL, LITERAL. He said He came here to MAKE A WAY OF ESCAPE, SO YOU COULD ESCAPE THE JUDGMENT OF IT.

Christ spent a lot of time teaching about hell. It was designed to move men WITH FEAR. Nothing moves a person like FEAR. Nothing will get a person off their duff faster than the threat of FOREBODING. Governments know this, and they exploit it to keep control over people. The IRS always makes a big splash about people going to prison for non-payment or cheating on their taxes around TAX TIME. They pick on well-known people if they can. The object is to **INSTILL FEAR TO ENFORCE COMPLIANCE**. Christ did the same thing. OUT OF FEAR THAT GOD MEANS WHAT HE SAYS DO WE MOVE TO BUILD OUR ARK. It may surprise you to know that FEAR IS THE BEGINNING OF WISDOM, AND FROM FEAR THAT MOVES US TO ACTION, WE DISCOVER TRUE LOVE, AGAPE LOVE.

Modern Christianity knows nothing of the FEAR OF GOD. They focus on the LOVE OF GOD. Their God is all loving. He is all forgiving. He is all compassionate to their every whim. He is full of mercy and goodness, grace and love. If you happen to mention that God has another side to His nature, they get all upset, and accuse you of being NEGATIVE. They say you do not understand God. The real believer **UNDERSTANDS GOD ALL TOO WELL**. He knows that GOD MEANS WHAT HE SAYS. He

knows that the love of God is SEVERE, MORE SEVERE THAN ANYTHING WE CAN IMAGINE. He knows for a fact that the love of God that will save a sinner is the same love that will and does **DAMN MILLIONS OF CHRISTIANS TO ETERNAL RUIN.**

Noah built his ark OUT OF FEAR. He prepared for his family OUT OF FEAR. It does not say that Noah was moved for a LOVE of God, but out of a **FEARFUL RESPECT FOR GOD AND HIS WORDS.** Likewise we are to HAVE A FEAR AND A TREMBLING FOR CHRIST, AND HIS COMMANDS TO US. Scripture says WE are to WORK OUT our OWN SALVATION with **FEAR AND TREMBLING.**

*“Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have  
**ALWAYS OBEYED,**  
not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence,*

**WORK OUT YOUR OWN SALVATION  
WITH FEAR AND TREMBLING.”**

(Philippians 2:12)

The modern Christian would do well to memorize that verse, understand the meaning of it, and BE MOVED WITH FEAR TO THE NARROW WAY. The word “obeyed” is ‘hupakouo’ which means **TO LISTEN ATTENTIVELY, TO HEED, OR TO CONFORM TO THE COMMANDS OF A SUPERIOR.** The word “work” is ‘katergazomai’ which means **TO WORK FULLY, TO ACCOMPLISH, TO FINISH, TO PERFORM, TO DO IT.** The word “salvation” is ‘soteria’ which means **RESCUE, SAFETY, SAVING, TO BE SAVED.** In other words, you are **TO FINISH THE JOB OF SALVATION BY WORKING IT ALL THE WAY TO THE END.** The word for “fear” is ‘phobos’ and it means **ALARM OF FRIGHT, TO BE AFRAID, TO HAVE EXCEEDING FEAR OR GREAT TERROR.** The word “trembling” is ‘tromos’ which means **TO QUAKE WITH FEAR, TO TREMBLE OUT OF FEAR.**

The modern Christian has NO FEAR OF GOD. Their salvation is instant, joyous, happy and NO FEAR IS PRESENT. “GOD IS LOVE!” THE PASTORS AND PREACHER BOYS COO FROM THEIR PULPITS OF DEATH. They preach a sick, false Gospel of PEACE, PEACE WITH GOD, WHEN THERE IS NO PEACE. Notice who is to work out the salvation: **YOU ARE.** It does not say CHRIST SAVES YOU, IT SAYS THAT YOU ARE TO WORK OUT YOUR **OWN SAVING.** That doctrine is wholly lost in modern theology, because of the doctrine of the substitutionary atonement, which is a partial truth, stretched beyond all boundaries of Scripture. It is not only lost, it is denied, and branded SATANIC. What else do you think Satan would do? If God requires FEAR AND TREMBLING, Satan and his agents will come up with a theology that is the direct opposite: A THEOLOGY OF LOVE ALONE, INSTANT FAITH ALONE. It will hide the NEGATIVE SIDE OF TOUGH LOVE. IT WILL DENY IT.

In the doctrine of substitutionary atonement, Christ does everything for us. We need only to APPROPRIATE ALL OF IT BY AN ACT OF FAITH, A SIMPLE DECISION FOR CHRIST. By that decision, Christ instantly comes into the heart, instantly saves, and instantly secures the believer. WHAT IF IT IS NOT TRUE? The “many” were convinced IT WAS TRUE. THEY ARE REJECTED, THEY ARE SENT AWAY INTO ETERNAL RUIN. **Something was wrong with their belief, their faith, and their theology.** THEIR THEOLOGY REFUSED THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST TO DO IT FOR

THEMSELVES. They refused to pick up their cross, and they refused to walk the narrow way. They refused to have a **FEAR FOR GOD, AND FOR THE COMMANDS OF GOD.**

Somehow Satan was able to deceive them into thinking that ALL OF THESE COMMANDS DID NOT APPLY TO THEM. They were positive that Christ did it all, that they had no need to do it. The multitude of verses to prove they were wrong was denied with great anger and vehemence. They would even scream it was DEGRADING THE WORK OF CHRIST. They would confuse the issue, melt them together, and mold them into a totally false concept.

Noah built his ark; he prepared his ark HIMSELF. Each day he got up and BY FAITH, BY CONVICTION THAT GOD WOULD NOT LIE, BUT WOULD TELL THE TRUTH, Noah picked up HIS CROSS AND BUILT HIS ARK OF RESCUE. Minute by minute, hour by hour, day by day, week by week, month by month, and year by year, THE FAITH OF NOAH REMAINED AN ACTIVE FAITH. He was moved by FEAR AND TREMBLING AT THE WORD OF GOD. Likewise are you, minute by minute, hour by hour, day by day, week by week, and year by year are TO MOVE WITH FEAR AND TREMBLING DOWN THE NARROW WAY TO PREPARE YOUR OWN ARK, WHICH IS UNION WITH THE LIVING CHRIST. We could then write that verse this way:

***“BY FAITH CHRISTIAN,  
WARNED OF CHRIST OF THINGS NOT SEEN AS YET  
(JUDGMENT, HELLFIRE, DAMNATION)  
MOVED WITH FEAR,  
PREPARED AND ARK  
(ENTERED THE STRAIT GATE AND WALKED  
THE NARROW WAY TO UNION AND SAFETY IN CHRIST)  
TO THE SAVING OF HIS HOUSE,  
BY WHICH HE CONDEMNED THE WORLD,  
AND BECAME HEIR OF THE RIGHTEOUSNESS (AGAPE LOVE)  
WHICH IS BY FAITH (OF DOING).”***

That would be our modern verse for us today. If we enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way, we will find CHRIST, who is ALIVE AND WELL. We will find His AGAPE LOVE, and we will then enter into TRUE UNION WITH HIM. He is our ark; He alone is our safety.

And so you see two types of faith: FAITH IN, AND FAITH OF. If Noah only had a faith in God, and did nothing about what God commanded, and refused to build the ark, Noah would have perished with the rest of mankind. But he took his faith in God, and transformed it into the faith of God, AND WENT INTO ACTION, AND SAVED HIS FAMILY. So what type of faith do you have? You say you have faith in Christ? Is your faith enough to PROPEL YOU TO ACTION? WILL YOU BUILD YOUR OWN ARK IN FEAR AND TREMBLING?

Moses is another great example of FAITH IN ACTION, OF THE FAITH OF CHRIST. It is a faith that DOES SOMETHING, THAT HAS A WORK:

***“BY FAITH he (Moses) FORSOOK EGYPT,  
NOT FEARING the WRATH OF THE KING:***



*For he **ENDURED**, AS SEEING HIM WHO IS INVISIBLE.*

*Through FAITH HE **KEPT THE PASSOVER**,  
AND THE SPRINKLING OF BLOOD,  
LEST HE THAT DESTROYED THE FIRSTBORN **SHOULD TOUCH THEM**.*

***BY FAITH** THEY PASSED THROUGH THE RED SEA  
AS BY DRY LAND:  
WHICH THE EGYPTIANS ASSAYING TO DO WERE DROWNED.”  
(Hebrews 11:27-29)*

Now Moses is a type of Christ, a leader. Israel was TO FOLLOW AFTER MOSES. He is a type for us to look to find out what FAITH MEANS. By faith alone, HE FORSOOK EGYPT. Egypt is a type of the world. Christ told us to GO SELL ALL THAT YOU HAVE, AND FOLLOW ME. HE TOLD US TO FORSAKE THE WORLD. He was most pointed about it. We do it because WE HAVE FAITH IN GOD, AND IT IS A COMMAND FROM GOD. We therefore PICK UP OUR CROSS. Moses did not fear the wrath of the King. We likewise are not to fear the WRATH OF SATAN, HIS DEMONS, OR OUR FELLOW MAN. They will rise up AGAINST US. We are to NOT FEAR THEM.

Now it says that Moses ENDURED. That word means HE WAS PATIENT; IT TOOK TIME, MUCH TIME, MUCH EFFORT, MUCH COURAGE, MUCH FAITH IN ACTION. You do not forsake the world by simply “believing”. You forsake the world BY A TOTAL REARRANGEMENT OF YOUR PRIORITIES IN LIFE, AND YOU DO SOMETHING. You leave it behind. You leave your business behind; you count them as NAUGHT TO FIND CHRIST. That requires you to DO SOMETHING. IN SHORT, GOD SAYS TO YOU: PUT YOUR ACTIONS WHERE YOUR MOUTH IS. DO IT, DON’T TALK ABOUT IT.

By faith, Moses kept the Passover. The putting of the blood of the Passover Lamb on the doorpost represents to us **CONVERSION**. By a simple step of FAITH THEY BECAME OBEDIENT AND ACTUALLY DID SOMETHING. They actually did go out and KILL LAMBS, TOOK THE BLOOD AND APPLIED IT TO THEIR DOOR. In other words, THEIR FAITH WAS STRONG ENOUGH TO PROPEL THEM INTO ACTION. They did not simply APPROPRIATE BY FAITH, by an act of faith, the blood on the door. They did not simply pray a prayer, and spiritualize it away. They did not say “Lord, Thank you! Praise be to the Lord. By faith now, we apply the blood of our **FAITH LAMB** to our **FAITH DOOR**. Lord I can see the Lamb dying in my mind. I see His blood spilling out, and I reach out BY FAITH and catch this FAITH BLOOD. I am now BY FAITH applying it to my FAITH DOOR. Thank you Lord.” Had they done that, their firstborns would have died. THEY KILLED REAL LAMBS; THEY SPRINKLED REAL BLOOD. It was all REAL ACTION, A DOING, A FAITH IN ACTION. FAITH WITH WORKS. That act was an act of FEAR. They did not want to lose their children to the death angel. **FEAR WAS THEIR MOTIVATION THAT PROPELLED THEM TO ACTION.**

***Do you fear God?  
Or do you simply mouth it?***

Next it says that BY FAITH THEY PASSED THROUGH THE RED SEA. Does that mean they sat down at the edge of the Red Sea and praised the Lord for the NARROW WAY OF ESCAPE HE MADE FOR

THEM? Did they sit there and say. "Thank you, Lord. Thank you. What a marvelous display of your mighty power. Thank you Jesus, thank you Lord. But now, Lord, our definition here of faith does not ALLOW US TO ACTUALLY ENTER IN TO THIS NARROW WAY. You see, that would be **A WORK, A FORM OF WORKS, OF LAW KEEPING, OF LEGALISM OF SOME SORT.** You see, our definition of faith IS TO APPROPRIATE EVERYTHING BY FAITH ALONE, FOR WE CAN DO NOTHING OF OURSELVES, IT IS ALL TO COME FROM YOU. So you see Lord, we CANNOT ENTER IN. However, we will sit here on the shores of the sea, in the Land of Egypt, and we will anoint ourselves with oil. We will pray and fast, and fast and pray, and well, we know **YOU WILL TELEPORT US TO THE OTHER SIDE.** We will **BY FAITH** proclaim ourselves OUT OF EGYPT, and ON THE OTHER SIDE. We will **BY FAITH** simply APPROPRIATE ALL YOU HAVE FOR US. We will now bow our heads in sincere and heartfelt prayer and await your next work of mighty power, AND **WE NOW, BY FAITH, PROCLAIM OURSELVES SAVED. THANK YOU FOR YOUR INSTANT AND IMMEDIATE SALVATION. WE ARE SO JOYFUL, PRAISE THE LORD.**"

Had Moses and Israel done that, they would have been slaughtered without mercy, just as Christ slaughters without mercy the many who PRAYED SUCH A STUPID PRAYER, AND BELIEVED SUCH A STUPID LIE. Moses LED THE WAY DOWN INTO THE VALLEY OF DEATH. Yea though they walked through the valley of death, they feared no evil, for the STAFF AND THE ROD OF GOD WAS WITH THEM. Their faith IN GOD, IN MOSES, WHO LED THE WAY, WHO DID IT WITH THEM, TURNED INTO THE FAITH OF GOD, THE FAITH OF MOSES. It turned into an ACTION FAITH, A DOING FAITH. Who actually did the walking?

Who had to actually MOVE, ACT? Each Israelite had to MOVE ON HIS OWN. He/she had to walk literally down into the seabed, had to actually walk, and could see the walls of water probably at least a hundred feet high on each side. They also knew that the same power that held it there could release it upon them, and kill them. YET BY THEIR FAITH THEY BELIEVED GOD, AND THEY BELIEVED MOSES, AND THEY WENT WITH HIM DOWN INTO THE NARROW WAY, IN THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH.

How would you like to do that? Do you have the faith to follow CHRIST DOWN INTO THE VALLEY OF DEATH, DOWN INTO THE VALLEY OF THE NARROW WAY? Will you walk with Jesus into a place you know not? Will you TRUST HIM, BELIEVE IN HIM, AND DO AS HE COMMANDS? Or are you going to sit in Egypt, and proclaim by an act of faith, that you are a Son of God? You see, THERE IS A DOING FAITH, A FAITH WITH A WORK. The work of Israel was **TO MOVE OUT.** The work of Israel was TO FOLLOW MOSES. The work of Israel was to **PLACE ONE FOOT IN FRONT OF THE OTHER AND MOVE DOWN IN THE VALLEY, AND THROUGH THE VALLEY TO SAFETY ON THE OTHER SIDE.** The enemy was in hot pursuit. The enemy, which is Satan and his demons, working through the Egyptians, would have caught up to and killed Israel. God juxtaposed Himself between Israel and Satan. He would not allow SATAN OR HIS AGENTS OF DEATH TO TOUCH EVEN ONE OF HIS PEOPLE. By HIS POWER THEY WERE PROTECTED UNTO THEIR SALVATION.

What would God have done had Israel TURNED BACK? He would have WITHDRAWN HIS POWER, AND LET EGYPT SLAUGHTER THEM. His protection was based upon THEIR CONTINUING TO FORGE AHEAD. As long as they WOULD CONTINUE, AND LABOR, AND STRIVE TO GET TO THE OTHER SIDE, HIS PROTECTION WAS TOTAL, COMPLETE. HIS SHIELD WAS NOT PENETRABLE BY THE ENEMY. There was no way Egypt could stop Israel. It was an impossibility. It may have looked bad, but it was not bad. It may have looked close, but it was not close. **IT WAS A LESSON IN FAITH. IT WAS FAITH IN ACTION, BACKED BY THE POWER OF THE LIVING GOD.**

The Christian is to follow Christ down into the valley of the narrow way. If he does not DRAW BACK TO PERDITION, if he does not LOOK BACK, but keeps his hand on the PLOW, God will protect him all the way unto SALVATION:

*“Who (true believers) **ARE KEPT***

*BY THE **POWER OF GOD***

***THROUGH FAITH UNTO SALVATION***

***READY TO BE REVEALED IN THE LAST TIME.”***

*(1 Peter 1:5)*

The word “kept” is ‘phroureo’ which means **TO BE A WATCHER IN ADVANCE, TO MOUNT A GUARD, TO HEM IN, TO PROTECT, TO KEEP WITH A GARRISON**. Who does the protecting? Is it not God? Is it not a SUPERNATURAL PROTECTION, A SUPERNATURAL POWER? The word “power” is ‘dunamis’, which means **MIRACULOUS POWER, POWER, STRENGTH OR ABILITY**. The believer is PROTECTED BY THE SUPERNATURAL POWER OF GOD. Nothing can touch him unto salvation. NOTHING WHATEVER. Just as Moses and Israel were protected from Satan and his agents, the demonized Egyptians, so too is the believer WHO IS WALKING THE NARROW WAY FULLY AND TOTALLY PROTECTED BY GOD UNTO THE CONSUMMATION, THE FINDING OF LIFE, THE FINDING OF AGAPE LOVE.

This has to be true because Satan would kill every believer that began to search for God. Satan is in dominion here. He runs it; he owns it for all practical purposes because Christ has not come to claim possession of it. Satan has one goal: TO PREVENT MANKIND FROM COMING TO CHRIST. It is not because Satan wants company in hellfire; it is because he hates Jesus Christ with a passion we cannot believe. He also hates man with a passion you cannot believe. Do you really believe he will let anyone go without a fight? Do you not think he will attempt by whatever means there are to SCARE YOU OFF, BLUFF YOU OFF, DECEIVE YOU, SIDETRACK YOU? Do you not think he will use FRIENDS, FAMILY, LOVED ONES, EVEN THE CHURCH ITSELF TO STOP YOU, TO PREVENT YOU FROM YOUR IDIOTIC SEARCH FOR TRUTH? He would kill you if he were able. You are a THREAT TO HIM, TO HIS WORLD SYSTEM.

The moment a human soul begins to perceive that it is in danger of hellfire, and begins to move to find the truth, **INSTANTLY DOES SATAN DISPATCH DEMONS BY GREAT NUMBERS TO STOP THIS SEARCH**. It would be successful except for one thing: THE POWER OF GOD PROHIBITS IT. God will not allow that soul to be killed. He will allow SATAN AND HIS DEMONS TO TEST THAT SOUL, TO TRY THAT SOUL. By that testing, which comes in many forms, usually diversions, or long periods of silence on God’s part does Christ test and forge YOUR FAITH. Just as Noah must have gotten up many mornings and looked out and said: “DO I HAVE TO WORK ON THIS BOAT AGAIN? Can’t I have a VACATION? Can’t I do something else?” Noah KNEW THE ANSWER. So he collected himself together and CONTINUED.

God then protects the believer who is walking the narrow way from ALL THE FORCES that will rise up against him or her, to prevent the reaching of the goal. Did Israel look back? Did Moses turn back into the arms of the Egyptians? Not at all. With great faith HE STEPPED OUT, AND THEY MOVED OUT

INTO THE NARROW WAY, THROUGH THE RED SEA, TO SAFETY ON THE OTHER SIDE. Once they had reached the LAND OF GOD, and once they had SEEN THEIR DELIVERANCE, God closed the sea and destroyed the enemy. There is a lesson here in that once a believer COMES INTO AGAPE LOVE, THE ENEMY HAS BEEN DESTROYED. Once again we find TWO TYPES OF FAITH: FAITH IN, AND FAITH OF.

**“BY FAITH ABRAHAM,  
WHEN HE WAS CALLED TO GO OUT INTO A PLACE WHICH HE SHOULD  
AFTER  
RECEIVE FOR AN INHERITANCE,**

**OBEYED:**

**AND HE WENT OUT, NOT KNOWING WHITHER HE  
WENT.”**

**(Hebrews 11:8)**

Read this carefully. BY FAITH IN GOD ABRAHAM, WHEN HE WAS CALLED, OBEYED THE CALL AND WENT OUT. In other words, **HE MOVED OUT, HE ACTUALLY DID SOMETHING**. He left his family, his friends, his career, his business, and HE WENT OUT AND DID NOT KNOW WHERE HE WAS GOING. But he went anyway, because GOD CALLED HIM OUT. He was to go, it says, **TO A PLACE WHERE HE WOULD RECEIVE AN INHERITANCE**. Notice how it is worded: HE HAD TO TRAVEL THE DISTANCE TO THE PLACE WHERE HE WOULD RECEIVE THE INHERITANCE. He did not receive the inheritance first, and then travel second, HE TRAVELED FIRST, HE OBEYED FIRST, HE WENT OUT FIRST, AND DID WHAT GOD COMMANDED HE DO. After he had done all of this, ABRAHAM RECEIVED HIS INHERITANCE.

Surely you can see the parallel here to the CALLING OF GOD TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND SOJOURN ALONG THE NARROW WAY TO A PLACE YOU KNOW NOT TO RECEIVE YOUR PROMISED INHERITANCE OF AGAPE LOVE, OR REGENERATION. Did not Jesus tell us to GO TO THE LOWEST ROOM, AND THERE WAIT FOR THE ONE WHO CALLED? Abraham did not know where he was going, and you do not either. Your search for God with all of your heart will have many twists and turns in it, and you do not know where it will lead. You do not need to know, you only need to TRUST GOD THAT HE WILL DELIVER THE PROMISE: AGAPE LOVE REVEALED, AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED.

It was all done by FAITH. This type of faith is a DEEP ABIDING, CONTINUING FAITH, A DOING FAITH, THE FAITH OF CHRIST. It begins with FAITH IN GOD. It ends up in an OBEDIENT FAITH, A FAITH THAT DOES WHAT GOD DEMANDS, THE FAITH OF CHRIST, THE FAITH OF ABRAHAM. Modern Christians do not have any faith in God. They rationalize everything; they refuse to simply STEP OUT IN BOLD FAITH AND DO WHAT GOD COMMANDS. He says for you to ASK, SEEK, KNOCK, STRIVE, LABOR, GIVE ALL DILIGENCE UNTIL YOU FIND SOMETHING. Unless you found something, you would search forever! You are to **FIND SOMETHING, AN EVIDENCE, A SECURITY DEPOSIT, A PROOF**.

The modern Christian refuses this type of faith, and is bound by rank unbelief. He does not believe God will support him, he does not believe that God requires him to do anything except BELIEVE AND

HAVE FAITH. His faith is a faith WITHOUT WORKS, A DEAD FAITH, A FAITH THAT DAMNS ONE TO ETERNAL RUIN. That is why the many Christians are rejected: THEIR FAITH, ALTHOUGH ENOUGH TO MOVE MOUNTAINS, WAS NOT ENOUGH TO MOVE THEM THROUGH THE NARROW WAY. Their faith was a FAITH IN THE SUBSTITUTIONARY ATONEMENT OF JESUS CHRIST. They had faith enough to move mountains IN CHRIST, but they refused THE FAITH OF CHRIST. We are now going to examine what kind of faith the Bible says SAVES YOU. It puts the lie to all of the modern FAITH GOSPEL. THEY ARE LIARS, SATAN'S FINEST, FOR THEY MOCK GOD, AND THEY MOCK CHRIST.

*“And the father of circumcision to them who are not  
of the circumcision only,*

**BUT WHO ALSO WALK IN THE STEPS**

**OF THAT FAITH**

**OF**

**OUR FATHER ABRAHAM,  
WHICH HE HAD BEING YET UNCIRCUMCISED.”**

**(Romans 4:12)**

Notice there is a WALKING IN THE FAITH OF ABRAHAM. When you see this, it is not referring to the fact that ABRAHAM HAD A FAITH THAT SAVES US ALL. It is not saying that ABRAHAM DID OUR SAVING BY HIS FAITH. It is saying that IF WE HAVE THE SAME FAITH THAT ABRAHAM HAD, AND IF WE, BY THAT FAITH, BY THAT CONVICTION, WALK THE WALK ABRAHAM WALKED, that we too will inherit the promise. The reference to circumcision is a reference to LAW KEEPING, OR LEGALISM. Paul is contrasting FAITH WITH LAW.

You see, Abraham had a faith of OBEDIENCE. HE DID WHAT HE WAS TOLD TO DO. He actually left Ur and went on a long journey. Ur is a type of the world for the Christian. Christ bids him to leave the world, to leave Ur, to walk the narrow way, to leave the ritual of religion in the outer court, and to journey past the veil, through the inner court right into the Holy of Holies. That is why Christ tore the veil, to make THE WAY FOR US. THE WAY IS THE NARROW WAY. THE NARROW WAY IS THE WAY OF CIRCUMCISION, FOR GOD IS GOING TO CIRCUMCISE THAT HEART.

*“Therefore it is **OF FAITH,**  
**THAT IT MIGHT BE BY GRACE;***

***TO THE END THE PROMISE MIGHT BE SURE TO ALL THE SEED;***

***NOT TO THAT ONLY WHICH IS OF THE LAW,***

***BUT TO THAT ALSO WHICH IS***

**OF THE FAITH OF ABRAHAM; WHO IS THE FATHER OF US ALL.”**

Grace and faith always go together. Grace brought Christ, and Christ showed us THE WAY to enter the New Covenant. It is God's unmerited favor to mankind that EVEN ALLOWS ENTRANCE TO HEAVEN AT ALL. That alone is grace beyond imagination. How dare we then **DEMAND ANOTHER WAY INTO THE SHEEPFOLD, ANOTHER WAY INTO HEAVEN?** Christ demanded we come in VIA HIM, AND HIM ALONE. You either enter in by the STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO WHERE CHRIST IS, or you WILL NOT EVER HAVE UNION WITH HIM. Your opinions do not matter to God, HIS WORD STANDS. You either WALK THE WALK, OR YOU PERISH. There are no options.

First of all, Abraham BELIEVED GOD, AND HAD FAITH IN GOD. Secondly, his faith in God became the faith OF GOD. God's will became Abraham's will. God's desire became Abraham's desire. God's hope became Abraham's hope. THE TWO WERE IN AGREEMENT. THEY WALKED TOGETHER. THIS WAS THE FAITH OF ABRAHAM. The modern Christian claims he has a great faith in Christ, and even do wonder works to prove it. But his faith is vanity; it is sheer vanity, for it will not save him in the end. His faith is always IN CHRIST, and he never does obtain the FAITH **OF** CHRIST. He never does what Christ commands he do. He never gets under the WILL OF GOD, THE SAYINGS OF JESUS. He never does anything except mouth off about what a great faith he has IN JESUS. He dies in his trespasses and sins.

According to Paul, the FAITH OF ABRAHAM, IF WALKED AS ABRAHAM WALKED IT, MAKES THE PROMISE SURE TO ALL THE SEED. It is not by law, says Paul; it is BY THE FAITH **OF** ABRAHAM. So then, we are to do what Abraham did. We are to leave Ur, we are to travel where we know not, and we are to wait for the promise. If we wait, THE PROMISE WILL BE MADE SURE. The word "sure" is 'bebaios' which means **STEADFAST, SURE, FIRM, POSITIVE OR FORCE**. In other words, the concept that God has in mind has an END TO IT; THAT THE PROMISE OF A NEW HEART WOULD BE MADE POSITIVE, A SURE THING. Not to Israel only, BUT ALSO to all those that EXERCISED THE FAITH OF ABRAHAM. It is the "seed". The word "seed" is 'sperma' which means **OFFSPRING, ISSUE OR REMNANT**.

The promise is not made to those of the law (Israel) ONLY, but to all those who HAVE THE FAITH **OF** ABRAHAM, that is all those WHO WILL LEAVE UR AND TRAVEL THE JOURNEY OF THE NARROW WAY TO OBTAIN THEIR INHERITANCE. If you refuse it, you will not obtain it, and all of your protests to the contrary will not save you. Either do it, or die.

*"Knowing that a man **IS NOT JUSTIFIED BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW,***

*but **BY THE FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST,***

*even we have believed **IN** Jesus Christ,*

*that we **MIGHT BE JUSTIFIED***

**BY THE FAITH OF CHRIST,**

**and not BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW:**

**FOR BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW SHALL NO FLESH BE JUSTIFIED.”**

**(Galatians 2:16)**

Here we have a positive proof of the TWO TYPES OF FAITH. FAITH IN CHRIST, AND THE FAITH OF CHRIST. When you read about the faith of Christ, it is not telling you that JESUS, BY HIS OWN FAITH SAVES YOU, but that THE FAITH THAT JESUS HAD WITHIN HIM, THE FAITH OF OBEDIENCE TO DEATH UPON THE CROSS, IS THE FAITH REQUIRED OF YOU.

Modern Christian theology maintains that IT WAS THE FAITH OF CHRIST THAT ENABLED HIM TO DIE FOR YOU AND I, AND BY HIS DEATH WE ARE JUSTIFIED. It is a HALF-TRUTH, and in the things of God a half-truth is a whole lie. You are to EXERCISE YOUR FAITH, AND WALK THE WALK OF THE NARROW WAY. That is the FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST. Jesus walked His walk. He finished His work. THAT IS ONE HALF OF IT. You are called upon to PICK UP YOUR OWN CROSS AND FOLLOW HIM. That means you are to WALK THE WALK OF JESUS, AND USE HIS EXAMPLE AS THE TYPE OF FAITH IT REQUIRES.

If this were not true, Christ is a liar. It was Christ that demanded that WE PICK UP OUR OWN CROSS. He was very pointed. He did not say anywhere that He would pick ours up if we did not like the idea. He did not say He would enter the strait gate and walk the narrow way if we thought it more than we could bear. HIS COMMANDS ARE BLUNT, DIRECT, AND REAL. The many found out the hard way just how real those commands were! The only way you can be crucified with Christ is to walk the narrow way to the death. Otherwise you will abide ALONE.

We start with a FAITH IN CHRIST JESUS. He is the author of our faith. He is the finisher of our faith. He commands that we DO SOMETHING. He commands that WE ASK, BEG, CRAVE, SEEK, SEARCH, STRIVE, LABOR AND GIVE ALL DILIGENCE. We cannot DENY His commands. They are there for all to see, the writers of the Epistles agree, and it is sealed in the Book of Revelation. If your religious bias prevents you from doing as commanded, you will perish. God does not care what rationales you use to DISOBEY. Disobedience brings with it ETERNAL RUIN.

Paul is very explicit. No man is JUSTIFIED by the works of the law. The narrow way is not a work of any law. It is not a work of righteousness, of good deeds, or anything else. It is a way of JUDGMENT UNTO DEATH. It is not a walk of HOLINESS, BUT A WAY TO PROVE JUST HOW UNHOLY YOU REALLY ARE. Notice what it says:

**WE ARE JUSTIFIED BY THE FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST.**

We are NOT justified by faith IN Jesus Christ. Paul says that even we have FAITH IN CHRIST, that we might be JUSTIFIED BY, I REPEAT, JUSTIFIED BY THE FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST. Do you understand what Paul is trying to say? We put our faith IN CHRIST, and then we ASK, SEEK, KNOCK, STRIVE, LABOR, WHICH IS THE FAITH OF CHRIST, AND BY THAT TYPE OF FAITH, we WILL become JUSTIFIED. What justifies us before God? AGAPE LOVE. When we journey the narrow way, Christ said sooner or later we would FIND. He said sooner or later the door would be OPENED. He said that sooner or later WE WOULD RECEIVE THE PROMISE. Until we FIND IT, UNTIL IT IS OPENED

TO US, WE ARE TO CONTINUE. WE ARE NOT TO DRAW BACK, WE ARE NOT TO SURRENDER, WE ARE NOT TO YIELD, WE ARE NOT TO QUIT. We are to fight the fight of faith right up until CHRIST COMES TO SHOW US THE MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE.

The faith of Christ was a faith that SENT HIM TO THE CROSS AND BEYOND. We are commanded we do it. The act of crucifixion is not pleasant; it is OFFENSIVE TO THE WORLD. It goes against the grain, against pride, arrogance and the religions of man. Man screams to God we will not have THIS MAN CHRIST RULE OVER US. WE WILL NOT GO TO THE CROSS OURSELVES. We will NOT ENTER IN AS YOU COMMAND, BUT WE WILL PLUNDER HEAVEN BY THE POWER OF HELL, AND WE WILL DRAG YOU AND YOUR SON CHRIST DOWN TO HELL WITH US. He who sits in the heavens shall laugh, and He shall vex them in His SORE DISPLEASURE. They will die and go into a Christ-less, loveless eternity. What a shame that millions will not enter in.

*“But if, **WHILE WE SEEK TO BE JUSTIFIED**  
**BY CHRIST,**  
**WE OURSELVES ALSO ARE FOUND SINNERS,**  
**IS THEREFORE CHRIST THE MINISTER OF SIN?**  
**GOD FORBID.”**  
**(Galatians 2:17)***

If justification is instant and immediate as the modern false prophets claim, then why does Paul say WE ARE TO **SEEK BEING JUSTIFIED BY CHRIST**? The very words used CONFIRM THE NARROW WAY. We are to SEEK JUSTIFICATION. We are to ASK, BEG, CRAVE, HUNGER, THIRST, LABOR, FIGHT, STRIVE AND SEARCH FOR THE JUSTIFICATION OF CHRIST. How do we obtain it? By finding Christ, by searching Him out, by walking the way to DEATH UPON THE CROSS, to dying only to find the life of AGAPE LOVE IN CHRIST JESUS. We find justification by walking the NARROW WAY UNTO LIFE. In that walk, WE ARE GOING TO BE FOUND SINNERS. We are going to be FOUND OUT. Be sure your sin will find you out, because it WILL FIND YOU OUT. **Your sin is your lack of agape love.** Christ is the only name under the heavens by which we may find it. DO AS HE COMMANDS AND YOU WILL FIND IT.

If we refuse to pick up our cross, if we refuse the narrow way, then WE FRUSTRATE THE GRACE AND FAITH OF GOD. We cause it to be offered to us in VAIN. The whole concept of Christ dying on the cross was to affect A KINSMAN-REDEEMER PURCHASE. That is the foundation upon which the New Covenant rests. Christ then PURCHASED THE HUMAN RACE. He is then KING OF KINGS, LORD OF LORDS. If He is then the King, do you not think He has the right to ESTABLISH THE PARAMETERS TO ENTER INTO THE NEW COVENANT? If He is indeed the AUTHOR of our SALVATION, do you think He has the right to SET DOWN SPECIFIC REQUIREMENTS? Do you think He has the right to issue certain COMMANDS? His commands are quite clear to anyone who wants to find the real truth. Because Christ is the SOVEREIGN, He did not come down to the United Nations and ask the world to ratify and agree with His treaty of AGAPE LOVE. He issued HIS COMMANDS. If you refuse those commands, you MOCK CHRIST, YOU MOCK GOD, AND YOU WILL DIE AND BE REJECTED.

We are found sinners IN THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE. We are to enter into JUDGMENT WITH GOD. He will bring us down, destroy us, and prove us ALL SINNERS. It is very experiential, it is a lengthy process, and it is not done by a simple decision for Christ, but is instead done by a deep, abiding



faith in the promises of God. If He said He would deliver, you better count on that as a fact, for He will deliver you to heaven, or to hell, and the choice is yours.

*“Yea doubtless, and I count all things but LOSS  
FOR THE EXCELLENCY OF*

**THE KNOWLEDGE OF CHRIST JESUS MY LORD:**  
*for whom I HAVE SUFFERED THE LOSS OF ALL THINGS,  
AND DO COUNT THEM BUT DUNG, THAT I MAY WIN CHRIST.*

*And be found IN HIM,  
not having mine OWN RIGHTEOUSNESS,  
WHICH IS OF THE LAW,  
BUT THAT WHICH IS THROUGH*

**THE FAITH OF CHRIST,**  
**THE RIGHTEOUSNESS WHICH IS OF GOD BY FAITH.”**  
(Philippians 3:8-9)

Again we find the LAW AND FAITH CONTRASTED. Again we find that THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF CHRIST IS FOUND THROUGH THE FAITH OF CHRIST. I repeat: RIGHTEOUSNESS IS FOUND ONLY THROUGH THE FAITH OF CHRIST. Not faith IN Christ, but by the faith OF Christ. The righteousness of God is HIS AGAPE LOVE. We are therefore to strive until we FIND THAT RIGHTEOUSNESS, and once we have found it, TO PERFECT IT, TO PURGE OURSELVES, TO MAKE US FIT AND USEFUL TO THE KINGDOM OF CHRIST.

*“Even THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD*

**WHICH IS BY FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST**

*unto all and upon all them that BELIEVE:  
For there is no difference:  
FOR ALL HAVE SINNED, AND COME SHORT OF  
THE GLORY OF GOD.”*  
(Romans 3:22)

Again we find total confirmation. It is BY THE FAITH **OF** JESUS CHRIST THAT WE WILL COME INTO THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD, THAT IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT.

*“But the Scripture hath concluded ALL UNDER SIN,*

**THAT THE PROMISE BY FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST  
MIGHT BE GIVEN TO THEM THAT BELIEVE.”**  
(Galatians 3:22)

The promise of eternal life, the promise of agape love bestowment only comes to those who ARE OBEDIENT, AND OBEDIENCE IS THE HALLMARK OF THE FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST. The many were NOT obedient. They refused Christ, they contradicted Christ, they disavowed the commands of Christ, they invented all sorts of rationales and theology to CIRCUMVENT THE CROSS OF CHRIST, **FOR IT WAS AN OFFENSE UNTO THEM.** They could not STAND THE IDEA THAT THEY THEMSELVES HAD TO PICK UP THEIR OWN CROSS, AND WITH THE FAITH OF CHRIST, WITH THE OBEDIENCE OF CHRIST, WALK THE WAY TO DEATH TO FIND THE LIFE OF AGAPE LOVE.

They substituted the FAITH OF CHRIST with a faith IN CHRIST. They substituted THEIR OWN NATURAL PHILEO LOVE FOR THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. They insisted that they were the TRUE SONS AND DAUGHTERS OF GOD, and plundered the household of God, and took all of the promises **BY AN ACT OF FAITH.** When they stand before Christ they are shocked beyond anything we can imagine: **THEY ARE DISCOVERED TO BE BASTARD SONS AND DAUGHTERS, CAST AWAY FOREVER AND EVER.** They did not understand that the FAITH OF CHRIST was something THEY HAD TO DEVELOP, THAT THEY HAD TO HAVE. They thought it meant that the FAITH OF CHRIST HIMSELF WAS WHAT SAVED THEM. They thought the doctrine of substitution DID IT ALL.

We then must decide for ourselves what is meant by the phrase **FAITH OF CHRIST.** When we accept that the faith OF Christ refers to a TYPE OF FAITH WE MUST HAVE, then it falls into **perfect harmony with the narrow way and being crucified by faith.** It would take the faith of Christ to stand under the rebuke of God, the reproof of the narrow way. It falls into total harmony with **FIGHT, STRIVE, LABOR, BEG, CRAVE,** and the other like words. We then find a perfect harmony, a perfect portrait is painted that we cannot misinterpret.

**“Here is the PATIENCE OF THE SAINTS:**

**HERE ARE THEY THAT**

**KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD,**

**AND THE FAITH OF JESUS.”**

(Revelation 14:12)

Did you read that? Read it again. THE PATIENCE OF THE SAINTS IS THIS:

### **1. TO KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD.**

The word “keep” is ‘tereo’ which means **TO PREVENT FROM ESCAPING, TO KEEP, TO GUARD FROM LOSS, OR INJURY.** In other words, TO BE OBEDIENT TO, AND TO DO THEM ON A

CONSISTENT BASIS. The word “commandments” is ‘entule’ which means **INJUNCTIONS, AUTHORITATIVE PRESCRIPTION, OR COMMANDMENTS**. It does not refer to the law so much as to THE SAYINGS OF JESUS, AND TO DO THE WILL OF THE FATHER. Jesus said if ANY MAN WOULD KEEP HIS SAYINGS, HE WOULD BUILD HIS HOUSE UPON THE ROCK. The rock is the LIVING CHRIST. It is not the historical Christ, which LAID THE FOUNDATION FOR OUR FAITH, but the living Christ WHO SAVES US. He is the rock, and we MUST GO TO HIM.

The command of Christ was that we **STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE**, and further that we **WALK THE NARROW WAY TO FIND LIFE**. Because it is an implied lengthy process, then of course we have TO KEEP HIS COMMANDMENTS. Further, after we have FOUND agape love, we are commanded to **PERFECT IT**, and to **REMAIN IN THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST**.

## **2. THEY HAVE THE FAITH OF JESUS.**

Notice that it does not say FAITH **IN** JESUS. It says that THEY KEEP THE FAITH **OF** JESUS. They develop and maintain the faith that Jesus had, the faith that enabled Him to **OVERCOME AND TO BE OBEDIENT UNTO THE DEATH, EVEN THE DEATH OF THE CROSS**. So we have a total confirmation that it is the FAITH **OF** CHRIST that we have to develop and exercise. We must be obedient and we MUST pick up our cross, and we must walk the narrow way OURSELVES. Christ will not do it for you, He commanded you to do it.

We find then that the narrow way ultimately defines what SAVING FAITH REALLY IS. It is a faith that has been **TRIED IN THE FIRE, TESTED AND APPROVED OF GOD**. It is a deep abiding faith that sets the face as flint, that **HAS THE OBJECTIVE OF FINDING THE LIVING CHRIST, THE MYSTERY OF GOD IRRESPECTIVE OF THE COST TO THE BELIEVER**. As Paul, who had the faith of Christ, lost everything to GAIN A KNOWLEDGE OF THE SON OF GOD, we too are commanded to likewise leave everything behind to find Christ. We find then, a complete confirmation of the narrow way, and we have uncovered the lie of the modern faith movement, of INSTANT SALVATION, BY A SIMPLE DECISION. It stands utterly opposed to the Lord Jesus Christ and His doctrines, which is why He condemned the ENTIRE ANON WITH GREAT JOY CHRISTIANS in the parable of the sower. THEY HAD NO ROOT. They never went the narrow way to ESTABLISH THEIR ROOTS, to have their faith of a mustard seed turned into a TREE.

Now then, we begin to perceive what James meant when he attacked armchair faith, faith without works. He was blunt, ALL FAITH, IF IT IS REAL, HAS A WORK:

***“But BE YE DOERS OF THE WORD (OBEY THE COMMANDS),  
and not HEARERS ONLY,  
DECEIVING YOUR OWN SELVES (THE MANY).***

***For if any BE A HEARER OF THE WORD,***

***AND NOT A DOER, HE IS LIKE UNTO A MAN  
BEHOLDING HIS NATURAL FACE IN A GLASS:***

***FOR HE BEHOLDETH HIMSELF, AND GOETH HIS WAY,  
AND STRAIGHTWAY FORGETTETH WHAT MANNER OF MAN HE WAS.***

*But WHOSO LOOKETH INTO THE PERFECT LAW OF LIBERTY,*

**AND CONTINUETH THEREIN,**

*HE BEING NOT A FORGETFUL HEARER,*

**BUT A DOER OF THE WORK,**

*THIS MAN SHALL BE BLESSED IN HIS DEED.”*

(James 1:22-25)

There is a two-fold application here. Part of the work of God is to be CHARITABLE TO OTHERS. Part of the work of God is to give to those who do not have. The vast majority of Christians were **DOERS OF THIS TYPE OF WORK**. They paid their tithes, gave their alms, and did mighty and wonderful works. The latter day Church has GREAT SOCIAL WELFARE PROGRAMS. They follow THESE commands of the Lord with great vigor. THEIR MISTAKE IS THAT THEY DO NOT DO **THE FIRST WORK**.

The **FIRST WORK** of the Lord is ‘SEEK YE **FIRST** THE KINGDOM OF GOD, AND HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS’. Christ was very specific. We are to SEEK THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD **FIRST**, ABOVE AND BEYOND ANYTHING ELSE. After we have laid hold of the AGAPE LOVE of Christ, then we are to do **THE SECOND WORK**. If we do the second work, without the FIRST WORK, then is our religion VANITY. We cannot put the cart before the horse, we cannot claim a righteousness we do not possess, and we cannot **AGAPE LOVE ANYONE UNTIL AND UNLESS WE HAVE WALKED THE NARROW WAY TO OBTAIN IT**.

If you are to be a DOER OF THE WORD, and not just a hearer only, THEN YOU ARE TO OBEY THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST. To be a DOER MEANS TO DO IT. The word “doer” is ‘poietes’ which means **PERFORMER, A DOER, TO PERFORM OR TO CARRY OUT**. It means to **BE OBEDIENT TO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST AND ACTUALLY PERFORM THEM, CARRY THEM OUT TO THEIR FINISHED WORK**. The “many” were under a deception. James said they DECEIVED THEMSELVES. The word “deceiving” is ‘paralogizomai’ which means to **MISRECKON, TO DELUDE, TO BE UNDER A DELUSION, TO BE DECEIVED**. We are to then ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY FIRST, IN ORDER TO OBTAIN LIFE, and then we are to be charitable, and do the works of charity.

Modern Christian theology claims instant conversion and regeneration, and union with Christ immediately, and then they proceed with **THE SECOND WORK**. They do not recognize, nor understand the **FIRST WORK**. They bypass it utterly, claiming a regeneration they do not have, a new nature they do not possess, an agape love that is not in them, and they boldly go forth and do great works **IN THEIR OWN PHILEO LOVE, CLAIMING IT IS THE LOVE OF GOD**. They are under deception, a deception caused by damnable heresy, brought into the Church totally undetected by the church at large, by the many. As a result, they stand before Christ in utter shock, and protest by pointing out **ALL OF THEIR WORKS**.

They had works. They performed mighty works even with supernatural power under the name of Jesus. They were miracle workers. They also performed great works of charity, and had massive programs to feed the poor, house the homeless, and put clothing on their backs. THESE ARE THE SECOND WORKS. Christ never denied them. He never said to them, “YOU DID NOT. YOU ARE A BUNCH OF LIARS, YOU DID NOTHING, YOU HAD NO WORKS WHATEVER.” Christ did not say that because

it would not have been true. YOU SEE, THEY DID DO THE SECOND WORK. They did do all of the SECONDARY COMMANDS. They were not held guilty on that charge. Don't read into the answer of Christ what is not there. He said simply and bluntly: "I NEVER KNEW YOU". He meant exactly what He said.

He did not ever come into union with them, because **THEY DID NOT DO THE FIRST WORK.** The command of Christ was to SEEK **FIRST** THE KINGDOM OF GOD AND HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS, WHICH WE KNOW IS AGAPE LOVE. That is the FIRST thing we are to do. Christ did not say go forth and be a missionary, a preacher boy, an evangelists, a teacher, or anything else: HE SAID TO **SEEK FIRST THE KINGDOM OF GOD** WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART, SOUL, MIND AND STRENGTH.

## **THAT IS THE FIRST WORK.**

James said BE YE A DOER OF THE WORD. Not a hearer, but a DOER. Are you busy doing the **SECOND WORK, AND HAVE NEGLECTED THE FIRST WORK?** If you neglect the FIRST WORK, you cannot enter heaven, regardless of how much of the SECOND WORK you accomplish for Him. Entrance to heaven is NOT BASED UPON WORKS (WHICH ARE THE SECOND WORK), BUT INSTEAD UPON GRACE AND FAITH. GRACE AND FAITH ARE THE FIRST WORK, THE WORK OF THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. The first work is what AVAILS US OF THE GRACE OF GOD, OF THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD. James also said we are to look into the perfect law of liberty, which is another way of saying THE WORD OF GOD, AND THE MEANING BEHIND THE WORD OF GOD: AGAPE. He says we are TO CONTINUE, AND TO ABIDE, TO REMAIN.

Do you understand what happens here? The Church of today, which proclaims immediate salvation, adamantly insists there IS **NO FIRST WORK**, because Christ did it all for us. They then immediately jump into the SECOND WORK, UNDER A FULL DECEPTION, AND **ARE REJECTED AT THE JUDGMENT SEAT.** The real believer DOES THE FIRST WORK FIRST, he walks the narrow way unto death, he meets the living Christ, they enter into union together, and that believer has **AVAILED HIMSELF OF THE GRACE OF GOD, AND NOW HAS THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF CHRIST BECAUSE CHRIST BESTOWS THAT TO HIM.** That believer has then ACCOMPLISHED THE FIRST WORK. He is then to go on and **PERFECT THE AGAPE LOVE HE HAS WITH THE SECOND WORK.**

**"But wilt thou know, O VAIN MAN,  
THAT FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD?"**

**WAS NOT ABRAHAM OUR FATHER  
JUSTIFIED BY WORKS,  
WHEN HE HAD OFFERED ISAAC HIS SON UPON THE ALTAR?**

**SEEST THOU HOW FAITH WROUGHT WITH HIS WORKS,  
AND BY WORKS WAS FAITH MADE PERFECT?"**

**(James 2:20-22)**

***If this does not prove to you, that the modern faith movement is a lie, then nothing will.*** Paul said we are justified by the LAW OF FAITH. James says we are JUSTIFIED BY OUR WORKS. What are they speaking of? Simply this: ***TRUE FAITH, THE FAITH THAT BRINGS OBEDIENCE, BRINGS WITH IT ACTION.*** James says that OUR FAITH IS MADE PERFECT BY OUR WORKS. In other words, we PUT OUR FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST, AND THEN WE PUT ON THE FAITH ***OF*** CHRIST, AND WE DO THE WORK CHRIST COMMANDED: “Enter ye in at the strait gate...walk the narrow way...pick up thy cross...follow me...lose your life.” If we will DO THE WORK COMMANDED, then our ***FAITH WILL BE TRIED IN THE FIRE OF THE NARROW WAY AND BE MADE PERFECT.*** Is it wrong then to say that OUR WORKS MAKES OUR FAITH PERFECT? Is it then wrong to say we are justified by OUR WORK OF THE NARROW WAY? Do you see what James is driving at?

The work of the narrow way is our ***FIRST WORK.*** If we do it, just as Abraham offered up Isaac, then our faith IS TRIED, PUT TO THE TEST, and found perfect. You see, we could say that ABRAHAM REPRESENTS OUR CONSCIOUS MIND, SOUL, WILL AND HEART. We could say that Isaac represents the INNER HEART, THE INNER MAN. God commands US TO OFFER UP OUR INNER HEART! Will you do it? Will you allow your faith to be TESTED AND TRIED BY OBEDIENCE? You see Abraham did WHAT HE WAS TOLD. He took HIS ONLY SON, AND HE LAID HIM ON THE ALTAR. He raised his knife and was about to kill him. It was all done BY THE FAITH OF ABRAHAM who BELIEVED GOD ENOUGH TO OBEY HIM. Abraham actually DID SOMETHING. He complied with a very real demand. It was going to cost him his son. He did it anyway because he believed God.

You have been commanded to walk the narrow way and offer up your life on the altar of God. You have been commanded to offer up your inner man to the death. You must then walk the way to death. You must do as commanded, in spite of everything that tells you to the contrary. It is out of death that comes life. It is out of death that comes AGAPE LOVE. It is the way of God.

***“And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith,  
ABRAHAM BELIEVED GOD,  
AND IT WAS IMPUTED UNTO HIM FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS:  
AND HE WAS CALLED THE FRIEND OF GOD.***

***Ye see then HOW THAT BY WORKS A MAN IS JUSTIFIED,  
AND NOT BY FAITH ONLY.”***

***(James 2:23-24)***

Had Abraham just sat there and prayed: “Lord, I thank thee for this mighty test of my faith. Thank you Lord. By an act of faith now, I picture my boy on the altar. I picture my hand raised in the final act of killing. I now picture his lifeless body there on the altar. I have done it Lord, I have accomplished what you demanded. Thank you for this wonderful test of my faith.” That is NOT what God had in mind. That is NOT faith. That is a SHAM, A LIE. It is the WORK OF THE DOING THAT MAKES THE FAITH TRUE FAITH, THAT MAKES THE FAITH TURN INTO RIGHTEOUSNESS. It is the work of the narrow way ***THAT JUSTIFIES YOU,*** AND THAT WORK IS A WORK OF DEEP ABIDING FAITH ***IN*** CHRIST AND WITH THE FAITH ***OF*** CHRIST. Refuse it, and you will perish.

***“Therefore WE CONCLUDE that a MAN IS JUSTIFIED BY FAITH***

**WITHOUT THE DEEDS OF THE LAW.”**  
**(Romans 3:28)**

James says we are justified by works, Paul says we are justified by the law of faith. This proves that THE WORKS OF THE LAW, THE WORKS OF LAW KEEPING, THE WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, OF GOOD DEEDS HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH JUSTIFICATION BEFORE GOD. It also proves that **THE WORK OF THE NARROW WAY IS NOT A WORK OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, A WORK OF THE LAW, OR LEGALISM AT ALL.**

Do you see how that ALL WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, OF LEGALISM, OF LAW KEEPING, OF ATTEMPTED HOLINESS WORKS DEATH. The work of FAITH, the work of the NARROW WAY, THE FIRST WORK BRINGS LIFE OUT OF DEATH.

## **FAITH AND KNOWING**

We have seen that faith IS DEFINED AS THE FORCE THAT PROPELS ONE THROUGH THE NARROW WAY, IF IT IS THE FAITH **OF** CHRIST, THE FAITH OF OBEDIENCE, THE FAITH OF ACTION. Faith that saves you is a faith that is obedient to the commands of Christ. Faith could therefore be defined as OBEDIENCE, AS A DOING OF THE COMMANDS. Faith is also defined as the evidence of things UNSEEN, NOT KNOWN. Modern Christians proclaim loudly that FAITH IS ALL IN ALL, AND THAT ANY ADDITIONS TO PURE FAITH ARE A HERESY, A WORK, A PERVERSION OF FAITH AND GRACE. Peter puts the lie to that, and adds many things to faith!

They appropriate EVERYTHING BY BELIEF, BY FAITH. If you ask the average Christian how he knows Christ, he will answer BY FAITH. If you ask them how they know they are born again, they will respond BY FAITH. If you ask them how they know they are in union with Christ, they will respond BY FAITH. If you press them, they will become angry, and say **THE BIBLE SAYS I AM SAVED, AND THEREFORE I AM SAVED.** Indeed? Does it say that? We then have to ask a serious question: DOES THE BIBLE ACTUALLY TEACH THAT REGENERATION AND UNION WITH CHRIST IS APPROPRIATED BY AN ACT OF FAITH? The answer will stun you: **NO!** It teaches the **EXACT OPPOSITE.** The doctrine of salvation by an act of faith to APPROPRIATE IT is the very heresy that Christ and Peter warned would sweep the Church.

The Bible does NOT teach you anywhere that SALVATION IS SIMPLY APPROPRIATED BY A SIMPLE ACT OF FAITH. When the Bible says we are SAVED BY FAITH, it is saying that **FAITH IS THE DYNAMIC THAT PROPELS YOU THROUGH THE NARROW WAY UNTIL YOU MAKE CONTACT WITH THE LIVING CHRIST.** Does the Bible say “Behold, what manner OF FAITH the Father hath bestowed upon us that we be called the sons of God?” NO! It is very specific about what CONSTITUTES SALVATION: GRACE IS NOT IT, NOR FAITH. **IT IS THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE THAT SAVES US,** THAT JUSTIFIES US, THAT BRINGS US INTO UNION WITH CHRIST.

Grace and faith are the underpinnings that provide for, and allow us to walk the narrow way to finding the living Christ. The Bible does not anywhere tell you to make a decision for Christ, but it does tell you a multitude of times **TO BE OBEDIENT TO THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST**. That is why CONVERSION is a strait gate and NARROW WAY away from REGENERATION. Grace supplied us with the narrow way, and faith allows us to walk it.

Jesus said we are to ask and we will be given. He said knock and the door would be opened. He said seek until you find. How do we know when we have found? Is there an END TO FAITH and a KNOWING? How do you know if you have found something? It may seem like a very foolish question, but it has the gravest of implications. HOW DO YOU KNOW YOU HAVE FOUND SOMETHING?

For example, I tell you that I have put a \$1000 bill out in my lawn. I tell you that if you search diligently for it, you can find it. You know that I am trustworthy, so you decide to abandon all other things you had in mind and you BEGIN YOUR SEARCH. You seek high and low. You examine every area carefully, inch by inch. Nothing deters you. You have decided you are going to find that \$1000 dollar bill or die trying. HOW DO YOU KNOW WHEN YOU HAVE FOUND IT? You would say, that's easy, WHEN YOU SEE IT, WHEN YOU LOCATE IT, WHEN IT IS BEFORE YOUR VERY EYES, WHEN YOU CAN PICK IT UP, AND HOLD IT IN YOUR POSSESSION. You know you have found it when **THE VERY THING YOU ARE LOOKING FOR APPEARS, SHOWS UP.**

How do you prove you have found it? If I asked you to prove to me you had found the \$1000 dollar bill, how would do it? You would **SHOW IT TO ME**. The EVIDENCE you have IS THE ITEM IN QUESTION, **YOU HAVE IT IN YOUR HAND**, YOU SHOW ME. Now you say all of this is OBVIOUS. WHY ARE YOU BEING SO FOOLISH AS TO SPEAK OF THIS? Because the modern Christian DENIES HE NEEDS ANY EVIDENCE WHATSOEVER. He claims **HIS FAITH ALONE IS HIS EVIDENCE**. All he needs is to have FAITH. If he believe the promises of the Bible, THEY BECOME TRUE AS SOON AS HE BELIEVES THEM. He is saved because he believes a few Bible verses that tell him if HE BELIEVES, HE IS SAVED. His salvation is based WHOLLY AND TOTALLY BY BELIEF AND SIMPLE FAITH.

He/she reads in the Scripture a passage that says **BELIEVE ON THE LORD AND THOU SHALT BE SAVED**. There are many such verses. But it is important to realize that THE WORDS FAITH AND BELIEF HAVE BEEN **ELSEWHERE QUALIFIED**. They have been **PRECISELY QUALIFIED BY CONDITIONAL PHRASES**. No Scripture is of PRIVATE interpretation. It cannot be **TAKEN BY ITSELF**. It has to be compared DILIGENTLY with all other Scripture. All of the conditions must be brought in. All of the other parameters the Lord gave us must be brought in to obtain the FULL MEANING OF THE WORDS BELIEVE AND FAITH. When we do this, we emerge with a radically different portrait of THE TRUTH.

Now then, Jesus commanded that we SEEK FIRST THE KINGDOM OF GOD AND HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS. The question is, **HOW DO WE KNOW WE HAVE FOUND IT?** The "many" thought they had found it; they were **POSITIVE OF IT**, yet they had not. Jesus said we are to BEG AND CRAVE (ask) and it would be GIVEN TO US:

**“Ask, and it SHALL BE GIVEN YOU;  
SEEK, and ye SHALL FIND,  
KNOCK, and it SHALL BE OPENED UNTO YOU.”**  
(Matthew 7:7)



We have to look very carefully at the meaning of this. If we are to seek FIRST the Kingdom of God, and HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS, then we would have to KNOW AT SOME POINT WE HAD **FOUND IT**. Jesus says that AFTER WE HAVE FOUND THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD, that God would add all other things to us. **THAT IS A DIRECT STATEMENT THAT THERE IS A POINT OF FINDING, A POINT OF KNOWING YOU HAVE FOUND IT.**

We must go through these one at a time. We are to ask, that is beg and crave, hunger and thirst UNTIL IT IS GIVEN TO US. The word “given” is ‘didomi’ and it means **TO BESTOW, TO BRING FORTH, TO GRANT, TO OFFER UP**. How would we know WHEN TO STOP THIS BEGGING AND CRAVING? How would we KNOW FOR SURE we HAD THE PROMISE? Again, there is a direct IMPLICATION THAT THERE IS A POINT AT WHICH WE CAN **ABSOLUTELY KNOW** WE HAVE BEEN GRANTED WHAT IT IS WE ARE SEEKING.

In the next phase, Jesus says SEEK UNTIL WE FIND. The word “find” here is ‘heurisko’ which means **TO FIND, TO OBTAIN, TO GET, TO PERCEIVE, TO SEE**. In other words, we are to SEEK UNTIL **WE HAVE FOUND** THE ACTUAL ITEM WE ARE SEEKING. We are not to stop until we **UNCOVER THE MYSTERY OF GOD**, THE SECRET OF GOD. Again, we have a POSITIVE proof that there IS A REAL FINDING, A LITERAL FINDING, A PROOF, AN EVIDENCE.

Next Jesus says we are to KNOCK UNTIL IT IS OPENED UNTO US. The word “opened is ‘anoigo’ and it means **TO OPEN UP, TO OPEN, OR TO REVEAL, TO UNCOVER**. In other words you OPEN A BOX TO FIND THE CONTENTS. When you open it up, YOU REVEAL WHAT IS INSIDE. Jesus is clear and blunt: **THE DOOR WILL BE OPENED, AND THE CONTENTS OF HEAVEN WILL BE REVEALED TO THE SEEKER**. Again we find a positive proof that there is to come a point in time WHEN YOU HAVE THE **SECRET REVEALED, WHEN YOU FIND IT.**

***“For EVERY ONE THAT ASKETH RECEIVETH;  
AND HE that SEEKETH FINDETH;  
And to HIM THAT KNOCKETH IT SHALL BE OPENED.”***  
(Matthew 7:8)

There are two very important items we have to look at. One is what Christ said; the other is what He did not say. The reversal of the statements is ALSO THE TRUTH. For those that refuse to ASK, SEEK AND KNOCK the real mystery of God **WILL NOT BE DISCOVERED**. You see, it is ALL **CONDITIONAL**. The RECEIVING, FINDING, OPENING ARE CONDITIONAL UPON THE ASKING, SEEKING AND KNOCKING. The “many” refused to ask, seek and knock. Their theology was a theology of appropriation by **FAITH ALONE, BY A SIMPLE DECISION ALONE**. Their salvation was a ten-minute miracle work.

The “many” THOUGHT they had found the answer. They were POSITIVE OF IT. How else could you stand before the Lord utterly shocked at being REJECTED? The only way this can happen **IS IF YOU CHANGE THE EVIDENCE REQUIRED. YOU CHANGE THE PROOF REQUIRED**. Satan will then move in and **ALTER THE EVIDENCE**, REDEFINE IT. Because we know his agents move in against the narrow way, and REMOVE IT, then we also know that they bring CONVERSION AND REGENERATION TOGETHER, MAKE THEM ONE.

Now if Jesus commands that we WALK THE NARROW WAY TO FIND LIFE, AND THAT **WE WILL KNOW WHEN WE FIND IT**, BECAUSE GOD WILL OPEN IT UP TO US, AND WILL REVEAL IT TO US, which is what the word “opened” means, THEN WE WOULD NOT HAVE THIS EVIDENCE IF WE DID NOT WALK IT. Now if Satan is going to REMOVE THE NARROW WAY, then he also must remove the **EVIDENCE, THE REVELATION, THE OPENING, THE FINDING**. He must then, to remain within Christian concepts MAKE THE **EVIDENCE OF CONVERSION THE EVIDENCE OF REGENERATION**, AND HE WILL **DENY THE REAL EVIDENCE OF REGENERATION**. Read it again. HE WILL MAKE THE EVIDENCES OF CONVERSION THE PROOF OF REGENERATION. HE WILL DENY THE REAL EVIDENCE OF REGENEARTION. He must, he has no choice in the matter.

Remember the false prophets PRIVILY COME IN, and with GREAT STEALTH AND CUNNING LAY A **WHOLE NEW THEOLOGY DOWN THAT LOOKS CORRECT**. But it cannot be correct, for the vast majority of Christians following after them go into eternal ruin. By removing the narrow way, **THE FALSE PROPHETS REMOVE THE FINDING, OPENING, RECEIVING**. They turn around and DENY any EXPERIENTIAL EVIDENCE, THEY DENY SUPERNATURAL REVELATION. They not only deny it, they brand it as SATANIC. **Modern Christian theology is a precise fulfillment of that prophecy.**

**THEY DENY WHOLLY AND UTTERLY THE STRAIT GATE, NARROW WAY, AND THE REVELATION OF CHRIST, THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE, THE PROMISE OF GOD, THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD.**

Modern theology goes even further than this, NOT ONLY DO THEY DENY REVELATION, THEY CLAIM ANY SUCH REVELATION IS SATANIC. They claim all of the revelation is in the BIBLE. THE BIBLE IS IT, FINISHED, COMPLETED, AND NOTHING CAN BE ADDED, AND NOTHING CAN BE SUBTRACTED. That is a true statement as far as it goes. BUT THE SCRIPTURE ITSELF, THE BIBLE ITSELF, **SAYS THERE IS A REVELATION**. It goes even further, and **IT SAYS THAT IF YOU DO NOT HAVE THIS REVELATION, YOU ARE DAMNED**. How do they get around all of this? The words REVEAL, MANIFEST, SEE, KNOW and other like them DO NOT MEAN WHAT THEY SAY.

Because the modern Christian **REFUSES TO PICK UP HIS OWN CROSS, AND REFUSE TO WALK THE NARROW WAY**, he is **OBLIVIOUS TO THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE**. He claims he has it AT CONVERSION. He claims he has it BY FAITH ALONE. He claims he got it WHEN HE ASKED CHRIST INTO HIS HEART. The Bible says no such thing. It says the exact opposite, and you have seen the evidence. Christ does not lie; **only mankind lies**. Modern Christian theology is a MASSIVE FRAUD, A MASSIVE LIE, A DECEPTION OF DECEPTIONS, A FRAUD OF ALL FRAUDS, it is right out of the pits of hell, **engineered by Satan himself, THE FATHER of all lies, and the father of all liars**. Follow it, and YOU WILL PERISH. Do what Christ commands, and **YOU WILL KNOW THERE IS A REVELATION, A FINDING**.

Is our faith supposed to carry us to the EVIDENCE, WHICH IS NOT OF FAITH AT ALL, BUT THE OPPOSITE OF FAITH, A KNOWING? The “many” were positive that they were saved. Obviously they were not. But how could anyone be TOTALLY CONVINCED THEY WERE REGENERATED AND HEAVEN BOUND WHEN THE OPPOSITE WAS TRUE? The answer is that **THEY EMBRACED A THEOLOGY THAT TOLD THEM THEY WERE, WHEN THEY WERE NOT, THEIR THEOLOGY BECAME THEIR EVIDENCE, THEIR REVELATION**. In order for this to happen, THE REAL

EVIDENCE OF SALVATION WOULD HAVE TO BE ALTERED, OR DONE AWAY WITH. In other words, Satan would bring in a **COUNTERFEIT EVIDENCE OR PROOF OF SALVATION**.

This counterfeit would appear to be correct. It would appear on the surface to be Scriptural. It would convince the multitudes of Christians they were in fact saved when in fact they were going to be rejected. IT WOULD THEN HAVE TO APPEAR TO BE CORRECT, BUT IN REALITY THE VERY OPPOSITE OF WHAT CHRIST SAID. The false prophet is one who is capable of **TWISTING SCRIPTURE TO ITS EXACT OPPOSITE MEANING**.

The average Christian today is taught by every major evangelist, from Billy Graham on down that SALVATION IS ACCOMPLISHED BY A DECISION FOR CHRIST, AND THAT CHRIST INSTANTLY ENTERS INTO UNION WITH THE BELIEVER, SEALS THAT BELIEVER, AND WRITES THAT BELIEVER'S NAME DOWN IN THE LAMB'S BOOK OF LIFE. They are told that they have UNION WITH CHRIST from that very moment on. They are told that **this MYSTICAL UNION WITH CHRIST IS NON-EXPERIENTIAL**. They are warned explicitly that there is no "experience" to it, and that **WE ARE TO ACCEPT IT AS A FACT BECAUSE THE BIBLE SAYS SO. IT IS TO BE ACCEPTED AS AN "ACT OF FAITH"**.

The reality of what the Bible says is the exact OPPOSITE. We are now going to prove that salvation does NOT COME by faith at all. When Christ comes, **FAITH IS NOT EVEN OPERATIVE**. Faith is the evidence for **THINGS NOT SEEN**. That is the Biblical definition of faith. It is a conviction, a firm belief that God is, and that God will reward those that diligently seek Him. Obviously He will not reward those THAT DO NOT. We are now going to show you that there is major flaw in modern Christian theology. There is great tension between faith and knowing, and FAITH IS NOT THE KNOWING.

There is a knowing that builds our faith. **That is a sense knowing, a conscious mind knowing**. We read the Scripture and we begin to understand what it means as the Holy Spirit illuminates our minds to the truth of what is being said. **THIS IS A SENSE KNOWING, SOUL KNOWING THAT BUILDS OUR FAITH**. It works in conjunction with faith, and helps to build us up. It has an objective to instill within THE FAITH OF CHRIST. There is also a knowing that is the direct opposite of faith. FAITH IS ONLY USED FOR THE EVIDENCE OF THINGS NOT SEEN. As you study the Bible, and learn **ABOUT** God and Christ, and **ABOUT** the doctrines of salvation and other things, FAITH GROWS, KNOWLEDGE GROWS.

Unseen and unknown to the believer the Holy Spirit starts the real work of conviction of sin, righteousness and judgment. The believer will be brought down to soul death. It is all done by a hard-nosed faith, to keep on pressing on, to keep the faith, to fight the fight, to strive and labor to find **THE TRUTH**. But what is **THE TRUTH**? Do we simply decide BY FAITH AND CLAIM WE HAVE IT? Do we claim BY FAITH, by a decision, by wishful thinking, or positive thinking, that we have FOUND CHRIST? Are we supposed to find Christ, or is Christ supposed to FIND US? Is it a two way process, where we FIND EACH OTHER?

If faith is used only for those things NOT SEEN, then how are we to interpret the following?

***"Now faith is the substance of things hoped for,  
THE EVIDENCE OF THINGS NOT SEEN."***  
(Hebrews 11:1)

VS.

*“And this is the will of him that sent me, **THAT EVERY ONE WHICH  
SEETH THE SON...**”*

**(John 6:40)**

*“Not that any man hath seen the Father, save*

**HE WHICH IS OF GOD,  
HE HATH SEEN THE FATHER.”**

**(John 6:46)**

In the first verse, the word “seen” is ‘blepo’ which means **TO LOOK AT, TO BEHOLD, TO SEE, TO LOOK UPON**. In other words, I do not need faith if I can literally see God. If I could look up in the heavens and see God sitting upon His throne, directing the affairs of the universe, I do not need faith. I can see Him. **FAITH IS ONLY FOR THAT WHICH IS NOT SEEN**. The next verse of Scripture is **A DIRECT OPPOSITE TO FAITH**. It is an **OPPOSING CONCEPT**, and we have an immediate **TENSION POINT BETWEEN FAITH AND SEEING**. It is the will of the Father that we **SEE THE SON**. The word “see” here is ‘theoreo’ which means **TO BE A SPECTATOR OF, TO EXPERIENCE, TO BEHOLD, TO LOOK UPON, TO PERCEIVE, TO SEE**. It does not say we are to be illuminated in our minds by knowledge. It says **WE ARE TO SEE THE SON**.

In other words, **IT IS GOD’S WILL THAT WE BEHOLD THE SON OF GOD**. Remember that Christ said we were to **FIRST SEEK THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD**. He said that **IF WE KNOCKED, THE DOOR WOULD BE OPENED**. In other words, **WE WOULD HAVE REVEALED TO US THE REAL TRUTH**. The truth of **AGAPE LOVE**, which has been closed to us, **WOULD BE OPENED**. God is **AGAPE LOVE**. Christ is **AGAPE LOVE**. After we have seen Him, and **KNOW WHO HE IS**, then we are to **BELIEVE UPON HIS NAME**. This verse is not referring to the cross of Christ 2000 years ago. This verse is speaking of a direct **REVELATION of the Son of God**. There is a reason for it. **AGAPE LOVE WAS LOST AT THE FALL**. It is beyond all knowledge, and it cannot be learned by mankind through the senses. **IT CAN ONLY BE REVEALED BY A SUPERNATURAL ACT OF GOD**. It must be revealed, because **IT IS A HIDDEN MYSTERY, VEILED FROM US BY OUR OWN NATURE**. God must **LIFT THE VEIL**, and when He does, **HE SHOWS US THE SON**. It is **HIS WILL**.

The next verse speaks about that **NO MAN HAS SEEN THE FATHER, SAVE HE THAT IS OF GOD**. Who is of God? The **OBEDIENT ONES**, they are **OF GOD**. They have the faith **OF JESUS**, and they picked up their cross, and they walked the narrow way. They went to the **LOWEST ROOM**, **AND THERE THEY SAT, WAITING FOR THE ONE WHO BID THEM TO COME**. When He that bid them **COMES**, **THEY WILL SEE THE SON**.

*“But when thou art bidden,  
**GO AND SIT DOWN IN THE LOWEST ROOM;  
THAT WHEN HE THAT BADE THEE COMETH,  
HE MAY SAY UNTO THEE, FRIEND,  
GO UP HIGHER...**”*

**(Luke 14:10)**

The word “cometh” here is ‘erchomai’ which means **TO APPEAR, TO COME, TO ACCOMPANY**. We would say to **SHOW UP, TO APPEAR TO US**. We are to SEE THE SON. He is to show us **THE MYSTERY**. Scripture proves it categorically. Many of the verse of Scripture which prophetic scholars use to prove the doctrine of imminence have nothing to do with the Second Advent of Christ, they have to do with the **APPEARING OF CHRIST TO THE BELIEVER, THE UNVEILING OF THE TRUTH, TO ENTER INTO UNION** with the believer. As we already discussed the word ‘go’ means to take JOURNEY. The lowest room represents the **NARROW WAY TO SOUL DEATH, TO THE PIT**. It has to do with the **JUDGMENT OF GOD, AS THE BELIEVER’S WORKS ARE TESTED AGAINST AGAPE LOVE**.

The mystery of God will be unveiled to them, and they **WILL SEE WHO CHRIST IS, THEY WILL BE A SPECTATOR OF THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST**. It is this aspect of Christ that is revealed to the believer, it is this aspect of Christ that **MUST BE SHOWN SO THAT CHRIST AND THE BELIEVER CAN ENTER INTO A COVENANT**. It will be revealed unto them. Scripture proves it. The word for “seen” here is ‘horao’ which means **TO STARE AT, TO DISCERN CLEARLY, TO EXPERIENCE, TO APPEAR, TO BEHOLD, TO SEE**.

There is no question here that we are to SEE the son of man. We are to EXPERIENCE HIM. We will now move into this area of our study, the **REVELATION OF THE MYSTERY**. You must remember that God is a SPIRIT. You must also remember that Scripture says that **SPIRITUAL THINGS CANNOT BE LEARNED BY NATURAL MAN**.

***“But the NATURAL MAN RECEIVETH NOT THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD:***  
***FOR THEY ARE FOOLISHNESS UNTO HIM:***  
***NEITHER CAN HE KNOW THEM,***  
***BECAUSE THEY ARE SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED.***

***BUT HE THAT IS SPIRITUAL***  
***JUDGETH ALL THINGS, YET HE HIMSELF IS JUDGED OF NO MAN.”***  
***(1 Corinthians 2:14-15)***

This is why Christ said the world does **NOT KNOW** the agape love of God. Lost at the fall, out of his nature, **HE CANNOT LEARN IT WITH HIS NATURAL MIND**. The “many” thought they were spiritual, they claimed a UNION they did not have, A SPIRITUAL LOVE THEY DID NOT POSSESS. They thought that the learning of doctrine BROUGHT THEM SPIRITUALITY. In other words, as the Holy Spirit ILLUMINATED THEIR MINDS they thought they were getting more and more spiritual. You can read and MEMORIZE Scripture, and still REFUSE TO COMPLY WITH THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST. DOCTRINE DOES NOT MAKE ONE SPIRITUAL. KNOWING ALL THE FACTS OF THE BIBLE DOES NOT MAKE YOU SPIRITUAL. DOING GOOD WORKS AND WALKING A HOLINESS WALK DOES NOT MAKE YOU SPIRITUAL.

The natural man is the carnal man, the sense man, the soul man. THE BIBLE SAYS CLEARLY THAT PART OF MAN CANNOT LAY HOLD OF THE SPIRITUAL THINGS OF GOD. It is NOT POSSIBLE. That is why Paul said that you could have ALL KNOWLEDGE, KNOW ALL THE MYSTERIES, and still NOT BE SPIRITUAL. What makes a man spiritual is AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, **FOR IT CHANGES HIS NATURE**. The unregenerate person, even those on the

narrow way ARE NOT YET SPIRITUAL. They have not yet been REGENERATED. Being spiritual has nothing to do with your knowledge of God, or your **RELIGIOUS PIETY OR SO CALLED HOLINESS**. True SPIRITUALLY IS BASED UPON THE GIFT OF CHRIST: AGAPE LOVE.

The “many” religious leaders who had GREAT KNOWLEDGE and all of their great works WERE NOT SPIRITUAL. They had not the slightest idea of what TRUE SPIRITUALITY WAS. The word “spiritual” is ‘pneumatikos’ which means **NON-CARNAL, REGENERATE, OF THE SUPERNATURAL**. True SPIRITUAL MAN IS THE REGENERATE MAN, THE BORN AGAIN MAN. Notice what it says: THE NATURAL MAN CANNOT KNOW SPIRITUAL THINGS. It means what it says. Reading the Bible, and memorizing the Scripture do not make you SPIRITUAL. It gives you SENSE KNOWLEDGE, SOUL KNOWLEDGE. That form of knowledge is of the EARTH, EARTHLY.

If this is true, and Scripture declares openly it is, THEN NO MATTER HOW MUCH ‘ILLUMINATION’ YOU RECEIVE FROM THE HOLY SPIRIT IT IS NOT GOING TO MAKE YOU SPIRITUAL. The reason is because THE MIND IS CARNAL, NATURAL, EARTHLY. The ‘illumination’ of the mind by the seeking of knowledge IS STEP ONE IN THE PROCESS OF GOD, SO THAT HE CAN BRING YOU INTO TRUE SPIRITUALITY. You are not only to know and understand DOCTRINE, you are to KNOW AND EXPERIENCE THE MEANING OF ALL DOCTRINE: AGAPE LOVE! The mind is one thing, and the mind is NEVER REGENERATED. It is the INNER MAN that is REGENERATED, THE SPIRIT MAN. Modern Christians mix the two together, something the Bible never does.

This is why Christ said that you could search the Scriptures all the day long, and think eternal life was in them. It is not. The Bible is ONLY THE RECORD OF CHRIST, THE TESTIMONY OF CHRIST. With the MIND we learn all ABOUT CHRIST. We can learn much in this way, how He thought, all the facts. BUT NONE OF THAT TELLS US WHO CHRIST REALLY IS, WHAT HIS ESSENCE IS. The NATURAL MAN, THE CARNAL MIND CANNOT, CANNOT EVER COME TO A KNOWLEDGE OF WHO CHRIST IS.

If natural man, if the unregenerate man will pick up His cross, and OBEY THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST, and DO WHAT CHRIST COMMANDS, that soul will be brought down to an experiential soul death. He will abide in the LOWEST ROOM OF DEATH UNTIL CHRIST COMES, who is the one who called him. None of this is of carnal man, of natural man. IT IS OF GOD, OF THE POWER OF GOD HIMSELF. It is GOD THAT BRINGS DOWN THE SOUL WITH LABOR UNTO DEATH. It is GOD THAT SENDS THE HOLY SPIRIT TO CONVICT OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND TRUE JUDGMENT. It is God and the POWER OF GOD that CRUCIFIES THE BELIEVER. Natural man, the natural mind cannot know, NOR DOES IT KNOW what is happening, because IT IS OF THE SPIRIT. It is FAR BEYOND THE MENTAL CAPACITY OF MAN. It is beyond all learning.

If you CANNOT LEARN SPIRITUAL THINGS, then how does one BECOME SPIRITUAL? One becomes spiritual or regenerate by **CHRIST COMING AND REVEALING THE MYSTERY OF HIS LOVE. HE DOES IT, BY DIRECT SUPERNATURAL REVELATION AND BESTOWMENT**. If you cannot KNOW SPIRITUAL THINGS WITH YOUR MIND, and you cannot LEARN SPIRITUAL THINGS WITH YOUR MIND, then it PASSES ALL KNOWLEDGE, ALL UNDERSTANDING. If it passes all knowledge, then your so called KNOWLEDGE OF DOCTRINE IS WORTHLESS, FROM THE VIEWPOINT OF SPIRITUALITY. It does NOT help you in the end. It is OBEDIENCE THAT SAVES YOU, THE FAITH OF CHRIST THAT SAVES YOU. It brings you through TO THE POINT OF CONTACT, TO THE POINT OF THE REVELATION OF THE MYSTERY.

It is utterly denied today. It is branded satanic. Yet without the MYSTERY REVEALED, YOU WILL PERISH IN YOUR SINS. The Scripture says that unless two be IN AGREEMENT, THEY CANNOT WALK TOGETHER:

***“Can TWO WALK TOGETHER,  
EXCEPT THEY BE AGREED?”  
(Amos 3:3)***

Do you really think you can enter the New Covenant without **AGREEING WITH GOD AS TO HIS JUDGMENT OF YOU?** The love of man, his phileo loves are the direct opposite of God’s agape. They are not able to RESIDE TOGETHER. The great “I AM” must and will get off the throne of self if Christ is going to be admitted. If you cannot KNOW AGAPE LOVE IN THE NATURAL MIND, AND YOU CANNOT LEARN IT, then what have we left? **IT MUST BE REVEALED TO US, SO WE CAN AGREE TO IT, AND THEN IT IS BESTOWED!**

If it was never revealed to you what it was, how could you EVER KNOW YOU HAD FOUND IT? How could you ever know **WHAT THE NEW COVENANT WAS?** How could you ever agree with God? Obviously you could not. That is the point God is trying to make. **WE MUST COME INTO AGREEMENT, WE MUST BE JUDGED BY THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.** If we do not KNOW AGAPE LOVE, then it WOULD HAVE TO BE SHOWN TO US, SO WE COULD COMPARE IT TO OUR OWN AND BE FOUND GUILTY BEFORE GOD. It is not then done BY KNOWLEDGE, BY MENTAL ILLUMINATION. It is done by **SUPERNATURAL REVELATION TO THE HEART OF HEARTS, AND THE CONSCIOUS MIND WILL BE A SPECTATOR OF IT WHEN IT HAPPENS.**

***“All things are DELIVERED UNTO ME OF MY FATHER:  
AND NO MAN KNOWETH THE SON, BUT THE FATHER;  
NEITHER KNOWETH ANY MAN THE FATHER,  
SAVE THE SON,  
AND HE TO WHOMSOEVER THE SON  
WILL REVEAL HIM.”  
(Matthew 11:27)***

This verse is a very important verse to understand. The word “knoweth” is ‘epiginosko’, which means **TO BE ACQUAINTED WITH, TO ACKNOWLEDGE, TO PERCEIVE, TO RECOGNIZE.** Jesus is very blunt here: NO ONE KNOWETH EITHER CHRIST OR THE FATHER. The world **CANNOT KNOW THE ESSENCE OF CHRIST.** It does not know or recognize AGAPE LOVE. If this is true, which Christ says it is, THEN THE SPIRIT OF GOD, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE **IS A SECRET, A MYSTERY, HIDDEN, UNKNOWN, LOCK UP, COVERED BY A VEIL.** There is a REAL, LITERAL VEIL OVER THE MIND AND SOUL OF MAN.

If it is hidden, **THEN IT MUST BE SUPERNATURALLY REVEALED, BY AN ACT OF CHRIST OR GOD.** In other words, God must INTERVENE AND SUPERNATURALLY SHOW THE UNREGENERATE MAN **WHAT THE SECRET IS.** The word for “reveal” is ‘apokalupto’ and it means **TO OPEN, TO TAKE OFF THE COVER, TO DISCLOSE FULLY, TO REVEAL.** Do you

remember how the Holy of Holies in the Tabernacle was veiled from view? That if you penetrated the veil, YOU WOULD COME INTO THE PRESENCE OF THE SHEKINAH GLORY? You would actually SEE THE GLORY?

Christ is most specific; HE WILL REVEAL THE FATHER TO WHOSOEVER HE WILL. Guess whom He will reveal the secret to? THE OBEDIENT ONES, THE ONES WHO PICK UP THEIR CROSS AND WALK THE NARROW WAY. Just before speaking of the REVEALING of the Father, Jesus made this comment:

*“At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven  
and earth,*

*BECAUSE THOU HAST HID THESE THINGS  
FROM THE WISE AND PRUDENT,  
AND HAST*

*REVEALED THEM UNTO BABES.”*

*(Matthew 11:25)*

Just who are these babes that OBTAIN THE REVELATION? The ones who undergo the REBIRTH EXPERIENCE, THE ONES WHO DIE THE DEATH OF THE CROSS, THE ONES WHO WERE OBEDIENT. It is only the spiritually regenerated who have had the REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE. They are the few. The many refused to comply with the requirements of the New Covenant, so they never obtain it. They even deny it. They would have to deny it, or face their position before the Lord. Jesus said they KNEW NOT. So again we find a direct statement that GOD DOES REVEAL IN A SUPERNATURAL MANNER THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE.

This was HIDDEN to the wise and the prudent. It was HIDDEN from the “many”. It was hidden TO ALL EXCEPT THE OVERCOMERS. They knew the secret. Right after making these comments about the REVELATION OF TRUTH, Christ says this:

*“COME UNTO ME,  
ALL YE THAT LABOUR AND ARE HEAVY LADEN,  
AND I WILL GIVE THEE REST.*

*TAKE MY YOKE UPON YOU,  
AND LEARN OF ME;  
FOR I AM MEEK AND LOWLY IN HEART:  
AND YE SHALL FIND REST UNTO YOUR SOULS.*

*FOR MY YOKE IS EASY, AND MY BURDEN IS LIGHT.”*

*(Matthew 11:28-30)*

The revelation has to do with the COMING TO CHRIST. Notice the state of those that are coming, or are called to come: THEY LABOR, THEY ARE HEAVY LADEN. Christ is telling them to LEARN OF



HIM. Christ is SPIRITUAL, THEREFORE THE LEARNING IS A SPIRITUAL LEARNING. Could it be that the SPIRIT CAN ONLY LEARN BY DIRECT REVELATION, BY DIRECT COMMUNICATION? Christ commands us to TAKE HIS YOKE. What is the yoke of Christ? AGAPE LOVE!

**“KISS THE SON, LEST HE BE ANGRY, AND YE PERISH FROM  
THE WAY,  
WHEN HIS WRATH IS KINDLED BUT A LITTLE.  
BLESSED ARE ALL THEY THAT PUT THEIR TRUST IN HIM.”**  
(Psalm 2:12)

The word “kiss” comes from the word ‘nashaq’, which means **TO TOUCH, TO HAVE TOUCHED**. In other words, to **HAVE MET, TO HAVE MADE CONTACT**. We are commanded here to KISS THE SON, OR WE WILL PERISH. We are to MAKE LITERAL CONTACT, SO THAT UNION WITH THE SON CAN BE MADE.

**“Mercy and truth are met together;  
RIGHTEOUSNESS AND PEACE HAVE KISSED EACH OTHER.”**  
(Psalm 85:10)

What does it mean that righteousness and mercy have kissed? Man is a lost sinner, destined for eternal loss and ruin. God sent Christ into the world BY HIS GRACE, and gave to us the strait gate and narrow way into the New Covenant. Christ took away the penalty for sin. He did not take away OUR JUDGMENT, ONLY THE PENALTY. We must undergo the AGAPE LOVE JUDGMENT OF GOD VIA THE NARROW WAY. The soul is brought down to death, and at some point during this death walk, AGAPE LOVE IS REVEALED. It shows us WHY WE ARE DEAD. It shows us we do not have it; it is not part of us. We are now at the point of TRUE CONFESSION OF WHAT REAL SIN IS ALL ABOUT; NO AGAPE LOVE WHATEVER. THE TRUTH OF AGAPE LOVE IS REVEALED, THE SOUL IS JUDGED GUILTY. All is lost. CHRIST STEPS FORWARD. IN HIS MERCY; “WILL YOU AGAPE LOVE?” Mercy and truth are met together.

It is up to the sinner to say yes. He can at that time OPEN THE DOOR OF HIS INNER HEART OF HEARTS AND LET CHRIST IN OR HE CAN REFUSE. If the believer says YES, then CHRIST ENTERS INTO THE HEART, then RIGHTEOUSNESS (AGAPE LOVE), IS BESTOWED AS A FREE GIFT, AND THAT BRINGS PEACE. They kiss each other. The lost soul is now found, and has passed from death into a new life, a life of AGAPE LOVE, A LIFE OF THE SPIRIT. It does not come by study, by learning, by head knowledge. All of that is INDIRECT. It comes as a result of THE SUPERNATURAL, direct from God.

**“For therein IS THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD  
REVEALED FROM FAITH TO FAITH;  
AS IT IS WRITTEN,**

***THE JUST SHALL LIVE BY FAITH.”  
(Romans 1:17)***

Paul was speaking of the Gospel of Christ, the POWER OF GOD UNTO SALVATION. The Gospel of Christ had two parts: **CHRIST WAS REDEEMED**. CHRIST HAS BROUGHT THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. GRACE AND MERCY HAVE COME. That is the FIRST PART. The second part is this: **PICK UP THY CROSS, AND FOLLOW ME**. If we place our faith IN Christ, and we BECOME OBEDIENT and develop the FAITH OF CHRIST, then shall the **RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD BE REVEALED UNTO US**. We go from faith IN, to the FAITH **OF**. We go from FAITH TO FAITH. The faith OF Christ allows us to walk the way to THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE. The just shall live by FAITH.

***“But as it is written, EYE HATH NOT SEEN,  
NOR EAR HEARD,  
NEITHER HAVE ENTERED INTO THE HEART OF MAN,  
THE THINGS WHICH GOD HATH PREPARED FOR THEM  
THAT LOVE HIM.***

***BUT GOD HATH REVEALED THEM UNTO US  
BY HIS SPIRIT:  
FOR THE SPIRIT SEARCHETH ALL THINGS, YEA,  
THE DEEP THINGS OF GOD.”  
(1 Corinthians 2:9-10)***

Here we find another confirmation that man CANNOT KNOW, HIS EYE CANNOT SEE, HIS HEART CANNOT FATHOM THE MYSTERY OF GOD. It is reserved for the VERY ELECT, for those that walk the narrow way unto life. When they **HAVE AGAPE LOVE REVEALED, THEY HAVE LIFE REVEALED. THEY KNOW THE SECRET, THEY KNOW BECAUSE THEY PROVED THEIR LOVE FOR GOD BY DOING AS HE COMMANDED**. To them alone is the revelation of the secret made known.

The spirit man does not obtain spiritual knowledge through the mind. The knowledge of the mind is **ABOUT DOCTRINE, ABOUT CHRIST, ABOUT ISRAEL**. IT IS SENSE KNOWLEDGE. The mind can know ALL ABOUT these things. THE SPIRIT MAN DOES NOT LEARN THIS WAY. THE SPIRIT LEARNS BY DIRECT REVELATION, BY DIRECT COMMUNICATION FROM GOD. This has nothing to do with mental illumination. It has nothing to do with study or learning. It is ALTOGETHER DIFFERENT. God counts your diligent study, your diligent search WITH YOUR MIND as a precious thing, and He honors THAT SEARCH, if it CONTINUES AND DOES NOT GIVE UP, with the **REVELATION OF WHAT IT ALL MEANS**.

I can personally attest to this. I studied the Scriptures as much as 14-20 hours a day for years. I learned a whole lot, and I knew doctrine quite well. I KNEW WHAT DOCTRINE WAS ABOUT, AND I KNEW THE FACTS, BUT I DID NOT REALLY UNDERSTAND WHAT IT MEANT UNTIL CHRIST CAME. When Christ came to me, and SHOWED ME AGAPE LOVE, I instantly knew what the entire Bible meant. Previous to that point, I only THOUGHT I knew what it meant. But when AGAPE LOVE

WAS REVEALED, then I knew WHO CHRIST WAS, AND WHAT THE BIBLE WAS ALL ABOUT. That was SPIRITUAL, A DISTILLATION OF ALL PREVIOUS KNOWLEDGE, but my conscious mind and heart were held in awe as the Revelation was made. I was CONSCIOUSLY AWARE, I WAS EXPERIENTIALLY AWARE THAT CHRIST WAS DEALING WITH ME. All the learning in the world would never have JUMPED THE GULF BETWEEN KNOWING ABOUT AND KNOWING WHO. In other words Christ uses the REVELATION OF WHAT AGAPE LOVE IS TO DISTILL DOWN ALL YOUR HEAD KNOWLEDGE. It is the consummation of all your head knowledge, but it does not come via the mind. IT IS A DIRECT SUPERNATURAL REVELATION.

*“How that by **REVELATION**  
**HE MADE KNOWN UNTO ME THE MYSTERY;**  
(as I wrote afore in few words,*

*Whereby, when ye read,  
ye may **UNDERSTAND MY KNOWLEDGE IN THE MYSTERY OF**  
**CHRIST)***

*Which in other ages **WAS NOT MADE KNOWN UNTO**  
**THE SONS OF MEN,***

*AS **IT IS NOW REVEALED** UNTO HIS HOLY APOSTLES  
AND THE PROPHETS*

***BY THE SPIRIT...**”  
(Ephesians 3:3-5)*

Notice how Paul says the REVELATION is to be made: BY THE SPIRIT. Notice also that the mystery of Christ HAS BEEN HIDDEN. It is only revealed to THOSE WHO WALK THE WALK TO THE DEATH AND FIND LIFE IN CHRIST. It is a spiritual revelation. It will be proven that every single believer is to have THIS REVELATION. It is essential, for AGAPE LOVE cannot be known by any other method. In order to enter into the New Covenant, you must FIRST AGREE TO THE CLAIMS OF AGAPE LOVE, and you must SUBMIT TO IT. You cannot do that unless God supernaturally reveals what it is to you.

*“Who are **KEPT BY THE POWER OF GOD THROUGH**  
**FAITH UNTO SALVATION**  
**READY TO BE REVEALED IN THE LAST TIME.**”  
(1 Peter 1:5)*

Your salvation is to be REVEALED TO YOU IN THE LAST TIME. The term “last time” means THE CHURCH AGE, THE LAST ERA BEFORE THE CLOSE OF TIME BY GOD. John spoke of this very thing, and used the same phrase: in 1 John 2:18: “Little children, it is THE LAST TIME...” The phrase last time refers to the CHURCH AGE. We are in the last time, and our SALVATION IS TO BE REVEALED TO US. It is done by the REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE! It will be literally and

physically revealed as well at the resurrection/rapture. You see, God protects you through to the point of SALVATION, and we can prove that SALVATION COMES WHEN AGAPE LOVE IS BESTOWED. That is the salvation of your soul.

That is true because the only issue between you and God is the agape love issue. When that is settled, you pass from death unto life. You become a NEW CREATURE, with a NEW NATURE. It is all done by EXPERIENTIAL REVELATION.

*“But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are **PARTAKERS OF CHRIST’S SUFFERINGS:**  
**THAT,**  
**WHEN HIS GLORY SHALL BE REVEALED,**  
**YE MAY BE GLAD ALSO WITH EXCEEDING JOY.”**  
(1 Peter 4:13)*

Modern Christians claim this is a Second Advent verse. It is in fact a DOUBLE REFERENCE VERSE, for it applies FIRST to the believer that suffers the tribulation of the narrow way, and the test of faith. WHEN HE THAT BIDS YOU COMES, YOU WILL SEE THE GLORY OF CHRIST. What is the glory of Christ? None other than **AGAPE LOVE**. The GLORY SHALL BE REVEALED UNTO YOU. You will be shown it, so that YOU KNOW THE MYSTERY OF CHRIST, THE SECRET OF GOD. YOU WILL ALSO BE GLAD WITH AN EXCEEDING JOY. In fact, the joy you will have IS BEYOND WORDS.

*“But when it pleased God,  
who separated me from my mother’s womb,  
**AND CALLED ME BY HIS GRACE,**  
  
**TO REVEAL HIS SON IN ME,**  
*that I might preach him among the heathen...”*  
(Galatians 1:15-16)*

Again we find that there is a revelation, and that it comes from God. It is done via the SPIRIT, and it is not done THROUGH THE MIND.

*“That **THE GOD OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST,**  
  
**THE FATHER OF GLORY,**  
**MAY GIVE UNTO YOU**  
  
**THE SPIRIT OF WISDOM AND REVELATION IN THE**  
**KNOWLEDGE OF HIM:**  
  
*The eyes of your **UNDERSTANDING BEING ENLIGHTENED;****

**THAT YE MAY KNOW**

**WHAT IS THE HOPE OF HIS CALLING,  
AND WHAT THE RICHES OF THE GLORY OF  
HIS INHERITANCE IN THE SAINTS.”  
(Ephesians 1:17-18)**

Paul is praying that GOD WILL REVEAL TO THE BELIEVERS THE TRUTH OF WHO Jesus Christ really is. We are to have A REVELATION of the KNOWLEDGE OF CHRIST. The knowledge of Christ is of course WHO HE REALLY IS, HIS INNER ESSENCE, HIS GLORY, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE. The whole concept of the Church is to bring the saints of God to this point of THE REVELATION. When the revelation comes, all of your KNOWLEDGE IN DOCTRINE, ALL OF YOUR LEARNING, IS INSTANTLY DISTILLED INTO ONE THING: AGAPE LOVE. The Bible instantly is known for what it means: agape love. God is AGAPE LOVE. The Bible is about Christ and God. Therefore the real meaning behind ALL OF IT is the AGAPE LOVE OF GOD, THE GLORY OF GOD.

Paul wants their UNDERSTANDING enlightened, that they MIGHT KNOW what IS THE HOPE OF THEIR CALLING. They are to come to the point where they KNOW THEY HAVE FOUND THE TRUTH OF JESUS CHRIST, THE MYSTERY OF GOD. Christ said we would FIND. He said we would have the secret OPENED. He said we would OBTAIN THE PROMISE. The promise is the agape love of Christ. The word “reveal” or “revelation” is always ‘apokalupsis’ which means **FULL DISCLOSURE, APPEARING, COMING, MANIFESTATION, OR TO BE REVEALED**. It means exactly what it says it means. Do not let the false prophets, with their satanic doctrines attempt to fool you.

Now if you wish to pass all of this off as the ravings of a lunatic, I will now present more evidence to substantiate that Christ means exactly what He says He means, and to reject it is to bring upon yourself certain ruin, for you are rejecting THE PROOF OFFERED BY GOD THAT YOU ARE INDEED A CHILD OF GOD.

***“He that hath my commandments,  
AND KEEPETH THEM,  
HE IT IS THAT LOVETH ME:  
AND HE THAT LOVETH ME SHALL BE LOVED OF MY FATHER,  
AND I WILL LOVE HIM,  
AND WILL MANIFEST MYSELF TO HIM.”***  
(John 14:21)

This is another crucial verse of Scripture either ignored or totally twisted out of its context by the false prophets. The word “myself” is ‘emautou’, which means **ME, MYSELF, MINE OWN SELF, OF MYSELF**. It refers to a LIVING ENTITY, A LIVING PERSON. It is used as a personal pronoun by the LIVING CHRIST. It is important you understand what Christ is saying here. He is saying THAT I, THE LIVING CHRIST, WILL MANIFEST MYSELF TO THE BELIEVER WHO KEEPS MY COMMANDMENTS, AND DOES MY SAYINGS. Obviously He also means that if you refuse to do as He commands, HE WILL NOT MANIFEST HIMSELF.

The word “manifest” is ‘emphanizo’ which means **TO EXHIBIT IN PERSON, TO DISCLOSE ONESELF, TO APPEAR, TO SHOW OPENLY ONESELF**. Do you get the IMPACT of that statement? Read it again, Christ means WHAT HE SAYS. He says that **HE HIMSELF, PERSONALLY, CHRIST HIMSELF WILL COME AND UNVEIL THE MYSTERY OF HIMSELF TO THE REAL BELIEVER**. It means that the LIVING CHRIST will, via the miracle of a SUPERNATURAL REVELATION COME AND SHOW HIMSELF TO THE SEEKER.

This is not any revelation by reading **about** Christ in the Bible, which are ONLY A TESTIMONY OF HIM. He did not say that He would reveal more facts about Himself, but that **HE WOULD REVEAL HIMSELF PERSONALLY, HIS ESSENCE, WHO HE WAS**. He said over and over again YOU MUST COME TO HIM, THE LIVING CHRIST. This is not of the sense man, soul man; this is of THE SPIRIT. How could you ever KNOW if you had ever come to Him? How could you ever know IF YOU HAD FOUND THE TRUTH? How could you ever know THAT THE GLORY OF GOD HAD BEEN DISCOVERED? If all of this is by study, and learning, and mental illumination, THEN WHERE DOES IT STOP? WHEN HAVE WE FOUND ENOUGH? WHAT IS ENOUGH FACTS? HOW MUCH STUDY SAVES ME? WHEN DO I KNOW I HAVE ‘ENOUGH TRUTH’? The answer is obvious: you could **NEVER KNOW FOR SURE**. There might be something you missed, some essential fact.

SO HOW DO YOU KNOW WHEN YOU HAVE DISCOVERED THE GLORY OF CHRIST? When do you KNOW you have **MET THE LIVING JESUS**? When do you know for sure YOU HAVE FOUND? Why of course, **BY THE EVIDENCE, BY THE ENCOUNTER, BY THE CONTACT**. The Bible declares you are **TO KNOW THE MYSTERY**. Christ declares OPENLY HE WILL **COME TO YOU PERSONALLY, AND VISIT WITH YOU**. His visit to you is the **PROOF, THE EVIDENCE**. He says He will speak directly to you, even call you by name. I can attest to that, and I have testimony from others to prove it. More to the point the Bible declares it as a matter of actual fact: Revelation 3:20 (“if any man hear my VOICE..”) John 10:3 (“the sheep hear his VOICE; he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out”) John 10:16 (“and they shall hear my VOICE”) John 10:27 (“my sheep hear MY VOICE...”) The word “voice” here is ‘phone’ which means **A TONE, NOISE, SOUND, VOICE, LANGUAGE, A DISCLOSURE**.

This of course is totally spiritualized away. It does not mean what it means. It means something else. I tell you a truth, **IT MEANS EXACTLY WHAT IT SAYS IT MEANS**. He spoke to me, and I heard HIS VOICE. He called me by name. He said “Stewart”. It was personal. It was direct. It was very much to the point. This is utterly different than being led by a small inner voice, or prompting from deep within to do something. This is a DIRECT ENCOUNTER THAT DEALS WITH YOUR SALVATION. It deals with BEING LED OUT. It deals with **CHRIST ENTERING INTO UNION WITH YOU**. He has an UNSETTLED BUSINESS WITH YOUR INNER HEART, YOUR SPIRIT MAN, WHICH IS IN FULL REBELLION AND FULLY ANTICHRIST. Jesus is the one that said He would call each of His sheep **BY NAME**. I did not say it, HE DID. You better believe it, IT IS TRUE.

When Jesus told us to go sit in the lowest room and wait for Him, did He not say He would speak to us? Did you catch the SEQUENCE Christ laid down in that VERSE? He said YOU DO THE DOING, YOU BE OBEDIENT, YOU KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS, AND ONCE YOU HAVE DONE THAT UNTO THE LOWEST ROOM, THEN HE THAT BADE YOU WILL COME. He will not tarry, **HE WILL COME**. Notice that Christ says this revelation, this manifestation, is PERSONAL. He himself will come, speak, visit and enter into UNION.

Now if you wish to argue about that, and what the word manifest really means, one of the disciples asked Jesus what He meant by all of this:

*“Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, LORD,  
**HOW IS IT THAT THOU WILT MANIFEST THYSELF  
UNTO US,  
AND NOT UNTO THE WORLD?”**  
(John 14:22)*

That is a very important question. How is this so called MEETING GOING TO HAPPEN LORD? What is INVOLVED HERE THAT IS SO SECRET THAT THE WORLD WILL NOT KNOW IT, NOR UNDERSTAND IT, NOR SEE IT?

*“...If a man love me,  
**HE WILL KEEP MY WORDS (OBEDIENCE):**  
**AND MY FATHER WILL LOVE HIM,**  
**AND WE WILL COME UNTO HIM,**  
**AND MAKE OUR ABODE WITH HIM.”**  
(John 14:23)*

Jesus has now fully explained what He means by the words I WILL MANIFEST MYSELF UNTO HIM. Remember that Jesus said that HE AND THE FATHER WERE ONE AND THE SAME. The mystery of God gets deeper. The reply of Jesus is confirmed in other places: **I AND MY FATHER WILL COME UNTO HIM, AND WE WILL MAKE OUR ABODE WITH HIM.** Now the word “come” is ‘archomai’ which means **TO APPEAR, TO COME TO PERSONALLY, TO ACCOMPANY, TO ENTER.** The word “abode” is ‘mone’ which means **A STAYING, A RESIDENCE.** It implies a permanent dwelling place. So now we have a **PERSONAL APPEARANCE AND COMING OF CHIRST AND GOD TO THE BELIEVER.**

Notice the Holy Spirit is not mentioned. The reason the Holy Spirit is not mentioned is because He is already there, and He **PREPARED THE BELIEVER BY CONVICTING OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT.** The believer is led BY THE HOLY SPIRIT INTO ALL TRUTH. The final truth that must be known, that must be revealed **IS THE TRUTH OF THE MYSTERY OF GOD: AGAPE LOVE.** It is not the ministry of the Holy Spirit to reveal AGAPE LOVE. That is left to Christ and God the Father. There is a REAL TRINITY. Why the Church teaches a trinity and then denies it in the salvation process is a mystery.

The Holy Spirit is sent first. He baptizes the believer into the Body of Christ (1 Cor. 12:13). He gives the gifts severally as He will (1 Cor. 12:11). He then begins the slow process of CONVICTING OF SIN, RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT UPON THE BELIEVER (John 16:8-11). He will slowly lead the believer into ALL TRUTH (John 16:18). What He is doing is what John the Baptist did: **MAKING STRAIGHT THE PATH FOR THE LORD.** When the soul is BROKEN, HUMBLED, DESTROYED, AND WALKS IN SOUL DEATH, EMPTY, DEVOID AND DESTITUTE, IN THE PIT, IN THE LOWEST ROOM, CHRIST AND GOD SHOW UP. They **reveal** the TRUE MYSTERY; they REVEAL

AGAPE LOVE. They come to **TAKE UP A RESIDENCE IN THE INNER HEART, TO ASCEND THE THRONE IN THE HOLY OF HOLIES OF THAT BELIEVER.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 12 is a chapter about the Holy Spirit, and the GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT. The entire chapter concerns itself with how the Holy Spirit operates, and what He does. Paul closes out Chapter 12 with this remarkable statement:

***“But COVET EARNESTLY THE BEST GIFTS:***

***AND YET SHEW I UNTO YOU A***

***MORE EXCELLENT***  
***WAY.***”

***(1 Corinthians 12:31)***

These believers already have the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. They ALREADY HAVE the GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT. Paul tells them to COVET THE BEST GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT. Ask the Holy Spirit for them, pray for them, be zealous after them. But for all of the GIFTS, Paul says there is a **MORE EXCELLENT WAY.** The word for “more excellent” is ‘hyperbole’ which means **A THROWING BEYOND, SUPER EMINENCE, MORE EXCELLENT OR MORE EXCELLENT BEYOND MEASURE.** The word “way” here is ‘hodos’ which we know means **JOURNEY, WAY, HIGHWAY.** So then what is Paul saying? He is saying that the **GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT ARE PRECIOUS,** AND THEY SHOULD BE SOUGHT AFTER BUT THERE IS YET A WAY THAT IS A MORE EXCELLENT WAY BEYOND ALL MEASURE:

## **THE NARROW WAY.**

It is the narrow way that leadeth unto LIFE. We know that spiritual life is AGAPE LOVE. We know there is only one way to obtain it: THE NARROW WAY. Paul is then telling them, and us, **THAT THE MOST EXCELLENT WAY OF GOD IS THE NARROW WAY TO FIND AGAPE LOVE.** The Gifts of the Spirit are NOT ALL THERE IS. THERE IS MORE, MUCH MORE. The very next thing Paul launches into is that YOU CAN HAVE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT, BUT IF YOU HAVE NOT AGAPE LOVE, YOU HAVE NOTHING, YOU WILL GO INTO RUIN.

He then concludes all of that by saying this:

***“And NOW ABIDETH FAITH, HOPE, CHARITY,  
THESE THREE;***

***BUT THE GREATEST OF THESE IS***

***CHARITY.***”

***(1 Corinthians 13:13)***



As we have discussed, the sequence is not by accident. Faith leads to hope, and hope leads us to AGAPE LOVE. He then tells us we should FOLLOW AFTER AGAPE LOVE. The entire thrust of the Scripture is to bring us back INTO AGAPE LOVE UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST. The “many” thought they had it all when they had the gifts of the Spirit. The gifts of the Spirit have a purpose, and that is to bring us all INTO THE UNITY OF AGAPE LOVE.

So the intent of Paul here was to show that THE GIFTS and the OFFICES of the Church have a higher function, they are to bring us to something:

*“And he gave some, APOSTLES;  
and some, PROPHETS;  
and some, EVANGELISTS;  
and some, PASTORS AND TEACHERS;*

*FOR THE PERFECTING OF THE SAINTS,  
FOR THE WORK OF THE MINISTRY,  
FOR THE EDIFYING OF THE BODY OF CHRIST:*

*TILL WE ALL COME IN THE UNITY OF THE FAITH,  
AND OF  
THE KNOWLEDGE OF  
THE SON OF GOD,  
UNTO A PERFECT MAN, UNTO THE MEASURE OF THE STATURE  
OF THE  
FULLNESS OF CHRIST.”  
(Ephesians 4:11-13)*

Read that very carefully. The whole concept of the entire Church is to work for the PERFECTING OF THE SAINTS. It is to EDIFY THE CHURCH. The word “perfecting” is ‘katartismos’, which means **COMPLETE FURNISHING**. The word “edifying” means to **BUILD UP, CONFIRMATION**. What is all of this building up, all of this perfecting for, Paul? TILL WE COME INTO THE UNITY OF THE FAITH. The word “unity” is ‘henotes’ and it means **ONENESS, UNANIMITY**. What is this UNITY OF THE FAITH, PAUL? TILL WE ALL COME TO THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE SON OF GOD. The word “knowledge” is ‘epignosis’. It has a meaning that is important to us. It means **RECOGNITION, FULL DISCERNMENT, ACKNOWLEDGMENT**. And what does this do for us Paul? IT BRINGS US UNTO A PERFECT MAN. The only thing that brings us into perfection, that makes us a perfect man, IS AGAPE LOVE REVELATION AND BESTOWMENT. We then have a PERFECT STANDING BEFORE THE LORD.

We are then in complete UNION WITH CHRIST, and we have TOTAL UNITY OF THE TRUE FAITH OF CHRIST, THE UNITY OF AGAPE LOVE THAT THAT IS GRANTED TO THE TRUE SAINTS OF GOD. When Christ comes, and COMES INTO US, AND MAKES HIS ABODE WITH US, then we have THE FULLNESS OF CHRIST, THE FULLNESS OF THE GODHEAD. We are COMPLETE IN HIM, AND THROUGH HIM, CHRIST IS ALL, IN ALL. Do you see? The UNION is not a union in doctrine, a unity of denominations, BUT A UNITY ON AGAPE LOVE, A UNION WITH THE GODHEAD. That is the entire purpose of the Church. It is the purpose of the GIFTS.

You are NOT complete with the Holy Spirit, because it is not His job to make you complete. Further it was not the Holy Spirit that redeemed you, it was Jesus Christ. The Scripture does not teach you anywhere that UNION WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT SAVES YOU. That is because the Holy Spirit CANNOT SAVE, FOR HE DID NOT REDEEM, CHRIST DID. It is therefore UNION with the living Christ that REDEEMS US to ETERNAL LIFE.

**“BEWARE LEST ANY MAN SPOIL YOU THROUGH PHILOSOPHY AND VAIN DECEIT,  
AFTER THE TRADITION OF MEN,  
AFTER THE RUDIMENTS OF THE WORLD,  
AND NOT AFTER CHRIST.  
FOR IN HIM DWELLETH ALL THE  
FULNESS OF THE GODHEAD BODILY.  
AND YE ARE COMPLETE IN HIM,  
WHICH IS THE HEAD OF ALL PRINCIPALITY AND POWER.”**  
(Colossians 2:8-10)

So you see that IT IS IN CHRIST THAT WE ARE COMPLETE. We are NOT COMPLETE just because we have been baptized by the Holy Spirit. The “many” were baptized by the Holy Spirit; yet Christ did not KNOW them. The many were IN THE BODY OF CHRIST, yet Jesus did not KNOW THEM. The non-overcomers, the lukewarm CHURCH OF CHRIST was in HIS BODY, FOR HE VOMITED THEM OUT, YET HE DID NOT KNOW THEM. The Holy Spirit has a wonderful ministry, and His ministry becomes even more powerful after CHRIST AND GOD TAKE UP RESIDENCE IN THE BELIEVER. Once agape love has come AND THE SEED OF CHRIST IS LEFT IN THE BELIEVER, IN THE REGENERATED SPIRIT MAN, THE HOLY SPIRIT ONCE AGAIN TAKES OVER AND SHEDS THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST ABROAD IN OUR HEARTS.

You see, the Holy Spirit does NOT REVEAL HIS ESSENCE TO THE BELIEVER. He works upon, IN AND THROUGH THE BELIEVER, BUT HE NEVER REVEALS HIS TRUE ESSENCE. He may reveal HIS PRESENCE, which will be felt as LOVE. Many people feel the PRESENCE OF THE LORD, which is a common thing during the NARROW WAY WALK. This is because the SPIRIT is trying to TEACH THE BELIEVER WHAT IS MISSING. By coming and revealing His presence, the believer feels the WONDER OF THE LOVE OF GOD. It is real, and very literal. This presence of the LOVE OF GOD is a fantastic experience to undergo.

By revealing His PRESENCE, and by flowing that love over the believer, THE BELIEVER IS BEING TOLD WHAT THE BELIEVER IS REALLY MISSING: LOVE. At that point in time, however, the believer does not really understand that. He only knows that God was there. This presence then DRIVES THE BELIEVER ONWARD IN HIS SEARCH, for now he/she knows how beautiful was this love of the Lord. This presence COMES AND GOES. The presence of AGAPE LOVE has nothing to do with the REVELATION OR MANIFESTATION OF CHRIST.

There is vast difference in FEELING THE FLOWING OF LOVE FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD THAN LOOKING INTO IT TO FIND OUT WHAT IT IS. The revelation of AGAPE LOVE IS

AN ACTUAL LOOKING INTO IT, A REVELATION AS TO WHAT IT IS, WHAT IT MEANS AND WHAT IT CONVEYS. You look into the height, the depth, and the breadth of what TRUE LOVE IS. The revelation of agape love is done to SHOW THE BELIEVER THE NATURE OF IT, SO HE CAN COMPREHEND IT, AND THEN COMPARE THAT LOVE TO HIS OWN. By this process, THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT IS COMPLETED. The believer has no choice but to CONFESS HE IS GUILTY BEFORE THE LORD.

The revelation is not the same as the PRESENCE. THE PRESENCE IS OFTEN FELT AS GREAT WAVES OF LOVE, which does not show us what it is, but only what IT FEELS LIKE. The revelation SHOWS US PRECISELY WHO JESUS IS, AND WHAT TRUE LOVE IS. Now the believer and Christ CAN AGREE, AND THEN THEY CAN WALK TOGETHER. He has walked the narrow way to SOUL DEATH, and he has been CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST. The believer is now a friend to Jesus.

The Holy Spirit then, completes the task, and He is there waiting for the other members of the Godhead to take up their residence. WHEN CHRIST COMES, WE ARE COMPLETE IN HIM, FOR GOD AND CHRIST AND THE HOLY SPIRIT ARE ONE, YET THREE! THERE IS THEN A DESTINATION.

*“That their hearts might be comforted,  
BEING KNIT TOGETHER IN (AGAPE) LOVE,*

*AND UNTO ALL RICHES*

*OF THE FULL ASSURANCE OF UNDERSTANDING,  
TO THE ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF THE MYSTERY OF*

*GOD,*

*AND OF THE FATHER, AND OF CHRIST;*

*IN WHOM ARE HID ALL THE TREASURES  
OF WISDOM AND KNOWLEDGE.”*

*(Colossians 2:2)*

There is a destination, a finding, an opening of the mystery. We are all to come to AGAPE LOVE, SO OUR HEARTS CAN BE KNIT TOGETHER IN UNITY. We are to come to A FULL ASSURANCE OF UNDERSTANDING. The word for “full assurance” is ‘plerophoria’ which means ENTIRE CONFIDENCE, TOTAL ASSURANCE, COMPLETE AND TOTAL ASSURANCE. We are to come to AN ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF THE MYSTERY. The word “acknowledgment” is ‘epignosis’ and it means FULL DISCERNMENT, FULL KNOWLEDGE. What are we to come to a full knowledge of? THE MYSTERY OF GOD, THAT IS HID FROM ALL EXCEPT THE VERY ELECT. The word “mystery” is ‘musterion’ which means A SECRET, A MYSTERY.

Because agape love was LOST AT THE FALL, and is not within man to know it, then THE MYSTERY WE MUST UNLOCK IS THE MYSTERY OF WHAT THIS LOVE REALLY IS. When we unlock that mystery, which can only be accomplished by being crucified with Christ, by dying to this life and our natural love, THEN WE ARE SPIRITUAL, AND THEN WE CAN BEGIN TO UNLOCK THE WISDOM OF GOD. The many only CLAIMED they knew the mystery. They ignored all the Biblical evidence that would have told them they did not know it, but their theology DENIED THE

**REVELATION, IT DENIED THE MANIFESTATION OF CHRIST, AND HIS AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE.**

There is then a real and literal supernatural coming of Christ to each believer, and when Christ comes, He brings with the PROMISE OF THE FATHER, THE GREATEST OF ALL SPIRITUAL GIFTS, THE GIFT OF THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, THAT IS, AGAPE LOVE. That is why Paul said that if CHRIST BE IN US, THAT IS THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, then WE ARE OF CHRIST. If not, then we be **REPROBATES CONCERNING THE FAITH**. We are then liars, bastard sons, and impostors, claiming that which we have no right to claim. The many found out the hard way just how serious that is.

***“Even the MYSTERY WHICH HATH BEEN HID FROM AGES  
AND FROM GENERATIONS,  
BUT NOW IS MADE MANIFEST TO HIS SAINTS:  
  
TO WHOM GOD WOULD MAKE KNOWN  
WHAT IS THE RICHES OF THE GLORY  
OF THIS MYSTERY AMONG THE GENTILES;  
WHICH IS CHRIST IN YOU, THE HOPE OF GLORY.”  
(Colossians 1:26)***

And here again we find a reference to THE MYSTERY, and how is they mystery solved: **BY THE MANIFESTATION OF CHRIST TO THE INDIVIDUAL BELIEVER, TO HIS SAINTS**. Christ is good for His word. He said He would manifest to those that PROVED THEY LOVED HIM BY **WALKING THE NARROW WAY**.

***“Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts,  
we should live soberly, righteously, and godly,  
in this present world;  
  
LOOKING FOR THAT BLESSED HOPE,  
AND THE GLORIOUS APPEARING OF  
THE GREAT GOD AND OUR SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST;  
  
Who gave himself for us, that he might REDEEM US  
FROM ALL INIQUITY,  
AND PURIFY UNTO HIMSELF A PECULIAR PEOPLE,  
ZEALOUS OF GOOD WORKS.”  
(Titus 2:12-14)***

This is used as a reference to the Second Advent of Christ, but it is not a reference to that, but is instead a reference to Christ coming to the believer and manifesting Himself. He comes, He bestows AGAPE LOVE, and then He begins the work of PURIFYING US SO THAT WE MAY DO GOOD WORKS. The word for “looking” is ‘prosdechomai’ which means **TO AWAIT, TO LOOK FOR, TO WAIT FOR**. The word “appearing” is ‘epiphaneia’ which means **A MANIFESTATION, A REVELATION, AN**

**ADVENT OF CHRIST.** As we walk the narrow way we are LOOKING TO FIND SOMETHING. WE ARE KNOCKING, WAITING FOR HEAVEN TO OPEN THE DOOR.

*“So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many;  
And UNTO THEM THAT LOOK FOR HIM  
SHALL HE APPEAR THE SECOND TIME  
WITHOUT SIN UNTO SALVATION.”  
(Hebrews 9:28)*

This is another verse that modern theology applies to the Second Advent. It is what is known as a double reference verse. Christ came the first time and died upon the cross. That was His First Advent. The believer is told by Jesus that **IF WE SEARCH FOR HIM WITH ALL OF OUR HEART, SOUL AND MIND, WE WILL FIND HIM.** He said He would come to us, and **MANIFEST HIMSELF TO US.** When He comes the SECOND TIME HE BEARS THE GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE, **WHICH SAVES THE SOUL TO SALVATION.** The soul is saved, for that soul has been TRANSFERRED OVER TO THE KINGDOM OF CHRIST. He has undergone the **AGAPE LOVE JUDGMENT,** and has been ACQUITTED. He is an OVERCOMER. An overcomer SHALL INHERIT ALL THINGS.

*“Behold, I stand at the door, AND KNOCK:  
if ANY MAN HEAR MY VOICE, AND OPEN THE DOOR,  
I WILL COME IN TO HIM,  
AND WILL SUP WITH HIM, AND HE WITH ME.”  
(Revelation 3:20)*

Folks, Christ means exactly what He is saying here. He says that HE STANDS AT THE INNER DOOR OF YOUR HOLY OF HOLIES, AND KNOCKS. You cannot hear Him knocking unless **you travel the narrow way to find your Holy of Holies by the revelation of God.** When you get there, when you arrive at the inner chamber, YOU HEAR HIS VOICE. I can personally attest it, and so can many others. It is not audible, but you hear Him speak to you. He calls you by name, He gets right to the point. He wants entrance. He asks if WE WILL AGAPE LOVE. It is CHRIST THE PERSON. CHRIST THE ‘I’. He said ‘I STAND’. That means the person of Christ, the MYSELF of John 14.

If we say yes to His agape love, after He has revealed it to us, WE OPEN THE DOOR. Christ then comes in, along with GOD THE FATHER. It means what it says, and all the false prophets will never change it by their theology. THERE IS A REVELATION. **THERE HAS TO BE A SUPERNATURAL REVELATION FOR THE SCRIPTURES DEMAND IT.** This revelation will then SHOW YOU WHAT THE ENTIRE BIBLE ACTUALLY AND REALLY MEANS. Until then, you are only KNOWLEDGEABLE IN THE SENSE REALM, and you carry about many FACTS ABOUT CHRIST AND DOCTRINE. The next step **IS TO KNOW CHRIST, TO KNOW WHO HE IS.** To be brought from death into life, from darkness unto light.

Now then, if FAITH IS FOR THINGS NOT SEEN, and it is THE WILL OF THE FATHER THAT WE SEE THE SON, could we not say that IF THERE IS A REVELATION, A MANIFESTATION, THAT WE HAVE SEEN THE SON? That we KNOW WHO HE IS? That this is why Christ said:

***“...VERILY, VERILY, I SAY UNTO THEE,***

***EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN AGAIN,***

***HE CANNOT***

***SEE***

***THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”***

***(John 3:3)***

The word for “see” here is ‘eido’, and it means **TO SEE, TO BEHOLD, TO LOOK UPON, TO PERCEIVE, TO KNOW**. Read it carefully, for it says what it means. THE PROCESS OF REGENERATION INCLUDES THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE ESSENCE OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD. When we “see” the Kingdom, we KNOW WE HAVE FOUND IT. We know that heaven has opened the ***DOOR TO REVEAL THE MYSTERY, THE SECRET***. We can now ACKNOWLEDGE WE KNOW THE HIDDEN SECRET OF GOD. We have asked, and we have received. We have searched, and we have found. We have knocked; door was opened. We find then a perfect harmony.

When we begin to understand that there must be a revelation of a supernatural type, a manifestation of the essence of Christ, then we can begin to make sense out of some of His otherwise difficult sayings:

***“VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU,***

***THERE BE SOME STANDING HERE,***  
***WHICH SHALL NOT TASTE OF DEATH,***

***TILL THEY SEE***

***THE SON OF MAN***

***COMING IN HIS KINGDOM.”***

***(Matthew 16:28)***

This verse throws people. We know they all died, and Christ has not yet returned. IT WAS NOT A SECOND ADVENT VERSE FOR THE WORLD. It was instead Christ coming in HIS POWER TO THE BELIEVER, INSIDE THE INNER HEART! When you realize He comes to each individual believer, in a personal revelation and manifestation, which can be seen by that believer, which is fully experiential in nature to both the inner heart and the conscious mind, then we understand what Christ is saying. He is confirming everything we have studied. He is saying that HE WILL RETURN TO SOME OF THE PEOPLE STANDING THERE BEFORE THEY DIE, AND WILL COME AND BE SETTING UP HIS KINGDOM, WHICH IS IN THE ***INNER HEART OF THE BELIEVER***. The word “see” here is ‘eido’ which means **TO SEE, TO BEHOLD**. The believer actually SEES INTO THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST, HE BEHOLDS IT, HE BEHOLDS CHRIST. He hears the voice of Christ, which is confirmed in Revelation 3:20, John 10, and other places. It means what it says.

Christ is setting up His kingdom in the hearts of the individual believers, and as soon as Pentecost came, the process was begun for the setting up of His kingdom. We do not know when Paul actually received the gift of agape love. We know the Damascus road incident was A CONVERSION EXPERIENCE, but it did not include the revelation of agape love. Paul went away for three years, and during that time was brought down to full judgment and came into the knowledge of agape love. The other we do not know. Peter we know obtained it, for he writes about it. John knew all about it. They all received the REVELATION OF THE MYSTERY.

*“He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life:  
and he that believeth NOT THE SON*

***SHALL NOT SEE LIFE;**  
*but the wrath of God abideth on him.”*  
(John 3:36)*

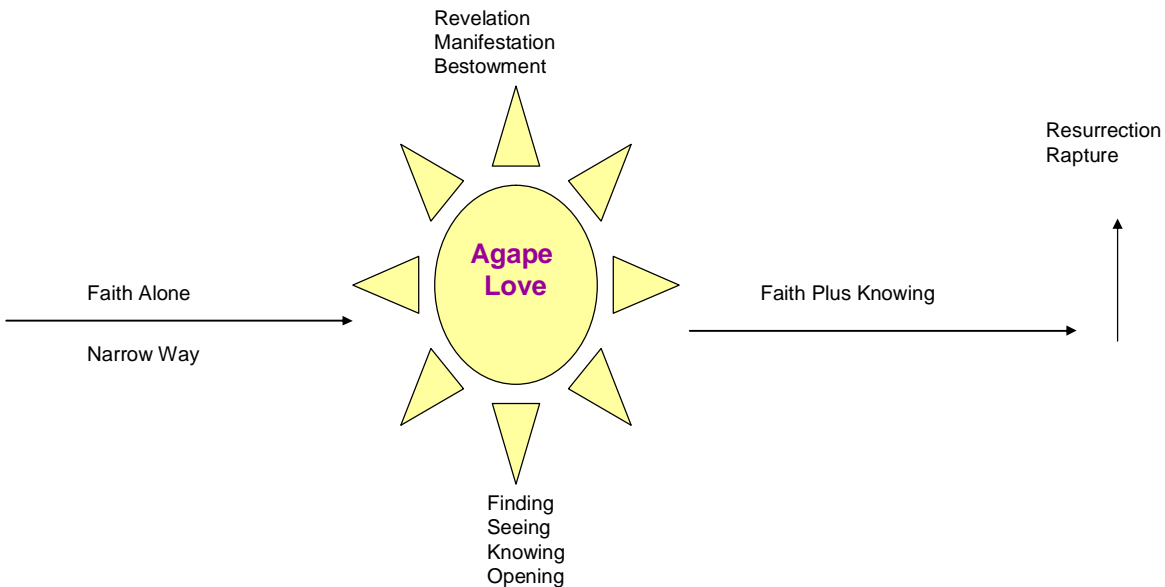
Again we find a total confirmation of the manifestation and revelation of Christ. The person that does NOT BELIEVE THE SON, AND WHO DOES NOT COMPLY WITH THE NARROW WAY WILL NOT “SEE” LIFE. They will NOT behold the beauty of AGAPE LOVE, they will NOT have the revelation or manifestation, and they WILL NOT BE GRANTED ETERNAL LIFE. This is a grave warning to all. Agape love can be “seen” and “experienced”. It is seen in the SPIRIT, and the physical eyes are not used, but the SEEING IS JUST AS PLAIN AS THOUGH THEY WERE. It is important to know however that this “seeing” is not at all done BY FAITH.

The tragic mistake of modern Christianity is that they appropriate EVERYTHING BY AN ACT OF FAITH. They do all of their seeing BY FAITH, BY BELIEF. We are not speaking here of FAITH SEEING, OR FAITH BELIEVING. What we are speaking of by the words REVEAL, REVELATION, MANIFESTED OR MANIFESTATION and SEE, ARE NOT FAITH WHATSOEVER, BUT THE VERY OPPOSITE OF FAITH.

Faith is FOR THINGS UNSEEN, UNKNOWN, NOT EXPERIENCED. Faith is something YOU HAVE, YOU DO, YOU WORK UP, YOU EXERCISE. Faith is an invisible dynamic, a force, a power that propels you THROUGH the narrow way TO THE ENCOUNTER WITH CHRIST. The encounter itself has NOTHING TO DO WITH YOUR FAITH. Your faith is spent, your faith is inoperative at the point of the encounter. More importantly, THE ENCOUNTER IS DONE BY THE WILL OF GOD UPON YOU. It is Christ and God that COME to you. It is something that THEY DO TO YOU. You are PASSIVE. You are the OBJECT OF THEIR INTENTIONS. It is not your will that decides when this encounter will come, IT IS GOD’S WILL ALONE that decides, and you have nothing whatever to say about it. You can get down on your knees a hundred times and ask Jesus into your heart, and NOTHING will happen.

It will not happen whatsoever BECAUSE you do not know when your heart is READY FOR THE FINAL END OF YOUR FAITH: ONLY GOD KNOWS THE HEART OF MAN. Your heart is wicked beyond anything you can imagine. THAT IS WHY GOD TOOK THE PREROGATIVE OF REGENERATION AWAY FROM MAN TOTALLY. It is the absolute ARROGANCE OF MAN that attempts to TELL CHRIST WHEN TO COME INTO THE HEART. The arrogance of modern Christianity is at unbelievable heights when it comes to the REBIRTH.

To be sure you understand the terrible difference between faith and knowing, we are going to use several stories to make that difference abundantly clear. It is this **TERRIBLE DIFFERENCE THAT COST THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS HEAVEN**, and put them into ETERNAL RUIN. Everything they did, THEY DID BY FAITH ALONE. We have shown you that FAITH IS ONLY USED FOR THINGS NOT SEEN, NOT KNOWN, NOT EXPERIENCED. Scripture proves there is **AN END TO YOUR FAITH**. There are TWO FAITH WALKS IN SCRIPTURE. There is a point OF EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING, which is the OPPOSITE OF FAITH, juxtaposed BETWEEN YOUR WALK WITH CHRIST TO YOUR PHYSICAL DEATH:



We are to SEEK until we **FIND**. We are to knock until God **OPENS**. We are to beg and crave until **GOD GIVES, BESTOWS**. We are to CONTINUE AND FIGHT UNTIL WE SEE AND EXPERIENCE THE AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST. There is a point of FINDING. There is a point of OPENING. There is a point at which **THE HIDDEN MYSTERY IS REVEALED** TO US. We then **SEE IT, KNOW IT, EXPERIENCE IT, AND HAVE POSITIVE PROOF OUR FAITH WAS NOT IN VAIN**. We go from FAITH TO KNOWING. We go from not seeing, to seeing. We go from things NOT SEEN, to things that ARE SEEN. This is the DIFFERENCE THAT KILLS THE MANY. They did not understand THAT FAITH ONLY PROPELLED THEM TO A POINT AT WHICH GOD WOULD HAVE ACTED UPON THEM, HAD THEY BEEN OBEDIENT. You are to use YOUR WILL to daily pick up YOUR CROSS, until Christ USES HIS WILL and comes to you and PRONOUNCES YOU DEAD AND THEN ALIVE.

It is this radical difference that you MUST understand, **even though it is denied by modern Christianity in all denominations**. It is why the “many” stood in such SHOCK. They bought into a doctrine, a theology that CONVINCED THEM there was NO EXPERIENTIAL EVIDENCE, THAT THERE WAS NO REVELATION, NO MANIFESTATION, NO SEEING, NO EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING. Had they known there was, they would have NOT BEEN UNDER A DECEPTION, AND THEY WOULD HAVE DONE WHATEVER NECESSARY TO FIND THE EVIDENCE THEY LACKED. The inner heart of man, coupled with the deceptions of Satan will DO ANYTHING TO SURVIVE BEING DETHRONED BY CHRIST. Its most USUAL tactic is DECEPTION, DISTRACTION AND DENIAL.



## STORY NUMBER ONE

A friend tells you that it is vital you meet him on Highway 90. He says for you to just drive towards his city until he finds you. He says you will not know what car he is driving, because he is not sure what car he can get hold of. The tone of his voice is such you know he is in trouble and needs you. You agree to immediately start driving. It is your will to decide to obey the request of your friend. It is YOUR FAITH IN HIM that propels you to gather up the things you need, jump into the car, and start down highway 90. You drive and drive and drive. It seems like forever, and your friend does not show up, no one honks and no one waves. You remember your friend and what he asked you to do, so BY FAITH ALONE you continue, you abide, you remain on highway 90 driving as you were bid to do. ALL OF IT IS BY FAITH IN YOUR FRIEND, AND BY THE FAITH OF YOUR FRIEND, WHO BID YOU TO COME.

Finally OUT OF THE BLUE, at a TIME YOU KNEW NOT, your friend HONKS HIS HORN, WAVES AND YOU HAVE AN EXPERIENTIAL ENCOUNTER. You ACTUALLY SEE HIM, EXPERIENCE HIM, BEHOLD HIM, HE HAS REVEALED HIMSELF, HE HAS MANIFESTED HIMSELF. He did as he said he would do. Questions: Do you need FAITH when you have MET HIM? Do you need faith AT THE POINT OF ENCOUNTER? Faith is always for something NOT SEEN. It is the DYNAMIC OF FAITH, the FORCE OF FAITH, the POWER OF FAITH that propelled you TO THE ENCOUNTER. Once you have MET, FAITH IS NO LONGER NEEDED, THERE IS NO MORE FAITH, FAITH HAS DONE ITS JOB. **The end of your FAITH is the ENCOUNTER, WHICH IS EXPERIENTIAL, A SEEING, A KNOWING.**

You did not know WHEN your friend would come, you only knew He said HE WOULD. So by FAITH ALONE you take the NARROW WAY until HE ARRIVES AND MEETS YOU. At that POINT OF RECOGNITION, your faith, your hope, IS NO LONGER NEEDED, **IT TURNS INTO RELIEF, KNOWING, FINDING, SEEING, and know you know FOR SURE.** You have a FULL ASSURANCE. YOU HAVE A PROOF, AN EVIDENCE.

***“Blessed are they THAT MOURN: for they shall BE COMFORTED.***

***Blessed are they which do HUNGER AND THIRST AFTER RIGHTEOUSNESS (AGAPE LOVE):  
FOR THEY SHALL BE FILLED.***

***Blessed are the PURE IN HEART: FOR THEY SHALL SEE GOD.”*  
(Matthew 5:4,6,8)**

How is your COMFORTING TO COME? By faith? Do you just sit there and conjure up by **POSITIVE THINKING, OR POSITIVE CONFESSION THAT YOU HAVE COMFORT?** Hardly! The comfort mentioned here **IS AN EXPERIENTIAL COMFORTING, SOMETHING THAT GOD DOES TO YOU.** It has nothing to do with YOUR WILL, YOUR FAITH. God decides WHEN AND WHERE HE WILL COME AND OFFER YOU COMFORT.

If you hunger and thirst after agape love, which is the righteousness of God, when would you know you HAD BEEN FILLED? How could you know it? Do you BY FAITH go around and say “I am filled,

praise the Lord?" Do you simply BY FAITH, BY POSITIVE THINKING, BY POSITIVE CONFESSION DECLARE YOURSELF FILLED? That would be a DELUSION, A DENIAL, A REFUSAL TO FACE THE REAL FACT YOU ARE DYING FROM HUNGER AND THIRST. You could BY FAITH CLAIM YOU ARE FILLED AND STILL DIE FROM HUNGER. If you are in the desert, and you have no food, and you have no water, **NO AMOUNT OF POSITIVE THINKING, NO AMOUNT OF POSITIVE CONFESSION IS GOING TO FILL YOU, OR SAVE YOU.** Someone else MUST FIND YOU, and BY HIS WILL ALONE, he decides whether or not he wants to save you, and give you OF HIS WATER, OF HIS MEAT, OF HIS FOOD. You are destitute, lying on the sand. It is an ACT OF THE MERCY OF YOUR SAVIOR TO OFFER YOU HIS WATER AND HIS FOOD. IT IS HIS WILL, NOT YOURS THAT SAVES YOU.

Modern Christianity is under the DELUSION, THE DECEPTION that they are TO BY FAITH **DECLARE THEMSELVES FILLED, WHEN THEY ARE NEAR DEATH FROM STARVATION!** They have extended the meaning of faith to include that which it does not include.

When do the pure in heart SEE GOD? What is the narrow way for if it is not to break down the heart, PURIFY THE HEART, and then wait for the arrival of CHRIST TO FILL THE HEART? These are they that WILL SEE FULLY AND EXPERIENTIALLY GOD! We have shown you much of this already. BUT WHO DECIDES WHEN GOD WILL ARRIVE? Does the believer? Does he sit there and conjure up by positive confession, by positive thinking that GOD HAS ARRIVED? That is what the modern faith movement would have you believe, but it is a DELUSION, A DECEPTION. The answer Christ gave to the "many" is your clue: HE NEVER EXPERIENTIALLY KNEW THEM, HE NEVER WAS IN UNION, HE NEVER CAME TO THEM, HE NEVER ARRIVED. THEY DID NOT SEE CHRIST. They BY FAITH ALONE CLAIMED A UNION THAT NEVER WAS. They conjured up a UNION by POSITIVE THINKING.

They said, "I am saved, because I say I am saved." THEY thought the Bible said they were saved, but they would NOT READ WHAT THE BIBLE SAID WAS THE REAL EVIDENCE OF SALVATION. When you claim the BIBLE SAYS I AM SAVED, then you have PUT YOUR FAITH AND TRUST IN THE SCRIPTURE, AND IN THEM YOU THINK YOU HAVE ETERNAL LIFE. The Bible is the testimony of THE ONE WHO HOLDS ETERNAL LIFE, and HE IS WAITING FOR YOU TO WALK THE NARROW WAY SO HE CAN BESTOW IT UPON YOU WHEN HE IS READY, WHEN HE DECIDES.

## **STORY NUMBER TWO**

A group of scientist is contacted by their government. They are ordered to a top secret project called THE MANHATTAN PROJECT. They have in their hands a white paper written by Albert Einstein that claims that a tremendous amount of energy can be released by the SPLITTING OF THE ATOMS, THE ELEMENTARY PARTICLES OF MATTER. He claims that  $E=MC^2$ , and this would WIN THE WAR IF A BOMB COULD BE DEVELOPED USING THIS THEORY.

The word of Einstein becomes THEIR BIBLE. They put all of THEIR FAITH, THEIR TRUST, THEIR BELIEF in to this theoretical concept. They must now take THE INVISIBLE THEORY, AND CHANGE IT INTO A REALITY. Day by day, week by week, month by month THEY LABOR AND STRIVE to change THE INVISIBLE THEORY AND CONCEPT INTO A KNOWN REALITY. Their faith grows with every passing day. There are many obstacles placed in their way, which they must strive and labor against in order to OVERCOME THEM. Their every waking hour is devoted to DILIGENT STUDY,

DILIGENT APPLICATION. Little by little PROGRESS IS BEING MADE. Their faith IN EINSTEIN and HIS THEORY grows as their experiments ALL PROVE IT IS CORRECT. They test here a little and there a little. Line by line, precept upon precept, proof upon proof THEIR FAITH GROWS AND PUSHES THEM FORWARD.

The days drift by, the weeks, the months and the years. THEY DO NOT GIVE UP; THEY MEET WITH TRIAL AFTER TRIAL, FAILURE AFTER FAILURE. The obstacles mount, but so does their diligence and persistence and their fortitude. THEY SET THEIR FACES AS FLINT, and they WILL NOT BE DEFEATED by the enemy. They will take death to defeat. BY FAITH ALONE THEY CONTINUE, SEARCHING, SEEKING, LOOKING. DILIGENTLY THEY PROCEED, LEAVING NO CLUE, NO STONE UNTURNED. Their search is far flung, and wide. They accept all things, and hold fast to THAT WHICH PROVES TO BE TRUE. Their vision becomes wider, their FAITH STRONGER. THEY NOW ARRIVE AT THE POINT WHERE THEY KNOW POSITIVELY THEIR WEAPON WILL WORK. There is NO QUESTION WHATEVER IT WILL WORK.

They struggle and strive and put the final pieces of their weapon together. IT stands before them, UNTRIED, UNTESTED. It is a weapon OF FAITH, BUILT BY FAITH. It was the DYNAMIC OF FAITH THAT PROPELLED THEM, THAT URGED THEM, THAT DROVE THEM FORWARD AGAINST ALL ODDS. It was their FAITH and their HOPE OF ULTIMATE SUCCESS that BROUGHT THEM THROUGH THEIR NARROW WAY. They had given up their lives, their families, their homes, their communities, their friends, and BY FAITH ALONE made their journey.

The BOMB sits before them. It is ready. They are positive it will work. They are TOTALLY SURE IT WILL GO OFF. All of their PROOFS TO DATE PROVE IT IS SO. Every test they have made PROVED THE WORD TO BE TRUE. There was not ONE AREA in which Einstein's theory was not PUT TO THE TEST. It held up against the evidence. The evidence collected PROVED THE WORD OF EINSTEIN TRUE.

BY FAITH ALONE they place their weapon on a tower in the middle of the desert. BY FAITH ALONE they wire it up with diligent safety precautions. Everything is set. Everything is ready. ALL OF THE EVIDENCE IS IN AND IT POINTS IN ONE DIRECTION: IT WILL WORK. They go down into their bunkers and peer out the window. BY FAITH ALONE the countdown starts. WILL THEIR FAITH PROVE CORRECT? WILL THEY JUMP THE GIANT GULF BETWEEN FAITH AND KNOWING? WILL THE BOMB ACTUALLY EXPLODE AND GIVE THEM AN EXPERIENTIAL REVELATION AND MANIFESTATION OF THE POWERS OF THE ATOM? Will they THEN COME TO THEIR END OF THEIR FAITH, AND KNOW ABSOLUTELY? WILL THE REALITY OF THE UNKNOWN MANIFEST ITSELF? Will the powers of heaven itself REVEAL THEMSELVES?

Will their persistence and tenacity pay off? WILL THE WEAPON ACTUALLY WORK? They did not know FOR SURE IT WOULD WORK UNTIL THEY TRIED IT. They were POSITIVE IT SHOULD WORK. But would it? Had they miscalculated? The whole project was one OF FAITH IN THE WORD OF EINSTEIN. From the beginning unto the end they were dealing WITH UNKNOWNNS, WITH INVISIBLE FORCES, THINGS NOT SEEN, NOT FULLY UNDERSTOOD.

They needed REAL HARD EVIDENCE, A REAL PROOF. There was no real evidence, no real proof that the weapon would work. Their testing INDICATED IT WOULD. Their faith was ABSTRACT, IT WAS THEORY, IT HAD NO TANGIBLE PROOF.

They now stood on the edge, the razor edge, between FAITH AND KNOWING. There stood before them that GIGANTIC GULF, THAT WIDE EXPANSE OF NOTHINGNESS THAT SEPARATES FAITH FROM KNOWING. This gulf is as vast as the universe. It is the very gulf that separates man from God.

The cries of mankind echo and rebound across the abyss of the cosmos, forever answered by the cold winds of silence. IS GOD REALLY ALIVE? IS HE THERE? DOES HE CARE? WHAT IS GOING TO HAPPEN TO ME WHEN I DIE? ARE WE ALONE FOREVER? IS THERE NO CHANCE TO KNOW FOR SURE? Man lives but a moment, is full of trouble, dies in agony and goes back to the dust. The next generation moves up, asks the same questions, cries those same tears, holds the same fears, and dies and goes into silence. YET FOR ALL OF IT THERE IS A COLD, DARK FOREBODING SILENCE.

So man invents all forms of religions and philosophies in an attempt to bridge the gulf by his reason, and his intelligence. It offers comfort in time of need. But there are no REAL ANSWERS, NO REAL EVIDENCE, NO REAL PROOF. So they argue, debate, fight and kill over their various concepts. This GULF OF SILENCE, THIS GULF OF THE COLD WINDS OF THE UNIVERSE, BLOWS IN MAN'S FACE. He peers out into outer space, and probes ever deeper into the mysteries of the Universe. He is crying inside, fearful, but he will not admit it. He gathers himself together, PUFFS HIMSELF UP, and with great confidence BLUNDERS FORWARD INTO THE FUTURE.

Can this bridge BETWEEN FAITH AND KNOWING BE CROSSED? Is that lonely figure from our history, the preacher who wandered the dusty roads of Judea OUR BRIDGE? Does He hold in His nail-scarred hands THE SECRETS OF THE UNIVERSE? Was He really the CREATOR OF IT ALL? How did He know 2000 years ago that every hair upon our heads is literally numbered? How did He know the secrets of DNA and genetic coding, which have proved Him correct? Could it be that in His hands, His heart, His mind, **HE CREATED THE COSMOS? THAT HE IS THE BRIDGE?** Could it be that this carpenter, this man who cried unto us all **HELD THE REAL TRUTH?** Does the cross of Jesus Christ **SPAN THE ENTIRE COSMOS, FROM INNER TO OUTER SPACE AND BEYOND?**

Jesus said HIS WORDS WOULD NEVER PASS AWAY. No matter how large the universe, no matter how long in years, **HIS VOICE, AND WORDS WOULD NEVER PASS AWAY.** He said that heaven and earth WOULD PASS AWAY. But He himself would never pass away. WAS HE GOD IN THE HUMAN FLESH? WAS HE THE CREATOR OF IT ALL, OF US ALL? His wisdom is loved by many tribes of man. His claims to divinity are hated. We take His wisdom; we change it into what it is not. We take His claim to being **THE ONLY ANSWER TO THE UNIVERSE AND WE TOSS IT ASIDE.** It is a most tragic mistake.

## **WE HAVE UNDERESTIMATED THE CARPENTER FROM GALILEE**

The scientists have journeyed a long way. They have had their faith tested, tried, and now they await their proof. WILL THEY JUMP THE GULF BETWEEN FAITH AND KNOWING? BY FAITH they push the button. All hearts stop. It seems like an eternity. Every eye, every mind, every heart, every hope, every faith, ALL AWAIT THE MOMENT OF TRUTH. WILL IT EXPLODE OR NOT? Was their faith and hope all for naught? Was all of their diligence, their striving for naught? SUDDENLY THERE IS A BLINDING FLASH OF LIGHT AS THE POWERS OF HEAVEN ARE UNLEASHED. THERE IS A TERRIFIC EXPLOSION AND A GIGANTIC CLOUD RISES UP IN THE DESERT SKIES. The shock waves are fierce, and the storm of angry atoms causes fear. **THE WORLD WILL NEVER AGAIN BE THE SAME.**

The unseen, the unknown, the invisible answered. They jumped the gigantic gulf OF THE UNKNOWN AND INVISIBLE INTO THE VISIBLE AND THE KNOWN. They had seen it with their own eyes. They had captured it on film. THEY HAD PROOF; THEY HAD EVIDENCE. NOW THEY KNEW FOR SURE. NOW THEY HAD ABSOLUTE KNOWLEDGE, ABSOLUTE ASSURANCE,

ABSOLUTE PROOF. The world could laugh at them, scoff at them, ridicule them, claim them idiots, fanatics, lunatics or worse, the world could burn them at the stake, DENY IT, DISOWN IT, DISCLAIM IT, BUT THEY KNEW FOR SURE. Their faith met **EXPERIENTIAL REALITY AND KNOWING FACE TO FACE**. Their faith had been tried in the fire and been found genuine. Their faith had been tried and put to the ultimate test.

They had jumped the gulf between FAITH AND KNOWING. IN AN INSTANT, THEY FLEW ACROSS INTO THE ARMS OF KNOWING. It was the meeting with EXPERIENTIAL REALITY, AND EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING THAT PROVED THEIR FAITH VALID. They had reached their destination, **AND THEY KNEW IT**. They had searched until THEY FOUND. They had knocked until EXPERIENTIAL REALITY OPENED ITS DOOR. THEY WERE HOME, AND THEY KNEW IT. Their theology was not in error. Their theology was dead center accurate. They worked out their salvation with great fear and trembling. IT WAS THE GIGANTIC DISPLAY OF POWER AND THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE LIGHT that proved they were TOTALLY CORRECT.

Now they can move ahead with KNOWLEDGE, A KNOWING, AND FAITH AND HOPE, ALL COMBINED TOGETHER. They now take their faith, their hope, and they combine it with their EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE, which is THEIR WITNESS, THEIR SEALING, to forge a more powerful witness. Now they can build upon ABSOLUTE KNOWLEDGE. Now they can BUILD UPON A FIRM FOUNDATION.

Now then let us apply this to REGENERATION. Let us say that CONVERSION is the same as reading Einstein Theory of Relativity booklet. We convert to it; we believe it is right. WE BUY INTO IT. Our conversion is WHOLE HEARTED. Regeneration is the actual EXPLOSION ITSELF. Between CONVERSION AND REGENERATION is a long hard arduous journey, filled with OBSTACLES, TRIALS, TESTING. As we read our paper, we become 'hooked on it' and we begin to test it, to see if it be true. WE STAY IN THE WORD. The narrow way is the trial of the scientists. Day by day, week by week, month by month and year by year their FAITH WAS TESTED, TRIED. The believer is tested and tried in the same manner. They continued, labored, strove, fought until they WERE POSITIVE THE WORD WAS TRUE. Likewise you are to strive and labor until you come to a point of DEATH, AND YOU KNOW IT IS TRUE.

Question: DID THE SCIENTIST TAKE THE EXPLOSION AS AN ACT OF FAITH? Did Noah take his ark as an ACT OF FAITH? Did the scientists just sit around and say 'I HAVE SEEN THE EXPLOSION. PRAISE THE LORD! I have seen the LIGHT! Praise the Lord!' Did they just by POSITIVE CONFESSION CLAIM AN EXPLOSION? DID THEY BY POSITIVE THINKING CLAIM THE EXPLOSION? No, they did not. THEY LITERALLY SAW IT. THEY LITERALLY EXPERIENCED IT. THEY HAD SEEN THE LIGHT IN A VERY REAL AND TERRIBLE DEMONSTRATION OF POWER. You see, their faith was not operative. When they jump the gulf between faith and knowing, they leave **FAITH BEHIND**. Faith is not the end all and be all of Christianity. It is the DYNAMIC ONLY:

***“If YE CONTINUE IN MY WORD,  
THEN ARE YE MY DISCIPLES INDEED;***

***AND YE SHALL KNOW THE TRUTH,  
AND THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE.”***

***(John 8:31-32)***

Jesus Christ said we COULD KNOW THE TRUTH. We have proved that this truth is AGAPE LOVE. We have proved that agape love is of the SPIRIT. We have proved that SPIRITUAL THINGS CANNOT BE LEARNED BY THE CARNAL MIND, THE SENSE MIND, THE SOUL MAN, THE SENSE MAN. It is spiritual. We have PROVED with much Scripture that ONLY GOD REVEALS DIRECTLY AND EXPERIENTIALLY SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE. If agape love was lost at the fall, and it is not a part of our nature, then WHEN does it become OUR NEW NATURE? If we can FIND, when do I know I have FOUND? If I can knock on a closed door, when do I know the DOOR HAS BEEN OPENED?

The fallacy of the modern faith movement, of instant regeneration is that by AN ACT OF FAITH WE APPROPRIATE EVERYTHING. It is a lie right out of the pits of hell itself. It is the very lie Satan needs to SWEEP YOU INTO ETERNAL RUIN. Faith is ONLY A DYNAMIC, A MEANS TO AN END, IT IS NOT THE END. Faith itself does not save anyone, it never has, it never will. FAITH GETS YOU TO THE POINT OF CONTACT, TO THE POINT OF EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING, OF REVELATION, OF MANIFESTATION. You are TO KNOW when you have found the mystery of God, the MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE.

### **STORY NUMBER THREE**

You are in Chicago and you get a call from your family in Minneapolis that they need you home for something. It is urgent that you be there. The weather is not good. There is forecast of a major winter storm sweeping in from the southwest. There are winter storm warnings up for your route home. You jump into your car BY FAITH, and you begin your journey down the long narrow way of I-90 & I-94. It begins to blow and snow starts to fall. You wonder if you will make it. You begin to become fearful. The snow thickens; the winds blow harder. The snow is starting to build, and the roads are getting icy. **YOU PRESS ON BY FAITH.**

Cars are beginning to go off the road, and you see a few at first skid into the median and down into the gullies along the way. The plows are out now, going in force, but they cannot keep up with it. You turn on your radio, and you hear advisories that ahead the roads are terrible, and the state patrol is advising everyone to get off the highway unless they must travel. YOU COLLECT YOURSELF TOGETHER. YOU SET YOUR FACE AS FLINT. Your family needs you. You build up your confidence. You will not be turned back: YOU WILL PRESS ON, YOU WILL CONTINUE. Every fiber of your being is now dedicated to keeping the car on the road. You pass hundreds of cars in the ditch. You STRIVE AND LABOR to maintain control. You grit your teeth, you PRESS ON. BY FAITH alone you continue.

You pray to God to protect you. YOU MUST REACH HOME, YOU MUST FIND YOUR FAMILY. You ask God to send angels to guide you. You continue, and the way is now VERY NARROW, AND VERY HARD, VERY DIFFICULT. Night has now fallen and you NAVIGATE ONLY BY THE LIGHT OF YOUR CAR. You yourself can see very little ahead, only the light cast by your headlights. They guide you IN YOUR JOURNEY. No one can teach you now. ONLY THE LIGHT CAN GUIDE YOU. YOU PRESS ON, CONTINUE. YOU ABIDE, REMAIN, ARE STEADFAST. Many of your fellow travelers have gone OFF THE WAY. They made a mistake; they lost control and they fell in the ditch. You know you cannot stop for them.

Out of darkness appear the lights of the City. You recognize things, you continue and arrive at your destination. You KNOCK upon the door and it is opened. You fall into the arms of your family. YOU

HAVE OVERCOME. YOU ARE AN OVERCOMER. YOU KEPT THE FAITH, YOU FOUGHT THE FIGHT OF FAITH UNTIL YOU ARRIVED AT YOUR DESTINATION. When you SEE YOUR FAMILY, WHEN YOU EXPERIENCE THE REALITY OF THEM IN FRONT OF YOU, YOU KNOW YOU HAVE ARRIVED. Questions: Where was faith operative, and where was faith no longer needed? When you fall into the arms of your family, DO YOU NEED FAITH ANYMORE, OR DO YOU KNOW FOR A FACT? When did you pass over the GULF that separates FAITH FROM KNOWING? When did you SEE your family? When were they MANIFESTED TO YOU? When were they REVEALED TO YOU?

Did you just IMAGINE BY POSITIVE THINKING your family? Did you just IMAGINE BY POSITIVE CONFESSION your entire journey? Did you just sit in Chicago and say "I BY FAITH CLAIM I AM IN MINNEAPOLIS? Did you just sit in your armchair and say "BY FAITH I AM NOW IN THE PRESENCE OF MY FAMILY?" Did you BY FAITH SIMPLY TELEPORT YOURSELF TO MINNEAPOLIS? The answers are obvious, and YET MILLIONS OF CHRISTIANS CLOSE THEIR EYES AND IMAGINE IN THEIR MINDS THEY ARE REGENERATED, IN UNION AND ARE THE SONS AND DAUGHTERS OF GOD. What a tragic DELUSION. What a fanatic DECEPTION.

I want to ask you a most serious question: Do you think that the God of this universe, THE CREATOR OF IT ALL, a God of 100% PURE AGAPE LOVE, could actually COME TO YOU, ENTER INTO UNION WITH YOU, and actually invade your dark, puny little self with all of your problems AND YOU NOT BE AWARE OF IT? Do you actually think that PURE AGAPE LOVE CAN INVADE YOUR INNER HEART AND SOUL AND MIND AND LITERALLY KICK THE GREAT "I AM" OFF YOUR THRONE, AND YOU NOT BE EXPERIENTIALLY AWARE OF IT? What an INSULT TO CHRIST AND TO GOD. What an ARROGANT CONCEPT that is! That reduces God and Christ to a puny, insignificant IT, that somehow SNEAKS AROUND AND INVADES PEOPLE IN TOTAL SECRECY AND THEY ARE NOT EVEN AWARE OF IT. What a lie, what a deception.

If you camp within 20 miles of an above ground nuclear test, do you think YOU WOULD BE AWARE WHEN THE BOMB EXPLODED? Do you think you might SEE THE FLASH, HEAR THE SOUND, FEEL THE SHOCK WAVES, AND SEE THE CLOUDS OF DUST? Are you going to reduce Christ and God down to a NUCLEAR BLAST? Let me tell you, CHRIST AND GOD ARE MORE THAN THE UNIVERSE PUT TOGETHER. WHEN THEY COME, YOU KNOW IT. Every fiber of your being, every cell of your brain IS AWARE THAT CHRIST HAS COME. Christ is God, my friend, the same God that had the power to create the entire universe. He created the galaxies, the billions of stars; it was His hand that stretched out the heavens. From His hand came everything there was, is and ever will be. If the nations are counted as DUST in His hands, and the COSMOS as DUST in His hands, then O VAIN CHRISTIAN, WHY DO YOU IMAGINE HE CAN ENTER YOU AND YOU NOT BE AWARE OF IT?

This is **GOD TAKING UP RESIDENCE IN YOUR PUNY SOUL**. This is a God of AWESOME POWER, AND AWESOME MIGHT, WITH AN AWESOME LOVE. It is God that we have to do with. Are you aware of what SOVEREIGNTY MEANS? How dare we bring God down by our stupid and vain theologies and sell a God of **NO POWER, NO MIGHT AND NO SAVING ABILITY**, to our fellow seekers of truth. Shame be on the heads of the false prophets and teachers.

They told all of their followers that ALL OF THESE VERSES were SECOND ADVENT VERSES, that all of the REVELATION, MANIFESTATION, SEEING AND KNOWING were to come when Christ came. If that is true, THEN WHY WOULD CHRIST CAST THEM OUT FOR NOT KNOWING THEM? Ever think about that? Why would Christ REJECT people HE WAS NOT TO KNOW UNTIL HE CAME TO GET THEM? The answer is OBVIOUS. He rejects them BECAUSE HE WAS SUPPOSED TO HAVE MET THEM BEFORE THE SECOND ADVENT. He was supposed to have met them IN UNION, AND TO HAVE 'SUPPER' WITH THEM. He was SUPPOSED to have SPOKEN TO

THEM, JOINED WITH THEM. That is why He rejects them AT THE END, because THIS CONSUMMATION NEVER TOOK PLACE!

## **REPENT, AND TURN, THAT YE MIGHT FIND LIFE.**

### **STORY NUMBER FOUR**

A certain king who was very rich called for a great wedding dinner and feast in the honor of his son. His call went out to the far reaches of his kingdom. In the proclamation of the coming feast, the rich king made certain stipulations that would have to be observed. Because he knew that the vast majority of people could not afford to be dressed properly for this grand occasion, he decided to hand out TICKETS TO HIS FEAST. The ticket was in fact a written INVITATION, WITH AN RSVP ATTACHED.

Included in the instruction was the fact that this was an RSVP ONLY OCCASION. You had to respond. Secondly, you had to go downtown and purchase AT THE RICH MAN'S EXPENSE A WHITE ROBE. You had to go to a specific place, well marked, and you had to follow the instructions to enter that he enclosed. If anyone showed up WITHOUT THE PROPER AND AUTHORIZED WHITE ROBE, THEY WOULD NOT BE ALLOWED TO ENTER. The guards of the rich man's estate had orders to forcibly evict anyone who did attempt to enter without their proper white robe.

The kingdom was abuzz over the coming feast. Many people sent in their RSVP and said they would be there. The date of the feast was set, and the rich man was happy at the coming event. When the people went into the city to obtain their WHITE ROBES, they found that the entrance to the address given was FULL OF OBSTACLES. There were so many obstacles in the way that one had to FORCE THEIR WAY THROUGH ONE AT A TIME. After they were past the GATE, they found a very NARROW STAIRWAY that descended many stories into foreboding darkness. The stairs were narrow and dangerous, and wet. If you did not hold on to the railing, you would slip and fall to your death.

Many of the people GREW ANGRY because the gate was so strait that they could not bring themselves to try it. Others, who had passed it, grew fearful at the narrow way and refused to go further, for fear they might fall. Some went part way and then they turned back. A group of HUCKSTER'S GATHERED OUTSIDE THE GATE. They watched as the people struggled to gain entrance and it gave them an idea. WHY NOT SET UP SHOP OUTSIDE THE GATE, AND PEDDLE WHITE ROBES TO ALL WHO WANTED THEM? They could make a fortune selling the robes, and walk away very rich.

So the HUCKSTERS set up their shops around the entrance of the gate. They put up signs all over saying: 'BUY YOUR ROBES HERE, AUTHENTIC ROBES, THEY WILL ALLOW YOU ENTRANCE TO THE FEAST.' As the entire kingdom had been bidden to come, they knew that here was an opportunity for great merchandising. THEY CALLED THEIR ROBES FAITH ROBES. The people would come and take one look at the STRAIT GATE and decide to purchase their robes from the FAITH HUCKSTERS. They IGNORED THE INSTRUCTIONS OF THE RICH MAN. They decided NOT TO OBEY THE INSTRUCTIONS. They went to the MERCHANDISERS OF THE FAITH ROBES AND THEY BOUGHT THEM BY THE THOUSANDS.



Only a few persisted in entering the strait gate. They were laughed at by the crowds. They were mocked, called idiots, fanatics. The few would point out to the many what the instructions said. The instructions were so clear that no one could miss what they meant. The many would laugh, and say 'IT DOES NOT MEAN WHAT IT SAYS, HOW COULD IT POSSIBLY MEAN THAT? You don't really believe that the rich king intends for us to GO THROUGH ALL THAT DO YOU? You're misinterpreting what he said. He said for us to get a white robe. These robes are white. You see, the rich man only wants us to APPEAR CORRECTLY DRESSED. THE TYPE OF ROBE IS NOT THE POINT. The point is that we be properly dressed. There is nothing wrong with these FAITH ROBES. The few would respond and say, "but it says here WE **MUST** GO TO THE APPROVED ROBES." With a wave of the hand their claims were laid aside, and the many SHUT THEIR OWN EYES TO THE COMMANDS.

The HUCKSTERS MADE A FORTUNE. They were very popular. It was very easy to obtain a robe from them, and there was no gate or narrow way to travel to get it. Their robes looked in every way genuine. The merchandisers' reputation grew far and wide.

The great day of the feast arrived. The people washed and cleaned themselves, put on their robes, and began to gather at the gate of the rich king. They came by the thousands, and gathered in groups awaiting entrance. They were all very joyful, full of great happiness. The whole Kingdom had declared a holiday, and all work ceased in honor of the Son's wedding day. It became apparent that there was DIFFERENCE IN THE ROBES. A few people showed in robes that were so white they were luminous. It was as if they had their own light within. These robes were beautiful, made of a fabric unknown to anyone that looked at them. "**WE KNOW NOT WHAT THESE ROBES ARE MADE OF.**" They were envious, jealous, for their robes were just white cotton.

Suddenly the Son appeared. His white robe was **SO WHITE IT SHINED WITH THE LIGHT OF A THOUSAND SUNS.** All of the guests were stunned by his beauty. The Son said to the guards, there is something wrong here, for I see only a FEW with the proper robes, all of these others have on IMITATIONS. Check them carefully; I will be with you. I KNOW WHOM I GAVE MY ROBES TO. THEY ARE THEY THAT WENT TO THE LOWEST ROOM, AND I AND MY FATHER CAME TO THEM AND GAVE THEM THEIR ROBES. Check each one, **we have counterfeits here.**

One by one the people came to the entrance seeking admission to the great feast. One by one the robes were checked to see if they were genuine or not. One by one they appeared before the Son, and one by one He turned them away and said, "Get away from me, **I NEVER KNEW YOU**". Those that had gone in via the strait gate, and had walked down the narrow way to the lowest room, and had waited, RECOGNIZED THE SON, and HE RECOGNIZED THEM, because they **HAD MET HIM IN THE LOWEST ROOM.** Their robes were washed in the **BLOOD OF THE LAMB. THEY HAD A SHINE TO THEM, A LUMINOUS SHINE.** He called them by name, AND LED THEM OUT.

The rich man, the King, the Father of the Bridegroom was WROTH WITH ANGER. "KILL THE IMPOSTORS", HE SAID. "BIND THEM HAND AND FOOT AND TOSS THEM INTO OUTER DARKNESS, THEY HAVE DISHONORED MY SON, THEY ARE IMPOSTORS, LIARS, DECEIVERS." And so it was done. **There was much crying, wailing and gnashing of teeth.**

Which robe do you have on? Is yours a FAITH ROBE? Did you purchase YOUR ROBE FROM THE **FAITH ROBE HUCKSTERS?** Is your robe made of common white cotton, or is your robe made of **SUPERNATURAL MATERIAL?** If you have on a faith robe, I urge you with tears, I beseech you to take it off, and enter the strait gate and narrow way. I urge you to go to the LOWEST ROOM, and wait for Him that bade you to come. **HE WILL COME:**

*“So that ye come behind in no gift;*

**WAITING FOR THE COMING OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST:**

**WHO SHALL ALSO CONFIRM YOU UNTO THE END,  
THAT YE MAY BE BLAMELESS  
IN THE DAY OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST.”**

**(1 Corinthians 1:7-8)**

Modern theology places this as a Second Advent verse. **IT IS NOT POSSIBLE THAT THIS IS A SECOND ADVENT VERSE.** Read it carefully, over and over until you see it. THE BELIEVER IS TO WAIT FOR THE COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. The word for “waiting” is ‘apekdechomai’, which means **TO EXPECT FULLY, TO LOOK FOR, TO WAIT FOR.** When Christ COMES, He will **ALSO CONFIRM YOU UNTO THE END.** In other words TWO THINGS HAPPEN: HE COMES AND REVEALS HIMSELF, AND THEN **HE ALSO CONFIRMS YOU TO THE END.**

If this was a Second Advent verse, **IT IS THE END, AND CHRIST NEED NOT CONFIRM US TO ANYTHING.** Why do you need to be confirmed **IF THE END HAS ALREADY ARRIVED?** Either you are in, or you are out. This verse clearly states that **YOU ARE TO BE CONFIRMED UNTO THE END.** There is going to be a period of time between Christ coming to give you agape love and the final **CONSUMMATION OF IT ALL.** The coming of Christ to the believer **IS TO CONFIRM THAT BELIEVER, SEAL THAT BELIEVER UNTO THE END.** What is the end? **THE DAY OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST IS THE END. THE DAY OF CHRIST IS THE RESURRECTION AND RAPTURE.** It is the coming of the Lord **TO CONFIRM YOU VIA AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT THAT SEALS YOU UNTO THE DAY OF REDEMPTION.** The word “end” is ‘talos’ which means **CONCLUSION, TERMINATION, END RESULT.**

The word “confirm” here is ‘bebaioo’ which means **TO STABILITATE, TO ESTABLISH, TO CONFIRM.** The word stabilitate comes from the word stability, which means among other things, **“...FIRMNESS IN POSITION...CONTINUANCE WITHOUT CHANGE, PERMANENCE.”** It is used to **BIND UP TOTALLY, TO CAPTURE AND TO KEEP SAFE.** We will get into this in the chapter on eternal security. **WHEN THE LORD JESUS CHRIST COMES, AND UNVEILS AGAPE LOVE TO YOU, AND COMES IN TO YOU, YOU ARE AT THAT POINT CONFIRMED, SEALED, BOUND UP.** The issue between you and God is settled forever. You are acquitted.

This verse proves that there is a big difference between THE COMING OF CHRIST TO THE BELIEVER AND THE DAY OF CHRIST, WHICH IS THE LITERAL SECOND ADVENT OF CHRIST TO OBTAIN HIS PRIZE, **THE BRIDE OF CHRIST.** The distinction made is bold, direct. READ YOUR BIBLE CAREFULLY. IT MEANS WHAT IT SAYS.

Notice how it is worded. WE ARE TO WAIT FOR THE COMING OF CHRIST. The word “coming” is ‘apokalupsis’, which means **APPEARING, MANIFESTATION, REVELATION.** This is confirmed by Revelation 3:20 (“I will **come** into him, and sup with him”); by John 14:21 (“I will **manifest** myself to him”); by John 14:23 (“we will **come** to him”); by John 3:3 (“**see** the kingdom”); and John 6:40 (“**seeth** the son”). YOU ARE TO SEE THE SON. YOU ARE TO HAVE A REVELATION OF THE SON OF GOD. YOU ARE TO HAVE A MANIFESTATION OF AGAPE LOVE, WHO IS THE SON. It is this appearing that BRINGS THE UNION WITH THE LIVING CHRIST. You cannot enter into union with someone unless you MEET THEM FACE TO FACE.

It is this COMING, this FIRST APPEARING, that **CONFIRMS YOU**. It is the righteousness of Christ that confirms you, not your own righteousness. We are saved for **HIS NAME'S SAKE, BY GRACE**, and not upon any merit we have. If Christ is able to CONFIRM YOU, **THEN WHO CAN DISANNUL IT?**

The concept that Christ is to appear to the believer was lost in the FAITH MOVEMENT, which categorically denies any such revelation, and claims we can become **INSTANT REGENERATED CHRISTIANS**. We have utterly disproved that fact. It is a vain flight of fancy, a carnal gospel, a gospel of death followed after by lying signs and wonders. It was not lost from view however by the few, who **KNEW ABOUT THE REVELATION OF CHRIST**. I will now quote from a very FAMOUS BOOK IN CHRISTENDOM TODAY, CALLED '**THE PILGRIM'S PROGRESS**'. This book is LAUDED by many of our false prophets who hold the book up, and then **CATEGORICALLY DENY WHAT IT SAYS**.

*“Hope: Ask him if he HAD **CHRIST REVEALED TO HIM FROM HEAVEN**.*

*Ignorance: What! You are a man of REVELATIONS. I believe that both you and all the rest of you say about this matter, IS BUT THE FRUIT OF DISTRACTED BRAINS.*

*Hope: Why man! CHRIST IS SO HID IN GOD FROM THE NATURAL APPREHENSIONS OF THE FLESH,*

*THAT HE **CANNOT** BY ANY MAN*

*BE **SAVINGLY KNOWN**,*

*UNLESS THE FATHER **REVEALS HIM TO THEM**.*

*Ignorance: That IS YOUR FAITH, but NOT mine; yet mine, I DOUBT NOT, IS **AS GOOD AS YOURS**,  
THOUGH I HAVE NOT IN MY HEAD AS MANY WHIMSIES AS YOU.*

*Christian: Give me leave to put in a word. YOU OUGHT NOT **TO SO SLIGHTLY SPEAK OF THIS MATTER;***

*FOR THIS I WILL **BOLDLY AFFIRM***

*(EVEN AS MY GOOD COMPANION HAS DONE)*

*THAT NO MAN **CAN KNOW JESUS CHRIST***

***BUT BY REVELATION OF THE FATHER:***

*YES, AND FAITH TOO,*

*BY WHICH THE SOUL LAYETH HOLD UPON CHRIST*

***(IF IT BE RIGHT)***

***MUST BE WROUGHT BY THE EXCEEDING GREATNESS OF HIS MIGHTY POWER;  
THE WORKING OF WHICH FAITH, I PERCEIVE, POOR IGNORANCE,  
THOU ART***

***IGNORANT OF.”***

I have heard this book held up time after time by well-known teachers and evangelists. They tell every one to read it, but then turn right around and claim ***THERE IS NO REVELATION, IT IS MERELY 'ILLUMINATION' OF THE MIND.*** They are under a deception, a delusion. Pray for them. The “many” had the faith of IGNORANCE. They laughed and scoffed and said any such revelation was UTTERLY FALSE. That is why they stood before Christ rejected, and that is why Christ sent them into eternal ruin. ***HE DID NOT KNOW THEM BECAUSE HE HAD NEVER COME TO THEM, HE HAD NEVER ENTERED INTO UNION WITH HIM.*** Their faith was the faith of IGNORANCE, and the Scriptures say we are WILLFULLY IGNORANT if we do not study to show ourselves approved unto God.

This was penned back in the 1600's, and the ***REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST BY THE MIGHTY POWER OF GOD WAS KNOWN TO THE FEW.*** Bunyan was thrown in jail for his teachings, and the Church could not stand him, for he put the lie to their false religion, their false theology and showed them what they were: ***IMPOSTORS, LIARS, BASTARD SONS.*** Bunyan had the revelation of Christ, was trying to tell everyone about it. He was warning them that FAITH WITHOUT THE REVELATION IS NOT FAITH AT ALL. FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS A DEAD FAITH. It is the faith of the narrow way that brings Christ, who in turns CONFIRMS YOU UNTO THE END BY HIS GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE.

It is all true. Do not let the false prophets, who are themselves under a deception and a delusion, SWAY YOU AWAY FROM THE WORD OF GOD. I can personally attest that IT IS TRUE. Christ came to me personally. He spoke to me, called me by name, showed me HIS AGAPE LOVE, AND ASKED ME IF I WANTED IT. When I said yes, HE CAME IN TO ME, AND IT WAS ALL VERY EXPERIENTIAL, AND ALSO WAS IN STRICT ACCORDANCE TO HIS WRITTEN WORD, WHICH HE CANNOT, AND WILL NOT VIOLATE.

By the testimony of TWO OR MORE WITNESSES is anything established. The REVELATION OF CHRIST must be in FULL ACCORDANCE with the Bible. The revelation is ONE WITNESS; the second witness IS SCRIPTURE. If the revelation IS NOT IN ACCORDANCE TO SCRIPTURE, it is most likely a COUNTERFEIT FROM SATAN. The revelation we are speaking of here is a REVELATION OF WHAT TRUE AGAPE LOVE IS.

The revelation we are speaking of here WILL OCCUR AT THE END OF THE WALK OF DEATH. WE ALWAYS GO FROM DEATH TO LIFE, NEVER FROM LIFE TO LIFE. We must die, and that death is as experiential as the REVELATION ITSELF. The next report will cover the TRUE EVIDENCE OF REGENERATION.

**DARK LIGHT SERIES  
TWELVE  
REGENERATION  
THE FINDING OF LIFE  
UNION WITH CHRIST**

We have now covered a lot of Scripture to show you that AGAPE LOVE is the only issue between God and man, and that man has to settle this issue with His God on an individual basis if he/she is to be saved and not face the Great White Throne Judgment after death. We have shown that the NARROW WAY is a form of the White Throne Judgment, which is accomplished while a person is alive, so that Christ can step forward and save that soul with His mercy and grace. We have discussed faith and grace, works and legalism and found a perfect harmony within to under gird the narrow way of Christ. IT IS NOT OF WORKS; IT IS OF FAITH AND OF GRACE.

If the issue between man and God is this agape love issue, then the goal of the Gospel would be to SETTLE THIS ISSUE, AND BRING MAN BACK INTO AGREEMENT WITH GOD, BACK INTO UNITY WITH GOD, TO JOIN MAN TO GOD, first in the spirit, and later, at the resurrection rapture, with a new body. In other words the THRUST of all of the New Testament would be oriented TO THIS GOAL. If this is the GOAL, then this would be included in the COMMANDS OF CHRIST AS WELL. This would then be stated by Christ in unmistakably clear language, and reaffirmed in the Epistles.

**“A NEW COMMANDMENT I GIVE UNTO YOU,  
THAT YE (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER;  
AS I HAVE (AGAPE) LOVED YOU,  
THAT YE ALSO (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER.  
(John 13:34)**

**THIS IS MY COMMANDMENT,  
THAT YE (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER,  
AS I HAVE (AGAPE) LOVED YOU.  
(John 15:12)**

**THESE THINGS I COMMAND YOU,  
THAT YE (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER.”  
(John 15:17)**

One could hardly mistake the command of Christ. That this love is the WHOLE FULFILLMENT OF THE LAW was stated by Christ and is reaffirmed in the epistles:

***“Owe no man any thing, BUT TO (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER:  
FOR HE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH ANOTHER  
HATH FULFILLED THE LAW.***

***(Romans 13:8)***

***(AGAPE) LOVE WORKETH NO ILL TO HIS NEIGHBOUR:  
THEREFORE (AGAPE) LOVE  
IS THE FULFILLMENT OF THE LAW.***

***(Romans 13:10)***

***FOR ALL THE LAW IS FULFILLED  
IN ONE WORD,  
EVEN IN THIS;  
THOU SHALT (AGAPE) LOVE THY NEIGHBOUR AS THYSELF.”***

***(Galatians 5:14)***

So there is no question whatever that this AGAPE LOVE is the answer to the total and complete fulfilling of the LAW OF GOD, OF THE COMMAND OF GOD. But here we have a problem, for NO MAN IS ABLE TO AGAPE LOVE, IT IS NOT A PART OF HIS NATURE. Agape love was totally eradicated from man at the fall. He lost it. He knows nothing about it, cannot comprehend it, it is ALIEN TO HIM. Therefore NO MAN CAN FULFILL THE LAW, AND THEREFORE ALL OF MAN FACE ETERNAL DEATH. God promised a NEW COVENANT. He said that He would take out of man his STONE COLD HEART, and put a NEW HEART within him. This new heart would BE OF THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT.

***“But this SHALL BE THE COVENANT  
THAT I WILL MAKE WITH THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL;  
AFTER THOSE DAYS, SAITH THE LORD,  
I WILL PUT MY LAW IN THEIR INWARD PARTS,  
AND WRITE IT IN THEIR HEARTS;  
AND WILL BE THEIR GOD,  
AND THEY SHALL BE MY PEOPLE.”***

***(Jeremiah 31:33)***

***“A NEW HEART ALSO WILL I GIVE YOU,  
AND A NEW SPIRIT WILL I PUT WITHIN YOU:  
AND I WILL TAKE AWAY THE STONY HEART OUT OF YOUR FLESH,  
AND I WILL GIVE YOU AN HEART OF FLESH.***

***AND I WILL PUT MY SPIRIT WITHIN YOU,  
AND CAUSE YOU TO WALK IN MY STATUTES,  
AND YE SHALL KEEP MY JUDGMENTS, AND DO THEM.”***

***(Ezekiel 36:26-27)***

This is totally reconfirmed in Hebrews 8:7-13. The Old Covenant of the law was replaced, and the **NEW COVENANT USHERED IN BY JESUS CHRIST**. Christ is the MEDIATOR OF THE NEW COVENANT. Because mankind LOST AGAPE LOVE and it is not a part of HIS NATURE, then obviously the INNER NATURE OF MAN, HIS INNER HEART NATURE, MUST BE CHANGED INTO A NEW NATURE, A DIVINE NATURE.

Jesus Christ was sent to ESTABLISH the NEW COVENANT. He is the AUTHOR OF IT. He is the MEDIATOR OF IT. He therefore has the right to ESTABLISH HOW WE ENTER IT. He then will issue CERTAIN COMMANDMENTS THAT MUST BE FOLLOWED TO ENTER THIS NEW COVENANT. If we refuse, we FRUSTRATE the grace of God, and THE GRACE OF GOD FAILS to save us.

***“For there IS ONE GOD, AND ONE MEDIATOR  
BETWEEN GOD AND MEN,  
THE MAN CHRIST JESUS.”***  
(1 Timothy 2:5)

***“But now hath he (Jesus Christ) obtained a MORE EXCELLENT MINISTRY,  
BY HOW MUCH ALSO HE IS THE MEDIATOR OF A BETTER  
COVENANT,  
WHICH WAS ESTABLISHED UPON BETTER PROMISES.”***  
(Hebrews 8:6)

Jesus came to ESTABLISH the New Covenant, and He would be the MEDIATOR OF IT. The term “mediator” is ‘mesites’, which means **GO BETWEEN, RECONCILER, INTERCESSOR**. This is a requirement because man is destitute of agape love, and therefore lives in INIQUITY, and all of his deeds are EVIL. God lives and dwells in perfect AGAPE LOVE. The two are not compatible; they are direct OPPOSITES. Therefore, there is NO AGREEMENT BETWEEN MAN AND GOD.

Think of this as a labor dispute, in which the two parties HAVE OPPOSING DEMANDS UPON THE OTHER. They are TOTALLY OPPOSED. They are so opposed to each other that all communications have been severed. Each has turned away from the other. When this happens in a major labor dispute, A **MEDIATOR STEPS IN, AND ATTEMPTS TO RECONCILE THE DIFFERENCES BETWEEN THE TWO OPPOSING CAMPS**. Man is utterly opposed to God, hostile to God, an enemy of God. **JESUS CHRIST STEPPED IN TO MEDIATE THE ARGUMENT, THE DEBATE.**

The method of mediation chosen by Christ was the **NEW COVENANT**. God would, by His grace, **REESTABLISH COMMUNICATIONS WITH MAN IF THEY WOULD ENTER IN TO THE NEW COVENANT**. This “new covenant” would be established ONLY IF CHRIST WOULD DIE TO BEAR THE SINS OF THE WORLD. He would “purchase” man and thereby establish this testament, for a testament is only good AFTER THE DEATH OF THE TESTATOR. The word “establish” is ‘nomotheteo’ and it means **LEGISLATE, ENACT, INJOIN, SANCTION**. It means in short: IT IS LAW. The New Covenant is a covenant of LAW. It has the full force of law. How then does man enter into this New Covenant, of which Christ is the mediator?

*“And for this cause (because Christ offered Himself) HE IS THE  
MEDIATOR  
OF THE NEW TESTAMENT,*

*THAT  
BY MEANS OF DEATH,*

*FOR THE REDEMPTION OF THE TRANSGRESSIONS  
THAT WERE UNDER THE FIRST TESTAMENT,*

*THEY WHICH ARE CALLED  
MIGHT RECEIVE THE PROMISE OF ETERNAL  
INHERITANCE.”*

*(Hebrews 9:15)*

Christ, by offering Himself up, who was without SPOT, INNOCENT, becomes our MEDIATOR, GO BETWEEN, INTERCESSOR BEFORE GOD. Now notice carefully how it is worded, for it was misinterpreted by the “many”. It says that BY MEANS OF DEATH THEY WHICH ARE CALLED MIGHT RECEIVE THE PROMISE. Did you catch that one? BY MEANS OF DEATH we might OBTAIN THE PROMISE. Not the death of Christ only, BUT BY MEANS OF OUR OWN DEATH UPON OUR OWN CROSS. The New Covenant was OFFERED TO MAN OUT OF PURE GRACE. Man may avail himself OF THAT COVENANT BY MEANS OF SOUL DEATH, which is the WALK of the NARROW WAY. That is why Christ said “HE THAT LOSETH HIS LIFE FOR MY SAKE SHALL FIND IT...EXCEPT A CORN OF WHEAT FALL INTO THE GROUND AND DIE...”

It is by the means of OUR SOUL DEATH, that we obtain the promise of ETERNAL INHERITANCE. The “many” read that as the DEATH OF CHRIST that gave them their eternal inheritance, which was a HALF TRUTH. By this death, Christ ESTABLISHES THE COVENANT, LAYS THE FOUNDATION, BECOMES THE MEDIATOR AND OUR HIGH PRIEST. He purchased us with HIS OWN BLOOD. Now then, Christ issued us SPECIFIC COMMANDS so that we might ENTER IN.

*“And to Jesus the MEDIATOR OF THE NEW COVENANT,  
AND TO THE BLOOD OF SPRINKLING,  
THAT SPEAKETH BETTER THINGS THAN THAT OF ABEL.*

*SEE THAT YE REFUSE NOT HIM THAT SPEAKETH.*

*FOR IF THEY ESCAPED NOT WHO REFUSED HIM  
THAT SPAKE ON EARTH,*

*MUCH MORE SHALL NOT WE ESCAPE,  
IF WE TURN AWAY FROM HIM  
THAT SPEAKETH FROM HEAVEN.”*



(Hebrews 12:24-25)

If we REFUSE THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST, WHO SPEAKS FROM HEAVEN, AND IN THE AUTHORITY OF HEAVEN, WE SHALL NOT ESCAPE. The “many” did not escape. They did not because THEY REFUSED HIM THAT SPAKE FROM HEAVEN. They would NOT enter in to the New Covenant by the method GOD HIMSELF ORDAINED. Jesus was very blunt about HOW WE ENTER IN:

**“ENTER YE IN (TO THE NARROW WAY) AT THE STRAIT GATE...”**

(Matthew 7:13)

**“BECAUSE STRAIT IS THE GATE, AND NARROW IS THE WAY,  
WHICH LEADETH UNTO LIFE.”**

(Matthew 7:14)

**“STRIVE TO ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE:**

**FOR MANY, I SAY UNTO YOU,  
WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN, AND SHALL NOT BE ABLE.”**

(Luke 13:24)

It cannot be misinterpreted. **WE ARE TO STRIVE TO ENTER IN AT THE STRAIT GATE, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY.** That is HOW WE ENTER THE NEW COVENANT. If our religious bias prevents it, or our theology denies it, **THEN WE HAVE REFUSED HIM THAT SPEAKS FROM HEAVEN, AND WE SHALL NOT ESCAPE.** There is only ONE WAY IN. We have examined this totally in previous chapters; it is only for a reminder.

It becomes very clear then, that the entire purpose of the NEW COVENANT is to allow man, who does not have AGAPE LOVE, to obtain it. If he obtains to this AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, WHICH IS THE SPIRIT OF GOD, THEN HE HAS ENTERED THE NEW COVENANT, WHICH IS OF GRACE. He has then availed himself of the grace of God. It can only be obtained via the strait gate and narrow way:

**“NO MAN THAT WARRETH  
ENTANGLETH HIMSELF WITH THE AFFAIRS OF THIS LIFE;  
THAT HE MAY PLEASE HIM WHO HATH CHOSEN HIM  
TO BE A SOLDIER.**

**AND IF A MAN ALSO STRIVE FOR MASTERIES,  
YET IS HE NOT CROWNED,  
EXCEPT HE STRIVE LAWFULLY.”**

(2 Timothy 2:4-5)

This confirms what Jesus said about leaving the world totally behind, disengaging your self from the affairs of the world, and GOING TO WAR AGAINST YOUR OWN INNER HEART AND THE DOMINION OF SATAN. It is a WAR. You are a SOLDIER WHO IS TO FIGHT THE FIGHT OF FAITH UNTO VICTORY, UNTO BEING AN OVERCOMER. Notice that it says that **WE ARE NOT CROWNED, UNLESS WE STRIVE LAWFULLY**. You can STRIVE for mighty and good works, and still be rejected. The “many” STROVE to produce the SECOND WORK OF GOOD DEEDS, but they did not STRIVE LAWFULLY, for they were not obedient to the COMMANDS OF CHRIST TO ENTER IN VIA THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. The strait gate and narrow way are as much a part of the New Covenant as the New Covenant itself. IT IS THE METHOD USED TO ENTER IN.

If you strive by any other way, IF YOU CLIMB IN TO THE SHEEPFOLD SOME OTHER WAY, then you have not STRIVEN LAWFULLY, and you will NOT BE CROWNED, you will be DESTROYED AND SENT INTO ETERNAL RUIN. You must strive lawfully; you must enter in via the method PRESCRIBED BY LAW.

## **DO NOT REFUSE HIM** **THAT SPEAKETH FROM HEAVEN**

So we have seen then, in review that the entire thrust is to obtain the NEW HEART, by entering the NEW COVENANT BY THE WAY OF THE STRAIT AND NARROW. We will, BY OUR SOUL DEATH, ENTER IN TO THE NEW COVENANT. The goal of the New Covenant then is the BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE, THE SPIRIT OF GOD, THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST. It is to bring us into a **UNITY, A UNION, AN ONENESS WITH CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER**. It is to GIVE US A NEW NATURE, TO MAKE US A NEW CREATURE. We are to have an **ALIEN LOVE TYPE PLACED WITHIN US**. This is the HOPE of Christ, the HOPE of the Church, the BRIDE.

*“Till WE ALL COME IN THE **UNITY OF THE FAITH**  
(WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE),*

*AND OF THE **KNOWLEDGE OF THE SON OF GOD**  
(WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE),*

*UNTO A **PERFECT MAN**  
(WHICH AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT DOES),*

*UNTO THE MEASURE OF THE STATURE  
**OF THE FULLNESS OF CHRIST.**”*

(Ephesians 4:13)

The word “till” is ‘marcher’ which means UP TO A CERTAIN POINT, TO A SPACE IN TIME, TO A TERMINUS, TO A POINT. What is that point we are to come to? The word “come” is ‘katantao’, which means ARRIVE AT, ATTAIN TO, COME TO MEET AGAINST. We are all to come to a specific point. What is it?

1. Till we come to a UNITY. The word “unity” is ‘henotes’ which means **ONENESS, UNANIMITY, AS ONE**. In other words the goal is for us all to COME INTO ONENESS, OF THE FAITH. That has to be agape love. What is the opposite of unity or union? Being alone! Thus we see Christ contrasting two concepts: “Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground AND DIE, it abideth ALONE” vs. “Till we all come into UNITY (union)”.

## ALONE vs. UNION

2. We must come to a “knowledge” of the SON OF MAN. The word “knowledge” is ‘epignosis’, which means **FULL RECOGNITION, FULL DISCERNMENT, ACKNOWLEDGMENT**. This then must be the MYSTERY REVEALED, THE HIDDEN KNOWLEDGE, THE HIDDEN WISDOM. Christ Himself was very open, very visible. THIS IS THE INVISIBLE ESSENCE OF CHRIST, WHO CHRIST IS. This is the knowledge of AGAPE LOVE.

3. We are to come unto a PERFECT man. What does it mean to be a perfect man? We have to go back into the Old Testament, and follow it right through to find out. In short, it means TO PUT ON THE PERFECTION OF CHRIST, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE. We are made perfect IN CHRIST BY AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. The word PERFECT and SANCTIFIED mean the same thing, they both refer to AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT.

*“And when Abram was ninety years old and nine,  
THE LORD APPEARED TO ABRAM,  
and said unto him,  
I am the ALMIGHTY GOD;  
walk before me, and BE THOU PERFECT.”*

*And I WILL MAKE MY COVENANT BETWEEN ME AND THEE...*

*THIS IS MY COVENANT, WHICH YE SHALL KEEP,  
BETWEEN ME AND YOU AND THY SEED AFTER THEE;  
EVERY MAN CHILD AMONG YOU SHALL BE CIRCUMCISED.”*

*(Genesis 17:1-2; 10)*

We get our first view of perfection and being perfect right here. BE THOU PERFECT IS CONNECTED TO OBEDIENCE (WALK BEFORE ME) AND THIS COVENANT. Now the covenant is interesting. It is the covenant of circumcision. The head of the male penis is covered by a foreskin. IT WAS TO BE CUT OFF, OR THE VEIL OVER IT REMOVED. This has tremendous significance to the New Testament, for THE VEIL OVER THE HEART IS TO BE REMOVED BY THE CIRCUMCISION OF THE HEART OF STONE. IT WAS TO BE CUT OUT, AND REMOVED, AND A NEW HEART, A NEW SPIRIT PUT IN ITS PLACE. We have here the first shadow of the NEW HEART COVENANT.

*“CIRCUMCISE THEREFORE  
THE FORESKIN OF YOUR HEART,  
AND BE NO MORE STIFFNECKED.”*

*(Deuteronomy 10:16)*

**“CIRCUMCISE YOURSELVES TO THE LORD,**

**AND TAKE AWAY THE FORESKINS OF YOUR HEART,  
YE MEN OF JUDAH AND INHABITANTS OF JERUSALEM;**

**LEST MY FURY COME FORTH LIKE FIRE,  
AND BURN THAT NONE CAN QUENCH IT,  
BECAUSE OF THE EVIL OF YOUR DOINGS.”**

**(Jeremiah 4:4)**

It is the **CIRCUMCISED HEART THAT IS MADE PERFECT.** It agrees with everything we have studied so far. The Lord does not change, nor does He lie. The vast majority of Christians refuse to **CIRCUMCISE THEIR HEART AND SO ARE NOT MADE PERFECT.** The narrow way is the way we do it. Refuse it, AND YOU FACE THE UNQUENCHABLE FIRE OF HELL, AND THIS IS A REFERENCE TO IT.

**“HE IS THE ROCK, HIS WORK IS PERFECT:**

**FOR ALL HIS WAYS ARE JUDGMENT:  
A GOD OF TRUTH AND WITHOUT INIQUITY,  
JUST AND RIGHT IS HE.”**

**(Deuteronomy 32:4)**

A perfect portrait of Christ: the ROCK. Notice how it is worded: HIS WORK IS PERFECT, AND HIS “WAYS” ARE JUDGMENT. We have oft said that the narrow WAY was a way of JUDGMENT. The believer is to walk the narrow way and **FACE THE JUDGMENT OF AGAPE LOVE,** AND HAVE HIS/HER DEEDS REBUKED AND REPROVED. He is a GOD OF TRUTH, WHICH COMES FROM HIS AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE, AND BECAUSE OF THAT ESSENCE, HE IS WITHOUT INIQUITY. Therefore He is right and just. Thus we see the perfect contrast between the **INIQUITY OF MAN AND HIS PHILEO LOVE AND THE PERFECT AGAPE LOVE OF GOD.**

**“As for God, HIS WAY IS PERFECT;  
THE WORD OF THE LORD IS TRIED:**

**HE IS A BUCKLER TO ALL THEM THAT TRUST IN HIM.**

**GOD IS MY STRENGTH AND POWER:  
and HE MAKETH MY WAY PERFECT.”**

**(2 Samuel 22:31,33)**

It is the LORD, and the WAY OF THE LORD, which is the strait and the narrow way, that makes US PERFECT. IT IS HIS POWER, AND IF YOU WALK THE NARROW WAY, YOU WILL TRY HIS WORD. It will be proven TRUE.

***“THE LORD WILL PERFECT THAT WHICH CONCERNETH ME:  
THY MERCY, O LORD, ENDURETH FOR EVER:  
FORSAKE NOT THE WORKS OF THINE OWN HANDS.”***  
(Psalm 138:8)

The word “perfect” here is ‘gamar’, which means **TO BRING TO PERFECTION, TO MAKE AN END**. The narrow way is designed to BRING US TO PERFECTION, TO BRING US TO LIFE.

***“BUT THE PATH OF THE JUST  
IS AS A SHINING LIGHT,  
THAT SHINETH MORE AND MORE UNTO THE PERFECT DAY.”***  
(Proverbs 4:18)

The word “path” here is ‘orach’, which means **TRODDEN ROAD, PATH, HIGHWAY**. In this is the narrow way likened to a SHINING LIGHT. This is a reference to the SHEKINAH GLORY, the presence of the Lord in the Holy of Holies. THE NARROW WAY LEADS TO THE HOLY OF HOLIES. The word “perfect” is ‘kuwm’ and it means **APPOINTED, TO RENDER SURE, TO CONFIRM, TO FASTEN**. The narrow way leads to CONFIRMATION BY JESUS CHRIST, TO A SEALING BY THE LORD.

***“BE YE THEREFORE PERFECT,  
EVEN AS YOUR FATHER WHICH IS IN HEAVEN IS PERFECT.”***  
(Matthew 5:48)

The word “therefore” is ‘oun’ which means **ACCORDINGLY**. The word “perfect” is ‘teleios’ which means **COMPLETE, COMPLETENESS, FULL OR WHOLE**. The command of Christ was for us to be PERFECT. The only way we can be perfect is via the agape love bestowment, which is the PERFECTION OF CHRIST.

***“Jesus said unto him, IF THOU WILT BE PERFECT,  
GO AND SELL THAT THOU HAST,  
AND GIVE TO THE POOR, AND THOU SHALT HAVE TREASURE IN HEAVEN:  
AND COME AND FOLLOW ME.”***  
(Matthew 19:21)

Here is a direct command from the Lord Jesus Christ on **HOW TO BE PERFECT**. It is in perfect harmony with the Sermon on the Mount, and in perfect harmony with the NARROW WAY. Jesus went to Calvary and beyond. We are to follow Him, if we are to BE MADE PERFECT. Out of death comes life; out of trial comes perfection.

***“The disciple IS NOT ABOVE HIS MASTER:  
BUT EVERY ONE THAT IS PERFECT  
SHALL BE AS HIS MASTER.”***  
(Luke 6:40)

We are not above Jesus Christ. Everyone that is going to be made PERFECT is going to be AS HIS MASTER. That is why He said, “come, follow me.” We are to pick up our cross, walk the narrow way, go to the lowest room, and wait for He that bade us to come. When He comes, we will be made PERFECT. The essence of Christ was HIS PURE DIVINE AGAPE LOVE. We are to BE AS HIM. The word “perfect” here is ‘katartizo’, which means **TO COMPLETE THOROUGHLY, TO ADJUST, TO JOIN TOGETHER, TO RESTORE**. If we do not have agape love within us, then HE HAS TO GIVE IT TO US, THAT WE MIGHT BE LIKE HIM. He must COME IN TO US, AND TAKE US OVER. We are now going to get right to the specifics of what perfection really is:

***“I IN THEM, AND THOU IN ME,  
THAT THEY MAY BE MADE PERFECT IN ONE...”***  
(John 17:23)

That which makes us PERFECT IS HAVING CHRIST DWELL IN US. It is not us dwelling in the Body of Christ, but having **CHRIST DWELL IN US**. This goes back to **UNION, UNITY, THAT THEY ALL MAY BE ONE**. This was the prayer of Christ. Christ will not come to dwell in us until we walk the narrow way to find him. The word “perfect” here is ‘teleioo’, which means **TO CONSUMMATE, TO ACCOMPLISH**. To proclaim He is in us, when He is not, is the height of deception, of delusion. The Gospel is preached to WARN EVERYONE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE AND WALK THE NARROW WAY TO PERFECTION.

***“To whom God would MAKE KNOWN  
WHAT IS THE RICHES OF THE GLORY OF THIS MYSTERY  
AMONG THE GENTILES; WHICH IS CHRIST IN YOU,  
THE HOPE OF GLORY:  
  
WHOM WE PREACH, WARNING EVERY MAN,  
AND TEACHING EVERY MAN IN ALL WISDOM;  
THAT WE MAY PRESENT EVERY MAN***

**PERFECT IN CHRIST JESUS.”**

(Colossians 1:27-28)

Do you see how that the **MYSTERY, CHRIST DWELLING IN US, AND PERFECTION ARE ALL TOGETHER HERE?** The glory of the mystery is the AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST. The knowledge that **GOD MUST REVEAL TO THE BELIEVER IS THE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE.** The hope of the true Church is to present EVERY BELIEVER PERFECT IN JESUS CHRIST. It is the perfection of Christ that COVERS THE BELIEVER. A believer is PERFECT, only because CHRIST IS PERFECT. Otherwise grace would no longer be grace, and Christ died for nothing.

**“FOR THE LAW MADE NOTHING PERFECT,  
BUT THE BRINGING IN OF A BETTER HOPE DID;  
BY THE WHICH WE DRAW NIGH UNTO GOD.”**

(Hebrews 7:19)

This is an important verse. It contrasts the EXTERNAL LAW TO THE INTERNAL LAW OF THE NEW HEART. The Old Law did not make anyone perfect, IT SIMPLY COVERED THEIR IMPERFECTION. The word “perfect” is ‘teleioo’ and as you know it means **TO BRING TO COMPLETION, TO CONSUMMATE.** Christ came and offered us grace via the strait gate and narrow way to FIND HIM, SO THAT HE, AS A LIVING HIGH PRIEST, MIGHT COVER US FOREVER. The NEW HEART MAKES US PERFECT BEFORE GOD, because the NEW HEART IS THE HEART OF CHRIST. That is why Jesus demands **WE BE BORN AGAIN.** The narrow way is how WE BECOME BORN AGAIN. The narrow way is how we DRAW NIGH UNTO GOD. So you see, there is a perfect harmony here. **THE GOAL: TO BRING THE UNREGENERATE HEART DOWN, SO HE CAN BE LIFTED UP WITH A NEW NATURE.**

**“FOR BY ONE OFFERING  
HE HATH  
PERFECTED FOR EVER  
THEM THAT ARE SANCTIFIED.”**

(Hebrews 10:14)

Christ, by offering Himself upon the cross, PURCHASED THE HUMAN RACE. Out of the human race **MANY ARE CALLED INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST.** Out of the Body of Christ **THE FEW ARE CHOSEN, BROUGHT THROUGH THE NARROW WAY OF SANCTIFICATION, AND OUT OF DEATH COMES UNION WITH CHRIST, BY WHICH, THEY ARE PERFECTED.** The word “perfected” is ‘teleioo’ which means **MADE COMPLETE, OR CONSUMMATED.** The word “sanctified” is ‘hagiazoo’, which means **TO MAKE HOLY.** If you have been perfected, you are made holy. Your holiness is in Christ, and His holiness comes from His agape love essence. We find another

proof that ONCE AGAPE LOVE IS BESTOWED that believer has SETTLED FOREVER the agape love issue, and is considered PERFECT AND COMPLETE IN THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.

We have come full circle. SANCTIFICATION HAS BUT ONE MEANING: AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, and afterward, PERFECTING IT. There is a tremendous misconception of what Holiness really is, and generally it is referred to as “right thinking, right acting, and right living”. The life of Holiness is a life of strict separation according to most fundamentalist denominations. Their holiness is nothing more or less than WORKS DISGUISED UNDER THE NAME OF HOLINESS. What makes a person HOLY is the coming of Jesus Christ to that person, and Christ giving them HIS LOVE, HIS PERFECTOIN, HIS HOLINESS, AT REGENERATION, which is the NEW HEART, THE NEW LIFE. It is at the END OF THE NARROW WAY. The end of the narrow way is the BEGINNING OF THE NEW COVENANT.

Within the heart of the regenerated beats a NEW LOVE. That new love, which is RADICALLY DIFFERENT THAN ANY LOVE KNOWN TO MAN, causes that heart to WALK IN THE STATUTES OF GOD, FOR THAT SOUL CAN NOW LOVE AND WANTS TO LOVE, AND DOES LOVE WITHOUT EVEN TRYING. HE DOES NOT “DECIDE” TO LOVE. HE DOES NOT “WILL” TO LOVE. HE DOES LOVE; FOR CHRIST IS IN THE HEART.

MANY ARE UNDER THE IMPRESSION THAT AGAPE LOVE IS A CHOICE, THAT LOVE IS SIMPLY A “DECISION”, OR A CHOICE OF THE “WILL”. It is not. The only decision the inner heart must make is ACCEPT CHRIST WHEN CHRIST APPEARS, REVEALS THE TRUTH AND ASKS FOR ENTRANCE AFTER THE GUILTY VERDICT IS RENDERED. The human soul cannot “choose” to agape love, “will” to agape love or “decide” to agape love, for the soul does NOT POSSESS AGAPE LOVE UNTIL CHRIST COMES. Thereafter, the love is an automatic thing. It simply is.

He enters into phase one of the “REST” of God. It is AGAPE LOVE that makes one holy, not law keeping, not keeping Sabbaths, and not keeping this law and that law. It is AGAPE LOVE that makes one holy, not going to church, nor dressing right, nor not going to movies and whatever is demanded of the holiness people. THEY ARE IN BONDAGE TO THE LAW. THEY DO NOT UNDERSTAND AGAPE LOVE, OR WHAT IT IS, OR WHAT IT DOES. IT IS THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD that HAS NO LAW AGAINST IT. IT IS FREE, TOTALLY FREE. The VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS DO NOT KNOW THE LOVE OF CHRIST, and therefore when LOVE IS NOT PRESENT, LAW KEEPING TAKES ITS PLACE, IT BECOMES A SUBSTITUTE FORM OF HOLINESS. EXACTLY WHAT THE JEWS HELD TO.

Nor are we saying the commands of the Lord to BE SEPARATE AND TOUCH NOT THE UNCLEAN THING are to be set aside. AGAPE LOVE SETS THEM ASIDE. TRUE PERFECTED AGAPE LOVE SETS ASIDE ALL UNCLEAN THING. It loves the sinner but hates the sin.

The majority within the fundamentalist camps has a zeal for God, but without KNOWLEDGE. It is the agape love of God that MAKES US PERFECT AND HOLY, AND KEEPS US PERFECT AND HOLY. There is no other power that can prevail against it. AGAPE LOVE FULFILLS ALL THE LAW, AND THEREFORE THERE IS NO LAW, NO RULES, NO REGULATIONS FOR THOSE WHO HAVE IT, because the LOVE OF GOD IS THEIR LAW. It is written on their inner heart, and they are free of everything but one thing: TO AGAPE LOVE EVERYONE. There is TOTAL FREEDOM IN THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD. That is why Christ said:

**“IF THE SON THEREFORE SHALL MAKE YOU FREE,**



**YE SHALL BE FREE INDEED.”**

**(John 8:36)**

The first word “free” is ‘eleutheroo’, which means **TO LIBERATE, TO MAKE FREE, TO RELEASE FROM BONDAGE**. The second word “free” is ‘eleutheros’, which means **UNRESTRAINED, FREE BORN**. The word “indeed” is ‘ontos’, which means **REALLY, CERTAINLY, OF A TRUTH, VERILY**. In other words **TOTAL UNRESTRAINED FREEDOM, OR SET FREE**. This freedom is NOT a license for SIN, GOD FORBID. It is a freedom based upon **THE LOVE OF GOD**. It frees the person WHOLLY AND TOTALLY FROM ALL OF THE INJUNCTIONS OF MAN, OF ALL THE TRADITIONS OF MAN, OF ALL THE RITUALS OF MAN. The true Holy person is a person of LOVE, and he is free to love whomsoever and everyone he/she meets. It has nothing to do with the millions of rules imposed on people by those involved in phony holiness. Their form of holiness is **rank legalism in disguise**. Their claim to fame is that **IF YOU LOVE GOD**, you will DO THIS, AND DO THAT. They then sit down and write up a whole bunch of rules, regulations, codes, statutes which they claim **PROVE YOU LOVE THE LORD**. If you do not keep these rules, YOU DO NOT LOVE GOD, AND THEY THRUST YOU OUT OF THEIR FELLOWSHIP. You are therefore WORLDLY, NOT SEPARATED, NOT CONSECRATED, NOT OF CHRIST.

This form of rank legalism, of works of “righteousness”, of law keeping, and code keeping pervert everything, and in reality make it the EXACT OPPOSITE OF WHAT IT IS TO BE. The poor people held within that form of BONDAGE AND SLAVERY work very hard to please the Lord. It is so sad to see it, for they are SINCERE, DEDICATED. They honestly believe that is CHRISTIANITY. Christianity **IS A NEW HEART OF AGAPE LOVE THAT FREES US FROM ALL OF THAT, AND SIMPLY DOES ONE THING: ALLOWS YOU TO AGAPE LOVE ANOTHER!** When you see it, when you finally understand it, **IT IS SO SIMPLE, SO BEAUTIFUL AND SO WONDERFUL**, it is indeed a breath of **FRESH AIR, A REFRESHING**.

The holiness of God is NOT the holiness that man considers. The holiness of man is abomination to the Lord, for it is **hypocrisy and false**. The holiness of man is bound up in rules, regulations, dress codes, rules of separation, rules of conduct, ritual, solemn assemblies and it leads to death and total bondage. THE AGAPE LOVE OF THE LORD is not concerned with any of that, it bypasses all of it; the love of God bypasses **EVERYTHING AND FLIES SO FAR ABOVE IT THAT THOSE THINGS DO NOT MATTER ONE WIT**. It has only one object: **to agape love**. It can embrace the poor man just as fast as the rich man. It can walk into skid row as easily as into Church. It can walk just as easily into a Catholic Church as in to a Baptist Church.

It knows no boundaries; it has no judgment on those things, for the Lord shall judge them all. It seeks only to save, to heal, and to bring the lost to Christ. It will point out truth, even at the risk of death, it will contend with lies and distortions of truth, not out of pride or arrogance, but for the **SAKE OF TRUTH, FOR THE SAKE OF TRUE AGAPE LOVE**. It loves the prostitute as much as the virtuous woman, it has BUT ONE OBJECT: TO BRING THEM ALL TO A KNOWLEDGE OF JESUS CHRIST. IT IS FREE, **AND THE REGENERATED HEART KNOWS IT, LOVES IT, CHERISHES IT**. It has been released from the laws and rituals of man. FIND THE TRUTH AND YOU SHALL BE MADE FREE INDEED. You will fly as the eagle, and soar above all of it!

The love of God makes the human heart SOAR. It smashes to bits the **BONDAGE OF LAW, RITUAL, FORMALITY AND SOLEMN ASSEMBLY**. That is why God says HE HATES the assemblies, even the solemn assemblies. They are **RITUAL, FORMALITY, DONE OUT OF OBLIGATION AND DUTY, NOT OUT OF A PURE HEART!** That is why Jesus said His YOKE WAS EASY! Agape love IS EASY.

It simply LOVES. There are no restraints on agape love, it is **UNCONDITIONAL**, and that means what it says: THERE ARE NO CONDITIONS PUT UPON IT. If it is UNCONDITIONAL, then how is IT BOUND BY ANY CONDITIONS, SUCH AS RITUAL or FORMALITY, OR DO THIS AND DON'T DO THAT? Do they not understand **THAT AGAPE LOVE IS A LAW UNTO ITSELF?** It does not behave UNSEEMLY. It cannot! It will not! Those bound up in the legalism of Christianity, via false "holiness", are BOUND INDEED. They remain in total bondage, **no different whatever than any other legalistic religion.**

I don't argue the commands of Holiness for the believer. **BUT AGAPE LOVE WITHIN THE REGENERATED HEART FULFILLS ALL THE COMMANDS FOR HOLINESS.** It is from WITHIN, and it has nothing to do with rules, regulations, codes and laws. SEEK CHRIST AND YOU WILL ESCAPE ALL OF THAT AND LIVE. Remain bound in that form of holiness and YOU WILL DIE FOREVER.

Do you remember how **UNCONVENTIONAL CHRIST WAS?** Why, He would stop right in the middle of something and HEAL SOMEONE. He darted here; HE went there. HE HAD NO RULES, HE HAD NO RITUALS, HE MOVED AS THE SPIRIT MOVED. Do you really think the SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE is going to BIND ITSELF to your rules and regulations, your codes of conduct and other perversions of grace? If you do, you do not KNOW the **beauty and the simplicity of Christ.**

We have now proved that the GOAL is the PERFECTION OF JESUS CHRIST, which is HIS AGAPE LOVE, which FREES US INDEED. It brings with it SANCTIFICATION, AND JUSTIFICATION. Therefore it would behoove all of us to move to obtain it, if we do not have it. How is it accomplished? What must I do to be regenerated? What is REGENERATION anyway? Can anyone be regenerated?

***"Because STRAIT IS THE GATE,  
AND NARROW IS THE WAY,  
THAT LEADETH UNTO LIFE..."***  
**(Matthew 7:14)**

It is odd that this verse is in the SEVENTH CHAPTER of Matthew. Seven is the number of perfection, of completion. It is also the 14<sup>th</sup> verse of the seven chapter, or TWO TIMES SEVEN. "VERILY, VERILY..." Nothing is coincidental. We find the same sort of COINCIDENTAL numbering in Luke 13:24. "STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIT GATE..." The number 13 is the number of REBELLION. Man's heart is IN TOTAL REBELLION. Because it is in total rebellion, IT MUST STRIVE TO EFFECT A RECONCILIATION VIA THE STRAIT GATE AND NARROW WAY. The number 24 is odd in that there are 24 ELDERS, 12 tribes, and 12 apostles, representing THE COMPLETE PROGRAM AND GOVERNMENT OF GOD ON EARTH. Coincidental? Check it out.

Notice again that the narrow way LEADETH UNTO LIFE. At the end of the narrow way sits this life. As pointed out in the beginning of this series, Jesus knew and used the word "heaven" many times. He did not use it here, because He was not referring to it. He was referring to THE **LIFE** THAT GAINS ONE ENTRANCE INTO HEAVEN. The word for "life" is 'zoe', and in this case it is referring to **SPIRITUAL LIFE**. It must be spiritual life, because a person is already alive in the flesh or one could not enter the gate or walk the way. If he already has a "life" (which is really death) that Jesus says HE MUST LOSE, then this "life" has to be and must be SPIRITUAL LIFE, WHICH IS IN THE SON. The word 'zoe' means **LIFE**. The root is from 'zao' which means **TO LIVE, OR QUICK**. The word quick is very important to us in tracing down what Jesus means by the word "life" at the end of the narrow way.

We will first examine enough Scripture to prove that ‘zoe’ does in fact refer to REGENERATION, TO BEING BORN AGAIN. Obviously if one has not reached this “LIFE” that Jesus refers to, then they must be ABIDING IN SPIRITUAL DEATH. Thus those who are even on the narrow way are abiding in SPIRITUAL DEATH, and still under the dominion of Satan, and have NOT AS YET ENTERED THE NEW COVENANT. This is why the Scripture is full of warning as TO LAYING HOLD OF ETERNAL LIFE, OF OBTAINING REGENERATION, OF GETTING YOURSELF INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD, WHICH IS THE DIVIDING LINE BETWEEN LIFE AND DEATH.

*“For WITH THEE IS THE FOUNTAIN OF LIFE:*

*IN THY LIGHT SHALL WE SEE LIGHT.”*

*(Psalm 36:9)*

It is with GOD THAT THE SOURCE OF SPIRITUAL LIFE COMES FROM. It is IN HIS LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE THAT WE SEE AGAPE LOVE. In HIS SIGHT are we to be judged. The word “fountain” is ‘maqowr’, which means **SOURCE**. We were created at the hand of God, and made in the image of God before the fall. The source of all agape love is FROM GOD. As you recall, LIGHT is simply another code word for AGAPE LOVE. The word for “life” here is ‘chay’, which means **ALIVE, LIFE**. The word “light” is ‘owr’, which means **ILLUMINATION, BRIGHT, SUN**. How odd that the SUN is the light of the physical earth, and it brings with it LIFE. In the spirit, THE SON brings life to the SPIRITUAL EARTH, and brings with Him LIFE.

*“FOR THE COMMANDMENT IS A LAMP;*

*AND THE LAW IS LIGHT;  
AND REPROOFS OF INSTRUCTION  
ARE THE ‘WAY’ OF LIFE.”*

*(Proverbs 6:23)*

What a perfect harmony with the Sermon on the Mount. The commandment was to enter in the strait gate and walk the narrow way to find life. The law is light. AGAPE LOVE IS THE LAW OF GOD WRITTEN WITHIN THE HUMAN HEART. Agape love is the LIGHT OF GOD. The reproof of INSTRUCTION is the revelation we receive from God as we walk the NARROW WAY AND ARE REPROVED BY AGAPE LOVE. The narrow way leads to LIFE. Reproof and judgment are what bring us INTO life. Again we find that LIFE is SPIRITUAL LIFE. The word for “commandment” is ‘mitsuah’, which means **A COMMAND, LAW, ORDINANCE**. The word “reproof” is ‘towkechah’, which means **CHASTISEMENT, CORRECTION, REFUTATION, PROOF AND REBUKE**. The word “way” is ‘derek’, which means **ROAD, JOURNEY, HIGHWAY**. It is the same as the word “way” Jesus used. A perfect sequence!

*“FOR WHOSO FINDETH ME FINDETH LIFE,  
AND SHALL OBTAIN FAVOUR OF THE LORD.”*

(Proverbs 8:35)

Did not Jesus say to SEEK AND WE SHALL FIND? Did He not say that at the end of the narrow way was life, and that FEW THERE BE THAT FIND IT? The Old Testament is but the revelation of the New. The New is but the revelation of the Old. How tragic it is to DIVIDE THEM. They form a WHOLE UNIT. If you only take one, you only have half of the story. The word for “findeth” is ‘matsa’, which means **TO COME FORTH, TO APPEAR, TO ACQUIRE, TO BE PRESENT**. It is a proving, a proof, a present evidence.

***“IN THE WAY OF RIGHTEOUSNESS IS LIFE;  
AND IN THE PATHWAY THEREOF THERE IS NO DEATH.”***  
(Proverbs 12:28)

Here we find a perfect reference to the narrow way, and that IT IS THE WAY THAT LEADS TO RIGHTEOUSNESS THAT IS IN THE LIFE OF JESUS CHRIST. There is no death in Jesus; there is only LIFE.

***“IN THE LIGHT OF THE KING’S COUNTENANCE IS LIFE;  
AND HIS FAVOUR IS AS A CLOUD OF THE LATTER RAIN.”***  
(Proverbs 16:15)

It was mentioned earlier in this series that the reference to the LATTER RAIN was a reference to **REGENERATION**, AND THE EARLY RAIN WAS **CONVERSION**. Here is another proof text to prove it. Rain is water. Water is a code word for agape love. Light is a code word as well. We do not come into the favor of the King until we receive HIS LIGHT. HIS LIGHT IS LIFE, and that life is AGAPE LOVE. It says here clearly that THIS LIGHT IS AS THE LATTER RAIN. Just as there was an early harvest of souls at the beginning of the Church age, there will be another harvest of souls at the end. In between, few come to the real light. As it will happen on earth, so it happens to the individual believer. His early rain is CONVERSION. He then goes for a long period to establish roots, and then comes the LATTER RAIN, which is **REGENERATION**.

***“But whosoever DRINKETH OF THE WATER THAT I SHALL GIVE HIM  
SHALL NEVER THIRST;  
BUT THE WATER THAT I SHALL GIVE HIM  
SHALL BE IN HIM A WELL OF WATER  
SPRINGING UP INTO EVERLASTING LIFE.”***  
(John 4:14)

The word “life” here is ‘zoe’, and it is directly connected to one of the code words for AGAPE LOVE. Water is one of the PRIMARY code words. It is used over and over again to illustrate the life source of the spirit. Notice who GIVES IT TO THE BELIEVER: JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF.

***“For as the FATHER HATH LIFE IN HIMSELF;  
SO HATH HE GIVEN TO THE SON TO HAVE LIFE IN HIMSELF.”  
(John 5:26)***

The word for “life” here is ‘zoe’. The case is proving itself. The “life” AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY, is SPIRITUAL LIFE, IS REGENERATION, IS BEING BORN AGAIN, IS AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED.

***“Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat  
WHICH ENDURETH UNTO EVERLASTING LIFE,  
WHICH THE SON OF MAN SHALL GIVE UNTO YOU;  
FOR HIM HATH GOD THE FATHER SEALED.”  
(John 6:27)***

Jesus said to STRIVE AND TO LABOR FOR THE DOCTRINES THAT WILL ENDURE UNTO LIFE. Life is at the END of the narrow way. Do not claim it at the beginning. We have further confirmation as well that Jesus is the one who gives it personally to the believer. The Holy Spirit does not reveal or bestow agape love to the believer, because JESUS CHRIST WAS THE REDEEMER, AND UNION WITH CHRIST IS WHAT SAVES.

***“And this is the WILL OF HIM THAT SENT ME,  
THAT EVERY ONE WHICH SEETH THE SON,  
AND BELIEVETH ON HIM,  
MAY HAVE EVERLASTING LIFE:  
AND I WILL RAISE HIM UP AT THE LAST DAY.”  
(John 6:40)***

We are to SEE THE SON. We are to **BEHOLD HIM, EXPERIENCE HIM, KNOW HIM**. WE ARE TO LOOK INTO THE DEPTH, HEIGHT, BREADTH AND WIDTH OF AGAPE LOVE, that we may **EXPERIENTIALLY KNOW** what it is. Notice that there are TWO CONDITIONS FOR THE GRANTING OF ETERNAL LIFE; **SEEING THE SON** IS THE FIRST CONDITION AND **BELIEVING UPON HIM** IS THE SECOND CONDITION. There is a reason for the sequence to this verse, which will be proved out later. IF WE SEE THE SON, AND BELIEVE UPON HIM, HE WILL GIVE US AGAPE LOVE, HE WILL BESTOW IT. That is LIFE.

*“And THIS IS LIFE ETERNAL,  
THAT THEY MIGHT KNOW THEE THE ONLY TRUE GOD,  
AND JESUS CHRIST, WHOM THOU HAST SENT.”  
(John 17:3)*

Jesus is DEFINING FOR US WHAT “LIFE” IS. He then tells us WHAT “LIFE” IS: IT IS TO EXPERIENTIALLY KNOW CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER. If we SEE THE SON, THEN WE KNOW THE SON. The thrust of the Scripture is to bring us INTO UNION WITH CHRIST. It is to bring us into UNITY. It is to ADJUST MANKIND TO THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD OF GOD. If we are to have this UNION AND UNITY, then it should be obvious that we would have TO EXPERIENTIALLY KNOW CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER. How could you enter in to someone and NOT KNOW THEM? Christ enters IN to the very heart of a person, the innermost heart. Obviously then HE EXPERIENTIALLY KNOWS THEM, KNOWS WHO THEY ARE. Likewise does the Scripture claim that we are to EXPERIENTIALLY KNOW JESUS. It is called the REVELATION, MANIFESTATION, WISDOM, KNOWLEDGE, WITNESS. He calls them by name; He leads them OUT. WE WILL PROVE WHAT THE WORD ‘KNOW’ MEANS SHORTLY, FOR IT TIES DIRECTLY TO REVEAL, REVELATION, MANIFEST, MANIFESTATION, BEHOLD, APPEAR, COME AND SEE.

*“Therefore we are BURIED WITH HIM  
BY BAPTISM INTO DEATH  
(THE NARROW WAY WALK):  
THAT LIKE AS CHRIST WAS RAISED UP FROM THE DEAD  
BY THE GLORY OF THE FATHER,  
  
EVEN SO WE ALSO SHOULD  
WALK IN NEWNESS OF LIFE.”  
(Romans 6:4)*

The point I wish to make here is that THE NARROW WAY IS THE BAPTISM INTO DEATH. Paul is referring to the narrow way, not some “act of faith”, by which he APPROPRIATES this death “instantly”. This death is an EXPERIENTIAL DEATH, WHICH TAKES PLACE OVER SEVERAL YEARS. Words like TRIBULATION, AND NARROW, prove that this walk is fully experiential. If we have IN TRUTH BEEN BAPTIZED INTO HIS DEATH, THEN ALSO WE ARE TO LIVE IN THE NEWNESS OF AGAPE LOVE LIFE. The word “life” here is ‘zoe’.

*“And IF CHRIST BE IN YOU,  
THE BODY IS DEAD BECAUSE OF SIN;  
BUT THE SPIRIT IS LIFE BECAUSE OF  
RIGHTEOUSNESS.”  
(Romans 8:10)*

Read very carefully how Paul words this. **IF** CHRIST BE IN YOU. That is VERY CONDITIONAL. The condition is IF CHRIST BE IN YOU. In other words Paul is saying IF CHRIST IS IN YOU, THEN THE FOLLOWING WILL BE TRUE: YOUR BODY IS DEAD, I.E., YOU HAVE IN TRUTH DIED. The flesh is dead. Carnal man IS DEAD. The narrow way is a WAY OF DEATH. (“If a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die...pick up your cross, follow me...”) Do you realize what Paul is saying here? **IF YOU HAVE NOT WALKED THE NARROW WAY UNTO DEATH, CHRIST IS NOT IN YOU.** This is true because THE CONDITION FOR CHRIST BEING IN YOU IS THAT YOU BE DEAD. Do not reverse the sequence; do not claim the second thing before the first thing. **DEATH FIRST, CHRIST IN YOU SECOND.** “Go to the LOWEST ROOM (DEATH)”.

If you are dead, then what SPIRIT IS IN YOU? THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, THE SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE, THE SPIRIT OF LIFE. Life is INDEED AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY. Not I that live, but Christ lives in me.

**“HAVING THE UNDERSTANDING DARKENED,  
BEING ALIENATED FROM THE LIFE OF GOD  
THROUGH THE IGNORANCE THAT IS IN THEM,  
BECAUSE OF THE BLINDNESS OF THEIR HEART  
(UNCIRCUMCISED).”**  
(Ephesians 4:18)

The vast majority of Christians perish because they will not face the reproof of God, they will not do as Christ commanded, they will not walk the narrow way. They are therefore ALIENATED TO THE LIFE OF GOD, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE. Agape love is an ALIEN love. It is totally ALIEN to mankind. That is why mankind cannot know it, cannot understand it. The only love they know is their own phileo love. They have an experiential knowledge of phileo love! Why then do they deny there is to be an experiential AGAPE LOVE? If phileo love is fully experiential, and is a LOW LOVE FORM, THEN WHAT DO YOU THINK THE ARRIVAL OF AGAPE LOVE IS LIKE? YOU ARE TO COME TO A POINT OF REVELATION OF WHAT AGAPE LOVE IS, AND THEN ENTER INTO IT, AND HAVE AN EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF IT. The vast majority of Christians are IGNORANT, AND THEY ARE BLINDED BY THEIR HEARTS, WHICH ARE OF STONE.

The denial by modern Christianity of an experiential encounter and revelational nature of agape love is based upon one thing: THEY HAVE NEVER ENCOUNTERED IT, AND THEREFORE CLAIM IT NOT SO. They will not admit they are WITHOUT CHRIST, for the “many” were the SUPERSTARS OF CHRISTENDOM.

**“WE KNOW THAT WE HAVE PASSED  
FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE,  
BECAUSE WE (AGAPE) LOVE THE BRETHREN...”**  
(1 John 3:14)

The division point between death and life IS AGAPE LOVE. Therefore it is and MUST BE that AGAPE LOVE RESIDES AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY. We are to walk the narrow way UNTO SOUL DEATH, EXPERIENTIAL DEATH, AND WE ARE TO SIT IN THE LOWEST ROOM OF DEATH UNTIL HE THAT BADE US COMES. When He comes, He REVEALS TO US the MYSTERY OF GOD, THE HIDDEN THING OF GOD, AGAPE LOVE. He brings us into DEATH SO WE MIGHT FIND TRUE LIFE. We KNOW ABSOLUTELY JOHN SAYS, BY AN EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE, THAT WE HAVE PASSED OUT OF DEATH AND INTO LIFE WHEN WE AGAPE LOVE THE BRETHREN.

*“And THIS IS THE RECORD,  
THAT GOD HATH GIVEN US ETERNAL LIFE,  
AND THIS LIFE IS IN HIS SON.”  
(1 John 5:11)*

John says clearly and bluntly: THIS IS THE RECORD. THIS IS THE TESTIMONY FROM THE HAND OF GOD HIMSELF. It is no different than if God had come down here and PERSONALLY put the BIBLE IN STONE. It has the same authority, for THIS IS THE RECORD. What is the record, John? THAT “LIFE” IS IN JESUS CHRIST. If “life” is IN JESUS CHRIST, and LIFE IS AGAPE LOVE, AND WE KNOW WE HAVE PASSED FROM DEATH TO LIFE WHEN WE AGAPE LOVE, then what is JOHN TELLING US? JESUS CHRIST IS THE HOLDER OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS ETERNAL LIFE, WHICH IS KNOWING GOD! It further proves that LIFE is at the end of the narrow way.

*“HE THAT HATH THE SON HATH LIFE;  
AND HE THAT HATH NOT THE SON OF GOD  
HATH NOT LIFE.”  
(1 John 5:12)*

John now binds the entire Bible up. He binds the strait gate and the narrow way up. He binds perfected, perfection and sanctification and justification up. He binds it all to the issue between God and man: AGAPE LOVE LIFE. If a person has walked the narrow way unto death, Christ shall come. In His arms is the gift of agape love to save the believer. He brings Himself, and gives OF HIMSELF. FOR CHRIST IS ALL IN ALL, AND WE ARE COMPLETE IN HIM, THROUGH HIM AND BY HIM. GRACE IS GRACE. We have come full circle. In the letters to the seven Churches Christ mentions LIFE three times. He mentions the TREE OF LIFE (Revelation 2:7). He mentions the CROWN OF LIFE (Revelation 2:10) and He mentions the BOOK OF LIFE (Revelation 3:5). In all cases LIFE IS ONLY GIVEN TO THE OVERCOMERS. He says to us BE THOU FAITHFUL UNTO DEATH. It has meaning deeper than the “many” ever discovered.

Is the LIFE at the end of the NARROW WAY JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF? Is He waiting for you to enter in the strait gate and walk the narrow way unto your own experiential soul death? Have you ever hungered, thirsted, striven and labored for TRUE RIGHTEOUSNESS? Have you ever MET JESUS CHRIST FACE TO FACE IN A VERY REAL AND LITERAL ALBEIT SPIRITUAL ENCOUNTER? HAS HE CALLED YOU BY NAME? HAVE YOU LOOKED IN TO THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD,



AND HAS HE SHOWN YOU WHAT IT IS? Do you know who He really is? Can you testify that Christ has come to you and SHOWN YOU HIS AGAPE LOVE AND LIFE? John has bound it up. THIS IS THE RECORD. THE LIFE AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY IS INDEED JESUS CHRIST. I BESEECH YOU THROUGH TEARS TO DO AS HE COMMANDED. I WANT YOU TO BE ONE OF THE FEW. To claim that the “life” at the end of the narrow way is heaven or anything else but what it is, is to invite certain and sure destruction forever, because you refuse Him that speaks from HEAVEN. HE GAVE US THE RECORD. HE GAVE US THE TESTIMONY. HE SEALED IT WITH HIS BLOOD.

## **THE CASE IS CLOSED.**

It has been proven categorically that LIFE is then SPIRITUAL LIFE, THE LIFE OF REGENERATION. We know it sits at the end of the narrow way. One of the sub-definitions of “life” was QUICK. We will now look at the words QUICK, QUICKEN, QUICKENETH. They will shed much light in our search for what REGENERATION IS, AND HOW IT RELATES DIRECTLY TO THE LIFE AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY.

***“I CHARGE thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ,  
WHO SHALL JUDGE THE QUICK AND THE DEAD  
AT HIS APPEARING AND HIS KINGDOM.”  
(2 Timothy 4:1)***

This verse is usually taken out its context totally. Read it carefully. It says that Jesus Christ will JUDGE THE **QUICK** AND THE **DEAD** AT THE APPEARING. This is *not* a reference to the **GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT**. This is a reference to THE JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST. Who does Christ judge at His appearing? HIS OWN PEOPLE. Within the BODY OF CHRIST, **ARE THOSE** THAT HAVE UNDERGONE **REGENERATION**. They have LIFE, THEY ARE **THE QUICK**, THEY HAVE BEEN QUICKENED. They go to the BEMA SEAT JUDGMENT FOR REWARDS. The vast majority of Christians, the “many”, **NEVER OBTAINED UNTO LIFE**. They refused the strait gate and the narrow way. THEY ARE THEREFORE **DEAD** IN THEIR TRESPASSES AND SINS. They never found LIFE. CHRIST WILL JUDGE HIS PEOPLE, THOSE WHO HAVE OBTAINED AGAPE LOVE LIFE, AND THE DEAD THAT DID NOT.

This is not a reference to believers and non-believers. This is a reference to the fact that Christ is going to JUDGE THE BODY OF CHRIST, ALL BELIEVERS, ALL PROFESSORS. Those that only undergone **CONVERSIONS ARE THE DEAD**. Those that have undergone both conversion AND regeneration are the QUICK. The word “quick” here is ‘zao’, which means **TO LIVE, TO MAKE ALIVE**. This verse supports Matthew Seven and is WHERE THE “MANY” ARE SENT AWAY. HE NEVER KNEW THEM; THEY WERE NEVER IN UNION.

***“And YOU HATH HE QUICKENED,  
WHO WERE DEAD IN TRESPASSES AND SINS...  
  
EVEN WHEN WE WERE DEAD IN SINS,  
HATH HE QUICKENED US TOGETHER WITH CHRIST,***

*(BY GRACE ARE YE SAVED)...”  
(Ephesians 2:1, 5)*

In these verses the term “quickeneth” is ‘suzoopoieo’, which means **TO REANIMATE, CO-JOINTLY WITH, TO QUICKEN TOGETHER WITH**. We were at one time dead, that is, without SPIRITUAL LIFE. When we walk the narrow way unto death, we meet Christ who brings AGAPE LOVE LIFE WITH HIM. Again, notice the sequence of this: DEATH FIRST (THE NARROW WAY) AND THEN COMES LIFE. We are then QUICKENED TOGETHER WITH CHRIST. We are brought INTO UNION WITH CHRIST, FOR HE ENTERS INTO US, AND QUICKENS US **BY REGENERATION**. The words quick, quickeneth, quickened relate to SPIRITUAL REBIRTH, that of bringing the dead back to life, TO REVITALIZE THEM. The very word “quickeneth” means to **BE BROUGHT TOGETHER, WHICH PROVES THE ULTIMATE GOAL IS TO BRING ABOUT THIS LIVING UNION**. Now do you see why Christ said He never knew the many? They were never QUICKENED; they never came TOGETHER WITH CHRIST, **THERE WAS NO UNION**.

*“And YOU, BEING DEAD IN YOUR SINS AND THE  
UNCIRCUMCISION OF YOUR FLESH,  
HATH HE QUICKENED TOGETHER WITH HIM,  
HAVING FORGIVEN YOU  
ALL TRESPASSES...”  
(Colossians 2:13)*

Circumcision is brought into this, with a contrast being made to UNCIRCUMCISION, WHICH IS DEATH, TO CIRCUMCISION, WHICH IS QUICKENED, OR LIFE. Again we find that it brings with it a UNION, OR BEING TOGETHER WITH CHRIST. We have a total confirmation of everything we have studied.

*“For Christ also hath once suffered for sins,  
THE JUST FOR THE UNJUST,  
that HE MIGHT BRING US TO GOD,  
BEING PUT TO DEATH IN THE FLESH  
BUT QUICKENED BY THE SPIRIT.”  
(1 Peter 3:18)*

The word for “quickeneth” is ‘zoopoieo’, which means **TO REVITALIZE**. What SPIRIT REVITALIZED CHRIST? Obviously the **agape love Spirit of God**, and Christ was brought back to life. We are told to pick up our cross and follow Christ beyond Calvary unto our own **RESURRECTION TO NEW LIFE**, WHICH IS REGENERATION, OR BEING **QUICKENED BY THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT OF GOD AND CHRIST**. It is via the CROSS THAT GOD IS ABLE TO USE HIS POWER TO QUICKEN US. If we refuse OUR cross, then the power of God will NOT be used to quicken us, and WE

SHALL NOT SEE LIFE. It is all done BY CHRIST, for He Himself was MADE A QUICKENING SPIRIT:

*“And so it is written,  
THE FIRST MAN ADAM WAS MADE A LIVING SOUL;  
THE LAST ADAM WAS MADE  
A QUICKENING SPIRIT.”  
(1 Corinthians 15:45)*

Christ was made a quickening Spirit for it is **CHRIST WHO REDEEMED US, AND IT IS CHRIST WE MUST ENTER INTO UNION WITH.** That is why the Bible never says that the HOLY SPIRIT ever quickens you. It is VIA THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, WHICH IS THE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE REVEALED, THAT QUICKENS YOU, BRINGS YOU BACK TO GOD, BACK TO THE IMAGE YOU WERE CREATED WITH. We are to be brought back to being LIKE ADAM AND EVE AT CREATION. Christ alone is the REDEEMER. God the Father is not the redeemer, nor is the Holy Spirit. Therefore who we must enter into UNION WITH, VIA BEING QUICKENED TOGETHER WITH, IS JESUS CHRIST. This is why Christ said:

*“IT IS THE SPIRIT THAT QUICKENETH;  
  
the flesh PROFITETH NOTHING:  
  
THE WORDS THAT I SPEAK UNTO YOU,  
  
THEY ARE SPIRIT, AND THEY ARE LIFE.”  
(John 6:63)*

Notice how Jesus brings together ALL THREE ITEMS: **SPIRIT, LIFE AND QUICKENETH.** They all refer to the same event: REGENERATION, THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE, BEING BROUGHT INTO UNION WITH CHRIST. THEY ARE OF THE SPIRIT, OF THE SPIRIT MAN. Christ was the **ONLY ONE SEALED BY GOD TO QUICKEN US.** It is NOT the job of the Holy Spirit. It is the JOB OF THE HOLY SPIRIT TO LEAD YOU UNTO THE TRUTH. Christ is THE TRUTH. The real truth of Christ **IS HIS INTERNAL ESSENCE: AGAPE LOVE.**

*“For AS THE FATHER RAISETH UP THE DEAD,  
AND QUICKENETH THEM;  
  
EVEN SO THE SON QUICKENETH WHOM HE WILL.”  
(John 5:21)*

It is Christ who **ELECTS TO QUICKEN,** and HE ELECTS, OUT OF HIS SOVEREIGNTY, **TO QUICKEN WHO HE WILL.** You or I have nothing to say about it. He does it to whomever HE WILL.

Again we find proof of the absolute sovereignty of God, and **HOW MAN IS UTTERLY REMOVED FROM THE REGENERATIVE OR QUICKENING PROCESS.** Your heart is desperately wicked, and YOU CANNOT KNOW IT. You cannot know when YOUR INNER HEART IS READY FOR THE QUICKENING PROCESS. Only God and Christ know your heart. YOU ARE TO CONTINUE, STRIVE, LABOR, SEARCH, SEEK, ASK, BEG, CRAVE, HUNGER AND THIRST UNTIL CHRIST SHOWS UP. When He does, YOU ARE READY. Until then, YOU ARE NOT, AND WHAT YOU THINK ABOUT IT, OR FEEL ABOUT IT MATTERS NOT.

When Christ says He will quicken whomsoever He will, He is not saying that if He does not like you, He might decide NOT TO, He means THAT HE WILL QUICKEN THOSE WHO HAVE KEPT HIS SAYINGS, BEEN OBEDIENT, AND DONE THE WILL OF THE FATHER, for those He clearly stated **HE WOULD QUICKEN.** What He is doing here IS QUALIFYING WHO GETS QUICKENED. In short, Christ will **QUICKEN ANYONE WHO HAS WALKED THE NARROW WAY TO FIND HIM.** If you do not, He will not quicken you whatsoever. You have refused death, so you cannot have life. We will find that the Old Testament agrees with the New in all of this:

**“TURN AWAY MINE EYES FROM BEHOLDING VANITY;  
AND QUICKEN THOU ME IN THY WAY.”**  
(Psalm 119:37)

Remember when Jesus said they worship me in VAIN? The vast majority of Christians’ faith IS VANITY, it is of NO EFFECT. It does not bring with it SALVATION OR UNION, which is the whole object of Christ. We find also **THE WAY** is mentioned along with BEING QUICKENED. It should not take a degree in religion to figure out what all of this means.

**“I AM AFFLICTED VERY MUCH:  
QUICKEN ME, O LORD,  
ACCORDING UNTO THY WORD.”**  
(Psalm 119:107)

The word “afflicted” is ‘anah’, which means **BROW BEATEN, DEPRESSED, ABASED, DEALT HARDLY WITH.** It sounds like THE NARROW WAY OF JESUS. We find another confirmation that unless ONE WALKS THE NARROW WAY, THERE WILL BE NO QUICKENING.

**“HEAR MY VOICE ACCORDING UNTO THY LOVINGKINDNESS:  
O LORD,  
QUICKEN ME ACCORDING TO THY JUDGMENT.”**  
(Psalm 119:149)

The process of being quickened, or made alive, which is what 'chayah' means, is **TO MAKE ALIVE, TO REVIVE, TO RESTORE TO LIFE or to REGENERATE** is associated with JUDGMENT. It is according to THE JUDGMENT OF GOD THAT BRINGS US TO LIFE. The narrow way is a WAY OF JUDGMENT; of showing us that our phileo loves are not love at all. We are destitute without agape. We could go on, it is all in there. The point is we have a total harmony from Old to New Testament, they all point in the same direction, they all agree, **BY TWO WITNESSES IS ANYTHING ESTABLISHED.** LIFE AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY IS THE QUICKENING, AND THE QUICKENING IS THE BRINGING OF THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS LIFE. We have come full circle.

The next word that we need to look at is the word REGENERATION, for it ties together the essence of the words LIFE, QUICKEN, BORN, REFRESHING, ETC. Regeneration is the OBJECT, THE GOAL OF THE PROCESS. It is regeneration in agape love that passes us from death into life, from the dominion of Satan unto the kingdom of God. Surprisingly, the word "regeneration" appears only ONCE in relation to being quickened, and only twice total in the New Testament.

***"NOT BY WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS  
WHICH WE HAVE DONE,  
BUT ACCORDING TO HIS MERCY HE SAVED US,  
  
BY THE WASHING OF REGENERATION,  
AND RENEWING OF THE HOLY GHOST."***  
(Titus 3:5)

Read it carefully, for this binds it up for all we have looked at. We are NOT saved by works of righteousness, law keeping or legalism. We are saved by mercy, which shows itself IN THE GRACE OF GOD. GRACE COMES FROM MERCY. How is our SALVATION ACCOMPLISHED? By the WASHING OF REGENERATION. What does one wash with? WATER. Water is just a code word for agape love. We are WASHED BY THE WATER OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS THE REGENERATION ITSELF. That act RENEWS OUR SPIRIT. The word "renewing" is 'anakainosis', which means **RENOVATION**. The word "holy" is 'hagios', which means **PURE, BLAMELESS**. If something is pure and blameless, then could we say it is PERFECT? And if we are washed in PERFECT AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS SPIRIT LOVE, THEN ARE WE NOT MADE PERFECT? We ourselves are never perfect, but the AGAPE LOVE WE ARE WASHED IN IS! Therefore it is the PERFECTION OF CHRIST THAT SAVES US. That eliminates all works of righteousness! We are back where we started!

The word "regeneration" is 'paliggenesia', which means **SPIRITUAL REBIRTH, OR SPIRITUAL RENOVATION**. It is a renewing, a quickening, a granting of LIFE. It should be obvious to you now that the LIFE that Jesus told us was AT THE END of the narrow way IS INDEED REGENERATION. IT IS INDEED QUICKENING; IT IS INDEED UNION. IT IS INDEED BEING BORN AGAIN. We have now proved categorically that the "many", although FULLY CONVERTED, never walked the narrow way to become REGENERATED. Indeed, the difference between CONVERSION and REGENERATION is a strait gate and a NARROW WAY.

Another word used to describe life, quickening or regeneration is "refreshing", which is closely associated to the word 'rest'. They all work together; they all form a harmony.

***“REPENT YE THEREFORE,  
AND BE CONVERTED,  
THAT YOUR SINS MAY BE BLOTTED OUT,  
WHEN THE TIMES OF REFRESHING SHALL COME  
FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD.”***

**(Acts 3:19)**

This verse is a double reference verse that applies FIRST TO THE INDIVIDUAL BELIEVER, AND SECONDLY TO THE SECOND ADVENT. It is CHRIST WHO QUICKENS, WHO BRINGS LIFE THROUGH AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. Because the word quickeneth means to be BROUGHT TOGETHER IN LIFE WITH CHRIST, OR UNION, then it is obvious that **CHRIST MUST BE IN YOUR PRESENCE FOR THAT TO OCCUR**. There cannot be true union if Christ has not come to you. He cannot enter you if He is not PRESENT TO DO SO. He cannot speak to you if He is not there. Again, it is the obvious that we often deny.

The word “refreshing” is ‘anapsuxis’, which means **RECOVERY OF BREATH, REVIVAL!** It is the same as **REGENERATION AND QUICKENING**. They all COME TOGETHER AND THEY ALL PROVE THAT CHRIST HIMSELF MUST COME TO THE BELIEVER. Without it, there is NO QUICKENING, NO REFRESHING, NO LIFE. So then the REFRESHING also sits at the end of the narrow way.

***“To whom (Israel) he said,  
THIS IS THE REST WHEREWITH YE MAY CAUSE THE WEARY TO REST;***

***AND THIS IS THE REFRESHING:  
YET THEY WOULD NOT HEAR.”***

**(Isaiah 28:12)**

When one is REFRESHED WITH AGAPE LOVE, one can enter into **GOD’S REST**. He ceases from his own labor, and his own works of righteousness, and enters into THE RIGHTEOUSNESS THAT CHRIST PROVIDES HIM WITH. This verse relates to the arrival of Jesus Christ to Israel, which they rejected.

***“Therefore thus saith the Lord God,  
Behold, I lay in Zion for a FOUNDATION A STONE,  
A TRIED STONE, A PRECIOUS CORNER STONE,  
A SURE FOUNDATION:***

***HE THAT BELIEVETH SHALL NOT MAKE HASTE.”***

**(Isaiah 28:16)**

There is only one building that uses a true corner stone, and that is the PYRAMID. The New Age uses the pyramid, but Christ used it before they did. Satan comes in REVERSES ALL OF THE MEANINGS. The

corner stone in a pyramid is THE CAPSTONE, THE UPPER MOST PORTION, THAT WHICH 'CAPS' THE PYRAMID AND COMPLETES IT. The Body of Christ is likened to the pyramid in the New Testament.

We lay our foundation with CONVERSION TO THE HISTORICAL CHRIST, THE REDEEMER, THE MESSIAH. We then, if we are obedient, begin laying up layers of knowledge and doctrine, line by line, precept by precept, here a little and there a little. We then TAKE ALL OF THIS KNOWLEDGE WE GAIN, AND IF WE BE OBEDIENT, SEARCH FOR THE MEANING OF IT. You see, you can KNOW A LOT OF FACTS, AND BE OBLIVIOUS TO WHAT THE FACTS MEAN. You can memorize the Bible, and from a carnal sense viewpoint KNOW ALL THE FACTS, AND HAVE KNOWLEDGE ABOUT MANY THINGS, BUT NOT UNDERSTAND THE MEANING. Christ mentions this many times when He says that "they have ears to hear, but cannot hear, and eyes which see, but cannot see." Filled with knowledge, BUT NO IDEA WHAT IT MEANS.

The NARROW WAY IS A SEARCH FOR THE MEANING BEHIND THE FACTS PRESENTED, THE DOCTRINE PRESENTED. It is not filling your head with all sorts of facts to spout off to show how smart you are. IT IS A SEARCH FOR THE HIDDEN MEANING BEHIND IT ALL. WHAT DO THESE THINGS MEAN? If you will but SEARCH WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART, SOUL AND MIND AS TO THE MEANING OF ALL THE KNOWLEDGE, **YOU WILL BE LED DIRECTLY TO THE LIVING CHRIST.**

All of the DOCTRINES, ALL OF THE KNOWLEDGE, ALL OF THE STUDY IS GREAT, AND A COMMAND. BUT THAT DOES NOT GIVE YOU THE REAL HIDDEN MEANING. When you know WHAT SOMETHING REALLY MEANS ON AN EXPERIENTIAL WAY, THEN YOU 'KNOW'.

When Christ comes to the believer, and REVEALS AGAPE LOVE, SO THAT THE BELIEVER CAN ACTUALLY 'LOOK INTO IT'. HE CAN THEN EXPERIENCE IT, AND KNOWS THE MEANING OF IT. Prior to that he/she was incomplete. It was not that we do not have much knowledge, but we do not know what it means UNTIL CHRIST COMES AND SHOWS US WHAT IT MEANS EXPERIENTIALLY. HE REVEALS IT TO US, WE SEE IT, WE FINALLY UNDERSTAND THE REAL MEANING.

The experiential meaning is the **TRUE MEANING.** The experiential meaning is the **DISTILLATION OF ALL THE ACCUMULATED KNOWLEDGE.** I went through all of this, and so can attest personally to it. I had a great knowledge of Scripture, for I had studied it night and day for years. I poured over Scripture, I read everything I could find on it, and I had amassed a great amount of KNOWLEDGE ABOUT IT. This is what Paul is referring to when he says you **CAN KNOW ALL WISDOM, AND KNOW ALL MYSTERIES, AND HAVE ALL KNOWLEDGE. BUT IF YOU HAVE NOT AGAPE LOVE IT PROFITS YOU NOTHING.** Knowledge is just that. Illumination of the mind is just that. Doctrine is just doctrine. **AGAPE LOVE IS WHAT IT ALL MEANS.** AGAPE LOVE DISTILLS ALL OF THE KNOWLEDGE. The Bible is nothing but a book explaining AGAPE LOVE, and showing us how to OBTAIN IT. But until Christ comes, and SHOWS US AGAPE LOVE, AND REVEALS AGAPE LOVE TO US, WE ARE LOST, STILL DEAD IN OUR TRESPASSES AND SINS.

It is the agape love REVEALED that takes all of knowledge and doctrines, and **REVEALS TO US WHAT IT MEANS EXPERIENTIALLY IN OUR HEARTS.** It distills it, cooks all the knowledge, and brings it to perfection. It is like cooking blueberry muffins. You mix together various ingredients. The ingredients are like doctrine: here a little and there a little. A pinch of salt, a cup of sugar. Line by line, line by line. Flower, milk and eggs. Precept upon precept, precept upon precept. Combine the salt, sugar, baking soda and flower. Beat the eggs and add the milk. As we take each bite of INDIVIDUAL KNOWLEDGE, we begin to BRING IT TOGETHER, WE BEGIN TO PUT IT ALL TOGETHER.

COMBINE ALL OF IT TOGETHER AND MIX UP THE BATTER. ADD THE BLUEBERRIES. But do we still have blueberry muffins? NO!

There is something missing. Like the believer, it finally gets all folded together, and it is ready for the final act: **WE COOK IT ALL IN A HOT FIRE**. We take everything we know, and we walk through the fire so it all gets **COOKED**. There is a moment in baking when something is **DONE TO PERFECTION**. It is not OVERCOOKED, AND IT IS NOT UNDERCOOKED. That which turns all of the ingredients in to MUFFINS IS THE BAKING. That which turns the believer into the perfection is the BAKING OF THE NARROW WAY. You walk until you are cooked to almost near perfection. Then Christ comes, and **BRINGS WITH HIM THE MISSING FINAL INGREDIENT, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE**. We are brought to final perfection. The baking is completed; we are now PERFECT IN CHRIST.

***“Come unto me, all ye THAT LABOUR AND ARE HEAVY LADEN,  
AND I WILL GIVE YOU REST.”  
(Matthew 11:28)***

The word “rest” here is ‘anapauo’ which means **TO REFRESH, TO REST**. Refreshing and resting are the same for all practical purposes. If we come to Christ by the narrow way, we die the death, and we know how destitute we are. This makes us depressed and heavy laden. Christ, when He finally comes to us, **GIVES US OUR REFRESHING, BY THE WASHING OF REGENERATION, AND WE ENTER INTO GOD’S REST**. Is anything more perfect than Christ? Is there any love more perfect than the love of God? If nothing is, then when we come into THE LOVE OF GOD, AND WE ARE MADE PERFECT IN THAT LOVE, THEN HOW IS THERE ANY MORE WORK TO DO? We enter into THE REST OF GOD. We cease from our labor; we labor hereafter in the AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST.

ISRAEL COULD NOT ENTER INTO THE PROMISED LAND BECAUSE OF UNBELIEF. They would not enter in. They were brought right up to the border of the promised land and refused to go in. Likewise the Christian is brought right to the entrance of the strait gate and refuses to enter in. They refuse the New Covenant just as Israel refused the New Land. It was refused because of UNBELIEF IN THE PROMISES OF GOD. God promised LIFE, QUICKENING, UNION AND AGAPE LOVE. He said all you have to do is walk the narrow way to find it. The vast majority of Christians DID NOT BELIEVE IT. THEY MAKE UP ALL SORTS OF THEOLOGY AND EXCUSES AS TO WHY THEY NEED NOT DO IT. Therefore they CANNOT enter in.

***“And to whom SWARE HE THAT THEY (ISRAEL)  
SHOULD NOT ENTER INTO HIS REST,  
BUT TO THEM THAT BELIEVED NOT?***

***SO WE SEE THAT THEY COULD NOT ENTER IN BECAUSE OF  
UNBELIEF.***

***LET US THEREFORE FEAR,  
LEST, A PROMISE LEFT US OF ENTERING INTO HIS REST,  
ANY OF YOU SHOULD SEEM TO COME SHORT OF IT.***



**FOR UNTO US WAS THE GOSPEL PREACHED,  
AS WELL AS UNTO THEM:  
BUT THE WORD PREACHED DID NOT PROFIT THEM,  
NOT BEING MIXED WITH FAITH IN THEM THAT HEARD IT.”  
(Hebrews 3:18-19; 4:1-2)**

The many and the few, **BOTH HEARD THE SAME WORD.** Both received the same Gospel. The “many” did not BELIEVE IT ENOUGH to be moved into ACTION. They did not pick up their cross, they allowed Jesus to do it for them. They would not walk the narrow way; they said Jesus did it for them. They had a faith IN Jesus, but they did not mix any of what they heard with the faith OF Jesus. They would NOT ENTER IN. They refused. They did not mix the Gospel with TRUE FAITH. They believed not, and they all fell. Is this why we are to LABOR FOR THAT REST, FOR THAT REFRESHING, FOR THAT QUICKENING?

**“LET US LABOUR THEREFORE  
TO ENTER INTO THAT REST,  
LEST ANY MAN FALL  
AFTER THE SAME EXAMPLE OF UNBELIEF.**

**For the WORD OF GOD IS QUICK,  
and POWERFUL, and sharper than any TWO EDGED SWORD...”  
(Hebrews 4:11-12)**

We find labor, rest, and the QUICK of God. Is it all coincidental? Is it all for naught? Now then, if we have been QUICKENED, REGENERATED, REFRESHED, AND HAVE A NEW LIFE, COULD WE SAY WE HAD BEEN BORN AGAIN?

**“Jesus answered and said unto him, VERILY, VERILY,  
I SAY UNTO THEE,  
EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN AGAIN,  
HE CANNOT SEE THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”  
(John 3:3)**

We are closing in on the whole Bible, to the meaning of the mission and the passion of Christ. We must dissect this entire thing to be sure we understand what Jesus is speaking of here. When Christ uses the word verily twice, it is something of **EXTREME IMPORTANCE.** The word “except” is ‘ean me’ which means **IF NOT, UNLESS.** In other words, **NO ONE CAN ENTER HEAVEN, NO ONE AT ALL, NOT ANY ONE, NO EXCEPTIONS WHATSOEVER, UNLESS.** It is a condition that is **IMPERATIVE.** This is the actual ground Christ uses to send the vast majority of Christians away. They failed to meet the TEST OF BEING BORN AGAIN.

The word “born” is ‘gennaō’, which means **TO REGENERATE, PROCREATE, TO BEGET, TO BE BORN, TO BRING FORTH, OR TO BE DELIVERED**. It means the same thing as QUICKENED, REGENERATE, REFRESH OR LIFE. When a baby is born, it is born INTO A NEW LIFE. Likewise, when a believing Christian is born into the family of God, HE/SHE ENTERS A NEW LIFE. The word “again” is ‘anothen’ which means **FROM ABOVE, FROM THE FIRST, ANEW, FROM THE BEGINNING**. It has several meanings for us. The first meaning is FROM ABOVE, OR FROM HEAVEN, FROM THE HIGHER PLACE, THE TOP, THAT IS OF THE SPIRIT. We must be born from above, from the HEAVENLY PLACES, THE HEAVENLY REALM.

The second meaning is equally important. It means **FROM THE FIRST, OR FROM THE BEGINNING**. If we go all the way back to the creation of man, in what image was he created? In the image of God. Therefore unless we ARE BORN AGAIN INTO THAT SAME IMAGE, we cannot see or know, or understand the kingdom. We have to be born BACK TO THE FIRST IMAGE OF PURE AGAPE LOVE. The entire program God has for the redemption of man is to bring us back to the image of ADAM. That is why Christ is called the second Adam, and why also He is called the FIRST FRUITS OF MANY BRETHREN.

The word “see” is ‘eido’, which we know means **TO KNOW, TO BEHOLD, TO LOOK UPON, TO BE SURE OF, TO UNDERSTAND**. Without regeneration, we are not able to KNOW, SEE, UNDERSTAND WHAT THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS. We can learn much about it, but we cannot **EXPERIENTIALLY KNOW IT, SEE IT, EXPERIENCE IT WITHOUT THE REBIRTH**. This confirms everything we have studied.

Nicodemus did not understand Jesus. He was the preeminent teacher of all Israel. Jesus said: “art thou a MASTER OF ISRAEL, and KNOWEST NOT THESE THINGS?” Jesus was trying to tell us something. ALL THE KNOWLEDGE IN THE WORLD IS USELESS UNLESS WE FIND THE REAL MEANING BEHIND IT. Nicodemus KNEW THE TORAH inside out. He was a master of the Old Testament. There was probably not anyone who knew it better. Yet for all of the knowledge **HE LACKED ONE THING**: He was NOT born again. The rich ruler who was a very sincere and dedicated man **LACKED ONE THING**. The “many” who were rejected of Christ **LACKED ONE THING**. The non-overcomers in all churches **LACKED ONE THING**. The false teachers who lead millions astray **LACKED ONE THING**. The lazy and unwise servants **LACKED ONE THING**. The foolish virgins **LACKED ONE THING**. The wayside, stony ground and thorny people **LACKED ONE THING**. The tares **LACKED ONE THING**. The trees that did not bring fruit to perfection **LACKED ONE THING**. We find a common thread that there is only one thing missing in everything we looked at:

**IT IS REGENERATION, THE REVELATION**  
**AND BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE**  
**AT THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD.**

All of the above **APPROPRIATED THEIR REGENERATION BY AN ACT OF THEIR OWN WILL**. They simply claimed it BY FAITH, BY BELIEF. They said, “I am saved, because the Bible says I am saved.” With head up and locked, with arrogance they refused instruction, and they all ended up in ETERNAL RUIN, FROM WHICH THEY COULD NOT EXTRICATE THEMSELVES. Their faith was not true faith. Their belief was not true belief.

*“Jesus answered, VERILY, VERILY,  
I SAY UNTO THEE,  
**EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN OF WATER  
AND OF THE SPIRIT,**  
**HE CANNOT ENTER THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”**  
(John 3:5)*

Jesus is getting a little more specific. Now He enters in a **CONDITION**. He is now telling us what the rebirth really concerns itself with. Water is a code word for AGAPE LOVE, as we found in our previous study of it. **THEREFORE JESUS IS TELLING US THAT WE MUST BE BORN OF AGAPE LOVE.** He is also telling us that THIS AGAPE LOVE IS OF THE SPIRIT. It is not of the carnal nature, the sense man, the soul mind, or of the mind. He is verifying other statements of Scripture that say that agape love **IS BEYOND THE REACH OF ALL KNOWLEDGE, ALL LEARNING, ALL ABILITY OF MAN TO OBTAIN IT.** He must be born of the Spirit, and mankind has no control over his spirit. Now you know why man cannot simply decide to be born again, why an ACT OF FAITH HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH IT. It comes from God, WHEN HE DECIDES, WHERE HE DECIDES. You have nothing whatever to say about it. You have only one thing to do: **REMAIN OBEDIENT AND SEARCH UNTIL YOU FIND.**

Jesus is also very blunt: NOT ONLY CAN A SOUL NOT SEE THE KINGDOM, BUT HE CANNOT ENTER IT. THERE ARE NO OPTIONS. Now you know why only a FEW ever attain to spiritual rebirth. **THE MANY WILL NOT WALK THE NARROW WAY TO OBTAIN IT.** They simply elect of their own volition to ROB GOD’S KINGDOM AND APPROPRIATE THE GIFTS. The word “enter” is ‘eiserchomai’, which means **TO ENTER, TO COME INTO, TO GO IN THROUGH.** It is a very exclusive club, it seems. LIFE IS AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY, AND THAT IS WHERE YOU ENTER THE NEW COVENANT.

The many were told they entered it at the beginning of their walk, that they had union right away. They were in disobedience to the PRIMARY COMMANDS OF CHRIST, so they were under a rank delusion, a delusion that cost them everything in the end. **BE SURE YOUR SIN FINDS YOU OUT, FOR IT WILL!**

*“That **WHICH IS BORN OF THE FLESH IS FLESH;**  
**AND THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE SPIRIT IS SPIRIT.**  
  
*MARVEL NOT THAT I SAID UNTO THEE,*  
  
**YE MUST BE BORN AGAIN.”**  
(John 3:6-7)*

Jesus drives a great wedge between carnal man, flesh man, soul man and sense man and THE SPIRIT. That which is born of women is born under the law of nature, and that nature **IS FALLEN.** It is devoid of agape love, passed on by the male sperm unto the whole human race. **THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE**

**FLESH IS FALLEN**, is what Christ is saying to us. FALLEN FLESH TO FALLEN FLESH. This is a reply to NICODEMUS' FIRST QUESTION: CAN A MAN ENTER HIS MOTHER'S WOMB A SECOND TIME? Jesus says, NO. That which is born of the flesh is always of the flesh. Now comes the wedge. **THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE SPIRIT, IS SPIRIT**. The two shall never meet. They are separate, distinct, opposites. Jesus again reiterates the fact that **WE MUST BE BORN AGAIN, OF THE SPIRIT, OF AGAPE LOVE**.

***“The WIND BLOWETH WHERE IT LISTETH,  
AND THOU HEAREST THE SOUND THEREOF, BUT  
THOU CANST NOT TELL  
WHENCE IT COMETH,  
AND WHITHER IT GOETH:  
SO IS EVERY ONE THAT  
IS BORN OF THE SPIRIT.”  
(John 3:8)***

This verse is very crucial. The word “listeth” is ‘thelo’, which means **TO WILL, TO DETERMINE, TO CHOOSE**. It is the WIND that determines where it will blow. The WIND in this case is the **SPIRIT OF CHRIST**. It is a confirmation of what Jesus said when He said He would **QUICKEN** whomsoever He chose. Now what He says about this gives us many clues as to exactly what the REBIRTH IS:

### **1. “THOU HEAREST THE SOUND THEREOF.”**

The word for “hearest” is ‘akouo’, which means **TO HEAR, TO BE NOISED, TO BE REPORTED**. In other words, **YOU WILL HEAR THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST**. The word for “sound” is ‘phone’ which means **VOICE**. It should have been translated **YOU WILL HEAR THE VOICE THEREOF**. Now we must combine this to Revelation 3:20 where Jesus said, “If any man **HEAR MY VOICE**.” We must combine this to John 10, where Jesus said that **HIS SHEEP HEAR HIS VOICE, AND HE LEADS THEM OUT**. It is a **TOTAL AND COMPLETE CONFIRMATION THAT THE REAL BELIEVER WILL HAVE A PERSONAL ENCOUNTER WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST AND HE/SHE WILL LITERALLY HEAR HIS VOICE**. How do you hear it? I cannot tell you.

I can attest to this being the truth. I literally heard the voice of Jesus Christ. I do not think I heard it with my ears, but it was clear, very distinct, and very much to the point, very sweet, very gentle, mild. He called me by name: “Stewart, do you agree that (agape) love runs this universe?” This was His question to me after He showed me what it really was, what it meant. I replied with my own voice “Yes”. He then asked me “Stewart, do you agree that you have never (agape) loved? I did not realize it at the time, but this was the same confrontation the resurrected Christ had with Peter. It was identical. I replied that no, I had not. He then asked me, “**WILL YOU (AGAPE) LOVE?**” I struggled and finally said YES. It was at this instant that I felt Him enter into me. It is hard to describe, but **MY COURSE, MY DIRECTION WAS REVERSED, I CHANGED FROM ONE LOVE TO ANOTHER LOVE**. Now notice what Jesus says about this **SOUND (VOICE)**.

### **2. “BUT CANST NOT TELL WHENCE IT COMETH.”**

The word “whence” is ‘pothen’, which means **FROM WHICH, FROM WHERE, FROM WHAT PLACE**. The word “cometh” is ‘erchomai’, which means **TO COME, TO APPEAR, TO SHOW UP**,

**TO COME TO.** Now let's look at that closely. It means you are going to LITERALLY HEAR HIS VOICE, BUT YOU WILL NOT KNOW FROM WHERE IT COMES FROM. It is NON-DIRECTIONAL, FROM EVERY DIRECTION, AND YET FROM NO WHERE. The reason this is true, is that it **COMES FROM THE SPIRIT, THROUGH THE SPIRIT, FROM THE HOLY OF HOLIES TO THE OUTER MIND.** Jesus resides ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE MATERIAL WORLD. If we could attempt to try to understand it, take two cones and put the tips of them together. One cone is THE FLESH WORLD, WHERE WE LIVE IN OUR SENSES. The other cone is the SPIRIT WORLD, THAT LIES BEHIND EVERYTHING. When we travel the narrow way, we are brought right into our Holy of Holies, which is where Jesus is knocking for entrance, which is represented by the TIP OF THE CONE. The spirit world is the TIP OF THE OTHER CONE.

When you arrive there, through the power of God alone, then Christ can deal with you, **SPIRIT TO SPIRIT.** YOU ARE AT YOUR INNER HEART. THAT IS WHERE CHRIST STANDS KNOCKING. He does NOT knock on the door of your **OUTER HEART, MIND, AND WILL.** That is where the Holy Spirit gains an entrance, and where HE WORKS, TO MAKE STRAIGHT THE PATHWAY FOR THE LORD. When you finally arrive at your HOLY OF HOLIES, YOU HAVE THEN MADE CONTACT WITH YOUR SECRET, HIDDEN INNER HEART. HERE IT IS THAT YOU WILL FINALLY HEAR THE VOICE OF JESUS CHRIST. Your sense mind, your conscious mind **WILL HEAR THE VOICE.** Your sense mind, your conscious mind **WILL SEE AGAPE LOVE AT THE REVELATION OF IT.** Your entire being is forged together, to form one unit as CHRIST DEALS WITH BOTH YOUR OUTER AND INNER HEART, SOUL AND MIND AND WILL, AT THE MOMENT.

When He speaks, THE VOICE IS COMING FROM DEEP WITHIN, BUT YOU THINK IT IS COMING FROM WITHOUT, BUT CANNOT TELL FROM WHERE. You not only do not know from where it comes from, you do not know where it goes to. IT IS A MYSTERY. It is like the real wind. You can watch it blow tree leaves, you can watch the grass wave in the wind. But you do not really know where it comes from, or where it goes. IT IS INVISIBLE, IT IS OF THE SPIRIT.

You know it is there, because YOU EXPERIENCE IT ON YOUR FACE, ON YOUR BODY. IT IS FULLY EXPERIENTIAL. Your senses pick it up; they compute it in the sense mind, carnal mind. YOU CANNOT SEE IT, BUT YOU KNOW IT IS THERE, AND YOU KNOW IT HAS BEEN THERE. Jesus says this is **EXACTLY WHAT IT IS LIKE IN THE SPIRIT REBIRTH.**

You hear His voice, but you do not know from whence He is calling you. You must hear His voice, because **CHRIST HAS AN ISSUE THAT HE MUST SETTLE WITH YOU.** It is the AGAPE LOVE ISSUE, AND THIS MUST BE SETTLED WITH GOD. Your problem is that THERE IS NO AGAPE LOVE IN YOUR HEART. YOU ARE DESTITUTE OF IT. If the COMMAND OF GOD IS THAT WE AGAPE LOVE, and we by nature are DESTITUTE OF IT, then how can we fulfill the command of God? We cannot, and thus THE ISSUE IS ONLY ONE: AGAPE LOVE. We must attain unto the AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST to COVER OUR SINS. There are no options.

Now then, if AGAPE LOVE IS A MYSTERY, HIDDEN, A SECRET, AND BEYOND ALL KNOWLEDGE, then it stand to reason Christ would HAVE TO SHOW YOU WHAT IT IS, IN ORDER TO JUDGE YOU, AND FOR YOU TO UNDERSTAND THE JUDGMENT. It would also prove that Christ would have TO SPEAK TO YOU CONCERNING ALL OF THIS, FOR YOU ARE ENTERING INTO A CONTRACT WITH HIM, THE NEW COVENANT. If you are going to be IN UNION with Christ, and Christ is PURE AGAPE LOVE, then obviously you are going to have to AGREE TO AGAPE LOVE WITH HIM. If you agree, then THE TWO ARE AGREED, AND THEY CAN WALK TOGETHER AS ONE, IN UNION. To bring about all of this, Christ MUST, AND WILL SPEAK TO YOU ABOUT THIS ISSUE. YOU WILL HEAR HIS VOICE.

Now I know that this is going to cause a great uproar, but TRUTH IS TRUTH. Jesus did not ask me to CONVINCING YOU OF IT, ONLY TO PRESENT THE TRUTH. He said He would take care of all the consequences of it. YOU WILL, AND YOU MUST SETTLE THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE, AND IF YOU CANNOT ATTEST TO THAT BEING DONE, **YOU HAVE NOT BEEN REGENERATED ACCORDING TO THE WORD OF GOD.** Satan can and will offer up a MILLION experiences to convince you that you are saved, when you are NOT saved.

### **3. “SO IS EVERY ONE BORN OF THE SPIRIT.”**

The word “every” is ‘pas’, which means **ALL, EACH ONE, EVERY ONE**. In other words, **THERE WILL BE NO EXCEPTIONS.** EVERYONE is to hear the voice of Jesus Christ; EVERYONE IS TO SETTLE THIS AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS WHATSOEVER. If you are in truth **BORN OF THE SPIRIT,** then you will have **HAD THE AGAPE LOVE REVELATION,** and you **WILL HAVE HEARD HIS VOICE,** and you **WILL HAVE SETTLED THE AGAPE LOVE QUESTION.** It is not done BY YOUR WILL, BY AN ACT OF YOUR FAITH, BY A “SURRENDER”, OR BY ANY OTHER MEANS other than what the Scriptures WITNESS TO US.

There are a million alternatives that seem to pass as “evidence” of regeneration. Let us go into what REGENERATION IS NOT, before we proceed further as to WHAT IT IS:

#### **REGENERATION IS NOT:**

- 1. AN ACT OF YOU ACCEPTING CHRIST INTO YOUR HEART.**
- 2. AN ACT OF FAITH BY WHICH YOU SIMPLY BELIEVE CHRIST HAS COME INTO YOUR HEART.**
- 3. AN ACT OF ‘PRAYING’ THROUGH TO AN ‘ASSURANCE’ THAT COMES FROM A FEELING OF ‘PEACE’ OR SERENITY.**
- 4. AN EMOTIONAL TIME IN WHICH YOU CRY YOUR HEART OUT AND CONFESS A MULTITUDE OF SINS AND FEEL GREAT AFTERWARD.**
- 5. A GREAT FEELING OF PEACE, OR JOY, OR HAPPINESS (THE ANON WITH GREAT JOY CROWD).**
- 6. AN ACT OF SURRENDER IN WHICH YOU SIMPLY GIVE UP AND ‘LET CHRIST’.**
- 7. AN ACT OF ‘BELIEF’ IN WHICH YOU SIMPLY BELIEVE IN SPECIFIC SCRIPTURE AND THEIR PROMISES FOR YOU.**
- 8. AN ACT OF YOUR WILL BECAUSE YOU DECIDE YOU WANT TO BE SAVED.**
- 9. A MIRACULOUS DELIVERANCE FROM DRUGS OR ALCOHOL, LUST OR OTHER BONDAGE YOU ARE IN.**
- 10. THE SPEAKING IN TONGUES.**
- 11. THE BAPTISM IN THE HOLY SPIRIT.**
- 12. A WHITE LIGHT IN A ROOM THAT SPEAKS TO YOU.**
- 13. FEELING THE PRESENCE OF GREAT LOVE.**
- 14. ANY OTHER SIGN OR WONDER THAT YOU THINK IS FROM GOD.**
- 15. A DREAM OR A VISION.**
- 16. BEING BAPTIZED IN WATER AS AN INFANT OR AS AN ADULT.**
- 17. BEING CONFIRMED.**
- 18. BELIEVING YOU ARE SAVED BECAUSE YOUR CHURCH THEOLOGY SAYS YOU ARE.**
- 19. BELIEVING YOU ARE SAVED BECAUSE SOME ‘PROPHET’ DISCERNS YOU ARE.**
- 20. BELIEVING YOU ARE SAVED BECAUSE YOU THINK YOU ARE.**

**REGENERATION IS AN ACT OF CHRIST ACCEPTING  
YOU  
AFTER YOU HAVE PROVED YOUR LOVE FOR HIM  
BY LAYING DOWN YOUR LIFE FOR HIM.**

You may think that you know Jesus, BUT DOES JESUS KNOW YOU? It is JESUS COMING TO YOU, AND BESTOWING HIS LOVE UPON YOU THAT CONSTITUTES AUTHENTIC REGENERATION. It has nothing to do with YOU claiming by an act of faith, CHRIST IN YOU, OR YOU KNOWING CHRIST. That was the tragedy of the “many”.

Authentic regeneration is so clearly spelled out that YOU CANNOT MISINTERPRET IT UNLESS *YOU WANT TO MISINTERPRET IT*. God gave us the Bible. He commanded we STUDY IT TO SHOW OURSELVES APPROVED. If you refuse to STUDY IT, then IT IS YOUR PROBLEM, NOT GOD’S. The many had the truth in front of their eyes, but they refused to accept it. They did not really want to hear that they were going to have to die to obtain life, so their hearts are blinded to the real truth. The Bible told them in clear language what real regeneration was, and they REFUSED THAT KNOWLEDGE, AND TOOK THE BROAD ROAD OF THE INSTANT FAITH GOSPEL, OF INSTANT UNION AND REGENERATION INTO ETERNAL RUIN.

Regeneration comes in THREE ACTUAL AND LITERAL STAGES, THE FIRST PHASE BEING LENGTHY, USUALLY TAKING YEARS. THE OTHER TWO STAGES COME IN RAPID SUCCESSION. The Bible witnesses to ALL THREE PHASES. THEY ARE THESE:

**PHASE ONE (IN PREPARATION FOR REGENERATION)**

1. THE VERY EXPERIENTIAL WALK OF THE NARROW WAY TO SOUL DEATH.
2. THE WAITING IN THE LOWEST ROOM IN DEATH WHILE YOU WAIT FOR CHRIST.

**PHASE TWO (THE COMING OF CHRIST).**

1. THE REVELATION OF AGAPE LOVE.
2. THE ADMISSION OF GUILT BEFORE CHRIST.
3. INNER HEART, HOLY OF HOLIES REPENTANCE FOR NO LOVE.
4. THE BESTOWMENT OF AGAPE LOVE, DEATH TO LIFE, CHRIST IN US.

**PHASE THREE (CHRIST IN YOU)**

1. THE SEALING OF THE HOLY GHOST (NOT SPIRIT BAPTISM).
2. THE WITNESS OF LIFE AND AGAPE LOVE WITHIN.

The above is what CONSTITUTES THE WAY TO TRUE REGENERATION. Anything short of that, and according to the Word of God, you are not regenerated. You are under a deception, a delusion, and one that Satan most likely engineered to get you off track. We have examined the Scriptures carefully, and the *TESTIMONY IS TRUE, AND THE WITNESS IS TRUE.*

We will now go deeper to prove it out categorically, to bind it up from gainsaying or mocking. Remember the blind man that Christ gave sight to at the pool of Siloam? Remember that all mankind is born SPIRITUALLY BLIND TO THE KINGDOM OF GOD. Therefore the man represents ALL OF US PRIOR TO REGENERATION. Read the story carefully:

*“And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was  
BLIND FROM HIS BIRTH (the human race)...”  
(John 9:1)*

You will find that many of the things that happened to Jesus were parables in motion. They have a story within the story; they have a much deeper meaning than first meets the eye. Jesus then spat on the ground, and made clay of spittle, and He ANOINTED THE EYES OF THE BLIND MAN WITH THE CLAY (vs. 6). This is like CONVERSION. It is the anointing of the Holy Spirit. If the CONVERTED CHRISTIAN WILL BECOME OBEDIENT, AND DO WHAT CHRIST COMMANDS, THEN SIGHT WILL BE RESTORED. Christ says to the blind man:

*“...GO, WASH IN THE POOL OF SILOAM,  
(which is by interpretation, SENT.)  
HE WENT HIS ‘WAY’  
(OBEDIENCE)  
THEREFORE,  
AND WASHED, AND CAME SEEING.”  
(John 9:7)*

The word “go” is ‘hupago’ and it means **TO LEAD UNDER, TO SINK OUT OF SIGHT**. Sounds very much like the command of Christ to GO TO THE LOWEST ROOM! Where was he to go to? To a pool of CLEAR WATER. Water being a code word for agape love, a portrait begins to emerge. It says HE WENT HIS WAY. In other words, HE WAS OBEDIENT TO THE COMMAND. He did not understand ‘WHY HE WAS GOING, HE SIMPLY OBEYED AND WENT. So we find several elements here: THE NARROW WAY TO DEATH, OBEDIENCE AND WATER. He went to the pool and he “washed” himself. The interpretation of the pool was “sent”. The word “sent” is ‘apostallo’, which means **TO SET APART, TO SET AT LIBERTY, TO SEND OUT**.

So now we have a pool of water, which is named TO SET AT LIBERTY. So the blind man, (that’s you and I) walked the narrow way to death, and WAS WASHED IN THE POOL OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS CALLED TO SET AT LIBERTY. Sounds very much like, “IF YE CONTINUE IN MY WORD...YOU WILL FIND THE TRUTH, AND THE TRUTH SHALL SET YOU FREE.” What happens after he washed? It says he came away “seeing”. That word is ‘blepo’, which means **TO LOOK, TO SEE, TO BEHOLD, TO BEWARE, TO PERCEIVE**. What a perfect parable in motion to describe all of the elements of authentic regeneration. In verse 11, the blind man said he washed, and received his sight.



## **HE WAS WASHED IN THE WATERS OF REGENERATION.**

The word “received” means **TO RECOVER SIGHT**. He was blind, prior to this, and the word “blind” is ‘tuphos’, which means **OPAQUE, SMOKY, BLIND, WITHOUT SIGHT**.

The religious leaders were very upset over this whole thing. The Rabbis represent the religious leaders of our day, the so-called “experts”, the “BIG GUNS” of modern Christendom, who are blind, and they are leading the blind. They grill this poor fellow, and even bring in his parents to cross question them. Quite an argument brews, and the religious leaders do not really believe it happened.

*“Then said they to him again, what did he to thee?  
**HOW OPENED HE THINE EYES?**”*

*He answered them,  
**I HAVE TOLD YOU ALREADY,**  
AND YE  
**DID NOT HEAR.**  
**WHEREFORE WOULD YE HEAR IT AGAIN?  
WILL YE ALSO BE HIS DISCIPLES?***

*THEN THEY REVILED HIM, AND SAID,  
THOU ART HIS DISCIPLE;  
BUT WE ARE MOSES’ DISCIPLES.”*

*(John 9:26-28)*

They had been told all about it. They also knew their Scripture. BUT THEY WOULD NOT HEAR IT. You see, it doesn’t matter how much proof you give someone **WHOSE HEART IS WRONG. THEY WILL NOT ACCEPT IT; THEY WILL NOT HEAR IT.** That is why Jesus said HIS SHEEP HEAR HIS VOICE. His voice is also THE WORD OF GOD, WHICH IS ACCEPTED IN ITS ENTIRETY, NOT JUST A PICK AND CHOOSE ACCEPTANCE. The question, “would you also be his disciple?” is a loaded question. It is for each one of us. ARE WE GOING TO GO AFTER THE TRADITIONS OF MEN, which was what happened to the interpretation of Moses, or are you going to be led by the SPIRIT OF CHRIST INTO THE TRUTH? Pick this day whom you will serve. They became very angry. They finally end up throwing him OUT.

I have been thrown out of churches for teaching the narrow way. THEY WILL NOT HEAR IT. **IT IS A VILE THING TO THEM.** IT IS AN OFFENSE TO THEM. IT IS A TERRIBLE THING TO THEM THAT THEY SHOULD BE ASKED TO PICK UP THEIR CROSS. “Let Jesus do it for us...” they claim with one accord. The only problem is, Jesus will NOT do it for them, and they will perish instead.

*“SINCE THE WORLD BEGAN WAS IT NOT HEARD  
**THAT ANY MAN OPENED**”*

***THE EYES***  
***OF ONE THAT WAS BORN BLIND.”***  
***(John 9:32)***

The word “opened” here is ‘onoieo’, and it means **TO OPEN, TO OPEN UP**. In short, **TO REVEAL, TO MAKE MANIFEST, TO OPEN THAT WHICH WAS PREVIOUSLY CLOSED UP**. The RELIGIOUS LEADERS are having a very difficult time with this, for they have their religion, their teachings of Moses, and this is **CONTRARY TO ALL THEY HAVE LEARNED**. They cannot handle it, and they become very **ANGRY**. **TRUTH ALWAYS STIRS UP ANGER AT THE FIRST**. Truth **CONVICTS, AND THAT CONVICTION DISPLAYS ITSELF IN ANGER**. That is why Christ was **KILLED. HE CONVICTED**.

Jesus heard what had happened, and the exchange proves out everything we have said thus far:

***“...Dost thou BELIEVE on the Son of God?***

*He answered and said, WHO IS HE, Lord, that I might BELIEVE on him?*

*And Jesus said unto him*

***THOU HAST BOTH SEEN HIM,***

***AND IT IS HE THAT TALKETH WITH THEE.”***

***(John 9:35-37)***

We now can tie the whole thing together. The man was washed in agape love, and **NOW HE SEES**. Jesus is the Son of God. He says that **NOW YOU HAVE SEEN HIM**. The word “seen” is ‘horao’, which means to **STARE AT, TO DISCERN CLEARLY, TO EXPERIENCE, TO APPEAR, TO BEHOLD**. The man, who now sees out of **AGAPE LOVE EYES, IS ABLE TO SEE THE SON**. He has experienced the Son of God. He now looks out of the eyes of **AGAPE LOVE, AND HE IS ABLE TO DISCERN THE SON, DISCERN THE SPIRITUAL. HE KNOWS WHAT IT IS, HE HAS EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF IT**. The word for “talketh” is ‘laleo’, which means **TO TALK, TO UTTER WORDS, SPEECH, TO SPEAK**. How do we speak? With a **VOICE**. So now we have **SEE, HEAR, BELIEVE**. **ALL OF THE ESSENTIAL ELEMENTS OF REGENERATION ARE PRESENT IN THIS PARABLE**. Now comes the **CONDEMNATION UPON ALL THE RELIGIOUS PEOPLE WHO CLAIM THEY SEE, BUT DO NOT**:

*“And Jesus said,*  
***FOR JUDGMENT I AM COME INTO THIS WORLD,***  
*THAT THEY WHICH SEE NOT*  
***MIGHT SEE;***

**AND THAT THEY WHICH SEE MIGHT BE MADE BLIND.**

**And some of the Pharisees which were with him  
heard these words, and said unto him,  
ARE WE BLIND ALSO?**

**Jesus said unto them,**

**IF YE WERE BLIND, YE SHOULD HAVE NO SIN:  
BUT NOW YE SAY, WE SEE;  
THEREFORE YOUR SIN REMAINETH.”**

**(John 9:39-41)**

All Christians ought to REALLY TAKE NOTICE HERE, IT IS ADDRESSED TO THEM. It is addressed to **EVERYONE INVOLVED IN RIGHTEOUSNESS, IN A HOLY WALK VIA ANY METHOD WHATEVER THAT DOES NOT INVOLVE THE NARROW WAY OF DEATH TO OBTAIN LIFE.** It is addressed to all legalists everywhere. You claim you UNDERSTAND THE BIBLE. You claim YOU REPRESENT IT, UPHOLD IT, KNOW IT. You CLAIM YOU ARE BORN AGAIN, REGENERATED. YOU CLAIM YOU SEE THE SON. YOU CLAIM YOU KNOW WHO JESUS IS. YOU CLAIM A UNION WITH HIM. But your claims do not match that of the **WITNESS, THAT OF THE TESTIMONY.** Your claims to SEEING AND UNDERSTANDING are no different than the Sadducees and Pharisees. They claimed it also. Just because you put the cloak of Christ around your theology does NOT MAKE IT TRUE.

The “many” which is the VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS all claimed THEY COULD SEE THE SON. THEY ALL CLAIMED UNION. None of them had it, THEY WERE BLIND AS BATS, AND THEY HAD NO SONAR CAPACITY WITHIN THEM TO WARN THEM OF THE HELLFIRE THAT AWAITED THEM. Jesus did not come to save the RELIGIOUS, who by and large are ARROGANT, FULL OF PRIDE, HOLIER THAN THOU TYPES, of which, GOD DESTROYS. GOD SPOKE TO REBELLIOUS ISRAEL, AND THE “MANY” ARE PART OF REBELLIOUS ISRAEL:

**“I HAVE SPREAD OUT MY HANDS ALL THE DAY  
UNTO A REBELLIOUS PEOPLE,**

**WHICH WALKETH IN A WAY (THE BROAD WAY)  
THAT WAS NOT GOOD,  
AFTER THEIR OWN THOUGHTS (THEIR OWN THEOLOGY);**

**A PEOPLE THAT PROVOKETH ME  
TO ANGER CONTINUALLY TO MY FACE;  
THAT SACRIFICETH IN GARDENS (WORKS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS),  
AND BURNETH INCENSE UPON ALTARS OF BRICK...**

**WHICH SAY, STAND BY THYSELF,  
COME NOT NEAR TO ME;**

**FOR I AM HOLIER THAN THOU.**

***THESE ARE A SMOKE IN MY NOSE,  
A FIRE THAT BURNETH ALL THE DAY.”  
(Isaiah 65:2, 3, 5)***

This is what the “many” Christians do. They are holier than thou, and they will NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE. THEY ORDER YOU OUT OF THEIR ASSEMBLIES, OUT OF THEIR CHURCHES. They cannot ABIDE WITH THE TRUTH, THEY CANNOT ACCEPT IT, for it requires of them that THEY LOOK UPON THEMSELVES RATHER THAN OTHERS. It requires of them TO JUDGE THEMSELVES, and not others. It requires of them TO BE HUMBLD IN THE SIGHT OF TRUE LOVE, WHICH THEY CANNOT ENDURE. Instead, they hire unto themselves FALSE TEACHERS, HAVING ITCHING EARS. They will be sent away into eternal ruin.

The condemnation stands. EITHER DO AS THE BLIND MAN DID, AND BE OBEDIENT, AND GO TO THE POOL, TO THE LOWEST ROOM, AND WAIT FOR CHRIST TO COME, OR DIE IN YOUR SINS.

***“Seeing ye have  
PURIFIED YOUR SOULS  
IN OBEYING THE TRUTH THROUGH THE SPIRIT  
UNTO  
UNFEIGNED (AGAPE) LOVE OF THE BRETHREN,  
SEE THAT YE (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER  
WITH A PURE HEART FERVENTLY:  
  
BEING BORN AGAIN,  
NOT OF CORRUPTIBLE SEED, BUT OF INCORRUPTIBLE,  
BY THE WORD OF GOD,  
WHICH LIVETH AND ABIDETH FOR EVER.”  
(1 Peter 1:22-23)***

We find **PURITY OF SOULS IN UNFEIGNED AGAPE LOVE.** We find **OBEDIENCE.** We find **BEING BORN AGAIN.** We therefore have all the essential proofs that we need, do we not? If this is not enough evidence for you, the problem is not the evidence, it is your refusal to face the evidence presented. That was why the many went into eternal ruin; they would not face the evidence.

***“BELOVED, LET US (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER:  
FOR (AGAPE) LOVE IS OF GOD;  
AND EVERY ONE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH  
IS BORN OF GOD, AND KNOWETH GOD.”  
(1 John 4:7)***

We have come full circle. We have bound up the TESTIMONY, WE HAVE BOUND UP THE RECORD. There is no way this can be misconstrued. There has been no mistake in interpretation. The record is before you. It is clear and to the point. How saith thou?

***“FOR WHOSOEVER IS  
BORN OF GOD  
OVERCOMETH THE WORLD:  
AND THIS IS THE VICTORY THAT OVERCOMETH THE WORLD,  
EVEN OUR FAITH.”  
(1 John 5:4)***

The faith hucksters climb on this one for their fast train to hellfire. THE FAITH WITH WORKS, THE FAITH THAT DOES, THE FAITH THAT IS OBEDIENT, THE FAITH THAT WALKS THE WALK OF THE NARROW WAY, THAT SETS THE FACE AS FLINT, THIS IS THE FAITH OF VICTORY. If you will have eternal life, resolve NOW to set your face as flint, and PICK UP THY CROSS, AND FOLLOW JESUS. Walk the narrow way and taste and feel death. Experientially feel the aloneness, the separation, the destitution of the inner heart. The faith that saves is the faith that dares to do it, to trust God, to trust Christ, to DO IT.

***“Behold, what manner of (AGAPE) LOVE  
the Father hath bestowed upon us,  
THAT WE SHOULD BE CALLED THE SONS OF GOD...”***

***We know that we HAVE PASSED  
FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE,  
BECAUSE WE (AGAPE) LOVE THE BRETHREN.  
HE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH NOT HIS BROTHER  
ABIDETH IN DEATH.”  
(1 John 3:1, 14)***

So we are back where we began. The Bible is written by a God of AGAPE LOVE. Therefore no matter where you look in it, you will find that it always comes back to that point of view. God writes through His own eyes, and from His point of view. He has attempted to bridge the gap that separates us all. If we would but DO AS COMMANDED, AND SEARCH FOR THE REAL MEANING OF CHRIST WITH ALL OF OUR HEART, SOUL, MIND AND STRENGTH, we would AUTOMATICALLY WALK THE NARROW WAY. It is not anything we do; it is something God does for us.

Our part of the bargain is TO SEARCH FOR THE MEANINGS OF WHAT WE READ, STUDY, AND CONTEMPLATE. WHAT IS THE HIDDEN MEANING WHAT DOES IT ALL MEAN? Why am I here? What is the perfect will of God?

## TO KNOW GOD AND CHRIST, UNION

If we have come to the point of MEETING CHRIST, AND SEEING CHRIST, and now we know and understand, we should find many references to words like KNOW, KNOWING, KNOWETH, ETC. They would then have a special meaning, and one that we should check out for our final confirmation that we are correct. Remember that Jesus sent the vast majority of Christians away for ONLY ONE REASON; HE DID NOT KNOW THEM. We are now going to prove that this knowing Jesus was speaking of is **INDEED EXPERIENTIAL, PERSONAL, AND FULLY REVELATIONAL.**

The first place to begin in a search of this nature is to review the words that Jesus Himself used to DESCRIBE HOW HE KNEW THE FATHER. Jesus claimed that He had an EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF THE FATHER. Jesus claimed that He was in COMMUNION with the Father. Jesus claimed that HE AND THE FATHER WERE ONE, IN UNION. Jesus said that He was IN THE FATHER, and that THE FATHER WAS IN HIM. All of these phrases are IDENTICAL to what Jesus claims IS THE STATE OF THE TRUE BELIEVER WHEN UNION OCCURS: we have proved out the following:

- 1. We are to BE IN UNION with Christ.***
- 2. We are to COMMUNE with Christ.***
- 3. Christ is TO BE IN US.***
- 4. We are TO 'SEE' THE SON.***
- 5. Christ said HE WOULD REVEAL OR MANIFEST HIMSELF TO US.***
- 6. Christ said we would HEAR HIS VOICE (AT REGENERATION).***
- 7. We are to have an EXPERIENTIAL LIVING RELATIONSHIP WITH CHRIST.***

By checking the words that Christ used to describe how HE KNEW THE FATHER, which would have had to be EXPERIENTIAL, then we need only look for any of those words when Christ or the writers of the New Testament used them to DESCRIBE OUR RELATIONSHIP TO THE FATHER. If we can prove that the identical same words are used, and in the same context of thought, then we can also prove that **THE BELIEVER IS TO HAVE AN EXPERIENTIAL RELATIONSHIP TO CHRIST, AND TO HAVE AN EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF CHRIST.** To say otherwise would be to use a DOUBLE STANDARD, which the false prophets are good at doing. It is a modern day teaching that any REVELATION of the nature we have described IS SATANIC, OR IS DENIED ALTOGETHER.

It is essential we find out, because IF THE REVELATION, MANIFESTATION, SEEING, HEARING AND KNOWING ARE INDEED EXPERIENTIAL, AND NECESSARY, then anyone WITHOUT IT WOULD KNOW THEY WERE NOT SAVED. This would then explain why the MANY CHRISTIANS WERE IN SUCH A STATE OF SHOCK AT THE JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST. They **HAD NO IDEA THEY WERE NOT SAVED.** The reason this is true is because FAITH ITSELF, BELIEF ITSELF, WAS THE BASIS OF THEIR SALVATION. They had NO TANGIBLE EVIDENCE. Their evidence was that they HAD FAITH IN THE PROMISES OF THE SCRIPTURE, THEY APPROPRIATED THE SAME, AND BY THAT, CLAIMED THEY WERE SAVED. They KNEWEST NOT. They were under a DELUSION, A DECEPTION.

The only way that can happen IS VIA THE EMBRACING OF A FALSE THEOLOGY THAT TELLS YOU THAT YOU ARE SAVED WHEN YOU ARE NOT. In other words, you substitute false doctrine for true doctrine, you embrace the false by an ACT OF FAITH, and claim SALVATION BY THAT ACT OF FAITH.

An example would be if you came and worked for me. You worked for a day, and I agreed to pay you \$100.00. At the end of the day you came to me for your \$100. I said, “here, take this INVISIBLE FAITH ONE HUNDRED DOLLARS.” I then hand you NOTHING. You protest. “I want a REAL \$100 bill. One that I CAN HOLD IN MY HAND, EXPERIENCE, AND SEE. I want EVIDENCE. I WANT THE REAL THING; I want to KNOW that IT IS MINE. I want to FIND IT IN MY HAND, I want to HAVE A WITNESS OF PAYMENT. I want GENUINE MONEY, WITH A SEAL OF APPROVAL BY THE GOVERNMENT STAMPED ON IT.”

Somehow I manage to convince you that MY \$100 FAITH MONEY, WHICH YOU CANNOT SEE, BUT SIMPLY ACCEPT BY FAITH ALONE, IS REAL. You decide to run down to your local bank and put it in the bank. You hand the teller your \$100 FAITH BILL. She stares at you. “What are you, some sort of a NUT? DO YOU KNOWEST NOT THAT I CANNOT PLAY GAMES? Do you KNOWEST NOT THAT I NEED REAL MONEY? Handing me NOTHING, and claiming it is SOMETHING IT IS NOT, LANDS YOU IN PRISON.” You protest loud and long. The cops come, they take you away, and you end up in prison. YOUR FAITH WAS IN THE WRONG PLACE. YOU NEEDED TANGIBLE EVIDENCE, TANGIBLE PROOF.

You might claim you would never be that stupid, that dumb. “No one could ever talk me into that!” you exclaim. Perhaps the FALSE PROPHETS HAVE ALREADY DONE SO. We are not speaking of a mere \$100.00 bill. We are speaking of YOUR SOUL’S ETERNAL DESTINY. We are speaking of something BEYOND ALL MEASURE OF COST. If you would not accept even a \$1.00 FAITH BILL, or a 25 cent piece BY FAITH, why would you ACCEPT AS EVIDENCE OF YOUR SALVATION, NOTHING WHATEVER EXCEPT ‘FAITH’? Would you not want to know FOR A FACT A WITNESS, A SEAL OF GENUINENESS? Would you NOT WANT TO KNOW when you had entered into COMMUNION OR UNION with Christ, the KING OF KINGS, AND THE LORD OF LORDS? Jesus had this comment about how He knew the Father:

***“BUT I KNOW HIM: FOR I AM FROM HIM,  
AND HE HATH SENT ME.”  
(John 7:29)***

The word “know” here is ‘eido’, which means TO SEE, TO BEWARE OF, TO KNOW, TO PERCEIVE, TO BEHOLD, TO LOOK UPON, TO BE SURE. Jesus is blunt: I KNOW the Father, for I am FROM HIM.

***“Yet ye have not known him; BUT I KNOW HIM:  
and if I should say, I KNOW HIM NOT,  
I shall be a liar like unto you:***

***BUT I KNOW HIM,  
AND KEEP HIS SAYING.”***

(John 8:55)

In each case that Jesus claims to KNOW the Father, He uses the word 'eido'. Jesus is claiming to have **SEEN THE FATHER, KNOWS THE FATHER, AND HAS BEHELD THE FATHER**. In short, He is **EXPERIENTIALLY AWARE OF THE FATHER, AND KNOWS PRECISELY AND EXACTLY WHO HE IS**. There is another word that Jesus used to describe knowing the Father, which is also of an experiential nature that gives one an ABSOLUTE KNOWING. 'Eido' is often translated as SEE. The other word is more of an EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING, OF A DEEP UNDERSTANDING, OF AN ABSOLUTE KNOWING; it is 'ginosko'. 'Ginosko' means **TO BE AWARE OF, TO PERCEIVE, TO BE SURE OF, TO UNDERSTAND FULLY, TO KNOW ABSOLUTELY, OR EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING**.

*“As the Father **KNOWETH ME**,  
even so **KNOW I** the Father:  
and I lay down my life for the sheep.”  
(John 10:15)*

Where Jesus says that He KNOWS the Father, He uses the word “ginosko”. He has an absolute experiential knowledge of WHO the Father is.

*“Jesus **KNOWING** that the Father had given all things into his hands,  
and that **HE WAS COME FROM GOD, and WENT TO GOD...**”  
(John 13:3)*

The word for KNOWING is 'eido'. Jesus **KNEW TOTALLY** from where He came, to where He was going, and WHAT AUTHORITY HE HAD OVER MANKIND. He knew it for He had **SEEN IT, EXPERIENCED IT, IT WAS AN ABSOLUTE KNOWLEDGE OF**.

*“All things are delivered unto me of my Father:  
AND NO MAN **KNOWETH THE SON**,  
BUT THE FATHER;  
NEITHER KNOWETH ANY MAN THE FATHER,  
SAVE THE SON,  
AND HE TO WHOMSOEVER THE SON  
**WILL REVEAL HIM.**”  
(Matthew 11:27)*

The word “knoweth is 'epiginosko', which means **TO RECOGNIZE, TO BECOME FULLY ACQUAINTED WITH, TO ACKNOWLEDGE, TO KNOW UPON**. It is an important verse of



Scripture in our search for the truth. Read carefully what Jesus is saying here. He is saying that **HE IS FULLY ACQUAINTED WITH THE FATHER**. THAT HE RECOGNIZES WHO THE FATHER IS. In other words, HE HAS A FULL KNOWLEDGE OF, IS FULLY ACQUAINTED WITH, AND HAS AN EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF THE FATHER. This is the relationship with Christ to the Father. That is the foundation of their relationship.

He says that NO MAN KNOWETH. No man is able to RECOGNIZE THE FATHER OR THE SON. We know this is true because we know that agape love was LOST at the fall. It is not part of man's nature; it is not IN HIM WHATSOEVER. Therefore it is **HIDDEN, A MYSTERY, OR A SECRET**. That is why it has to be **REVEALED**. If this mystery is REVEALED, then could we say that a person WOULD THEN KNOW, RECOGNIZE, SEE OR FULLY UNDERSTAND WHO CHRIST AND GOD ARE? How else could UNION occur? How else could one enter in to the New Covenant? If Christ is standing at the door or entrance of the NEW COVENANT, and we come in THROUGH THE DOOR, then obviously we have to come in THROUGH CHRIST. If that be so, then we would have to ENTER INTO UNION WITH CHRIST, for that is HIS DEMAND.

No union, no entrance. The cries and the protests of the vast majority of Christians who claimed they knew Him did not avail themselves of entrance. THEY WERE SHUT OUT. THE DOOR TO HEAVEN WAS CLOSED TO THEM. They were disobedient, they came into the SHEEPFOLD "SOME OTHER WAY". That some other way is CONVERSION. YOU DO NOT MEET CHRIST AT CONVERSION. You do not enter into union with Christ at conversion. You only know a VERY LITTLE ABOUT CHRIST at CONVERSION. If you be obedient AFTER CONVERSION, and if you DO AS COMMANDED, and if you DO NOT TURN BACK, and if you KEEP THE COURSE, CONTINUE, ABIDE, REMAIN, FIGHT, LABOR AND STRIVE, YOU WILL MEET THE SON. If you meet the Son, then you will have SEEN HIM.

***"...I AM THE WAY, THE TRUTH, AND THE LIFE  
NO MAN COMETH UNTO THE FATHER, BUT BY ME."  
(John 14:6)***

The world hates that message. The Islamic cannot stand it, the New Age cannot stand it, and the many Christians could not endure it either. They came in SOME OTHER WAY, THE WAY OF NON-REVELATION, NON-MANIFESTATION, NON-KNOWING.

The word "reveal" means, as you know, **TO TAKE OFF THE COVER, TO OPEN UP, TO REVEAL THAT WHICH WAS HIDDEN FROM VIEW**. If you get a 'peek' at the Father and the Son, then you would 'epiginosko' them. That is the whole object of the REVEALING. If I tell you I have a secret, and I want you to know it, and then I reveal it to you, YOU WOULD THEN 'epiginosko' the secret! It is no longer a secret to you. It is no longer a mystery to you.

***"He that hath an ear, LET HIM HEAR what the Spirit  
SAITH UNTO THE CHURCHES;  
TO HIM THAT OVERCOMETH  
WILL I GIVE TO EAT OF THE HIDDEN MANNA (AGAPE LOVE),  
  
AND WILL GIVE HIM A WHITE STONE,  
AND IN THE STONE A NEW NAME WRITTEN,***

**WHICH NO MAN KNOWETH SAVING HE THAT RECEIVETH IT.”  
(Revelation 2:17)**

This is a very important confirming verse to prove the revelation of the mystery. It is addressed to THE **OVERCOMER ONLY**. It concerns itself with AGAPE LOVE, of which manna is but a code word. What is important here is THAT THE WHITE STONE HAS A NEW NAME IN IT, WHICH NO ONE KNOWS EXCEPT HIM THAT RECEIVES IT. In other words, **IT IS A MYSTERY, A SECRET, A HIDDEN THING TO EVERYONE ELSE**, for Christ is adamant: NO OTHER PERSON CAN KNOW IT. The word “no” is ‘oudies’, which is from ‘oudemia’, which means **NOT EVEN ONE, NONE, NO BODY, NAUGHT, NO ONE AT ALL**. They cannot figure it out; they cannot KNOW IT. The only one that **KNOWS IT, IS THE ONE TO WHOM IT HAS BEEN GIVEN**. The word “knoweth” here is ‘ginosko’, the very words that Christ used to explain HIS ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF THE FATHER.

The holder of the white stone has a NEW NAME. The word “new” is ‘kainos’, which means **FRESH, FRESHNESS, NEW**. The word name is ‘onoma’, which means **AUTHORITY, CHARACTER, TITLE**. They have a NEW CHARACTER, A NEW AUTHORITY, A NEW TITLE. It is all based upon BEING REGENERATED IN AGAPE LOVE. They have **GAZED UPON THE ESSENCE OF THE SON, THEY HAVE SEEN THE SON. They KNOW EXPERIENTIALLY WHO THE SON IS**. They are then a SON OF GOD, AND THEY KNOW IT ABSOLUTELY.

The white stone is the stone of ACQUITTAL. It is not a GUILTY VERDICT. The word “receiveth” is ‘lambano’, which means **TO GET A HOLD ON, TO TAKE, TO TAKE HOLD OF**. It is a translation, from death unto life in Christ. It is a RESURRECTION to LIFE IN AGAPE LOVE, THE LOVE OF Christ. It comes out of death. The many refused to die. They offered up everything but their own lives. God did not want what they offered; He wanted their own souls on His altar. They refused, and therefore they must ABIDE FOREVER ALONE.

The OVERCOMER then KNOWS that he/she has a NEW NAME. They KNOW FOR AN ABSOLUTE fact that they are a SON OF GOD. Their name is WRITTEN ON THE STONE. The word “written” is ‘grapho’, which means **TO ENGRAVE, TO GRAVE, TO WRITE, TO DESCRIBE**. We could also say **SEALED BY A SIGNET**. They can **KNOW IT BY AN ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE, FOR CHRIST SAYS SO**. If they then CAN KNOW IT FOR SURE, what happened to the “many”? They were told to take it by faith alone, and that to just ACCEPT IT AS A MATTER OF TRUTH, and simply by BELIEVING IT WAS TRUE, IT WAS! That by taking it as an “act of faith” it suddenly became true. PRESTO! WHAMMO! INSTANT CHRISTIAN, INSTANT REGENERATION, INSTANT UNION. They denied there was AN EVIDENCE, AN ABSOLUTE KNOWING.

**“...IF YE CONTINUE IN MY WORD, THEN ARE YE  
MY DISCIPLES INDEED;**

**AND YE SHALL KNOW THE TRUTH,  
AND THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE.”**

**(John 8:31-32)**

Jesus tells us we can KNOW the truth. The word “know” here is ‘ginosko’, the very word He uses to describe Him knowing the Father. It is an absolute knowledge, an **EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING**, and it is NOT based upon simply BELIEVING OR HAVING FAITH. It is the opposite of faith, which is for things not seen, not known, not experienced. This is where you COME TO **THE END OF YOUR FAITH**, WHEN YOU KNOW YOU HAVE PASSED **FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE**, WHEN YOU KNOW YOU HAVE SALVATION.

*“Now the **END**  
of the commandment IS (**AGAPE LOVE**) **CHARITY**  
**OUT OF A PURE HEART,**  
**AND OF A GOOD CONSCIENCE,**  
**AND OF FAITH UNFEIGNED...”**  
(1 Timothy 1:5)*

The **END** of the commandment is this, the **CONCLUSION** of the matter is this, the **CONSUMMATION** of the matter is this, **AGAPE LOVE OUT OF A PURIFIED HEART**. The only way God has to purify your heart is **THE NARROW WAY**. It is the way of PURIFICATION. It is the way to a NEW CREATION. It is the way to FIND CHRIST. Notice it says **A FAITH UNFEIGNED**. It is an interesting choice of words, for it means PRIOR TO THAT TIME, PRIOR TO **THE FINDING OF AGAPE LOVE**, WE DID NOT HAVE A **REAL FAITH**. Our faith was being **TESTED TO SEE IF IT WAS REAL**. It was being tried in the fire to SEE IF IT WAS GENUINE FAITH OR NOT. Your faith **DOES NOT HAVE THE SEAL OF GENUINE FAITH UNTIL AFTER AGAPE LOVE IS BESTOWED**.

**This is positive evidence there is saving faith**. There was ample evidence prior to this, but this is the CONSUMMATION of the evidence. The “many” did not have a saving faith; they had a “feigned faith”, a faith that was not scripturally **GENUINE**. Because it was not, God could not put His stamp of approval upon it.

*“RECEIVING  
**THE END**  
**OF YOUR FAITH,**  
**EVEN THE SALVATION OF YOUR SOULS.”**  
(1 Peter 1:9)*

This is a double reference verse, and it applies fully to the believer at the coming of Christ to bestow agape love. When agape love is bestowed, we pass from **death unto life**, and we have then **RECEIVED THE SALVATION OF OUR SOULS**. The salvation will not be completed until the resurrection/rapture, but the SALVATION ITSELF comes when Christ comes and takes up residence within us, for we are at the time **SEALED, AND CERTIFIED TRUE**. Our faith has been tried, and found GENUINE. It is a PROVEN FAITH, A FAITH UNFEIGNED.

There is to be an END to your faith. There is to come a time of **ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING, WHICH THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS DENIED AND BRANDED AS**

**SATANIC**. You then go from FAITH TO KNOWING, TO A KNOWING COUPLED WITH FAITH. You know absolutely, and now your faith is MULTIPLIED A HUNDRED TIMES INSTANTLY, YOUR FAITH WAS PROVED CORRECT. YOUR FAITH WAS PROVED RIGHT. All people of all religions have FAITH. The entire religious systems of the world are based upon faith, except one: **TRUE CHRISTIANITY**. It starts with faith, and if you will walk the narrow way **BY BIBLICAL FAITH**, you WILL KNOW IN AN ABSOLUTE AND EXPERIENTIAL WAY THAT CHRIST IS ALIVE. YOU WILL MEET HIM FACE TO FACE:

**“FOR CHRIST  
IS THE END  
OF THE LAW FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS  
TO EVERY ONE THAT BELIEVETH.”**  
(Romans 10:4)

Indeed, the real believer can SHOUT THAT CHRIST IS THE END OF THE LAW, FOR WHEN HE MEETS CHRIST, **HIS AGAPE LOVE IS GIVEN TO HIM**, AND THE LIVING CHRIST COMES INTO HIM, **AND THE END OF THE LAW IS MADE MANIFEST**. How do you KNOW that Christ be resurrected? By faith? By belief? We START WITH FAITH, WE START WITH BELIEF, **WE END UP KNOWING**. I know personally that Christ is alive. I know for a fact He is resurrected. I know it because He came to me and spoke to me and showed me the mystery. **I KNOW IT FOR AN ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL FACT**.

It is like the people that built the atomic bomb. They journeyed **BY FAITH AND BY BELIEF**. The starting point of their FAITH/BELIEF WAS CONVERSION. They then EXPLORE THE WORD and COME TO AN END OF THEIR FAITH. They crossed the gulf between faith and knowing, between belief and knowing **BY EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE**. They bridged the gap, **NOT BY ANY LEAP OF FAITH ON THEIR PART**, NOT BY ANY BELIEF ON THEIR PART, **BUT BY A FULLY EXPERIENTIAL DEMONSTRATION OF THE AWESOME POWER OF NATURE RELEASED**. Their faith had NOTHING TO DO WITH **THE DEMONSTRATION ITSELF**. The demonstration of the power was a **REALITY, A LITERAL EXPERIENTIAL REALITY**. They saw the FLASH, they heard the NOISE, they felt the SHOCK WAVES. They ‘ginosko’ KNEW. They ‘eido’ KNEW! We are to know Christ in the identical manner.

The false teachers ARE DENYING THIS AND RAILING AGAINST IT. They are themselves LOST, AND KNOW NOT CHRIST, **BUT ARE IMPOSTORS, LIARS, BASTARD SONS**, and by this denial of ABSOLUTE KNOWLEDGE, by submitting in its place SIMPLE FAITH, SIMPLE BELIEF **AS THE KNOWING ITSELF**, THEY SWEEP MILLIONS OF SOULS INTO ETERNAL RUIN WITH THEM. Scripture says their DAMNATION SLUMBERETH NOT, THE FIRES OF HELL WILL NOT WAIT IN VAIN FOR THEM. It matters not if they are deceived, if they are under a delusion. THEY ARE POSING AS EXPERTS IN THE WORD, AND THEY STAND IN FRONT OF MILLIONS WITH THEIR LONG ROBES OF PHONY RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND BY THEIR AUTHORITY, THEY HOLD THE ADVANTAGE OVER THE MINDS OF MEN AND WOMEN WHO ARE SINCERELY LOOKING, AND THEY ARE DECEIVED BY THEM.

Did Christ say to any of them: “Thanks for a job well done! I really appreciate all the work you did for me on earth! Thank you so much for spreading the Gospel to all the world! Appreciate it much, fellows!” He sweeps them into the eternal fires of hell with an ANGRY VOICE; “GET YOU AWAY FROM ME,

YOU WORKERS OF INIQUITY.” It does not sound very friendly to me. It does not sound very thankful to me. It sounds like He can barely WAIT TO PUNISH THEM FOREVER FOR WHAT THEY DID. It is a terrible thing to fall into the hands of the LIVING GOD.

**“I AM**  
**THE GOOD SHEPHERD,**  
**AND KNOW MY SHEEP,**  
**AND**  
**AM KNOWN OF MINE.”**  
**(John 10:14)**

The words KNOW and KNOWN here are ‘ginosko’, **ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF**. Christ knows them, and they KNOW Christ. They have SEEN THE SON, EXPERIENCED THE SON, AND KNOW THE SECRET MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE because that which was HIDDEN was revealed, and that which was a MYSTERY was made MANIFEST. That which was closed was OPENED. That which they had NO EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF, AND DID NOT KNOW, **THEY NOW KNOW.**

**“And THIS IS LIFE ETERNAL,**  
**THAT THEY MIGHT KNOW THEE THE ONLY TRUE GOD,**  
**AND JESUS CHRIST,**  
**WHOM THOU HAST SENT.”**  
**(John 17:3)**

This was included in the prayer of Christ to His Father. ETERNAL LIFE IS KNOWING THE FATHER AND THE SON. Now READ IT AGAIN:

## ***LIFE IS KNOWING GOD & CHRIST***

They are ONE, IN UNION, IN UNITY. The word “know” here is ‘ginosko’, an **ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING.** Do you realize the impact of what this is saying? It is saying that the “LIFE” at the end of the narrow way is **EXPERIENTIALLY KNOWING GOD AND CHRIST.** If eternal life is an **EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING,** then **THE ABSENCE OF KNOWING WOULD BE DEATH.** It was the prayer of Christ that those who were called would **GO ON, ENTER THE STRAIT GATE, AND WALK THE NARROW WAY UNTO LIFE ETERNAL, WHICH IS KNOWING THEM.** In order to know someone, you have to meet them, see them, experience them. Remember that this is the same word Jesus used to describe His own relationship to the Father.

**“We are OF GOD:**

**HE THAT KNOWETH GOD**  
**HEARETH US;**  
**HE THAT IS NOT OF GOD HEARETH NOT US.**  
**HEREBY KNOW WE THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH,**  
**AND THE SPIRIT OF ERROR.”**  
**(1 John 4:6)**

This is a loaded Scripture. The word “knoweth” is ‘ginosko’. John is saying something that is very true indeed. Those that have agape love within have walked the way to soul death. They have specific elements of the salvation process that they share with one another. They are **LIKE SPIRITS, LIKE MINDED, IN UNION AND IN UNITY**. They hear each other, they KNOW because they likewise have the WHITE STONE OF ACQUITTAL, AND HAVE A NEW NAME. They have a **FELLOWSHIP IN THE MYSTERY**. There is nothing like it.

A limited example is a husband and wife who have lived together for many years. They really KNOW each other. There are certain glances, smiles, mannerisms and looks that each gives the other that bridge all communication. THEY KNOW. THEY ARE KINDRED SPIRITS. Thus it is with those who are truly born again, and who truly know Jesus.

Many Christians claim that they are saved and going to heaven. They are positive of it. I have never walked into a church that did not claim it preached the truth of the Bible. I have met very few Christians who were not convinced they were going to heaven. Yet Jesus says the opposite. There are then two opinions: THE BELIEVER AND CHRIST. They are not in accord one to the other. The “many” claim that their **SALVATION EXPERIENCE WAS NOT LIKE THIS AT ALL**. They have no testimony whatever of any strait gate or narrow way. **They claim that God deals with everyone differently, and therefore theirs was different. Christ would not agree.**

God is not a respecter of persons. What He requires of one, He requires of another. We have examined a multitude of Scripture which states EVERY, EACH ONE, ALL and WITHOUT EXCEPTION is to undergo THE STATED WALK. The walk of the narrow way may be as different as there are different believers, but **THE ESSENTIAL INGREDIENTS, THE GOAL, THE REVELATION, THE BESTOWMENT ARE ALL IDENTICAL**. They have to be, for the **ISSUE BETWEEN EVERY FALLEN SOUL AND GOD IS THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE**. It has to be, **MUST BE** settled. Anything short of that is not salvation. It could not be, for the testimony is broad, the proofs wide, and TESTIMONY SURE. Do you think Jesus would leave something like this just open to speculation?

***“Beloved, LET US (AGAPE) LOVE ONE ANOTHER:***  
***FOR (AGAPE) LOVE IS OF GOD;***  
***AND EVERY ONE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH***  
  
***IS BORN OF GOD,***  
***AND KNOWETH GOD.”***  
**(1 John 4:7)**

We have come again to our starting point. We tie together KNOW, BORN AGAIN, AND AGAPE LOVE. They are all the ESSENTIAL INGREDIENTS OF SALVATION. The word “knoweth” here is ‘ginosko’. Therefore EVERYONE THAT HAS EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF AGAPE LOVE IS BORN OF GOD. To be sure that John is NOT MISUNDERSTOOD, he says:

**“HE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH NOT  
KNOWETH NOT GOD;  
FOR GOD IS (AGAPE) LOVE.”  
(1 John 4:8)**

Do you see? It is a PROOF IMPERATIVE, AN IMPERATIVE CONDITION, A MUST. If a soul has not been bestowed agape love, which only comes at the end of the narrow way, then that person DOES NOT EXPERIENTIALLY KNOW GOD AT ALL, FOR NO SOUL CAN AGAPE LOVE UNLESS GOD BESTOWS IT UPON THEM. You see, there is a vast difference between jamming facts in your head about something and HAVING IT PLACED WITHIN YOU VIA EXPERIENTIAL ENCOUNTER AND KNOWING. The “many” had a great head knowledge of Jesus Christ, many were experts in the Word, but they had no EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF CHRIST, HE NEVER MET THEM, HE NEVER KNEW THEM, NOR THEY HE.

**“And WE KNOW  
that the SON OF GOD  
IS COME,  
AND HATH GIVEN US  
AN UNDERSTANDING,  
THAT WE MAY  
KNOW HIM THAT IS TRUE,  
AND WE ARE IN HIM THAT IS TRUE,  
EVEN IN HIS SON JESUS CHRIST.  
THIS IS THE TRUE GOD,  
AND ETERNAL LIFE.”  
(1 John 5:20)**

Echoes of the prayer of Christ. This **IS THE RECORD, THIS IS THE TESTIMONY.** It is very interesting the choice of words used by the Holy Spirit through John. The first “word” KNOW is ‘eido’, which means to **BEHOLD, TO SEE, TO BE AWARE OF, TO PERCEIVE.** John says that WE KNOW THE SON HAS COME. This is not a first advent verse of Scripture, this is THE ARRIVAL OF CHRIST TO THE BELIEVER, SO THAT CHRIST CAN BESTOW THE GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE UPON HIM. The word “come” is ‘heko’, which means **TO ARRIVE OR PRESENCE.** The two words combined form a complete confirmation of everything we have studied: WE WILL SEE THE SON. WE WILL BEHOLD HIM. WE WILL LOOK INTO THE AWESOME POWER OF AGAPE LOVE.

As stated before, the issue between God and man is the agape love issue. Christ is the MEDIATOR. He is the GO BETWEEN. Therefore Christ is the one **WHO COMES TO MEDIATE THE NEW COVENANT TO THE BELIEVER.** To enter an agreement, or any legally binding contract, both parties have to **KNOW THE CONTENTS,** otherwise FRAUD IS INVOLVED. How can two be agreed unless they both KNOW WHAT THE OTHER IS SPEAKING ABOUT? Therefore CHRIST WILL ARRIVE, HE WILL COME. When He does, you will be **IN HIS PRESENCE:** while in His presence you will be shown AGAPE LOVE. **IT WILL BE REVEALED TO YOU. BECAUSE CHRIST IS AGAPE LOVE, THE REVELATION OF IT IS THE REVELATION OF CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER.** Notice what it says: **WHEN CHRIST COMES HE**

## **“HATH GIVEN US AN UNDERSTANDING.”**

The word “given” here is ‘didomi’, which means **TO BESTOW, TO BRING FORTH, TO DELIVER UP.** **Christ will deliver up THE PROMISE.** He will do so because HIS WORD SAYS SO, AND HE IS GOOD FOR HIS WORD. This is the **FINDING.** This is the **OPENING.** This is the **UNVEILING.** This is the **RECEIVING.** This is the **KNOWING.** This is the **UNDERSTANDING.** This is the **MYSTERY REVEALED.** This is the **SECRET TOLD.** This is the **HIDDEN THING MANIFESTED.**

The word “understanding” is important. It is ‘dianoia’. It proves that the arrival of Christ is fully experiential, and is known by the CONSCIOUS MIND. I have said that Christ deals with the INNER HEART. The believer begins the search for Christ with his OUTER HEART, SOUL AND MIND. When that part of man IS CONVERTED IN TRUTH, **THAT PART OF MAN WILL BE OBEDIENT AND SEARCH FOR GOD WITH ALL THEIR HEART, SOUL AND MIND.** This leads to the REGENERATION OF THE INNER HEART. When Christ arrives with the revelation of agape love, BOTH INNER AND OUTER HEART ARE UNITED IN THE REVELATION. BOTH FULLY UNDERSTAND, BOTH ‘SEE’, BOTH ‘KNOW’.

The word ‘dianoia’ means **THE INTELLECT, THE MIND, THOUGHT AND FEELING.** In short the OUTER MAN WILL KNOW. It affects BOTH PARTS OF MAN, BOTH HEARTS OF MAN, THEY BECOME UNITED. What is the understanding about? What is the subject?'

**‘THAT WE MAY KNOW HIM WHO IS TRUE.’** This “know” is ‘ginosko’, which means **ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE.** Obviously the INNER HEART would have to know Christ was there, but what about the OUTER MIND, THE CONSCIOUS MIND? It too **KNOWS.** Who then is Christ?

## **AGAPE LOVE PERSONIFIED!**

# **THE CREATOR GOD!**

John then is saying we are to **KNOW AGAPE LOVE.** We are to then know THAT WE ARE IN HIM. The knowledge of agape love is supposed to bring with it the knowledge that **WE ARE IN HIM. HE IS IN US. WE HAVE UNION, WE HAVE UNITY.** John then adds:



# THIS IS THE TRUE GOD, AND ETERNAL LIFE

(Compare John 17:3).

“WE  
**KNOW**

*THAT WE HAVE PASSED  
FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE,*

BECAUSE

*WE (AGAPE) LOVE THE BRETHREN.*  
*HE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH NOT HIS BROTHER  
ABIDETH IN DEATH.”*  
(1 John 3:14)

The “know” here is ‘eido’ which is a **SEEING, KNOWING**. It is something we behold, experience, know. It is a proof; an evidence. It is the \$100 bill in our example, the explosion of the nuclear bomb, it is our falling into the arms of our loved ones, it is **THE END OF OUR FAITH, THE BEGINNING OF OUR KNOWING. IT IS CHRIST, WE HAVE FOUND HIM.** There is nothing like it, there is nothing that you would not give up to obtain it. Believe me, I KNOW IT FOR A FACT. John is again very blunt: **IF YOU AGAPE LOVE NOT, YOU ARE NOT OF GOD, YOU REMAIN IN SPIRITUAL DEATH.**

Now we must go back to what Christ said to the many, and it will all fall together, and we will have positive proof that this is all correct:

*“And then will I profess unto them,  
**I NEVER KNEW YOU:***

*DEPART FROM ME,  
YE THAT WORK INIQUITY.”*  
(Matthew 7:23)

The word for “knew” here is ‘ginosko’! Do you see? They NEVER, NEVER HAD COME INTO UNION WITH CHRIST, THEY WERE NEVER BORN AGAIN. They had NO EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF CHRIST, AND HE HAD NO EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE OF THEM. Salvation is based upon EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE. Salvation is based upon KNOWING CHRIST, AND CHRIST KNOWING YOU. It is not based upon FACTS. It does not come as an ‘ACT OF FAITH’. It is not appropriated by “SIMPLY BELIEVING”, which is nothing more than positive thinking dressed up in Christian terminology. The faith hucksters, the false prophets, who make millions of dollars selling a false Christ and a false faith, KNOW NOT THE FATE THAT AWAITS THEM. IT IS A TRUTH THAT THEIR DAMNATION DOES NOT SLEEP. IT IS A TRUTH THAT THE ETERNAL FIRES OF HELL WILL NOT WAIT IN VAIN FOR THEM.

*“But if ANY MAN  
(AGAPE) LOVE GOD,  
THE SAME  
IS KNOWN OF HIM.”  
(1 Corinthians 8:3)*

*“But now, AFTER THAT YE HAVE  
KNOWN GOD,  
OR RATHER  
ARE KNOWN OF GOD...”  
(Galatians 4:9)*

*“HAVING  
MADE KNOWN  
UNTO US THE MYSTERY  
OF HIS WILL  
(AGAPE LOVE ONE ANOTHER),  
ACCORDING TO HIS GOOD PLEASURE  
WHICH HE HATH PURPOSED IN HIMSELF.”  
(Ephesians 1:9)*

*“How that **BY REVELATION**  
HE MADE KNOWN UNTO ME  
THE MYSTERY...”  
(Ephesians 3:3)*

*“KNOWING, BRETHREN BELOVED,  
YOUR ELECTION OF GOD.”  
(1 Thessalonians 1:4)*

All of these verses use the identical word ‘ginosko’ that Christ used in His relationship to God the Father. How dare the false teachers of today **CHEAT US OUT OF TRUE FELLOWSHIP WITH GOD THE FATHER, DENY US CHRIST, DENY US HEAVEN, DENY US EVERYTHING THAT CHRIST CAME TO GIVE US.** HOW DARE THEY STAND IN THEIR POMPOUS AND UNHOLY ROBES AND CLAIM TO BE OF GOD. **IMPOSTORS! LIARS! CHEATERS! BASTARDS SONS.** Depart from them; **FLEE FROM THEM WITH ALL OF YOUR STRENGTH.**

## FELLOWSHIP AND COMMUNION

If we come to the point of SEEING CHRIST, AND KNOWING WHO HE IS, AND EXPERIENCING HIM, AND HIM GIVING US AN UNDERSTANDING OF WHAT THE MYSTERY IS, we would then be able to say that we have **FELLOWSHIP**, or **COMMUNION**. This would confirm our revelation and union. We would have an abiding proof, an abiding LIFE, and abiding agape love within, that would alter us, change us.

*“God is faithful,  
BY WHOM YE WERE CALLED  
**UNTO THE FELLOWSHIP**  
OF  
HIS SON JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD.”  
(1 Corinthians 1:9)*

The word “fellowship” is ‘koinonia’ which means **INTERCOURSE, COMMUNION**. Did not Jesus say He would come and “sup” with the believer? The word “sup” means to **dine**, and it is a reference to the evening meal, a time when families get together and **COMMUNE WITH EACH OTHER**. How do you commune without **SPEAKING, ONE TO ANOTHER?** How do you speak if you do not use your voice, or **HEAR AND UNDERSTAND EACH OTHER?** And who are we called to **FELLOWSHIP WITH?** Jesus Christ. Again we find a proof that it is NOT the Holy Spirit, but **JESUS CHRIST WHO REDEEMED US, AND WHO WE MUST HAVE UNION WITH.**

*“And to MAKE ALL MEN SEE  
**WHAT IS THE FELLOWSHIP OF THE MYSTERY,**  
**WHICH FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE WORLD HATH**  
**BEEN HID IN GOD,**  
**WHO CREATED ALL THINGS BY JESUS CHRIST.”**  
(Ephesians 3:9)*

There is to be a FELLOWSHIP IN THE MYSTERY, A COMMUNION, AND INTERCOURSE BETWEEN REAL BELIEVERS AND BETWEEN THE BELIEVER AND CHRIST AND GOD. THERE IS TO BE A PERSONAL RELATIONSHIP.

*“That which we have seen and heard  
declare we unto you,  
that YE ALSO MAY HAVE FELLOWSHIP WITH US:*

*AND TRULY OUR FELLOWSHIP IS  
WITH THE FATHER, AND WITH HIS  
SON JESUS CHRIST.”*

*(1 John 1:3)*

Again we have positive proof that the FELLOWSHIP IS WITH CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER. The Holy Spirit is not mentioned. The Holy Spirit is the MEANS by which we have OUR FELLOWSHIP. The Holy Spirit works as a COMMUNICATOR, INTERCESSOR, CONNECTING US TO CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER. The fellowship is SUPPOSED TO BE WITH CHRIST AND GOD THE FATHER, FOR THEY ARE ONE. To stop at the baptism of the Holy Spirit is to stop short of salvation, the very thing Paul warned the Corinthians about.

*“If we say that  
WE HAVE FELLOWSHIP WITH HIM,  
AND WALK IN DARKNESS, WE LIE,  
AND DO NOT THE TRUTH.”*

*(1 John 1:6)*

Darkness is another word for saying SPIRITUAL DEATH. If we walk in spiritual death, that is, WE HAVE NOT THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE LIFE, then we have NO FELLOWSHIP WITH HIM. We may CLAIM WE DO; WE MAY SAY WE DO, BUT WE ARE LIARS, AND THE TRUTH IS NOT IN US. WHO IS THE TRUTH? Is not Jesus Christ THE TRUTH? Is not AGAPE LOVE the ESSENCE OF CHRIST? Did not the “many” SAY they had fellowship with Christ, but THEY DID NOT. They were LIARS, IMPOSTORS, BASTARD SONS, DECEIVERS. Again we find the DIVISION LINE BETWEEN LIFE AND DEATH, LIGHT AND DARKNESS.

*“But if we WALK IN THE LIGHT,  
AS HE IS IN THE LIGHT,  
WE HAVE FELLOWSHIP ONE WITH ANOTHER,  
AND THE BLOOD OF JESUS CHRIST  
HIS SON CLEANSETH US FROM  
ALL SIN.”*

Jesus is THE LIGHT. Jesus walks IN THE LIGHT. Light is a code word for AGAPE LOVE. If we walk in the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE, as CHRIST WAS IN AGAPE LOVE, then we have fellowship, and **ONLY THEN DOES THE BLOOD OF CHRIST CLEANSE US FROM ALL SIN.** This is important to know, for the “many” claimed a forgiveness of sin based upon 1 John 1:9, and the “many” claimed they had forgiveness of sins. But they had

## **NO SUCH FORGIVENESS.**

THEY WERE REJECTED, FOR THEY NEVER SETTLED THE **REAL SIN ISSUE**; THE LACK OF AGAPE LOVE IN THEIR HEART OF HEARTS. They were NEVER IN THE LIGHT, **THEY NEVER HAD AGAPE LOVE BESTOWED UPON THEM.** They refused the narrow way, and they died **OUTSIDE OF THE BLOOD OF JESUS.**

The word “light” is ‘phos’, which means **TO SHINE, OR TO MAKE MANIFEST.** If you are in darkness, would it seem that you could SEE a light? If you walk down a road at night, can you SEE the headlights of a car? Well, this is NO DIFFERENT. We walk in **SPIRITUAL DARKNESS, AND WE CONTINUE THEREIN UNTIL WE SEE THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE.** When a car is spotted, ARE YOU EXPERIENTIALLY AWARE OF IT? Of course! The same with AGAPE LOVE, THE LIGHT OF CHRIST, THE LIGHT OF GOD. We are to have UNION WITH THE LIGHT, UNION WITH CHRIST.

*“In whom the god of this world hath  
**BLINDED THE MINDS**  
OF THEM WHICH BELIEVE NOT,  
  
LEST THE LIGHT (AGAPE LOVE)  
OF THE GLORIOUS GOSPEL OF CHRIST,  
  
WHO IS THE IMAGE OF GOD,  
**SHOULD SHINE UNTO THEM.**”  
(2 Corinthians 4:4)*

If the mind is blinded, it walks in darkness. If we walk in darkness, THEN WE MUST FIND THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE, WHO IS CHRIST, WHO IS THE IMAGE OF GOD. THE LIGHT IS TO **‘SHINE’** UNTO US. The word for “shine” is ‘lampo’, which means **TO BEAM, TO RADIATE, TO GIVE LIGHT.** Obviously then WE ARE TO SEE IT, KNOW IT, UNDERSTAND IT, RECOGNIZE IT, AND FELLOWSHIP WITH IT.

*“If there BE  
**A MESSENGER WITH HIM,**  
**AN INTERPRETER,***

*ONE AMONG A THOUSAND, TO SHEW UNTO MAN  
HIS (GOD'S) UPRIGHTNESS:*

*THEN HE IS GRACIOUS UNTO HIM,  
AND SAITH,  
**DELIVER HIM FROM GOING DOWN TO THE PIT:  
I HAVE FOUND A RANSOM.***

*His flesh shall be fresher than a child's:  
**HE SHALL RETURN TO THE DAYS OF HIS YOUTH:***

*He shall pray unto God,  
and he will be **FAVOURABLE UNTO HIM:***

*AND HE SHALL  
**SEE HIS FACE WITH JOY:**  
FOR HE WILL RENDER UNTO MAN  
**HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS.***

*HE LOOKETH UPON MEN, AND IF ANY SAY,  
I HAVE SINNED,  
AND PERVERTED THAT WHICH WAS RIGHT,  
AND IT PROFITED ME NOT;*

*HE WILL DELIVER HIS SOUL FROM  
GOING INTO THE PIT,  
**AND HIS LIFE SHALL SEE THE LIGHT.***  
(Job 33:23-28)

Read it, and read it again. God never changes, God always remains the same. THE SEEKER, THE SEARCHER, WHO PUTS IT TOGETHER, WHO INTERPRETS VIA THE MESSENGER, THE INTERPRETER, THE HOLY SPIRIT, HE IS ONE IN A THOUSAND, ONE OF THE FEW, ONE OF THE CHOSEN. What does it say about this soul? It says that **THEY SHALL SEE THE FACE OF GOD WITH JOY.** The word for "see" here is 'ra'ah', which means **TO SEE, TO OBSERVE, TO BEHOLD, TO APPEAR.** He will see the face of God. What is the face of God? **AGAPE LOVE.** His life shall see the LIGHT. The word "light" here is 'owr' which means **ILLUMINATION, LIGHT.**

***"I WILL BEAR THE INDIGNATION OF THE LORD (THE NARROW WAY),  
BECAUSE I HAVE SINNED AGAINST HIM (NO AGAPE LOVE),  
UNTIL HE PLEAD MY CAUSE (SHOW ME MY SIN),  
AND EXECUTE JUDGMENT FOR ME (PRONOUNCE ME GUILTY):***

***HE WILL BRING ME FORTH TO THE LIGHT (THE REVELATION),  
AND I SHALL BEHOLD HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS (SEE HIM)."***

(Micah 7:9)

Is there any commentary needed?

*“And this is THE CONDEMNATION,  
THAT LIGHT IS COME INTO THE WORLD,  
AND MEN LOVED DARKNESS  
RATHER THAN LIGHT,  
BECAUSE THEIR DEEDS WERE EVIL.*

*FOR EVERY ONE THAT DOETH EVIL  
HATETH THE LIGHT,  
NEITHER COMETH TO THE LIGHT,  
LEST HIS DEEDS  
SHOULD BE REPROVED.”*

(John 3:19-20)

*“Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying,*

*I AM THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD:  
HE THAT FOLLOWETH ME SHALL NOT WALK IN DARKNESS,  
BUT SHALL HAVE THE LIGHT OF LIFE.”*

(John 8:12)

If you FOLLOW JESUS, that is IF YOU PICK UP YOUR OWN CROSS, AND DIE, AS JESUS DIED, you will not walk in darkness, you will WALK IN THE LIGHT. YOU SHALL HAVE THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE.

*“Wherefore he saith,  
AWAKE THOU THAT SLEEPEST,  
AND ARISE FROM THE DEAD,  
AND CHRIST SHALL GIVE  
THEE LIGHT.”*

(Ephesians 5:14)

Again, who gives us the LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE? Jesus Christ HIMSELF. Further confirmation of all that has gone before. Notice who is to AWAKEN. We are to arise from our spiritual death and walk the narrow way to FIND THE LIFE AND LIGHT OF CHRIST.

*“Giving thanks unto the Father,*

*which hath made us MEET TO BE*  
**PARTAKERS**  
*OF THE INHERITANCE OF THE SAINTS*  
**IN LIGHT:**

*WHO HATH DELIVERED US FROM*  
**THE POWER OF DARKNESS,**  
*AND HATH TRANSLATED US INTO THE KINGDOM*  
*OF HIS DEAR SON:*

*IN WHOM WE HAVE REDEMPTION THROUGH HIS BLOOD,*  
*EVEN THE FORGIVENESS OF SINS:*

*WHO IS THE IMAGE OF THE INVISIBLE GOD,*  
*THE FIRSTBORN OF EVERY CREATURE..."*  
(Colossians 1:12-15)

The power of God, WHO DRAWS US DOWN THE NARROW WAY, WHICH MAKES US MEET TO BE **PARTAKERS OF THE LIGHT**. We find here a total confirmation of the narrow way, **THE POWER OF THE CROSS**, and the **SECRET MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE**.

*"But ye are A CHOSEN GENERATION,*  
*A ROYAL PRIESTHOOD,*  
*AN HOLY NATION,*  
*A PECULIAR PEOPLE;*  
*THAT YE SHOULD SHEW FORTH THE PRAISES OF HIM*  
*WHO HATH CALLED YOU OUT OF DARKNESS*  
**INTO HIS MARVELLOUS LIGHT."**  
(1 Peter 2:9)

**LIGHT, FELLOWSHIP, UNION, UNITY, AS ONE**. A holy people, a Holy nation, comprised of people who are called out of the darkness into the **LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE**. We have indeed come full circle. Now we know why Jesus said:

*"GOD IS A SPIRIT:*  
*AND THEY THAT WORSHIP HIM*  
*MUST WORSHIP HIM*  
**IN SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH."**  
(John 4:24)



The many did not worship God in either the *SPIRIT* or in *TRUTH*. They did not worship in Spirit, because they never underwent *SPIRITUAL REGENERATION*. They died in darkness, and the blood of Christ did not cover them. They did not worship Him in truth, because they *DID NOT KNOW WHAT AGAPE LOVE WAS, IT HAD NEVER BEEN REVEALED TO THEM. IT HAD NEVER BEEN BESTOWED TO THEM.* It was not a part of them, their inner hearts were stony, and they hated Christ *IN TRUTH.*

1. The many were rejected for ONLY ONE REASON: **THEY WERE NOT REGENERATED.**
2. They were not regenerated for only one reason: **THEY REFUSED THE NARROW WAY.**
3. They refused the narrow way for only one reason: **THEY WOULD NOT FACE REPOOF.**

The Bible says we are *WILLFULLY IGNORANT.* Therefore there is no excuse. The commands of the Lord are clear. We are to be obedient to them. There is nothing more to say. We either do it, and comply, or we face eternal ruin. Our opinions, our biases, our theologies, our feelings do not matter. Our rationales are of no interest to God or Christ. Are you REGENERATED? HAS CHRIST COME TO YOU? *HAS HE REVEALED THE HIDDEN MYSTERY OF AGAPE LOVE? Do you think all of this is NEW AGE?* Do you think this is ESOTERIC in nature? You had better believe the Bible, and DO EXACTLY WHAT IT SAYS TO DO. Have you walked the narrow way? Do you have the testimony of the chosen ones?

## **THE EVIDENCES OF AUTHENTIC REGENERATION:**

**1. We have LEFT THE WORLD BEHIND, AND COUNTED IT ALL FOR NAUGHT IN OUR SEARCH FOR CHRIST. WE HAVE HUNGERED AND THIRSTED FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

**2. We have WALKED THE NARROW WAY TO A FULL AND EXPERIENTIAL SOUL DEATH, IN WHICH WE KNEW WE WERE DEAD, WITH EXPERIENTIAL DEADNESS. We went to the LOWEST ROOM, and we there WAITED FOR HIM THAT BADE US COME:**

*“FOR IF WE HAVE BEEN PLANTED TOGETHER  
IN THE  
LIKENESS OF HIS DEATH,  
WE SHALL BE ALSO IN THE  
LIKENESS OF HIS RESURRECTION:*

*KNOWING THIS,  
THAT OUR OLD MAN IS  
CRUCIFIED WITH HIM,  
THAT THE BODY OF SIN MIGHT BE DESTROYED,  
THAT HENCEFORTH WE SHOULD NOT SERVE SIN.*

**FOR HE THAT IS DEAD IS FREED FROM SIN.**

**NOW IF WE  
BE DEAD WITH CHRIST:  
WE BELIEVE THAT WE SHALL ALSO LIVE WITH HIM...”  
(Romans 6:5-8)**

**3. WE HAVE MET THE LIVING CHRIST; HE HAS REVEALED HIMSELF AND MANIFESTED HIMSELF TO US. WE HAVE GAZED INTO THE HEIGHT, THE WIDTH, THE BREADTH OF AGAPE LOVE, WE NOW KNOW WHAT AGAPE LOVE IS, IT HAS BEEN SHOWN US. IT IS MUCH MORE THAN THE PRESENCE OF LOVE.**

**4. WE HAVE BEEN JUDGED GUILTY AGAINST THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD OF GOD, AND WE HAVE CONFESSED UNTO CHRIST THAT WE DO NOT AGAPE LOVE. WE HAVE BEEN TO THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT.**

**5. WE HAVE HEARD THE VOICE OF CHRIST, AND WE KNOW WHAT THE MYSTERY IS, WE KNOW WHAT THE NEW COVENANT IS, AND WE HAVE AGREED TO WALK WITH HIM IN NEWNESS OF LIFE.**

**6. WE KNOW ON AN ABSOLUTE AND EXPERIENTIAL BASIS THAT WE HAVE PASSED FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE, AND THAT WE ARE INDEED SONS OF GOD.**

**7. WE HAVE BEEN SEALED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT AND HAVE EXPERIENCED THE SUPERNATURAL PEACE AND JOY OF GOD.**

If you have this testimony, you are indeed a true and authentic Son of God. This is the RECORD, **THIS IS THE TESTIMONY**. By two or more witnesses is a thing PROVED TRUE. Any revelation that does not contain **THESE SPECIFIC AND ESSENTIAL ELEMENTS IS NOT A SALVATION FROM CHRIST**. We have proved beyond all questions that there is but **ONE ISSUE** between you and your God. It MUST AT ALL COST BE SETTLED. YOUR TIME IS SHORT. MOVE NOW TO LAY HOLD OF CHRIST.



**DARK LIGHT SERIES**  
**THIRTEEN**  
**THE DOCTRINE OF ETERNAL SECURITY**  
**AM I SAFE IN THE LORD?**

The question of security in the Lord is one of the most frequently asked questions in Christianity. Is the believer **SAFE AND SECURE IN THE LORD**? Can a person lose their salvation, once they have it? What about all the warnings of the Lord? This aspect of the Christian faith has been argued over for years. The group who believes steadfastly in ETERNAL SECURITY is known as Calvinists, after John Calvin who promoted the concept. On the other side of the argument, those who believe that there is no eternal security whatsoever, but that it is contingent upon the believer's continued commitment follow Arminianism, after Arminius, who advanced that concept in the late 1500s and early 1600s. Each calls the other's concept a 'THEORY'. I will again say that Christ put the doctrines of salvation in such simple terms, and in so many ways that the REAL SEEKER CANNOT, **CANNOT MISINTERPRET WHAT IT SAYS**. It is a cop-out to claim "that is your interpretation" or, "what an interesting THEORY". It is **the** cop-out that damns millions of souls to eternal ruin.

From these two camps flowed two branches of Methodists, one, George Whitefield, who was a Calvinist, and John Wesley who was an Arminian Methodist. In point of fact **BOTH CAMPS ARE WRONG, YET BOTH CAMPS ARE RIGHT**. This is true because it was in this era that THE MODERN FAITH ONLY MOVEMENT BEGAN. To begin with, the Bible does **NOT EVER CONTRADICT ITSELF**. If you find a contradiction, it is because you have not dug deep enough to resolve it. Both camps deny **UTTERLY DIVINE REVELATION OR MANIFESTING OF CHRIST**. The concept of DIVINE REVELATION is limited to Scripture itself. THE BIBLE **IS THE DIVINE REVELATION**. It alone, with nothing else constitutes DIVINE REVELATION. The words, "know", "known", "see", "reveal", "manifest", are simply different words to describe how the Holy Spirit ILLUMINATES **THE MIND**.

The definitions are changed to fit the theology of the day. We have proved all of this to be true, which is why the many Christians are sent away into eternal ruin. If you deny the aspect that THE DIVINE REVELATION OF THE BIBLE, WHICH IN ITSELF SAYS THERE IS TO BE A **DIVINE REVELATION OF THE PERSON OF CHRIST TO THE BELIEVER**, then you have created for yourselves a big problem in the eternal security aspect. This is true because IF YOU CLAIM CONVERSION AND REGENERATION ARE THE SAME THING, AND ARE INSTANT, AND OCCUR AT THE BEGINNING OF YOUR WALK WITH CHRIST, THEN THERE IS NO WAY TO RESOLVE TWO ABSOLUTELY OPPOSING DOCTRINES, which is why they argue with each other on a continuous basis:

Conversion and regeneration are taught as occurring at the same time. The believer then is to walk his walk IN UNION WITH CHRIST from the beginning forward. We then add in two opposing doctrines that are to apply during this so-called "walk with Christ". It is NOT POSSIBLE. You cannot have two UTTERLY OPPOSING DOCTRINES TRUE AT THE SAME

TIME. Either one is true and the other is false, or they ARE BOTH TRUE, BUT ARE APPLICABLE AT DIFFERENT POINTS IN A PROGRESSIVE WALK.

The doctrine of IMMINENCE is a good example of this confusion of modern Christian theology. It says that Christ can come back AT ANY TIME TO BEGIN THE SECOND ADVENT PROCESS. Various and sundry verses of Scripture are advanced to prove it be true. Utterly opposed to the doctrine of imminence are hundreds of verses of PROPHETIC SCRIPTURE THAT MUST FIRST BE FULFILLED. The two concepts are OPPOSED. Imminence as taught today is an utterly false doctrine, for the verses used have nothing to do with the SECOND ADVENT OF CHRIST TO EARTH, but instead apply to CHRIST COMING TO THE BELIEVER. The believer will never know when Christ will come. He will SUDDENLY and WITHOUT ANY WARNING WHATSOEVER SHOW UP. Of the many people interviewed in research for this book, NOT ONE HAD THE FAINTEST NOTION PRIOR TO HIS COMING, THAT HE WOULD BE THERE. There was NO WARNING. He just INSTANTLY ARRIVES.

If you take those PERSONAL ADVENT VERSES, and twist them into SECOND ADVENT VERSES, then you arrive at a severe CONTRADICTION TO BIBLICAL PROPHECY. Biblical prophecy PROVES CATEGORICALLY that Christ is going to return to earth at a PREDETERMINED POINT OF TIME. It is absolutely contingent upon many things being fulfilled on earth prior to His return. Paul is very specific, as is Christ. The true believer, the authentic regenerated believer can figure out when that is, and the verses used to disprove that concept actually PROVE IT TO BE TRUE. You cannot have TWO OPPOSING CONCEPTS. They are BOTH CORRECT, BUT APPLY TO TWO DIFFERENT THINGS.

The doctrine of eternal security can be absolutely and categorically proven. Therefore John Calvin is CORRECT. He is correct 100%. What about all the warnings we can also PROVE CATEGORICALLY WHICH CLAIM ONE CAN BE A BELIEVER AND NOT GET TO HEAVEN? We have shown you most of these throughout the book. They can also be PROVEN CATEGORICALLY CORRECT. We then have TWO OPPOSING DOCTRINES, EACH TOTALLY OPPOSED THAT CAN BE PROVEN. How do you resolve that?

It proves first of all THAT THERE IS A JOURNEY, A ROAD, A PATHWAY, A NARROW WAY THAT A BELIEVER IS TO WALK. There is a POINT, A FIXED POINT.

## A “FINDING”,

IN WHICH THE BELIEVER CROSSES OVER (FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE) THAT UNALTERABLY CHANGES HIS POSITION BEFORE CHRIST DRAMATICALLY. On one side of the believer’s walk, ARMINIANISM IS CORRECT, AND ON THE OTHER SIDE, THE CALVINISTIC DOCTRINE IS TRUE. I will prove to you beyond all doubt that Arminianism is correct PRIOR TO UNION WITH CHRIST, and that Calvinism is correct AFTER UNION WITH CHRIST (on the issue of eternal security).

Union with the LIVING CHRIST that is KNOWING CHRIST EXPERIENTIALLY is the crossover point. Regeneration and the bestowment of agape love IS the crossover point. The Scriptures CATEGORICALLY PROVE IT. If there were a more powerful word I would use it. We will first examine the issue of ABSOLUTE ETERNAL SECURITY, and then we will take up the other verse which oppose it, and prove BOTH ARE TRUE, BOTH FIT IN THE WALK OF THE TRUE CHRISTIAN.

The believer has now walked the narrow way, undergone experiential soul death, has had the revelation of and has accepted agape love, and has had it bestowed. It is imperative to understand that it is **THE SPIRIT** that is regenerated and resurrected to a new life, not the soul man, sense man. That part of man still has the knowledge of good and evil, and that is referred to as the OLD MAN. Because Christ only takes up residence in the very center of man, in the inner heart, the agape love presence is referred to as the ‘seed’ of Christ:

**“WHOSOEVER IS  
BORN OF GOD  
DOETH NOT COMMIT SIN;  
FOR HIS (CHRIST’S) SEED REMAINETH IN HIM:  
AND HE CANNOT SIN, BECAUSE HE IS BORN OF GOD.”**  
(1 John 3:9)

This is a very important verse for us, because it begins to lay the groundwork for the concept of **ETERNAL SECURITY IN JESUS CHRIST**. There are many aspects to this doctrine, including the nature of agape love, the doctrine of pure grace, the power of Christ, the nature of regeneration itself, the words of Christ Himself, and the depravity of man. This verse says that **WHOSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD**. That is **THE CONDITION**. In other words, **ONLY THOSE WHO ARE BORN OF GOD**. Thus we can say, **ONLY THOSE WHO HAVE WALKED THE NARROW WAY UNTO DEATH, AND WHO MET CHRIST, HAD THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE SETTLED, AND HAVE ALLOWED CHRIST TO ENTER THEIR INNER HEARTS**.

This verse is directed **ONLY AT THEM**. It is an **IMPERATIVE CONDITION**. The word for “born” here is ‘genneo’, which means **REGENERATED, PROCREATED, BROUGHT FORTH**. Whosoever is regenerated **OF GOD**. He does not commit sin. The Greek structure would be more accurately translated, does not **HABITUALLY** commit sin. Why? Because the **SEED OF CHRIST** remains in the believer. This is a crucial statement. The seed of Christ is of course **THE NEW HEART OF AGAPE LOVE**. Once a believer is **GRANTED A NEW HEART, AND IS BESTOWED AGAPE LOVE, IT “REMAINETH”**. The word “remaineth” is ‘meno’. It means **CONTINUES, ABIDES, ENDURES, DWELLS, TARRIES**. In other words, **IT STAYS**. It does not, nor can it leave. **IT IS PERMANENT**. It is steadfast. We will prove this later.

The regenerated believer **CANNOT RESIDE IN SIN**. The reason why an authentic regenerated believer cannot abide in sin is because of the agape love nature **WITHIN**. It does not allow he/she to continue in a known area of sin, or an area that God considers sin, which the believer might not realize, is sin. It goes back to Ezekiel 36:27.

**“And I will PUT MY SPIRIT (AGAPE LOVE) WITHIN YOU,  
AND CAUSE YOU TO WALK IN MY STATUTES,  
AND YE SHALL KEEP MY JUDGMENTS,**

**AND DO THEM.”**  
**(Ezekiel 36:27)**

If we read this carefully, it fully confirms John. God says that He Himself puts the SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE within the believer. The word “put” is ‘nathan’, which means **TO GIVE OR TO BESTOW**. This confirms 1 John 3:1, and is a companion verse. The word “spirit” is ‘ruwach’, which means **LIFE, BREATH, WIND**. Now you know why Jesus referred to the Holy Spirit as like the wind. The word “within” is ‘qereb’, which means **THE CENTER, THE INNER PART, THE INWARD PARTS**. It verifies totally that it is THE INNER HEART, THE INNER LEB OF ‘LEB, LEB’, which GOD DEALS WITH. Once that SPIRIT has been placed within, once the NEW HEART has been created within, what happens?

God Himself causes the believer to **WALK IN HIS LAW OF AGAPE LOVE**. It does not say anywhere that the believer DOES IT BY HIS OWN EFFORT. It is GOD HIMSELF THAT DOES IT. The words “cause you walk” comes from the word ‘yalak’, which means **TO WALK, TO CARRY, TO BEAR, TO FOLLOW, TO CAUSE TO MAKE**. In other words, it is **AGAPE LOVE ITSELF THAT CAUSES THE BELIEVER TO DO RIGHT, TO THINK RIGHT, TO ACT RIGHT**. It has little to do with the believer, for it is all done BY THE POWER OF GOD, THE POWER OF CHRIST.

It is all done FROM WITHIN, BY AN INWARD FORCE, AN INWARD GUIDANCE SYSTEM. Do birds need road maps when they migrate? Do they stop in at Super America and ask directions? **THEY HAVE AN INNER GUIDANCE SYSTEM THAT CAUSES THEM TO GO WHERE THEY ARE TO GO**. Likewise with agape love within. It has nothing to do with the believer, for the force of God is more powerful than the believer, for **GREATER IS HE THAT IS IN YOU (IF INDEED CHRIST IS IN YOU) THAN HE THAT IS IN THE WORLD**. The believer can fight all he/she wants, BUT WILL NOT PREVAIL, BECAUSE GOD IS THE MORE POWERFUL. A real believer has this force inside that CAUSES the believer to do right. He may not want to, he may argue, fight, kick, refuse, for the OLD NATURE IS STILL WITHIN, WHICH IS FLESH. THUS IT IS THAT THE FLESH LUSTS AFTER THE SPIRIT, AND THE SPIRIT LUSTS AFTER THE FLESH. THERE IS WARFARE IN THE REAL REGENERATED BELIEVER. BUT THE FORCE OF GOD WILL BRING HIM DOWN, AND MAKE HIM DO WHAT GOD SAYS IS THE RIGHT THING TO DO. To say otherwise is to really slam God and His ability. He reconfirms it so that you do not mistake what He means.

He says, “ye shall keep my judgments”. The word for “keep” is ‘shamar’, which means **TO GUARD, TO HEDGE ABOUT, TO PRESERVE, TO KEEP**. If God is the force of spirit behind the believer, then IT IS GOD HIMSELF THAT KEEPS THE STATUTES, BECAUSE IT IS GOD THAT CAUSES THEM TO WALK IN HIS LAW THROUGH THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT. He cannot deny Himself, nor will He. The new heart of agape love is THE MOST POWERFUL FORCE IN THE UNIVERSE. Nothing can prevail against it, nothing can actually stop what it intends to do. Who shall stop God? Who shall annul what He has proposed? Again, we do not understand **SOVEREIGNTY**. We are dealing with God, not the will of some puny believer!

*“And as for me, **THOU UPHOLDEST ME** IN MINE INTEGRITY,  
AND SETTEST ME **BEFORE THY FACE FOR EVER**.”*

(Psalm 41:12)

Who is doing the HOLDING? God Himself. It is not the believer, but the power of God. The power of God “upholdeth” him. The word is ‘tamak’, which means **TO KEEP FAST, TO SUSTAIN, TO MAINTAIN, TO RETAIN.**

***“BUT THE LORD IS FAITHFUL,  
WHO SHALL STABLISH YOU,  
AND KEEP YOU FROM EVIL.”***  
(2 Thessalonians 3:3)

Again we find evidence to prove that IT IS CHRIST WHO ESTABLISHES AND KEEPS THE OVERCOMER, THE REGENERATE. The word “stablish” is ‘sterizo’, which means **TO SET FAST, TO CONFIRM, TO FIX, TO FASTEN, TO STEADFASTLY SET OR ESTABLISH.** The word “keep” is ‘phulasso’, which means **TO PRESERVE, TO BE ON GUARD, TO SAVE.** It is the LORD JESUS CHRIST THAT DOES ALL OF THIS.

***“NOW UNTO HIM  
THAT IS ABLE TO KEEP YOU FROM FALLING,  
AND TO PRESENT YOU FAULTLESS BEFORE  
THE PRESENCE OF HIS GLORY WITH EXCEEDING JOY,  
  
TO THE ONLY WISE GOD OUR SAVIOUR,  
BE GLORY AND MAJESTY, DOMINION AND POWER,  
BOTH NEW AND EVER. AMEN.”***  
(Jude 24)

Here is total confirmation of the fact that ***IT IS CHRIST THAT DOES THE KEEPING.*** The word for “falling” is ‘aptaistos’, which means **TO BE WITHOUT SIN, NOT STUMBLING.** The word for “faultless” is ‘amomos’, which means **UNBLEMISHED, WITHOUT BLAME, BLAMELESS.** There is great impact here, for IT IS THE PERFECTION OF CHRIST BESTOWED UPON THE BELIEVER THAT KEEPS HIM FAULTLESS AND PERFECT. It is God who is able to accomplish this, NOT THE BELIEVER. If it is God who does all of this, then HOW CAN THE BELIEVER BE REMOVED FROM GOD’S POWER? Who is able?

***“BEING CONFIDENT OF THIS VERY THING,  
THAT HE WHICH HATH BEGUN A GOOD WORK IN YOU  
WILL PERFORM IT UNTIL THE DAY OF JESUS CHRIST.”***  
(Philippians 1:6)



Who is doing this good work? Who is ABLE TO PERFORM IT? We are to BE CONFIDENT IN IT, CONFIDENT IN THE POWER AND THE ABILITY TO DO HIS WORK. Either He can do it, and WILL DO IT, or Christ is a liar of the first magnitude. It is the classic case of either or. The Old Testament fully agrees:

**“HE KEEPETH THE PATHS OF JUDGMENT,  
AND PRESERVETH THE WAY OF HIS SAINTS.”**

(Proverbs 2:8)

**The Lord SHALL PRESERVE THEE FROM ALL EVIL:  
HE SHALL PRESERVE THY SOUL.**

**THE LORD SHALL PRESERVE THY GOING OUT  
AND THY COMING IN FROM THIS TIME FORTH,  
AND EVEN FOR EVERMORE.”**

(Psalm 121:7-8)

This agrees totally with the New Testament research we have done. IT IS THE LORD THAT KEEPS, PRESERVES, PROTECTS. The OVERCOMER, the REGENERATE ones have UTTER AND COMPLETE PROTECTION, THEY ARE SAFE FOREVER MORE. It has a companion verse in John 10:

**“I AM THE DOOR:  
BY ME IF ANY MAN ENTER IN,  
HE SHALL BE SAVED,  
AND SHALL GO IN AND OUT,  
AND FIND PASTURE.”**

(John 10:9)

If we walk the narrow way to death and find Christ, **WE THEN ENTER INTO THE NEW COVENANT.** Jesus says HE SHALL BE SAVED. He does not say MIGHT BE, COULD BE, PERHAPS OR MAYBE. He says flatly SHALL BE SAVED, and shall GO IN AND OUT, AND FIND PASTURE. The agape love question WAS FOREVER SETTLED WHEN THE BELIEVER FOUND THE LIVING CHRIST AT THE END OF THE NARROW WAY.

**“Whosoever SHALL SEEK TO SAVE HIS LIFE  
SHALL LOSE IT;  
AND WHOSOEVER SHALL LOSE HIS LIFE  
SHALL PRESERVE IT.”**

(Luke 17:33)

The word for “preserve” here is ‘zoogoneo’, which means **TO RESCUE, BE SAVED, TO KEEP, OR TO PROTECT FROM LOSS.**

**“AND THE LORD SHALL DELIVER ME FROM EVERY EVIL WORK,  
AND WILL PRESERVE ME UNTO HIS HEAVENLY  
KINGDOM:  
TO WHOM BE GLORY FOR EVER AND EVER. AMEN.”**  
(2 Timothy 4:18)

Total confirmation again. IT IS THE LORD THAT DOES IT ALL FOR US. HE PRESERVES AND PROTECTS ALL THE WAY THROUGH IF WE BE OVERCOMERS, IF WE BE REGENERATED.

It is difficult for us to grasp the essential facts of GRACE, MERCY, POWER. The believer is a sinner. He will always be a sinner. He was destitute of good before God called, during his/her walk, at regeneration and beyond to the end. A SINNER IS A SINNER IS A SINNER. That is why GRACE IS GRACE. Regeneration has nothing to do with changing the SIN NATURE ITSELF, WHICH IS THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. The method God is using for redemption does not include THE FLESH, OR CARNAL MAN, SENSE MAN, SOUL MAN. God does not tamper with this evil knowledge, which is SIN. It cannot help but be sin, it is HOSTILE TO GOD AT ALL TIMES. That is why FLESH AND BLOOD CANNOT INHERIT eternal life. There has to be a change.

It might help to review slightly here to clarify this. The old sin nature, the knowledge of good and evil remains in the flesh mind, soul mind, or carnal mind. When the body is resurrected to inherit eternal life, THAT PORTION OF THE MIND IS ALTERED, AND THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL IS ERADICATED. We are, at the resurrection and rapture, REMOVED FROM THIS EVIL PRESENCE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL, IF WE BE REGENERATED. The evil side of all of our knowledge is simply REMOVED, and we become as Adam or Eve at the original creation.

On the other hand, if we are not REGENERATED, the very presence of God is removed. The good side of the knowledge of good and evil is removed, and all that is left is the EVIL SIDE OF OUR NATURES. The second death is the complete and total REMOVAL OF ALL ASPECTS OF GOD FROM THE SOUL. He then goes into a state of eternal ANGER, HATRED, AND BURNING, which is why Jesus told us that if we got ANGRY AT SOMEONE AND CALLED THEM A FOOL, WE WERE DANGEROUSLY CLOSE TO HELLFIRE. He was referring to the WHITE HOT ANGER WITHIN THE SOUL THAT HATES. That anger, that hostility, that very hot spiritual BURNING WITHIN will burst through and CONSUME the Christ rejecters and the ‘many’ who refused to comply with the demands of the narrow way.

This anger, this white hot fierce burning will be unchecked, for there is no force of good to contain it, to hold it back. It will break forth in full fury and hatred, unlike anything the human race has ever witnessed in this life. THIS UNCHECKED HATRED AND ANGER IS AS FIRE, AND IS FIRE, AND THE LAKE OF FIRE IS REAL, LITERAL, AND GOES ALONG WITH

THE SPIRITUAL FIRES OF THE SOULS THAT MUST REMAIN THERE FOR EVER. This is why Christ warned us of it.

It is this knowledge of good and evil then that follows the REGENERATE SOUL WHEREVER HE GOES. He cannot get rid of it, for it is STILL WITHIN HIM. It is the EVIL FORCE AND PRESENCE OF SIN WITHIN. Christ did NOT obliterate the knowledge of good and evil at regeneration, for it only concerns the SPIRIT MAN, THE INNER MAN. This is why Paul said:

***"I find then a law,  
that, WHEN I WOULD DO GOOD,  
EVIL IS PRESENT IN ME.***

***FOR I DELIGHT IN THE LAW OF GOD  
AFTER THE INWARD MAN (REGENERATE SPIRIT MAN):***

***BUT I SEE ANOTHER LAW IN MY MEMBERS,  
WARRING AGAINST THE LAW OF MY MIND,  
AND BRINGING ME INTO CAPTIVITY  
TO THE LAW OF SIN WHICH IS IN MY MEMBERS.***

***O WRETCHED MAN THAT I AM! WHO SHALL  
DELIVER ME FROM THE  
BODY OF THIS DEATH?  
(Romans 7:21-24)***

Many Christians think this is prior to regeneration. It is not, IT IS AFTER REGENERATION, AFTER THE SPIRIT MAN, THE INWARD MAN IS RAISED UP. Before regeneration, the inward man, the SPIRIT MAN, HATES GOD, AND HATES CHRIST WITH A PASSION. It is the work of the narrow way to bring DOWN the inner man to death, to DETHRONE HIM, REMOVE HIM, and allow Christ to sit upon the throne of the Holy of Holies. Only the REGENERATE INNER MAN delights in the AGAPE LOVE LAW OF THE SPIRIT.

The OLD MAN, the flesh, the carnal aspect, the conscious mind, soul and spirit, along with bodily desires, RISE UP AS AMALECK TO DO BATTLE. The knowledge of good and evil is still there, still present. WARFARE BEGINS IN EARNEST. The flesh wins always AT FIRST. It devours the poor believer. He wants to agape love, he delights in the law of agape love, but he finds EVIL WITHIN, WARRING AGAINST HIM/HER. The OLD MAN TAKES OVER FOR AWHILE WHILE THE BELIEVER ATTEMPTS TO FIGHT BACK IN THE FLESH. He cannot, he will lose every time. Chapter seven of Romans IS THE REGENERATED MAN, WHO DOES NOT YET REALIZE THAT IT IS CHRIST THAT PRESERVES HIM. Everything is "I" centered. The believer has not yet learned to TRUST CHRIST, TO TRUST GOD, TO LIFT HIS EYES TO THE HEAVENS. But then what does Paul say after the MISERABLE PERFORMANCE OF ROMANS SEVEN?

***"I THANK GOD THROUGH JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD.***

***SO THEN WITH THE MIND I MYSELF SERVE THE LAW OF GOD  
(AGAPE LOVE LAW);  
BUT WITH THE FLESH THE LAW OF SIN.***

***THERE IS THEREFORE  
NOW NO CONDEMNATION TO THEM  
WHICH ARE IN CHRIST JESUS, WHO  
WALK NOT AFTER THE FLESH,  
BUT AFTER THE SPIRIT.”  
(Romans 7:25, 8:1)***

Romans Seven and Eight are the most misunderstood, misappropriated verses of all Scripture. The truth of it is simple. When agape love (the law of Christ, the commandment) comes, IT TAKES UP RESIDENCE WITHIN A VERY EVIL SOUL. Something very Holy comes into a very dark place. That Spirit of agape love must now BEGIN TO DO BATTLE WITH THE OLD MAN, THE OLD NATURE. That battle is IMMENSE, TERRIBLE. The Old man, the Old Nature, along with Satan and the demons, are very ANGRY AT BEING DETHRONED. They are like a lover SCORNED, and they IMMEDIATELY RISE UP TO DO BATTLE.

This is part of the purging process of God. Every evil part, every hidden sin, every secret desire, every secret want is SUDDENLY RAISED UP AND MANIFESTED IN THE BELIEVER. When you purify gold and silver, you heat it up and boil it. All of the impurities RISE TO THE SURFACE, AND THERE THEY CAN BE SCOOPED OFF. Because of the method employed by God, and because of the POWER OF SIN, the believer is OVERWHELMED BY IT. That is the CRY OF PAUL. Who shall deliver me from this body of DEATH!

But you see, Paul raises his eyes unto Him that called him out. He raises his eyes to the Lord Jesus Christ, and says ***THERE IS THEREFORE***. The word therefore means essentially BECAUSE OF THE FOREGOING. BECAUSE OF WHAT I HAVE JUST WRITTEN ABOUT. Because of the WARFARE, there IS NO CONDEMNATION TO THOSE WHO ARE IN CHRIST JESUS. Paul is not referring to those who are in the Body of Christ, he is referring to those who HAVE THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, TO THOSE IN WHICH CHRIST DWELLS. He is referring to OVERCOMERS, THE REGENERATE ONES:

***“But YE ARE NOT IN THE FLESH,  
BUT IN THE SPIRIT,  
IF SO BE THAT THE SPIRIT OF GOD DWELL IN YOU.  
NOW IF ANY MAN HAVE NOT  
THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST,  
HE IS NONE OF HIS.”  
(Romans 8:9)***

Please read both of these verses carefully. IF WE WALK AFTER THE SPIRIT vs. IF THE SPIRIT OF GOD DWELL IN YOU, THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, which we know is AGAPE

LOVE SPIRIT. If you have walked the narrow way and found Christ, and accepted Christ, and ENTERED INTO THE NEW COVENANT, then you WALK IN THE SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE. It is the AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT OF GOD THE FATHER AND JESUS CHRIST THAT DWELLS IN YOU, AND CONTROLS YOU. There is therefore NO CONDEMNATION FOR THOSE WHO HAVE THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT. It is the Spirit that INDWELLS AND CONTROLS THE BELIEVER, AND PURGES THE BELIEVER.

***“EVERY BRANCH IN ME THAT BEARETH NOT FRUIT  
HE TAKETH AWAY:***

***AND EVERY BRANCH THAT BEARETH FRUIT,  
HE PURGETH IT, THAT IT MAY BRING FORTH MORE FRUIT.”***

***(John 15:2)***

The fruit in this verse is the FRUIT OF REGENERATION, OF AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT. Every believer that comes to the point of REGENERATION had already undergone their own personal White Throne judgment. They are therefore REMOVED FROM CONDEMNATION. Because they are removed from condemnation, they ARE SECURE IN CHRIST. But there is a walk AFTER REGENERATION. It is first a walk of PURGING; SO THAT BELIEVER MAY PRODUCE MORE FRUIT FOR THE LORD. This verse confirms totally Paul’s statement that this is NO CONDEMNATION FOR THOSE WHO HAVE THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT OF CHRIST. Christ does not say God will purge it and if not successful destroy it, He says bluntly GOD WILL PURGE IT SO IT BRING FORTH MORE FRUIT. ***This is a statement of eternal security.***

Paul, like Christ, is trying to tell the believer that is regenerated, that is an overcomer in TRUTH, that ***THERE IS NO CONDEMNATION FOR THOSE WHO ARE IN UNION WITH CHRIST.*** Christ knows full well the NATURE OF THE BEAST. God in His wisdom elected to accomplish REDEMPTION in this manner, for reasons only He knows. Because of this WARFARE, ***THE BELIEVER IS GOING TO STUMBLE, FALL, SIN, AND BE OVERWHELMED.*** It does NOT affect his salvation, for Christ IS THE COVER FOR IT ALL. Christ will see the ***BELIEVER THROUGH THIS PURGING PROCESS.*** He will cover him throughout ALL OF IT, which is why He is our HIGH PRIEST IN HEAVEN, WHO ***EVER LIVETH TO MAKETH INTERCESSION FOR US.*** He is forever safe in the arms of Christ. The foregoing IS NOT A LICENSE TO SIN. GOD FORBID. It is simply a statement of fact for what is going to come to the truly regenerated Christian who has deep sin embedded within.

If we are worthless to begin with, and carry our old nature all the way to the grave, regenerated or not, then of what GOOD can a believer do? NONE. Destitution is destitution. Christ said that without Him, we could do nothing. We ought not to clean it up by applying such words as holiness to it, or human weaknesses, or human frailties, ay any other bandage we put over our sin. SIN IS SIN. WE ARE BORN IN SIN; WE DIE IN SIN. That is why Christ died. HE SETTLED THE SIN QUESTION. It is no longer applicable, for another system has come in to replace it. ***IT IS THE NEW HEART COVENANT, GRANTED BY GRACE THROUGH FAITH.*** The obedience the Lord wants from you is not to clean up your act, and get right with God. You cannot clean up your act, and you cannot get right with God no matter what you do, EXCEPT walk the narrow way, and then HE CLEANS YOU UP VIA AGAPE LOVE COVERING.

He wants you to be OBEDIENT TO HIS COMMANDS TO WALK THE NARROW WAY TO DEATH SO HE CAN GIVE YOU LIFE. After He has brought agape love life to you, THEN HE HIMSELF WILL BEGIN THE PROCESS OF CLEANING UP YOUR LIFE. HE WILL BEGIN THE PURGING PROCESS, which is a process of BRINGING TO THE SURFACE ALL HIDDEN SIN, MAKING IT MANIFEST TO YOU, SO YOU CAN BEGIN TO DEAL WITH IT, RESIST IT, AND PURGE IT FROM YOUR SYSTEM. Sin is not the issue here, for IT IS A FOREDRAWN CONCLUSION YOU ARE A SINNER.

The issue here is NOT SIN, but WHY YOU SIN. The issue is not the EFFECT, but the CAUSE. The issue is not THE SURFACE MANIFESTATIONS, but the ROOT OF THE PROBLEM. Satan plays games with the human mind, and he is always trying to get people to focus ON THEIR SINS, RATHER THAN THE CAUSE. By this method HE SWEEPS MILLIONS INTO ETERNAL RUIN. We are by nature LEGALISTIC. We are by nature LAW KEEPERS. It starts when we are young, when we are told DON'T TOUCH, DON'T DO. Our entire worldly system is based upon KEEPING THIS LAW, KEEPING THAT LAW. If we keep all the laws, we are perceived as RIGHTEOUS, AS GOOD, AS RIGHT, AS MORAL, AS ETHICAL. What has that got to do with your inner heart, your inner nature?

The purpose of God with the New Covenant is to move you OUT OF LAW KEEPING, OUT OF WORKS OR RIGHTEOUSNESS, OUT OF THE GOOD DEED BAD DEED SYNDROME. It is a vortex of death; it leads to eternal ruin. God wants you to MOVE THROUGH THE NARROW WAY TO A NEW HEART WITHIN, SO THAT HE CAN CAUSE YOU TO KEEP THAT WHICH YOU CANNOT KEEP BECAUSE OF YOUR NATURE. He frees us from the SLAVERY OF ALL TYPES OF LAW KEEPING, CODE KEEPING, RULES, REGULATIONS. He frees us by PUTTING HIS OWN SPIRIT IN US, AND THAT SPIRIT CAUSES US TO KEEP ALL THE LAWS.

Either God is telling us the truth in Ezekiel 36 or He is not. Either HE KEEPS US, AND HE CAUSES US TO WALK IN HIS LAW, OR HE IS A LIAR. If He causes us TO KEEP THE LAW, KEEP HIS STATUTES, THEN HOW COULD YOU CONTINUALLY DWELL IN SIN? In point of fact, YOU CANNOT, BECAUSE GOD WILL NOT ALLOW YOU TO CONTINUALLY DWELL IN SIN. He will pull you out, He will PURGE YOU OF IT. Now if it is the VERY POWER OF GOD KEEPING US, then WHO HAS THE POWER TO REMOVE US FROM THE HANDS OF CHRIST OR GOD?

Is Satan more powerful than God? Are demons more powerful than God? Is there any force in the Universe more powerful than God? Are you more powerful than God? You know the answer. The point is this: IF IT IS THE POWER OF GOD THAT KEEPS US, THAT CAUSES US TO WALK IN HIS LAW OF AGAPE LOVE, AND COVERS OUR SINS WHEN WE SLIP OR MAKE A MISTAKE, THEN IT IS GOD WHO DOES THE KEEPING, THE PROTECTING, THE TEACHING, THE INSTRUCTING. Is God going to violate His own law? No. If we say that God cannot PREVENT A REGENERATED BELIEVER FROM CONTINUOUS SINNING, THEN WE HAVE SAID GOD CANNOT CAUSE THAT BELIEVER TO WALK IN HIS LAW, AND WE HAVE DENIED GOD. Either God can, or God cannot.

This is why this is STRICTLY LIMITED TO THE REGENERATED BELIEVER. John is very specific: **ANYONE BORN OF GOD**. This is true because the unregenerate person IS NOT BORN OF GOD, AND DOES NOT HAVE THE SPIRIT OF GOD WITHIN. If the Spirit of God, which is agape love, is NOT within a believer, then obviously the POWER OF GOD TO KEEP THAT PERSON IS NOT PRESENT. They may CLAIM TO BE REGENERATED, but they are not, and thus DO NOT HAVE THE POWER, THE PROTECTION, THE KEEPING

POWER OF GOD TO PRESERVE THEM FROM FALLING. That is why the many were sent away: THEY WERE SINNERS WITHOUT AGAPE LOVE PROTECTION. They did not have on the WHITE ROBES OF REGENERATION AND AGAPE LOVE.

If you understand the impact of God CAUSING THE BORN AGAIN BELIEVER TO WALK IN HIS LAW OF AGAPE LOVE, then you will understand this comment from Christ:

***“MY SHEEP (THE REGENERATED ONES) HEAR MY VOICE,  
AND I KNOW THEM, AND THEY FOLLOW ME...”  
(John 10:27)***

The sheep Christ is referring to are THE TRUE BELIEVERS. They HEAR HIS VOICE, HE CALLS THEM BY NAME, HE LEADS THEM OUT, AND THEY “FOLLOW” HIM. It does not say they might follow him, or that they could follow him, or that perhaps they would. IT IS AN ***IMPERATIVE CONDITION*** because of the nature of agape love. THEY ***WILL*** FOLLOW HIM. These are the regenerated ones, the ones with a new agape love heart, which is WHY they follow Christ. The word “follow” here is ‘akoleutheo’, which means **TO BE IN THE SAME WAY WITH, TO ACCOMPANY, TO FOLLOW**. It means **TO WALK WITH**. They have walked with Christ through the narrow way. They have died with Christ at Calvary. They have gone beyond to the resurrection of NEW LIFE IN AGAPE LOVE.

***“And I GIVE THEM ETERNAL LIFE;  
AND THEY SHALL NEVER PERISH,  
NEITHER SHALL ANY MAN PLUCK THEM OUT OF MY HAND.  
MY FATHER, WHICH GAVE THEM ME,  
IS GREATER THAN ALL; AND NO MAN IS ABLE TO  
PLUCK THEM  
OUT OF MY FATHER’S HAND.  
I AND MY FATHER ARE ONE.  
(John 10:28-29)***

If ever there was a statement to prove the security of the believer who is REGENERATED, it is here. The “them” refers back to the SHEEP WHO CAME IN VIA THE DOOR. CHRIST IS THE DOOR. IF WE ENTER IN VIA CHRIST, THROUGH HIM, THROUGH HIS AGAPE LOVE, THEN WE HAVE ENTERED IN. We will take it apart and see what it really says. First of all Christ says HE GIVES THEM ETERNAL LIFE. The word “give” here is ‘didomi’, which we know means **TO BESTOW, TO GIVE, TO BRING FORTH**. What does Christ bestow? He claims ETERNAL LIFE. The word “eternal” is ‘ainonios’ which means **PERPETUAL, FOR EVER, EVERLASTING**. The opposite of eternal is TEMPORAL, OR TEMPORARY. I ask you a serious question: IS THERE SUCH A THING AS TEMPORARY ETERNAL LIFE? Are

not the two concepts UTTER OPPOSITES? If something is temporary it IS NOT ETERNAL. The very meaning of eternal EXCLUDES UTTERLY TEMPORARY. THUS:

## ETERNAL LIFE vs. TEMPORAL LIFE

The construction of the Greek is **PRESENT TIME: "I GIVE THEM."** In other words, "I give them eternal life NOW." Not later, RIGHT NOW. IT IS GRANTED TO THEM. It is granted at REGENERATION, FOR AGAPE LOVE IS ETERNAL. All human loves, all phileo love IS TEMPORAL. IT HAS NO ETERNAL VALUE. It serves a purpose here for the world, but it has no LASTING VALUE, FOR MAN IS NOT GOING TO LAST.

If God says He changes the heart of a believer by granting them ETERNAL AGAPE LOVE, and changes their NATURE, THEIR VERY ESSENCE OVER TO A LOVE THAT IS ETERNAL, THEN HAS HE NOT GRANTED TO THEM ETERNAL LIFE? Do they not have it INSTANTLY AT REGENERATION? Of course! God changes the VERY NATURE of a person. He is a **NEW CREATION, BORN AGAIN, FROM THE HAND OF GOD.** If he is a NEW CREATION, WITH AN ENTIRELY NEW NATURE, A NEW ESSENCE, THE ESSENCE OF ETERNAL AGAPE LOVE, THEN HOW CAN HE EVER PERISH? If this NEW LIFE IS ETERNAL, IT CANNOT PASS AWAY, NOR CAN THE BELIEVER UNDERGO THE JUDGMENT TO CONDEMNATION.

The very word eternal prohibits THE PASSING AWAY. There is no such thing as TEMPORAL ETERNAL LIFE. God does NOT grant ETERNAL LIFE, and then TAKE IT AWAY. There is no verse anywhere in Scripture that says that God takes away AGAPE LOVE AFTER HE HAS BESTOWED IT. HE DOES NOT PLAY GAMES, AND HE KNOWS THOSE THAT ARE HIS. If God did take "eternal" life away, then it was NOT eternal, was it? So then we must say that ETERNAL LIFE WAS NEVER GRANTED IN THE FIRST PLACE, THE BELIEVER NEVER CAME TO AGAPE LOVE, HE NEVER CAME TO REGENERATION. The very nature of AGAPE LOVE prohibits it from being temporal. It is eternal, everlasting. It will be proven out as we go.

Next Christ says "and they SHALL **NEVER** PERISH." The true sheep, the regenerated sheep, who came in via the 'door', which is Christ, SHALL NEVER PERISH. That is a pretty blunt statement. How does one get around it? In point of fact, you cannot get around it. You can only claim that Christ did not mean what He said. You can only claim in your OPINION it does not mean what it says. THE WORDS ARE THERE. The word for "never" is 'ou me', which is a **DOUBLE NEGATIVE, WHICH STRENGTHENS THE DENIAL.** It means **NOT AT ALL, NOT ANY MORE, BY NO MEANS WHATEVER, NEVER CAN, IN NO CASE WHATEVER CAN.** In other words **IT IS NOT EVEN A REMOTE POSSIBILITY.** It simply **CANNOT HAPPEN.** It is beyond the realm of all possibility. Is that SECURE?

Why is it so secure, Jesus? "Neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand." Jesus is probing deeper, trying to tell us something of the nature of God. The word "neither" comes from three basic words, 'ou'; 'ouk' and 'ouch', which means **NAY, NEVER, NO, NEITHER CAN.** In other words **IT IS NOT POSSIBLE.** The word man was added by the translators, it should not be there. It should read **NO ONE, NO THING, NOTHING CAN.** In other words, **THERE IS NO POWER ON EARTH, OR IN THE UNIVERSE THAT CAN REMOVE THE BELIEVER FROM THE HAND OF CHRIST!** It is simply NOT POSSIBLE. The word "pluck" is 'harpazo', which means **TO SEIZE, TO CATCH, TO PULL AWAY, TO TAKE AWAY.** The word "hand" is 'cheer', and it means **POWER, MEANS OF INSTRUMENT.** In other words, **NO**



**POWER IN THE UNIVERSE IS ABLE TO SEIZE OR TAKE AWAY THE REGENERATED BELIEVER.** He is as secure in Christ as GOD IS SECURE. Why Jesus? Why is this so?

“My Father, which gave them me, IS GREATER THAN ALL.” It was God who gave to Christ the BELIEVER. It was God that DRAGGED THEM TO THE CROSS. God “drags” the believer to Christ, via the narrow way, WHICH IS THE POWER OF GOD, THE POWER OF THE CROSS. God then GAVE CHRIST the believer. Now both God and Christ are in this all the way up to their chins. They have both acted in concert, in unison, as ONE. God the Father IS THE GREATEST OF ALL. He is IT. HE IS THE BIG ONE, NUMBER UNO, THE ALMIGHTY. The word “greater” is ‘meizon’, which means **LARGER MORE POWERFUL**. The word “all” here is ‘pas’ which as you know mean **EVERY, ALL, EACH, ONE**. Therefore the **POWER OF GOD IS GREATER THAN ANY OTHER CREATED FORCE IN THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE.**

If the power of God is greater than ANY OTHER POWER IN THE UNIVERSE, then who can be opposed? Who then can DENY IT? Who is able to **ANNUL THE DECREE**? Satan? Demons? They are merely created beings. They have no power whatever because Christ destroyed Satan’s power. Man? Man is merely a puff of smoke; he has no power. The believer himself? He is placed in neutral, for **GOD CAUSES THE BELIEVER TO WALK IN HIS LAW OF AGAPE LOVE!** When a believer meets Christ, there is a transaction. THE INNER WILL ACCEPTS CHRIST, AND THEREFORE GIVES OVER HIS WILL TO JESUS. Everyone, and everything IS EXCLUDED. NOTHING, NO POWER, NOT ANY THING WHATSOEVER CAN REMOVE THE BELIEVER FROM THE POWER OF CHRIST, FROM HIS HEART. It is a **BOND ETERNAL VIA THE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT.**

That is the power of grace. Grace means what it says, UNMERITED FAVOR. If the favor is unmerited, then the object of the grace HAS NO MERIT. If he/she has no merit, THEN HOW COULD ONE LOSE WHAT WAS GRANTED OUT OF GRACE? He has no merit in the first place, for it is not based upon works, but upon AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS ETERNAL.

*“Verily, verily, I say unto you,*  
*HE THAT HEARETH MY WORD,*  
*AND BELIEVETH ON HIM THAT SENT ME,*  
*HATH EVERLASTING LIFE,*  
*AND SHALL NOT COME INTO CONDEMNATION;*  
*BUT IS PASSED FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE.”*  
*(John 5:24)*

We have already proved that the term “verily, verily” means to us, LISTEN UP. It is a double affirmation of something very important, very trustworthy. We have proved that the term “believeth” has been QUALIFIED ELSE WHERE, AND MEANS **REGENERATIVE BELIEF, BELIEF FROM THE INNER HEART.** In other words, it is LIMITED TO THE REGENERATED ONLY, for unless one has been obedient and walks the narrow way THEY CANNOT BELIEVE FROM THEIR HEART OF HEARTS, IT IS STILL IN TOTAL REBELLION. The word “believeth” means **TO COMMIT TO, TO TRUST**. How can one

COMMIT TO CHRIST, COMMIT TO AGAPE LOVE, COMMIT TO THE NEW COVENANT, UNTIL ONE HAS COME TO THE REVELATION? Until one has died on the narrow way? Until one has gone to the LOWEST ROOM?

That one, the one who is REGENERATED, AND BELIEVES FROM THE INNER HEART, FROM THE SPIRIT MAN, HATH EVERLASTING LIFE. The term “hath” is ‘echo’, which means **POSSESSION, ABILITY, CONDITION**. It is something ALREADY IN POSSESSION, ALREADY A CONDITION OF THAT BELIEVER. The word for “everlasting” is ‘aionios’, which means **ETERNAL LIFE, PERPETUAL, FOR EVER, WITHOUT END**.

If this believer HAS ALREADY ETERNAL LIFE, then Jesus says, **IT IS NOT POSSIBLE FOR THEM TO COME INTO CONDEMNATION**. They SHALL NOT come into judgment. The word “not” is ‘ouch’, which means **NEVER CAN, NO, CANNOT, NEITHER CAN, IS NOT ABLE**. In other words, it is NOT POSSIBLE. The word “come” is ‘erchomai’, which means **TO COME TO, TO APPEAR, TO ARRIVE AT**. The believer **CANNOT APPEAR BEFORE THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT. IT IS NOT POSSIBLE**.

The reason they cannot come before the Great White Throne judgment is BECAUSE THEY HAVE ALREADY BEEN THERE. The narrow way is a FORM OF THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT. The believer on the narrow way is BROUGHT DOWN TO THE LOWEST ROOM, THE PIT OF DEATH, AND **THERE IS JUDGED AGAINST THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD OF THE LORD GOD**. Because the believer did this WHILE YET ALIVE IN THE FLESH, then Christ is able to step forward and SAVE THAT BELIEVER FOR ALL ETERNITY. The Bible declares **ONCE TO DIE, ONCE TO JUDGMENT**. You cannot be tried for the same crime twice. The white stone of acquittal is given to EVERY OVERCOMER.

The overcomer, the regenerate one is then exempt. **TOTALLY AND WHOLLY AND FOREVER EXEMPT**. Why? Because they have passed from DEATH UNTO ETERNAL LIFE. The word “passed” is ‘metabaino’, which means **TO CHANGE PLACE, TO DEPART FROM, TO REMOVE FROM**. They are removed from their state of spiritual death, and they are granted, out of grace and mercy, ETERNAL LIFE.

You see, the issue was the agape love issue. There is no other issue between man and God. When this issue is settled, when this issue is faced by the INNER HEART, and settled with Christ, then the believer goes under the **PERFECTION OF CHRIST, AND IS THEREFORE FOREVER EXEMPT**. Jesus said no force whatsoever could take them OUT OF HIS HAND, OR HIS POWER OR PROTECTION. Agape love is THAT PROTECTION. That is why John said that **WHEN WE AGAPE LOVE, WE ARE PASSED FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE**. We have LIFE when agape love is bestowed. WE HAVE MOVED OUT OF CONDEMNATION FOR EVER AND EVER AND EVER. Can Christ be condemned? Is Christ going to the Great White Throne judgment? If He is not, then the believer who has Christ within, who has agape love within, **IS NOT EITHER**.

***“All that the Father giveth me SHALL COME TO ME;  
AND HIM THAT COMETH TO ME  
I WILL IN NO WISE CAST OUT.”***

**(John 6:37)**

The word “all” here is ‘pas’ which means **EACH ONE, EVERY ONE, ALL, THE WHOLE**. Every single one that the Father gives to Christ WILL COME. They SHALL COME. It is an imperative condition. The word “come” here is ‘helko’, which means **TO ARRIVE AT, OR TO BE PRESENT, TO BE WITH**. It confirms that the PRESENCE OF CHRIST IS ABSOLUTELY REQUIRED. IT PROVES THAT MEETING CHRIST, SEEING CHRIST, AND THE REVELATION OF CHRIST ARE AN ABSOLUTE REQUIREMENT. All who ARE CHRIST’S, SHALL ARRIVE AT, AND BE IN HIS PRESENCE. This is not a Second Advent verse; this is the arrival of Christ to the believer who has walked the narrow way. Christ is the holder of agape love, which is eternal life. Life is at the end of the narrow way. If you walk it, YOU WILL ARRIVE AT A POINT OF FINDING THE LIVING CHRIST.

When Christ is found, ETERNAL LIFE IS FOUND. When Christ is found, THE BELIEVER HAS COME TO CHRIST, AND CHRIST HAS COME TO THE BELIEVER. THE TWO MEET, THEY “SUP”, THEY COMMUNE. The New Covenant is revealed, the two come to agreement, UNION BECOMES A FACT. Christ then says that EACH ONE THAT COMES TO HIM, VIA THE NARROW WAY (THE ONLY WAY), HE WILL IN NO WISE CAST OUT. The word “no wise” is ‘ou me’, which is a double negative, and as you know means **NOT AT ALL, BY NO MEANS, NEVER, NEVER WILL, NOT EVER, NOT IN ANY WISE, IN NO WISE, OR NOT FOR ANY REASON WHATSOEVER**. Do you get the impact of that? There is no reason WHATSOEVER, NOTHING WHATSOEVER CAN HAPPEN, NO DEED CAN BE DONE, NOTHING WHATSOEVER, NO REASON WHATSOEVER CAN CAUSE THAT BELIEVER TO BE CAST OUT.

The word for “cast” is ‘ekballo’, which is **TO EJECT, TO CAST FORTH, TO EXPEL, TO SEND AWAY**. In other words CHRIST WILL NOT, CANNOT, NEVER CAN, EXPEL THAT BELIEVER. Union is union; security is security.

*“And THIS IS THE FATHER’S WILL WHICH HATH SENT ME,  
THAT OF ALL WHICH HE HATH GIVEN ME*

***I SHOULD LOSE NOTHING,  
BUT SHOULD RAISE IT UP AGAIN AT THE LAST DAY.”**  
(John 6:39)*

It is the Father’s will that Christ should LOSE NOTHING OF THAT WHICH THE FATHER has GIVEN to him. If it is the Father’s will that Christ should lose no one, and it is Christ’s will that He should lose no one, then we have double security system in operation. We have many words of Christ directly to prove that the believer IS SAFE in the hands of Christ. When you couple these verses together, it is quite blunt: **THOSE THAT COME TO CHRIST IN TRUTH, THOSE THAT SEEK THE LORD IN TRUTH, ONCE THEY HAVE FOUND HIM, AND ACCEPTED HIM, ARE SECURE IN THE LORD.** The “many” Christians were told they had eternal security, but they never found Christ, they never had union, they had no protection. They had not walked the narrow way of the Great White Throne judgment, so now they must appear before it at the end of time.

*“HE THAT OVERCOMETH,  
THE SAME SHALL BE CLOTHED IN WHITE RAIMENT;*

**AND I WILL NOT BLOT OUT HIS NAME**  
**OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE,**  
**BUT I WILL CONFESS HIS NAME**  
**BEFORE MY FATHER, AND BEFORE HIS ANGELS.”**  
**(Revelation 3:5)**

The OVERCOMER ONLY, the REGENERATED ONLY, shall be clothed in WHITE RAIMENT. The word for “white” is ‘leukus’ which means **LIGHT**. Agape love is **LIGHT**. It is the **LIGHT OF LIFE**. The overcomer is **CLOAKED WITH THE LIGHT OF AGAPE LOVE, IT IS THE ROBE OF CHRIST**. The word “raiment” is ‘himation’, which means **GARMENT, ROBE, CLOAK, VESTURE**. Through the bestowment of agape love, the regenerated believer **WEARS THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF CHRIST**. Remember Christ is the **MEDIATOR, THE ONE WHO PROTECTS**. He clearly says “**I WILL NOT BLOT OUT HIS NAME.**”

The word for “will not” is ‘ou me’, which is again a double negative. **CHRIST WILL NOT, NOT AT ALL, IN NO WISE, NEVER WILL, NOT EVER, NOT FOR ANY REASON EVER BLOT OUT THE OVERCOMER’S NAME**. The word for “blot” is ‘exaleipho’, which means **TO SEAM OUT, TO BLOT OUT, TO ERASE, TO WIPE AWAY**. In other words, Christ is saying that the **OVERCOMER**, that is the **REGENERATED ONES** will **NEVER EVER, NOT FOR ANY REASON WHATSOEVER, HAVE THEIR NAMES BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE**. Christ will confess or acknowledge their names to the Father.

The reason this is all true is because the **ONLY ISSUE IS THE AGAPE LOVE ISSUE. SETTLE THAT AND IT IS FOREVER SETTLED**. You cannot be tried twice for the same crime. That is double jeopardy. Christ verifies it, God claims it is so. There is much more proof to prove it out to you.

***“He that hath an ear, let him hear***  
***WHAT THE SPIRIT SAITH UNTO THE CHURCHES;***  
***HE THAT OVERCOMETH SHALL NOT BE HURT OF THE***  
***SECOND DEATH.”***  
**(Revelation 2:11)**

Read what it says. **HE THAT OVERCOMES, HE THAT BECOMES REGENERATED, SHALL NOT BE HURT OF THE SECOND DEATH**. The second death is the final ruin of all the unregenerate. It means in the Greek literal translation that **THE REGENERATED WILL NOT AT ALL FOR ANY REASON BE HURT OF THE SECOND DEATH**. It means what it says. The **OVERCOMER**, the regenerated ones **DO INHERIT ETERNAL LIFE**. There are no conditions placed upon it whatsoever.

***“HE THAT OVERCOMETH SHAL INHERIT ALL THINGS;***  
***AND I WILL BE HIS GOD, AND HE SHALL BE MY SON.”***  
**(Revelation 21:7)**

Does it say that the OVERCOMER **MIGHT** INHERIT? **COULD** INHERIT? IF HE IS GOOD WILL INHERIT? **MAY** INHERIT? You see, agape love is UNCONDITIONAL, AND THE NATURE OF IT ITSELF IS WHAT MAKES THE BELIEVER SAFE IN CHRIST. The overcomer ONLY shall inherit all things through Christ Jesus. It is based upon the merits and the ability of Christ, not the believer. **GRACE IS PURE GRACE**. Christ is OUR HIGH PRIEST. He lives forever in the heavens, and is able to there DEAL WITH ANY SIN THE OVERCOMER MAY BECOME INVOLVED WITH. He makes intercession for that believer, which PRESERVES THAT BELIEVER TO LIFE ETERNAL. He will correct or rebuke a continuing sin in a believer, for the believer is moved from under the law of condemnation to a different form of control: **THE INDWELLING OF AGAPE LOVE, AND DIVINE DISCIPLINE IF NECESSARY TO CORRECT, TO BRING A BELIEVER BACK ON COURSE.**

***“But THIS MAN (CHRIST), BECAUSE HE CONTINUETH EVER,  
HATH AN UNCHANGEABLE PRIESTHOOD.***

***WHEREFORE HE IS ABLE TO  
SAVE THEM TO THE UTTERMOST THAT COME UNTO GOD  
BY HIM, SEEING HE EVER LIVETH TO MAKE  
INTERCESSION FOR THEM.”***

***(Hebrews 7:24-25)***

If Christ is able to **SAVE US TO THE UTTERMOST**, then we might say that He is able to **KEEP US, PROTECT US, PRESERVE US TO THE END**. The cloak of agape love is indeed the most powerful force in the Universe. Wear it, and you shall never come into eternal ruin. That is why Jesus said for us to STRIVE TO ENTER, LABOR TO WALK. Eternal ruin is forever as well.

When Christ died, He took all sins PAST. That is effective today for every believer. When union is made, **SINS PAST ARE FORGIVEN** (Romans 3:25). What about sins in the present or the future? God has made a total provision for all of that through the bestowment of agape love. This applies only of course to the regenerated ones, the overcomers ONLY. The “many” did not in truth have a high priest in heaven, for Christ was never in them, never gave them agape love, never KNEW THEM. For the overcomer, the CLOAK OF AGAPE LOVE PROTECTS HIM, KEEPS HIM ON TRACK. If a believer wanders slightly off course, **CHRIST WILL CORRECT, REBUKE, ADMONISH TO BRING THE BELIEVER BACK.**

Whatever small sins the overcomer might make, Christ ever lives to make intercession for that believer. To the believer, even a small sin is grievous, even a thought that is wrong begins to cause problems. It is God’s method of **PURGING AWAY THE DROSS, JUST AS GOLD AND SILVER ARE REFINED**. It says that because CHRIST HIMSELF IS THE HIGH PRIEST, and the overcomer is protected UNDER CHRIST, then Christ is ABLE TO SAVE THEM TO THE UTTERMOST. The word “uttermost” is ‘panteles’, which means **FULL ENDED, IN ENTIRETY, ENTIRE, COMPLETE, WHOLLY**. If your salvation is COMPLETE, TOTAL, AND NON-ENDING, THEN HOW CAN YOU LOSE IT ONCE YOU HAVE IT? Either Christ is able to save, and has the power to save, or He does not.

There is no in between here, for we are dealing with God, and with God you are dealing with WHITE OR BLACK, SIN OR HOLINESS, RIGHT OR WRONG, EITHER OR. We are dealing in absolutes. Either Christ CAN, or Christ CANNOT. Everything we have seen so far PROVES that Christ can, and will, and does protect the believer, which is why NO POWER IN THE UNIVERSE CAN REMOVE THE BELIEVER FROM CHRIST.

***“ I am the LIVING BREAD  
WHICH CAME DOWN FROM HEAVEN:  
IF ANY MAN EAT OF THIS BREAD,  
HE SHALL LIVE FOR EVER...”***  
(John 6:51)

Jesus is blunt: EAT OF THIS BREAD, and live FOR EVER. The word “ever” is ‘aion’, which means **PERPETUAL, ETERNAL, WITH NO END**. Notice that there are no conditions placed upon it except one: **EAT OF THIS BREAD**. We know this means UNION WITH CHRIST, **UNION WITH HIS INNER ESSENCE, EATING OF THE HIDDEN MANNA**. It is promised to the OVERCOMER ONLY (Revelation 2:17). The hidden manna is agape love, and with the bestowment of it, the white stone of acquittal is given as well.

***“FOR THE TRUTH’S SAKE (‘THE TRUTH’),  
WHICH DWELLETH IN US,  
AND SHALL BE WITH US FOR EVER.”***  
(2 John 1:2)

“The truth” is the truth that sets free, and is agape love. It “dwelleth” IN us, if we be OVERCOMERS AND REGENERATE ONES. The word “dwelleth” is ‘meno’, which as you know means **ABIDE, CONTINUE, ENDURES, REMAINS**. How long does it remain with us, John? FOR EVER. It is eternal, and it will remain with us ETERNALLY. Notice the condition: THE TRUTH MUST BE IN US. That only happens at revelation and bestowment. What does the Old Testament have to say about this:

***“The MEEK SHALL EAT AND BE SATISFIED:  
they shall praise the Lord THAT SEEK HIM:  
YOUR HEART SHALL LIVE FOR EVER.”***  
(Psalm 22:26)

***“Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me  
all the days of my life: and I WILL DWELL  
IN THE HOUSE OF THE LORD FOR EVER.”***  
(Psalm 23:6)

*“The Lord KNOWETH THE DAYS OF THE UPRIGHT:  
and their INHERITANCE SHALL BE FOR EVER.”*

*(Psalm 37:18)*

*“FOR THE LORD LOVETH JUDGMENT,  
and FORSAKETH NOT his saints;  
THEY ARE PRESERVED FOR EVER:  
BUT THE SEED OF THE WICKED SHALL BE CUT OFF.”*

*(Psalm 37:28)*

The word for “ever” is ‘owlam’ which means **ETERNITY, PERPETUITY, WITHOUT END.** The word for “forsaketh” is ‘azab’, which means **TO LOOSE OR RELINQUISH.** God says HE WILL NOT LET THEM LOOSE, HE WILL NOT RELINQUISH HIS HOLD AND PROTECTION OVER THEM. THEY ARE HIS, AN HOLY PRIESTHOOD. They are to be preserved FOR EVER. If they are PRESERVED FOR EVER, DO THEY NOT HAVE ETERNAL LIFE?

*“THAT WHOSOEVER BELIEVETH IN HIM  
(FROM THE INNER HEART)  
SHOULD NOT PERISH, BUT HAVE ETERNAL LIFE.”*

*(John 3:15)*

*“MY SHEEP HEAR MY VOICE, AND I KNOW THEM,  
AND THEY FOLLOW ME:*

*AND I GIVE UNTO THEM ETERNAL LIFE...”*

*(John 10:27-28)*

*“For the wages of sin is death;  
but the GIFT OF GOD IS  
ETERNAL LIFE  
THROUGH JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD.”*

*(Romans 6:23)*

*“FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH,  
LAY HOLD ON ETERNAL LIFE  
(LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE),  
WHEREUNTO THOU ART ALSO CALLED,  
AND HAST PROFESSED A GOOD PROFESSION  
BEFORE MANY WITNESSES.”*

*(1 Timothy 6:12)*

*“And THIS IS THE PROMISE*

***THAT HE HATH PROMISED US,  
EVEN ETERNAL LIFE.***

***(1 John 2:25)***

***“AND THIS IS THE RECORD,  
THAT GOD HATH GIVEN TO US ETERNAL LIFE,  
AND THIS LIFE IS IN HIS SON.***

***HE THAT HATH THE SON HATH LIFE;  
AND HE THAT HATH NOT THE SON OF GOD  
HATH NOT LIFE.”***

***(1 John 5:11-12)***

If the OVERCOMER or the REGENERATE has eternal life then we could also say they have life eternal, or EVERLASTING LIFE.

***“And EVERY ONE THAT HATH FORSAKEN HOUSES,  
OR BRETHREN, OR SISTERS,  
OR FATHER, OR MOTHER, OR WIFE, OR CHILDREN,  
OR LANDS, FOR MY NAME’S SAKE,  
SHALL RECEIVE AN HUNDREDFOLD, AND SHALL  
INHERIT EVERLASTING LIFE.”***

***(Matthew 19:29)***

***“For GOD SO LOVED THE WORLD,  
THAT HE GAVE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON,  
THAT WHOSOEVER BELIEVETH IN HIM  
SHOULD NOT PERISH, BUT HAVE EVERLASTING LIFE.”***

***(John 3:16)***

***“HE THAT BELIEVETH ON THE SON  
HATH EVERLASTING LIFE:  
AND HE THAT BELIEVETH NOT THE SON  
SHALL NOT SEE LIFE; BUT THE WRATH OF GOD  
ABIDETH ON HIM.”***

***(John 3:36)***

Notice that the ONE WHO BELIEVES FROM THE INNER HEART HAS ALREADY COME INTO POSSESSION OF ETERNAL LIFE. It is a condition brought about by the NEW NATURE WITHIN, THE AGAPE LOVE NATURE.



*“VERILY, VERILY, I SAY UNTO YOU,  
HE THAT BELIEVETH ON ME HATH EVERLASTING LIFE.”  
(John 6:47)*

Can we refuse such a harmony of Scripture? There is no question whatsoever that THE REGENERATE BELIEVER, THE OVERCOMER, IS TOTALLY PROTECTED BY GOD FOR EVER. He/she has been removed from condemnation of the Great White Throne Judgment because they have already undergone it. They have been acquitted by the WORK OF CHRIST, THEY HAVE NOT FRUSTRATED THE GRACE OF GOD; they have not allowed THE GRACE OF GOD TO FAIL THEM. They are then FREE, UTTERLY, TOTALLY FREE. They are made free by the AGAPE LOVE OF CHRIST.

*“And YE SHALL KNOW THE TRUTH,  
AND THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE.”  
(John 8:32)*

*“IF THE SON SHALL MAKE YOU FREE,  
YE SHALL BE FREE INDEED.”  
(John 8:36)*

Here we HAVE THE SON, AND THE TRUTH setting the believer free. The word “if” is ‘ean’, which means **CONDITION, PROVIDED THAT, IN CASE THAT**. It is used to denote UNCERTAINTY, because IT IS NOT YET KNOWN IF THE CONDITION TO CONTINUE WILL BE MET. Of course the condition was TO CONTINUE IN THE DOCTRINES, THE WORD OF CHRIST. But how long was one to continue? For ever? Is there not in this statement a POINT AT WHICH ONE IS SET FREE?

The word for “make you free” is ‘eleutheroo’, which means **TO LIBERATE, TO EXEMPT, TO DELIVER, TO MAKE FREE, TO SET FREE**. In the second verse, where Christ says, “make free indeed”, that word free is ‘eleutheros’, which means **TO BE UNRESTRAINED, NOT A SLAVE, FREE BORN, EXEMPT FROM OBLIGATION OR LIABILITY, AT LIBERTY**. The word “indeed” is ‘ontos’, which means **REALLY, WHOLLY, TOTALLY, OF A TRUTH**. In other words, the believer that CONTINUES and CONTINUES UNTIL HE FINDS THE LIVING CHRIST, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE PERSONIFIED, THAT PERSON IS SET FREE. They are WHOLLY AND TOTALLY SET FREE, EXEMPT FROM CONDEMNATION.

If there is a “finding”, “knowing”, “seeing”, “opening”, “receiving”, “revelation”, or “manifestation” of THE LIVING CHRIST, OF AGAPE LOVE, then could we prove that AT THE POINT OF ENTERING INTO UNION IS THE THRESHOLD OF ETERNAL SECURITY? If we bring it together, we will find a perfect harmony, a perfect portrait that UNION WITH THE LIVING CHRIST, THE EXPERIENTIAL UNION IS ENTERING INTO ETERNAL SECURITY. Short of that, the BIG ‘IF’ EXCLUDES ETERNAL SECURITY. This is true because IT IS ONLY THE OVERCOMERS THAT ARE SECURE IN CHRIST. Who is an overcomer?

**“FOR WHATSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD**

**OVERCOMETH THE WORLD...”**

**(1 John 5:4)**

Anyone who has been in truth REGENERATED is BORN OF GOD. If you are BORN OF GOD, YOU ARE A SON OF GOD. It is conditional however: WHOSOEVER IS BORN OF GOD. That excludes the many. They were never born of God. They only CLAIMED THEY WERE BORN OF GOD.

**“BEHOLD, WHAT MANNER OF (AGAPE) LOVE**

**THE FATHER HATH BESTOWED UPON US,**

**THAT WE BE CALLED**

**THE SONS OF GOD...”**

**(1 John 3:1)**

If we be BORN AGAIN, A SON OF GOD, we have been given a GIFT. IT IS THE GIFT OF AGAPE LOVE. This being true, then:

**“WE KNOW THAT WE HAVE PASSED FROM DEATH UNTO**

**LIFE,**

**BECAUSE WE (AGAPE) LOVE THE BRETHEN...”**

**(1 John 3:14)**

Being born again involves the gift of agape love, and passing from death unto life involves agape love. John caps it with this:

**“...EVERY ONE THAT (AGAPE) LOVETH IS BORN OF GOD,**

**AND KNOWS GOD.”**

**(1 John 4:7)**

Now we have born of God, overcomer, death to life, all pertaining to this AGAPE LOVE TRANSACTION. Next:

**“HEREBY KNOW WE THAT WE DWELL IN HIM,**

**AND HE IN US,**  
**BECAUSE HE HATH GIVEN US OF HIS SPIRIT.”**  
**(1 John 4:13)**

There is a PASSING OVER, A POINT OF FINDING, A TIME OF OPENING, A TIME OF RECEIVING, A TIME OF TRANSACTION, A POINT OF RADICAL CHANGE, A POINT OF A CHANGE IN NATURE, A CHANGE IN ESSENCE, A LOVE CHANGE OVER TO AGAPE. It is that change ALONE that SECURES THE BELIEVER IN CHRIST, for it is in THAT CHANGE ALONE IN WHICH TRUE UNION OCCURS.

Now we come back to the one verse of the entire Bible that proves ETERNAL SECURITY more than any other verse in Scripture, it is the one the book started with:

**“AND THEN WILL I PROFESS UNTO THEM**  
**(THE UNREGENERATE BELIEVERS),**  
  
**I NEVER KNEW YOU:**  
**DEPART FROM ME, YE THAT WORK INIQUITY.”**  
**(Matthew 7:23)**

It is odd indeed that a verse which carries with it such a grave warning is the same verse that proves ETERNAL SECURITY IS ONLY FOR THE REGENERATE. The key word used by Jesus Christ is the word NEVER. There is ONLY ONE REASON THE “MANY” ARE SENT AWAY INTO RUIN: **NEVER, NOT AT ANY TIME EVER, AT NO TIME, NEVER AT ALL, NOT AT ANY TIME IN THEIR WHOLE LIVES DID CHRIST MAKE CONTACT.** They never “KISSED” the Son. They NEVER had UNION with Him.

It is vital to understand what Christ DID NOT SAY. He did NOT say:

- 1. I KNEW YOU ONCE, BUT YOU BACKSLID.**
- 2. I KNEW YOU ONCE, BUT HAVE DECIDED AGAINST YOU.**
- 3. I KNEW YOU ONCE, BUT BECAUSE OF YOUR BEHAVIOR I AM GOING TO COUNT IT AS NOT HAVING KNOWN YOU AT ALL.**

Christ made no such statement. You cannot read in what is not there. He said only one thing, and He picked His words very carefully: I NEVER KNEW YOU. That proves that IF CONTACT IS IN FACT MADE, THE BELIEVER IS WHOLLY SECURE. The rejection is made ON NEVER HAVING MADE ANY CONTACT WHATSOEVER. That is the point Christ is trying to make here. They **NEVER** came to even one point of contact, one point of union, one point of experientially KNOWING. They were supposed TO KNOW EXPERIENTIALLY. They were supposed to KNOW ABSOLUTELY BY THE WITNESS OF AGAPE LOVE

REVELATION AND BESTOWMENT. IT IS SOMETHING INSIDE, SOMETHING WHOLLY AND TOTALLY KNOWABLE.

It confirms totally the NARROW WAY. It confirms totally THE WHOLE PREMISE OF THIS BOOK. Their knowing was an ACT OF FAITH. Their knowing was a SIMPLE BELIEVING. That is nothing more than NEW AGE POSITIVE THINKING, POSITIVE CONFESSION. That is nothing more than SAYING SOMETHING IS TRUE BECAUSE YOU WANT IT TO BE TRUE.

The New Age concepts of positive thinking have infiltrated the Church so readily because the modern faith movement DESTROYED UTTERLY SCRIPTURAL BASED UNION WITH CHRIST. THE FATHERS OF THE MODERN FAITH MOVEMENT, WHICH BEGAN IN 1500s AND BEYOND, GUTTED CHRISTIANITY, STOLE AWAY TRUE UNION, TRUE KNOWING, TRUE EXPERIENTIAL UNION, TRUE POWER, TRUE SALVATION. It is a MASTER SATANIC COUNTERFEIT, A DAMNABLE HERESY BROUGHT IN BY SATANIC IMPOSTORS, WHO PARADE AROUND IN THEIR HYPERCRITICAL ROBES OF EXPERTISE. THEY ARE LIARS, CHARLATANS, IMPOSTORS, DECEIVERS, BASTARDS WHO WILL BURN FOR ETERNITY IN THE HOT FIRES OF DAMNATION IF THEY WILL NOT REPENT.

It is this very movement that Christ, Peter and Paul and Jude and John WARNED US ABOUT, WARNED US WOULD COME. A heresy so clever, so close to the real thing, that THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS WOULD BUY INTO IT AND BE DAMNED FOR ETERNITY BECAUSE OF IT. Indeed, the modern faith movement of INSTANT CHRISTIANS, INSTANT SALVATION, INSTANT REGENERATION, INSTANT UNION, AND THE DENIAL OF THE EXPERIENTIAL ENCOUNTER WITH JESUS CHRIST, SO THAT WE MAY ENTER INTO UNION WITH HIM, CARRY THE SEEDS OF ETERNAL RUIN. It is THE FALSE GOSPEL! It is a total redefinition of grace, faith and works.

The vast majority of Christians and all Christ rejecters do not avail themselves of the GRACE OF GOD. They do not avail themselves of ETERNAL LIFE. They refuse the narrow way, they will not allow agape love to judge them in this life, so they must face that judgment in the next life, and there they all fail. This is the record, this is the testimony. We have looked at this from the perspective of DIRECT STATEMENTS IN SCRIPTURE, those statements that cannot be misinterpreted because there are so many of them, and they form a harmony with the sin issue.

Paul then makes a sweeping argument of the regenerated believer, the overcomer:

***“And WE KNOW that all things work together for good  
TO THEM THAT (AGAPE) LOVE GOD (THE REGENERATED),***

***TO THEM WHO ARE THE CALLED ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE.***

***FOR WHOM HE DID FOREKNOW,  
HE ALSO DID PREDESTINATE***

***TO BE***

***CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON  
(WHICH IS PURE AGAPE LOVE),***

*THAT HE MIGHT BE THE FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BRETHREN.*

*MOREOVER WHOM HE DID PREDESTINATE,  
THEM HE ALSO CALLED: AND WHOM HE CALLED,  
THEM HE ALSO JUSTIFIED:  
AND WHOM HE JUSTIFIED,  
THEM HE ALSO GLORIFIED.*

*WHAT SHALL WE THEN SAY TO THESE THINGS?  
IF GOD BE FOR US, WHO CAN BE AGAINST US?*

*He that spared not HIS OWN SON,  
BUT DELIVERED HIM UP FOR US ALL,  
HOW SHALL HE NOT WITH HIM ALSO FREELY  
GIVE US ALL THINGS?*

*WHO SHALL LAY ANY THING  
TO THE CHARGE OF GOD'S ELECT?  
IT IS GOD THAT JUSTIFIETH.*

*WHO IS HE THAT CONDEMNEETH?  
IT IS CHRIST THAT DIED,  
YEA RATHER,  
THAT IS RISEN AGAIN,  
WHO IS EVEN AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD,  
WHO ALSO MAKETH INTERCESSION FOR US.*

*WHO SHALL SEPARATE US FROM THE  
(AGAPE) LOVE OF CHRIST?  
SHALL TRIBULATION, OR DISTRESS,  
OR PERSECUTION, OR FAMINE, OR NAKEDNESS,  
OR PERIL, OR SWORD?*

*AS IT IS WRITTEN, FOR THY SAKE WE ARE KILLED  
ALL THE DAY LONG; WE ARE ACCOUNTED AS SHEEP  
FOR THE SLAUGHTER.*

*NAY, IN ALL THESE THINGS WE ARE  
MORE THAN CONQUERORS THROUGH HIM  
THAT (AGAPE) LOVED US.*

*FOR I AM PERSUADED, THAT NEITHER DEATH,  
NOR LIFE, NOR ANGELS, NOR PRINCIPALITIES,  
NOR POWERS, NOR THINGS PRESENT,  
NOR THINGS TO COME,*

*NOR HEIGHT, NOR DEPTH, NOR ANY OTHER CREATURE,*

**SHALL BE ABLE TO SEPARATE US FROM THE**  
**(AGAPE) LOVE OF GOD,**  
**WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.”**  
**(Romans 8:28-39)**

It could not be more elegantly stated. THE SECURITY OF THE REGENERATED BELIEVER IS ABSOLUTE, UNSHAKABLE, TOTAL, COMPLETE.

The vast majority of Christians APPROPRIATED THESE VERSES OF SCRIPTURE and many others like them BY AN ACT OF FAITH, and never COMPLIED with the commands of Christ to WALK THE NARROW WAY TO MEET HIM FACE TO FACE. They never entered in to the protection of a NEW HEART, A NEW COVENANT. As a result, their appropriation ends in **BITTER DEFEAT AND UTTER SHOCK, AS THEY FIND OUT THEY ARE NOT COVERED BY THE BLOOD OF CHRIST,** and that their lifelong belief in eternal security turned out to be a reality of **eternal ruin and loss.**

We are now going to approach this issue from another angle, which is that the believer is SEALED FOR ETERNITY BY CHRIST AND GOD AT REGENERATION, and is given an EARNEST DEPOSIT OF AGAPE LOVE, WHICH IS ALSO A WITNESS TO THE BELIEVER. It is this EARNEST DEPOSIT which is the PROOF, THE EVIDENCE OF SALVATION, AND IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH FAITH.

*“Now he which **STABLISHETH** us with you **IN CHRIST,**  
and hath **ANOINTED US,** is **GOD;***

**WHO HATH ALSO SEALED US,**  
**AND GIVEN THE EARNEST OF THE SPIRIT**  
**IN OUR HEARTS.”**  
**(2 Corinthians 1:21-22)**

It is God who calls, ESTABLISHES AND ANOINTS. He also SEALS US, AND GIVES US WHAT IS CALLED THE “EARNEST”. The word “stablishes” is ‘bebaioo’, which means **TO STABILITATE, TO CONFIRM, TO MAKE STEADFAST.** The word “sealed” is ‘sphragizo’ which means **TO STAMP WITH A SIGNET FOR SECURITY OR PRESERVATION, TO SEAL UP OR TO ATTEST, A SIGN OF OWNERSHIP.** It is a sign of the genuine article, and who owns it. Notice it is GOD HIMSELF that ESTABLISHES US; GOD HIMSELF WHO SEALS US, AND GOD HIMSELF THAT GIVES US THE EARNEST.

The word “earnest” is ‘arrhabon’, which means **A PLEDGE, A PART OF THE PURCHASE MONEY ON PROPERTY, GIVEN IN ADVANCE AS A SECURITY DEPOSIT TO PROVE FUTURE INTENT OF PURCHASE.** When you buy real estate, you usually are required to put down money which is called “earnest” money. It proves you have a real intent to purchase the property that you INTEND TO FOLLOW THROUGH. It is PROOF OF INTENT. Courts can even FORCE YOU BY DECREE TO PURCHASE PROPERTY BASED UPON THE EARNEST MONEY CONTRACT.

What is this “earnest” of this transaction between the believer and God? It is the DEPOSIT OF THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST, THE SPIRIT OF AGAPE LOVE, THE “SEED” OF CHRIST. The companion verses are 1 John 4:13 and 1 John 3:14, along with 1 John 3:1. We are given a LITERAL DOWN PAYMENT, A LITERAL EARNEST TO PROVE TO US THE VALIDITY OF THE AGREEMENT. It has NO OTHER PURPOSE, BUT A PROOF, AN EVIDENCE. God never asked the human race to buy SIGHT UNSEEN. To enter into an AGREEMENT such as the New Covenant, God would GIVE US A PROOF, AND EVIDENCE THAT THE CONTRACT HAD BEEN RATIFIED AND AGREED TO BY BOTH PARTIES. That SEALS THE DEAL, AND **WE ARE SEALED.**

Is the earnest to be taken BY FAITH? Are we to just believe it because the Bible says so? NOT AT ALL. THIS IS TOO IMPORTANT TO BE LEFT TO SPECULATION OR POSITIVE THINKING. This is a **KNOWABLE, EXPERIENTIALLY KNOWABLE EVIDENCE AND PROOF.** Otherwise it would not be a PARTIAL PAYMENT. How would you KNOW, as John says we ARE TO KNOW, UNLESS IT WAS literally and experientially knowable? The answer is obvious, IT WOULD NOT BE. The “earnest” is a LITERAL GIFT FROM GOD, THE “SEED” OF CHRIST, THE KNOWABLE AGAPE LOVE SPIRIT.

Let us say I want to buy something from you. Your price is \$200. I say to you. “I want to buy that, but I only have \$50.00 with me. Can I put down my \$50.00 and come back tomorrow with the extra \$150? I will buy it, this is my earnest money.” I then hand you a FAITH \$50.00 or NOTHING WHATEVER. I say “IT IS BY FAITH THAT I PAY YOU. BELIEVE ME, I WILL BE BACK.” If you are a stupid idiot, you will take my word for it. If you are a good business man, you will laugh in my face. BUT IF I HAND YOU A BRAND NEW \$50 DOLLAR BILL, THEN YOU HAVE EVIDENCE, A PROOF, AN EARNEST. Your evidence is what is in your hand. I HAVE SEALED THE DEAL WITH MY DEPOSIT. The believer is to have a **ROCK SOLID PROOF AND EVIDENCE OF HIS/HER SALVATION.**

The many had no evidence whatever, for their faith alone was their evidence. They accepted a FAITH \$50 BILL, OR NOTHING AS THEIR EVIDENCE. FAITH ALONE is positive thinking, positive confession wrapped up in Christian gift wrap. Light it with a match and it all burns up, as do those foolish enough to buy into it. THE EVIDENCE IS REAL, LITERAL, EXPERIENTIALLY, KNOWABLE. We exercise our faith until we MAKE CONTACT, AND THEN WE OBTAIN OUR EVIDENCE, OUR EARNEST DEPOSIT OF AGAPE LOVE.

**“FOR WE KNOW**  
*that if our EARTHLY HOUSE OF THIS TABERNACLE WERE DISSOLVED,*  
*we have a building of God,*  
*an house not made with hands,*  
**ETERNAL in the heavens.**

*Now HE THAT HATH WROUGHT US FOR THE SELFSAME THING*  
*IS GOD,*  
*WHO ALSO HATH GIVEN UNTO US*  
**THE EARNEST OF THE SPIRIT.**

**THEREFORE WE ARE ALWAYS CONFIDENT,**

***KNOWING THAT, WHILST WE ARE AT HOME IN THE BODY,  
WE ARE ABSENT FROM THE LORD...***

***(FOR WE WALK BY FAITH, NOT BY SIGHT.)***

***(2 Corinthians 5:1, 5-7)***

How are we TO KNOW? By the EARNEST DEPOSIT OF AGAPE LOVE. You see Christ has come, He has appeared, and He has left HIS SEED in us, if so we are born of God. THAT SEED REMAINING IN US IS OUR EARNEST MONEY DEPOSIT; IT IS OUR RESURRECTED SPIRITUAL INNER MAN. We have THAT KNOWLEDGE, THAT LITERAL KNOWABLE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWLEDGE. Paul says WE KNOW IT FOR A FACT. That has nothing to do with faith at all. THAT IS A KNOWING. The other part is BY FAITH. We know Christ has come, we know He gave us THE EARNEST. We then BY THIS KNOWING, APPROPRIATE THAT WHICH HAS NOT YET HAPPENED, THAT WHICH IS YET FUTURE BY FAITH, BECAUSE THAT PART OF OUR JOURNEY IS NOT BY SIGHT YET, IT HAS NOT OCCURRED.

So we proceed from FAITH TO KNOWING, BACK TO A COMBINATION OF FAITH AND KNOWING. The scientists who built the atom bomb passed from faith to knowing, and then from that KNOWING, THEY COMBINE FAITH AGAIN TO GO TO A STRONGER, SURER FOUNDATION. Paul is quite specific here: HE KNOWS, HE IS CONFIDENT. Part one of the deal had been proven true, WHY WOULD GOD LIE ABOUT THE OTHER PART? HE WOULD NOT! Thus we are to have an ENTIRE CONFIDENCE, PART OF KNOWING, PART ON FAITH. COMBINE THE TWO TOGETHER AND THAT CHRISTIAN IS A DEADLY CHRISTIAN TO SATAN.

***“In whom ye also TRUSTED,  
AFTER THAT YE HEARD THE WORD OF TRUTH,  
THE GOSPEL OF YOUR SALVATION:  
IN WHOM ALSO AFTER THAT YE BELIEVED,  
YE WERE SEALED with THAT HOLY SPIRIT OF PROMISE,***

***WHICH IS THE EARNEST OF OUR INHERITANCE  
UNTIL THE REDEMPTION OF THE PURCHASED POSSESSION,  
UNTO THE PRAISE OF HIS GLORY.”***

***(Ephesians 1:13-14)***

We have gone over this verse before, but notice how it ties together the SEQUENCE TO THE EARNEST DEPOSIT OF AGAPE LOVE: hearing, trusting, believing, EARNEST. It confirms the narrow way; it confirms BELIEVING FROM THE HEART, AND TIES IT TO THE EARNEST OF AGAPE LOVE. We have a perfect harmony. Notice what the earnest deposit of agape love does: IT SEALS US UNTIL THE DAY OF REDEMPTION. We are SEALED. We are CLOSED UP, OWNED, FOUND GENUINE IN CHRIST WITH THE AGAPE LOVE EARNEST DEPOSIT. It again proves ETERNAL SECURITY FOR THE REGENERATED.



**“NEVERTHELESS THE FOUNDATION OF GOD  
STANDETH SURE,  
HAVING THIS SEAL,  
THE LORD KNOWETH THEM THAT ARE HIS...”**  
(2 Timothy 2:19)

**“And GRIEVE NOT THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD,  
WHEREBY YE ARE SEALED UNTO THE DAY  
OF REDEMPTION.”**  
(Ephesians 4:30)

**“THE SPIRIT ITSELF BEARETH  
WITNESS WITH OUR SPIRIT,  
THAT WE ARE THE CHILDREN OF GOD.”**  
(Romans 8:16)

How are we to have a WITNESS OF THE SPIRIT, unless it has been GRANTED US, A DEPOSIT MADE, AND WE BE SEALED? The word for “witness” is ‘summartureo’, which means **TO TESTIFY JOINTLY, TO CORROBORATE BY EVIDENCE, TO TESTIFY UNTO, TO BEAR WITNESS TO**. The very word witness IS THE OPPOSITE OF FAITH, IT IS AN ABSOLUTE KNOWING. How could there possibly be a real WITNESS if there is not a true, experiential knowing. If a man comes up to you and points a gun in your face and says “give me your money or die”, then you have AN EXPERIENTIAL WITNESS. The earnest of the man IS HIS GUN. THE WITNESS IS HIS GUN. Staring down the wrong end of a weapon IS INDEED A WITNESS. It proves wholly that there IN FACT IS A FINDING, AN EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING, AND IT IS NOT BY FAITH WHATSOEVER, BUT IS THEN OPPOSITE OF FAITH, A REVELATION, A MANIFESTATION, A SEEING DIRECT FROM GOD, SO THE BELIEVER KNOWS ABSOLUTELY HIS POSITION BEFORE CHRIST.

**“WHEREOF THE HOLY GHOST ALSO  
IS A WITNESS TO US: FOR AFTER THAT HE HAD SAID BEFORE,  
  
THIS IS THE COVENANT THAT I WILL MAKE WITH THEM  
AFTER THOSE DAYS, SAITH THE LORD,  
I WILL PUT MY LAWS INTO THEIR HEARTS,  
AND IN THEIR MINDS WILL I WRITE THEM;  
  
AND THEIR SINS AND INIQUITIES  
WILL I REMEMBER NO MORE.”**  
(Hebrews 10:15-17)

The WITNESS OF THE SPIRIT is herein tied DIRECTLY to the NEW HEART COVENANT. The New Covenant is tied directly to the heart and mind. If God put within you HIS NEW FORM

OF AGAPE LOVE, AND IT IS IN YOUR MIND, WOULD YOU NOT KNOW IT? All of this is tied DIRECTLY TO THEIR SINS BEING UTTERLY FORGOTTEN. You see AGAPE LOVE COVERS ALL SINS. It is the COVERING OF HOLINESS FOR THE REAL BELIEVER. It is not that the believer is holy, or righteous, but that AGAPE LOVE IS HOLY AND RIGHTEOUS. It is GRACE UNTO GRACE. Do you see how it all ties together? When agape love comes, when it is given, IT IS FULLY EXPERIENTIAL, AND IS THEREFORE A WITNESS. This witness is our EARNEST, WHICH IS OUR PROMISE THAT GOD WILL DELIVER IN THE END, AT THE TIME OF LITERAL REDEMPTION. We are to KNOW IN THE ABSOLUTE, EXPERIENTIAL MEANING OF THE WORD KNOW. It means exactly what it says.

Agape love COVERS SINS. If it alone COVERS SINS, then THE FINDING OF IT, THE GETTING OF IT SHOULD BE A TOP PRIORITY IN ANYONE'S LIFE, FOR WITHOUT IT, THEY WILL BURN, AND WITH IT, THEIR SINS ARE COVERED, AND DONE AWAY WITH:

***“AND ABOVE ALL THINGS  
HAVE FERVENT (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY AMONG YOURSELVES:***

***FOR (AGAPE LOVE) CHARITY  
SHALL COVER THE MULTITUDE OF SINS.”***

***(1 Peter 4:8)***

It is AGAPE LOVE THAT COVERS ALL SINS. It is agape love that fulfills all of the law. It is agape love that SETS US FREE. Therefore with all thy getting LAY HOLD OF AGAPE LOVE AND BE COVERED BY THE CLOAK OF JESUS CHRIST.

***“This is he (Jesus Christ)  
THAT CAME BY WATER (AGAPE LOVE)  
AND BLOOD (IN THE FLESH), EVEN JESUS CHRIST;  
NOT BY WATER ONLY (NOT BY AGAPE LOVE ONLY),  
BUT BY WATER (AGAPE LOVE) AND BLOOD (IN THE FLESH).***

***AND IT IS THE SPIRIT THAT  
BEARETH WITNESS, BECAUSE THE SPIRIT IS TRUTH.”***

***(1 John 5:6)***

Jesus Christ did not just come in the FLESH AND BLOOD. He came with PURE AGAPE LOVE ESSENCE. This was the INNER MAN OF CHRIST. It was the TRUTH THAT SETS FREE. It was that aspect of Christ to which Christ referred to when He said you had to eat His flesh and drink His blood. IT WAS THE GODMAN COME IN HUMAN FLESH, THE REDEEMER. He was born of a woman, born under the curse (BLOOD). He was also GOD, come in the VERY IMAGE OF GOD, WHICH IS AGAPE LOVE (WATER).

JOHN SAYS THERE IS A WITNESS OF THE SPIRIT, AND THAT WITNESS IS THE TRUTH. That is the agape love of Christ, the WATER.

**“HE THAT BELIEVETH ON THE SON OF GOD  
HATH THE WITNESS IN HIMSELF...”**  
**(1 John 5:10)**

If we believe FROM OUR INNER HEART, we have THE WITNESS OF AGAPE LOVE TO BACK IT UP. It does not say that BELIEF ITSELF IS THE WITNESS. That is what the false prophets attempt to claim. They have redefined belief and faith TO MAKE FAITH AND BELIEF THEMSELVES THE EVIDENCE, THE PROOF, THE WITNESS, SOMETHING THE SCRIPTURE CATEGORICALLY DENIES. It is a LITERAL AND REAL proof, an evidence, an experiential knowing, A SEEING. It is our EARNEST MONEY DEPOSIT. It is a gift from God so that HIS CHILDREN KNOW HIM, AND THEY HEAR HIS VOICE, AND THEY FOLLOW HIM. We are back where we began, we have come full circle.

There is no question that eternal security is an absolute fact. There is no question that this security comes into being at REAL AND LITERAL EXPERIENTIAL UNION WITH JESUS CHRIST, and that after that we have **BEEN SEALED, AND THE EARNEST DEPOSIT OF THE SPIRIT HAS BEEN GRANTED, AND IS OUR WITNESS.** The agape love of God comes into our hearts, and we know it IN OUR MINDS. It is not BY FAITH THAT IT COMES, FOR OUR FAITH HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH GOD. When God comes, HE COMES, and when GOD BESTOWS, HE BESTOWS. What has that got to do with OUR faith? When God comes, HE ACTS UPON YOU, HE DOES SOMETHING TO YOU, HE CHANGES YOU, HE CHANGES YOUR NATURE. HE COMES, HE APPEARS, HE SHOWS AND TELLS, HE GIVES AND CHANGES YOUR HEART OF HEARTS. It is all done by GOD UNTO YOU.

It is not done by simply CLAIMING IT HAS BEEN DONE BY “FAITH”. It is not accomplished by CLAIMING IT HAS BEEN ACCOMPLISHED BY “BELIEF”. Your faith, your belief are NOT IN OPERATION WHATSOEVER WHEN CHRIST ARRIVES. It is SOMETHING DONE TO YOU, and you have little to say or do about it. God is SOVEREIGN, thank the Lord, so men cannot MEDDLE WITH HIS TRUTH. The false prophets, the false teachers, the many rejected, the non-overcomers ALL CLAIMED THEIR SALVATION BY AN “ACT OF FAITH”, A “DECISION FOR CHRIST”. It cost them all eternity.

When Christ came to me, personally, I had no faith left. I was dead. I was totally, utterly dead. I was a LOST SINNER. I had NOTHING LEFT, I was DRAINED OF EARTHLY LIFE. When He came, HE CAME. I did not conjure it up out of my mind. I did not just “imagine” He came. It was not an “act of faith”. It was not a “belief”. HE LITERALLY CAME AND SHOWED TO ME THE SECRET OF ALL LIFE IN THE UNIVERSE. I looked into HIS LOVE. It is a beautiful thing to behold. It is an awesome thing to behold. It was not a FAITH OPERATION, or a BELIEF OPERATION. HE WAS THERE, RIGHT THERE, RIGHT IN FRONT OF ME, AROUND ME, INSIDE ME, SHOWING ME THIS IN THE SPIRIT.

When He spoke, I literally heard His voice. He called me by name. It sounded as though it came from everywhere, but from nowhere. I could not determine from WHENCE IT CAME, which is exactly what the Bible says! He got right to the point. The point was, I DID NOT AGAPE LOVE. The point was, I WAS DEAD BECAUSE I HAD NO AGAPE LOVE. The point was, I WAS LOST IN MY SINS AND DOOMED TO ETERNAL RUIN BECAUSE OF MY LACK OF AGAPE LOVE. I was simply DEAD IN MY TRESPASSES AND SINS, JUST EXACTLY AS

THE BIBLE STATES, ONLY I KNEW IT EXPERIENTIALLY. It was not a “belief” that I held, IT WAS A LITERAL, REAL, AWFUL FACT! No faith is required for that, it was plain as day! There is no faith required here, it is a EXPERIENTIAL REALITY, and it is a REALITY YOU MUST UNDERGO TO FIND JESUS CHRIST. Otherwise, you simply have a FAITH and a BELIEF in the HISTORICAL CHRIST, who CANNOT, and WILL NOT SAVE YOU!

That is why Paul said “WE KNOW”. We know because we UNDERWENT THE PROCESS EXPERIENTIALLY and it went down according TO THE WORD OF GOD. There are millions of “experiences”. Satan is loaded with all sorts of lying signs and wonders. He shows up as a bright light in a room and speaks. He will do all sorts of things to FOOL THE UNWARY. But you have a PROTECTION. BY TWO OR MORE WITNESSES IS A THING ESTABLISHED. THE FIRST WITNESS IS THE WORD OF GOD. THE SECOND WITNESS IS THE REVELATION ITSELF, AND BECAUSE GOD CANNOT AND WILL NOT GO AGAINST HIS WRITTEN WORD, THE REVELATION, THE PROCESS MUST BE IN FULL AND EXACT ACCORD TO SCRIPTURE. If there is variance, it is not of God, and needs to be TESTED. TEST THE SPIRITS, TO SEE IF THEY BE OF GOD.

Many people claim that this REVELATION, MANIFESTATION is a NEW AGE CONCEPT. It is not, IT IS DEMANDED, ABSOLUTELY DEMANDED BY SCRIPTURE.

## **THE RUIN OF THE MANY**

Opposed to eternal security is of course the opposite concept that UNLESS ONE CONTINUES, UNLESS ONE DOES FIGHT, LABOR AND STRIVE, WE WILL NEVER GO TO HEAVEN. That concept is true, as we will prove, UP TO THE POINT OF REGENERATION. After regeneration, they have entered into THE REST OF GOD, for the REST IS IN THE LOVE OF GOD. The many were not under eternal security. They could not have been, for they were sent away. That is hardly secure in Christ.

I have never been in a church that did not claim they were teaching the TRUTH from the Bible. I have never met a Christian that was not going to heaven, with the exception of a VERY FEW WHO WERE HONEST ENOUGH WITH THEMSELVES TO FIGURE OUT THEY WERE NOT SAVED. Someone is wrong here, because Christ informs us that THE VAST MAJORITY OF CHRISTIANS ARE GOING TO HELL, NOT HEAVEN. There are then a whole host of MISINFORMED CHRISTIANS, WHO WILL FIND TO THEIR UTTER SHOCK THEY WERE WRONG. We have been attempting to find the one common denominator in all those that DO NOT MAKE IT TO HEAVEN. IT HAS BEEN CONSISTENT THROUGHOUT ALL SCRIPTURE:

## **THEY WERE NOT REGENERATED.**

We have then a CONSISTENT TESTIMONY THAT THE DIVISION LINE IS IN FACT REGENERATION, AGAPE LOVE BESTOWMENT, KNOWING CHRIST. This must be true for KNOWING GOD AND CHRIST IS ETERNAL LIFE:

**“AND THIS IS LIFE ETERNAL,  
THAT THEY MIGHT KNOW THEE THE ONLY TRUE GOD,  
AND JESUS CHRIST, WHOM THOU HAST SENT.”**  
(John 17:3)

Nothing could be more bluntly stated. REGENERATION IS KNOWING GOD AND JESUS CHRIST. We cannot KNOW THEM UNTIL THEY REVEAL THEMSELVES TO US BY A SUPERNATURAL ACT BASED UPON THEIR OWN WILL. If we come to the point of KNOWING GOD AND CHRIST, then we have moved to a position of LIFE ETERNAL. We have crossed over the gulf that separates us, and we KNOW WITH AN ABSOLUTE EXPERIENTIAL KNOWING, A LITERAL REALITY.

This being the case, then the vast majority of Christians NEVER CAME TO KNOW CHRIST OR GOD. We have no options. That is exactly what Christ said to them: “I NEVER KNEW YOU”. Their “knowing”, their “seeing”, their “revelation”, their “manifestation” was in fact ALL DONE BY AN **ACT OF FAITH**. THEY MERELY CLAIMED IT WAS TRUE BY TAKING SCRIPTURE AND **APPROPRIATING IT BY FAITH ALONE**.

But what of others, WHO KNEW WHAT THEY WERE TO DO, AND DID NOT DO IT? WHAT OF THEM? Can you fall away from the NARROW WAY? Can you go part way and THEN GIVE IT UP? The answer is YES, YOU CAN. Evidently many do, for they will not make the **TRUE COMMITMENT NECESSARY TO WALK IT**. The obstacles in the parable of the sower rise up and engulf them. Satan and his demons, false Christian theology (the faith gospel) rise up and devour many. Then come the cares of this world that rise up and choke the more dedicated, and sweep them off the narrow way. **ONLY A TINY BUNCH MAKE IT THROUGH**. They have taken God at His literal word, and they fight the fight of faith until **THE KNOWING**.

We will now look at some very deadly verses of Scripture that are used to attempt to prove that one can lose their salvation. The point is **THEY NEVER HAD SALVATION TO BEGIN WITH**. You cannot lose something you never had. You cannot have taken from you that which was never granted in the first place. **WE HAVE ALREADY PROVED IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO LOSE AUTHENTIC SALVATION**. It simply is NOT POSSIBLE. If this is true, then ALL VERSES OF SCRIPTURE THAT PERTAIN TO BEING LOST MUST BE, have to be applied to the walk or to those who never make the walk, or who give up during the process of the walk. They only **CLAIMED A SALVATION**. Claiming it and POSSESSING IT are two different things.

***“For it IS IMPOSSIBLE  
FOR THOSE WHO WERE ONCE ENLIGHTENED,  
AND HAVE TASTED OF THE HEAVENLY GIFT,  
AND WERE MADE PARTAKERS OF THE HOLY GHOST,  
  
AND HAVE TASTED THE GOOD WORD OF GOD,  
AND THE POWERS OF THE WORLD TO COME,  
  
IF THEY SHALL FALL AWAY,***

**TO RENEW THEM AGAIN UNTO REPENTANCE;  
SEEING THEY CRUCIFY TO THEMSELVES  
THE SON OF GOD AFRESH,  
AND PUT HIM TO AN OPEN SHAME.”  
(Hebrews 6:4-6)**

These verses of Scripture prove what has been said previously. One CAN BE BAPTIZED IN THE HOLY SPIRIT INTO THE BODY OF CHRIST, BE GIVEN GIFTS, AND STILL FALL AWAY AND NEVER ARRIVE AT TRUE UNION WITH CHRIST.

I can only tell you from what I personally know. When I came to the revelation of Christ, and KNEW WHAT LOVE WAS, I also knew that if I did not accept, I WAS ETERNALLY LOST. It was not a fearful thing; it was simply a matter of actual fact, very plain, very obvious. Jesus did not say it, but I KNEW IT ANYWAY, AND I KNEW IT POSITIVELY. I had come all the way. I not only knew that Jesus Christ was Messiah, the Son of God, but now I had met Him face to face. I KNEW WHO HE WAS, I KNEW HIS ESSENCE, I KNEW WHAT THE NEW COVENANT WAS ALL ABOUT. I could have fallen away. I could have said NO, I CANNOT. Had I done that, NEVER AGAIN WOULD GOD WORK WITH ME TO BRING ME AGAIN TO THAT POINT, BECAUSE IT WOULD BE TO NO AVAIL.

I would be crucifying Christ over again, for naught. If I did not accept the first time, I would not the second time. There comes a point in which GOD WILL NOT STRIVE ANYMORE AFTER A SOUL. He evidently gives up AT VARIOUS PLACES ALONG THE WAY, AND LETS THEM GO. He gave them a chance, even though in His foreknowledge He knew they would not make it. They WILL NEVER AGAIN BE DEALT WITH BY GOD EXCEPT AT THE JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST. There is evidently something about the Christian belief structure that MAKES A PERSON GO ALL THE WAY TO UNION, OR CAUSES THEM TO TURN BACK AT VARIOUS POINTS ALONG THE WAY. This is not the same thing as BACKSLIDING. This is far worse than that, this is coming to a point IN WHICH GOD HIMSELF RELEASES HIS POWER, AND THE BELIEVER ACTUALLY BECOMES AN APOSTATE, AND TURNS HIS BACK UPON GOD. GOD THEN REFUSES TO DELIVER THE SOUL, for the heart is not right within.

One can then come to the point of REVELATION AND OFFER AND STILL REFUSE IT, OR TURN IT DOWN. Why anyone would is beyond me, but it is possible. Jesus does NOT DEMAND to be allowed into the heart. He asks only if a soul wants AGAPE LOVE, but He does not demand they take it, or accept it. IT IS A FREE WILL CHOICE.

These verses of Scripture have to be taken in their proper context. They are addressed to Jews who have left Judaism and have embraced Christianity. These Jews have been enlightened to the truth of Jesus Christ as Messiah and redeemer. They have tasted of the Holy Spirit and have had the gifts of the spirit. They have tasted of the good Word of God, could work miracles, and thus HAVE EVIDENCE AND PROOF THAT THE WORD OF GOD IS TRUE, THAT CHRIST IS TRUE. They are, however, UNREGENERATE MEN. They have not walked the narrow way TO THE DISTANCE, TO THE FINDING OF AGAPE LOVE. They fall short, and they fall away for various reasons, probably in this case HEAVY PERSECUTION.

These may well be those of the stony ground, who have no root in themselves, and under heavy persecution fall away, and RENOUNCE JESUS CHRIST. These are they WHO WILLFULLY

BECOME APOSTATES TO SAVE THEIR NECKS IN TIME OF SEVERE AND DEADLY PERSECUTION. It will happen again, especially in America as antichrist forces wipe out the Christians. Jesus says this very thing will happen in Matthew 24, Luke 21 and Mark 13. These people are **WILLFUL APOSTATES, WILLFUL REJECTERS**. It does not apply to any believer at all that is sincere and attempting to find Christ. It does not even apply to the “many” in that sense of the word, for they are all UNDER DECEPTION, and there is nothing WILLFULL therein, but instead DELUSION as to their position before Christ.

This is not a falling away of mere professors, which were never really convinced of the Gospel, for how can they fall away from anything, they are empty to begin with. Nor can this refer to what we call the backslider, for Christ offers salvation to ALL WHO WILL COME ON HIS TERMS, and we are all backsliders to one degree or another. This is a reference to the DELIBERATE AND WILLFUL APOSTATE WHO ELECTS TO RENOUNCE JESUS CHRIST TO SAVE HIS NECK AND REFUTES THE GOSPEL AND BECOMES AN ENEMY OF CHRIST. Many of these so called “Christians” turned others in to the Roman forces, and thus BECAME AS PAUL BEFORE HIS CONVERSION.

Apostasy is a dangerous thing, for the apostate is as a lover scorned, and comes to hate Christ with a total hatred, and to hate His people with a perfect hatred. He is far worse than the unbeliever, for he becomes a true persecutor, a hunter, a bounty worker, and the fires of hell await him eagerly. The next reference to these Jewish apostates, which is also a warning to any Christian, is found in Hebrews 10:

***“FOR IF WE SIN WILLFULLY  
AFTER THAT WE HAVE RECEIVED THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE TRUTH,  
THERE REMAINETH NO MORE SACRIFICE FOR SINS,  
BUT A CERTAIN FEARFUL LOOKING FOR OF JUDGMENT  
AND FIERY INDIGNATION, WHICH SHALL DEVOUR***

**THE ADVERSARIES.**

***HE THAT DESPISED MOSES’ LAW DIED WITHOUT MERCY  
UNDER TWO OR THREE WITNESSES:  
OF HOW MUCH SORER PUNISHMENT, SUPPOSE YE,  
SHALL HE BE THOUGHT WORTHY,  
WHO HATH TRODDEN UNDER FOOT THE SON OF GOD,  
AND HATH COUNTED THE BLOOD OF THE COVENANT,  
WHEREWITH HE WAS SANCTIFIED, AN UNHOLY THING,  
AND HATH DONE DESPITE UNTO THE SPIRIT OF GRACE?”***

**(Hebrews 10:26-29)**

This is a very frightful verse of Scripture indeed, for it says THAT EVEN ONE SIN COMMITTED WILLFULLY IS NOT COVERED WHATSOEVER. In other words, if I say or do or think ANYTHING out of line with the Word of God I am lost for ever more, and there is nothing anyone can do to save me, for THERE IS NO MORE SACRIFICE FOR SIN.

On the surface that is what it says, but we have to take this, and place it into context, and then take that context and place it against the entire Bible and the doctrine of sin and forgiveness.

When we do that we run into a major problem with this verse of Scripture. It stands **UTTERLY OPPOSED TO EVERY CONCEPT OF AGAPE LOVE, OF FORGIVENESS, OF THE COMMANDS OF CHRIST, OF SECURITY IN CHRIST, OF HIS MINISTRY IN THE HEAVENS AS OUR INTERCESSOR.**

Jesus Christ commanded us to FORGIVE every one their trespasses AGAINST US. He did not mention if it was willful or not, for what difference does it make, A SIN IS A SIN IS A SIN. If a brother in Christ robs you \$5,000 does it matter if it was willful or a mistake? You are still out your \$5000.00, and the REASON does not really matter. If Jesus commands that we forgive our brothers SEVENTY TIMES SEVEN OR WITHOUT NUMBER, then how in the world can He do any less?

If the nature of agape love IS UNCONDITIONAL AND LOVES EVEN ITS ENEMIES, AND THIS NATURE IS THE VERY ESSENCE OF CHRIST, THEN HOW COULD HE DAMN THE SOUL FOR EVEN ONE SIN, NO MATTER HOW MINOR? There is no degree of sin listed; it says **WILLFUL SIN OF WHATEVER DEGREE.** If the believer was a sinner prior to being called by God, then of what merit does he/she after the call? None. GRACE IS GRACE. If we cannot be saved by GOOD WORKS, then we cannot be damned by bad works. Sin is a bad work. Work is work. Works have nothing to do with grace, they are opposed.

A soul is damned not for good works or bad works, but because OF THE LACK OF AGAPE LOVE WITHIN. There is no other reason listed in the Bible. Therefore I conclude that this verse ALTHOUGH TRUE, COULD NOT AND DOES NOT APPLY TO THE REGENERATE BELIEVER, BUT INSTEAD TO THE WILLFUL APOSTATE, THE REJECTER OF CHRIST. The sin here is the SIN OF APOSTASY, OF BLASPHEMY AGAINST THE HOLY SPIRIT, OR UTTER REJECTION AFTER WE HAVE COME TO A KNOWLEDGE THAT CHRIST IS TRUE, THAT CHRIST IS MESSIAH AND REDEEMER.

This sin is THE TOTAL AND COMPLETE REJECTION OF CHRIST, THE HOLY SPIRIT AND GOD THE FATHER. It is the climax of a whole series of sins that results in the UTTER AND COMPLETE FALLING AWAY OF THE BELIEVER INTO BEING A CHRIST REJECTER AND A CHRIST HATER. It is the sin of the WILLFUL AND OF A RESOLUTE DETERMINATION TO UTTERLY REJECT CHRIST.

Jesus lists ONLY ONE REASON FOR CONDEMNATION. IT IS A REFUSAL TO FACE THE MUSIC OF GOD, THE JUDGMENT OF OUR DEEDS AGAINST THE AGAPE LOVE STANDARD. If that is THE CONDEMNATION, then this sin HAS TO DO WITH THIS REJECTION. If you reject Christ, there remains no other sacrifice for sins. He is it, and if you reject Him and His way of entrance into the New Covenant, there is NO OTHER METHOD BY WHICH WE MAY BE SAVED. You have rejected it. The only thing for the rejecter is FIRE AND JUDGMENT.

Those in UNION with Christ are NOT HIS ADVERSARIES. They have come to a full knowledge of the truth, they have had agape love bestowed, and they are KEPT BY THE POWER OF GOD FROM FALLING. This therefore could not, nor does it refer to the regenerate soul. It refers to the APOSTATE WHO REJECTS TRUTH. In the rejecting, HE BLASPHEMES THE HOLY GHOST, THE ONLY WAY HE MAY BE SAVED.

This is not to say that there are not GRIEVOUS WARNINGS for even regenerate Christians against sinning, for there are warnings, but they do NOT REFLECT UPON HIS ETERNAL SECURITY IN THE LORD. Once IN CHRIST, the believer is wholly secure and cannot come



into condemnation. These apostates DO COME INTO THE CONDEMNATION OF JUDGMENT. The warnings against sin, and the commands to walk in Holiness CANNOT BE OVERLOOKED, BUT THEY MUST BE BROUGHT INTO SCRIPTURAL CONTEXT.

***“To DELIVER SUCH AN ONE UNTO SATAN  
FOR THE DESTRUCTION OF THE FLESH,***

***THAT THE SPIRIT MAY BE SAVED IN THE DAY  
OF THE LORD JESUS.”***

***(1 Corinthians 5:5)***

The one to be delivered was a man who was fornicating with his MOTHER. Some claim this is a mother in law, it matters not. The man was having an ongoing affair of lust within his family. Did this affect his ETERNAL SECURITY? NO! Paul says that ***THE SPIRIT WILL BE SAVED IN THE DAY OF CHRIST***. The regenerate believer CANNOT COME INTO CONDEMNATION, IT IS NOT POSSIBLE. Even for such a sin as this. But it is very possible, and totally probable that such a believer will face ***SEVERE DIVINE DISCIPLINE***. King David is a good example of SEVERE DIVINE DISCIPLINE. Mess around with God, and you will find out the ***TERROR OF THE LIVING GOD***. He has His ways, believe me.

***“If any man see his brother SIN A SIN WHICH IS NOT UNTO DEATH,  
HE SHALL ASK, AND HE SHALL GIVE HIM LIFE  
FOR THEM THAT SIN NOT UNTO DEATH.***

***THERE IS A SIN UNTO DEATH:  
I DO NOT SAY THAT HE SHALL PRAY FOR IT.***

***ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS IS SIN:  
AND THERE IS A SIN NOT UNTO DEATH.”***

***(1 John 5:16-17)***

The death here spoken of by John is the death of a believer in this life here on earth. It is an earthly death. God can and does kill people who step out of line too far. He will and does kill loved ones, cause accidents, brings sickness and other terrible things upon a believer who feels he is somehow immune from the commands of holiness. There is a sin UNTO DEATH. If committed, the believer will be taken from this world. Moses sinned a sin unto death, and he was a believer's believer. He struck the rock TWICE and was told to speak to it to produce water. ***THAT IS A SIN UNTO DEATH***. John does not say what it is, but this HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH THE ETERNAL SECURITY OF THE BELIEVER IN CHRIST.

What God wants from us IS TO KNOW HIS LOVE FOR US, AND OUT OF THAT LOVE WE QUIT SINNING. If you truly love someone, you will not do things that will hurt them, you will AVOID IT. Such it is with the ***REGENERATE BELIEVER, FOR THE AGAPE LOVE OF GOD WILL PURGE HIM, AND CLEAN HIM UP, AND REMOVE THE DESIRE FOR SIN.***

The Hebrew Jews were under heavy persecution and many of them REFUTED CHRIST, but none of them were saved. You have seen the proof. Other like verses proves out the same way. A believer, a real believer, the one who has left behind everything to find Christ **WILL FIND CHRIST**. The promises are ABSOLUTE. Seek and ye SHALL FIND. Knock and it SHALL BE OPENED. But there are believers that are horrible people. They bear not fruits of the spirit, but the opposite, they are briars and thorns. They are impostors, liars, deceivers, and although they may have the gifts of the Spirit, and may be miracle workers, they are in fact ONLY FIT TO BE BURNED. But none of them have ever COME INTO UNION WITH CHRIST, NOT EVEN ONE OF THEM.

The only condition laid down by Scripture to obtain salvation in Christ is that **ONE CONTINUE UNTIL ONE FINDS**. One is to search until one finds. One is to strive until one enters. One is to knock until the door is opened. The narrow way from our perspective is to SEEK THE MEANING BEHIND LIFE UNTIL WE DISCOVER CHRIST. After we have discovered, we are to GROW, TO MATURE, TO PRODUCE MORE FRUIT. The real believer is not in trouble here, for that is what he/she would want to do.

There are a few other Scriptures like this one, and all of them have to be weighed against the host of Scripture evidence. You cannot take them ALONE and try to make a case for this or that concept. **NO SCRIPTURE IS OF PRIVATE INTERPRETATION**. That is, it does not “stand alone”, by itself, but must be BROUGHT INTO THE WHOLE OF SCRIPTURE TO SEE HOW AND WHERE IT ALL FITS TOGETHER.

We have proved throughout this whole book that the vast majority of Christians ARE NOT SAVED AT ALL. They did not LOSE their salvation, THEY NEVER HAD IT TO BEGIN WITH. The regenerate person CANNOT LOSE HIS/HER SALVATION. They are secure in the Lord Jesus Christ.

We have now journeyed a long way. Many of you will realize that you are not saved, and have not the testimony of the Scripture or the witness of the agape love revelation, bestowment or witness within. The important thing to remember here is that CHRIST LOVES YOU, AND KNOWS YOU HAVE BEEN UNDER DECEPTION. HE IS CALLING YOU OUT. IT IS NO ACCIDENT YOU HAVE READ THIS BOOK. IT WILL GO WHERE CHRIST WANTS IT TO GO, AND IT WILL DO THAT WHICH CHRIST WANTS IT TO DO.

Salvation is no trifling matter, and it cannot be taken lightly whatever. I have laid out the Scripture in full view, and I have shown you how it all fits together. Jesus Christ has already warned through the Spirit that this **WARNING** to the Church WILL BE LARGELY REJECTED AND WILL BRING EXTREME ANGER AND VEHEMENT DENIALS FROM THE APOSTATE CLERGY AND BASTARD SONS AND DAUGHTERS WHO HAVE BEEN EXPOSED. I fear them not, for the testimony of Jesus Christ shall stand.

I want you to know that you too can sit on the right hand of Christ, and know it for a fact, and I want you to COME OUT OF MYSTERY BABYLON, THE WHOLE CHURCH WHICH IS BOTH CATHOLIC AND PROTESTANT, WHICH IS A LIE, A DECEPTION, A RUSE, AND FILLED WITH CORRUPTION AND EVIL DOINGS. Be not a partaker of her sins, for she will burn with a fire unlike any fire ever known to man. Those that reject this message WILL BURN WITH HER FOR ETERNITY.

The truth has been presented. Jesus did not ask me to ARGUE, DEBATE OR CONVINCING YOU OF ANY OF IT. HE SAID PRESENT IT. I HAVE DONE SO. What you do with it is up to you.

You can laugh at it, mock it, call it anything you want, call me a deceiver, an antichrist, a diabolical deceiver, a false prophet, a false teacher, a liar, or whatever other sweet nothings you wish to hurl my way. THE TRUTH STILL STANDS. IT WILL NOT BE ALTERED. THE TRUTH IS OBVIOUS FOR THOSE WHO LOVE JESUS CHRIST; IT IS A BITTER PILL THAT PROFESSORS CANNOT SWALLOW, FOR THEY WOULD HAVE TO CHANGE THEIR LIVES.

I have no use for modern Christianity or the visible Church that is its manifestations, for it is a lie, and it is the actual and real enemy of Jesus Christ and His truth. I have spoken to retired clergy, and more and more I hear them say that the Church, the established Church, of all denominations ***IS THE VERY REAL ENEMY OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST***. How sad that those who profess to know God, who strut around in their pompous white robes in front the world, are His enemy, ***His very worst enemy***. They like the arrogant Scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees, the religious of His day, WILL NOT ESCAPE THE FIRES OF ETERNAL DAMNATION UNLESS THEY COME TO A FULL AND COMPLETE REPENTANCE FOR THEIR SINS.

I beg of you to consider carefully what has been presented. It is a warning from the very Throne room of God. REPENT, WALK THE NARROW WAY AND BE SAVED. OTHERWISE YOU SHALL BE DAMNED. It is that simple.